The first Three English books on America

[? 1511]—1555 A.D.

Being chiefly Translations, Compilations, &c., by

RICHARD EDEN

From the Writings, Maps, &c., of

PIETRO MARTIRE, of Anghiera (1455-1526),
APOSTOLICAL PROTONOTARY, AND COUNCILLOR TO THE EMPEROR CHARLES V.

SEBASTIAN MÜNSTER, the Cosmographer (1489-1552),
PROFESSOR OF HEBREW, ETC., AT THE UNIVERSITY OF BASLE

SEBASTIAN CABOT, of Bristol (1474-1557),
GRAND PILOT OF ENGLAND

With Extracts, &c., from the Works of other Spanish, Italian, and German Writers of the Time

EDITED BY

EDWARD ARBER

F.S.A.; FELLOW OF KING'S COLLEGE, LONDON; HON. MEMBER OF THE VIRGINIA AND WISCONSIN HISTORICAL SOCIETIES; LATE ENGLISH EXAMINER AT THE LONDON UNIVERSITY; AND ALSO AT THE VICTORIA UNIVERSITY, MANCHESTER; EMERITUS PROFESSOR OF ENGLISH LANGUAGE AND LITERATURE, MASON COLLEGE, BIRMINGHAM

WESTMINSTER
ARCHIBALD CONSTABLE AND CO.
1895

The first Three English books on America.

[? 1511]-1555 A. D.

The first Three English books on America

[? 1511]—1555 A.D.

Being chiefly Translations, Compilations, &c., by

RICHARD EDEN

From the Writings, Maps, &c., of

PIETRO MARTIRE, of Anghiera (1455-1526),
APOSTOLICAL PROTONOTARY, AND COUNCILLOR TO THE EMPEROR CHARLES V.

SEBASTIAN MÜNSTER, the Cosmographer (1489-1552),
PROFESSOR OF HEBREW, ETC., AT THE UNIVERSITY OF BASLE

SEBASTIAN CABOT, of Bristol (1474-1557),
GRAND PILOT OF ENGLAND

With Extracts, &c., from the Works of other Spanish, Italian, and German Writers of the Time

EDITED BY

EDWARD ARBER

F.S.A.; FELLOW OF KING'S COLLEGE, LONDON; HON. MEMBER OF THE VIRGINIA AND WISCONSIN HISTORICAL SOCIETIES; LATE ENGLISH EXAMINER AT THE LONDON UNIVERSITY; AND ALSO AT THE VICTORIA UNIVERSITY, MANCHESTER; EMERITUS PROFESSOR OF ENGLISH LANGUAGE AND LITERATURE, MASON COLLEGE, BIRMINGHAM

WESTMINSTER
ARCHIBALD CONSTABLE AND CO.
1895


IMPERIAL
31 JUL 1899
LIBRARY.

To the Reader.

Each of the three Texts in this Volume is of great rarity; the firſt two are extraordinarily ſcarce.

The preſent impreſſion of them was begun ſo far back as 1870, and was nearly finiſhed by 1872; when it câme to a ſtand ſtill through the great preſſure of other work on all concerned, but more eſpecially on myſelf.

For then, there came to me the over-powering vocation, for the ſake of the Literature of our Golden Age, of attempting (ſingle-handed though it might be, and when every one elſe forſook it and fled) the printing of *A Tranſcript of the Regiſters of the Company of Stationers of London*, 1554-1646 *A.D.* Through the toil and anxiety of the years 1873 to 1877, that great piece of work was religiouſly and accurately accompliſhed, in four Demy 4to volumes, cóntaining in all ſome 2,800 *pp.*: and thus the Bibliography of Sidney, Spenſer, Shakeſpeare, Bacon, Ben Jonſon, and their contemporaries, was ſafely ſecured from deſtruction or oblivion, to the end of time.

Other circumſtances then intervened; ſo that it was not till January 1885, on the occaſion of my firſt viſit to Edinburgh (where the book was in hand), that I was able to reſume it. Once, however, the reproduction was again taken up, it was reſolutely puſhed through to its completion.

This Volume cannot fail to intereſt the cultivated reader. One is able therein to look out on the New World as its Diſcoverers and firſt Explorers looked upon it. Now-a-days, this Globe has but few geographical myſteries; and it is loſing its romance as faſt as it is loſing its wild beaſts. In the following Texts, however, the Wonderment of its Diſcovery in all its freſhneſs, is preſerved, as in amber, for all time: and they alſo contain notices of not a few barbaric civilizations which have long ſince paſſed away from off the face of the earth.

But this book has alſo ſome very ſpecial points of intereſt:

It is in many reſpects, an Engliſh Cyclopædia of the geographical and ſcientific knowledge of its Age.

No one can read the portion of the *Decades* of Pietro Martire given herein, without wiſhing to know a great deal more about him and his writings.

A large portion of what little we do know about Sebaſtian Cabot, will be found in the notices of him ſcattered through this volume.

It may alſo be regarded as a fitting Literary Monument of one of the Private Secretaries of Lord Burlegh, and a very worthy Engliſhman, Richard Eden: of whom ſome account will be found at *pp.* xxxvii.-xlviii.; and who was certainly one of the principal Authors of the reign of Mary Tudor.

It is alſo clear, that from the third Text in this book (Eden's tranſlation of the *Decades* of Pietro Martire), which was publiſhed in 1555, Francis Drake muſt have obtained all the knowledge that Engliſh books could give him reſpecting the Weſt Indies and the Spaniſh Main, before he firſt went out there, under Captain John Lovell, in 1565.

Laſtly, William Shakeſpeare read this third Text alſo, and created the character of *Caliban* in the *Tempeſt* out of the deſcription of the Patagonian giants given at *pp.* 251-2.

But for us Moderns, the chief intereſt in theſe three Works may be, that they are the very beginning of a mighty Literature. The future of Mankind lies with the Anglo-Saxon race: and of all Engliſh books relating to the American portion of that race, the three reprinted in this volume are the *very firſt*.

The large initial letters are in the ſtyle of the Spaniſh deſigns of the Biſcayan, Juan de Yciar (b. 1523), as they are found in the two editions of his *Orthographia practica*, Saragoſſa, 1548 and 1550, 4to. Yciar, who evidently looked upon them as the gems of his Work, calls them *Letras de Compas para illuminadores*.

In concluſion I desire moſt gratefully to acknowledge and record the very kind and cordial help rendered to me in the reproduction of this volume at Edinburgh, by the late Mr William Burneſs and the late Mr John Stevenſon, with whom it was commenced: and alſo by Mr James Skinner, of the firm of Meſſrs Burneſs & Co., and Mr James Turnbull, of the firm of Meſſrs Turnbull & Spears, by whom it has been brought to a ſucceſſful concluſion.

EDWARD ARBER.

Sir Josiah Mason's College,
Birmingham.

Contents.

To the Reader . . . . . v.-vi.
Contents. . . . . vii.-x.
PREFACE . . . . . xi.-xxii.

The First English book on America.

This Text is the first English book containing the word America (Armenica).

¶ *Of the newe landes and of ye people founde by the messengers of the kynge of portyngale named Emanuel.*
Of the. x. dyuers nacyons crystened.
Of pope Iohn and his landes and of the costely keyes and wonders molodyes that in that lande is. [Antwerp, ? 1511,] 4to. xxiii-xxxvi.

[*The voyage round Africa to India* . . xxvii-xxix.]
Of the blacke Mores [of Guinea] . . . xxviii.
[Of the lande of Allago] . . . . xxviii.
Arabia . . . . . xxviii.
Of greate Indyen . . . . . xxviii.
Of Gutchin [*Cochin*] that Kyngedome . . xxix.

Of the x. dyverce cristened nacions . . xxx-xxxi.
The fyrst nacion [*The Latins and Germans*] . xxx.
The seconde nacyon [*The Greeks*] . . . xxx.
The thyrde nacyon [*They of India under Pope John*] . xxx.
The fourth nacyon [*The Jacobites* (? Abyssinians)] . xxx.
The fyfth nacyon [*The Nestorians*] . . . xxxi.
The syxte nacyon [*The Maronites*] . . . xxxi.
The seuenth nacyon [*The Armenians*] . . xxxi.
The eyght nacyon [*The Georgians*] . . . xxxi.
The nynthe nacyon [*The Syrians and Samaritans*] . xxxi.
The tenthe nacyon [*The Morabites*] . . . xxxi.

[*An abridgement of the mediæval Legend of Prester John* xxxii-xxxvi.]
Of the people named Pygnies . . . . xxxiii.

The Life and Labours of Richard Eden . . . . xxxvii-xlviii.

Richard Eden's Contributions to our Literature, during the reigns of Edward VI. and Mary, 1553-1555, A.D.

The Second English book on America.

¶ *A treatyse of the newe* India, *with other new founde landes and Ilandes, aswell eastwarde as westwarde, as they are knowen and found in these oure dayes, after the descripcion of Sebastian Munster in his boke of vniversall Cosmographie: wherein the diligent reader may see the good successe and rewarde of noble and honeste enterpryses, by the which not only wordly ryches are obtayned, but also God is glorified, and the Christian fayth enlarged. Translated out of Latin into Englishe. By Rycharde Eden.* [London. 1553.] 8vo. 3-42

(Richard) Eden. [Dedication] To . . . the Duke of Northumberlande, hys Grace . . . 5-6
(Richard) Eden. To the Reader 7-11
THE TABLE 12

Of the newe India, as it is knowen and found in these our dayes . . . 13-27

[The description of the Navigations from Spain to the new India, Eastward . . . . . 13]
Of the Diamande stone, called in Latin *Adamas* . . 14
Of the kingdoms and cities of Narsinga and Canonor . . 14
How the Elephantes in India are prepared to warre . . 15-16
Of the beaste called *Rhinoceros* 16
Of *Calicut*, the most famous market towne of India . . 16-17
Of the maners of the Indians in Calicut . . . 17-18
Of Pepper and other spices which growe in the region of Calicut 18
Of byrdes and beastes which are found in the region of *Calicut*: and of the wyne of the merueylous tree . . . 19
Of the sundrye kindes of Spices, which are founde in *Calicut*, and from whence they are brought thyther . . 20
Of the Hand of *Zaylon*, and of Cinomome found there . 20

Of the cytie of *Tarnasseri*, and the maner of the cytezins there 20-21
Of the kingdoms and cities of Pego and Bangella . . 21
Of the greate and ryche Ilande of *Sumatra*, or *Samotra*, sometyme called *Taprobana* 22
Of the Ilande of Bornei 22
Of the Iland of Giaua 23
Of the Iland of Iaua 23
Of the Iland of *Madagascar* 23
Of the Iland of Zanzibar 23
Of the two Ilandes, in one of the which dwell onely men, and in the other onely women 24
Of the greate Empyre of *Cathay*, being vnder the dominion of the great Cham (whiche some call the great Can) Emperoure of *Tartaria*, in olde tyme called *Scythia* 24-25
Of certaine Prouinces and regions subiect vnder the dominion of the greate Cham Emperour of *Cathay* . . . 25-26
Of the Prouince of *Mangi*, and merueylous cyties conteyned in the same 26
Of the region of *Tangut*, and of the great desertes, and voyces of deuylles heard in the same, and of the Salamandra 26-27

¶ Of the newe India, and Ilandes in the West Ocean Sea, how, when, and by whom they were found, 28-42

[Of the new Islands and India found in the West Ocean sea, from Spain Westward and South-west . . . 28-31, 33-39]
Of the two Ilandes *Iohanna* and *Hispana* 28
Of the people called *Canibales* or *Anthropophagi*, which are accustomed to eate mans flesh 29
Of the maners of the inhabitantes of the Iland of *Hispana* and of suche thynges as are found there . . . 29
How *Columbus*, after he had found new Ilandes, returned agayne to Spayne, where prepāringe a newe nauie, he toke his viage to ye *Canibales* 29-30
How the Admirall passed manye Ilandes, and what thynges chaunced to hym and his companie in that viage . 30-31
How the Spaniardes abused the submission and frendeshippe of the inhabitantes of the Ilandes 31
How the Portugals sought new Ilandes in the East partes, and how they came to *Calicut* 32-33
How *Magellanus* by a straight or narrow arme of the sea, sayled by west into the East to dyuers Ilandes: where also he was slayne 33-34
How the Spaniardes came to the Ilandes of *Molucca*, and of the people with great hanging eares 34-55
The thyrde nauigacion of *Christophorus Columbus* . . 35-36
Howe *Petrus Alonsus* soughte newe Ilandes . . . 36
Howe *Pinzonus*, companion to the Admirall, sought newe Ilandes 36
Of the foure nauigacions of *Americus Vesputius* to the newe Ilandes 37
The fyrste viage of *Americus Vesputius* 37-38
The seconde viage of *Vesputius* 38
The thyrde viage of *Vesputius* 39
The fourth viage of *Vesputius* 39
How the king of Portugale subdued certayn places in India: and of the ryche Cytie of *Malacha* 40
Of the Iland of *Medera*, and the fortunate Ilandes, otherwyse called the Ilandes of *Canaria* 40-41
Whether vnder the *Æquinoctial* circle or burninge lyne (called *Torrida zona*) be habitable Regions 41-42

(Richard) Eden. To al aduenturers, and suche as take in hande greate enterpryses 42

The Third English book on America.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, conteynyng the nauigations and conquestes of the Spanyardes, with the particular description of the moste ryche aud large landes and Ilandes lately founde in the west Ocean perteynyng to the inheritaunce of the kinges of Spayne. In the which the diligent reader may not only consyder what commoditie may hereby chaunce to the hole christian world in tyme to come, but also learne many secreates touchynge the lande, the sea, and the starres, very necessarie to be knowen to al such as shal attempte any nauigations, or otherwise haue delite to beholde the strange and woonderfull woorkes of God and nature. Wrytten in the Latine tounge by Peter Martyr of Angleria, and translated into Englysshe by Rychарde Eden.

Londini, In ædibus Guilhelmi Powell. Anno. 1555. 43-398

THE TABLE OF THE CONTENTS OF THIS BOOKE (BESYDE THE *DECADES*) 45
(Richard) Eden. Latin Epistle to King Philip and Queen Mary 46-48
(Richard) Eden. To the Reader 49-60

[Section I. . . . . 61-204.]
(Pietro) Martire's Epistle to the Emperor Charles V., 30 September 1516 63-64

The First Decade (or Ten Books) 65-105

Book I. 65-68
Book II. 68-72
Book III. . . (*For contents, see pp.* 391-3) . . 73-79
Book IV. 79-82
Book V. 82-87
Book VI. 87-90
Book VII. 90-93
Book VIII. 94-96
Book IX. 96-102
Book X. 103-105

The Second Decade 106-136

Book I. 106-111
Book II. 111-114
Book III. . . (*For contents, see pp.* 393-4) . . 114-118
Book IV. 118-120
Book V. 120-122
Book VI. 122-125
Book VII. 126-129
Book VIII. 129-130
Book IX. 130-134
Book X. 134-136

The Third Decade 137-185

Book I. 137-142
Book II. 142-145
Book III. . . (*For contents, see pp.* 395-7) . . 146-150
Book IV. 150-156
Book V. 156-160
Book VI. 161-165
Book VII. 165-169
Book VIII. 170-174
Book IX. 175-178
Book X. 178-185

Of the Landes and Ilandes lately founde 186-200

Pope Alexander VI. Bull dividing the New World between the Spaniards and the Portuguese, 4 May 1593 . . . . . In Latin and English. 201-204

[Section II. 205-242.]

(Richard) Eden. To the Reader 207
(Gonzalo) Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés. Epistle to the Emperor Charles V. 208-209

The [Natural] Hystorie of the weste Indies 210-242

Of the ordinary nauygation from Spayne to the Weste Indies 210
Of twoo notable thynges as touchyng the West Indies: And of the great rychesse brought from thense into Spayne 211
Of the mynes of golde, and the maner of woorkynge in theym 211-213
Of the maner of fyshynge for perles 213-215
Of the familiaritie which certeyne of the Indians haue with the deuyll, and howe they receaue answere of hym of thynges to coome 215-216
Of the temperature of the regions vnder or neare to the burnt lyne cauled *Torrida zona* or the Equinoctiall: and of the dyuers seasons of the yeare . . 217-218
Of dyuers particular thynges, as woormes, serpentes, beastes, foules, trees. etc. 219-225
Of trees, fruites, and plantes 225-227
Of Reedes or Canes 227-229
Of venemous apples wherwith they poyson theyr arrowes 229-230
Of fysshes and of the maner of fysshynge 230-233
Of th[e]increase and decrease, (that is) rysynge and faullynge of our Ocean sea and Southe sea caulled the sea of *Sur* 233-234
Of the straygnt or narowe passage of the lande lyinge betwene the North and South sea, by the whiche spyces may much sooner and easlyer be brought from the Ilandes of *Molucca* into Spayne by the West Ocean then by that way wherby the Portugales sayle into East India 234-236
Of the maners and customes of the Indians of the firme lande, and of theyr women 237-238
Of the chiefe Ilandes *Hispaniola* and *Cuba* . . . 239-241
Of the Ilande of Cuba and other 241
Of the lande of *Bacoaleos* cauled *Terra Baccalearum*, situate on the North syde of the firme lande. . 242

[Section III. 243-280.]

Of the Universal Carde and Newe Worlde . . . 245
(Richard) Eden. A Discourse of the Vyage made by the Spanyardes rounde abowte the Worlde . . 246-247
Maximilian Transilvanius. Epistle to the Emperor Charles V. 247-248
(Antonio) Pigafetta. A briefe Declaration of the Vyage or Navigation made abowte the Worlde . . 249-262
Of the prices of Precious Stones and Spices . . 263-269
Cadamosto of the Dooues of the Ilande of Madera . 270
Of the Ilande of saynt Thomas under the Equinoctiall line 270

(Francisco) Lopez de Gómara. The Debate and Stryfe betwene the Spanyardes and Portugales for the diuision of the Indies and the trade of Spices [at the Conference at Badajos, in 1524] 271-274

(Amerigo) Vespucci. (Andreas) de Corsali. } Of the Pole Antartike and the Starres about the same, &c. . . . 277-280

[Section IV. 281-334.]

Of Moscouie and Cathay 283-294

(Galeazzo) Butrigarius 283
(Sebastian) Cabot 283
(Sebastian) Münster. (Jacopo) Gastaldo. A briefe description of Moscouia 291-293

(Jacobus) Ziglerus. Of the North Regions 295-306

Of the North Regions and of the moderate and continuall heate in coulde regions aswell in the nyght as in the day in the soommer season 295-298
Schondia 298-299
Gronlande 299
Islande 300
Laponia 301-303
Norwegia or Norway 303-304
Suecia or Svethlande 305
Bothnia 305
Gothia or Gothlande 306
Finland and Eningia 306

(Girolamo) Cardano. Of the difference of Regions, and causes of great cities 307
(Paolo) Giovio, Bishop of Nocera. The Historie . . . of the Legation or Ambassade of the greate Basilius Prince of Moscouia to Pope Clement VII. of that name 308-317
(Sigismund) Liber. Other notable Things concerning Moscovia 318-321

The description of the regions, people, and ryuers, lying North and Easte from Moscouia 322-324
Of the famous ryuer of Tanais 324-325
More directly from Moscouia to Cathay 325-326
Of the Tartars 327-330
The nauigation by the frosen sea 330-332

Edward VI. The Copy of the Letters Missive . . . sent to the Kynges, Princes, and other potentates inhabytynge the Northeast partes of the worlde towarde the myghtye Empire of Cathaye. 1553 . . In Latin and English. 333-334

[Section V. . . . 335-352.]

(Francisco) Lopez de Gómara. (Sebastian) Cabot. Other notable thynges as touchinge the Indies . . . 337-350

Of the foreknowleage that the Poet Seneca had of the fyndynge of this new Worlde and other Regions not then knowen 337
Of the great Ilande which Plato cauled Atlantica or Atlantide 337-338
Of the colour of the Indians 338
Why they were cauled Indians 339
The fyrste discouerynge of the Weste Indies . . 339
What maner of man Chrystopher Colon was: and howe he Came fyrst to the knowleage of the Indies . . 340
What labour and trauayle Colon tooke in attemptyng his fyrst vyage to the Indies 340-342
Of newe Spayne cauled Noua Hispania, or Mexico . 342
Of Peru 343
Of the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata (that is) the ryuer of syluer 343-344
Of the hygher East India cauled India Tercera or Terciera 344
Of the landes of Laborador and Baccalaos, lyinge west and northwest from Englande, and beinge parte of the firme lande of the West Indies . . . 344-345
The discouerynge of the lande of Floryda . . 345-346
An opinion that Europa, Africa, and Asia, are Ilandes: and of certeyne nauigations abowt the same . . 346-347
That the Spanyardes haue sayled to the Antipodes (that is) suche as go fiete to fiete ageynst vs, and inhabite the inferiour hemispherie or halfe globe of the earthe, contrarie to th[e]oppinion of the owlde writers . 347-348
Who fyrst founde the needle of the compasse, and the vse therof 348-349
The Situacion and byggenes of the earth . . . 349
What degrees are 349-350

(Richard) Eden. A demonstration of the roundnesse of the Earth 350
Diodorus, *Siculus*. What credit ought to bee gyuen to Wryters as touchynge the workes of nature 351

[Section VI. . . . 353-369.]

(Richard) Eden. The preface to *The Booke of Metals* 355
(Vannuccio) Biringuccio. Of the generation of Metalles, and their mynes; with the maner of fyndinge the same 356-362
Of the myne of golde and the qualitie therof in particular 362-366
Of the myne of siluer and the qualitie therof . 366-368
Diodorus, *Siculus*. The maner of workynge in golde mynes in Egipt in owld tyme . . 369

[Section VII. . . . 371-390.]

(Richard) Eden. The Description of the two Viages made owt of England into Guinea . 373
(Richard) Eden. A breefe Description of Affrike 374
The fyrst Vyage to Guinea 375-378
The Second Vyage to Guinea 379-388
Gemma Phrysius. The maner of fyndynge the Longitude of Regions by dyuers wayes . . 389-390

A BRYEFE REHERSAL OF THE CONTENTES OF THE *DECADES* . . 391-398
(Richard) Eden. Th[e] Interpretours excuse 398
INDEX 399-408

PREFACE.

STILL labouring in the diffusion of English Literature: we here, with heart-felt pleasure, present the reader with reprints of three exceedingly rare, curious, and costly Cosmographical Works; which are also the very earliest printed documents in our language, relating to South, Central, and North America.

It rarely falls to the lot of man to be able to put one's hand on the very earliest beginnings of a mighty literature. Yet it is not too much to say, that of all the vast multitude of English books that have been, or ever will be, produced, either in, or relating to, what we call our New World; the three Works reprinted in this Volume are the very first and earliest. However mighty and majestic, however subtle and eloquent, however deep and far-reaching, the American-English literature may become; here are its first fruits! Whatever period of mental florescence and splendour may yet be in store for the English-speaking races on that vast Continent; with these three Works begins the printed English Story of their Action, their Mind, and their Progress.

Almost all nations light their lamp with fire borrowed from their predecessors. They commence with translations; progress to imitations; and then, often by distinctly marked steps, the Literature mounts up to the height to which the united wit and genius of the nation (through all the vicissitudes of earthly empire) can raise it. It rests not long at the summit; but first declines, and then decays. In its full ripeness, it oftentimes lights up the mind of younger and succeeding races; and so, at length, its life and vitality pass away. Thus has the now blazing, now dim, torch of human knowledge and mind-craft been handed down to us over the heads of the nations, through all the successive Ages of Time.

Human literature is also, like human nature, in many essentials evermore the same in all Ages. As is the life of a Man; so is the mind, that is, the higher life, which is the glory of a Nation. Both alike pass through Inception, Growth, Florescence, Decay, and Death: both alike but minister to the purposes of a Power greater than they, until the cycle of His plans shall be completed. Then cometh the end, when the World shall crack at the fiat of the Almighty Trinity.

Instances of this Law of successive Literary Cycles inter-ringing one with the other, readily suggest themselves. Such was the Literature of Greece in its earlier relations to Egypt and Phœnicia; and in its later to Rome. Such also that of the *Renaissance* in Italy, in respect to the Greek literature of Byzantium; and to its subsequent influence (which, either as to fulness or extent, has hardly yet been measured) on the rawer nations of Spain, Germany, France, and England. Such was that of Spain (which now we consider so dead), with reference to the anterior civilisation and letters of the Moorish kingdom there. Such undoubtedly has been, and will be the literature of England; now, it may be, in the early afternoon of its glory. And such has been, and will be that of English-America; now in the morning of its strength and power. In the words of the great and wise Preacher, "To every thing there is a season, and a time to every purpose under heaven."

Under any circumstances, therefore, the present Texts would excite great interest; whatever might be the nature of their contents. It is pleasant, however, to find that each of them has for us modern readers, a distinct interest and a strong charm: while all three do afford us a most vivid picture of those early days of oceanic discovery; of the terrible real dangers, and the still more terrible imaginary ones, undergone and dared by the many noble-hearted Portuguese and Spaniards for themselves and for us; when they wan, in their little cockboats, for the succeeding Human Race, a truer knowledge of the Globe in which, by the Divine Providence, it has been placed.

But the first impression—the most salient and significant interest of this volume—is that it contains reprints of *The first Three English books on America.*

II.

OUr next consideration respects their *contemporary* standpoint; their relation to the story of the nation, for whom the three Texts were printed: and especially to supply Eden's omissions, as regards the very early oceanic voyages of the English, both East and West.

These publications are of great and perpetual interest, inasmuch as they photograph for all time, the fragmentary and imperfectly attained knowledge, and the vast and credulous wonderment, prevailing in England in respect to far-distant countries, during the reigns of Henry VIII. and his two immediate successors. The Texts of this volume embrace, in fact, all that the gentry and merchants of England could, down to the year 1555, A.D., read in the tongue in which they were born, of the wonderful discoveries, and still more marvellous conquests, of the Portuguese and Spaniards in the two Indies.

Neither was this amount of printed information much added to, in Eden's lifetime. His greatest literary feat—the Compilation of 1555—found no immediate imitators: so that it was left to himself (after twenty years more, of great vicissitude, had passed over his head) to undertake its repetition, in the form of a Second and much revised Edition of this labour of love; in the preparation of which he died. This revised Compilation finally appeared in 1577, "set in order, augmented, and finished" by Richard Willes, under the fresh title of *The History of Trauayle in the VVest and East Indies, and other countreys lying either way, &c.* It was five years later (1582), that R[ichard] H[akluyt] published his first Collection, under the title of *Diuers voyages, &c.*

An enquiry into the printed naval literature of Queen Elizabeth's reign, has also elicited the fact, that it was not until about that same year (1577), that our Oceanic Literature fairly began to constitute a distinct section of English books. It soon, however, greatly increased in bulk, variety, and interest; until now, it has no compeer in any other language.

Eden is therefore, in very deed, the Pioneer of British geographic research, the very First of our Naval Chroniclers, and the Herald and Forerunner of all our subsequent discoveries and victories at sea. So that in English literary history, Richard Eden stands in the same relation to Richard Hakluyt, that Richard Hakluyt does to Samuel Purchas; and Samuel Purchas, to our present Hakluyt and Royal Geographical Societies.

This multifarious volume should be studied in conjunction with the inland Chronicles of Halle, Grafton, Stow, and others; together with the more modern histories of the Reformation Age. These are chiefly, if not exclusively, occupied with home and continental affairs; and but rarely travel further abroad. In this direction, this Work will help, in a very important manner, to complete for us, the external history of England, during the period 1511–1555, A.D.

2. It will soon, however, be seen that it does this rather by way of narrating the deeds of other nations, and thereby teaching and guiding our forefathers to do the like; than by describing the English navigations of its own time. Indeed, there are only two English voyages described in it with any detail, and those are rather late ones, viz., the voyages to Guinea in 1553 and 1554. Yet these accounts (the very earliest of their kind ever *printed* in our language) were not, as it is quite evident from page 388, included in the original conception and plan of the Work: but were added, just as the book was being completed, by way of a postscript; the extra expense of which, was borne by Master Toy, the London printer and publisher.

It is also to be especially noted, that this omission did not arise because there were no English Voyages to relate; but because the custom of narrating them in print had not yet arisen in our language. Sea-Histories had not, as yet, become an section of our Literature.

Inasmuch, therefore, as so large a portion of this Volume is occupied with the famous deeds of other nations, and particularly of those of the Spaniards; it may be well (as it is indeed but just to our own race) to place in the forefront of them all, a very slight account, by way of a rescue from oblivion, of the sea-doings and sea-daring of our forefathers in the reigns of Henry VIII., Edward VI., and Mary:—narrating the Oceanic voyages with fuller detail than those to the Continent and the Levant, as they were the more adventurous and difficult.

3. From the capture of Constantinople in 1454, till after the battle of Lepanto in 1572; there was an almost ceaseless fight between the Christians and the Turks along the eastern shores of the Mediterranean Sea. The Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, after they had been driven from Rhodes in 1522, finally settled at Malta in 1530; where by their heroic valour in the frightful siege in 1565, they materially contributed, with the great naval victory of Don John of Austria, to stem the flow of Turkish invasion, which else threatened to swallow up all Christian States.

Recollecting that the formidable, ruthless, and barbaric power of the Turkish empire was at this time ever surging onward and westward in those eastern seas; it will interest most of us to know that there was a regular organised and direct commerce by sea between England and the Levant so early as 1511, A.D.; and for many years afterwards. For our knowledge of this we are indebted to our great English Worthy and famous Cosmographer Richard Hakluyt, Preacher; sometime a Student of Christ Church in Oxford: who, in the second edition of his great work entitled *The Principal Navigations, Voyages, Traffiques, and Discoueries of the English Nation, &c. &c.*, London, 1599–1600 fol., has preserved for us the following important note on—

The antiquitie of the trade with Engliſh ſhips into the Leuant.

IN the yeeres of our Lord, 1511, 1512, &c., till the yeere 1534. diuers tall ſhips of *London*, namely, *The Chriſtopher Campion*, wherein was Factor one *Roger Whitcome*; the *Mary George*, wherein was Factor *William Greſham*; the great *Mary Grace*, the Owner whereof, was *William Gunſon*, and the maſter one *John Hely*; the *Trinitie Fitz-williams*, whereof was maſter *Laurence Arkey*; the *Matthew* of London, whereof was maſter *William Capling*, with certaine other ſhips of *Southampton* and *Briſtow*, had an ordinarie and vſuall trade to *Sicilia*, *Candie*, *Chio*, and ſomewhiles to *Cyprus*, as alſo to *Tripolis* and *Barutti* [*Beyrout*] in *Syria*. The com-

modities which they caried thither were fine Kerſies of diuers colours, courſe Kerſies, white Weſterne dozens, Cottons, certaine clothes called Satutes, and others called Cardinal-whites, and Calueſkins which were well ſold in *Sicilie*, &c. The commodities which they returned backe were Silks, Chamlets, Rubarbe, Malmeſies, Muſkadels and other wines, ſweete oyles, cotten wooll, Turkie carpets, Galles, Pepper, Cinamom, and ſome other ſpices, &c. Beſides, the naturall inhabitants of the foreſayd places, they had, euen in those dayes, traffique with Iewes, Turkes, and other forreiners. Neither did our merchants onely employ their owne Engliſh ſhipping before mentioned, but ſundry ſtrangers alſo: as namely, *Candiots*, *Raguſeans*, *Sicilians*, *Genouezes*, *Venetian* galliaſſes, *Spanish* and *Portugale* ſhips. All which particulars doe moſt euidently appeare out of certaine auncient Ligier bookes [*i.e. Ledgers*] of the R[ight]. W[orſhipful] Sir *William Locke* Mercer of *London*, of Sir *William Bowyer* Alderman of *London*, of maſter *Iohn Greſham*, and of others; which I *Richard Hakluyt* haue diligently peruſed and copied out.—*Vol.* II., *Part* I., *p.* 96, *Ed.* 1599.

4. Next in the order of time comes the mythical voyage of 1517 of Sebastian Cabot and Sir Thomas Pert from England towards Cathay; the sole authority for which is Eden's statement at page 6 of this Volume: in which, so far as we have been able to inquire, we believe him to have been utterly mistaken, and that the voyage had no existence; and the more especially because Sebastian Cabot was at that date in Spain, where he remained until after the Conference of Badajos in 1524, which (as Gomara tells us at *p.* 272) he attended as an expert on behalf of the Emperor Charles V.

5. Important and authentic as is that early Levant traffic; it was a very different thing from a voyage across the then but half discovered Atlantic. As Pietro Martire vaunts, few or none but Spaniards were licensed to go from Spain to the New World. It is, therefore, very striking to find, ere Cortes had consolidated his marvellous conquest of Mexico, or Pizarro had finally set forth to imitate him in Peru; and while at home, the great Cardinal was in serene prosperity and unruffled power, our first printed New Testaments were being secretly read in the principal English towns, and our nation's Reformation was just beginning to bud forth: it is indeed surprising to trace one Englishman at least in the West Indies; to learn, of a certainty, that one, if not two English expeditions had reached the American coast; and, most startling of all, to know that one of these squadrons found in the harbour of St John's, Newfoundland, not another royal fleet of discovery, but a fleet of fourteen *fishing-boats* (and, if Spanish reports be correct, thirty or forty more in the neighbourhood), that had ventured (at a time when, to us, so little appears to have been known of the north-eastern seaboard of America; and so much to have been dreaded in a voyage thither) across the wide Atlantic, simply for the sake of codfish.

6. Hakluyt gives the following account of Thomas Tyson or Tison, the first Englishman known to have reached the West Indies:—

A briefe note concerning an ancient trade of the Engliſh Marchants to the Canarie-ilands, *gathered out of an olde ligier booke* [ledger] *of M.* Nicolas Thorne *the elder a worſhipfull marchant of the city of* Briſtoll.

IT appeareth euidently out of a certaine note or letter of remembrance, in the cuſtody of me *Richard Hakluyt*, written by M. *Nicolas Thorne* the elder a principall marchant of *Briſtoll*, to his friend and factour *Thomas Midnall* and his owne ſeruant *William Ballard* at that time reſident in *S. Lucar* in *Andeluzia*; that in the yeere of our Lord 1526 (and by all circumstances and probabilities long before) certaine Engliſh marchants, and among the reſt himſelfe with one *Thomas Spacheford* exerciſed vſuall and ordinary trade of marchandiſe vnto the *Canarie* Ilands. For by the ſayd letter notice was giuen to *Thomas Midnall* and *William Ballard* aforeſayd, that a certaine ſhip called The *Chriſtopher* of *Cadiz* bound for the *Weſt Indies* had taken in certaine fardels of cloth both courſe and fine, broad and narrow of diuers ſorts and colours, ſome *arouas* [*arobas*] of packthreed, ſixe *cerons* or bagges of ſope, with other goods of M. *Nicolas Thorne*, to be deliuered at *Santa Cruz*, the chiefe towne in *Tenerifa*, one of the ſeuen *Canary-ilands*. All which commodities the ſayd *Thomas* and *William* were authorized by the owner in the letter before mentioned to barter and ſell away at *Santa Cruz*. And in lieu of ſuch mony as ſhould ariſe of the ſale of thoſe goods, they were appointed to returne backe into *England* good ſtore of Orchell (which is a certaine kinde of moſſe growing vpon high rocks, in thoſe dayes much vſed to die withall), ſome quantity of ſugar, and certaine hundreds of kid-ſkinnes. For the procuring of which and of other commodities, at the beſt and firſt hand, the ſaid *Thomas* and *William* were to make their abode at *Santa Cruz*, and to remaine there as factours for the aboueſaid M[aſter] *Nicolas Thorne*.

And here alſo I thought good to ſignifie, that in the ſayd letters mention is made of one *Thomas Tiſon*, an Engliſh man, who before the foreſayd yere 1526 had found the way to the *Weſt Indies*, and was there reſident, vnto whom the ſayd M[aſter] *Nicolas Thorne* ſent certaine armour and other commodities ſpecified in the letter aforeſayd.—*Principal Navigations, &c. &c of the English Nation, Vol.* II., *Part* II., *p.* 3, *Ed.* 1599.

Hakluyt, referring again to this note, hazards the following surmise:—

This *Thomas Tiſon* (ſo farre as I can coniecture) may ſeeme to haue bene ſome ſecret factour for M. *Thorne* aud other Engliſh marchants in thoſe remote partes, whereby it is probable that ſome of our marchants had a kind of trade to the Weſt *Indies*, euen in thoſe ancient times and before alſo.—*Idem*, *Vol.* III., *p.* 500, *Ed.* 1600.

This conjecture is confirmed by the fact that Nicolas Thorne, at his death in 1527, owed this Thomas Tyson the sum of £12: 5s. (probably on account of business).—See *Letters and Papers on the Reign of Henry VIII.*, Edited by the Rev. J. S. Brewer, M.A., *IV.* (2), *p.* 1256.

7. Imbedded in Halle's Chronicle is the following note, quite unconnected with anything going before or after, and to which also he makes no subsequent allusion whatever:—

This ſame moneth [May 1527, 19 Hen. VIII.], the kyng ſent two fayre ſhippes, well manned and vitailed, hauing in theim diuers conning men, to ſeke ſtrange regions; and ſo furth thei ſet, out of the Thamis, the twentie day of May, if thei ſped well you ſhall here at their retorne. *Fol.* 158, *b.*

This note Richard Grafton, who had printed Halle's Chronicles in 1548, transferred (with but variations of spelling) to *p.* 1149 of his own Chronicle, printed by Henry Denham in 1569.

Richard Hakluyt, in his *Principal Navigations, Voyages, and Discoveries*, thus records his researches as to this expedition:—

AND whereas maſter Hall and maſter Grafton ſay, that in thoſe ſhips there were diuers cunning men, I haue made great inquirie of ſuch as, by their yeeres and delight in nauigation, might giue me any light to know who thoſe cunning men ſhould be, which were the directers in the aforeſayd voyage. And it hath bene told mee by Sir Martin Frobiſher, and maſter Richard Allen a Knight of the Sepulchre, that a Canon of S. Paul in London, which was a great Mathematician, and a man indued with wealth, did much aduance the action, and went therein himſelfe in perſon, but what his name was, I can not learne of any. And further they told mee that one of the ſhips was called the *Dominus vobiscum*, which is a name likely to bee giuen by a religious man of thoſe daies. and that ſailing very farre Northweſtward, one of the ſhips was caſt away as it entred into a dangerous gulphe, about the great opening, betweene the North partes of New found land, and the countrey lately called by her maieſtie *Meta Incognita* [*i.e.* Labrador].

Whereupon the other ſhip ſhaping her courſe towards *Cape Brittor*, and the coaſt of *Norumbega* [Hakluyt substitutes *Arambec* in his 1600 Edition], and oftentimes putting their men on land to ſearch the ſtate of thoſe vnknowen regions, returned home about the beginning of October, of the yeere aforeſaid. And thus much (by reaſon of the great negligence of the writers of thoſe times, who ſhould haue vſed more care in preſeruing the memories of the worthie actes of our nation) is all that hitherto I can learne, or find out of this voiage.—*p.* 517, *Ed.* 1589; also, iii 129, *Ed.* 1600.

Of this enterprise, Purchas some thirty-five years later has preserved for us, at *pp.* 808-91 of the Third volume of his *Pilgrimes*, 1625, the following more authentic testimony:—

WEE will recreate you with a plaine Mariners Letter endorsed in homely phraſe, To the Honourable Kings Grace of *England*, here (as I thinke) giuen you from the Originall. I haue alſo another written to Cardinal *Wolſey* touching the ſame voyage in Latin, by *Albertus de Prato*; for the antiquitie rather then any remarkable raritie, worthy here to be mentioned.[1]

[2] I mentioned before Maſter *Thornes* fathers finding out *New-found Land*, with Maſter *Eliot*. Theſe animated King *Henrie* the eight to ſet forth two ſhips for diſcouerie, one of which periſhed in the North parts of *New-found Land*. The Maſter of the other, *Iohn Rut*, writ this Letter to King *Henrie*, in bad *Engliſh* and worſe Writing. Ouer it was this ſuperſcription.[3]

> Maſter *Grubes* two ſhips departed from *Plymouth* the 10. day of Iune, and arriued in the *New-found-Land* in a good Harbour, called *Cape de Bas*, the 21. day of Iuly: and after we had left the ſight of *Selle* [? Scilly], we had neuer ſight of any Land, till we had ſight of *Cape de Bas*.

PLeaſing your Honorable Grace to heare of your ſeruant Iohn Rut, *with all his Company here, in good health, thanks be to God, and your Graces ſhip, The* Mary *of* G[u]il[d]ford *with all he. thanks be to God: And if it pleaſe your honorable Grace, we ranne in our courſe to the Northward, till we came into* 53. *degrees, and there we found many great Ilands of Ice and deepe water, we found no ſounding, and then we durſt not goe no further to the Northward for feare of more Ice, and then we caſt about to the Southward, and within foure dayes after we had one hundred and ſixtie fathom, and then wee came into* 52. *degrees, and fell with the mayne Land, and within ten leagues of the mayne Land we met with a great Iland of Ice, and came hard by her, for it was ſtanding in deepe water, and ſo went in with* Cape de Bas, *a good Harbor, and many ſmall Ilands, and a great freſh Riuer going vp farre into the mayne Land, and the mayne Land all wilderneſſe and mountaines and woods, and no naturall ground but all moſſe, and no inhabitation nor no people in theſe parts: and in the woods we found footing of diuers great beaſts, but we ſaw none not in ten leagues. And pleaſe your Grace, the* Samſon *and wee kept company all the way till within two dayes before wee met with all the Ilands of Ice. That was the firſt day of Iuly at night, and there roſe a great and a marualous great ſtorme, and much foule weather; I truſt in Almightie Ieſu to heare good newes of her. And pleaſe your Grace, we were conſidering and a writing of all our order, how we would waſh* [? *watch*] *vs, and what courſe wee would draw, and when God doe ſend foule weather, that with* Cape de Sper *ſhe* [i.e. *each ſhip*] *ſhould goe, and he that came firſt ſhould tarry the ſpace of ſixe weeks one for another, and watered at* Cape de Bas *ten dayes, ordering of your Graces ſhip, and fiſhing, and ſo departed toward the Southward to ſeeke our fellow: the third day of Auguſt we entered into a good Hauen, called Saint* Iohn, *and there we found eleuen ſaile of* Normans, *and one* Brittaine, *and two* Portugall *Barkes, and all a fiſhing, and ſo we are readie to depart toward* Cape de Bas,[4] *and that is twentie fiue leagues, as ſhortly as we haue fiſhed, and ſo along the coaſt till we may meete with our fellow, and ſo with all diligence that lyes in me towards parts to that Ilands that we are commanded by the grace of God, as we were commanded at our departing. And thus Ieſu ſaue and keepe your honorable Grace, and all your honourable Reuer., in the Hauen of Saint* Iohn, *the third day of Auguſt, written in haſte.* 1527.

By your ſeruant *Iohn Rut*, to his vttermoſt of his power.

I haue by me alſo *Albert de Prato's*[1] originall Letter, in Latin ſtille, almoſt as harsh as the former *Engliſh*, and bearing the ſame date, and was indorſed, *Reuerend in Chriſto Patri Domino Domino Cardinali et Domino Legato Angliæ:* and began, *Reuerendiſſime in Chriſto Pater ſalutem. Reuerendiſſime Pater, placeat Reuerendiſſimæ paternitati veſtræ ſcire Deo fauente poſtquam exiuimus à Plemut quæ fuit x. Iunij &c.* (The ſubſtance is the ſame with the former, and therefore omitted.) *Datum apud le Baya Saint Iohan in Terris Nouis, die x. Auguſti* 1527. *Reuer. Patr. veſt. humilis ſeruus, Albertus de Prato* (the name written in the loweſt corner of the ſheet).

We are fortunately able to trace this expedition still further. By "towards parts to that Ilands that we are commanded," John Rut meant the West Indies; and we have accounts by two Spanish historians of his arrival there, which will demand of us some further attention.

Gonzales Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés—*b.* at Madrid 1478, *d.* at Valladolid 1557, and who resided for many years in the West Indies—wrote, in addition to the *Natural hystoria de las Indias* printed at Toledo on 15th February 1526, from which Eden has translated large extracts at *pp.* 208-242 of this Volume; another and his most important work, entitled *La historia general de las Indias*, the printing of which was completed at Seville on 30th September 1535 (or about eight years after Rut's expedition); every copy of which is attested with Oviedo's written signature. It does not appear that Eden had met with this important work, or he would have assuredly have made the following extract from it.

On folio clxj. of this work, being the Thirteenth chapter of the Nineteenth book, is the following passage, for the literal translation of which we are much indebted to the courtesy and kindness of the celebrated Spanish scholar, Don Pascual de Gayangos.

Before we come to the extract; an error as to its date (which misled Hakluyt, and may mislead others) must be noted for avoidance, in the Third Volume of J. B. Ramusio's *Navigationi e Viaggi*. Each Volume of this celebrated Collection was printed in a different year by L. A. Giunti at Venice. Vol. I., of which a First Edition had been printed in 1550, appeared corrected and enlarged in March 1554. Of Vol. II., the Preface of which is dated 7th July 1554, the earliest known is that of 1559; while Vol. III., the Preface of which is dated 20th June 1553, appears to have been first printed in 1556; that is to say, in the year after Eden's Compilation was published in London.

Now, at p. 204 of this Third Volume, of 1556, occurs this important typographical error. Oviedo in 1535 begins *Elanno*

[1] The very high antiquity of these letters—which are the earliest ever known to have been sent home by Englishmen from America—constitutes their great modern value.

[2] The next two sentences are a jumble of error. It is clear from the text that the expedition consisted of three ships: Master Grube's or Grub's two ships, one of which was called the *Sampson*, the name of the other does not transpire (if it could be ascertained to be the *Dominus Kobiscum*, the chain of testimony would be complete): together with the King's ship, the *Mary of Guildford*, commanded by John Rut.

[3] Purchas evidently intends us to understand that the endorsement is contemporary with the letter.

[4] This is evidently a mistake through the hurry in writing. It should be *Cape de Sper* [Cabo de Spera, "*the Cape of the Spear*"]. For the two ships, after having stayed ten days, 21-31 July 1527, at Cape de Bas, sailing southward, had reached St. John's harbour on the 3d of August, and then purposed to go 75 miles more, evidently to the southward, to Cape de Sper, the appointed rendezvous, where they hoped to meet the *Sampson*. From the date of the priest's letter, however, it is evident that the two English ships stayed a week longer at St. John's. These letters were probably sent to England in one of the Norman or Breton fishing boats.

[1] I have quite failed to find any notice of this Albertus de Prato. Might that be a latinised form of Albert Prat? or was the bearer of the name a foreigner? I can trace no such name in Le Neve's *Fasti* or Newcourt's *Repertorium*. It would be interesting if he could be identified with Hakluyt's mathematical Canon of St. Paul's.

de M.d.xxvij. annos, &c.; which Ramusio in 1556 translates *Nel 1517* instead of *Nel 1527*. Hakluyt in 1589, not suspecting any falsification, thereupon adduces the following extract in support of fabulous English voyage of 1517, hereafter asserted by Eden at *p.* 6: but the date being wrong, his argument, of course, falls to pieces.

It would also seem that Oviedo was residing in the city of Santo Domingo, when he wrote this portion of his history.

CHAPTER 13. *Of certain foreign corsairs which passed to these parts and Indies, and what has been the cause and origin of their bad thoughts.*

IN the year Mdxxvii. an English corsair, under colour or pretence that he was going to discover land, came with a large ship to the Brazil on the coast of Tierra Firme, and from thence crossed to this Island Hispanola, and arrived close to the mouth of the harbour of this city [Santo Domingo]. He sent his boat properly manned, and asked for permission to come into port, saying that he came with merchandise and to barter [with the inhabitants]. At the same moment the Governor, Francisco de Tapia, ordered a gun to be fired against the said [English] ship, which was coming straight into the harbour; which being observed by the English, they went away, after taking on board the said boat's crew. And, to tell the truth, the Governor [Tapia] was wrong in what he did, for had the English vessel entered the harbour, armed though she was, she could not have left without the consent of this city and castle.

So that the English, seeing the reception that was made to them, sailed in the direction of the Island of San Juan, and having entered the Bay of San German, spoke to the inhabitants of that town, and asked for provisions: uttering complaints against the people of this island [Hispaniola], and saying that they had not come to annoy the people, but to traffic with them, if they consented, for money or merchandise. Provisions were given to them, and they gave pewter vessels and other goods in return. After which the ship sailed for Europe; but it is supposed that she never reached her destination, for nothing more was heard of her.

Considering that Oviedo *printed* the above less than eight years after the event, there can hardly be any mistake as to the year being 1527. Yet in a later Spanish historian we find these circumstances, in much fuller detail, narrated as occurring in 1519. So that of the three dates 1517, 1519, and 1527; the last is the true one.

Antonio de Herrera Tordesillas, [*b.* 1559 at Cuella de Segovia; *d.* 29th March 1625 at Madrid], was born two years after the death of Oviedo. The first four *Decades* of his *Historia General de los Hechos de los Castellanos en las Islas i tierra firme* were printed in 1601, the last four in 1615; both at Madrid. In the second *Decas*, which was published seventy-four years after Rut's voyage, we have an account of him and his doings, evidently derived from a written deposition; as Oviedo's had been either from hearsay or from personal observation. It consists of the narrative (for the translation of which I am indebted to my friend, the late H. Pyne, Esq., Assistant Tithe Commissioner) of Ginès Navarro, master of a Spanish caravel, who apparently piloted Rut's ship from Porto Rico by the island of Mona to Santo Domingo, and then back again to San Germano in the island of Porto Rico.

THE ARRIVAL OF AN ENGLISH SHIP IN THE INDIES, AND THE STATE OF AFFAIRS IN THE ISLANDS.

AFTER the departure of the ships which carried [? *to Spain*] the gold pearls and ordinary merchandise; a caravel of Saint Domingo being in the island of San Juan [de Porto Rico], loading with casava; there arrived [at Porto Rico] a ship of three masts, and of the burden of 150 tons. The master of the caravel, [who] went out in his boat to this ship, supposing it to be a Spanish vessel, discovered [coming towards him] a pinnace containing twenty-five men armed with corslets and cross-bows, and having two pieces of artillery in its prow.

They said that they were Englishmen, and that their ship was from England; that, in company with another armed ship, they had sailed to seek the country of the Great Khan, but that the ships had been separated in a tempest: and that theirs, proceeding on its voyage, came to a frozen sea, where they found large islands of ice; that they had then altered their course, and came to a hot sea [? *the Gulf Stream*], which seethed like water in a caldron; and in order that the caulking of the ship might not be melted, they went in search of the Baccalaos,[1] where they found fifty[2] Spanish, French, and Portuguese ships, and that they wishing to land there in order to obtain an Indian interpreter, they [the Indians] killed the pilot; who was a Piedmontese. From thence, they had coasted as far as the *Rio de Chicora* [*the River of Chicora*, i.e. *River in Carolina*], and had crossed over from that river to the island of San Juan [de Porto Rico].

Upon being asked, What they were searching for in those islands? they said that they were desirous of seeing them, for the purpose of giving an account of them to the King of England, and to take a cargo from Brazil.

They invited the master of the caravel, who was called Ginès Navarro, to come on board their ship, and to show them the course to Saint Domingo. He saw in the ship a quantity of wine, flour, and other provisions; as well as much cloth, linen, and other articles of merchandise. They carried much artillery and a forge, and carpenters for ship-building, and an oven for baking bread; and there were [in the ship] threescore men.

Ginés Navarro further stated that, if he could have read them, the captain of the ship wished to show him the instructions which he brought from the King of England; that they had sent a company ashore at the Island of Mona,[3] and that they had bartered some pewter in the Island of San Juan.

This ship went to the port of Santo Domingo, and sent the bark ashore, saying That they were desirous of trading; and [it] tarried there two days, The governor of the Castle, upon the arrival of the ship, sent to inform the Magistrates [? *the Royal Audience*], for the purpose of their giving him orders what to do; and as they returned no answer, he discharged a gun at the ship, in consequence of which, she forthwith recalled the bark, and by and by set sail.

The ship then returned to the back of the island of San Juan, and tarried a short time there, trading with the inhabitants of the town of Saint Germans; and did not appear again.

The magistrates [of Saint Domingo] arrested the governor, saying that he ought to have waited for their answer; and sent information of this affair to the King [of Spain], as well as of the bad condition of the fortress, so that orders might be given for the fortification of it, and [that] there should be directions [given] for the providing it with men, artillery, and military stores.—*Decades*, ii., *Book* v., *Chapter* 3., *Ed.* 1601.

Thus from four perfectly distinct and independent sources, comes to us the certainty of this English voyage across the Atlantic in 1527; for a further discussion of which see that masterpiece in its way, and rare book (in the Eastern hemisphere at least), Mr. J. G. Kohl's *History of the Discovery of Maine*, published by the Maine Historical Society at Portland, in 1869; and Mr. Biddle's *Memoir of Sebastian Cabot*, London 1832. Both these writers think that the Piedmontese pilot was the celebrated Verazzano.

It is interesting to know that John Rut got back safely to England. For in Sept.-Dec. 1528, while still in the command

[1] The Indian word for cedfish, applied by S. Cabot to the land he first discovered, and afterwards loosely and vaguely applied to the American coast from Labrador far to the southward. Here it evidently includes Newfoundland, Nova Scotia, and the northern seaboard States of the United States.

[2] This number may be an exaggeration. If it be correct, the English squadron must have met thirty or forty other fishing-boats on the Newfoundland 'banks,' beside the fourteen they saw in St. John's harbour

[3] Mona is a small island in the track from Port Rico to Santo Domingo.

of the *Mary of Guildford*, he was employed in freighting home, on the King's behalf, wine from Bourdeaux. See *Royal M.S.* 14. *B. xxix.*, in the British Museum.

8. We have seen by the above that the King's ships left the Thames on 20th May 1527. Whatever else may be doubtful, that is certain: and therefore it is equally certain that the 'Book' which Robert Thorne, the Bristol merchant, wrote at Seville in that year, and sent to Doctor Leigh, the King's almoner, and the English ambassador in Spain, had nothing to do with the fitting out of that London expedition.

This far-seeing discourse, with its preliminary exhortation to the King, was first printed by R[ichard] H[akluyt] in his *Diuers Voyages, &c.* in 1582. Its only date is 1527, which occurs twice; each time after the author's signature—'Robert Thorne. 1527.' As Hakluyt reproduced Thorne's curious 'Carde' or map, it is quite evident that he had before him, in 1582, the original and autographic book penned by the author; and therefore the date 1527 must be accepted by us without a doubt.

Now it was the English custom at that time, to reckon the year from the 25th March, the Feast of the Annunciation of the Virgin. The 'Book' was therefore written at the earliest after the 25th March 1527.

The two following passages in it, taken together, would seem to show that it was not *written* till the summer was far advanced, probably while Rut's expedition was skirting the American coast.

In a flote of three ſhippes and a carauell that went from this citie, armed by the merchauntes of it, which departed in Aprill laſt paſt, I and my partner haue 1400. Ducates that we employed in the ſayd fleete, principally for that two Engliſhmen friends of mine [*see p.* xiii.] whiche are ſomewhat learned in Coſmographie, ſhoulde go in the ſame ſhippes, to bring mee certaine relation of the ſituation of the countrey, and to bee experte in the Nauigation of thoſe ſeas, and there to haue informations of many other things, and aduiſe that I deſire to know eſpecially. Seeing in theſe quarters are ſhips, and marriners of that countrey, and cardes [*charts*] by which they ſayle, though much vnlike ours, that they ſhould procure to haue the ſaid cards, and learne howe they vnderſtande them, and eſpecially to know what Nauigation they haue for theſe Ilandes Northwardes and Northeaſtwarde. *B.* 4.

But if it pleaſe God that into Englande I may come with your Lordſhip, I will ſhewe ſome coniectures of reaſon though againſt the generall opinion of Coſmographers, by which ſhall appeare this that I ſay not to lacke ſome foundation. And tyll that time I beſeeche your Lordſhip let it bee put to ſilence: and in the meane ſeaſon, it may pleaſe God to ſende our two Engliſhmen, that are gone to the ſpicerie, which may alſo bring more plaine declaration of yat which in this caſe might be required. . . *D.* 3.

It would seem that Thorne by 'April laſt paſte' means April 1527; for if he had intended April 1526, and wrote this 'Book' in the seven days of 25-31 March, then by English custom reckoned as the first days of 1527, he would assuredly have said 'April laſt year.' It is also evident from the allusion that a considerable time had elapsed since the two Englishmen had left for the West Indies; and that, at the time of writing, Thorne was looking forward to their return. The earliest approximate date that can therefore be assigned to its composition is the summer of 1527. Dr. Leigh did not return to England till January 1530.

We must therefore assign the occasion and preparation of this English voyage of Oceanic discovery of 1527 to other persons than Robert Thorne. Such an important effort, as this expedition most certainly was, could not have been suddenly determined upon, and probably originated in the previous year.

Thorne's 'Book' is also interesting for another reference to a very early English voyage across the Atlantic.

So that as afore is ſayde, if betweene our Newe founde landes or *Norway*, or Iſlande the Seas towarde the north be Nauigable, wee ſhoulde goe to theſe Ilandes a ſhorter way by more then 2000. leagues. And though wee went not in the ſaide Ilandes, for that they are the Emperours or Kinges of Portingale, wee ſhoulde by the way, and comming once to the line Equinoctiall, finde landes no leſſe riche in Golde and ſpicerie, as all other landes are vnder the ſame line Equinoctiall: and alſo ſhoulde, if wee may paſſe vnder the North, enioye the Nauigation of all Tartarie.

Which ſhould bee no leſſe profitable to our commodities of clothe, then theſe ſpiceries to the Emperour, and King of Portugale.

But it is a generall opinion of all Coſmographers that paſſing the ſeuenth clyme, the ſea is all ice, the colde ſo much that none can ſuffer it. And hitherto they had all the like opinion that vnder the line Equinoctiall for muche heate the lande was inhabitable.

Yet ſince by experience is proued no lande ſo much habitable nor more temperate. And to conclude, I thinke the ſame ſhoulde bee founde vnder the North, if it were experimented. For as all iudge, *Nihil fit vacuum in rerum naturæ*, ſo I iudge there is no lande inhabitable [i.e. *uninhabitable*], nor Sea innauigable. If I ſhould write the reaſon that preſenteth this vnto me, I ſhoulde be too prolixe, and it ſeemeth not requiſite for this preſent matter. God knoweth that though by it I ſhoulde haue no great intereſt, yet I haue had and ſtill haue no little minde of this buſineſſe: So that if I had facultie to my will, it ſhoulde bee ye firſt thing that I woulde vnderſtande, euen to attempt, if our Seas Northwarde be nauigable to the Pole or no. I reaſon, that as ſome ſickeneſſes are hereditarious, and come from the father to the ſonne, ſo this inclination or deſire of this diſcouerie I inherited of my father, which with another merchant of Briſtowe named Hugh Eliot were the diſcouerers of newe found lands, of the which there is no doubt, as now plainly appeareth, if the marriners would then haue been ruled and folowed their pilots mind, the lands of the Weſt Indies, from whence all the gold commeth, had been ours. For all is one coaſte, as by the carde appeareth, and [as] is aforeſaide. . . . *D.* 2.

A most excellent account of the merchant family of the Thornes of Bristol will be found in *English Merchants*, 1869, written by my fellow-student at King's College, Mr. H. R. Fox Bourne.

9. The next English Voyage on our record introduces us to a very famous name. It is thus preserved to us by Hakluyt.

A VOYAGE TO BRASILL, MADE BY THE WORSHIPFULL M[ASTER] WILLIAM HAUKINS OF PLIMMOUTH, FATHER TO SIR IOHN HAUKINS, KNIGHT, NOW LIVING,[1] IN THE YEERE 1530.

Lde *M. William Haukins* of *Plimmouth*, a man for his wiſdome, valure, experience, and ſkill in ſea cauſes, much eſteemed and beloued of King *Henry* the eight, and being one of the principall Sea Captaines in the West partes in his time, not contented with the ſhort voyages commonly then made onely to the knowen coaſtes of *Europe*, armed out a tall and goodly ſhip of his owne of the burthen of 250 tunnes, called the Pole [*Paule, Ed.* 1600] of *Plimmouth*, wherewith hee made three long and famous voyages vnto the coaſt of *Braſill*, a thing in thoſe dayes very rare, eſpecially to our Nation. In the courſe of which voyages he touched at the Riuer of *Seſtos* vpon the coaſt of *Guinea*, where hee trafiqued with the *Negroes*, and tooke of them Oliphants [Elephants, *Ed.* 1600] teeth, and other commodities which that

[1] As this was printed in 1589, old William Hawkins lived to see the overthrow of the Spanish Armada, and so is very properly introduced by the Rev. Canon Kingsley, with his usual truthfulness in details, in his celebrated Elizabethan romance of *Westward Ho!* as a very old man, present at Plymouth with the Captains who were waiting the arrival of the great Spanish Fleet.

place yeeldeth: and ſo arriuing on the coaſt of *Braſil*, vſed there ſuch diſcretion, and behaued himſelf ſo wiſely with thoſe ſauage people, that he grew into great familiaritie and friendſhip with them. Inſomuch that in his 2. voyage, one of the ſauage kings of the countrey of *Braſill*, was contented to take ſhippe with him, and to bee tranſported hither into Englaſid, whereunto *M*[*aſter*] *Haukins* agreed, leauing behinde in the Countrey as a pledge for his ſafetie and returne againe, one *Martin Cockeram* of *Plimmouth*. This *Braſilian* king being arriued [*i.e.* in 1531], was brought vp to London, and preſented to King *Henry* the 8. lying as then at *Whitehall*: at the ſight of whome, the King and all the Nobilitie did not a little marueile, and not without cauſe: for in his cheekes were holes made according to their ſauage maner, and therein ſmall bones were planted, ſtanding an inche out from the ſaid holes, which in his owne Countrey was reputed for a great brauerie. He had alſo another hole in his nether lippe, wherein was ſet a precious ſtone about the bigneſſe of a peaſe. All his apparell, behauiour, and geſture were very ſtrange to the beholders.

Hauing remained here the ſpace almoſt of a whole yere, and the king with his ſight fully ſatiſfied, *M*[*aſter*] *Haukins* according to his promiſe and appointment, purpoſed to conuey him againe into his Countrey: but it fell out in the way that, by change of ayre and alteration of diet, the ſaid ſauage king died at Sea, which was feared would turne to the loſſe of the life of *Martin Cockeram* his pledge. Neuertheleſſe, the Sauages being fully perſwaded of the honeſt dealing of our men with their Prince, reſtored againe the ſaide pledge, without any harme to him, or any man of the companie: which pledge of theirs they brought home againe into England, with their ſhippe fraighted and furniſhed with the commodities of the Countrey. Which *Martine Cockeram*, by the witneſſe of Sir *John Haukins*, being an officer in the towne of *Plimmouth*, was liuing within theſe fewe yeares.—*p.* 520, *Ed.* 1589.

10. Let us now look eastward. In 1592, (three years after the appearance of the First edition of his *Voyages*, &c.), Hakluyt became acquainted with a very old man, a Londoner named John Williamson, then apparently the sole survivor of our first traffic in the Levant; which dying out, had been revived in 1580.

These early Levant voyages were very important; inasmuch as they were the school in which some of the principal Agents and Captains of the Moscovy Company, like Richard Gray and Richard Chancellor, received their chief training.

A voyage made with the ſhippes called the Holy Croſſe, *and the* Matthew Gonſon, *to the Iles of* Candia *and* Chio, *about the yere* 1534, *according to a relation made to Maſter* Richard Hackluit *by* Iohn Williamſon, *Cooper and citizen of London, who liued in the yere* 1592, *and went as cooper in the* Mathew Gonſon *the next voyage after.*

THe ſhippes, called the *Holy Croſſe* and the *Matthew Gonſon*, made a voyage to the Ilandes of *Candia* and *Chio* in *Turkie*, about the yeere 1534. And in the *Mathew* went as Captaine M[aſter] *Richard Gonſon*, ſonne of old Maſter *William Gonſon*, paymaſter of the kings Nauie. In this firſt voyage [*i.e. of the two described by Williamson*] went *William Holſtocke* (who afterwards was Controuller of her Maieſties [*i.e.* Queen Elizabeth's] Nauie, lately deceaſed) as page to M[aſter] *Richard Gonſon* aforeſaid, which M[aſter] *Gonſon* died in *Chio* in this his firſt voyage. The ſhip called the *Holy Croſſe* was a ſhort ſhippe, and of burden 160 tunnes. And hauing beene a full yeere at the ſea in performance of this voyage, with great danger ſhe returned home, where, vpon her arriuall at *Blackwall*, in the riuer of *Thames*, her wine and oyle caſke was found ſo weake that they were not able to hoyſe them out of the ſhip, but were conſtrained to draw them as they lay, and put their wine and oyle into new veſſels, and ſo to vnlade the ſhippe. Their chiefe fraight was very excellent Muſcatels and red Malmeſie, the like whereof were ſeeldome ſeene before in *England*. They brought home alſo good quantitie of Tweete oyles, cotton woolles, Turkie Carpets, Galles, Cynamon, and ſome other ſpices. The ſaide ſhippe called the *Holy Croſſe* was ſo ſhaken in this voyage, and ſo weakened, that ſhe was layd vp in the docke, and neuer made voyage after.—*Vol.* II., *Part* I., *p.* 98, *Ed.* 1599.

Another voyage to the Iles of Candia *and* Chio *made by the ſhippe, the* Mathew Gonſon, *about the yeere* 1535, *according to the relation of* Iohn Williamſon, *then Cooper in the ſame ſhip, made to M*[*aſter*] Richard Hackliut, *in the yeare* 1592.

THe good ſhippe called the *Mathew Gonſon*, of burthen 300 tunnes, whereof was owner old M[aſter] *William Gonſon*, pay-maſter of the Kings Nauie, made her voyage in the yere 1535. In this ſhip went as Captaine, *Richard Gray*, who long after died in *Ruſſia*. Maſter *William Holſtocke*, afterward Controuller of the Quenes Nauie, went then as purſer in the ſame voyage. The Maſter was one *Iohn Pichet*, ſeruant to old M[aſter] *William Gonſon*. *Iames Rumnie* was Maſters mate. The maſter cooper was *Iohn Williamſon*, citizen of *London*, liuing in the yeere 1592, and dwelling in *Sa*[*i*]*nt Dunſtons* parish, in the Eaſt. The M[aſter] Gunner was *Iohn Godfrey* of *Briſtoll*. In this ſhip were 6 gunners and 4 trumpetters, all which foure trumpetters at our returne homewards went on land at *Meſſina* in the Iland of *Sicilia*, as our ſhip road there at anker, and gat them into the Gallies that lay neere vnto vs, and in them went to *Rome*. The whole number of our companie in this ſhip were about 100. men, we were alſo furniſhed with a great bote, which was able to carry 10 tunnes of water, which at our returne homewards we towed all the way from *Chio* vntil we came through the ſtraight of Gib[r]altar into the maine Ocean. We had alſo a great long boat and a ſkiff. We were out vpon this voyage eleuen months, yet in all this time there died of ſickneſſe but one man, whoſe name was *George Forreſt*, being ſeruant to our Carpenter called *Thomas Plummer*.—*Idem.*

The Island of Scio, the extreme point of the above two voyages, had long been the property of a Genoese family, the *Justiana*, under the sovereignty of the Senate of that city. How the Turks first put it to tribute, and finally took possession of it in 1568, is thus narrated in two letters, written on the 14th of February 1569 by an Englishman, Gaspar Campion, who had "traded in this countrey [*i.e.* the island and its vicinity] about this 30. yeres [*i.e.* 1539-1569], and haue beene maried in the towne of *Chio* full 24. yeres [*i.e.* 1544-1569]."

IT you ſhall vnderſtand that the Iſland of *Chio* in time paſt hath bene a *Signiorie* or lordſhip of it ſelfe, and did belong to the *Genowaies*. There were 24. of them that gouerned the iſland which were called *Mauneſes*. But in continuance of time the Turke waxed ſo ſtrong and mightie, that they, conſidering they were not able to keepe it, unleſſe they ſhould become his tributaries, becauſe the Iſland had no corne, nor any kind of vitailes to ſuſtaine themſelues, but onely that which muſt of neceſſitie come out of the Turkes dominions, and the fayd iſland being incloſed with the Turks round about, and but 12. miles from the Turks Continent, therefore the ſaid *Genowaies* did compound and agree to be the Turkes tributaries, and to pay him 14000. thousand ducates yeerely, Alwayes prouided that they ſhould keep their lawes both ſpiritual and temporall, as they did when the Iland was in their owne hands. Thus he granted them their priuiledge, which they inioyed for many yeeres, ſo that all ſtrangers and alſo many Engliſh men did trade thither of long continuance, and went and came in ſafety. In this meane time, the prince *Pedro Doria* (being a Genouois) became a captaine to ſerue the Emperour with 30. or 40. gallies againſt the Turke. And ſince that time diuers other captaines belonging to *Genoa* haue beene in the ſeruice of king *Philip* againſt the Turke. Moreouer, whenſoeuer the Turke made out any army, he perceiued that no nation did him more hurt then thoſe Genouois, who were his tributaries. Likewiſe at the Turkes ſiege of *Malta*, before which place he lay a great while, with loſſe of his men, and alſo of his gallies, he found none ſo troubleſome vnto his force as one *Iuanette Doria*, a Genouois, and diuers others of the Iland of *Chio*, who were his tributaries. At which ſight, he tooke ſuch diſpleaſure againſt them of *Chio*, that he ſent certaine of his gallies to the Iland, for to ſeiſe vpon all the goods of the 24. *Mauneſes*, and to turne them with their wiues and children out of the Iland; but they would let none other depart, becauſe the Iland ſhould not be vnpeopled. So that now the Turke hath ſent one of his chiefe men to rule there.—*Hakluyt, Vol.* II., *Part* I., *p.* 114, *Ed.* 1599.

Another letter of Campion's, begins thus:

IT may pleaſe your worſhip to vnderſtand, that as concerning the voyage to *Chio*, what great profit would be gotten, both for merchants and alſo for owners of ſhippes (as it was well knowen in thoſe dayes when the *Matthew Gonſon*, the *Trinitie Fitzwilliams*, and the *Sauiour* of *Briſtow*, with diuers other ſhips, which traded thither yerely, and made their voyage in ten or twelue moneths, and the longeſt in a yeere), M[aſter] *Francis Lambert*, M[aſter] *Iohn Brooke*, and M[aſter] *Drauer* can truely inform you hereof at large. And by reaſon that wee haue not traded into thoſe parts theſe many yeeres [*i.e.* previous to 1569], and the Turke is growen mighty, whereby our ſhips doe not trade as they were woont . . . .—*Hakluyt, Voyages, Vol.* II., *Part* I., *p.* 116, *Ed.* 1599.

Finally we may take leave on this occasion of the interesting subject of the early English trade in the Mediterranean, with the following note of Hakluyt's.

THis trade into the Leuant. . . . was very vſuall and much frequented from the yeere of our Lord 1511 till the yeere 1534, and afterwards alſo, though not ſo commonly, vntil the yeere 1550, when the barke *Aucher* under the conduct of M[aſter] *Roger Bodenham* made a proſperous voyage into *Sicilia*, *Candio*, *Sio*, and other places within the Leuant. Since which time the foreſaid trade (notwithſtanding the grand *Signiors* ample priuiledge granted to M[aſter] *Anthony Ienkenſon* 1553, and the ſtrong and weighty reaſons of *Gaſpar Campion* for that purpoſe) was vtterly diſcontinued, and in maner quite forgotten, as if it had neuer bene, for the ſpace of 20. yeares or more [*i.e.* from the date of Jenkinson's privilege of 1553 until 1575; when the preliminary steps which resulted in the formation of the Turkey Company, were taken]. *Voyages, Vol.* II., *Part* I., *p.* 136, *Ed.* 1599.

11. We now come to the tragical English voyage to Newfoundland, in 1536; as narrated by Master Oliver Daubeny, a London merchant, to Hakluyt's cousin and namesake, Richard Hakluyt of the Inner Temple; and by Master Thomas Butts of Norfolk, to himself. It will ever be thought one of the worthiest acts of our younger Hakluyt's worthy life, that, for the simple assurance, with further details, of this voyage, he travelled 200 miles on horseback, probably into Norfolk and back.

The voyage of maſter Hore and diuers other Gentlemen, to Newfound land and Cape Breton, in the yeere 1536. *and in the* 28. *yeere of King Henry the eight.*

ONe maſter Hore of London, a man of goodly ſtature and of great courage, and giuen to the ſtudie of Coſmographie, in the 28. yeere of King Henry the 8. and in the yeere of our Lord 1536. encouraged diuers gentlemen and others, being aſſiſted by the kings fauour and good countenance, to accompany him in a voyage of diſcouerie vpon the Northweſt partes of America: wherein his perſwaſions tooke ſuch effect, that within ſhort ſpace many gentlemen of the innes of court, and of Chauncerie, and diuers other of good worſhip deſirous to ſee the ſtrange things of the world, very willingly entered into the action with him, ſome of whoſe names were as followeth: M[aſter] Wickes, a gentleman of the Weſt countrey of fiue hundred markes [*equivalent to an income of £2500 of the present day*] by the yeere liuing. Maſter Tucke, a gentleman of Kent. Maſter Tuckfield. M[aſter] Thomas Buts, the ſonne of Sir William Buts, Knight of Norfolke, which is yet aliue, and from whoſe mouth I wrote moſt of this relation. Maſter Hardie, Maſter Biron, Maſter Carter, Maſter Wright, Maſter Raſtall Sarieant Raſtals brother, Maſter Ridley, and diuers other, which all were in the admirall called the Trinitie, a ſhip of ſeuen ſcore tunnes, wherein M[aſter]. Hore himſelfe was imbarked. In the other ſhippe, whoſe name was the Minion, went a very learned and vertuous gentlemen, one maſter Armigil Wade, father to the worſhipfull maſter William Wade, now clerke of the priuie counſell, Master Oliuer Daubeney merchant of London, M[aſter] Ioy afterward gentleman of the kings chappell, with diuers other of good account. The whole number that went in the two tall ſhips aforeſayd, to wit, the Trinitie and the Minion, were about ſix ſcore perſons, whereof 30. were gentlemen, which all were muſtered in warlike maner at Grauеſend, and after the receiuing of the ſacrament, they embarked themſelues at the end of Aprill, 1536.

From the time of their ſetting out from *Grauеſende*, they were very long at ſea, to witte, aboue two moneths, and neuer touched any lande vntill they came to part of the Weſt *Indies* about *Cape Breton*, ſhaping their courſe thence Northeaſtwards, vntill they came to the Iſland of *Penguin*, which is very full of rockes and ſtones, whereon they went and founde it full of great foules white and gray, as bigge as geeſe, and they ſawe infinite nombers of their egges. They draue a great nomber of the foules into their boates vpon their ſailes, and tooke vp many of their egges, the foule they flead, and their ſkinnes were like hony combes full of holes being flead off: they dreſſed and eate them, and found them to be very good and nouriſhing meate. They ſawe alſo ſtore of beares both blacke and white, of whome they killed ſome, and tooke them for no badde foode.

M[aſter] *Oliuer Dawbeney*, which (as it is before mentioned) was in this voyage, and in the *Minion*, tolde *M[aſter] Richard Hakluyt* of the middle Temple theſe things following: to wit, That after their arriuall in *Newfound land*, and hauing bene there certaine dayes at ancre, and not hauing yet ſeene any of the naturall people of the Countrey, the ſame *Dawbeny* walking one day on the hatches ſpied a boate with Sauages of thoſe partes, rowing downe the bay towarde them, to gaſe vpon the ſhippe and our people, and taking viewe of their comming alooſe, hee called to ſuch as were vnder hatches, and willed them to come vp if they would ſee the naturall people of the Countrey, that they had ſo long and ſo much deſired to ſee: Whereupon they came vp and tooke view of the Sauages rowing toward them and their ſhippe, and vpon the viewe they manned out a ſhipboote to meete them and to take them. But they ſpying our ſhipboote making towards them, returned with maine force, and fled into an Iſland that laye vp in the bay or riuer there, and our men purſued them into the Iſland, and the Sauages fledde and eſcaped: but our men founde a fire, and the ſide of a beare on a wodden ſpit left at the ſame by the Sauages that were fledde.

There in the ſame place they founde a boot of leather garniſhed on the vtter ſide of the calfe in certain braue trailes, as it were of rawe ſilke, and alſo founde a certaine great warme mitten: And theſe carried with them, they returned to their ſhippe, not finding the Sauages, nor ſeeing any thing elſe beſides the ſoyle, and the things growing in the ſame, which chiefly were ſtore of fire and pine trees.

And further, the ſaid *M. Dawbeny* told him, that lying there they grewe into great want of victuals, and that there they found ſmall reliefe, more then that they had from the neſt of an *Oſprey*, that brought hourely to her yong great plentie of diuers ſorts of fiſhes. But ſuch was the famine that increaſed amongſt them from day to day, that they were forced to ſeeke to relieue themſelues of rawe herbes and rootes that they fought on the maine: but the famine increaſing and the reliefe of herbes being to little purpoſe to ſatiſfie their inſatiable hunger, in the fieldes and deſertes here and there, the fellowe killed his mate while hee ſtouped to take vp a roote for his reliefe, and cutting out pieces of his body whome hee had murthered, broyled the ſame on the coles, and greedily deuoured them.

By this meane the company decreaſed, and the officers knewe not what was become of them; and it fortuned that one of the company driuen with hunger to ſeeke abroade for reliefe, founde out in the fields the ſauour of broyled fleſh, and fell out with one that hee would ſuffer him and his fellowes to ſterue, enioying plentie as he thought: And this matter growing to cruel ſpeaches, he that had the broyled meate, burſt out into theſe wordes, If thou wouldeſt needes knowe, the broyled meate that I had, was a piece of ſuch a mans buttocke. The report of this brought to the ſhip, the Captaine found what became of thoſe that were miſſing, and was perſwaded that ſome of them were neither deuoured with wilde beaſtes, nor yet deſtroyed with the Sauages: And hercupon he ſtood vp and made a notable Oration, containing, How much theſe dealings offended the Almightie, and vouched the Scriptures from firſt to laſt what God had in caſes of diſtreſſe done for them that called vpon him, and told them that the power of the Almightie was then no leſſe, then in al former time it had bene. And added, that if it had not pleaſed God to haue holpen them in that diſtreſſe, that yet it had been better to be puniſhed in body, and to haue liued euerlaſtingly, then to haue relieued for a poore time their mortal bodies, and to bee condemned euerlastingly both body and ſoule to the vnquenchable fire of hel.

And thus hauing ended to that effect, he began to exhort to repentance, and beſought all the company to pray, that it might pleaſe God to looke vpon their miſerable preſent ſtate, and for his owne mercie to relieue the ſame. And ſuch was the mercie of God, that the ſame night there arriued a French ſhippe in that port, well furniſhed with vittaile, and ſuch was the policie of the Engliſh, that they become maſters of the ſame; and changing ſhips and vitayling them, they ſet ſaile to come into England.

In their iourney they were ſo farre Northwards, that they ſawe mightie Iſlands of yce in the ſummer ſeaſon, on which were haukes and other foules to reſt themſelues, being wearie of flying ouer farre from the maine. They ſawe alſo certaine great white foules with redde bils and redde legs, ſomewhat bigger then Herons, which they ſuppoſed to be ſtorkes. They arriued at *S*[*aint*]. *Ines* in Cornewall about the ende of October. From thence they departed to a certaine Caſtle belonging to sir *Iohn Luttrel*, where *M*[*aſter*] *Thomas Buts* and *M*[*aſter*] *Raſtall* and other gentlemen of the voyage were very friendly intertained: after that they came to the Earle of Bathe at *Bathe*, and thence to *Briſtoll*, and ſo to London. *M*[*aſter*] *Buts* was ſo changed in the voyage with hunger and miſerie, that sir *William* his father and my Lady his mother knewe him not to be their ſonne, vntill they found a certaine ſecret marke which was a wart vpon one of his knees, as he tolde me *Richard Hakluyt of Oxforde* himſelfe, to whome I rode 200. miles onely to learne the whole trueth of this voyage from his owne mouth, as being the onely man now aliue [*i.e.* in or about 1589] that was in this diſcouerie.

Certaine moneths after, thoſe Frenchmen came into England, and made complaint to king *Henry* the 8: the King cauſing the matter to be examined, and finding the great diſtreſſe of his ſubiects, and the cauſes of the dealing ſo with the French, was ſo moued with pitie, that hee puniſhed not his ſubiects, but of his owne purſe made full and royal recompenſe vnto the French.

In this diſtreſſe of famine, the Engliſh ſomewhat relieue their vitall ſpirits by drinking at the ſprings the freſh water out of certaine wooden cups, out of which they had drunke their *Aqua compoſita* before.—*Hakluyt, Voyages, pp.* 517-519, *Ed.* 1589.

12. These are all the oceanic voyages performed by the English in the reign of Henry VIII. which we have been able to trace. It was under Edward, that our sailors first began to creep down the African coast. The special significance of these voyages lay in the then accredited proprietorship (through the Papal Bull, reprinted at *pp.* 201-204) of the Portugese to the entire continent of Africa; and in the intentional and studied ignorance of its coast line, in which the World was kept by that nation. Every English voyage to its west coast was therefore at once an act of revolt against the Papacy, and a challenge to the pretensions of Portugal.

The Levant trade was open to all who would dare to run the gauntlet of the Turks. The Spaniards recognised the claim of the English discovery, by the Cabots, of Baccalaos; and had not yet worked up northward to it. But the African sea coast, so honourably and so patiently discovered, was (by all laws, human and divine, hitherto accepted) the possession of its brave discoverers. It was therefore a new impulse, that made our English ships, passing the familiar Straits of Gibraltar on their left hand, to go forward southward, first to Barbary, and then to Guinea; cost what it might.

Discoveries are made by successive steps, one after another; and the passage of English ships around the world and to the Eastern seas was but the succession and development of these first attempts to Marocco. All that we know of these Barbary voyages is preserved to us by Hakluyt, who collected his information forty to fifty years after the event, and has thus transmitted it to us.

THE FIRST VOYAGE TO BARBARY IN 1551, DESCRIBED BY JAMES ALDAY, SERVANT TO SEBASTIAN CABOT.

The originall of the firſt voyage for traffique into the kingdom of *Marocco* in *Barbarie*, begun in the yeere 1551, with a tall ſhip called the *Lion* of *London*, whereof went as captaine Maſter *Thomas Windham*, as appeareth by this extract of a letter of *Iames Aldaie*, to the worſhipfull maſter *Michael Locke*, which Aldaie profeſſeth himſelfe to haue bene the firſt inuenter of this trade.

WOrſhipfull Sir, hauing lately bene acquainted with your intent to proſecute the olde intermitted diſcouerie for *Catai*, if therein with my knowledge, trauell or induſtrie I may doe you ſeruice, I am readie to doe it, and therein to aduenture my life to the vttermoſt point. Trueth it is, that I haue bene by ſome men (not my friends) euill ſpoken of at London, ſaying that although I be a man of knowledge in the Arte of Nauigation and Coſmographie, and that I haue bene the inuenter of ſome voyages that be now growen to great effect; yet ſay they maliciouſly and without iuſt cauſe, that I haue not bene willing at any ſeaſon to proceed in thoſe voyages that I haue taken in hand, taking example eſpecially of two voyages. The one was when I was maſter in the great Barke Aucher [*which left Gravesend on 13th November* 1550] for the *Leuant*, in which voyage I went not, but the cauſes they did not know of my let from the ſame, nor of the other. But firſt the very trueth is, that I was from the ſame voyage letted by the Princes letters, which my Maſter *Sebaſtian Gabota* had obatined for that purpoſe, to my great griefe.

And as touching the ſecond voyage which I inuented for the trade of *Barbarie*, the liuing God knoweth that I ſay moſt true, that when the great ſweate was [*The sweating sickness began in London on 9th July* 1551, *and continued till the following September*] (whereon the chiefe of thoſe with whom I ioyned in that voyage died, that is to ſay, Sir *Iohn Tutterell*, *Iohn Fletcher*, *Henry Oſtrich* and others), I my ſelfe was alſo taken with the ſame ſweate in *London*, and after it, whether with euill diet in keeping, or how I know not, I was caſt into ſuch an extreame feuer, as I was neither able to ride nor goe; and the ſhippe being at *Portſmouth*, *Thomas Windham* had her away from thence before I was able to ſtand vpon my legges, by whom I loſt at that inſtant foureſcore pound [= £800 *of the present day*]. Beſides I was appointed by them that died (if they had liued) to haue had the whole gouernment both of ſhippe and goods, becauſe I was to them the ſole inuenter of that trade.

In the firſt voyage to *Barbary* there were two *Moores*, being noble men, whereof one was of the Kings blood, conueyed by the ſaid Maſter *Thomas Windham* into their countrey out of *England*.

Yours humble at your commandement, JAMES ALDAY.

THE SECOND VOYAGE TO BARBARY IN 1552, DESCRIBED BY MASTER JAMES THOMAS.

The ſecond voyage to *Barbary* in the yeere 1552. Set foorth by the right worſhipful Sir *Iohn Yorke*, Sir *William Ger*[*r*]*ard*, Sir *Thomas Wroth*, Maſter *Frances Lambert*, Maſter *Cole*, and others. Written by the relation of Maſter *Iames Thomas*, then Page to Maſter *Thomas Windham*, chiefe Captaine of this voyage.

THe ſhippes that went on this voyage were three, whereof two were of the Riuer of Thames, That is to ſay, the *Lyon* of *London*, whereof Maſter *Thomas Windham* was Captaine and part owner, of about an hundred and fiftie tunnes: The other was the *Buttolfe* [*Botolph*] about foureſcore tunnes, and a *Portugall Carauel* bought of certaine *Portugals* in *Newport* in *Wales*, and fraighted for this voyage, of ſumme ſixtie tunnes. The number of men in the Fleete were an hundred and twentie. The Maſter of the *Lyon* was one *Iohn Kerry* of *Mynhe*[*a*]*d* in Somerſetſhire, his Mate was *Dauid Landman*. The chiefe Captaine of this ſmall Fleete was Maſter *Thomas Windham* a Norfolke gentleman borne, but dwelling at *Marſhfield-parke* in Somerſetſhire.

This Fleete departed out of *King*[*s*]-*rode* neere *Briſtoll* about the beginning of May 1552. being on a Monday in the morning [*The 2d and 9th of*

May 1552, *were Mondays*], and the Monday fortnight next enfuing in the euening came to an ancker at their firſt part in the roade *Zafia* or *Aſafi* on the coaſt of *Barbarie*, ſtanding in 32. degrees of latitude, and there put on land part of our marchandiſe to be conueid by land to the citie of *Marocco*: which being done, and haue refreſhed our ſelues with victuals and water, we went to the ſecond port called *Santa Cruz*, where we diſcharged the reſt of our goods, being good quantitie of linnen and woollen cloth, corall, amber, Let, and diuers other things well accepted of the *Moores*. In which road we found a French ſhip, which not knowing whether it were warre or peace between *England* and *France*, drewe her ſelfe as neere vnder the towne wals as ſhe could poſſible, crauing aide of the towne for her defence, if need were, which in deed ſeeing vs drawe neere, ſhot at us a piece from the wals, which came ouer the *Lion* our Admirall, between the maine maſte and foremaſt. Whereupon we comming to an anker, preſently came a pinnes aboord vs to know what we were, who vnderſtanding that we had bene there the yere before [*This confirms Alday's ſtatement*], and came with good leaue of their king in merchant wiſe, were fully ſatiſfied, and gaue vs good leaue to bring our goods peaceably on ſhore, where the Viceroy, whoſe name was *Sibill Manache*, within ſhort time after came to viſite vs, and vſed vs with all curteſie. By diuers occaſions we ſpent here very neere three moneths before we could get in our lading, which was Sugar, Dates, Almonds, and Malaſſos or ſugar Syrrope. And for all our being here in the heate of the Sommer, yet none of our company periſhed by ſickneſſe.

Our ſhips being laden, wee drew into the Sea for a Weſterne wind for *England*. But being at ſea, a great leake fell vpon the *Lion*, ſo that we were driuen to *Lancerota* and *Forteuentura*, where, betweene the two Ilands, we came to a road, whence we put on land out of our ſayd ſhip 70. cheſtes of Sugar vpon *Lancerota* with ſome dozen or ſixteene of our company, where the inhabitants ſuppoſing we had made a wrongfull prize of our carauell, ſuddenly came with force vpon our people, among whom I my ſelfe was one, tooke vs priſoners, and ſpoiled the ſugars: which thing being perceiued from our ſhips, they manned out three boates, thinking to reſcue vs, and draue the Spaniards to flight, whereof they ſlewe eighteene, and took their gouernour of the Iland priſoner, who was a very aged gentleman about 70. yeeres of age. But chaſing the enemie ſo farre for our recouerie, as pouder and arrowes wanted, the Spaniardes perceiuing this, returned, and in our mens retire [*retreat*] they ſlewe ſix of them. Then a Parle[y] grew, in the which it was agreed, that we the priſoners ſhould be by them reſtored, and they receiue their old gouernour, giuing vs a teſtimonie vnder his and their hands what damages wee had there receiued; the which damages were there reſtored, and made good by the King of Spaine his marchantes on our returne into England.

After we had ſearched and mended our eake, being returned aboord, we came vnder ſaile, and as wee were going to the ſea on the one ſide of the Iland, the *Cacafuego* and other ſhips of the King of *Portugals Armada* entered at the other, and came to anker in the road from whence we were but newly departed, and ſhot off their great ordinance in our hearing. And here by the way it is to bee vnderſtood that the *Portugals* were much offended with this our new trade into *Barbarie*, and both in our voiage the yeere before, as alſo in this they gaue out in *England* by their marchants, that if they tooke vs in thoſe partes, they would vſe vs as their mortall enemies, with great threats and menaces. But by God and good prouidence wee eſcaped their handes.

From this Iland ſhaping our courſe for *England*, we were ſeuen or eight weekes before we could reach the coaſt of *England*. The firſt port wee entered into was the hauen of *Plimmouth*, from whence within ſhort time wee came into the Thames, and landed our merchandiſe at *London*, about the ende of the moneth of October 1552. —*Hakluyt, Voyages, Vol.* II., *Part* II., *pp.* 7-9, Ed. 1599.

13. All these English Voyages, therefore, had been planned and carried out before either of the two following Works, translated &c. by Eden, had come from the press. As he has given no account of them; it has been all the more necessary to say thus much here, in order to shew that in these *very* early days of oceanic discovery, our forefathers were not altogether idle.

III.

A Unique, imperfect, copy of *A new interlude and a mery of the nature of the . iiij. elementes, &c.*, written in the reign of Henry VIII., and probably printed [? by John Rastel] about 1519, is in the Garrick Collection of Plays, in the British Museum (Press mark, C. 39, b. 17).

This interlude contains [at *C i.*] the following reference to the New World, in a dialogue between *Experyence* and *Studyous desire*:—

Ex. ¶ Syr this ys ynglande lyenge here
And this is skotlande yat Ioyneth him nere
Cõpassyd a boute euery where
With the occian see rownde
¶ And next from them westwardly
Here by hym selfe alone doth ly.
Irelande that holsome grounde
¶ Here than is the narowe seey
To Calyce and Boleyne the next wey
And flaunders in this parte
Here lyeth fraunce next hym ioynynge
And spayn southwarde from thens standynge
And portyngale in this quart
This contrey is called Italye
Beholde where Rome in ye myddes doth ly
And Naples here be yonde
And this lytell See that here is
Is callyd the Gulfe of Venys
And here venys doth stande
¶ As for almayne lyeth this way
Here lyeth denmarke and norway
And northwarde on this syde
There lyeth Iselonde when men do fyshe
But be yonde that so colde it is
No man may there abyde
¶ This See is called the great Occyan
So great it is that never man
Coude tell it sith the worlde began
Tyll nowe within this. xx. yere
Westwarde be founde new landes
That we neuer harde tell of before this
By wrytynge nor other meanys
Yet many nowe haue ben there
¶ And that contrey is so large of rome
Muche lenger than all cristendome
Without fable or gyle
For dyuers maryners haue it tryed
And sayled streyght by the coste syde
Aboue. v. thousand myle
¶ But what commodytes be within
No man can tell nor well Imagin
But yet not longe a go
Some men of this contrey went
By the kynges noble consent
It for to serche to that entent
And coude not be brought therto
¶ But they that were the ventere[r]s

Haue cause to curse their maryners
Fals of promys and dissemblers
That falsly them betrayed
Which wold take no paine to saile farther
Than their owne lyst and pleasure
Wherfore that vyage and dyuers other
Suche kaytyffes haue distroyed
¶ O what thynge a had be than
Yf that they that be englyshe men
Myght haue ben the furst of all
That there shulde haue take possessyon
And made furst buyldynge and habytacion
A memory perpetuall
And also what an honorable thynge
Bothe to the realme and to the kynge
To haue had his domynyon extendynge
There into so farre a grounde
Whiche the noble kynge of late memory
The most wyse prynce the. vij. He[n]rry
Causyd furst for to be founde
¶ And what a great meritoryouse dede
It were to haue the people instructed
To lyue more vertuously
And to lerne to knowe of men the maner
And also to knowe god theyr maker
Whiche as yet lyue all be[a]stly
For they nother knowe god nor the deuell
Nor neuer harde tell of heuyn nor hell
Wrytynge nor other scripture
But yet in the stede of god almyght
The[y] honour the sone for his great lygg[h]t
For that doth them great pleasure
¶ Buyldynge nor house they haue non[e] at all
But wodes / cotes / and cauys small
No merueyle though it be so
For they vse no maner of yron
Nother in to[o]le nor other wepon
That shulde helpe them therto
¶ Copper they haue which is founde
In dyuers places aboue the grounde
Yet they dyg not therfore
For as I sayd they haue non[e] yryn
Wherby they shuld in the yerth myne
To serche for any wore
¶ Great haboundaunce of woddes ther be
Moste parte vyr and pyne aple tre
Great ryches myght come therby
Both py[t]che and tarre and sope asshys
As they make in the eest londes
By brynnyng therof only
¶ Fyshe they haue so great plente
That in hauyns take and slayne they be
With stauys withouten fayle
Nowe frenchemen and other haue founden the trade
That yerely of fyshe there they lade
A boue an. C. [*hundred*] sayle
¶ But in the south parte of that contrey
The people there go nakyd alway
The lande is of so great hete
And in the north parte all the clothes
That they were / is but be[a]stes skynnes
They haue no nother fete [*feat*]
But howe the people furst began
In that contrey or whens they cam
For clerkes it is a questyon[.]
Other thynges mo I haue in store
That I coude tel therof but now no more
Tyll a nother season

Stu. ¶ Than at your pleasure shew some other thinge
Yt lyketh me so wel your commyninge
We can not talke a mys

Ex. ¶ Than wyl I torne a gayne to my matter
Of Cosmogryfy where I was err [*ere*]
Beholde take hede to this
¶ Loo estwarde beyonde ye great occyan
Here entereth the see callyd mediterran
Of. ii. M. [*two thousand*] myle of lengthe
The Soudans contrey lyeth here by
The great Turke on ye north syde doth ly
A man of merueylous strengthe
¶ This sayde north parte is callyd europa
And this south parte callyd affrica
This eest parte is callyd ynde
But this newe landes founde lately
Ben callyd america by cause only
Americus dyd furst them fynde
¶ Loo Iherusalem lyeth in this contrey
And this be yonde is the red see
That moyses maketh of mencyon
This quarter is India mior
And this quarter India maior
The lande of prester Iohn
¶ But northwarde this way as ye see.
Many other straunge regions ther be
And people that we not knowe
But estwarde on the see syde
A prynce there is that ruleth wyde
Called the Cane of catowe [1]
¶ And this is called the great eest see
Which goth all a longe this wey
Towardes the new landis agayne
But whether that see go thyther dyrectly
Or if any wyldernes bytwene them do ly
No man knoweth for certeyne
But these newe landes by all cosmografye
Frome the cane of catous lande can not lye
Lyteil paste a thousand myle
But from those new landes men may sayle playne
Estwarde and cum to englande againe
Where we began ere whyle
¶ Lo all this parte of the yerth which I
Haue here discryuyd openly
The north parte we do it call
But the south parte on the other syde
Ys as large as this full and as wyde
Whiche we knowe nothynge at all
¶ Nor whether ye most parte be lande or see
Nor whether the people that there be
Be be[a]styall or connynge
Nor whether they knowe good or no
Nor howe they beleue nor what they do
Of this we knowe nothynge

The Voyage referred to, clearly took place in Henry VIII.'s reign. It was probably the Bristol expedition sent out by N. Thorne's father and Hugh Eliot, which discovered Newfoundland; of which Thorne tells us, at *p.* xvi, "There is no doubt, as now plainly appeareth, if the marriners would then haue been ruled and folowed their pilots mind, the lands of the West Indies, from whence all the gold commeth, had beene ours."

[1] *Khan of Cathay.*

IV.

THE special purpose of this Preface has now been carried out. It has been to shew what our forefathers actually accomplished, ere Eden set about the following Translations, or during the time he was actually engaged upon them: and so to supplement the other accounts of Oceanic Discovery contained in the volume.

We have, in conclusion, only space briefly to touch upon one other point, and that is but a simple act of justice.

Most notable is Eden's position as a Man of Science in the Tudor Age. He had the true modest scientific spirit; as when he wrote in 1562, to Sir W. Cecil, "Syth only the respecte of suche vertues as it hathe pleased you to thinke commendable in me, hath moved your Honour not only in maner to seeme carefull for me howe I maye hereafter with quietnesse spende my tyme in studie (as is my most desire)," *p.* xliii.; and likewise when, in 1574, he thus dwelt at large upon what he did *not* know, a list of disqualifications that must not be pressed too literally, "For yf there be any thing in me, wherein I maye by good reason please my selfe, it is cheefely this, that I haue euer loued and honoured men of singular vertue or qualitie, in what so euer laudable Art or Science, euen of those whereof mee selfe have litle knowledge, as are Geometrie, Astronomie, Architecture, Musicke, Payntyng, feates of Armes, inuentions of Ingens, and suche lyke," *p.* xlvi.

But whatever may have been his knowledge or his ignorance, actual or relative; Eden had already grasped the Inductive Method. His life overlapped that of Lord Bacon. May he not be regarded as a near Herald and Forerunner of the Father of Scientific Enquiry, when he uses such language as this; of which his whole life was but the fuller expression?

"Experience, the teacher and mestres of all sciences, for lacke of whose ayde (experience I meane) lyke as many greate wittes haue fallen into great errours, so by her ayde, many base and common wittes haue attayned to the knowledge and practise of such wonderfull effectes, as could hardely be comprehended by the discourse of reason. . . . .

"Nought els to say, but that experience to be most certayn which is ioyned with reason or speculacion, and that reason to be most sure which is confirmed with experience." *p.* 9.

And thus, from henceforth will the reputation of Richard Eden continue to increase, both as a Scholar and a Scientist.

[The First English book on America.

¶ Of the newe landes and of ye people founde by the messengers of the kynge of portyngale named Emanuel.

Of the. x. dyuers nacyons crystened.

Of pope Iohn and his landes and of the costely keyes and wonders malo-dyes that in that lande is.]

[A Note on Jan van Doesborch, a printer at Antwerp, between 1508-1530 A.D.

ANything that concerns the printer of the first English Work relating to America, must henceforth be of increasing interest.

There does not appear to be in existence, any typographical history of Antwerp for the period during which the first Text in this volume was produced.

The learned and most courteous Librarian of the Royal Library at the Hague, Dr M. F. A. G. Campbell, the author of the well-known *Annales de la Typographie néerlandaise au XVe siècle*, La Haye, 1874-8, 8vo, thus writes, on the 21st April 1885.

> How glad should I have been if I had been able to give you full information about Jan van Doesborch, the Antwerp printer in the first half of the sixteenth century. But, alas, the History of Printing in that century has been, without any sound reason, neglected to that point that even sixteenth-century books are now-a-days more rare than their predecessors of the fifteenth. If Jan van Doesborch had had only one foot in the fifteenth century, I should have been able to give you matter enough to compose his history: because I, and my predecessor as Librarian of this Library (Mr Holtrop), have devoted the better part of our lives to the study of the typography and typographers before the year 1500. Now John of Doesborch did not print till after 1508, because in that year, he entered the Guild of St Lucas at Antwerp, as *verlichtere*, "miniature painter."

When such an authority as Dr Campbell writes thus, the present Editor may be excused of his ignorance on this subject. Nevertheless the following is offered as a mere beginning of this study.

2. Doesburg is a Dutch town, about ten miles to the east of Arnheim.

Jan van Doesborch, Doesborcke, Doesburgh, or as he styles himself in (*f*) the *xv. tokens*, Iohan fro doesborch, may have succeeded to the printing business of Roeland van der Dorpe, at Antwerp. He was contemporary with our Wynkyn de Worde and Richard Pynson: and occupies a similar position in Antwerp typography, to that filled by those two English printers at Westminster and London.

He seems to have printed in three different houses. His earliest books were printed at the sign of *Aen dijsere wage*, "the Iron balance." Those produced about 1518, are printed "besides the *Camer porte*." His latest books, finished about 1530, are at *die Lombaerde veste*, "the Lombard fortress."

It is very remarkable that Doesborch should, at such an early date, have printed the English books that he did; especially such an important work as Arnold's *Chronicle*. He was probably employed in this work by some of the merchants of the English House at Antwerp. He stands in the same relation to our Literature at this time, that Hans Luft of Marburg did fifteen or twenty years later. No books are so scarce as the early English books printed by foreign printers on the Continent; of which the following Text is one of the earliest.

3. The first book attributed to this printer, by P. C. van der Meersch, in his *Recherches sur la vie et les travaux des imprimeurs Belges et Néerlandais établis à l'etranger*, i. 131, Gand 1856, is—

(*a*) *Die destructie van Troyen*, "the destruction of Troy." Antwerp, folio, no date.

The late eminent bookseller of Amsterdam, Mr Frederick Muller, issued, in 1872, a *Catalogue of Books, Maps, Plates on America; and of a remarkable Collection of Early Voyages*, offered by him for sale. At *p.* 6, he states that he acquired, in 1871, at the sale of an insignificant library at Antwerp, a volume containing four pieces, "all printed there in the first ten years of the 16th century."

One of these was—

(*b*) *Van der nieuwer werelt oft landtscap nieuwelier ghenoden vaden doorluch tighen conn. van Portugael door den alderbeste pyloet ofte zeekenedr d'werelt*, "Of the new world or landscape, newly found for the illustrious King of Portugal by the best pilot or mariner in the world." This is a translation from the Italian (through the Latin) into Dutch, of the Third Letter of Amerigo Vespucci. The colophon runs, *Gheprent Thantwerpen aen Dyseren waghe. Bi Jan van Doesborch*, "Printed at Antwerp, at the iron balance, by Jan van Doesborch."

It consists of eight unnumbered leaves, [with] 6 woodcuts. The verso of the last leaf is filled up by a wood engraving. On the recto of the first leaf [is the identical cornerwise engraving that is described hereafter at *p.* xxix., *col.* 2]; on the verso of leaf 1, Jonas thrown into the mouth of the whale; recto of leaf 3, four female aborigines [see *p.* xxviii.]; verso of leaf 4, fighting Indians [see *p.* xxix.]; verso of leaf 6, repeated from the recto of leaf 1; and verso of the last leaf, repeated from the recto of leaf 3.

Mr Muller states—

> The book bears no date, but it is out of question, that it has been printed in the period 1506-9, the time when all the separate editions of Vespuccius were published. It is one of the first productions of the famous printer, Jan van Doesborgh, at Antwerp; whose publications (principally romances of chivalry with woodcuts, curious popular books, &c.) rank among the rarest of the Antwerp printers. Just the kind of publications that makes it easy to understand that they have disappeared, as it were, under the hands of the reading public.

Another text in this precious volume is thus described, at *p.* 277, by Mr Muller—

(*c*) *Van de wonderlichede en costelichen van Pape Ians landendes*, "Of the wonders and precious things of Pope John's lands."

The remainder of the first page filled with four curious woodcuts, representing 1°, a wild man with a beast's head bearing a fish [see *p.* xxxv.]; 2°, an elephant [see *p.* xxxii.]; 3°, a griffon with a man in his paws [see *p.* xxxiv.]; and 4°, three men fighting against three birds [see *p.* xxxiii.]

Recto of the last leaf, *Gheprint Thantwerpen. Aen dijsere wage by my Jan. van Doesborch.* "Printed at Antwerp at the iron balance by me, Jan van Doesborch."

Eleven different woodcuts in the text, four of them repeated from the recto of leaf 1. On the 5th leaf, a woodcut of the bird Phœnix in flames [see *p.* xxxiv.] The verso of the last leaf filled with two wood engravings, one representing the Virgin with the Child, the other the printer's mark of Roeland van der Dorpe, used in 1497, &c. [a herald with his attributes, holding a trumpet].

It is therefore perfectly clear that the First English book on America is mainly a translated compilation from these two early Dutch tracts; and that most of the woodcuts of the English text had already appeared in its Dutch originals.

We therefore place next—

(*d*) *Of the new landes, &c.*

Clearly, the latest date that can be assigned to this tract is 1511. Had it been written later, the information contained in it would not have been so crude. See the progress of knowledge as shewn in the English Interlude of 1519, quoted at *p.* xx. It would seem to have been translated by a priest in the Low Countries, who had but an imperfect acquaintance with English; for he uses *hemls* for heavens; *drycantyche*, for three-cornered, *ferswynnmygnes*, *ketters*, &c.

The *Catalogue of the Grenville Collection*, in describing the unique copy here reprinted (Press mark, G. 7106), states—

"From mentioning Emanuel, King of Portugal, and exclaiming against Luther, the present tract may be about 1521 or 1522, when Kng Emmanuel died, and Luther was burned in effigy."

There is not a word about Luther in the tract; and it is typographically evident from the above, that the tract can hardly be later than 1511.

4. It is quite impossible, at present, to give a chronological list of books produced by Jan van Doesborch. A few only can be cited.

(*e*) [The compilation by R. Arnold, known as *Arnold's Chronicle.*] In this booke is conteyned the names of ye bayliffs of the cite of London from the tyme of king richard the furst, and also th[e] artycles of the Chartur and libarties of the same Cyte, &c. No date or place of printing. British Museum (Press mark, 21, a. 10).

This is attributed to Doesborch's press, and was a very large work to be undertaken by him, in what was probably a foreign language to him. It contains the original text of the poem of *The Nut-brown Maid.*

In the British Museum (Press mark, C. 25, e. 29) there is an imperfect copy of a tract on the Fifteen tokens of the Day of Doom. It wants the title page. The colophon is as follows:—

(*f*) "A lytill treatyse that whiche is called *the xv. tokens* which been ate translated out of frenshe in to Englishe.

¶ Emprinted by me Iohan fro doesborch dwellinge at Anwerpe by the Iron ballaunce, &c.

These six texts are probably among the earliest productions of Doesborch's press.

5. We now come to the middle period of his life's work.

In the British Museum (Press mark, 1073, b. 32) there is a Dutch life of the fabulous necromancer of the Middle Ages, Virgilius.

(*g*) *Virgilius* ¶ *Van zijn leuen doot | ende vauten*, &c. No date or place of printing.

This tract is probably the original of the rare English *Virgilius* among the Douce books at the Bodleian which has been reprinted by Mr Utterson, and also by Mr Thoms, in his *Early English Prose Romances, Vol.* 2, *Ed.* 1858.

(*h*) The title runs thus:

The lyfe of Virgilius and of his deth and many marvayles that he dyd in his lyfe tyme by whychcrafte and nygramancye thorowgh the helpe of the devyls of hell.

The colophon is

Thus endethe the lyfe of Virgilius with many dyuers consayte that he dyd. Emprynted in the cytie of Anwarpe By me Iohnn Doesborcke dwellynge at the camer porte.

Mr W. C. Hazlitt, in his *Handbook of Popular Literature, &c., p.* 381, Ed. 1867, quotes the following title of a Work apparently at present in an English private library.

(*i*) Here begynneth a lytell story that was of a trewthe done in the land of Gelders, of a mayde that was named Mary of Nemegen that was the dyuils paramoure by the space of vij yere longe.

Imprinted at Anwarpe by me Iohn Duisbrowghe dwellynge besyde the camer porte.

Dr Campbell states that in the Royal Library at the Hague, is a copy of the following Work, printed by Doesborch.

(*j*) *Den oostpronck onser Solicheyt.* Printed at Antwerp on 31 May 1517. With woodcuts and printer's mark.

Also, a Work, sometimes erroneously attributed to Jan van Naeldwyck,

(*k*) *Die alder excellentste Cronyke va Brabant* 1518. With woodcuts and printer's mark.

Of this work, there is a copy of an earlier edition printed in October 1512 in the British Museum (Press mark, G. 405, f.) This may also have been printed by Doesborch.

The next Work that we can quote is, for the time it was produced, a wonderful book. It is a pictorial representation of all the birds, beasts, and fishes, real and imaginary, of the time. It is in three Parts.

(*l*) *Der dieren palleys en die vgaderinge vanden beesten.* The colophon is *Gheprent bi my Jan van doesborch Thantwerpen Int iaer ons heeren* M.CCCCC. *ende.* XX. *den vijfsten dach in Meye.* [5 May 1520.]

Copies are in the British Museum, the Royal Library at the Hague, and elsewhere.

Mr Hazlitt, *Handbook*, &c., *p.* 8, gives the following account of Lawrence Andrewe's translation of this work.

(*m*) The noble lyfe and natures of man, of beestes, serpentys, fowles, and fysshes, that be made knowe.

Andwarpe by John of Doesborowe, n.d. fol.

In the prologue, Andrewe, the translator, says, "In the name of oure Saviour criste Iesu maker and redemour of al mankynd, I Laurens andrewe of the towne of Calis haue translated for Iohnes doesborrowe book prenter in the cite of Andwarpe this present volume deuyded in thre partes which was neuer before in no maternall langage prentyd till now."

6. One other Work will complete our present provisional list of this printer's productions.

(*n*) *Van Brabant die excellente Cronike.* Of which the colophon runs, *Gheprent tot Antwerpen op die Lombaerde veste, bi mi Jan van Doesborch, int iaer ons heren* M.CCCCC.XXX, *in Iuino.*

Copies of this work are in the British Museum, the Royal Library at the Hague, and elsewhere.

7. This is all we have been able to learn, so far, of the printer of the First English book on America. Much more, no doubt, remains to reward the researches of the bibliographer.]

¶ Of the newe landes and of ye people founde by the messengers of the kyng of portyngale named Emanuel.

Of the. x. dyuers nacyons crystened.

Of pope Iohn and his landes and of the costely keyes and wonders molo dyes that in that lande is.



Ere aforetymes in the yere of our Lorde god. M.CCCC.xcvi. [1496] and so be/ we with shyppes of Lusseboene sayled oute of Portyngale thorough the commaundement of the Kynge Emanuel So haue we had our vyage/ For by fortune ylandes ouer the great see with great charge and daunger so haue we at the laste founde oon lordshyp where we sayled well. ix. C. [900] mylee[s] by the cooste of Selandes there we at ye laste went a lande but that lande is not nowe knowen for there haue no masters wryten therof nor it knowethe and it is named Armenica/ there we sawe meny wonders of beestes and fowles yat we haue neuer seen before/ the people of this lande haue no kynge nor lorde nor theyr god But all thinges is comune/ this people goeth all naked But the men and women haue on theyr heed/ necke/ Armes/ Knees/ and fete all with feders bounden for there bewtynes and fayrenes. These folke lyuen lyke bestes without any resonablenes and the wymen be also as comon. And the men hath conuersacyon with the wymen/ who that they ben or who they fyrst mete/ is she his syster/ his mother/ his daughter/ or any other kyndred. And the wymen be very hoote and dyposed to lecherdnes. And they ete also on[e] a nother The man etethe his wyfe his chylderne/ as we also haue seen and, they hange also the bodyes or persons fleeshe in the smoke/ as men do with vs swynes fleshe. And that lande is ryght full of folke/ for they lyue commonly. iii. C. [300] yere and more as with sykenesse they dye nat/ they take much fysshe for they can goen vnder the water and se[t]che so the fysshes out of the water. and they werre also on[e] vpon a nother/ for the olde men brynge the yonge men therto/ that they gather a great company therto of towe partyes/ and come the on[e] ayene the other to the felde or bateyll/ and flee on[e] the other with great hepes. And nowe holdeth the fylde/ they take the other prysoners And they brynge them to deth and ete them/ and as the deed is eten then fley they the rest And they been than eten also/ or otherwyse lyue they longer tymes and many yeres more than other people for they haue costely spyces and rotes/ where they them selfe recouer with/ and hele them as they be seke.

[(Here follows a woodcut of the Natives of) GENNEA]

Of the blacke Mores.

AT the fyrſte cam we in the lande of Canarien/ whyche is. C. and. l. [150] myles from Lyſſebone. And ther betwyn been. ij. ylandes. In yat one is well made people and men make there moche cheeſe of great wylde gootes. alſo is ther fiſſhe and suykere good cheep. That other yland is not enhabite ther be lytell people therin/ and they be all a frayde and wylde/ alſo ther ayeen lyeth the lande of Barbera/ and is from them in to ye Gennea. CC. l. [250] myles. and that is the blackes mores land. and ayen ye begynnyng of this lande is oon aforemontayen and hooth caput viride/ and thereby is ye towne Bitſagitſch. v. C. [500] myles from Luſſebonen there by be many w[h]alefyſſhes and flyinge fyſſhes on the on ſyde of Biſagitſche. ij. C. and l. [250] myles ſayle men vnder yat ſone ſo ferre/ that men the northe ſayle ſterre or pollumarticum/ or the waghen called/ no more may be ſeen/ but pollum ante articum or yat ſowth layd ſterre ſawe we fourth with[.] the forſayde Moreſande is M. iiij. C. [1400] myles great/ there ye people goeth all naked with golden rynges on handes and fete.

[(Here comes a woodcut of Natives) IN ALLAGO]

THat lande of Allago is. v. C. [500] myles greater And gothe ayenſte the begynnynge of Arabien and there is that kyngdom Safale[.] in this lande Allago is the people clothed as aboue is marked/ the[y] were and bere for there clothes ſkynnes of wylde beſtes. The men bere clokes made of barkes of trees and ledder to kyuer theyr members with. And the women kyuer theym with ſkynnes of beſtes. and take vpon there heddes for kerchers ſkynnes of oxen or other beſtes[.] alſo py[t]che the[y] theyr mennes forhed lyke as men pytche the ſhyppes/ and there dwellynge is vnder the erthe. There is many cowes. oxen/ great ſhepe and other fayre beſtes. This is on fayre and luſty lande of good water and ſwete herbes. This people hathe a ſwyfte haſty ſpeche. There is no money but of yrou [? *iron*] and that euery body take it for there ware they bere whyte ſtaues there wepyns is lange pykes and ſtones ther they caſte myghtly with. That Lande is ſo full of ſande yat they muſte goo vpon brode trenchers that they falle not and ſynke. After that cometh men into the lande of arabyen.

[(Here is another woodcut representing Natives) IN: ARABIA]

Arabia.

COmyng in Arabia ſawe we ye people clothed lyke as here is figured ſtande. and out [of] this kyngdome hath be oon of the three holy kyngys. Item ther bynde they ther oxe ſon with Arabie gold about ther hornes/ and erys. And alſo goldyn rynges aboute th[e]yr legges. And for gold take they of marchaundes ſylkyng kerchers and lynen clothe. Item ther after ſe we now. v. ylandes. the fyrſt yland named Momſabith. ſixty myles from Safalen. is leeid ye towne Quiola that was founde of the kynges folke of portyngal And they ſlewe there moche people and robbed the towne. And there without had there kynge edyfyed on caſtell that is named ſeynt Iacobis caſtell there in lyeth a. C. [100] bolde and hardy men that lyeth and kepeth it.

[Here is a striking woodcut representing, with great life and action, a spirited attack on the gate of some European town; which has evidently been borrowed by John of Desborough from some other printed book, chronicle, or other work, printed by himself or other printer.]

HE[n] ſeuente myles from Quiola lyeth the towne Bombaſſa that they alſo byrned and robbed that alſo there they gatte moche goodes. From thens nowe. xxiiij. myle[s] lyeth the great towne Meli[n]da and they be frendes/ and there be many ſloueynes and fell people out of Geneen From Melinda it is. iiij. ſcore and. x. myles to on Perſia there gowe they ouer the ſee. For by the towne Megha into the ylande. Auxendia There is alſo one that hath be of ye three holy kynges of the eeſt. C. [100] myles into the Kyngdome of Canenor and there begyn the ſpyces to growe and from thens fare they forthe in to the great lande of great Indyen.

¶ *Of great Indyen.*

[(Here follows a woodcut of the Inhabitants of) MAIOR: INDIA]

THey gowe from Cananor into great Indyen there the people goo all naked but yat the[y] kyuer there members with lynen cloth and they be brounde blacke/ with longe here and of tho women is not wryten but on kaute the ſee ſawe men manye merueloufe people of manererēn the women bere there chyldren and theyr houſeholde ſtuffe. Here ſynde men gynger/ peper/ comeyn/ and all manere of ſpyces/ and

cottely ſtones for lytell moneye. There be alſo many maner of frute fygges of good ſauyour. vij. ynches longe and. iij. ynches brode. There be bulfeldes and coyes but the coyes ſlepe they not/ there groweth good wyne/ muche honeye/ ryſe/ coſtely corne whyte as wete mele/ Ther by ſtandeth the towne of Banderana and it is. vij myles into Callienten from thens is. xl. myles there men goo for all maner of ſpyces that men were wonte to caray and conuey ouer the redde ſee thorowgh Alexander but nowe is there one newe way founden ouer the the ſee[.] in Calacuten is many folke out of ſeynt thomas lande yat alſo be cryſtened/ and folke of other landes and nacyons they goo ouer into that kyngdome Kyngrych Gutſchyn as hereafter ſtandes wryten.

¶ *Of Gutſchin that Kyngedome.*

[Here is a woodcut representing two Natives fighting, see *p.* xxv.]

ANd than cam we in the kyngdome of Gutſchyn and ther hath the kynge of portyngale do make. ij. Caſteyles from here was the thre holy kynges. there groeth much peper and the propereſt ſtapell therof. That kyngdom Colen is. xxiiij. myles from there/ and there been many kryſtened men/ we fynde alſo great Olyfantes and many dyuers maner and wonders beſtes and other thynges that men cannot wryghte all. gardeynes frutes is there muche gretter than in our landes of Europa. That ylande Melaqua is from thens. viij. C. [800] myles/ There alſo is moche coſtely ſpyces. There is nowe. ij. ylandes the on is Bandan and therin groweth the cloues. That other Tanagora or Narnaria and there groeth not no other wodde than whyte and red ſandelen wodde/ This is fortuned that for a bell of a glaſſe men may haue one handfull of peerles. In Gutſchin bere ſome tymes there kynge but that do the people of his courte and holde obedyance vnder theym one with a nother They doo all there thynges all ſleyghtly For as as they be aſſembled in one gatherynge/ than cryeth the capitayne I will ſowe/ and as the ſubiectes here theyr capitayne crye ſowe than take they parte of/ the ſede and no man ſayth the contrary and letteth the other lye and that takethe the lorde with out any body contrary ſaynge/ and ſo do they in all merchaundyſe. Forthe by that kyngdome Gutſhyn/ Colum/ Bandan/ and Nagaria. xxx. [thirty] myles[.] in Arſinia there hath the kynge. xij. kynges vnder hym/ and there lyeth buryed ſeynt Thomas apoſtell.

[Here is a woodcut of a tree apparently intended to represent a fig-tree. It might do equally well for many other kinds of trees.]

IN ſome of theſe aforſayde wrytten landes ben great and fayre frutes and they be greater than in theſe our landes of Europa. In Iſlamandra be great hygh trees for the people of yat contrey hewe grea ſteppes aboute to clyme vp in to the tree to gather the frutes that groweth there on for whan they be a thruſt to take there of. In Arſinia is great brode fygge Trees with great fygges well. vij. ynches longe and. iij. ynches brode and the Fygge tre is ſo brode of braunche and leues that. xl. [forty] men may be hydde vnder the foreſayd braunches and leues for the hete of the ſonne/ and there for to reſte all to gather at theyr one pleaſure.

[Here are two woodcuts cornerwise, one representing two Indians, the other two men and a woman of Europe, see *p.* xxv.]

WE haue in this vyage ſayled aboute the forth parte of the worlde for to reken from Luſſyngboren whiche is ferre equinoccyall ſcher linien. xxxix. [thirty-nine]grades and on halfe ſo haue we ſayled ouer ye linie equinocciall. l. [fifty] grades that maketh xc. [ninety] grades therfore they of Luſſbone is vnder yat forſayde linie. xxxix. grade and one halfe in the hygh hed of the hemels is the breyde of weſtes/ ſo is them of Luſſbone to theſe folke to ſene the. l. [fifty] grades is ouer the ſelfe lyne ſoth cornerwyſe. v. grades in perpendiculer linia whiche linie as we ſtande ryght of yat poynt the hemls hange vpon our hed and theſe folke in theyr ſydes or rybbes and woort ſet in the maner of on tryanghel or on drycantyche cornard. therfore it muſt nedes be yat the ſowth landes be tempered with ſwete erthe for the northe wyndes can nat there blowe.

[Here, across the middle leaf of the tract, is an excellent representation of the King of Cochin seated on a kind of tressel, carried by four men, surrounded with armed attendants: and with an umbrella borne by one man, and not a canopy borne by four men, as stated below in the text. The woodcut extends across about two-thirds of the folio, in the margin of which occurs the following note.]

AFter this maner of fourme is the Kynge of Gutſchym borne with the nobleſte of his lande/ And before hym is borne many inſtrumentes of muſyke as trompettes and other and. iiij. of the nobleſte bereth the canapie ouer his hed left that the ſoon ſhuld burne hym/ and this kynge is beloued of all his eſtates and common people.

[This fresh tract is headed by a woodcut representing angels bearing the pyx.]

¶ Of the. x. dyverce cristened nacions.

IT is to knowe that ye people of cryſtindom is deuided and ben in. x. Nacyons. That is to vnderſtand the Latyne/ Grekes/ Indien/ Iacobites/ neſtorijnes/ moronites/ Armenes/ georgianes/ Surianes/ mororabes/ wherof ye mooſt deyle is kettersand kyt of/ of the holy Romes chyrche.

¶ *The fyrſte nacyon.*

[Two woodcuts, evidently taken from some Martyrology, come in here. One represents an angel standing by the cross, the other a female saint with a sword sticking in her breast.]

IRſte nacyon is the Latynes and they haue to theyr lorde the Emperour of Almayne and many Kynges/ as the kynge of caſtyly an of Aragon/ of portyngale/ of nauaryen/ and theſe kynges is for ſpaynnes nacyon. In yat nacion of the frenche lande is one kynge of Fraunce and many dukes and Erles. In the nacion of Italian is the kynge of Cicylian/ the kynge of Naples and many dukes and Erles and there is alſo many lordſhyppes as Venceyſe Florence ſeuen Ienuen [? *Sienna, Genoa*].

IN the nacyon of Germanien is nowe many kynges with out the emperoure/ as the Kynge of Englande/ of Scotlande/ of Vngerien/ of Bohemen/ of Polen/ of Denmarke/ of ſweden/ of Northwegen/ of Dalmacyen/ and there is many Dukes and Erles &c. In that ylande of Sypers [? *Cyprus*] is the kynge of Sypers/ All theſe a fore wryten is vnder the obeyiſaunce or [? *of*] the chyrche of Rome.

¶ *The ſeconde nacyon.*

THe Grekes haue ſpyrytually the Patriarcke of Conſtantynnoplen/ and many Archebyſſhops/ byſſhops/ and abbottes. And in ye temperalte haue they one Emperour and many dukes and erles/ and there is but fewe of them that be cryſtened/ For the Agarenen and Turkes hath nowe the mooſt parte of Grekes/ and is not obedient to the chyrch of Rome. And they haue a great erre for they ſaye that the holy ghoſt cam not of the ſone but alone of the fader. And they ſay alſo that there is no purgatory/ that is all a yenſte our belefe.

¶ *The thyrde nacyon.*

[Here follows a woodcut representing St. Thomas kneeling to our Saviour.]

THey of Indyen hath one prynce and that is pope Iohn whoſe myghtynes and rychedome amounteth aboue all prynces of the world for he hath vnder hym. lxxij. [ſeuenty-two] kynges and as pope Iohn dayely rydeth he bere a fore hym one croſſe of wode for to thynke on at all tymes and remember vpon the paſſion of I[es]hu and to the batayle doth he bere. xij. croſſes of golde made and ſet with precyouſe ſtones for his baners/ in this lande is the body of ſeynt Thomas.

¶ *The fourth nacyon.*

IAcobyten named alſo of on ketter Iacob and was be one dyſſyple of the Patryarche of Alexandryne/ and this helde the one great land in Oryenten and Aſyen and is named that lande of Mambrone and it is by Egypten and gothe to Ethyopen and into Indien to/ and hathe vnder hym well. xl. [forty] kynges rychedom/ theſe be kytte and chryſtened with a byrnynge yren for they branne the token of the holy croſſe in theyr forehed/ vpon the breſte/ vpon the arme/ they confeſſe them to God alone and none preſtes/ and they ſay that in chriſto is alone the godhed without the manhod/ and ſome of them ſpeketh Caldeſche ſome Arabier/ ſome other ſpe[e]ches after theyr language of the lande/ and theſe been condemned of the holy chyrche in that counſayll of Ceden.

¶ *The fyth nacyon.*

THere be alſo Neſtorijnen named of the ketter Neſtorinus that was one byſſhope of the byſſhops of Conſtantynenoplen and they ſett ij. perſones in chriſto that is the Godhed and ye perſones/ and they forſake that maria is the moder of god/ but they beleue well of I[es]hu. and theyr wrytynge is in caldenſſher ſpeche and they make the ſacrament in broune brede and there be great multytude of theym and they dwell in Tartarien and in great Indyen/ and theyr lande is as great as a thouſande of Italy/ and theſe ketters be condamned in that thyrde counſayll of Epheſyn and is departed of the holy Romes chyrche and abyde in theyr opynion.

¶ *The ſyxte nacyon.*

BY the ketter Moren they be named Moroniten they ſay alone in chriſto is one vnderſtande and one wyll and thoſe dwell by Lybien in the lande of Phenicen and there be great multitude and they be bolde and hardey men. and great warryars with the bowe/ And they haue theyr byſſhops clothed as the Latynes with the biſſhops myter on his hed/ and with the croyſers ſtaffe and rynges/ Theſe hath ben ſome tyme vnder the obeyiſſaunce of the chyrche of Rome whan Innocentius was pope/ but afterwarde came they ayen in theyr opynion and there abyde in theyr opynyon.

¶ *The ſeuenth nacyon.*

ARmennyten is alſo named for that they dwell in the lande of Armeneten nere vnto Anthiochyen and there is whrythyn ſeruyce of the maſſes. and theyr other tydes is all in theyr one comon ſpeche ſo that they all mey vnderſtande it what they ſynge or rede/ and they haue theyr hed or fader to whome they do reuerence as we do the pope. And they faſte the lenton with greatter deuocyon than we doo/ for they ete in the lenton no fyſſhe/ nor they drynke no wyne/ but they ete fleſſhe vpon frydays.

[Here is a woodcut representing a squadron of English knights, with St. George's flag, armed *cap à pie*, and galloping in battle. It has nothing whatever to do with the text.]

¶ *The eyght nacyon.*

THis nacyon is named Georgidni of ſeynt George for they haue hym in theyr batelles for theyr patrone/ and they dwell in the lande of Oryenten/ and they be fayer/ luſty/ and ſtronge pepyll/ and they be ſore a drad of the Medon perſſen Aſſiryen there they aboute dwelle And they haue theyr ſcryp-ture in ye Greekes ſpeche and they haue theyr ſacramentes as the Grekes/ and the clarkes haue rounde crownes/ and they ſeke the holy graue to Iheruſalem with open or ſpred baners. And they gyue the ſaraſons no trybute for the saraſons fereth thoſe folke very fore/ there women bere harneyſe lyke the men and they haue alſo beardes as ye men and they bere vpon theyr heddes and vpon hye cubettes hye hattes and as the[y] wryte to the Sodan than gyueth he them that they dyſſyre.

¶ *The Nynthe nacion.*

THe Surianen is named after theyr towne Surie that is the gretteſt in all Suryen or Aſſyryen theyr ſcrypture and ſeruyce of god in ye Grekes ſpeche but they ſpeke saraſons ſpeche and they holde the manere of ye grekes/ and haue byſſhoppes that in all thynges be obedyent and they make theym ſacrament of browne brede and they haue the opynyon of the Grekes ayen the Latynes there be ſome cryſtened that in the holy lande is namyd Samerytanes that were conuerted in the tyme that the apoſtels preched but they vnderſtande them not well in the cryſten beleue.

¶ *The tenthe nacyon.*

ORoraben ſo called after the kien for they holde and vſe the maner of the cryſten of Ar[a]bien/ and of theſe were wonte to be manye people in Afrijken and in Spaengnien but nowe is there lytell in the tellyng/ They haue in theyr ſeruyce of god lateyne as we do/ And they be vnder the obeyiſaunce of the chyrche of Rome. And the latynes prelates but in many thynges ben they dyuerſe departed for alſo the day hath xxiiij. houres/ Alſo many tymes hymnes and pſalmes and other oraſouns haue they and very longe/ And that that ye Latyns rede in the begynnyng of theyr ſeruice that rede they in the mydle or in the laſte ende. And that ſacrament of the auter breketh ſome of them in. vij. partes and ſome in. x. partyes/ and theſe people be very deuoute and they mareye but ones in theyr lyfe and as the women hath loſte theyr fyrſt huſbond ſo dothe they meddle no more with no man/ but abyde fro thenſſourth in chaſtyte.

FOr. ij. cauſes cometh the departynge of ye cryſten nacyons. The fyrſte cauſe is that men in olde tyme myght the cryſten haue only haue generall conſilium/ Therfore as the ketters ſtode vp ayen the cryſten belefe ſo was there no body turned nor ſaught counſayll there ayen. The other cauſe was the ſerſwynmyngnes of ye oppreſt pope of ye ſchole of Rome that no meſſengere nor lerned ſhulde to the kryſten thow that were come in ſeche lodyng/ for had they do that they ſhulde haue be conuerted to the ryght belefe. Thorowſth whiche ryght belefe brynge vs to the hygheſt glorye the fader the ſone the holy ghoſte thre perſones and one god. Amen.

[An Abridgment of the Mediæval Legend of Prester John].

[This third Tract has a very large initial letter I, containing what appears to be a representation of Prester John, and of a Roman Catholic monk or pilgrim kneeling beneath him.]

Pope Iohn by ye grace of god the mooſte myghtyſte kynge a boue all kyngys of ye worlde gyue ſaluyte the Emperour of Rome. and alſo thekingeofFrance.

Oure wel belouyd frynde We late you vnderſtande and knowe of our lande And the maner of oure lyuinge and of our people beeſtes and fowles.

¶ And yc1 ſaye that we beleue not in god and praye not to hym as you do. So late we you vnderſtande that we beleue in god the father. in god the ſonne. and in god the holy gooſte. The whyche be vnpartyble and one very god. and is all thynge myghty.

And alſo certefye yow with oure lettres ſealed and doo you knowelege of oure folke or people and of our lande. And yf there be ony thynge yat we kan doo for you. ſende vs worde and we ſhall it doo with good herte and wyll. And yf it pleaſe ony of you to come in oure lande we ſhall gyue theym gold and ſyluer to th[e]yr neceſſitie/ and make them great lordis. and gyue to them alſo lande and good[s] to lyue on. and do to [t]hem worſhyp and honor. For the goodnes that we haue herde ſay of you. And we do you knowledge that we haue the richeſte crowne of the worlde as of golde and syluer and of precyous ſtones in great multitude And we haue alſo vnder vs mighty. xlij. kingdomes and al good criſten people. and we kepe alſo the poure people with our almes alle that cometh be it ſtrenger or of oure owne people thorough the loue of almyghty god oure lorde Iheſu Criſte.

¶ Item. Oure lande is parted in. iiij. For the landes of Indien/ there be two. and in that gretteſt Indien is the body of ſeynt Thomas. And this ſame Indien is partiner of ye coſte of orient for it lyeth beſyde a toure ye whych is caalled babel/ and it id [*? is*] not ferre fro Babilonyen. And alſo that other parte of Indien is aboute Septentryon. and there is great plenty of wyne/ bredde and all maner of vytayle.

¶ Item alſo in our lande be gryffons/ and it is a great byrde and a myghty. for he wyll well cary in his neſte an oxe/ or an horſe for his yonge byrdes to ete. Alſo in Saxen is a towne whych is called Grounzwyk ther is one of the clawes yat which is well as great as an horn of an oxe.

[Here comes, in the original, at the side of the page, a woodcut of an elephant with a castle on its back.]

¶ In our lande be olyphantes/ dromedaries/ wylde oxes the whyche haue. vij. hornes. alſo Becres and Lyons of dyuers colours/ as ye redd/ grene/ blacke/ and whitte

¶ Item and also be wylde aſſes the whych haue longe eeres/ and haue twoo ſmale hornes. &c.

IN our lande be alſo fowles ye whyche that haue the mayſtery of all birdes of the worlde/ and haue a colour lyke ye fyer/ and his wingis kyt [*? cut*] lyke a raſour. and this byrdes ben called Ilerion. and in alle the worlde is no more than two. and they lyuen. iij. ſkore yere and thenne they laye eggis and ſytte vpon theym. xl. dayes and as ſone as they haue yonges they flee awaye/ fader and moder to the zee and ther they drowne theym ſelf. and alle tho byrdes yat come ayenſt them do them company to the zee. and as ſone as the[y] be drowned all the other byrdes tourne ayen to the neſte there they yonge byrdes ben leſte/ and gyue them mete and drinke to the tyme that the[y] can flee and nurter them ſelfe. &c.

¶ Yet ben there other byrdes the whyche ben called Tygris/ and they be ſo ſtronge that they wyll bere or cary in theyr neſte a man ſytting vpon an horſe all armyd fro the hede to ye fote.

[Here, at the side of the page, is the representation of a naked man with one eye in his forehead, and bearing a club.]

¶ Item In our lande is alſo a grete deſerte or foreſt therin dweleth peopl bothe men and wymmen the whyche haue nomore than one eye afore. and behinde they haue. iij. or. iiij. eyen

¶ Yet is in oure lande an other maner of people the whiche ete none other than rawe fleſhe. and they care not yf it were of man or woman or of beeſtis and alſo the[y] care not of ther owne deth. and as ſone as there one of them dyeth the[y] ete theym all rawe/ both there one [? *own*] fader or moeder. And they ſaye yat mans fleyſhe is good and natur[a]ly to ete rawe/ for they ſaye that they doe it for parte of penaunce for there ſynnes. And they be alſo curſed of god/ and they be called Gog and Magog And of them be no more than one maner of people of this worlde and they ſhall be dyſtributed or parted thorough all the world whan Antechryſt ſhall come. and theſe ſame were the people or folke the whych they hadde put in pryſone or in holde the great kynge Alexander of Macedonien. But for all that he wente his way And of this people ſhalbe no iugement at the dredefull day of dome lyke the prophete ſayeth. ¶ *Neſcio quis. &c.*

But neuertheles thonder and lytenynge ſhall come fro heuen and bourne theym all in po[w]der And whan that we haue ony enemyes thanne gyue we theym lycence to put theym downe and ete them that be ayenſſe vs and then make we them to tourne ageyne into there owne lande. For if they ſholde abyde longe with vs they ſhuld vndo vs all and ete vs lyke as they do there owne propre folke.

[Here, also at the side, is the pictorial representation of the creature described in the next paragraph.]

¶ And yet is there another manere of people/ the whyche hath rownde fete lyke an horſe/ and alſo they haue. iiij. ſharpe clawes behynde/ at there Heles. Wherewith they ſtrongely fyght that there is no manere thyng can ſtonde ayenſte them/ nether harnayſe/ yrone/ nor ſtele they paſſe all thorowth/ and this people gyue vnto vs great trybute. and they be alſo without dowte great labourers.

¶ Yet is there a nother ſmale lande in a parte of that ſame foreſt aforeſayde/ and it is. xlij. [forty-two] dayes Iourneyes longe. And it is called Feminie the great. And in that ſame lande there be thre Quenes without all other landes/ thowe that holden there been of theſe quenes foreſayde And whan theſe quenes ſhall goo to felde/ then eche of them hath. iij. hondered. M. [300,000] wymen and all in harneyſe/ with out all the other women the whych that caray vytayle with carte horſe and alſo with olyfauntes. And theſe women be very manly in fytynge and hardy. ¶ And in this ſame lande may come no men but. ix. dayes in the yere and no lenger/ and than they haue conuerſacion and felyſſhyp with the men and nomore of the hole yere. For if the men there wolde abyde the women ſhulde them flee all.

¶ And this ſame lande is cloſed all aboute with a water called Cyphon comynge out of paradyſe And in this ſame lande may come no man without a great ſhyp or a great barke.

¶ *Of the people named Pygnies.*

[Here is a woodcut representing the battle of the Pigmies and the storks.]

AND yet is there a nother ſmale lande and alſo another Ryuer called Pyconye that is. x. dayes iourneye longe/ and. vij. brode and this people of this forſayde lande be not great/ but they be lyke chyldren of. vij. yere of age and they haue horſeys as great as a great dogge and they be good cryſtened folke and they haue no warre ayenſte noman/ But they haue warre ayenſte the fowles euery yere/ whan they ſhall haue in there frute and corne And than the kynge putteth on his harneyſe. and than they fyght ayenſte the byrdes. And than there be ſlayn on bothe partyes many on/ and alſo they be great labourers/ and whan the fylde is don than the byrdes flee a waye fro them.

[Here, at the side, is a circular woodcut of Sagittarius, evidently one of the signs of the Zodiac taken from some illustrated almanac.]

¶ Alſo in our lande been ye Sagittary. the whyche ben fro the myddel vpward lyke men/ and fro ye myddell donwarde ben they lyke the halfe neder parte of an horſe. and they bere bowes and arowes. And the[y] ſhute ſtronger than ony other nacyon of people.

¶ And in our lande be alſo vnicornes and they been of the manere with blacke and grene/ and theſe vnicornes flee many Lyons. and the Lyon fleeth the vnicorne with ſubtylnes. Whan the Vnicorne hath put hym to reſt at a tree/ and than cometh the Lyon and ronnyth aboute the tree and after hym than ronnyth the vnycorne and wolde fayne fley hym/ and than he ronnyth hym ſelfe into the tree with his horne ſo harde that he cannot pull it out a geyne. than commeth the Lyon and hath the maſtery vpon the vnicorne.

¶ Item there is a nother parte of a foreſt therin dwelleth another maner of folke and this people ben. xx. Cubettes of heythe. But they were in tyme paſte to be of the heyth of. xl. Cubettes. And they haue nat the pore to come out of that deſerte or foreſte and all is thorowe the myghte of almyghty god. For if they ſholde come out by there ſtrength and hardyneſſe the[y] wolde conquere all the worlde.

[Here, at the side, is a curious cut representing the Phœnix burning.]

¶ Here begynnith of ye birde the whyche is called Fenix.

¶ In oure lande is alſo a byrde ye whyche is called Phenix and is ye fayreſt byrde of all ye world and there is nomore than one in all ye cours of nature. and he lyueth C. [100] yere. and thenne flyeth he ſo hyghe that the ſonne ſett the fyre in his wynges/ and thenne cometh he don ayen to his neſt and there he burneth to p[o]udre and of the aſſhes comyth a worme/ and within. C [100] dayes after growyth there out another byrde as fayre as euer that other was.

¶ Item Alſo in our lande is plenty of wyne bredde/ fleſhe. All that is neceſſary for mannys body

¶ Item In our lande maye come none venyn beeſte on that one ſyde

¶ Item Betwene oure lande and the Turkes lande is a ryuer ronnynge and is called Sydon it commeth out of paradyſe of the erthe/ and is full of precyous ſtones.

¶ And alſo in oure lande ben ronnynge many ſmale riuers the whyche that come out of this forſayde riuer. and they alſo ben fulle of precyous ſtones. As Yſmaraddus Iaſpis Saphyrus Scobaſſus Dyamant Topaſius/ Carbonkel. Rubin. and yet more other they whyche I not all can reherce.

¶ Alſo in oure lande groweth on herbe and is called Parmanabel/ and that ſame herbe is ſo myghty euer ſoo who that ſame herbe beryth a boute hym he may coniure the deuyll of helle and do hym faye what ſo euer he wyl axe of hym and therfore the deuyll dare not come in to our lande.

Item alſo in our lande growith pepper in foreſtis full of ſnakes and other venym beeſtes. and whan it is rype than ſende we for our folke and they put that fyre ther in/ and than they venym beeſtys flee awaye. than we gadder it and caryed to oure houſes and waſſhed in two or. iij. waters/ and than we drey it ayen/ and alſo it waxed black and good

¶ Item aboute this paſſage is a fonteyne or a conduyte/ ſo who of this watere drinked. iij. tymes he ſhall waxe yonge/ and alſo yf a man haue had a ſykenes. xxx. yere and drynked of thys ſame water he ſhall therof be hole and ſonde. And alſo as a man therof drinked hym ſemeth that he had occupyed the beſte mete and drinke of the worlde. and this ſame fonteyne is full of the grace of the holy gooſt. and who ſo we in this ſame water waſſhed his body he ſhall become yonge of. xxx. yere.

And ye ſhall knowe that I am haloweth in my moder wombe/ and I am old. v. C. lxij. [562] yere. and I haue me weſſhed. vi. tymes in that ſame water.

[Here, at the side, is a woodcut of a flying griffon carrying a man.]

¶ Item In our lande is alſo a zee very peruulyous/ and there can we haue noo paſſage with noo maner of ſhyppyng and than do we vs cary there ouer with our gryffons.

¶ Item at that one ſyde of this zee ronnyth a ſmale ryuere and therin be many precyous ſtones. and alſo ther growyth a certen herbe that is good to all maner of medycyne.

¶ Alſo ye ſhall vnderſtande that betwene vs and the Iewes ronnyth a great ryuer that is full of precyous ſtones and it is ſo ſtronge in here ronnyng yat noman ther ouer can paſſe/ excepte ye ſaterdaye/ and than parted ſhehere and toke with here all that ſhe fyndeth in here waye. And this ſame lande moſte we ſtrongely kepe for oure ennemyes. an[d] vp theſe coſtes haue we. xlij. [42] ſtronge caſtels none ſtronger in ye world. and ben well kepte of people. To vndeſtande. x. M. [10,000] knyghtes on horſbacke. vi. M. [6000] Croſſe bowes. xv. M. [15,000] longe bowes. and. xl. M. [40,000] othere men on horſbacke well armed. ye whyche theſe Caſtels haue in kyping by cauſe that the great kynge of Iſrahel ſhall not therpaſſe with his people. For he is twyes as ſtronge as I am. And his lande is twyes as grete as all Cryſtente and turkey. For he hath in his kepynge the ſeconde parte of the worlde. And the great kynge of Iſrahel hath vnder hym iij. C. [300] kynges. iiij. M. [4000] princes. duces. erles. barons knyghtes/ ſquyers without nombre. and all theſe be ſubgette to the great kynge of Iſrahel. But yf he myght paſſe ouer this forſayde ryuer with his people they ſholde flee both cryſten and turkes. And ye ſhall knowe that we all ſaterdaye late paſſe. viij. C. or. M. [800 or a 1000] men for beye ſuche manere good[s] or marchaundyſe as they wyll haue. but we late them not come with in ye wallis of thys caſtels. for they bye it without ye walles of thys fortreſſes. and they paye ther marchaundyſes with platis of ſyluer or of gold for they haue none other money. and whan they haue don ther beſynes they tourne home ayen in theyr owne lande. and theſe forſayde caſtels be ſete to gyder within a bowe ſhotte. And ye ſhall vnderſtande that within a myle of theſe caſtels is a great Cite and a fayre and it is the ſtrongeſt of all the worlde. the whyche cite is in our kepyng of one of our kyngis. and he receyueth tribute of the great kyng of Iſrahel. And alſo gyueth vs euery yere. ij. C. [200] horſes laden with golde/ ſyluer/ and precyous ſtones. Except alle charges and coſtes that men doth in the cyte and in thyſe foreſayde caſtels. And whan that we haue warre ayenſt them/ than flee we them alle and late noman alyue. and therfore they wyll kepe no warre ayenſte vs. and the wymmen of the Iewes be very fayre none fayrer in erth nowe a dayes lyuinge. And by this forſayde ryuer is a zee ther noman may paſſe/ but

whan the wynde blowythe fro benethe ſtrongely than parted ſhe here/ and thanne the[y] paſſe with great haſt. and than they take with hym all maner of precious ſtones. but they may ſelle none therof [be]for[e] that wee haue taken therof our choſe.

¶ In a parte of our lande is an hylle there noman may dwelle for hete of the ſonne/ and there bee wormes many on without fyre can not lyue. And by this ſame hylle we kepe. xl. M. [40,000] people that no thyngeells but make fyre/ and whan this wormes feele the fyre than thei come oute of the erthe and goo in too that fyre. and there they ſpynne lyke the wormes yat the ſylke ſpynneth And of that ſame ſpynnyng we make our clot[h]ynge that we were on feſte dayes. and whan they be foule/ than they be caſt in to ye fyer and they becom as fayre as euer they were afore

And ye ſhall vnderſtande that ſaint Thomas doeth more myracles/ than ony ſeynt in heuen For he comyth bod[i]ly euery yere in his chirche and doth a ſermon/ and alſo in a palays there ye here after of hym ſhall here.

[Here, at the side, is the representation of the creature described in the next paragraph.]

¶ And ye ſhall alſo knowe that there be dyuers of people of faſon in our lande/ alſo there be people that haue the body of a man and the hede lyke a dogge and they be good takers of fyſſhe. and they be good to vnderſtande of theyre ſpeeche. and they wyll goo in to the zee a hole daye longe to the tyme that they haue taken ſuche as they wolde haue/ and than ye [*they*] come ayen charged with fyſſhe. and bere them in to ye houſes for they hafe there dwellinge places vnder erthe. and thenne take we part of there fyſſhes that vs beſte lyketh. and they do great harme among our bee thow yat be wylde. and they fyghte alſo ayenſte our archers. &c.

¶ In oure londe is alſo one manere of byrdes and laye ther eggis in the zee. xxi. and ther out growen yonge byrdes. and than the[y] flee away and we take ſomtyme of theym for they bee good for to ete whan they be yonge For yf theyr were ony man that hathe loſt his nature and ete of this ſame byrde he ſholl it gete ayen and becom as ſtronge as euer he was afore.

[Here is a woodcut of a tree dropping oil, guarded by a dragon, as described in the next paragraph.

¶ Alſo in our lande is that ſame tree/ ther yat holy creſtendom or olye [? *oyle*] out ronnith. and this tree is dreye/ and ther is a great ſerpent which yat tree hath in kepynge all the hole yere nyght and daye but alone vp[on] ſeynt Iohns daye and night and than ſlepyth the ſerpent or dragon. and than goo we to the tree and take yat criſma. and of this ſame is nomore than iij. po[u]nd. and than tourne we ayen ſecretely with great drede and fere yat he vs not ſee/ for ells he wyll ſlee vs. and this ſame tree is a dayes iourney fro ye paradys of ye erthe. but whan this ſerpent is a waked than maked he great mone and ſorow. and this dragon hath. ix. hedes and. ij. wynges. and is as great as twoo horſes. But for all yat it followeth vs ſtylle tyl we ben come to the zee ayen. and than tourned it ayen. and thenne bere we that criſma. to ye patriarch of ſeynt thomas and he haloweth it/ and ther with they make vs al cryſten. and ye remenaunt ſende we to ye patriarche of Iheruſalem. and he ſende it forth to the Pope of rome. and he puth therto olye tof lyſe [? *oyle of lyfe*] and than halowyth it/ and then he ſendeth all cryſtente through

¶ Alſo ye ſhall vnderſtande whan we ſhall goo to warre than doo we afore vs bere with. xiiij. [14] kynges. xiiij. [14] cofers with golde and ſyluer really wroght with precious ſtones. and the other kynges come after vs with grete ſtremers and baners of ſylke and ſyndale very rychely wrought. Ye ſhall knowe alſo that afore vs gone. xl. M [40,000] clerkis and alſo many knyghtis. and men afote there be ij. C. M. [200,000] without cariers and cariers that go with the olyphantes and cary our harneys and vitales.

¶ Ye ſhall vnderſtande alſo as we goo to fylde than put we oure lande in the kepyng of the Patriarche of ſeynt thomas. And whan we peceſably ryde than do we bere afore vs a croſſe of wodde in worſhyp of oure lorde Iheſu Cryſte. Alſo in the incomynge of euery cyte ſtande. iij. croſſes made of wodde/ for to remembre ye paſſion of oure lord Iheſu cryſte. And whan we ryde peceſably than do we alſo bere afor vs a baſyn full of erthe to remembre yat we be come of erthe and that we ſhall waxe erth ayen. and we do alſo bere for vs another baſyn full of fyne gold to a token that we be the nobleſte and myghtyeſt kyngis of all the worlde.

¶ There is alſo in our lande noman ſo hardy that dare breke his wedloke. but yf he dyde he ſholde be incontynent be burnyd. For our lorde hym ſelfe hath ordeyned wedlok therfore it ſhold be kept by reaſon yf that we louyd oure lorde Iheſu Cryſte. For it is one of the ſacramentes of the holy chyrche.

¶ Alſo there dare noman make a lye in oure lande. for of he dyde he ſholde incontynent bee ſleyn and we be feythful in oure faying and doying.

¶ Alſo ye ſhall vnderſtand that we euery yere goo vyſite the holy body of the prophete danyel in oure foreſt/ and we take with vs. x M. [10,000] clerkis and as many knyghtys. and. CC. [200] caſtels. made vpon Olyphantes fore to kepe vs from ye dragons ye whyche haue. vij. hedes. the whych that haue theyr dwellynge in that foreſt.

¶ And there bee alſo in that ſame place dates ye winter and ſomer hange on the trees fayr and grene. And ye foreſte is great a. C. and xxx. [130] dayes journey. and ye. ij.

patriarches ben before vs at table for they haue the myght of the pope of rome. And we haue twyes as many abbotes in oure lande as there be dayes in the yere. [and] xv. more And euerich one of them cometh ones in ye yere and ſaythe maſſe vpon ſaint Thomas auter. And I my ſelf ſeye alſo maſſe in the grete feſtis of ye yere. and ther for I am called pope Iohn. For I [am] priſte after the outſhewyng of ſacrificie of the auters. and kinge after outſhewing of Iuſtice. ¶ And I pope Iohn was halowid afore I was borne. for oure lorde ſende his angell to my ſader and ſayde to hym make a pallays the whyche ſhall be of the grace of god and a chamber of that paradyſe for your ſonne comynge For hi ſhall be the gretteſt kynge of the worlde. and he ſhalle a longe tyme lyue. So who that in this pallays comyth he ſhall haue no hongre or thryſte. and he ſhall not deye and as ſone as my ſader was a wakyd he was very mery/ and incontynent he began to make thys pallays lyke ye ſhall here. At fyrſt of yC incomynge of thys pallays is made of criſtall and the couerynge of it is of precious ſtones and with in realy wrought with ſterres lyke yf it were ye heuen. and that pauing is alſo of criſtall and within this ſame pallays be none wyndowes. and within this ſame pallays be. xxiiij. [24] pyllers of fyne gold and of precyous ſtones of all maner ſortes. and ther am I at great feſte dayes of the yere and ſeynt Thomas prechyth in middell of this pallays to the people. And whithin this ſame pallays is a conduyte or a fonteyne is lyke wyne in drynkynge/ ſo who thereof drincketh he deſyred none other mete nor drinke and noman can telle fro whens it cometh or whyther it gothe. Alſo ther is another great merueyll in this ſame pallays whan we ſhall goo to our dyner/ ſo is there no maner of mete made redy for vs/ nor there is no manner of inſtrumentes to make mete redy with all. but there comith before vs all maner of delycious mete that comyth there thoroughe the holy gooſt. And it is nôt wel poſſyble to wrytte all maner of goodnes they [haue] whiche yat be in oure lande. And ye ſhall vnderſtande that we writte nothinge to you but trewe is. For if we ſholde wryte lyes to you/ god and ſeynt thomas ſholde punyſſhe vs/ for we ſholde leſe all our dignyte and oure worſhyp.

And we praye you that ye wyl writte vs ayen with the berer of this lettre. and ſende to vs ayen a good knyght of ye generacyon of fraunce.

And we praye the kynge of Fraunce that he wyll vs recommaunde to the myghty kyng of Englande. and alſo to all other kynges the whyche yat dwelle be yonde the zee thow that ben cryſtened and we praye god that he you wyl gyue the grace of the holy gooſt Amen.

Written in oure holy pallays in the byrth of my ſelfe. v. [five] hondred. and ſeuen.

Emprenteth by me Iohn of Doesborowe:

The Life and Labours of Richard Eden,

Scholar, and Man of Science.

[? 1521]—1576.

* Probable or approximate dates.

The best Life of our Author hitherto, is in Cooper's *Athenæ Cantabrigienses*, ii., 2, Ed. 1861.

1509. Apr. 22. Henry VIII. comes to the throne.

1521.* The year of our Author's birth has not yet been ascertained, but it cannot be much later than 1521. He would therefore be of nearly the same age as Sir William Cecil, Lord Burleigh, who was born on 13th September 1520. He stated in 1573 (*see under that year*) that 'he was of a respectable family in Hertfordshire; where he, in that year, had a sister still living.'

1526*-1534.* He is well educated as a boy. 'When I was a yonge scoler, I haue read in the Poet *Hesiodus*.'—*p.* xli. *col.* 2.

1526. Pietro Martire of Anghiera dies.

1526. Feb. The printing of the *Sumario de la natural y general istoria de las Indias*, written by Gonçalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés, is finished at Toledo.

1530. Jan. 25. Sir Thomas Smith [*b.* 28th March 1514 at Saffron Walden], being then B.A., is elected Fellow of Queen's College, Cambridge.

1533. Aug. 31. The printing of the Third edition of Pietro Martire's Latin *Decades* is finished at Basle. It is undoubtedly the text from which Eden translated *pp.* 63-200 of this present work.

1533-1539. Sir T. Smith is resident at Cambridge.

1540. Vannuccio Biſinguccio's *Pyrotechnia* is first printed; at Venice.

1535-1544. Eden studies at Cambridge for ten years (*see under* 1573). What he states there, he confirms elsewhere, see *p.* l. *col.* 1, 'that the ryght worſhypfull and of ſingular learnynge in all ſciences, Syr Thomas Smyth, in my tyme the floure of the Vniuerſitie of Cambridge, and sometyme my tutor.' He does not, however, seem to have taken any degree, while up at the University.

1539-1541. Sir T. Smith is travelling abroad.

1542. A folio edition of Chaucer's works is published, remarkable for being an early instance of joint enterprise among English printers, 'each having his own name alone as printer, in the colophon of so many copies as were his proper share.'—Herbert's *Typographical Antiquities*, *p.* 557, *Ed.* 1785-90. The joint partners in this edition were W. Bonham, F. Petit, R. Kele, and R. Toy.

1842-1547. Sir T. Smith is again resident at Cambridge. It was probably during this period, that he taught Eden: who had, for his fellow pupils under Sir T. Smith, Edward Vere, afterwards the Earl of Oxford and a most exquisite poet; and John Ponet, afterwards Bishop of Winchester.

1544-1546. Eden comes to Court, and holds a position in the Treasury, for about two years; which is his first appointment in the Civil Service.

1545. Oct. The First edition of Thomas Geminus' important 'Epitome of *The Fabric of the Human Body*, by A. Vesalius,' is published in Latin in London, in folio size; illustrated with remarkable engravings, 'all drawen out, and graven in braſſe, and ſo impriented by my own labour.' The dedication to Heſiry VIII. is dated London, 4 Kal. Oct. [28th September] 1545.

Geminus, in his next edition of 1553, states that King Henry very much wished that this anatomical work should be widely published abroad: and that he himself had subsequently heard that it had been 'notably well

accepted, and hath doen muche good in Italye, Fraunce, Spaine, and Germaine, and other foren parties.'

1547. Eden is destined to the office of the Distillery; when the King dies: see *p.* xlv.

1547. Jan. 28. Edward VI. succeeds to the Crown.

1547. The Lord Protector, however, gives the Distillery to one, who held it down to, at least, so late as 1573.

1547.* Eden marries; and has by his wife twelve children in the next fourteen years: who all apparently grow up to manhood; else the argument and appeal then used by him in 1573, would seem to be faulty.

1548. Sept. Master William Cecil, æt. 28, is appointed Secretary to the Lord Protector Somerset.

1549. Oct. 10. In the political revolution, occasioned by the advent to power of the Earl of Warwick, afterwards the Duke of Northumberland—to whom Eden, in 1553, dedicated his *Treatyse of the newe India*—Master W. Cecil is

Nov. confined to his house (Oct. 10); and in November is sent to the Tower; from whence he is set free on the 25th

1550. Jan. 25. January following.

The First edition of Girolamo Cardano's work, *De Subtilitate*, is printed at Nuremberg in folio. It was written in eight months; but under constant correction for three years before it appeared. Eden thought very highly of it.

1550. May. The First edition, of the First Volume only, of *Navigationi e Viaggi* [collected by J. B. Ramusio] is printed at Venice. It was probably this First impression; and not the Second edition of the same Volume printed in March 1554, that Eden made use of in his Compilation.

Sept. 5. Master W. Cecil is appointed one of the Secretaries of State and a Privy Councillor.

1551. July 3. The sweating sickness, which had begun on 15th April at Shrewsbury, begins in London; where 500 persons die in the first week. At this time, the first English ship that ever went to Barbary, leaves Portsmouth; under the command of T. Windham (see *p.* xix).

Oct. 11. Sir W. Cecil is knighted.

1552. Spring. Eden writes thus, at *p.* 355, about the middle of 1555, 'And wheras as concernynge the knowleage of metals, I was once mynded to haue tranſlated into Englyſhe the hoole worke of Pyrotechnia, wherof I fynyſſhed. xxii. chapitures now more then three yeares ſence, and lefte the copie therof in the handes of one of whome I coulde neuer get it ageyne (omyttynge to ſpeake of other ingratitudes) I was therby diſcouraged to proceade any further in that woorke.' From this, it is evident that, by this time, Eden was a good Italian scholar. His translation of the first three chapters will be found at *pp.* 356-368.

1552. About this date, Eden was, I believe, acting as private secretary to Sir W. Cecil. I have, however, lost the reference to the authority for this.

1552. April 22. Sir W. Cecil is made Chancellor of the Order of the Garter.

May 2 or 9. The second English voyage sets out for Barbary, *p.* xix.

June 3. Girolamo Cardano, on his way from Italy, reaches London; and after a rest of three days, travels in twenty-three days to Edinburgh: where he somewhat successfully prescribes for Cardinal Beaton. After a stay of seventy-five days there; he leaves Edinburgh on

Sept. 12. 12th September, on his return towards Italy.

See further respecting this famous Italian magician or physician—this considerable genius—this prolific author (he wrote in all 222 treatises, large and small)—this most impudent liar and profligate liver, in Professor Morley's *Life of Jerome Cardan*, 1856. It is quite possible that Eden saw Cardano—whose works, he quotes as of the highest authority—while he was staying in London.

1552. July 20. Geminus, in the Dedication prefixed to the Second edition of his "Epitome of Vesalius' *Anatomy &c.*" (with the explanations to the plates, greatly augmented and in *English*), which is dated "At Windſore, the. xx. July 1552," (the engraved title is, however, dated 1553) goes on to state, after what we have already quoted above, under 1545, as follows:—'And now of late by the informacion of ſundrye frendes and alſo of diuerſe ſurgeons, I haue ben borne in hande, that the ſame worke beeyng ſet foorth in the Engliſh tounge might greatly auaile to ye knowledge of the vnlatined Surgeons, and by meane of them, ſhould bee muche more beneficiall, then in latin it is to an infinite nombre of people in thys your Maieſties Royalme of Englande. Wherefore myndyng to rendre vnto this Countrey, in which by your graces proteccion and bounteous liberalitie I liue, as muche fruite as my poore induſtrie and continuall trauaile may poſſibly bee hable to ylde, I haue earneſtly applyed my ſelfe to make common and familiar to all Engliſhe people that which hath ben found profitable among ſo many foren nacions. Whereunto foraſmuch as I am not my ſelfe ſo perfeict and experte in the Engliſhe tonge that I dare warraunt or truſt myne owne dooynges, I haue vſed the ſtudious peines of Nicholas Vdall [the author of *Roister Doister*, our earliest known English comedy] and certain other learned men whoſe exerciſe in tranſlaccions and pennyng in this tounge hath ben (as I vnderſtande) not without ſome fruite to the common weale.' Eden edited the next edition in 1559.

1552. Dec. 2. The printing of the first edition of Francisco Lopez de Gomàra's *Istoria de las Indias y conquista de Mexico*, is finished at Saragossa.

1553. May 9. The date of the Ordinances &c. for the English fleet going for the discovery of Cathay by the North-East; given by Sebastian Cabot, as 'Gouernour of the myſterie and companie of the Marchants aduenturers for the diſcouerie of Regions, Dominions, Ilands, and places vnknown;' who were not, however, incorporated by royal charter, until 6th February 1555 (1 and 2 Philip and Mary). For these Ordinances, see Hakluyt's *Voyages, &c., p.* 259, *ed.* 1589.

1553. May 20. The first English fleet, consisting of the *Bona Esperanza*, 120 tons, Captain Sir Hugh Willoughby, General of the whole fleet; the *Edward Bonaventure*, 160 tons, Captain Richard Chancellor, Pilot Major, with Stephen Burrough (or as Eden calls him at *p.* xli. *col.* 2, Steuen a Burrough), for Master; and the *Bona Confidentia*, 90 tons, Cornelius Deerfoorth, Master: leave Ratcliff on their voyage, and get as far as Deptford.

May 21. About 2 P.M. they leave Deptford. Then occurred the scene thus vividly described to us by Clement Adams: of which it is almost certain that Eden was an eye-witness.

'The greater ſhippes were towed downe with boates, and oares, and the mariners being all apparelled in watchet or ſkie coloured clothe, rowed a maine, and made way with diligence. And being come neere to *Greenewich* (where the Court then laye) preſently vpon the newes thereof the Courtiers came running out, and the common people flockt together, ſtanding very thicke vpon the ſhoare: the priuie Counſell, they lookt out at the windowes of the Court, and the reſt ranne vp to the toppes of the towers: the ſhippes hereupon diſcharge the Ordinance, and ſhoote off their pieces after the maner of warre, and of the ſea, inſomuch that the tops of the hilles ſounded therewith, the valleys, and the waters gaue an Eccho, and the mariners they ſhouted in ſuch ſort, that the ſkie rang againe with the noyſe thereof. One ſtoode in the poope of the ſhippe, and by this geſture biddes farewell to his friends in the beſt manner he coulde. Another walkes vpon the hatches, another climbes the ſhrow[d]es, another ſtandes vpon the maine yarde, and another in the toppe of the ſhippe. To bee ſhort, it was a very triumphe (after a ſort) in all reſpects to the beholders. But (alas) the good King Edwarde (in reſpect of whome principally all this was prepared) hee only by reaſon of his ſickneſſe was abſent from this ſhewe, and not long after the departure of theſe ſhips, the lamentable and moſt ſorowfull accident of his death followed.'—Hakluyt, *Voyages, p.* 282, *Ed.* 1589.

May This voyage seems to have aroused a general interest in cosmography. People began to think of the great unknown world outside and beyond England. Some one printed a tract or single sheet, entitled *Of the new found lands*, which Eden derides at *p.* 5. This publication stirred him up to a rapid translation of a part of the Fifth book of Muenster's colossal *Cosmography*.

June.* Thus appeared Richard Eden's first literary work, (see title at *p.* 3), printed by Edward Sutton. He dedicates it to John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, the then all-powerful Protector. The Dedication is important in relation to the controverted life of Sebastian Cabot. It is to be noticed that in it Eden *boasts* of having already read the *Decades*. To this month and year is therefore also to be assigned the composition of his address 'To the Reader' at *pp.* 7-11; in which he so manfully strives to uproot the general ignorance and timidity of his time.

1553. July 6. Mary's reign commences.

1553. Aug. 12. The first English voyage to Guinea leaves Portsmouth, see *p.* 375.

Aug. 20. The printing of the second edition of Lopez de Gómara's *Historia* is finished at Medina del Campo.

Aug. 22. John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland (to whom, Eden had dedicated, within less than three months before, his first work), is beheaded at the Tower; with Sir T. Gates, and Sir T. Palmer.

1554. Summer.* Richard Chancellor's ship, the *Edward Bonaventure*, returns to England; but is robbed on the way home, by some Flemings. The crews of the other two ships,

Spring.* under Sir Hugh Willoughby, to the number of seventy persons, are frozen to death; while wintering at Arzina fiord, for 'want of experience to have made caues or stoues.' It appears from a will found in one of the ships, that Sir Hugh Willoughby and most of his company, were alive in January 1554.

1554. July 25. Queen Mary is married to Philip, Prince of Spain, at Winchester. 'Shortly after King *Philip* and Queene *Mary* remooued from Winchester to Basing, [and] from

Aug. 5. thence to Windsor, where, on the fifth of August, the King was stalled in the noble order of the garter, where he kept a great feast, and at that time the Earle of Sussex was made knight of the garter.'—*Stow, p.* 1057, *Ed.* 1600.

Aug. 17. 'The King and Quene remooued to Richmond, from thence by water to Southwarke, accompanied with the noble men and ladies, the King in one barge, the Queen in another, and landed at the Bishop of Winchesters staires neere to S. Maries Oueries church, and so passed through that place and park into Suffolke place, where they rested that night.'—*Stow, idem.*

Aug. 18. 'And the next day, being the 18 of August, they rode through Southwarke ouer the bridge, and so through London, where they were with great prouision receiued of the citizens, pageants in places accustomed, the crosse in Cheape new gilt, &c., and passing through *Paules* churchyard, a man came sliding, as it were flying upon a rope, from Paules steeple down to the deans wall.'—*Stow, idem.*

As Eden tells us, at *p.* 46, intoxicated by the shows, the triumphs, and universal acclamations that greeted the gorgeous royal procession through the City, he was led first to debate within himself as to whether he could by any original publication perpetuate to future Ages, not so much the glorious reception, as its worthiness and significance: but thinking of nothing sufficiently worthy, he was led to consider the marvellous discoveries, conquests, and empire of the Spanairds; all of which bade fair to become (should the royal pair have issue) the joint heritage of England. Hence his great Compilation is distinctly the result of the Marriage Procession of this day.

Within the following twelve months (working incessantly, and for nothing), Eden translated or wrote all that is *reprinted* in this volume, between *pp.* 43 and 398. Inasmuch as the work was one of great bulk (though, at the time, of national importance), several printers combined together for its risk of its publication: while the printing of it was wholly intrusted to William Powell. There are copies extant with the colophons of Robert Toy, Richard Jugge, Edward Sutton, and also, as Herbert states at *p.* 738, William Seres, and perhaps others. These are the "parteners" to whom Eden refers at *p.* 330.—See 1542 above.

Leonhardus Gorecius, a Polish knight, writes a congratulatory Latin Oration to the people and nobles of England on the royal marriage, which was printed by William Powell, who was also, at the same time, busily engaged on Eden's Compilation. Eden refers to this Oration at *p.* 47.

1554. Oct. 2. 'There came to the Tower in twenty carts made for the show, accompanied with certain Spaniards of the King's Guard, ninety-seven little chests, of a yard long and four inches broad of silver, which will make by estimation fifty thousand pounde' [equivalent to £750,000 of the present day]: *Harl. MS.* 194 [which is a 'Pocket Diary of a resident in the Tower between July 1553 and October 1554'] reprinted by the Camden Society under the title of *The Chronicle of Queen Jane*, 1850. John Foxe, in his *Actes and Monumentes, &c., Ed.* 1563, states that the silver was 'matted about with mats, and mayled in little handles, about two feet long and almoſt half a foot thick, and in euery cart ſixe of thoſe bundles.' I presume this is what Eden refers to at *p.* 56, as the 18,000 pounds 'weyght of ſyluer which was coyned to the Kynges vſe in the towre of London where neuer ſo much hath byn ſeene at once as ſuche as haue byn owlde officers in the mynte doo affirme.' It was brought there from Peru and Rio de la Plata, by the celebrated Spanish historian Augustin de Zarate; whose *Historia del descubrimiento y conquista del Peru* was published at Antwerp in the next year.

It was probably after the formation of this acquaintanceship with Zarate, and while his great Collection, here reprinted, (itself an honour to the Spanish nation) was in the press; that by the favour of certain Spanish nobles, Eden obtained a place in the English Treasury of the Prince of Spain.

1554. Oct. 11. The second expedition to Guinea leaves the River Thames, see *p.* 379.

Oct. 12. The third edition of Gómara's *Historia* is finished at Saragossa.

1554. Nov. 28. The Council of State announce by letter, at Dr. Chedsey's sermon at Paul's Cross, that the Queen is *enceinte.*

1554. Nov. 11. } Parliament sits at Westminster.
1555. Jan. 16. } Among other Acts passed by it, was the following short one, now known as 1 & 2 Philip and Mary, c. 6—entitled *An Acte for renueng of three Eſtatutes made for the puniſhement of Hereſies*:—"For th[e]exchuing and avoiding of Errours and Hereſies which of late haue ryſen growen and much encreaſed within this Realme, for that th[e]ordinaries haue wanted aucthoritee to procede agaynſte thos that were infected therwithe: BE IT therfore ordeined and enacted by th[e]aucthorite of this preſente Parliament, That the Statute made in the fifthe yere of the Reigne of King Richarde the Seconde, concerning th[e]arreſting and apprehencion of erronious and hereticall Preachers, And one other Statute made in the ſeconde yere of the Reigne of King Henrye the Fourthe concerning the repreſſing of Hereſies and puniſhment of Heretikes, And alſo one other Eſtatute made in the ſeconde yere of the Reigne of King Henrye the Fifthe, concerning the ſuppreſſion of Hereſie and Lollardye, and euery Article, Branche and Sentence contained in the ſame three ſeuerall Actes and every of them, ſhall from the xx[th] day of Ianuary coming [1555] be revived and be in full force ſtrengthe and effecte to all Intentes conſtruccions and purpoſes for ever."—*Statutes of the Realm*, iv. 244, *ed.* 1819.

1555. Jan. 1. The date of John Elder's letter describing the marriage of the King and Queen in the previous July; which letter was immediately printed.

Jan. 20. The burning of Protestants becomes lawful on and after this day, by the above Act of Parliament.

Feb. 4. John Rogers, the first of the Marian martyrs, is burnt at Smithfield.

Feb. 6. The Moscovy Company is incorporated by Royal Charter: having for its Executive; Sebastian Cabot, Governor; four Consuls; and twenty-four Assistants. Eden must have watched the proceedings of this Company with the deepest interest. Indeed, it is probable that the entire section, *Of Moscovie and Cathay* (which has nothing whatever to do with the title-page or original plan of his Compilation; at which he must have been working hard, all through this winter) was suggested by the return of Richard Chancellor and the subsequent Incorporation of this Company; and put forth by him, as a goodwill offering towards their success and information.

1555. Feb. 8. Laurence Saunders is burnt at Coventry; and so the legalized religious massacre goes on.

May 21. Is the latest actual date in Eden's Compilation, and therefore in the three Works here reprinted. It will be found towards the bottom of *p.* 382. On this day the English ships, returning on their way home from Guinea, were in 39° 30′ N. At their rate of progress they could hardly have reached England before the end

July.* of July.

Aug.* Therefore Section VII. of Eden's Compilation was written and printed in August; and, at the earliest, his newly printed Compilation and the printing of the entire book could hardly have been finished before

Sept.* September.

Immediately after which; Thomas Watson, Bishop of Lincoln,—the fellow-student of Roger Ascham; by whom his Latin play of *Absalom* [? if the MS. is now at Wilton House] is exceedingly praised in his *Schoolmaster*, 1570—accuses Eden before Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, for heresy; of which his newly printed Compilation would afford ample evidence.

Oct. 24. Bishop Gardiner, however, dies; and Eden somehow escapes punishment, with simply the loss of his office: and then seems, for the next three years to be living in retirement; his family steadily increasing all the while.

1556. Jan. 10. The printing of Martin Cortes' *Breve compendio de la sphera y de la arte de nauegar* is finished at Seville.

Nov. 7. Richard Chancellor, in the wreck of his ship the *Philip and Mary* in Pettislego Bay, Scotland, is drowned—while endeavouring in a boat to save the Russian Ambassador's life; in accomplishing which, he loses his own.

1557. Feb. 27-28. Eden probably witnessed the splendid reception by the Moscovy Company, of Osep Gregorevitch Napea, the first Russian Ambassador, on his arrival in London, for the *procès verbal* of which, see Hakluyt, *Voyages, &c.*, *p.* 321, *Ed.* 1589. From the omission in this notarial document of all allusion to Sebastian Cabot; it is evident that he was but recently dead. For Eden's account of his death—the only one extant—see *p.* xlvii., *col.* 2. It probably occurred about this date: for when Eden, about the Summer of 1555, wrote the heading at *p.* 283, 'that woorthy owlde man Sebastian Cabote, yet liuynge in Englande,' was still 'Gouernour of the coompany of the marchantes of Cathay.'

1558. Nov. 17. Elizabeth succeeds to the throne.

We now come to the two earliest printed notices of Eden. His reputation had travelled over the Continent to the English Protestant exiles in Switzerland; and two of them thus vaguely and incorrectly refer to his literary labours, but give him the wrong Christian name.

1558. Lawrence Humphrey (who died Dean of Winchester, on 1 Feb. 1590), in his three books of *Interpretatio linguarum*, the Dedication of which is dated, Basiliæ, Feb. 3, 1559, thus refers to our Editor-Author, at *p.* 520. 'Petrum quoque Martyrem Argleriensem Joannes Eden, Cosmographus et Alchumista uertit *De insulis nuper inventis.*'

1558. Bp. Bale, at *p.* 110 of his Supplement (written in 1558), to his *Scriptorium illustrium, &c.* the printing of which was finished in Feb. 1559, is a little more explicit; but still follows Humphrey closely. "Johannes Eden, Cosmographus et alchumista ut à quibusdam [*i.e.* L. Humphrey] narratur, ingeniosus ac peritissimus, inter alia scripsit *De nauigationibus Portugalensium*, Lib. 1. [This is evidently Eden's first publication, *Of the newe India.*] Transtulit Petrum Martyrem Angleriensem. *De insulis nuper inuentis.* Lib. 1. [or rather the *Decades*]. Aliaque fecit multa. Clariut anno Domini. 1556."

1559. Sept. The printing of the Third edition of Geminus' *Anatomy, &c.*, 'enlarged, amplified, and so corrected and diligently perused, that it maye seeme a newe worke, and rather an other than it was before,' is finished. Richard Eden is, this time, the English reviser; and the fresh Dedication to the new Queen is evidently written by him for Geminus, as its smooth connected style abundantly demonstrates.

1561. Eden's next literary work seems to have been the translation (and probably also, in part, the devising of the numerous, and, for that time, difficult woodcuts of this work of Martin Cortes' *Arte de Navigar*, at the expense of certain members of the Moscovy Company: towards which, Eden appears, at this time, to have stood in the same relation as Hakluyt did, fifty years later, to our East India Company. This work is remarkable not only for the number of the wood engravings (some of them moveable) of different mathematical instruments; but also for a small outline map of *The Newe Worlde*, or more properly of the North Atlantic basin. This is probably the earliest *printed* map of America ever produced in England: and is evidently copied from the original in Cortes' *Compendio.*

To this translation, Eden prefixed the following excellent Preface: in respect to which, it is significant to notice that Sebastian Cabot's name is omitted from the inscription.

To the ryght worshypfull syr VVyllyam Garrerd Knyght, and Maister Thomas Lodge, Aldermen of the Citie of London, and Gouernours of the honorable felowshyp or societie, aswell of certeine of the Nobilitie, as of Marchauntes aduenturers, for the discouery of Landes, Territories, Ilandes, and Seignories vnknowen, and not before their first aduenture or enterprise by Seas or Nauigations commonly frequented:

And to the right worshypfull the Consulles, Assistentes, and comminaltie of the same societie, Richarde Eden wysheth health and prosperitie.

WHat soeuer he was (ryght honorable and worshypfull) that fyrste beleued that the frame and coaptacion of the bodye of man, with the functions, offices, and duities of the partes and members of the same, knytte together in a certen vnitie to a common ministration, dyd represent a lyuely Image and similitude of a perfecte common wealth: I thynke that he was a man of no vulgare iudgement or abiecte mynde, but rather of singuler wysdome and prudence in the contemplacion of Diuine and humane thynges. For he sawe, that as in the small natiue seede of all growyng or lyuing thinges, is conteyned the fourme that bryngeth them to theyr perfection: so in certeyne small and obscure members of the common wealth, consisteth no small increase to the perfection of the whole. He sawe lykewyse that herein, as in the bodye of man representyng the partes and members of the worlde (as I haue sayde) are dyuers partes of dyuers and sundrye actions and motions, greatly dyfferyng in fourme, number, and quantitie, yet all the same to be so knytte together, and so to consent in one vniformitie to the common profyte of the whole, that a greater concorde and harmonye can not be imagined, then is proportioned by the frendly vnitie of dyuers and contrarye. He sawe lykewyse in the same, such a mutuall compassion of parte to parte, and member to member, by one common sence existent in them all, that no one part or member can feele eyther ioye or payne, but that in maner all the other are parttakers therof more or lesse, yf they be lyuely members, and not wythered or otherwyse vnsensate by reason of dead flesshe, which onely by cuttyng and burning ought to be deuyded from the sounde and whole. But as in man (whom Plato calleth the lesse world) the vigour and agilitie of the immortall soule and mynde, neuer ceasseth from continuall mouyng, but is euer exercysed in excogitacions and inuentions of great thinges (herein resemblyng God, whose caracte it beareth) by prouidence foreseing, and by intelligence vnderstandyng and deuysyng what is to be done, and what to be eschewed, doth immediatly moue and rayse vp the faculties, powres, and members of the body to execute the same: Euen so in the greater worlde, the prouidence of God, and vniuersall counsayle and consent of men, hath elected and appoynted certen principall men, to beare lyke rule and auctoritie in the bodye of the common wealth, as hath the intellectiue soule in the members of our bodye to moue and commaunde the same. To Princes therefore counsaylours, rulers, gouernours and magistrates, as to the most intellectiue and sensitiue partes of the societie of men, hath God and nature geuen preeminence and gouernaunce of the common wealth, that by theyr prouidence, wysdome, and ayde, it may vniuersally floryssh, not onely by iuste administration of good lawes, with due correction of malefactours, but also by lyberall rewardyng of suche as haue well deserued: and especially by maintenaunce of suche artes and sciences, as the common wealth can not well be without. And to draw nearer to the applyinge of my similitude: I saye, that whatsoeuer vertue, whatsoeuer arte, or the ingenious industry of men hath to this day inuented, all the same is to be imputed to the beneuolence and liberalitie

of ſuche as haue honourablye maintayned and freelye rewarded the trauayles, paynes, and charges of them that haue ſpente theyr lyues, goodes, and wyttes (as many haue done) in the inuentions of neceſſarye and profytable artes and ſciences. For euen as holſome and temperate ayre with ſeaſonable wether and fauorable influence of the heauens and planettes, cauſeth fruitefulnes on the earth, and contrarywyſe, barenneſſe by the contrarye: Euen ſo the fauour of Princes and Magiſtrates noryſheth, augmenteth, and amplyfyeth all artes and ſciences by liberalitie, and extynguyſheth the ſame by miſerable couetouſnes and parcimonie. And althoughe in ſome men of rare and noble nature, the deſyre of honour and fame onely for vertues ſake, and ſtudy toward theyr countrye and common wealth, hath moued them in maner to theyr owne vndoyng through theyr greate loſſe and hynderaunce, to ſette foorth and inuent diuers thynges for the commoditie of the common wealth and other, rather then for theyr owne: yet vndoubtedly, who ſo wel conſidereth and indifferently wayeth that I haue ſayde, ſhal fynde and ſee by daylye experience, that in maner onely munificence, liberalitie, and rewarde, or the hope thereof, geueth ſpurres to them that attempte great and vertuous enterpriſes, as I coulde more largely proue by ſo many teſtimonies of Hyſtories, both holy and prophane, that the rehearſall therof ſhoulde be but tedious and not greatelye neceſſarye for my purpoſe, eſpecially wrytyng vnto your honoures and worſhyps, of whoſe munificence and liberalitie, I haue had great experience, bothe in my ſelfe and others, who by your ayde and mainteynaunce haue attempted and perfourmed many goodly inuentions, viages, nauigations and diſcoueries of landes and Seas heretofore vnknowen. Wherein, what great charges you haue ſuſteyned, and howe liberall and conſtant you haue ben in furtherynge the ſame, doth well declare that hyther to you are rather loſers than gayners therby. The whiche thyng doubteleſſe is the more to your commendation, in that it maye hereby appeare that you haue attempted the ſame rather for knowledge and vertues ſake, then for couetouſnes of gaynes: as is furthermore well knowen by your fyrſte viages of diſcouerye attempted to Cathaye by the Northeaſt ſeas, vpon certen loſſe and detriment, for vncerteyne hope eyther of gaynes, or of any ſuch way to be founde, otherwyſe then by certen lykely coniectures: not much vnlyke to the ſhynyng flowres of Marchaſites, which outwardly appearyng in minerall mountaynes, are ſignes and token wherby is coniectured what metal is conteyned therein, and whether the ſame is to be folowed or not. And although it ſometyme ſo chaunce that ſuch ſignes are fayleable, ſhewyng more in appearaunce then they conteyne in ſubſtaunce: yet are not ſuch ſignes tokens, or ſhewes to be contemned, but rather earneſtly to be folowed, foraſmuch as it hath ben often proued and founde by experience, that by folowyng the ſame, haue ben founde great and riche mynes of metalles: as *Georgius Agricola* in his bookes *De rebus metallicis*, doth largely declare and proue by manye examples. But to wryte at large what greate thynges haue proceaded of ſmall and obſcure begynninges, and in maner mere coniectures: it woulde ſo farre exceade the meaſure of an Epiſtle or Preface, that it woulde rather increaſe to the iuſt quantitie of a booke. For in maner all the late diſcoueries both of the Spanyardes and Portugales, had theyr begynnyng of ſuch ſmall coniectures, with vncerteyne hope (as it were *preter ſpem ſub ſpe*) vntyll God and good happe, by the conſtant trauayle and valiaunt mynde of ſuch as fyrſt attempted the ſame, gaue them to enioye that they hoped for. But whatſoeuer they haue obteyned and do enioy, this may I boldly ſay in your behalf (right honorable and worſhipfull) that there hath not lacked in you eyther the lyke or greater promptneſſe of mynde, forwardnes in attemptyng, magnificence in expences, and liberall in rewardes. For beſyde the great charges and loſſes that you haue ben at otherwyſe, what ſhould I ſpeake of the great gyftes that you haue ſente to the Emperour of Ruſſia? What of your laſt chargeable vyage of diſcouerye among the innumerable Rockes, Ilandes, and moueable mountaynes of Ice in the froſen ſea, by innumerable landes and Ilandes vnknowen to the Antiques, euen vnder and farre within and beyonde the circle Artike, where they thought that no lyuynge creature coulde drawe breath or liue for extreme colde: wheras neuertheleſſe the ſame hath ben by you diſcouered euen vnto the myghtye ryuer of Ob, that falleth into the Scithian Ocean, or *Oceanus Hyperboreus*, not farr from the mountaynes called *Hyperborei*, ſo named becauſe they are ſituate almoſt vnder the North pole, and thought therfore to be inacceſſable. A vyage doubtleſſe of ſuch difficultie and in maner impoſſibilitie, that conſyderyng the infinite daungiours therof (as I haue learned by th[e]information of Steuen a Burrough, that was then the chiefe Pilote of the ſame vyage) it may ſeme impoſſible that they ſhoulde euer haue eſcaped, excepte the myghtye hande of God, by the experte ſkylfulneſſe of ſo excellent a Pilot, had delyuered them from thoſe daungers. And although in dede (as religion byndeth vs) it is conuenient in all thynges to geue all honour, glorye and thankes to God, yet are we not thereby reſtrayned to be thankfull to ſuch men, as by theyr arte, ingeniouſnes, trauayle, and diligence, haue deſerued both iuſte commendation and large rewarde. And therfore referryng the rewarde to you (ryght honorable and worſhypfull, to whom it apperteyneth) yf I ſhould not here geue hym at the leaſte ſuche commendation, as in my iudgement he hath well deſerued, I myght ſeme both to defraude hym of his worthye deſertes, and alſo to forgette the frendſhyp and good wyll I beare hym, onely for his vertues and excellencie in his profeſſion. For certeynly when I conſider how indigent and deſtitute this Realm is of excellent and expert Pilottes, I can do no leſſe of conſcience, then in reſpect of your owne commoditie, yea rather for the commoditie of the Queenes Maieſtie and the whole Realme, to exhort you and put you in remembraunce (although I may herein ſeme to put the ſpurres to a runnyng horſe, as ſaith the Prouerbe) ſo to regard hym and eſteme hym and his faythfull, true, and painefull ſeruice towarde you, that he maye thereby be further encouraged, and not diſcouraged, eyther for lacke of maintenaunce, or other wyſe by the iniurious aſſaultes of ſuch his enemies, as onely his vertues and excellencie haue moued to beare hym diſpleaſure, as enuye doth euer folowe vertue, as ſaith the Latine Prouerbe, *Virtuti comes inuidia.* And howe true a ſentence this is, is well verified by the ſaying of a certayne Philoſopher (whoſe name I do not remember) who hearynge one vaynely reioyce that he had no enemies, aunſwered that that was a token he hadde done lyttle good: Meanyng thereby (as dayly experience proueth) that yf he had excelled in any vertue, he coulde not haue lacked ſome enemies. And hauyng here touched to ſpeake of enuye, I remember that when I was a yonge ſcoler, I haue read in the Poet *Heſiodus* of two kyndes of enuye, whereof the one is called *Inuidia*, and the other *Aemulatio*, which is more tollerable then the fyrſte, for that it is ioyned with ſome vertue, and enuyeth that anye ſhoulde excell hym in any excellent qualitie that he profeſſeth. But foraſmuch as this enuy of emulation proceadeth of ſome ſinguler vertue of them that are ſo maliced, they maye herein reioyce, that they ſhall euer haue a hundreth frendes for one enemie: yea and although they hadde none, yet is vertue a rewarde to it ſelfe, and to be embraſed for it ſelfe onelye, as the Philoſophers affirme. What then ſhall we ſay to ſuch, as forgettyng this rewarde of vertue, do not onely [not] fauour, but rather hynder the preferment and mayntenaunce of ſuch experte men, more eſtemyng certayne Fyſhermen that go a trawlyng for fyſhe in Catches or mongers, and dradgies for Oyſters about the ſandes, betwene the South ſurlande and Wynterton neſſe, and the ſandes about Temmes mouth, then they do ſuche excellent Pylotes as are able without any Rutter or Carde of Nauigation, not onlye to attempte longe and farre viages, but alſo to diſcouer vnknowen landes and Ilandes, as haue doone of late yeares many excellent men, to the great honour and enrychyng of their Prynce and countrye. But as touching Steuen A Burrough, the chiefe Pylote of your viagies of diſcouery, it may hereby well appeare yat he is neyther malicious nor enuious of his arte and ſcience, in that he deſireth ye ſame for the common profite to be commen to al men: And for the ſame intent was the fyrſt that moued certen worſhypfull of your company, as Syr William Garrerd, Maiſter William Mericke, Maiſter Blaſe Sanders, and Maiſter Edwarde Caſtlen, to haue this worke tranſlated into the Engliſh tongue. Who of their own good nature fauouryng al vertuous ſtudies and the profeſſours of the ſame, did ſone incline to his honeſt requeſt herein: and therewith not only deſired me, but alſo with liberall rewarde enterteined me, to take in hande the tranſlation. Whiche being nowe finiſhed as well as my poore learnyng may perfourme, I deſyre your honours and worſhyppes, to accepte in as good parte as I haue ment herein to gratifie you, and doe ſuche ſeruice as my abilitie may ſuffice. Nowe therfore this worke of the art of Nauigation, beyng publyſhed in our vulgar tongue, you may be aſſured to haue more ſtore of ſkylful Pilotes. Pilotes (I ſaie) not Pirottes, Rulers, not Rouers, but ſuche as by their honeſt behauour and conditions ioyned with arte and experience, may doe you honeſt and true ſeruice: whiche is not to be looked for of ſuche as beynge deſtitute as well of the feare of God as of all moral vertues, ſuperbounde in all notorious vyces, accoumpting deſperatneſſe for boldneſſe, raſhneſſe for hardineſſe, impudencie for ſtoutneſſe, and crueltie for manhod. What other

thyng (I ſaye) is to bee looked for of ſuche, then of ſuche trees ſuch fruites, *Et mali corui malum ouam.* But for as muche as theſe haue no place appointed them in the bodie of our common wealth, whiche we haue here before compared to the members of the bodie of man: therefore are they no otherwyſe to be eſtemed then as excrementes of the bodye, to whom nature hath appointed no place in the ſame, but laboureth continuallye to caſt them forth dyuers wayes, leaſte by theyr filthyneſſe they ſhould infecte the other members, euen as the pompe of the ſhyppe if it be not auoyded, is noyous to the ſhippe and all that are therein. But the wyſe and honeſt Pylot, fyrſt hauyng before his eyes the feare of God, and puttyng his chief truſt in hym, ſhall ſecondarely truſt to his arte and ſcience, without any ſuche vayne obſeruations as the ſuperſtitious Horoſcopers (Aſtrologiers I meane, and not Aſtronomers) are accuſtomed to vſe in the elections of houres, tymes, and dayes, by conſtellations and aſpectes of the Starres and Planetes, as many fonde menne haue doone, thynkynge thereby to haue eſcaped ſuche daungers, as they haue thereby the rather fallen into, throughe contempte of arte and ſcience by folyſhe confidence in ſuperſtitious Aſtrologie: which for the vanitie and vncertaintie thereof, the ryght worſhypfull and of ſingular learnynge in all ſciences, Syr Thomas Smyth, in my tyme the floure of the Vniuerſitie of Cambridge, and ſometyme my Tutor, was accuſtomed to call *Ingenioſiſſimam artem mentiendi.* (That is) the moſte ingenious arte of lyinge. Omitting therefore the ſuperſtitious and phantaſticall obſeruations of the iudicials of Aſtrologie, it ſhalbe better and more neceſſary for all Pylotes that deſyre to excelle in theyr profeſſion, to learne and obſerue the principles of thys booke, whereby they may haue ſuche knowledge of the Sphere, as may inſtructe them the makynge and vſe of dyuers goodly Aſtronomicall inſtrumentes perteyninge to the arte of Nauigation, by knowledge of the mouynges of the Sunne and Moone in their Spheres, and the other Planetes and fixte Starres: thereby to attayne to the true knowledge of houres, tymes and tydes, with the variation of the Compaſſe, and many other goodly naturall obſeruations of weathers, tempeſtes, and calmes, by certain infaileable ſygnes and tokens of the ſame, very neceſſary to be obſerued. And this by the true principles of Aſtronomie and not of Aſtrologie. And this is the true Aſtronomie wherof the Diuine Philoſopher *Plato* hathe wrytten ſo diuine a ſentence, that I haue thoughte the ſame here worthy to be alleaged, that by the aucthoritie of ſo famous an aucthour, we maye knowe what is true Aſtronomie, with the vſe and commoditie therof. Therfore in his booke intituled *Timeus vel De Natura*, theſe are his wordes. *Rerum autem optimarum cognitionem, nobis oculi attulerunt. Nam hæc quæ de mundo diſputantur, nunquam inuenta fuiſſent, ſi neque ſydera, neque Sol, neque Cœlum ſuſpici potuiſſet. Cognitio vero diei ac noctis, ab oculis orta, fecit vt dimenſione quadem, menſium annorumque ambitus metiremur, tempus cognoſceremus, ac vniuerſæ naturæ ordinem ſcrutaremur. Quibus ex rebus, philoſophiam adepti ſumus.* That is to ſaye. Our eyes haue brought vnto vs the knowledge of moſte excellent thinges. For what ſo euer is diſputed of the worlde, had neuer bene inuented, yf neither the Starres, neither the Sunne, neither heauen, coulde haue bene ſeene. For the knowledge of the daye and nyght, takyng beginning at ye eyes, cauſed vs as it were by certen limites and boundes to meaſure the circuites of monethes and yeares, wherby we came to the knowledge of tymes and the order of vniuerſall nature. And hereby alſo we obteyned the knowledge of Philoſophie. &c. And thus by the aucthoritie of Diuine Plato (whome for hys excellencie *Cicero* called *Deum Philoſophorum* (that is) the God of Philoſophers) we maye vnderſtande that the true Aſtronomie, is the perfecte knowledge of the miraculous mouinges of ye Planetes, Starres, and heauens (and eſpecially of the Sunne and Moone) whereby is cauſed the varietie of times and dyuerſitie of all naturall thynges, by naturall cauſes: as by the qualities of Elementes, as hoate, colde, moyſte and drye, whyche are augmented or dymynyſhed by the more or leſſe influence of theſe twoo Luminaries, as they comme nearer vnto vs at ſome tymes, or depart further from vs at other tymes, with diuers motions in diuers climates whiche cauſeth not onely varietie of tymes in ſundry climates, but alſo the varietie of diuers complexions, formes, and diſpoſitions of all creatures vnder the face of heauen, none other accidentall contyngent, voluntarie or violent cauſe to the contrarie notwithſtandinge. And this is it that *Plato* meaneth by thoſe wordes. *Vt tempus cognoſceremus ac vniuerſæ naturæ ordinem, &c.* That is, to knowe the tymes and vniuerſall order of nature. And doubtleſſe, who ſo well conſidereth the marueilous effectes that are cauſed, eſpecially by the variable mouing of the Sunne in the Zodiac, muſt needes acknowledge it to be the chiefe inſtrument and meane that God vſeth in the generation, perſeruation, and alteration of all creatures that are conteyned in the worlde of generation and corruption. And for this conſideration, certen of the auncient Philoſophers called it the ſoule of the worlde: Other the eye, and other alſo the heart of the worlde. *Plato* alſo affirmeth that the ſoule of the worlde is in the Sunne: And that all other liuing thynges, receyue lyfe from hence. And hereof commeth the ſayinge of the Philoſopher, *Sol et homo generant hominem*: (that is) the Sunne and man, begette man. And therefore (as wryteth *Marcilius Ficinus*) of all Idolaters they are moſt tollerable that honour the Sunne for God. The whiche although it bee not, yet vndoubtedlye are his effectes ſo greate and wonderfull in this inferiour worlde, that it may ſeme in maner to be Gods Viceregent, Lieſteſiant and Viceroy in al the woorkes of nature, excepte where and when it pleaſeth hym in any thyng myraculouſlye, otherwyſe then by the common order and courſe of nature, to commaunde the contrarie.

And yf it may not be tedious vnto you (ryght honorable and worſhypfull) it ſhalbe a pleaſure vnto me, for the better declaracion hereof, to make a brieſe diſcourſe of the marueilous and ſtraunge effectes that are cauſed by the Sunne: whiche perhappes fewe haue done, otherwyſe then diſpearſedly here and there, as occaſion hath ſerued. Fyrſt therfore let vs conſider what it hath done ouer the Equinoctiall line, and vnder both the poles at one inſtant, yet diuerſely and contrarely the one to the other. For ſo hath the infinite wyſedome of the greate God of nature, the ſupreme Architecture of the vniuerſall worlde, diſpoſed all thynges in ſuch perfecte order, that to them that are vnder the Equinoctiall, and haue theyr Horizon paſſyng by the two Poles, the daye is of xii. houres and the nyght as much, and theyr yeare alſo is deuyded into. xii. monethes: But they that dwell iuſt and perpendicularly vnder our pole, and that haue their Horizon paſſyng ouer the ſayde line, haue the daye of ſyxe monethes. That is to ſaye: begynnyng from the tenth daye of Marche, when the Sunne commeth ouer the ſayde Horizon, whyle it returne to paſſe vnder the ſame at the tenth of September. And contrarywyſe one nyght of ſyxe monethes haue th[e] inhabitauntes vnder the Pole Antartyke: whoſe yeare (that is to ſaye, all the courſe that the Sunne maketh by the. xii. ſignes of the Zodiac) is accomplyſſhed in one daye and one nyght. A thyng doubtleſſe moſte wonderfull and marueylous. Lykewyſe, when we haue Sommer, they that are vnder our Pole haue the daye of ſyxe monethes, and they of the oppoſite or contrary Pole, haue theyr nyght of the ſame length. Agayne, when it is wynter with vs, then vnder our Pole is the nyght of the ſayde ſyxe monethes: and vnder the oppoſite Pole, is the day of the ſame length. So that as it were courſe by courſe, when we haue the night, they haue the day: And contrarywyſe, when we haue the day, they haue the night. The which although it be ſo longe and of ſo great ſpace of tyme, yet is it not continuallye obſcured with darkeneſſe. For the Sunne maketh his courſe in ſuch order, that th[e]inhabitauntes of that parte, lyue not durynge that tyme altogether in darkeneſſes, as Moles lyue vnder the grounde, but as other creatures that lyue vpon the globe and face of the earth, they haue ſuche lyght as maye ſuffice to ſuſtayne and mayntayne theyr lyfe. For the bodye of the Sunne declineth no more eyther beneath the Equinoctiall line, eyther aboue the ſame line (which is the Horizon to both the Poles) than. 23. degrees: That is to ſaye, no lower or hygher then the Tropikes, whiche are no more then 23. degrees or there about from the ſayde Equinoctiall that is theyr Horizon, as is aforeſayde. And yet in theſe 23. degrees he maketh not his courſe by the oppoſite Diameter, but goeth continually rounde about in circuite: ſo that his beames reuerberatyng heauen, repreſente ſuche a maner of lyght, as we haue in Sommer two houres before the Sunne ryſe. And this example which we haue taken of the diuerſitie of the Horizons of the Equinoctiall and vnder the two Poles, is to demonſtrate the marueylous effecte that the Sunne maketh departyng ffrom the. xii. houres of the Equinoctiall (that is to ſay, from Aries to Libra) and commyng by lyttle and lyttle, illuminatyng the globe of the earth, and ſo reduceyng the yere of. xii. monethes, into one onely day and one nyght, as is ſayde before. Vnder the infinite varietie of the which courſe, ſometyme with long dayes and ſometyme with ſhorte, all the inhabitauntes of the worlde are fourmed and diſpoſed of ſuche complexion and ſtrength of body, that euery of them are proportionate to the Climate aſſigned vnto them, be it hotte or colde: And may dwel and abyde there, as in theyr natural place and temperament, not lamentyng or deſyryng to dwell elſwhere, ſo grete a loue reſteth in

them to their natiue ſituation. But not to departe from the vyage whiche the Sunne maketh in one whole yeare, as ſometyme approchyng neare vnto vs, and ſometyme departyng from vs. I ſaye that at one ſelfe ſame tyme in dyuers partes vpon the rounde globe of the earth, it cauſeth the Spryng, Sommer, Autumne, and Wynter. And neuertheleſſe at the ſame inſtant and punct of time it maketh day and high noone in one place, and nyght and mydnyght on the oppoſite part. The which varietie although it appeare incomprehenſible to the ſlenderneſſe of our wyttes, yet beholdynge the ſame with the eyes of vnderſtandyng, and therwith conſiderynge the vneſtimable mouyng that the Sunne maketh continually, we ſhall fynde it to be true, hauyng reſpecte to the dyuers ſituations of the earth, as it is continuallye illuminate more or leſſe by the Sunne. And this varietie is made with ſuch a Harmonye and conſonancie, and ſuch a lawe perpetuall and immutable, that yf any poynt or pricke therof ſhoulde fayle, it is to be doubted leaſt the elementes ſhould be confounded together, and returne to their fyrſt Chaos.

And to haue ſayde thus muche of the wonderfull effectes of the courſe of the Sunne, it maye ſuffice for an example to proue howe neceſſary a thyng it is, not onlye for all Pilottes and Sea men to haue the knowledge hereof, but alſo for all other such as ſhall attempt great and farre viagies in vnknowen landes and ſtraunge countryes, as dyd of late maſter Jenkynſon a worthye gentleman, ſette foorth by you and mainteyned at your charges, more lyke an Ambaſſatoure ſente from anye Prince or Emperour, then from a companye of marchaunt men. Wherein, what commendation you haue deſerued, to the encreaſe of your perpetual fame and honour, I referre it to that I haue ſayde before. And as touching maſter Ienkynſon, what trauayles, paynes, and daungers he hath ſuſteyned, and hardely eſcaped, and what diligence and arte he hath vſed in the ſearching of ſtraunge countryes, and in the deſcription of thoſe his viages, it were but in vayne for me to wryte much vnto you, vnto whom the ſame is better knowen then to me. And therfore to conclude, with rendring iuſt commendations both vnto you and him, I can ſay no more, but as Plato wryteth in his booke *De Legibus. Decens eſt eos ciues laudibus ornare, qui corporis vel animi viribus, res arduas preclaraſque geſſerunt, et legibus libenter paruerunt.* That is to ſay: It is decent to commende thoſe Citiſens that by theyr induſtry of bodye or mynde, haue done greate affayres, and haue willingly obeyed good lawes.

And thus eftſones deſyryng your Honours and Worſhyppes to accept in good parte whatſoeuer I haue faide of good wyll and affection towarde you and your proceadynges, and with your ſhielde of Iuſtice and auctoritie, to defende me agaynſte the aſſaultes of ſuch as are enemies to vertue, and captious of other mens doinges: I reſte at your commaundement in the vttermoſt of my powre, to do you what ſeruice I maye.

1562. March 1. John Taisnier, Doctor of Laws [*b.* at Ath, in Brabant], a writer in astrology and chiromancy, publishes at Cologne a tract, *De natura magnetis et ejus effectibus.* Graesse, in his *Trésor*, states that it is a gross plagiary from Pellegrine de Maricourt's *De Magnete*, printed in August 1558.

1562. The Civil Wars in France begin by the unpremeditated massacre of Hugenots at Vassy by the Duke of Guise.

1562. Eden's wife is apparently dead, and he himself residing in the house of a friend; when the following

Aug. 1. letter was written. It is manifestly addressed to Sir W. Cecil, who was brother-in-law to Sir John Cheke. Both the writer and the Secretary of State were now about forty-two years of age. Apparently Eden was to receive £20 [=£150 *now*] as an earnest penny for a translation of Pliny into English.

THE only ſearcher of mens hartes the eternall god I take to wytneſſe (right Honorable) that neuer the greefes of aduerſe fortune (wherof I haue had my parte), dyd ſo muche proſtrate my mynde and pearce my harte with ſorowes, as the vnderſtonding of your honours fauour and goodneſſe towarde me in your lately erneſt travaile in my behalfe (as I was informed by the Maſter of Savie) hathe reioiſed me and revived my Diſcouragied ſpirites, heretofore no leſſe languyſſhed for lacke of ſuche a Patrone, then nowe encouragied by the fauoure of ſuche a *Mæcenas*, as I haue iuſt cauſe to name your honoure, ſyth only the reſpecte of ſuche vertues as it hathe pleaſed you to thinke commend able in me, hath moved your Honour not only in maner to ſeeme careſull for me howe I maye hereafter with quietneſſe ſpende my tyme in ſtudie (as is my moſt deſire) but alſo to be more erneſt in following the ſame, then I might without preſumption demaunde, and muche leſſe without deſertes dequire. As touchinge the which matter (right Honorable) as it was no parte of my diuiſe, but ſuche as the Maſter of Savoy had then in hande as I ſuppoſe no leſſe to pleaſure hym ſelfe and his frende then for xxli therof to be lotted to me for an earneſt penye to begynne the booke (as he ſaith), Even ſo am I right ſorie that for ſo ſmaule a matter, and not ſo favorable a ſute as I wolde have wyſſhed, not only your Honour hathe taken ſuche paynes, but that alſo ſuche contention is ryſen therof betwene the Maſter of Sauoy and Maſter Baptiſt of the privie chamber, that by reaſon therof the pardon being ſteyed be your Honour, the younge gentleman his kynſman (as he hathe informed me) is in Daungiour of his lyfe. But vnder your honours ſauour to ſpeake playnelye as I thinke, I ſuppoſe that here *Aliquid latet quod non apparet.* ffor as this ſute for dyuers conſyderations at the firſt dyd not greatly like me, yet perceauing his erneſtneſſe therin for the ſafegarde of his kinſmans life and gratifying his frendes, I no leſſe willing therin to do hym pleaſure alſo, was well contented to aſſent to his requeſt, and to ſtande to his appoyntment, not ſuſpecting his frendeſhippe, but rather commending his wyſdome, ſo to doo for his frende as therwith not to forget hym ſelfe, *quia nihil ſapit qui ſibi non ſapit.* But if at that tyme, I might ſo boldelye haue preſumed vppon your honours ſauour, as by your erneſtneſſe in my behalfe I nowe perceaue I might haue doonne, I wolde haue moued your Honour of an honeſter ſute (for a leaſe to be had at the queenes handes) wherof I made hym priuie, and was longe ſenſe ſo mynded to haue doonne, but that he Deterred me frome the ſame, alleaging certen commiſſionars to haue the Doinges therof, and that therfore no ſuche thing might be had at her Maieſties handes: Albeit, I haue ſythens hard of Dyvers that haue obteyned the like. Notwithſtonding (as in my former letters I wrotte to your Honour) my meaning is, ſo to move your Honour hereof, as neyther to be an importunate ſuter; or otherwyſe to thinke the ſame to be folowed, then ſhall ſeeme good vnto your Honour, vnto whoſ[e] will I ſubmitte my ſelfe in all thinges: Only putting your Honour in rememberaunce of the commodious place and tyme that I nowe enioye for that purpoſe: for the contynuance wherof, I was a ſuter vnto your Honour for your letters vnto the gentleman my frende in whoſe house I yet remayne, Who alſo being one that fauoureth learninge, and my greate frende, and no leſſe gladde to further ſo good a purpoſe, is well willing the rather to my vſe, to departe frome a piece of his commoditie, in ſuche ſorte as appeareth by the byll herein incloſed. Wherof, further to aduertyſe your Honour if you ſhall ſo thinke it convenient, he will hym ſelfe repayre vnto your Honour to giue you perfecte informacon of all thinges as touching the ſame.

And wheras the Maſter of Savoye tolde me that your Honour ſumwhat Doubted that the booke coulde not be tranſlated into the Englyſſhe toonge, I aſſure you Honour that this I Dare ſaye without arrogancie, that to tranſlate the variable hiſtorie of Plinie into our toonge, I wolde be aſhamed to borowe ſo muche of the Latine as he Dothe of the Greke, althowgh the Latine toonge be accompted ryche, and the Englyſſhe indigent and barbarous, as it hathe byn in tyme paſt, muche more then it nowe is, before it was enriched and amplyfied by ſundry bookes in manner of all artes tranſlated owt of Latine and other toonges into Englyſſhe. And it is not vnknowen vnto your Honour that the Latins receaving bothe the ſcience of philosophie and phiſike of the Grekes, Do ſtill for the moſt parte in all ther tranſlacions vſe the Greke names, in ſo muche that for the better vnderſtondyng of them, one *Otto Brumfelſius*, a learned man, hathe writen a large booke Intiteled *Onomaſticon medicinæ*, where he hathe theſe woordes. *Res ipſas, atque artium vocabula, ſcite, appoſite, deſignatæque efferre, atque ad Polycleti regulam (quod aiunt) exprimere, res eſt non minus difficilis quam glorioſa. Quo, nullum ſtudii genus, maiori conſtat moleſtia. Id quod in cauſa eſſe reor, quod hodie tam pauci in ea palæſtra ſeſe exerceant etc.* Agen, it is not vnknowen vnto your Honour that ons all toonges were barbarous and needie, before the knowleage of thinges browght in plentie of woordes and names. Wherby it maye well appeare that men in the firſt age of the worlde, had a ſhorte language, conſiſtinge of fewe woordes: which euer after increaſed by the knowleage and inuention of thinges. Exerciſe alſo maketh ſuche woordes familier, which at the firſt were Difficulte to be vnderſtode. ffor children at the firſt (as ſaithe Ariſtotle) caule all men fathers. But ſhortely after by exerciſe, caule them by there names. And I haue learned by experience, that the maryners vſe manye

Englyſſhe woordes which were as vnknowen vnto me as the Chaldean toonge before I was conuerſant with them. It maye therfore ſuffice that the woordes and termes of artes and ſciences be knowen to the profeſſours therof, as partely by experience, and partely by the helpe of dictionaries deſcribing them. *Per proprium, genus, et differentiam,* as the logitians teache, and as *Georgius Agricola* vſeth to do in the Germanye toonge: which as well in that parte of philoſophie as in all other, was barbarous and indigent before it was by longe experience browght to perfection. But not to trouble your Honour any longer with this matter, one thinge remayneth wherof I wolde gladlye haue certified your Honour at my laſt being at the courte at Grenewich, if I might haue had conuenient acceſſe vnto you. And this is. That perceauinge your Honour to take pleaſure in the wonderful woorkes of arte and nature (wherin doubtleſſe ſhyneth the ſparke of the diuine Spirite that god hathe gyuen you) I was then mynded to ha[ue] delyuered vnto your Honour this philoſophicall booke, whe[r]in is deſcribed (as appeareth in folio. ii.) ſo excellent and precious an experiment, wrought by arte to the ſimilitude of the vniuerſall frame of the worlde made by the omnipotent and greate God of nature, that I beleue the like was neuer doonne ſynſe the creacion of the worlde. And maye therfore in my iudgement, more woorthely be cauled *Michrocoſmos*, then eyther man or any other creature that euer was made of corporall ſubſtance. *Angelus Politianus* in his epiſtells, deſcribeth an inſtrument cauled *Automaton* made in his tyme in the citie of Fflorence, obſeruing the exacte mouing of *Primum Mobile* and *Octaua Sphæra*, with alſo the mouinges of the 7 planetes in there ſpheres, in all poyntes agreable to there mouing in the heauen. Of the like inſtrument alſo, our Roger Bacon wrotte longe before in his booke *De Mirabili poteſtate artis et naturæ*, where he writeth in this maner. *Maius omnium figurationum et rerum figuratarum eſt vt Cæleſtia deſcriberentur ſecundum ſuas longitudines et latitudines in figura corporali, qua mouentur corporaliter motu diurno. Et hæc valeret Regnum homini ſapienti etc.* The which inſtrumente doubtleſſe, althowgh it be of a diuine inuention: yet dothe this *Michrocoſmos* ſo far ſurmount it, as nature paſſeth arte, and as *Motus animalis* paſſeth *Motus violentus*, for as the other is moued only by waight or wynde incloſed (as is ſeene in clockes and organs) ſo is this moued by the ſame Spirite of life wherby not only the heauen, but alſo all nature is moued: whoſe mover is god hym ſelfe as ſaith S. Paule: *Ipſus eſt in quo viuimus, mouemur, et ſumus.* As alſo Aristotle, Plato, and Philo, in there bookes *De Mundo*, do affirme. And eſpecially *Marcus Manilius in Aſtronomicis ad Auguſtum Cæſarem*, writing thus:

Hoc opus immenſi conſtructum corpore Mundi,
Membraque naturæ diuerſa condita formâ,
Æris atque ignis, Terræ, pelagique iacentis,
Vis animæ diuina regit: Sacroque meatu
Conſpirat Deus, et tacita ratione gubernat, etc.
Ære libratum vacuo, qui ſuſtinet orbem, *Item Lucanus*
Totius pars magnus Iouis.

And wheras the autoure that deſcribeth this *Michrocoſmos* affirmeth that the *Chaos* therof, is *Materia Lapidis Philoſophorum* (which is alſo *Chaos, vel Ouum, vel prima Materia Mundi maioris*) it ſeemeth to agre with that *Cornelius Agrippa* hathe written in his ſeconde booke *De Occulta philoſophia, in Scala Vnitatis*, where he wryteth thus: *Lapis philoſophorum eſt vnum ſubiectum et inſtrumentum omnium virtutum naturalium et tranſnaturalium etc.* And that this greate and diuine ſecreate of this *Michrocoſmos* maye not ſeeme incredible vnto your Honour, I aſſure you that I that am *Minimus Philoſophorum*, dyd long ſenſe (as I haue to wytneſſe Mr Thomas Whalley, th[e]elder ſoonne of Mr Richard Whalley) woorke a ſecreate practiſe ſumwhat like vnto this, in maner as foloweth. I diſſolued two ſubſtances in two waters. Then I put the waters togyther in a glaſſe, ſuffering them ſo to remayne for a tyme. Then I ſtilled off[f] the water frome the maſſe or *Chaos* leſte of them bothe. And put it on ageyn. And ſo dyd dyuers tymes. In fine, the maſſe being diſſolued in the water, I let it reſt all night in a coulde place. In the morning, I founde ſwymming on the water and in the myddeſt therof, a little rounde Iland as brode as [a] riall or ſumwhat more, with at the leaſt a hundreth ſyluer trees abowt an ynche high, ſo perfectly formed with trunkes, ſtalkes, and leaves, all of moſt pure and glyſtering ſyluer, that I ſuppoſe no lymne[r] or paynter is able to conterfecte the like. Then ſhaking the glaſſe, all fell in pieces into the water, and fille[d] it with glyſtering ſparkes, as the firmament ſhyneth w[ith] ſtarres in a cleare wynter nyght. Then putting the glaſſe to a ſofte ſyre vppon warme aſſhes, all turned agen into cleare water, which agen being put in a colde place all night, made an Iland with the like trees as before. What this wolde haue byn in fine, god knoweth, and not I. But of this I am ſure, that if the floure of learning of our tyme and ſumtyme Tutor and brother in lawe vnto your Honour Mr [*i.e., Sir John*] Cheeke had ſeene any of theſe two ſecreates, he wolde greatly haue reioyſed: As I knowe the diuine ſparke of knowleage that is in your Honour partely receaved of hym, will move you to doo the like, ſythe to a philoſophicall and vertuous man, there is nothing ſo delectable as to beholde the infinite poure and wyſdome of God in his creatures, in the which, his deitie is not only viſible, but in maner palpable, as ſum philoſophers haue written. And as touching theſe matters, I haue red a maruelous ſentence in an olde written booke where theſe woordes are written: *Qui poteſt facere Mediam naturam, poteſt creare Mundos nouos.* But to diſcourſe of this oracle, or to interprete the ſame, it were to muche to moleſt your Honour therewith: and an argument muche meeter for a ſeconde Socrates then for me. And of theſe ſecreates, writeth Roger Bacon in his booke before alleaged, where he hathe theſe woordes: *Multa ſunt archana admiranda in operibus artis et naturæ: Quæ licet multam vtilitatem non habeant (habent vero maxim[am] vt ſapientibus cognitum eſt) tamen ſpectaculum ineffabile ſapientiæ præbent et poſſunt applicari ad probationem omnium occultorum quibus vulgus inexpertum contradicit, et indicat fieri per opera Dæmoniorum, etc.*

And thus moſt humbly deſyring your Honour to pardon my boldneſſe in writing vnto you, and according vnto your accuſtomed clemencie to accept in good parte this my preſumptuous attempte which only the loue I beare to your vertues hath moued me vnto, my truſt is that theſe thinges ſhall not be all togyther vnpleaſaunt vnto your Honour otherwyſe occupied in greate affayres bothe in the courte and common wealthe, as was Plato with King *Dyoniſius*, Ariſtotle with greate Alexander, and Cicero Senator and Conſul of Rome. The eternall God and immortall mover of the greate worlde and the leſſe, preſerue your Honour in healthe and proſperitie.

Ffrome the ffolde byſyde Barnet. The firſt of Auguſt. 1562.

Moſt bownde to your Honour.

RICHARDE EDEN.

Tuæ Dominationi addictus, alios non quæro pænates.

Sententia Hippocratis.—*In ſecretis et occultis, ſecretus et occultus eſto.*

ENDORSED—Primo Auguſti. 1562. Richard Eden.

Lands. M.S. 101, *art.* 5.

The advancement which Eden sought, came almost immediately after he wrote this letter: but it is sad to know, that it ultimately ruined him both in health and fortune, and brought him to a premature grave.

We must now introduce a celebrated historical personage, with whose wanderings and trials Eden's life was for the next ten years indissolubly identified; and in the narration of which, we shall be telling the story of our Author's life during the period he was on the Continent. In doing which, we thankfully acknowledge our obligations to the *Vie de Jean de Ferrières, Vidame de Chartres, Seigneur de Maligny*, by a Member [Count L. de Bastard] of the Historical and Natural Science Society of the Yonne. 170 copies only of which, were printed at Auxerre in 1858.

A *Vidamé* was originally the principal lay officer of a bishop. In France, however, only five bishops had such an officer, viz., those of Rheims, Amiens, Mans, Laon, and Chartres; together with certain Abbeys. In process of time, however, it became a mere hereditary title; dependent for its renown on the person who held it and the wealth whereof he was possessed.

JEAN DE FERRIÈRES, disinherited by his father, François de Ferrières, in 1540; became Seigneur de Maligny in 1544; went to Rome in the embassy of M. de Urſe in 1549; accompanied the then Vidame, François de Vendome, to the relief of the Siege of Metz in 1553; and went to Piedmont in 1557. François de Vendome having died on 22d December 1560: the Seigneur of Maligny then became Vidame of Chartres; and thereby immensely rich, if he could have enjoyed his own in peace. But not daring to administer to his vast estate in person, for fear of attracting the attention of his enemies to it: his sister Beraude, by secret agreement with him, presented herself as the sole heir to François de Vendome.

On the breaking out of the Civil Wars, Condé sent the new Vidame (whose riches gave him great influence among the Protestant party) over to England, with the Seigneur de Saint Aubin, to induce Elizabeth to join

in so holy and just a quarrel. Being joined by La Haye, they finally arrived in England about 15th August 1562; and after many secret conferences, the Treaty of Hampton Court was signed by them, on 20th September following. *Cott. MS. Cal. E.* v. f. 113, is a copy of this Treaty bearing the signature of the Vidame.

At this moment, Eden, who was an excellent linguist, entered the service of the Vidame. Time pressed. 3000 men under Sir Adrian Poynings, and with them the Vidame and Eden, left Portsmouth on 2d October, and wore in Havre on the 4th: the majority of them to be killed, or die of the plague by the 29th of July following, when Havre was surrendered to the French. Such as survived brought with them to England, the plague which they had there caught.

In the meantime, the Civil Wars had been stopped by the Edict of the Pacification of Ambois on 19th March 1563.

All the goods of the Vidame were pronounced confiscated, under pretence that he had brought the English into Havre. The French Court, while in progress after the Pacification, reached Troyes on the 23d March 1564; when the Vidame [and Eden] joined on the 8th April the Prince de Condé there, and received a simulated welcome from Charles IX. and Catherine de Medecis. Leaving the Court at Vitry on 27th April, he rejoined Condé, at Paris; where he appears to have chiefly resided for the next two or three years.

Eden states below, and at *p.* xlvii., that he had been in Germany, and, among other places, at Strasburg. He probably accompanied the Vidame there.

A fresh rising of the Protestants occurred on 27th September 1567, when they nearly captured by a *Coup de main* the entire French Court. Then came the Battle of St. Denis on 10th November, and the Pacification of Longjumeau on the 23d March 1568.

The Vidame and his newly married wife (Francoise Joubert, widow of Ch. Chabot) and suite [including, it is presumed, Eden] arrived on the Cornish coast, on 28th April 1569; and after some delay, were allowed to come to London. The Vidame was received by the Queen, on 18th July, at Greenwich. On the 23d September 1569, he was burnt in effigy, for the second time within a year, on the *Place de Grêve*, at Paris, by an arrêt of the French Parliament.

In consequence of the Peace of St. Germain; the Vidame, after about a year's stay in England, returned in October 1570, by Dieppe, to Paris: where some of his servants being attacked in the street, he retires to Boubige, in Poitou. In February 1572, he was at La Ferté, on private affairs.

Soon afterwards he returned to Paris; where he found all the chiefs of the Huguenot party lulled into a belief of perfect safety, through their trust in the King's word. He, however, did not trust the Court, and would not reside in the city, but in the Faubourg of St. Germain. When questioned for the reason of this; he replied 'that the air of the Faubourgs was better than that of the City, and that of the fields better than that of the Faubourgs.'

Maurevert, the assassin of the Count de Mouy, attempted the assassination of Admiral Coligny; but fails to kill him. Charles IX. had hardly left the wounded Huguenot chief; when the Vidame called on him, and let loose his indignation at the dastard cowardice of the act.

On the next day, Saturday, 23d August, at a meeting of the Protestant chiefs at Coligny's house, the Vidame urged that the Admiral should be conveyed out of Paris; and that the Protestants should quit the city: but he was overruled.

That night, occurred the MASSACRE OF ST. BARTHOLOMEW, commencing on the right bank of the Seine. The Vidame, his brother-in-law Jean de la Fin, and ten others [including probably Eden], who were living on the left bank of the river—warned by the firing—escaped for their lives, riding first to La Ferté. Hearing, however, that the Duke de Guise had sent the Sieur de St. Leger to take them: they hurriedly left the Chateau, and—after some wandering up and down the country—managed to reach the coast; where they found a ship, which carried them safely to England. The Vidame arrived in London on 7th September 1573.

1573. Sept. The Vidame, in a very flowery letter, solicits of the Queen, that Richard Eden, who had given him good and faithful companionship for the space of ten years, may be admitted one of the poor knights of Windsor. He also refers to his erudition, and the experience he had acquired in the secrets of Nature. He further encloses the three following *autographic* memoranda; by the side of which, we have put an English translation:—

I.

Si placeat suæ Maiestati concedere Richardo Eden proximam vocationem Militum illorum, qui Winsori Milites Oratorij vocantur, à Rege Henrico 8° fundati.

If it may please Her Majesty to grant to Richard Eden the next vacant place among the Knights, who are called the Knights of the Oratory of Windsor, founded by King Henry VIII.

II.

Richardus Eden natione Anglus, ex honesta familia natus in agro Herfordensi, ubi adhuc sororem habet viventem, suæ Maiestati bene cognitam, nempe uxorem equestris ordinis viri Iohannis Butleri de Lamer: A pueritia educatus in bonis literis, studuit in Achademia Cantabrigiensi decem annis sub tutore doctissimo viro, domino Thoma Smyth, nunc Secretario suæ Maiestati, qui de eius eruditione et morum integritate satis testari potest.

Deinde a serenissimo Rege Henrico Octavo ab achademia vocatus, ipsius Regis mandato, in Ærario officium obtinuit, ubi usque ad mortem Regis, hoc est duobas annis, permansit; qui etiam moriens illius non immemor assignavit illi domus distillatorii officium. Quod tamen Rege mortuo Sumerseti Dux illi concessit qui nunc fruitur.

Postea uxorem duxit, ex qua in xiiij. annis xij. infantes generavit, ut vel hac ratione videatur de patria bene meritus.

Qui etiam tempore aliquot Reipublicæ utiles libros ex sermone Latino Italico Hispanico traduxit, qui typis impressi extant, ut Decades de Novo Orbe, liber iusti voluminus, viz. 600 foliorum; ac deinde librum de Arte Navigandi a Martino Cortesio in lingua Hispanica ad Carolum V. scriptum; insuper ex Pyrotechnia Italica multa de rebus metallicis, quæ antea in nostra lingua extitere.

Tempore vero Mariæ Reginæ Hispanorum quorundam nobilium fauore, denuo in Regis Philippi Ærarium electus: hereseos apud Wintoniense Episcopum accusatus a Watsone Lincolinensi Episcopo, officio privatus est.

Mortua vero uxore, illius fama ad illustrissimi Domini Vidami aures pervenit. Cum quo, quomodo his x. annis et amplius in Germania et Gallia vixerit in utraque fortuna, nec mercenarius nec desertor, et semper illi charissimus, ipsemet Dominus Vidamus pro sua humanitate, veritate testimonium feret. A quo etiam multis amplissimis muneribus donatus, si tamen non ditatus nulla profecto illustrissimi Domini incuria vel

Richard Eden, an Englishman, born of a respectable family in Herefordshire,—where he still has a sister living, well known to Her Majesty, being the wife of a knight, John Butler of Lamer,—was well educated as a boy, studied at Cambridge for ten years under that most learned man, Sir Thomas Smyth, now Her Majesty's Secretary [of State], who can testify to his erudition and blameless character.

Afterwards, being summoned from the University by the most serene King Henry VIII., he held, by his order, an office in the Treasury, where he remained for two years until the King's death; who, when dying, did not forget him, but assigned to him the office of the distillery. After the King's death, the Duke of Somerset granted the office to the present holder.

Afterwards he married, and in fourteen years begot twelve children, so that for this reason also he seems to deserve well of his country.

At this time he translated from the Latin, Italian, and Spanish several books useful to the State, which are still in print, as *Decades de Novo Orbe*, a book of good size, viz. six hundred folios; and a book *De Arte Navigandi*, written by Martin Cortes to Charles V. in Spanish; and in addition many portions of *Pyrotechnia Italica* concerning metals; which did not exist before in our language.

In the time of Queen Mary, he was again placed in the Treasury of King Phillip, through the favour of certain Spanish nobles: but being accused of heresy before [Gardiner] the Bishop of Winchester by Watson, Bishop of Lincoln; he was deprived of his office.

After the death of his wife, his repute came to the ears of the most illustrious Lord the Vidame. How he lived [with him] for ten years and more in Germany and France, with varying fortune, neither a mercenary nor a deserter, and always most dear to him; the Lord Vidame himself will kindly bear witness. From whom also he received many large gifts. And assuredly it is not through carelessness or oblivion on

oblivio in causa fuit, sed sola volubilis et nouercæ fortuna culpa.

the part of his illustrious Lord, but only in consequence of changeful and adverse fortune; that he was not enriched.

Nunc vero, senio affectus, et corporis infirmitate, cogitur peregrinandi finem facere; nihil magis habens in votis quam ut suæ Maiestatis gratia et favore, possit tandem in patria honestis studiis et Reipublicæ utilibus vitam finire. Nulla vero magnarum divitiarum, aut honoris ambitione flagrans solam vitam tranquillam et studiis commodam exoptat.

Deus optimus maximus suam Cælsitudinem semper seruet incolumen.

Now affected by age and bodily infirmity, he is obliged to make an end of wandering; desiring nothing more than, by Her Majesty's favour, to end his life in his own country, in honourable studies, and useful to the State. He has no ambition for great riches or honour; but only desires a quiet life, suitable for study.

May God ever preserve Her Majesty.

III.

Quando quidem maxima pars hominum non est semper melior pars, sed reperiuntur quamplures Ardelliones quibus nihil est magis gratum quam ex quauis leuissima occasione bonos viros calumniari. Ideoque ut agnina luporum faucibus in tuto vivant, necessum erit ut leonis animalium regis, hoc est, Regia autoritate tueantur.

Since, indeed, the greater part of mankind is not always the better part, but many busybodies are found who have no greater pleasure than in calumniating good men on the most trifling occasions; therefore that lambs may live safe from the jaws of wolves, they must be protected by the lion, the king of beasts—that is, protected by royal authority.

Quis enim nunc in Anglia potest Paracelsi admiranda medicamenta ex metallis et mineralibus componere (quæ cum Alchimia aliquo modo symbolizantur) nisi statim ab ignaris et calumniatoribus Alchimiæ legibus prohibitæ infamiam et periculum incurrat. Cui malo obuiando Principis diplomatæ opus erit. Nec dubito quin quum Brocardo multisque aliis peregrinis libere permittitur exercere. Idem mihi æquiori iuditio Principis autoritate concedatur.

Who can at this present time, in England, compound the admirable medicaments of Paracelsus from metals and minerals (which are symbolized by an alchymical method), without immediately incurring from ignorant calumniators the infamy and peril of practising alchmy, which is prohibited by the laws. To obviate this evil, a royal license is needed. Neither do I doubt that since it is permitted to Brocardus and many other foreigners freely to practise [the art]; that the same will, with more justice, be granted to me by the royal authority.—*State Papers, Dom. Eliz., Vol.* 92, *No.* 32.

There were thirteen poor knights of Windsor, whose annual allowance was paid by the Dean of Windsor. It consisted of £18:5s. in money; a gown or coat of red cloth; and a blue or purple cloth mantle with the badge of St. George embroidered on the left sleeve. Eden's application does not appear to have been successful.—See Tighe and Davis, *Annals of Windsor*, i. 223. *Ed.* 1858.

1573. Sir W. Winter is knighted this year.—See Sylvanus Morgan's *Sphere of Gentry*, Book 3, *p.* 14, *Ed.* 1661.

1574. Wintertide. Eden writes the following dedication to Sir W. Winter of his translation of John Taisner's book *De natura magnetis, &c.*, which he designed as a complement to a new edition of his previous translation of Martin Cortes' *Arte de Navigar*. Though written at this time, it did not appear in print for four or five years afterwards, in consequence of the successive deaths of Eden, Richard Jugge the printer, and his son John Jugge.

The most important allusion in it is the account of Sebastian Cabot's death, the only one on record.

A very necessarie and profitable Booke concerninge Nauigation, compiled in Latin by *Ioannes Taisnierus*, a publike professor in Rome, Ferraria, and other Vniuersities in Italie of the Mathematicalles, named a treatise *Of continuall motions*. Translated into Englishe, by Richarde Eden.

Imprinted at London by Richarde Jugge.

To the ryght woorshipfull Syr Wylliam Wynter, Knyght, Maister of the Ordinaunce of the Queenes Maieslies Shippes, and Surueyor of the sayd Shippes, Richarde Eden wysheth health and prosperitie.

IT is nowe about twelue yeeres paste (gentle Maister Wynter) since the curtesie and fauour which long before I founde at your hande, mooued me no lesse for the good wyll that I haue euer borne you and your vertues, to excogitate or deuise somethyng, within the compasse of my poore abilitie, that myght be a witnesse, and as it were a seale, to testifie both that I haue not forgotten your gentleness, and also how desyrous I am to pay the debtes of frendeshyp which then I promised you, and also attempted to persourme: But beyng at that tyme preuented, by meanes of my sodayne departyng out of Englande, with my good Lorde the *Vidame*, with whom I remayned for the space of ten yeeres, vntyll the calamities of that miserable countrey, with losse of goods, and danger of lyfe, hath dryuen me home agayne into my natiue countrey: Where fyndyng my selfe at some leysure, and desyrous to passe foorth parte of my tyme in some honest exercise, which myght be profytable to many, domagable to none, and a meanes to geat me newe freendes, the olde in my so long absence, in maner vtterly wasted: I chaunced in the meane tyme, to meete with my olde acquayntance and freend, Richard Iugge, Printer to the Queenes Maiestie, who had many yeeres before, printed the Booke of *Marten Curtes*, of the Art of Nauigation, by me translated out of Spanyshe tongue. Whereof, hauyng with him some conference, he declared that he woulde prynt that booke agayne, yf I woulde take the paynes to deuise some addition touchyng the same matter, that myght be ioyned thereto. At whiche tyme, hauyng with me in the Latine tongue, these books here folowyng printed, whiche I brought with me out of Fraunce, I soone agreed to his honest request, to translate them into Englyshe: Whiche beyng accomplyshed, this onely remayned, accordyng to the common custome, to consecrate and dedicate the same to some worthie personage, whose fame, auc[t]horitie, and dignitie, myght defende them from the euyll tongues of such as are more redie rather to reprooue other mens dooynges, then to doo any good them selues. And therfore (gentle Maister Wynter) knowing your aucthoritie and fame in well deseruyng, and honorable seruice vnto your Prince and Countrey, to be suche as all men thynke so well of, and so greatlye esteeme, to whom (rather then to you) may I dedicate this booke of Nauigation? In consyderation whereof, and the hope that I haue in your approoued curtesie, fauourably to accept this dedication, as procee[d]yng from one that desyreth nothyng more then to doo you seruice, and remayne in your grace, I shall thynke my trauayle wel bestowed, and sufficiently recompenced, yf it shall please you to accept the same as thankfully, as I wyllyngly offer it vnto you.

For yf there be any thyng in me, wherein I maye by good reason please my selfe, it is cheefely this, that I haue euer loued and honoured men of singuler vertue or qualitie, in what so euer laudable Art or Science, euen of those whereof I mee selfe haue litle knowledge, as are Geometrie, Astronomie, Architecture, Musicke, Payntyng, feates of Armes, inuentions of Ingens, and suche lyke: Of the whiche, this our age maye seeme not onely to contende with the Auncientes, but also in many goodly inuentions of Art and wyt, farre to exceede them. For (not to speake agaynst all the marueylous inuentions of our tyme) what of theirs is to be compared to the Artes of Printyng, makyng of Gunnes, Fyre woorkes, of sundry kyndes of artificial Fyres, of suche marueylous force, that mountaynes of moste harde rockes and stones, are not able to resyst their violence, but are by them broken in peeces, and throwen into the ayre with suche violence, that neyther the spirite of *Demogorgon*, or the thunderboltes of infernal *Pluto* can doo the lyke. What shoulde I here speake of the woonderfull inuentions of *Fartalio*, in his booke *De Arte maiori?* or of many other, whereof *Vannucius Beringocius* wryteth in his booke, entituled, *Pyrotechnia*. As touchyng which terrible inuentions, and the lyke, although some men be of opinion that they were inuented by the instigation of the deuyll, for the destruction of mankynde: yet other weyghyng the matter more indifferently thynke that the inuention of Gunnes hath ben the sauyng of many mens lyues, because before the vse of them, men were not woont so long tyme to lye batteryng in the besiegyng of Townes or Fortresses, but in short space to come to hande strokes, and to soughten feeldes, to the great slaughter of great multitudes. And seeyng that nowe our enimies the Turkes, and

other Infidels, haue the vſe of theſe deuylyſhe inuentions (as they name them) it may be thought requiſite for vs, againſt ſuche deuylles to vſe alſo the lyke deuylyſhe inuentions, leſt refuſyng the ſame, and geuyng place to euyl, we ſhoulde wyllyngly ſuffer the kyngdome of the deuyll to triumphe ouer vs, not otherwyſe able to reſyſt, and much leſſe to ouercome ſo puiſſant and horrible enimies (except beſyde al hope) myght aryſe in our defence ſome newe Moyſes, or Elias, or the Prieſtes of Iericho, whiche onely with the noyſe and ſounde of Hornes or Trumpettes ouerthrewe the walles of the towne. Neyther wyl the example of Dauid and Goliath, or of Samſon and the Philiſtines, ſerue our turne at this tyme, although I beleeue that the arme of the Lorde is not weakened, yf there lacked not a Moyſes with his rodde, and woorthie Aſſiſtentes, which myght helpe to holde vp his weerye arme.

But to returne to ſpeake of ingens, and ingenious inuentions, whiche inuented and vſed to the glorie of God, and defence of his people, againſt the furie and tyrannie of Infidelles, they may as woorthyly be called the gyftes of God, as were the inuentions and Art of them that buylded eyther the Temple of Hieruſalem, or the Arke of God: And yet is it there wrytten of thoſe Artificers, that God gaue them the ſpirite of knowledge and cunnyng in ſuche Artes. And therefore I thynke it may alſo be ſayde without offence, that the knowledge of *Archimedes*, and other men in ſuche commendable inuentions, are the gyftes of God, for as muche as the gyftes of God are free, and not bounde to any nation or perſon.

Exod. xxxv. Bezaleel and Ahaliab.

And yf it may be graunted that the ſpirites of men, or the ſpirite of God in men, may be diuided (as was the ſpirite of Moyſes to twelue other) or otherwyſe that the ſpirites of dead men may reuiue in other (after the opinion and tranſanimation of *Pythagoras*) we may thynke that the ſoule of *Archimedes* was reuiued in *Beſſon*, that excellent Geometer of our tyme, whom I knewe in Fraunce the Maiſter of the engins to the Frenche kyng, Charles the nienth, vnder whom that lamentable ſlaughter at Paris was committed, in the whiche were ſlayne ſo many noble men. Whiche crueltie the ſayde *Beſſon* abhorryng, fled hyther into England, and here dyed, in the yeere. 1573. and left in witneſſe of his excellencie in that Art, a booke in prynt, conteynyng the fourmes or portractes of ſyxtie engins of marueylous ſtrange and profytable deuice, for diuers commodious and neceſſary vſes. Of the whiche, for as muche as three of them, that is to meane, the 54. 57. and 60. be engines cheefely parteyning vnto Shyppes, it ſhall not be from my purpoſe here to make a breefe rehearſal of them.

The. 54. therefore (as he wryteth) is an engin not vnlyke vnto that whiche in auncient tyme *Archimedes* inuented for the *Syracuſians*, wherewith a man with the ſtrength of onely one hande, by helpe of the inſtrument called *Triſpaſton* (which in our tongue ſome cal an endleſſe Scrue), brought a Shyp of marueylous greatneſſe from the lande into the ſea, in the ſyght of kynge *Hieron*, and an infinite multitude, whiche with all their force coulde not doo the ſame. &c. Of the which alſo, our countrey man, Roger Bacon, a great Philoſopher (and no Nicromancer, as that ignorant age ſlaundered him) ſeemed to haue had ſome knowledge: For in his booke of the marueylous power of Art and Nature, he maketh mention of an Inſtrument (as farre as I remember) no bygger then a mans hande, wherewith one man myght drawe to hym the ſtrength of three hundred men. And I well remember, that at my beyng in Fraunce, I hearde credible reporte, that the Earle of *Rocumdolfe*, an Almaine, made an engin, wherewith the ſayde kyng Charles when he was but. xvi. yeeres of age, lyfted from the grounde a weyght, whiche the ſtrongeſt man in the courte was not able to remooue. Almoſte the lyke deuice we vſe in the bendyng of a Croſſebowe. Alſo at my being in Germanie in the citie of Stroſburge, a woorthy and learned Gentleman, *Monſieur de Saleno*, tolde me that in that citie one had inuented an engin of iron, no bygger then a mans hande, wherevnto faſtenyng a rope, with a hooke of iron, and caſtyng the hooke vpon a wal, tree, or other place, where it myght take holde, he coulde with that engin lyft hym ſelfe vp to the wal, or other place. But to returne to the other two engines of *Beſſon*, parteynyng to our purpoſe. Therefore the. 60. fygure (as he there wryteth) is the inuention of an engin, ſcarſely credible, wherewith by ballance and eaſie motion, beyond the order of nature, a Shyp may be ſo framed and gouerned, that in the calme ſea it ſhall mooue forewarde, and in litle wynde haſten the courſe, and in too much wynde temper and moderate the ſame: A thyng woorth the knowledge to a kyng, as he ſayeth. Of the thyrd engin, which is the. 57. fygure of his booke, he wryteth thus. An Artifice not yet diuulgate or ſet forth, whiche placed in the pompe of a Shyp, whyther the water hath recourſe, and mooued by the motion of the Shyp, with wheeles and weyghtes, dooth exactly ſhewe what ſpace the Shyp hath gone. &c. By whiche deſcription, ſome doo vnderſtand that the knowledge of the longitude myght ſo be founde, a thyng doubtleſſe greatly to be deſyred, and hytherto not certaynely knowen, although *Sebaſtian Cabot* on his death bed told me that he had the knowledge thereof by diuine reuelation, yet ſo, that he myght not teache any man. But I thinke that the good olde man, in that extreme age, ſomewhat doted, and had not yet euen in the article of death, vtterly ſhaken of all worldlye vayne glorie.

Of this instrument reade, the Cosmolabe of Besson.

As touchyng whiche knowledge of the longitude, to rehearſe the ſaying of that excellent learned man, *Iohannes Fernelius*, in his incomparable booke *De abditis rerum cauſis*, where in the Preface to King Henrie of Fraunce, he writeth in this maner. We haue put our helpyng hande to the Arte of Nauigation and Geographie: forby obſeruation of the houres of the Equinoctialles, we haue inuented howe, in what ſo euer region or place of the worlde a man ſhalbe, he may knowe in what longitude it is: which certaynly we haue not taken of the fountaynes of the ancientes, but fyrſte, of all other (as I thynke) haue drawen it of our ryuers, as our owne inuention. &c. So that (ſaith he) whiche way ſo euer you turne your eyes, you may ſe that the poſteritie hath not ryotouſly waſted the inheritance of Artes and sciences, left them by their predeceſſors, but haue greatly encreaſed the ſame, and inuented other: For certaynely, the multitude of thinges incomprehenſible, is infinite, and ſo therfore inuentions muſt needes alſo be infinite, and without ende. And therefore, as touchyng this thing (ſayth he) to ſpeake freely what I thynke, they ſeeme to me to offende as muche, whiche contende that the auncientes haue inuented and comprehended al thynges, as doo they whiche attribute not vnto them the fyrſt inuentions, ſo depryuyng them of theyr right poſſeſſion. For whereas nowe by the benefite of almightie God (who hath geuen vs his Chriſte, and with hym all good thynges) the lyght of trueth ſhyneth in our vnderſtandyng by godly inſpiration, there is no iuſt cauſe why we ſhoulde in ſuche thynges thinke vs inferior to the auncientes. Of which Argument, who lyſteth may reade more in the ſayde Epiſtle of *Fernelius*.

An instrument in motion agreeyng with the motion of heauen: Anno Domo. 1584.

And for as much as I haue made mention of ſuch inuentions, it ſhal not be from the purpoſe, to deſcribe the goodly inſtrument wherof *Angelus Policianus* in the fourth booke of Epiſtles to *Franciſus Caſa*, wryteth in this manner, I haue receyued your Epiſtle, wherein you ſignifie vnto me, that you haue hearde of the ſtrange engine or inſtrument *Automaton* inuented, and made of late by one Laurence a Florentine: in the which is expreſſed the courſe and motions of the Planettes, conformable and agreeyng with the motions of heauen: And that (for as muche as the reporte thereof is hardly beleeued) you greatly deſyre that I ſhould wryte vnto you, what certayne knowledge I haue of that thing, wherein I am redie to obey your requeſt. And although nowe it be long ſince I ſawe it, yet as farre as I beare in memorie, I wyll breefely declare the fourme, reaſon, and vſe thereof. And yf the deſcription of it ſhal ſeeme vnto you ſomewhat obſcure, you ſhall not aſcribe it altogeather to my declaration, but partly to the ſubtiltie and nouiltie of the thyng. It is in fourme of a ſquare pyller, ſharpe towarde the top, in maner of a *Pryamis*, of the height of almoſt three cubites: ouer and aboue it, in maner of a couer, is a flat or playne rounde plate of gylted copper, garnyſhed with ſundry colours, on whoſe other part is expreſſed the whole courſe of the Planets, and whoſe dimention or meaſure is ſomewhat ſhorter then a cubite, and is within turned or moued with certayne litle denticle wheeles, an immouable circle comprehendyng the hygheſt border or margent, and diuided with the ſpaces of xxiiii. houres within it, in the hygheſt turnyng rundel, the twelue ſignes are diſcerned by three degrees. Further, within are ſeene eyght rundels, in maner all of one greatneſſe. Of theſe, two obteyne the myddle poynt, the one faſtened in the other, ſo that the loweſt beyng ſomewhat bygger, repreſenteth the Sunne, and the hygher the Moone. From the Sunne a beame commyng to the circle, ſheweth in it the houres: and in the Zodiacke, the monethes, dayes and number of degrees, and alſo the true and halfe motion of the Sunne. From the Moone alſo procedeth a pynne, or wyre, whiche beneathe or downwarde in the border or margent of the

greateſt rundell, ſheweth the houres: and paſſing by the center of the Epicicle of the Moone, and extendyng to the Zodiacke, ſhoweth the halfe motion of his Planet. Another alſo ryſyng from thence, and cuttyng the border of the center of the Moone (that is of the Epicicle) ſheweth her true place, whereby are ſeene the ſlowneſſe, ſwyftneſſe, al motions and courſes, coniunctions alſo, and ful Moones. About theſe are fyxe other rundels: of the whiche, one, whom they calle the head and tayle of the Dragon, ſheweth the Eclipſes both of the Sunne and Moone. The other are attributed to the Planets: from euery of whiche, proceede two poyntes, aſſigning the motions (as we haue ſayd) of the Moone: but they alſo goe backwarde, whiche chaunceth not in the Moone, whoſe Eclypſe is mooued contrarywyſe. And thus the reaſon of coniunctions, departynges, and latitudes, is manifeſt in all. There is alſo an other border lyke vnto a Zodiacke, cutting or diuidyng vpwarde or aboue, thoſe fyxe litle rundels (whereof we haue ſpoken) being the rundels of the Planettes: whereby appeareth the degrees of the Eaſt ſignes, and the ſpaces of the dayes (that is to ſay) at what houre the Sunne riſeth, by the whiche, euery of the Planettes are carried in their rundels or circles by courſe, in the day tyme to the Eaſt, and in the nyght to the Weſt. Agayne contrarywyſe, the greateſt rundel of al, draweth with it al the Planettes, in the nyght to the Eaſt, and in the day to the Weſt, in the ſpace of. 24. houres. Az which, to agree with the motions of heauen, both reaſon and experience doo confyrme. And therfore ought ye not to maruayle, yf theſe thynges ſeeme incredible to many. For (as ſayth the wyſe Prouerbe) ſayth is ſlowlye geuen to great thynges, for euen we ſcarſely beleeue our owne eyes, when we ſee ſuche thynges. And therefore, whereas in tyme paſt I read, that ſuche a lyke inſtrument was made by *Archimedes*, my faith yet fayled me to geue credite to ſo great an Aucthour, which thyng neuertheleſſe this our Florentine hath perfourmed. The worke doubtleſſe beyng of ſuch excellence, that all prayſe is inferior to it, and can not therfore for the woorthyneſſe thereof be otherwyſe praiſed, then to ſay that it paſſeth all prayſe. The Artificer him ſelfe alſo being a man of ſuch integritie of maners, that the ſunne is nothing inferior to the excellencie of his wyt: in ſo much that he may ſeeme a man ſent from heauen, where he learned the makyng of this heauen, by the example of the other. Hytherto *Policianus*. Of the lyke inſtrument, Roger Bacon alſo maketh mention in his ſayde booke, of the maruellous power of Art and Nature, affyrmyng the ſame to be woorth a kyngdome to a wyſe man.

But for as muche as the ſubiect whiche I haue nowe in hande, is cheefely touchyng inuentions parteinyng to Shyppes, and the Art of Nauigation, I thynke good to ſpeake ſomewhat of the inuention of a certayne Italian wryter, named *Leonardo Fiorauanti*, who in his booke, entitled *Specchio de ſcientia vniuerſale*, doeth greatly glory in the inuention of Shyppes, whiche can not peryſhe eyther on the ſea, or the lande, affyrmyng that the lyke was neuer inuented ſince the creation of the worlde. But I feare me, leſt vayne glorie of diſcourſyng in the Italian tongue, hath cauſed him more then needes, to commende his owne inuention, as for the moſte parte is the maner of the Italian writers. Therfore committing the iudgement hereof to men of greater experience and knowledge in theſe thynges, I wyl onely tranſlate his woordes, whereby in the booke before named, he deſcribeth the ſayde Shyppe in this maner. Take beames of Fyre, or Pyne tree, which of their owne nature can neuer goe downe, or ſyncke, or abyde vnder the water, and with theſe beames forme an engine (*Machina*, yf I may ſo call it) of the length of three ſcore foote, and of the breadth of twentie foote, and of the heyght of ſyxe foote, laying the fyrſte ranke in length, and the other trauerſe, or ouerthwarte, and the thyrde againe in length, faſhionyng the fore parte lyke vnto other Shyppes, and in lyke manner, bryngyng the poupe or hynder parte to good forme: then with ſuch irons as apparteyne, bynde it, and ſtrengthen it in ſuche maner that it can not breake. And vpon this frame or fundation buylde your Shyppe, of ſuche faſhion as you thynke beſt. &c. It were here too long to rehearſe with what proude woordes and oſtentation he magnifieth this inuention. But whether this frame or engine ſhoulde be bylden vpon the keele or bottome of the Shyp, or otherwyſe, I commit it to them of better iudgement, as I haue ſayde.

Lib. 3. Ca. 18.

The inuention of a Shyp which can not be drowned.

But wheras it may for this tyme ſuffiſe to haue wrytten thus muche of theſe thynges, I wyll make an ende with onely a breefe rehearſal of the inuention and encreaſe of the Art of Nauigation. After that the Art of Nauigation was founde, euery man began to chalenge vnto hym the dominion of the ſea, and there to dwel and kepe warre euen as on the land. *Minos* (as wryteth Strabo) was the fyrſt that ruled on the ſea, whiche neuertheleſſe, other aſcribe to *Neptunus*, who fyrſt founde the Art of Nauigation, and was therefore (as wryteth *Diodorus*) appoynted by *Saturnus* to be Admiral of the fyrſte Nauie: and thereby the poſteritie afterwarde aſcribed to him the gouernaunce of the ſea, and named him the God thereof. After whom the *Cretenſes* euer were eſteemed moſt expert in the Art of Nauigation. But (as wryteth Plinie) boates were fyrſt inuented, and with them was the fyrſte ſaylyng in the Ilandes of the redde ſea, vnder kyng *Erythra*, as alſo witneſſeth *Quintilian*, ſaying, If none had proceeded further then the inuentions of our predeceſſors, we had had nothyng in the Poets aboue *Andronicus*, and nothing in hiſtories aboue the *Annales* or Cronicles of Byſſhoppes, and had yet haue ſayled in troughes or in boates. Other haue aſcribed this inuention to diuers other nations and perſons, as to the Troians and Myſians in *Helleſponto*, and alſo that the ancient Britanes made boates of leather or hydes, and ſayled with them in the Ocean ſea. Plinie wryteth, that *Danaus* was the fyrſt that brought a Shyppe out of Grece into Egypt. Some alſo geue the fame to *Minerua*. But moſt ryghtfully, the inuention both of the Shyp, and Art of Nauigation, is aſcribed to Noe, who (as wryteth *Euſebus*) was longe before *Neptune* or *Danaus*. For doubtleſſe (ſayth he) the Arke of Noe was none other then a Shyp, and the fyrſte and onely exemplar of the buyldyng of all other Shyppes or veſſelles of ſaylyng. Alſo the moſte ancient wryter *Beroſus* the Chaldean (as wryteth *Joſephus*) calleth the Arke of Noe, a Shyp. The ſame *Joſephus* alſo ſayth, that the Nephues of Noe, departyng to inhabite diuers partes of the worlde, vſed many Shyppes. &c. Long after Noe, the *Tyrians* were counted moſt expert in the Arte of Nauigation: and after them, diuers other nations. For whereas no Art is ſo perfect, but may receaue encreaſe, hereof doth it folowe, that this Art alſo hath been greatly augmented, and brought to further perfection by witty inuentions of the poſteritie, euen vnto our age: whereof, who ſo lyſteth to know further more particulerly who inuented all other partes and inſtrumentes parteyning to al ſortes of Shyppes, and Art of Nauigation, may read ye thyrde booke of Polidor Virgil, *Cap. xv. De Inuentorib. Rer.* and *Bayſius*, *de re nauali*.

Thus gentle Maiſter Wynter, beſeechyng your woorſhyp to take in good part this teſtimonie of my thankfull hart (ſuche as it is) I beſeeche the immortall God to proſper all your dooinges to his honor, and the benefite of your Countrey.

1576. The last work which it was permitted to Eden to undertake, was an English translation from a Latin version of Ludovico Barthema's *Travels in the Eaſt in* 1503, which was posthumously printed by R. Willes, the next year. He was also endeavouring to collect the Reports of the Agents of the Moscovy Company, which form so important a part of Hakluyt's Collection; when death exchanged his earthly life of troubles and labours, for, we can but think, the blessed peace of heavenly rest.

I am indebted to my friend the late Mr. C. Bridger, Hon. Mem. of the Soc. of Ant. of Newcastle, for the following note:

1576. July 20. Letters of Administration were granted, in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, to the estate of Richard Eden, of the parish of St Dunstan's in the East, (the same parish in which Sir John Hawkins lived), in favour of Alban Eden, his son.

1577. Summer. R. Willis published a second and altered edition of the Third Work here reprinted, under the title of *The History of Trauayle in the West and East Indies, &c.*

1586. April. It would appear from T. A. D'Aubigné's *Histoire Universelle*, iii. book i. c. 3, *p.* 15, *Ed.* 1620, that the Vidame, after many wanderings, was captured by one Captain Carles: who (not crediting that a member of so good a family was unable to pay his ransom) suffered this distinguished Nobleman, whom the King of Navarre had called his Uncle, and who was now about sixty-six years; to die like a dog, while bound to the magazine at the bottom of the hold of his galley. A prisoner so placed would be situated immediately below the planking of the passage which extended between the two rows of galley slaves from the prow to the stern of the galley: and therefore, when the galley was in motion, would ceaselessly suffer from all the noise of the sixty or eighty rowers; from whom he would be separated, only by the thickness of the planking above his head.

Richard Eden's

Contributions to our Literature,

during the reigns of

Edward VI. and Mary.

1553-1555 A.D.

[The Second English book on America.]

¶ A treatyse of the newe *India*, with other new founde landes and Mandes, aswell eastwarde as westwarde, as they are knowen and found in these oure dayes, after the descripcion of Sebastian Munster in his boke of vniuersall Cosmographie: wherin the diligent reader may see the good succesſe and rewarde of noble and honeste enterpryses,

by the which not only worldly ryches are obtayned, but also God is glorified, and the Christian fayth enlarged.

Translated out of Latin into Englishe. By Rycharde Eden.

☞ *Præter spem sub spe.*

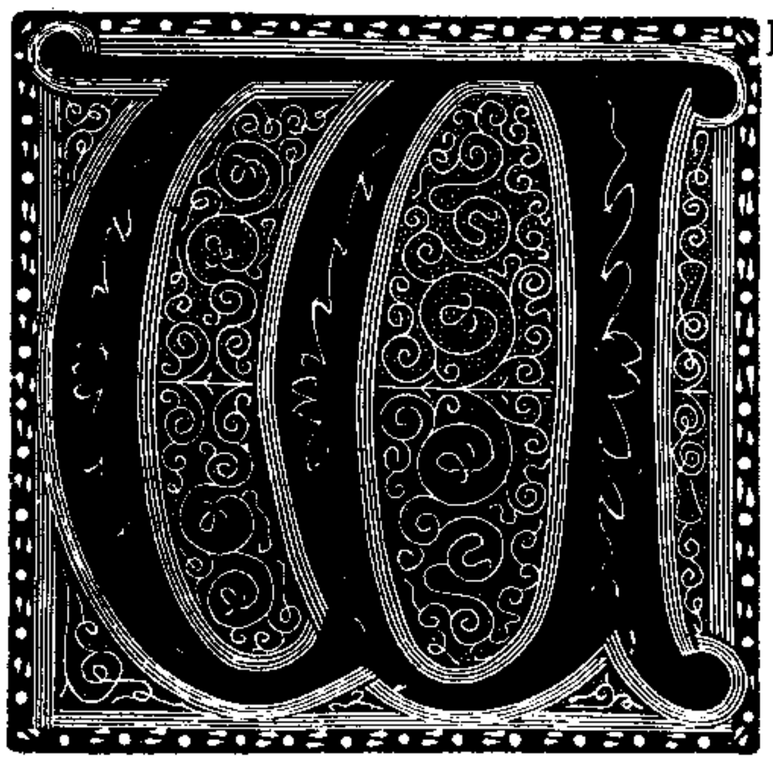
¶ To the right hyghe and mighty Prince, the Duke of Northumberlande, hys grace.

Reade in auncient writers (moſt noble prince) how that mightie kyng and conquerour of the world, Alexander the great, at ſuch tyme as he beheld ye tombe of fearſe Achilles, and therewith called to his remembraunce howe excellently the Poet Homere had ſet forth his heroical factes, which notwithſtanding he thoughte to be muche inferiour vnto his, he ſighed and ſayde: Oh the moſt fortunate, which haſte founde ſuche a trompe to magnifi thi doinges, meaning hereby, that the fame of Achilles was no leſſe notable to hys poſteritie by homers writing, then it was in hys lyfe tyme by hys owne marcial affayres. Wherby we maye perceue ſuch magnanimitie to haue ben in our prediceſſours, men of noble and ſtout courage, yat they thought it not ſufficiente in their life time to deſerue prayſe and honour, except the fame might alſo redounde to theyr poſteritie, yat they mighte therby bee encouraged to do the like. Whyche thing truely hath ben ye cauſe, yat in al ages noble enterpriſes haue ben commended, and ſuch as haue attempted ye fame, haue bene honoured. Wherfore if honeſt commendacions be a iuſt reward dew to noble enterpriſes, ſo much do they robbe and ſpoyle from ye dignitie therof, which in any poynt diminiſhe the fame: no leſſe confoundinge the order of thinges, than he whiche cloteth an ape in purple, and a king in ſackecloth. This I ſpeake ye rather, beecauſe there chaunſed of late to come to my handes, a ſhiete of printed paper, (more worthy ſo to bee called then a boke) entytuled of the newe founde landes. The whyche tytle when I readde, as one not vtterlye ignoraunt hereof, hauynge before in my tyme readde *Decades*, and alſo the nauigations *de nouo orbe*, there ſeemed too me no leſſe inequalitye betwene the tytle and the booke, then if a man woulde profeſſe to wryte of Englande, and entreated onelye of Trumpington a vyllage wythin a myle of Cambrydge. Wherefore partelye moued [by] the good affeccion, whyche I haue euer borne to the ſcience of Coſmographie, whyche entreately of the deſcripcion of the worlde, whereof the newe founde landes are no ſmal part, and much more by ye good wyll, whych of duetie I beare to my natyue countrey and countreymen, which haue of late to their great praiſe (whatſoeuer ſuccede) attempted with new viages to ſerche ye ſeas and newe found landes, I thought it worthy my trauayle, to their better comfort, (as one not otherwiſe able to further theyr enterpriſe) to tranſlate this boke oute of latin into Engliſhe. The which, albeit it do not ſo largely or particulerlye entreate of euery part, region or commoditie of ye ſayd new found landes, as the worthines of the thing might requyre: yet ſure I am that aſwel they which ſet forth or take vpon them this viage, as alſo they which ſhal hereafter attempt ye lyke, may in this ſmal boke as in a little glaſſe, ſee ſome cleare light, not only how to learne by the example, dammage, good ſucceſſe,

and aduentures of other, how to behaue them ſelues and direct theyr viage to their moſt commoditie, but alſo if dew ſucceſſe herein ſhoulde not chaunce according vnto theyr hope and expectation (as oftentimes chanceth in great affaires,) yet not for one foyle or fal, ſo to be diſmayd as with ſhame and diſhonor to leaue wyth loſſe, but rather to the death to perſiſt in a godly, honeſte, and lawful purpoſe, knowing that whereas one death is dewe to nature, the ſame is more honourably ſpent in ſuch attemptes as may be to the glorye of God and commoditie of our countrey, then in ſoft beddes at home, among the teares and weping of women. Which manlye courage (like vnto that which hath ben ſeen and proued in your grace, aſwell in forene realmes, as alſo in this oure countrey) yf it had not been wanting in other in theſe our dayes, at ſuche time as our ſouereigne Lord of noble memorie Kinge Henry the. viij. about the ſame yere of his raygne, furniſhed and ſent forth certen ſhippes vnder the gouernaunce of Sebaſtian Cabot yet liuing, and one ſyr Thomas Perte, whoſe faynt heart was the cauſe that that viage toke none effect, yf (I ſay) ſuch manly courage whereof we haue ſpoken, had not at that tyme bene wanting, it myghte happelye haue comen to paſſe, that that riche treaſurye called *Perularia*, (which is now in Spayne in the citie of Ciuile, and ſo named, for that in it is kepte the infinite ryches brought thither from the newe found land of *Peru,)* myght longe ſince haue bene in the towre of London, to the kinges great honoure and welth of this his realme. What riches the Emperoure hath gotten oute of all the newe founde landes, it may wel appeare, wheras onlye in the Ilandes of *Hiſpana* or *Hiſpaniola* and *Cuba* and other Ilandes there aboute, were gathered in two monethes twelue thouſand poundes weyght of gold as youre grace maye reade in this boke, in the deſcripcion of the Ilandes. Yet ſpeake I here nothynge of perles, precious ſtones, and ſpices. Neyther yet of the greate aboundaunce of golde, whiche is engendred almoſt in al regions neare vnto the *Æquinoctial* line. And whereas I am aduertiſed yat youre grace haue bene a greate fortherer of thys viage, (as you haue bene euer ſtudious for the commoditie of your countrey,) I thought my trauayl herein coulde no wayes be more worthely beſtowed, then to dedicate the ſame vnto your grace: Moſt humbly deſiringe youre honoure ſo to accepte mine intente herein, as one whoſe good will hath not wanted to gratifie your grace with a better thing if mine abilitie were greater. Thus Almighty God preſerue your grace in health and honour long to continue.

¶ Your graces poore oratour Rychard Eden.

¶ Rycharde Eden to the reader.



Hereas in this Booke (welbeloued Reader) thou mayeſt reade many ſtraunge thinges, and in maner incredible, except the ſame were proued moſt certayn by dayly experience, and approued auctoritie, (as ſhall hereafter appeare) I thought it good for thy better inſtruction to make this Preface, wherby thou mighteſt more playnly and ſenſibly comprehend the reaſons and cauſes, yf not of al, yet of ſome of the chiefeſt thinges, which are conteyned in the ſame. Therfore wheras thou ſhalt reade of the great abundaunce of gold, precious ſtones and ſpices, which the Spaniardes and Portugales haue brought from the South partes of the worlde, as from the newe founde landes and Ilandes, the ſodeyn ſtraungenes or greatnes of the thing ſhal not ſo much amaſe thy wittes, and gender in thee incrudelitie, yf thou conſider the ſaying of wyſe Salomon, who affyrmeth yat there is no new thing vnder the Sunne, and that the thing that hath been, cometh to paſſe again: which ſaying doeth greatly confyrme the trueth, of ſuch thinges as are ſpoken of in this Boke, wheras the ſame perhappes to ſome men might otherwyſe ſeme in maner incredible, yf the lyke had not been ſene in tyme paſte, and approued by auctoritie of moſte holy ſcripture, which declaring the great wyſdom, ryches, and noble viages of King Salomon, ſayth that God gaue him wiſdom and vnderſtanding exceding muche, and a large heart, and that he prepared a nauie of ſhippes, in the porte of *Azion Gaber*, by the brinke of the redde ſea, which ſayled to *Ophir*, and brought from thence. xxi. ſcore hundreth (which is. xlii. M. [forty-two thousand]) weyght of golde. Agayne, that the weyghte of golde which was broughte to Salomon in one yere, was. vi. hundreth, thre ſcore and. vi. talentes of gold, wheras the Hebrue talente, called *Talente Hæbraicum ſanctuarij*, was of our ſterling money 500. pounde, and *Talent Hæbraicum uulgare*, was halfe ſo much Lykewyſe yat ſiluer was nothing worth in the dayes of Salomon, and yat he made ſiluer and gold in Hieruſalem as plentious as ſtones Agayn, that he ouerlayd the houſe of the Lord with precious ſtones beautifully, and the gold wherwith he couered it, was golde of *Paruaim*. Alſo that the kinges nauie of ſhippes went once in thre yere to *Tharſis*, and brought Gold, Siluer, Apes, Peacockes, and Elephantes teeth. Which wordes ſurely ſeme ſo to confirme ſuch thinges as are ſpoken of in the nauigacions wherof this boke entreateth, that nothinge can make more for the truth of the ſame: and briefely to ſpeake of the places whether Salomons ſhippes ſayled for Gold, as *Tharſis* and *Ophir*. This ought to be conſydered for a general rule, that neareſt vnto the ſouth partes of the world betwene the two Tropikes vnder ye *Equinoctial* or burning lyne, where the ſunne is of greateſt forſe, is the chiefeſt place where gold is engendred, although it be ſometymes founde in colde regions as in Scotland, in Crayford more, likewyſe in Hungary, yet nether pure of it ſelf, nor in great quantitie: the reaſon whereof is largely declared in the Bookes of George Agric, and Albertus Magnus. And wheras it is written in ye Boke of Kinges in the Actes of Salomon that he prepared his ſhippes in *Azion Gaber*, beyng by the brinke of the readde ſea, and ſayled from thence to *Ophir* for Golde, it is apparaunt, that (howſoeuer the names of thinges haue altered and periſhed in tyme) he ſayled from thence ſouthwarde towarde the Equinoctial lyne, for aſmuche as there is none other paſſage oute of the narowneſſe of the readde ſea, but onely into the mayne South ſea, by the which the Portugales euen at this daye make theyr viage to *Calicut*, *Samotra*, *Madagaſcar*, and ſuch other Ilandes in the South eaſt partes of the worlde, where Golde, Spyces, Apes, and Elephantes are nowe founde in lyke manner. But as for *Tharſis* beynge a cytye of *Cilicia* in Aſia the leſſe and the natiue countreye of S. Paule the Apoſtle, and ſituate muche more toward the North, then is Iudea, and in maner directlye ouer againſte Iudea on the otherſyde of the ſea called Mare Mediteraneum, and in the ſame clime, in the which ſtandeth the Ilande of Sicilia, and the cytie of Ciuile in Spayne, it hardelye agreeth with the principles of Philoſophie and common experience, that golde ſhould be there engendred in lyke abundaunce as in Regions more towarde the ſouth, much leſſe Elephantes and Apes, which are no where engendred farre from the *Æquinoctial* lyne, or beyonde the two Tropikes, nor yet wil engendre yf they be

Nothing new vnder the Sunne.

3. Reg. 4
3. Reg. 9
3. Re. 10.

2. Par. 1
1 Par. 3.
Tharsis.
Golde Apes Elephantes.
Salomons shippes.
Ophir.

Where Gold is engendred.
Scotland.
Hungary

3. Reg. 9
Azion Gaber.

The *Equinoctial* line.

Calicut.

Tharsis in *Cilicia.*

Sicilia.
Ciuile in Spayne.

Spyces.

Pepper.

Orange tree.

East India.

Solomon boughte golde of marchauntes.

The south and southeast.

Mat. 12.
3 Reg. x
1. Par. 9

The quene of Saba, the quene of the south.

2 par. 9
3 Reg. x

Saba in *Ethiopia* vnder Egipt.

Saba in Arabia.

The quene of Saba came from the Iland of *Meroæ*.

From Rome to England.

The viage of our men to *cathay*

Norway, Lappia, Finmarchia.

Globes and mappes.

Ptolomeus.

America.

The strayghtes of *Magellanus*.

The Ilandes of *Molucca*.

Passage by the north sea into the East.

Pius secundus. lib. i. Capit. ii.

Note wel the passage by ye North sea.

Augustus th[e]emperour

Cimbria.

Caspia.

The warres of ye Macedonians

broughte into thoſe partes of the world. The lyke is to be vnderſtande of Popingiayes and ſpyces, and dyuers other beaſtes, fruites, and trees, which are engendered in certayne climes of the worlde, and wyll not proſpere in other places the reaſon wherof were here to longe [to] declare. For lyke as pepper wyll not growe in Spayne, no more wyll the Orange tree bringe foorth fruite in Englande. Wherefore, it may ſeme by good reaſon, that the Golde, Apes, and Elephantes teeth which were broughte from *Tharſis* (yf it were *Tharſis* of *Cilicia*) were not engendered there, but rather brought thether by merchauntes from the ſouth partes of the world, out of Mauritania, Marmarica, Ethiopia, Libia, and Arabia, or otherwiſe by lande, from the Eaſt India, lyke as at this daye, the greate multitude of Spyces, Golde, Precious ſtones, Sylke, and Iuerye, whyche is at Calicut and Cambaia, growe not al in the regions there about, but are brought thether from dyuers other countreys, as doeth more largely appeare in this Boke. And that Salomons factours for exchaunge of other marchaundyſe, bought the ſame in *Tharſis*, beyng brought thether from other countreyes, as it is written in the thyrde Boke of the Kinges, that Salomon had great plentie of Gold of Marchauntes and Apothecaries. So that to conclude, I would rather thinke (ſauing reformacion of other better learned) that this *Tharſis* (and not *Tharſis* of *Cilicia*,) from whence Salomon had ſo great plentie of Gold and Iuerie, were rather ſome other countrey in the ſouth partes of the world, then this *Tharſis* of *Cilicia*. For, not onely olde and newe Hiſtories, dayly experience, and the principles of natural Philoſophie doe agree, yat the places moſt apte to bring forth gold, ſpices, and precious ſtones, are the South and Southeaſt partes of the world, but alſo our Sauiour Chriſt approueth the ſame, declaring that the Quene of the South (meaning the Quene of Saba) came from the vtmoſte partes of the worlde to heare the wyſdom of Salomon. And lyke as by the auctoritie of theſe woordes it is playne from what partes of the world ſhe came, the ſame to a philoſophical head is apparent by ſuche ryches and preſentes as ſhe broughte with her. For albeit that in the Chronacles of Salomon it is not written by expreſſed wordes that ſhe came from the Southe, yet is it wrytten that ſhe came to Hieruſalem with a very great trayne, with camels laden with ſpyces, ſwete odours, and exceading much gold and precious ſtones, which deſcripçion doeth well agree, both with the ſituation of the cytie of Saba in *Ethiopia* vnder Egipt: and alſo with the countrey of Saba, being in the middel of Arabia, inuironned about with great rockes wherein is a great wood of Precious trees, ſome of Cinomome and Caſſia, and ſome bringing forth frankencenſe and myrre, as writeth *Plinius lib.* 12. and *Theophraſtus li.* 9. *de Hiſt. Plant.* Wherefore the Quene of Saba myghte worthely be called the quene of the South, foraſmuch as bothe Saba (or rather Sabat) in *Ethiopia*, whiche Ioſephus thinketh to be the Iland of *Meroe*, now called *Eſaba*, beinge in the ryuer of *Nilus*, and that the quene came from thence, and alſo Saba in Arabia, are ſituate farre Southwarde from Hieruſalem, euen in maner in the middeſt of the lyne, called *Tropicus Cancri*, and the *Equinoctial* lyne, where the Pole Artike is eleuate not paſſing. 13. degrees or thereabout (as in *Meroæ*) where as the ſame pole is eleuate at Hieruſalem. 32. degrees: whereby it may appeare yat the quene of Saba (whom Chriſte calleth the quene of ye ſouth,) came from the ſouth partes about. xi. hundreth and. xl. miles from Hieruſalem for the ſame diſtaunce is from Saba in *Meroe* to Hieruſalem, as betwene Rome and England. But as touching this matter, it ſhall ſuffyſe to haue ſayde thus muche. Nowe therefore to returne home from theſe farre countreys, and to ſpeake ſomewhat of this viage which oure countreymenne, haue attempted to ſayle into the Eaſte partes, by the coaſtes of Norway, Lappia, and Finmarchia, and ſo by the narrowe tracte of the Sea by the coaſtes of Grouelande, into the froſen ſea, called *Mare Congelatum*, and ſo forth to Cathay (yf any ſuche paſſage may be found) whiche onely doubte doeth at this daye diſcorage many faynte hearted men, ſpeciallye beecauſe in the moſte parte of Globes and Mappes they ſee the continente or fyrme land, extended euen to the North Pole without any ſuch paſſage. Which thing ought to moue no man greatly, foraſmuch as the moſt parte of Globes and mappes are made after Ptolomeus Tables: Who, albeit he was an excellent man, yet were there many thinges hyd from his knowledge, as not ſufficientelye tryed or ſearched at thoſe daies, as manifeſtly appeareth in that he knew nothing of *America* with the hole fyrme lande adherent thereunto, which is nowe found to be the fourth parte of the earth. Neyther yet knew he any thinge of the paſſage by the Weſte into the Eaſte, by the ſtrayghtes of *Magellanus* as you ſhal reade in this Boke. Neyther of the Ilandes in the Weſte Ocean Sea, nor of the Ilandes of *Molucca* ſituate in the mayne Eaſte Indian Sea. And as touchinge this paſſage, albeit, it were not knowen in Ptolomeus dayes yet other auctors of later time, who perhappes haue hadde further experience of the thing (as good reaſon is) doe wryte not onely that there is a paſſage by the Northe Sea into the mayne Eaſte Sea, but doe alſo further declare, howe certayne ſhippes haue ſafely ſayled throughe the ſame, as *Pius ſecundus* (otherwyſe called *Æneas Siluius*) an excellente auctour deſcrybeth in his Boke of Coſmographie, where he hath theſe wordes folowing. Of the North Ocean Sea, whether it may be ſayled aboute or not, the contencion is greater, yet is it apparaunte that the greateſte parte thereof aboute Germanie, hath been ſearched by the commaundemente of Auguſtus th[e]emperour, euen vnto the promontorie or landes ende of the people, called *Cimbri*. The ſeas alſo and coaſtes of *Caſpia* were ſo ſearched during the warres of the *Macedonians* vnder the dominion of *Seleucus* and *Anthiocus*, that al

moſt alſ the North on euery ſyde was ſayled about. Plinie rehearſeth the teſtimonie of Cornelius Nepos, who wryteth that the King of Sueuia (or Swethelande) gaue to *Metellus celer*, proconſull or leauetenaunte of Fraunce, certayne Indians or menne of Inde, whiche ſaylinge out of India for marchaundyſe, weré by tempeſt drieuen into Germanie. We alſo reade in Otho, that vnder th[e]empyre of the Germaynes, there was a ſhippe of Indians taken in the North ſea of Germanie, and drieuen thether by contrary wynd from the Eaſt partes: which thing coulde by no meanes haue comen to paſſe, yf (as many menne thinke) the North ſéa were not nauigable by reaſon of extreme cold and Iſe. And theſe be the very wordes of *Pius Secundus*, whereunto I adde, that thys, notwithſtandinge, yf it ſhould ſo chaunce, that ether there can no ſuch paſſage be found, or the ſame ſo daungerous, or otherwyſe that the very cutte thereof by which onely perhappes any ſhippes might paſſe, could not be founde, yea, or to caſte the worſte, yf they ſhoulde periſhe in this viage, yet I woulde wiſhe all men to be of ſuch corage and conſtancie in theſe affayres, as are valiaunt capitaynes in the warres: who, yf by miſfortune they take a foyle, doe rather ſtudie how by ſome other wayes to recouer theyr honour and reputacion diminiſhed by the ſame, then with ſhame, loſſe, and diſhonour, euer afterwarde to geue place to theyr enemyes, or forſweare the warres. Wherefore, to conclude, yf no good can be done this way, it were worthy the aduenture to attempt, yf the ſame viage may bee broughte to paſſe, another waye, as by the ſtrayght called *Fretum trium fratrum*, weſtward and by North from England, whiche viage is ſufficiently knowen to ſuche as haue any ſkyll in Geographie. As for other landes and Ilandes in the weſt ſea, where the Eagle (yet not in euery place) hath ſo ſpled his winges, that other poore byrdes may not without offence ſeke theyr praye within the compaſſe of the ſame, I wyll ſpeake nothing hereof, bycauſe I wold be loth to lay an egge, wherof other men might hatche a ſerpent. Wherfore to let this paſſe, and to entre into another matter. Foraſmuch as in theſe our daies hath chaunced ſo great a ſecret to be found, as the like hath neuer been knowen or heard before, (what ſoeuer God meant to kepe this miſtery hyd ſo long) I thoughte it good to ſpeake ſomwhat hereof: truſting yat the pleaſaunt contemplacion of the thing it ſelfe, ſhal make the length of this preface leſſe tedious, eſpecially yf it find a reader whoſe ſoule delyteth to prayſe God in his workes. The thing therfore is this, how the hole globe of the world (of the earth and water I meane) hath been ſayled aboute, by the Weſt into the Eaſt, as doth more largely appeare in this boke in the nauigacions of *Magellanus*, who from Spayne ſayled Weſtward to the Ilandes of *Molucca* being in the Eaſt ſea, farre beyond ye furtheſt partes of Eaſt India: and the portugales came to the ſame Ilandes from Spayne ſayling Eaſtward by the coaſtes of Aphrica, Arabia, and the vttermoſt India beyond the ryuer of *Ganges* where, in yat Indian ſea the ſayd Ilandes of *Molucca* are ſituate. A thing ſurely moſt wonderful, and in maner incredible, but that the ſame is proued moſt certayne by experience, the teacher and meſtres of all ſciences, for lacke of whoſe ayde (experience I meane) lyke as many greate wittes haue fallen into great errours, ſo by her ayde, many baſe and common wittes haue attayned to the knowledge and practiſe of ſuch wonderfull effectes, as could hardely be comprehended by the diſcourſe of reaſon. Which thing or other lyke, I ſuppoſe was the cauſe why the noble Philoſopher Ariſtoteles ſayde: *Quod nihil eſt in intellectu quod non fuit prius in ſenſu*, that is, that nothinge is in vnderſtandinge, but the ſame was fyrſt in ſenſe, that is to ſaye subiect to ye ſenſes. Yet would I not that any raſhe witte ſhoulde hereby take holde, as thoughe eyther Ariſtotle or I, meant that ſence were more excellent then reaſon, but rather that reaſon vſing ſenſe, taketh his principles and fyrſt ſedes of thinges ſenſyble, and afterwarde by his owne diſcourſe and ſearching of cauſes, encreaſeth the ſame from a ſeede to a tree, as from an acorne to an oke. Nought els to ſay, but that experience to be moſt certayn which is ioyned with reaſon or ſpeculacion, and that reaſon to be moſt ſure which is confirmed with experience, accordinge as the Phiſicians determen in theyr ſcience, that neyther practyſe is ſafe without ſpeculacion, nor ſpeculacion without practyſe. Wherfore, whereas men of great knowledge and experience, are to great affaires, theyr attemptes haue for the moſte parte good ſucceſſe, as doeth moſte playnly appeare in all hiſtories: notwithſtanding that ſome ignoraunt men wyl alledge that certayn raſhe aduentures haue proſpered well: which ſayinge proueth no more then yf a man ſhould ſay, that twiſe or thriſe a man vnarmed ſlew a man armed (as dyd ſometyme the wyld Iriſhmen at bullen) Ergo, it were better to fight vnarmed then armed. And wheras I haue here ſpoken of knowledge ioyned with experience, I meane by knowledge yat which we commonly call learning, whether it be gotten out of bokes (which are the writinges of wyſe and expert men) or otherwyſe by conference and educacion with ſuch as are lerned: meaning nought els by learning, but ye gathering of many mens wittes into one mans head, and the experience of many yeres, and many mens lyues, to the lyfe of one, whom we call a learned, wyſe, and expert man. The which defynicion and effect of learning, the noble and learned cortier Baltaſſar Caſtaglione (the auctour of the boke called in the Italian tongue *il cortegiono*,) diligently conſideringe, doeth greatlye blame and reproue the frenſhmen in that they thinke yat the knowledge of letters doeth hinder the affayres of warre, ye which perſwaſion he proueth by many reaſons and examples to be moſt falſe. But as concerninge the matter whereof this boke entreateth the greate Philoſopher Albertus Magnus, onelye by learninge, wythoute

Plinius.
Cornelius Nepos.
Sueuia, called also *Suecia* nere vnto gothland and norway.

A ship of Indians driuen from the East ihto the North seas.

The viage to *Cathay* Westwarde and by north.

The earth compassed about

The viage of *Magellanus.*
The Ilandes of *Molucca.*

Experience, ye teacher of al sciences.

Sense and vnderstandinge.

A sentence of Aristotell.

Experience ioined with speculation

A perticuler proueth no vniuersall.

What is knowledge and learning

Baltassar Castaglione.
A false perswasion of ye Frenshmen.

Albertus Magnus

Temperat regions vnder ye *Equinoctial* line.

experyence, affyrmed that habitable or temperate Regions myghte be vnder the Equinoctial or burninge lyne, as appeareth in hys Boke *de Natura locorum*, contrarye to the opinion of other wryters whyche were before hys tyme, and yet is nowe proued by experience to bee moſte true, albeit not in all places vnder the ſayde lyne, the cauſe whereof were here to longe to declare. And lyke as Albertus Magnus by knowledge of Aſtronomye (wherein he excelled) came to the vnderſtandinge hereof, euen ſo that greate Clerke (but better dyuyne then Phyloſopher) Sayncte Auguſtyne and alſo Lactantius, for lacke of lyke knowledge in that ſcience, fell into a chyldiſhe erroure, denyinge that there is anye people, called Antipodes, of whom the greate Aſtronomer of our tyme, Apianus wryteth in thys maner. Antipodes are they, whyche walke wyth theyr fete dyrectelye contrarye agaynſte oures, and haue the heauen dyrectelye ouer theyr heades as we haue. Yet haue we nothinge common wyth them, but all thinges contrarye: for when the Sunne cauſeth Sommer wyth vs, then is it Myddewynter wyth them: and when it is day wyth vs, it is nyghte wyth them: And when the daye is longeſte wyth vs, then is the longeſte nyghte wyth them, and the ſhorteſte daye. Whiche, Lactantius, a manne otherwyſe well learned, in his thyrde Booke, Capittulo foure and twentye, childiſſhelye erringe, wyth hys lyghte and opinionate argumentes, denyeth that there is anye ſuche, and mocketh the Aſtronomers, beecauſe they affyrme the earth to bee rounde, whiche neuertheleſſe they proue wyth moſte certayne and apparente demonſtracions of Geometrye, and vnfayleable experymentes. Whome, Sayncte Auguſtyne folowing, in his ſixtenth Booke. *de Ciuitat. Dei. Capittu. ix.* wryteth after thys ſorte. Suche as fable that there is Antipodes, that is to ſaye, menne of the contrarye parte, where the ſunne ryſeth when it falleth to vs, and to haue theyr feete agaynſte oures, we oughte by no reaſon to beeleue. Thoſe bee the woordes of Sayncte Auguſtyne. Nothwithſtandinge (ſayeth Apianus) putte thou no doubte Gentle Reader, that the Apoſtles of Chriſte were Antipodes the one to the other, and ſtode feete to feete the one agaynſte the other, when Iames th[e]elder and brother to Iohn the Euangeliſte, the ſonne of Zebedeus, was in Spayne in Galitia, and Thomas the Apoſtle in the hygher India, they were mooſte certaynelye Antipodes, walking feete to feete one agaynſte the other, almoſt as directly as a diametrical lyne. For the Spanyardes are Antipodes to the Indians, and the Indians in lyke maner to the Spanyardes. Which thinge alſo the excellente and aunciente Auctour Strabo confyrmeth to bee true, and likewiſe Plinius *Nat. Hiſt. lib. 2. Cap.* 67. Dolateranus alſo, and all other Coſmographers and Aſtronomers. Hetherto Apianus: and to declare my opinion in fewe woordes, I thinke it no greate marueyle that Saincte Auguſtyne ſhoulde fall into an erroure in the ſcience of Aſtronomie in whiche he trauayled but as a ſtraunger, foraſmuche as he erred in many thinges in diuinitie which was his chief profeſſion: and was longe of the hereſye of *Manicheus* beefore he was conuerted by Saincte Ambroſe: and wrytte alſo at the lengthe a Booke of retractes, in whych he correcteth hys owne errours. And I beleue playnely that, that excellent witte of hys, could not haue remayned in yat errour yf he had been wel exercyſed in Aſtronomy, or had knowen any ſuche experyence as is ſpoken of here beefore, howe the Spanyardes by the Weſte and the Portugales by the Eaſte compaſſed aboute the earth, whiche coulde neuer haue come to paſſe yf the earthe were not rounde (*Quantum ad maximã ſui partes*) as they call it. For, as for hylles and Mountaynes, though they be neuer ſo greate, yet in reſpecte to the byggenes of the earth, they doe no more lette the roundneſſe hereof, then doe the lyttle knobbes of the berrye, which we call a galle, lette the roundneſſe of the ſame. Wherefore I am certaynely perſwaded, that yf Sayncte Auguſtyne had continued hys ſtudye in Aſtronomye (as it hadde been pytye he ſhoulde) or were alyue at thys daye, he woulde alſo haue retracted this erroure. But yf here anye ſuperſticious head ſhall thinke it a heynous matter in any poynte to contrary Sainct Auguſtyne, lette hym hearken howe Auguſtine hym ſelfe ſayeth: that he wyll neyther hys writynges or other mennes, of howe greate name or fame ſoeuer they be, otherwiſe to be beleued then the ſame ſhall, by reaſon bee approued to be true: *Neque quorumlibet diſputaciones, &c.* And lyke as the greate Philoſopher Ariſtotel, when he wryte agaynſte hys mayſter Plato of the queſtion *de Idais*, and agaynſte Socrates who by the oracle of Apollo was proued to be moſt wyſe, and certayne of hys frendes aſked hym why he durſte be ſo boulde, he aunſwered that Plato was hys frende, and ſo was Socrates: but trueth hys frende more then they bothe, euen ſo I thinke it no iniurye nor contumelye to Saynct Auguſtyne, yf the ſame were ſayde of hym alſo geuynge hym otherwyſe hys dewe commendacions, as he was ſurelye an excellente man, of dyuyne witte, and knowledge, and ſo trauayled in ſettynge foorth Chriſtes true Relygion in thoſe turmoylous dayes, in perpetual combatte, agaynſte learned heretykes and Prynces of the worlde, that he is worthelye called a Doctour and Pyller of Chriſtes Churche. And as for Lactantius, the intente of whoſe wrytinges was chiefelye to thys ende, to dyminiſhe th[e]eſtimacion of Philoſophye, (as at thoſe dayes it was neceſſarie to doe amonge the Gentyles) and to aduaunce Goddes woorde, (whyche they contemned for the ſimplicitie of the ſame,) albeit, he attempted as farre as hys learninge woulde ſerue hym, to make all thynges in Philo[ſo]phie vncertayne, yet are hys argumentes ſo ſlender, that vnleſſe G O D by the ſecrete working of hys ſpyryte, hadde called the Gentyles to the true Faythe, I feare me leaſte fewe or none of them, (ſpecyallye of the greate wyttes) woulde haue been conuerted by Lactantius

An error of S. Auguſtine and *Lactantius.*

Antipodes.

Apianus.

Lactantius.

The roundnes of ye earth.

S. augustyne.

Apianus.

The apostles, *Antipodes* the one againste th[e]other.

The spanyardes and the Indians are *Antipodes.*

S. augustine of the heresie of *Manicheus.*

S. augustines boke of retractes.

Mountaynes, let not ye roundnes of the earth.

A galle.

A Sentence of S. augustines.

Commendacion of s. augustin

Lactantius.

argumentes. Howe he dalyeth in denyinge the yearth to bee rounde, and that it is poſſyble that it myghte bee longe and rounde, (lyke an Egge,) or otherwyſe longe and holowe lyke a bote, (meanynge I ſuppoſe that the Sea myghte bee conteyned in the holowneſſe of the ſame, wyth ſuche other opinyons grounded of no reaſon, it were to longe to rehearſe. Yet, foraſmuche as he was a learned manne, and for the better ſatiſfyinge of ſuche wyttes as are deſyreous to know ſome apperaunce of truth by naturall reaſon and demonſtracions, lette vs admytte that the earth were rounde after anye of thoſe faſſhions whiche he deſcrybeth: yet can it not bee denyed, but that it is conteyned wythin the holoweneſſe (yf I maye ſo call it) of the ayre, hauynge the heauen in euerye place dyrectelye ouer euery parte of the ſame, as ſayeth the Poete and Philoſopher *Virgill, Cœlum undique ſurſum*: Excepte perhappes Lactantius ſhoulde thinke that it honge by ſome thynge, or were otherwyſe borne vppe wyth pyllers as the Poetes Fable, that the Gyaunte. *Atlas* beareth the worlde on hys ſhoulders, whereby they meane that a manne of valiente mynde muſt ſtoutelye beare the chaunces of the worlde. Of whyche hangeinge or bearynge of the earth, I reade a better and more true ſayinge in the holye Scripture, where it is written, *Fert omnia uerbo oris ſui*, that is, that God ſuſtayneth and beareth all thinges with the woorde of hys mouth.

Holye Iob alſo ſayeth, that the LORD ſtretcheth oute the Northe ouer the emptye, and hangeth the earth vpon nothynge: Meaninge by nothinge, the ayre, becauſe to oure ſenſes it appeareth in maner as nothynge: Or otherwyſe that it is not dependynge of anye other ſubſtaunce, but to bee ſuſtayned onelye by the power of GOD who hath appoynted the Elementes theyr places and lymittes, and cauſeth the heuye to ſtande faſte: as wytneſſeth Moyſes in hys ſonge, ſayinge: By the wynde of thy noſtrels the waters gathered together, the flouddes ſtoode ſtyll as an heape, and the deepe water congeled togeather in the heart of the Sea. Wherefore yf the heauen be rounde (whiche no manne can reaſonably denye that euer ſawe the Sunne and ſterres moue.) And yf the earth bee the center of the worlde dependinge as we haue ſayde beefore, then muſte it needes folowe, that they whiche inhabiting the Northweſte partes of the earth, haue the Pole Artike eleuate thyrtye degrees, muſt needes bee Antipodes to them whiche inhabitinge the Southeaſte partes of the earth, haue the Pole Antartike eleuate in the ſame degree, and ſo the lyke to bee vnderſtand of all other eleuacions and degrees. And yf here anye wyll obiect, that eyther the earth or firme land is not ſo large, or ſo farre extended, or other wyſe not inhabited althoughe it were ſo large, or that the ſea is greater then the lande, to thys I aunſwere, that no man knoweth further hereof then is tryed and founde by experience, as we haue ſayde beefore. And albeit that the ſea were larger then the firme lande, yet foraſmuche as there are Ilandes founde in all places of the mayne Sea, and in maner all inhabited, there is no reaſon to the contrarye, but that the people of thoſe Ilandes maye be Antipodes to ſuch as dwel on the fyrme lande, on the contrary parte, whether the earth bee round and longe, yea or ſquare, (yf you wyll) notwythſtandynge. But wyth what certayne demonſtracions the Aſtronomers and Geometricians, proue the earth to bee rounde, and the Sphericall or rounde forme to bee mooſte perfecte, it were to longe to declare. I wyll therefore make an ende of thys matter wyth the ſayinge of Sayncte Paule in hys Oracion, to the menne of Athens. That GOD made of one bloudde, all nacions of menne, to dwell vpon the hole face of the earth.

¶ I hadde entended here (well beeloued Reader) to haue ſpoken ſomewhat of ſuche ſtraunge thynges and Monſters, whereof mencion is made in thys Booke, to th[e]ende that ſuche as by the narownes of theyr vnderſtandinge are not of capacitie to conceaue the cauſes and natures of thynges, myghte partely haue been ſatiſfyed wyth ſome ſenſyble reaſons. But beynge at thys tyme otherwyſe hindered, it ſhall ſuffiſe al good and honeſt wittes, that whatſoeuer the Lorde hath pleaſed, that hath he done in heauen and in earth, and in the Sea, and in all depe places.

Of the roundenes of ye earth.

The earth hangeth in ye aire

The fable of *Atlas*.

The word of God beareth vppe the world.

Iob. 26.

The elementes.

Exo. xv.

The eleuation of the pole.

The largenes of the earth.

Ilandes

Astronomers and Geometricians.

Act. xvij

Pſa. 135

¶ Eccleſiaſticus. Capit. i.

¶ *The eye is not ſatiſſyed with ſyght, and the eare is not fylled with hearinge.*

¶ *The Table.*

¶ Of the Ilande of Iaua. [*p.* 23.]
Of the Ilande of Madagaſcar. [*p.* 23.]
Of the Ilande of zanzibar. [*p.* 23.]
Of the two Ilandes in the which men and women dwell a ſunder. [*p.* 24.]
Of the mightie Empyre of Cathay, ſubiect vnder the dominion of the great Cham or Cane, Emperour of Tartaria.. [*p.* 24.]
Of certayn Prouinces ſubiect vnder the dominion of the great Cham. [*p.* 25.]
Of the Prouince of Mangi. [*p.* 26.]
Of the Region of Tangut. [*p.* 26.]
Of the newe Ilandes, howe, when, and by whom they were founde. [*p.* 28.]
Of the two Ilandes Iohanna and Hiſpana. [*p.* 28.]
Of the Canibales, which eate mens fleſhe. [*p.* 29.]
Of the maners of the inhabitantes of Hiſpana. [*p.* 29.]
How Chriſtophorus Columbus, after that he had founde the newe Ilandes, returned to Spayne: and preparing a new nauie, ſailed agayn to ye Canibales. [*p.* 29.]
How Columbus the Admiral, paſſed many Ilandes and what chaunced to hym and his in that viage. [*p.* 30.]
Of the newe India, as it is founde and knowen in theſe oure dayes. [*p.* 13.]
Of the Adamant ſtone, otherwiſe called the Diamant. [*p.* 14.]
Of the Kingdoms and cities of Narſinga and Canonor [*p.* 14.]
Howe the Elephantes in India are prepared to the warres. [*p.* 15.]
Of the beaſte called Rhinoceros. [*p.* 16.]
Of Calicut, the moſte famous markette towne of India. [*p.* 16.]
Of the maners of the Indians in Calicut. [*p.* 17.]
Of Pepper and other ſpyces which growe in the Region of Calicut. [*p.* 18.]
Of the byrdes and beaſtes which are found in the Region of Calicut: and of the wyne of the tree. [*p.* 19.]
From whence all kyndes of ſpyces are brought to the cytie of Calicut. [*p.* 20.]
Of the Iland of zaylon, and of the cinomome tree. [*p.* 20.]
Of the cytie of Tarnaſſeri, and of the maners of the cytezyns. [*p.* 20.]
Of the excellent cytie and Kingdom of Pego. [*p.* 21.]
Of the Ilande of Sumatra, or Taprobana. [*p.* 22.]
Of the Ilande of Bornei. [*p.* 22.]
Of the Ilande of Giaua. [*p.* 23.]
Howe the Spanyardes abuſed the ſubmiſſion and frendſhip of the inhabitauntes of the Ilandes. [*p.* 31.]
Howe the Portugales ſoughte newe Ilandes in the Eaſt partes, and howe they came to Calicut. [*p.* 32.]
Howe Magellanus by a ſtrayght or narow arme of the Sea, ſayled by the Weſte into the Eaſte to dyuers Ilandes, where alſo he was ſlayne. [*p.* 33.]
Howe the Spanyardes came to the Ilandes of Molucca, and of the people with great hanging eares. [*p.* 34.]
The third nauigacion of Chriſtophorus Columbus. [*p.* 35.]
[How Petrus Alonſus ſoughte newe Ilandes. *p.* 36.]
How Pinzonus companion to the Admiral, ſought newe Ilandes. [*p.* 36.]
The foure nauigacions of Americus Veſputius to the newe Ilandes. [*p.* 37.]
The fyrſte viage of Veſputius. [*p.* 37.]
The ſecond viage of Veſputius. [*p.* 38.]
The thyrde viage of Veſputius. [*p.* 39.]
The fourth viage of Veſputius. [*p.* 39.]
Howe the Kyng of Portugale ſubdued certayne places in India, and of the ryche cytie of Malacha. [*p.* 40.]
Of the Ilande of Medera, and the fortunate Ilandes, otherwyſe called the Ilandes of Canaria. [*p.* 40.]
[Whether vnder the Æquinoctial circle or burninge lyne (called Torrida Zona) be habitable Regions. *p.* 41.]

¶ Finis.

¶ Of the newe Inˆdia,

as it is knowen and found in theſe our dayes. In the yeare of oure Lorde. M.D.LIII.

After the deſcripcion of Sebaſtian Munſter in his Booke of the vniuerſall Coſmographie.

Libr. v. De terris Asiæ Maioris.

And tranſlated into Engliſhe by Richard Eden.

Here are two viages or nauigacions made oute of Europa into India. The one ſoutheaſt from ſpayne, by the coaſtes of Aphrica and Ethiopia, euen vnto Arabia to the citie called Aden. And from thence to the Ilande of Ormus, and from Ormus to the citie of Cambaia, and from thence euen vnto the citie of Calicut. Cambaia is ſituate nere vnto the floudde *Indus*. This citie is of great powre, riche, and abundaunt in al kyndes of grayne and corne. The ſoyle hereof bringeth forth ſondry kyndes of ſwete oyntmentes, and cotten which groweth on certain trees called *Goſsampini*, this cotton, is otherwyſe called *Bombage* or ſylke of the trees. The Kynge of Portugall ſubdued this cytie, and bylded hard by the ſame a ſtrong fortreſſe: with which thing the Turke beeing ſore greued, commaunded a greate nauie of ſhippes with greate ſumptuouſnes to bee furniſhed in the goulfe called *Sinus Arabicus*: to the ende that he might dryue the Portugalles out of India, and the better to accompliſhe this his purpoſe, he appointed one Soliman a noble man of warre (beyng alſo the Captayne of Alcayre,) to be the admiral general, or gouernour of his nauie, hauing in his retenue. xx. thouſand ſouldiers beeſyde mariners and gonners, whiche were in numbre foure thouſand. This nauie was appointed in the hauen Suezio, beeinge a port of the redde ſea, in the yeare of Chriſt. 1538. And arryued fyrſte at the citie Aden: where laying anker, the gouernour of the nauie ſent letters to the king of Aden, certifying him that he woulde take his viage into India, from thence to expell the King of Portugall. The Kinge of Aden whiche was then tributarye to the King of Portugall, receyued the Turkes letters thankefully, offering him ſelfe and all that he might make, to ſo mightie an Emperoure, deſyringe the gouernoure to come forth of the ſhip, and to beholde the cytie obedient and readye at his commaundemente, in the which alſo accordinge vnto his dignitie and office, he ſhould be worthely interteyned: but the gouernour agayne allured and entyſed hym to come out of his citie, and ſo by crafte circumuented him, that he toke him prieſoner, and commaunded him to be hanged on the ſayle yarde of the ſhyp, and with hym foure other of the rulers of the citie of Aden, affyrming that he was commaunded of the Turke ſo to handel them, becauſe the cytiezins of Aden had not only made a leage with the Portugales, but had alſo payde them tribute: whiche nacion the Turke playnely entended to drieue out of India. And thus after the Kynges death, that moſt riche and beautiful cytie, was euer a praye to theues, ſpoylers, and murtherers without reſyſtaunce. Then the gouernoure departing from thence, lefte there behynde him a garriſon of two thouſand men of warre, and ſaylyng forwarde on hys viage, he came to the citie called *Dium*, whiche the Portugales held: and his armie was greatly encreaſed by the waye, as wel by land as by ſea, by reaſon of the great confluence of the Turkes which on euery ſide reſorted to him, ſo that in a ſhort ſpace they rowled before them a bulwarke or countremure of earth, in maner as bigge as a mountayne, which by little and litle they moued neare vnto the trenche or ditche of the caſtell, ſo that they might ſafely ſtand behynde the bulwarke, (thus rayſing a mount,) they beſieged the caſtell on euery ſyde, and battered the walles and towres thereof very ſore: yet that notwithſtanding, were at the length, enforſed to departe, not withoute greate loſſe and ſlaughter of theyr ſouldiers: for this *Dium*, is the ſtrongeſt citie that is vnder the dominion of

The — ther is Southweste.

The citie of *Cambaia*.

Calicut.

Gossipium, *Bombage* or cotton of the trees.

The turkes nauie agaynste the king of Portugale.

The cytie of Aden.

The kinge of Aden is hanged.

The destruction of the citie of Aden.

The turke beſiegeth the cytie of Dium.

The turke is repulsed.

The excellencie of the citie of *Cambaia.*

Cambaia: but the cytie of Cambaia, is ſituate in the goulfe called *Guzerat*, and is well inhabited, and in maner moſt excellent of all the cities of *India*, and is therefore called *Cayrus*, or *Alcayr*, or *Babilon* of *India*. It is enuironned with a walle, and hath in it very fayre byldinges. Ye Soldan or chefe ruler hereof, is of Mahumets ſecte as are ye Turkes. *Lacha* groweth there more plentifully then in any other countre. The inhabitauntes, for the moſte parte goe naked, couering only theyr priuie partes: they bynd theyr heades about with a clothe of purple color. The Soldan or prince of this citie, hath in a redines for the warres. xx. thouſand horſemen, he hath alſo a mightye and magnifical court. When he waketh in ye morning there is heard a great noyſe of cimbals, drumſlades, timbrelles, ſhames, pipes, flutes, trumpettes, and diuerſe other muſical inſtrumentes, hereby *ſignifying that the king lyueth* and is in health and merye: in lyke maner doe they whyle he is at dyner. To the kyngdom of *Cambaia*, is the Kingdom of *Ioga* nexte adioyning, which reacheth farre on euerye ſide. In this kingdom, by reaſon of the greate heate of the ſonne, the bodyes of men begin to waxe blacke and to be ſcorched: the people of thys countreye haue ringes hanging at their eares and colers aboute theyr neckes of ſundry ſortes, al beſet and ſhyninge with precious ſtones. The ſoyle hereof is not very fruitful, this region is rough with mountaynes, the byldinge[s] are deſpicable, and euyl to dwel in: there is beyonde this, another Kingdom called *Dechan*: this cytie is very beautiful to behold, and fruitful in maner of al thinges: the king hereof vſeth great pride, and ſolemnitie: his pompes and triumphes are in maner incredible, they that wayt vpon the kinge, weare on the vpper partes of theyr ſhoes certayne ſhyning precious ſtones, as *Piropi* (whiche are a kind of Rubies or Carbuncles) with Diamandes and ſuch other. But what maner of Iewelles they vſe in ye ſtede of collers, eareringes, and ringes, you may well conſyder, whereas they geue ſuche honour to theyr fete. In this kingdom is ſaid to be a mountayne, out of the which Diamandes are digged.

The Kyngdom of *Ioga.*

The Kyngdom of *Dechan.*

The diamonde stone.

¶ *Of the Diamande ſtone, called in Latine* Adamas.

The stone *Siderites.*

The hardnes of the diamond.

How the diamand is made ſofte.

The montayne of diamantes.

THe Diamande is engendred in the mynes of *India, Ethiopia, Arabia, Macedonia*, and *Cyprus*, and in the golde mynes of the ſame countries. That of *India* excelleth all other in beautie and clearenes: that which is of the coloure of yron, is called *Siderites*, it is often tymes found in colour like vnto criſtal, and though it be ſometimes lyke thereto in whytnes, yet doth it differ from criſtall in hardnes, in ſo much that if it be layd vpon an anuil and ſtrongly ſtriken with a hammer, the anuyl and hammer ſhall ſoner be wounded and leape away, then the ſtone periſhed or diminiſhed: it doth not onelye refuſe the force of Iron, but alſo reſiſteth the power of fyre, whoſe heate is ſo farre vnable to melte it, that it can not ſo muche as heate it, if we geue credit to Plinie, and is alſo rather made purer therby, then anye wayes defyled or corrupted: neuertheles, the ſinguler and excellent hardnes of this ſtone, is made ſo ſofte with ye hoate blood of a Goate or a Lyon, that it may be broken: and if it be put with molten lead in hoate fornaces, it waxeth ſo hoate that it wylbe diſſolued: yet are not all Diamandes of ſuch hardneſſe, for that of *Cyprus*, and alſo that of the coloure of Iron called *Siderites*, may be broken with hammers and perced with another Diamand: his vertue is to bewray poiſons, and to fruſtrate th[e]opperacion therof, and beeing therefore greatly eſtemed of Kinges and Princes, it hath euer been of great price. The mountaine of India out of the which the Diamandes are digged, is compaſſed with a walle on euery ſyde, and kepte with a ſtrong defence.

The citie of *Narsinga.*

The kinge of *Narsinga.*

¶ *Of the kingdoms and cities of Narſinga and Canonor.*

THe King of *Narſinga*, in riches and dominion excelleth all other Kinges in thoſe partes. The chiefe cytie where the King is reſident, is in ſituacion and fynenes, much lyke vnto the cytie of Milayne, but that it ſtandeth in a place ſomewhat declyning and leſſe equall. This king hath euer in a redines manye thouſandes of men of armes, as one that is euer at warre with other countreys, borderers nere aboute him. He is geuen to moſte vile Idolatrie, and honoureth the deuyll, euen as doth the king of *Calicut*. The maners and faſhions of the inhabitantes, are after this ſorte. The gentlemen or ſuch as are of greateſt reuenewes, vſe to weare an inward cote or peticote, not very long: hauing theyr heades bounde aboute with liſtes and rowles of ſundry coloures after the maner of the Turkes. The common people, couer onli their priuie parts and are beſyde all together naked. The Kynge weareth on his head a ſtately cap made of the riche cloth of *Aſia*, beyng two handfulles in length. When he goeth to ye warres, he weareth a veſture of ye ſilke called *Goſſampine*, which he couereth with a cloke adorned with plates of gold: ye hemme or edge of his cloke is beſet with all maner of ouches and Iewelles. Hys horſe is iudged to be of ſuch valure if you reſpect ye price, as is one of

our cities. And this is by the meanes of ye innumerable multitude and ſundrie kindes of precious ſtones, and perles wherewith ye trappers, barbes, and other furnitures of his horſe are couered, with an incredible pompe and glori. The ſoyle of Narſinga, beareth nether wheate nor grapes, and is in maner without al kinde of fruites, except citrons and gourdes: the inhabitantes eate no bread, but ryce, fiſhe and fleſhe, and alſo walnuttes, which that countrey beareth, there begin ſpyces to be found, as ginger, pepper, mirabolanes, Cardamome, Caſſia, and dyuers other kyndes of ſpyces.

The riche trapping of the kinges horse.

Spices of Narsinga.

Cananor is a very excellente cytie, fayre and beautifull in all thinges, ſauing that the Kinge thereof is an Idolater. This citie hath a hauen whether the horſes of Perſia are brought, but theyr tribute or cuſtome, is excedinge great: the inhabitantes lyue with ryce, fleſſhe, and fyſhe as do they of Narſinga: in the warres they vſe the ſweorde, the round target, ſpeares and bowes, and haue nowe alſo the vſe of gonnes, they are all naked ſauing their prieuie partes, and go beare headed, except when they goe to the warres, for then they couer theyr heades with a redde hatte which thei folde double, and bind it faſt with a lyſt or bande. In the warres they vſe neither horſe, mule, or aſſe, neither that kynde of camels which we commonly call dromedaries: but vſe onely Elephantes. There is alſo in the kingdom of Narſinga another godly citie called *Biſinagar*: it is compaſſed aboute with a walle, and ſituate on the ſide of a hyll, beeyng. viij. myles in circuite hauinge alſo in it a famous market place. The ſoyle is very fruitful, there are all delicate thinges to be found that may encreaſe the pleaſures of this lyfe. There maye no where be found more pleaſaunt feldes and woddes for hauking and huntinge, a man woulde thinke it were a very Paradyſe of pleaſure. The king of this citie is of great power, he keepeth dayly many thouſandes of men at armes, vſinge Elephantes in the ſtede of horſes. And hath euer foure hundreth Elephantes prepared for the warres.

The cytie of *Cananor*.

The vse of Elephantes in the warres.

The cytie *Bisinagar*.

Hauking and huntinge.

The kinge of *bisinagar*.

¶ *How the Elephantes in India are prepared to warre.*

THe Elephant is a beaſt very docible and apte to be taught, and little inferiour from humaine ſenſe, excellinge all other beaſtes in fortitude and ſtrength. Therfore ye Indians, when they prepare them to the warres, put great packſaddels vpon them, which they bind faſt with two chaines of Iron, comming vnder theyr belyes. Vpon the packſaddels, they haue on euery ſide a little houſe or towre, or cage (if you liſt ſo to call it) made of wood. Theſe towres ar made faſt to the necke of the beaſte with certayne ſawed bordes of the thickenes of halfe a hande breath. Euery towre receyueth thre men. And betwene both the towres, vpon the back of the beaſt ſytteth an Indian, a man of that countrey which ſpeaketh vnto the beaſte. For this beaſte hath marueylous vnderſtanding of the language of hys natyue countrey, and doth wonderfulli beare in memorie benefytes ſhewed vnto him. It is alſo moſte certayne that none other beaſt draweth ſo nere to the excellence of humayne ſenſe or reaſon as doeth this beaſt, as maye moſt playnly appeare, yf we conſidre, how he is geuen to loue and glory, to a certeyn frendly gentlenes and honeſt maners, ioyned with a marueylous diſcrecion, to know good from euil, more redy to recompence benefites then reuenge iniuries, which excellent properties are not to be found in other brute beaſtes. Therfore when the Elephantes go forward to ye warres, ſeuen armed men are appoynted to be caried vpon one Elephant, bearing with them, bowes, iauelins, ſweordes and targettes: alſo the longe ſnout of the Elephant (which thei cal his hand) is armed with a ſweorde of two cubites in length, and in bredth and thickenes a handfull, ſtandinge righte forth, tyed faſte to the ſnowte of the beaſt, and thus beeing furniſhed, they procede to the battaile: and whereas occaſion requyreth to go forward or backwarde, the ruler of the beaſt geueth him warninge, whoſe voyce he vnderſtandeth and obeyeth: ſtryke hym, ſayth the ruler, forbeare hym, be fearſe agaynſt theſe, abſtayne from theſe, the beaſte obeyeth hym in all thinges, as though he had humayn reaſon, but yf it ſo chaunce that being made afrayd with fire (which thinge they feare aboue all other) they beginne to flye, they can by no meanes bee allured to ſtoppe theyr courſe, or retourne agayne, for the people of that nacion, can with many ſubtyl deuiſes as often as them liſteth, raiſe vp fires to make thoſe beaſtes afrayde. There be ſome men which thincke that Elephantes haue no ioyntes in theyr legges, which opinion other affirme to be vntrue, for they haue ioyntes as haue other beaſtes, but that they are very low and almoſt at their fete. The females are of greater fierceneſſe then the males, and of much greater ſtrength to beare burdens: they are ſometime taken with madnes, declaring the ſame by theyr furious running. An Elephant excedeth in greatnes thre wilde oxen called *Bubali*, and is much lyke of heare, and eyed lyke a ſwine, hauing a long ſnout, hanging downward, with the which he putteth into his mouth whatſoeuer he eateth or drinketh, for his mouth is vnder his throte, not muche vnlyke the mouth of a ſwyne: his ſnowte hath holes in it, and is holowe within, with this they ouerthrow ye ſtumpes of trees: and that of ſuche bignes, that the forſe of. xxiiij. men is not able to do the ſame. The two great tuſkes which they haue comming farre oute of theyr

Elephantes vnderstandeth the language of theyr countrei.

Seuen armed men vpon one Elephant

The ruler speaketh to the Elephant.

The Elephantes ioyntes.

The bignes and shape of the Elephant.

The painters erre herein.

Vnderstande the handebredth with the thumbe stretched forth.

The Elephantes pase.

mouth, or placed in the vpper iawe, hauinge on euerye ſyde lappes hanging downe of the bignes of two hand brea[d]th. Theyr fete are round like vnto a flat trene diſhe, hauing fyue toes like hoeues vndeuided, of the bignes of great oyſterſhelles. Theyr tayles are lyke vnto the tayles of wilde oxen, thre handful in length, hauing but few heares. The males are hygher then the females. They are of ſundry bignes: ſome are of. xiij. handfuller hye, ſome of xiiij. and ſome. xvi. Their paſe in goyng, is ſomewhat ſlowe and walowinge, by reaſon whereof, ſome whiche ryde on them and haue not been accuſtomed thereto, are prouoked to vomitte, euen as they were toſſed on the ſea. Yet it is great pleſure to ride on the yong Elephantes, for they goe as ſoftely as ambeling moiles. When you attempt to geat vp, to ryde on them, they bow downe toward you, as though they would eaſe you with a ſterope, that you may the eaſelier geat vp, which neuertheles cannot wel be done without helpe. They are all vnbrideled hauinge neither withe nor coller aboute theyr neckes, but goe with theyr heades al together loſe. And becauſe they are not couered with briſtels or bigge heares, they haue not ſo muche as in theyr tayle anye helpe to dryue awaye flyes. For euen this greate beaſte alſo (ſayeth Plinie) is troubled with this lyttle vermyne. Theyr ſkinne is very rowghe, and full of chappes, and riftes, like the barke of a tree, being ſomwhat filthye and full of ſwette, whiche by heate reſolued into vapoure, by ſauour draweth flyes vnto it: therefore when any flyes or other creping vermen are entered into the ſayde riftes of theyr ſkinnes, ſodeynly bending and drawing together their ſkinne, they hold them faſt and kyl them, and this is to them in the ſtede of a tayle, a mane, or rough and briſteled heare.

The Elephante is vexed with flyes.

How the Elephant kylleth flyes.

¶ *Of the beaſte called* Rhinoceros.

Enmitie betwene the Elephant and *Rhinoceros.*

Hinoceros is comonly found in the ſame countrey, where Elephantes are engendred, and is borne an enemy to the Elephant (as ſaith Plinie) no leſſe ſeking his deſtruction then doth the dragon: wherfore the Romaynes conſidering the natures of theſe beaſtes, were wont to put them together vpon the theater or ſtage, for a ſpectacle, therby to declare the natures of enemies. This *Rhinoceros* hath two hornes, whereof the one is of notable bignes, growing oute of his noſethrilles, and is of flatte forme, and as harde as Iron. The other groweth aboue in his necke, and is but a little one, but wonderful ſtrong: when this beaſt attempteth to inuade the Elephant, he fyleth and whetteth his horne on a ſtone and ſtryketh at the belly of the Elephant, which place he knoweth to be moſt open to his ſtripes, and eaſyeſt to receaue hurt, becauſe of the ſoftenes thereof, which he cutteth with his horne as with a ſweord. Some auctours write that *Rhinoceros* is vnequall in bignes to the Elephante: but *Iulius Solinus* ſaith, that he is as long as the Elephante, but hath ſhorter legges: when *Rhinoceros* therfore and the Elephant ioyne together in fighte, they vſe theyr naturall weapons: the *Rhinoceros* his horne, and the Elephante his tuſkes, wherewith he ſo violentlye beateth and teareth the ſkinne of *Rhinoceros* being as harde as horne or ſhell, and ſcarcelye able to be pearſed with a dart, that he neuertheles enforſeth him to fall downe. *Rhinoceros* agayne on the other partie ſo woundeth the belye of the Elephante with the horne of hys noſethrilles, yf he doe not preuente hys ſtrokes, yat he fainteth with bleding. In the yere of Chriſt. 1513. the firſt day of Maye, was broughte oute of India to Emanuel the king of Portugale *Rhinoceros* alyue, of the coloure of boxe, ſomwhat variable and as it wer chekered, couered with ſhelles lyke ſcales, or rather lyke ſhieldes. This beaſt was in bignes equall to an Elephante, but had ſhorter legges, and was armed on euery parte. He had a ſtronge and ſharpe horne in his noſethrilles, the whiche (as I haue ſayde) he fyleth, when he prepareth him to fight. All this great hatered betwene theſe two beaſtes, is for ye beſt paſtures which one ſtriueth to take from the other as ſome wryters ſaye. In the yeare of Chriſte. 1515. King Emanuel ſet forth a ſpectacle in the citie of *Liſbona*, in which was a combat betwene the Elephant and *Rhinoceros*. A fight doubtleſſe worthy great admiracion. But in this fight, the Elephant had the ouerthrowe.

The *Rhinoceros* ii. hornes

The fight betwene *Rhinoceros* and the Elephant

Rhinoceros naturally armed.

Rhinoceros sene in Portugale.

Rhinoceros ouercometh the Elephant.

¶ *Of* Calicut, *the moſt famous market towne of India.*

Lowe and simple houses.

THe cytie of *Calicut* is in the continente or mayne lande. And the houſes therof adioyning to the ſea. It is not walled about, but conteyneth in circuite. vi. thouſand houſes, not adherent together as the maner of bylding is with vs, but one being diſtant from another, a further ſpace. It is extended in length a thouſand paſes. The houſes thereof, are but ſimple and very lowe, not paſſinge the heygth of a manne on horſebacke from the grounde. In the ſtede of a roofe, they are couered with bowes of trees, harde and thicke couched together, the cauſe hereof is, that yf the earth there be in anye place digged fyue handfull depth, the water

ſpringeth forth, by reaſon wherof they can lay no depe foundacions for theyr houſes, ſufficiente to beare anye heauye roofe. The Kinge of thys citie is geuen to Idolatrie, and honoureth the deuyll himſelf. Yet he denieth not but that there is a God which made heauen and earth. And the ſame to be the chiefe auctour and fyrſte cauſe of all thinges. But ſayth that he hath committed the rule and iudgemente of the world, to the deuil, to whom he hath geuen power to rewarde men with good or bad according to their deſertes. This deuil they cal *Deumo*, but the mightie God and maker of the world, they cal *Iamerani*. The king hath in his Chappell the Image of this deuyl *Deumi*, ſytting with a diademe or crowne on his head, much lyke vnto the myter which the Romayne Biſhoppes weare, ſaue that this deuils myter hath foure notable hornes. He ſytteth gapinge and hath a greate wyde mouthe, with foure teeth and a deformed noſe, lowringe eyes, a grimme, terrible, and threatening countenaunce, with hooked handes lyke fleſhehookes, and feete not much vnlyke the feete of a cocke. Al ſuch as behold this horrible monſter, are ſodeynly aſtonied. For it is ſurely a thing moſt vyle to beholde, and no leſſe terrible. The chappel is on euery ſyde ful of painted deuyls: and in euery corner thereof ſytteth a deuyll made of copper, and that ſo workemanly handeled, that he ſemeth like flaming fire, miſerably conſuming the ſoules of men. This deuyl with his righte hande, putteth a ſoule to his mouth, and with his lefte hand, he taketh another from a place beneth. Euery morning their Prieſtes (called *Bramini*) waſhe the Image of the deuyll with roſe water, or ſuch other ſwete liquoure, and perfume hym with dyuerſe ſwete ſauours, kneling on theyr knees and praying vnto him. Euerye ſeuenth day, thei take the bloud of a cocke and put it in a ſiluer veſſel, ful of burning coales: addinge thereunto innumerable odoriferous gummes and pouders to make a ſwete ſmoke or fumigacion. Then the Prieſte taketh his ſenſer with burning coles, putting therto frankencenſe, and thus maketh his oblacion to Sathan, during which tyme of ſacrifice, a lyttle ſyluer bell, is ronge continuallye. The king ſytteth not downe to his meate, vntyll foure of his chapleins haue offred parte of the ſame meate to the deuyl. And when the Kynge goeth to dyner, he ſytteth on the grounde withoute eyther carpet or table cloth. And as he ſytteth at diner, foure of the prieſtes wayte vpon him ſtanding: not approchinge nere vnto hym by the diſtaunce of foure paſes, geuing reuerent attendaunce vnto the kinges talke. When he hath dyned, the Prieſtes take the meate that is left, and geue it to the crowes to eate: which byrdes they haue in ſuch eſtimacion, yat it is not lawful to hurt them. When the king ſhal marie a wife, he goeth not to bed with her, vntil ſhe be defloured of ye high Prieſt, whom the king for his paines rewardeth with. v. C. [five hundred] pieces of golde.

The king honoreth the deuil.

The Image of the deuill.

The bisshop of Romes vicar at *Calicut*.

The deuil eateth soules.

The deuiles chaplins.

Sacrifice to the deuyl.

The chapleins offer to the deuyl.

The priestes wait on the kyng.

Crowes had in estimacion

The priestes defloure ye queene.

¶ *Of the maners of the Indians in Calicut.*

NExt after the King, ye prieſtes which ſerue ye Idols, are had in chiefe reuerence. Nexte vnto them the Magiſtrates, called *Nerl*, are no leſſe eſtemed then amonge vs Senatoures or Lordes of the counſayl. When theſe goe abroade, they cary with them ſwordes, targettes, bowes and iauelins. Such as are counted of the thyrde order, are in like place with them, as are Artificers with vs. They of the fourth order, lyue by fiſhinge. And to them of the fyfthe order, perteyneth the gathering of pepper, wyne, and walnuttes. The baſeſt and pooreſt ſort, are they which ſowe and gather ryce, beyng contemned both of the prieſtes and Senatours. The Kinge, the Quene, and the inhabitantes of the cytie, haue almoſt no apparel, couering onely theyr fylthy partes with cotton of the tree called *Goſſampine*, and not with ſilke: and are beſide altogether naked. They goe barefoted and bareheaded. When the King is dead, yf there remayne alyue any heyres, males, either children or brethren, or brethers children, they ſuccede not in the kingdome: for by cuſtome of the countreye, the ſyſters ſonnes are inheritours to ye crown: but yf there bee no ſuche lyuinge, he ſuccedeth in the kingdom which is neareſt of bloud to ye king, of whiche coſtume, the reaſon is (as they ſaye) becauſe the Prieſtes defloure the Quenes. When the King taketh any farre iourney, or rydeth a hunting, the Prieſtes wayte vpon the Quene at home, and kepe her company: for nothinge can be more thankefull to the kynge, then to haue the Quene thus accuſtomed in adulterye with the Prieſtes, by whiche common proſtitucion of the quene, he maye well iudge that the chyldren borne of her, are not to be eſtemed as his owne: and therfore aſſigneth the right of his inheritaunce to his ſyſters children, as to the nereſt of his bloude, becauſe his brothers children (as is ſayd before) may not ſuccede him in the kingdome by the cuſtome of the countrey. The noble men and marchauntes vſe this faſhion among themſelues. Such as haue wyues, do often tymes chaunge theyr wyues, one frende with an other for th[e]encreaſe of further frendſhip. At which exchaunging of wyues, one of them ſpeaketh to another after this manner. Foraſmuch as you are my veri frend, let vs chaunge wyues: on ſuch condicion, that I maye haue yours and you myne. The other aſketh him yf he ſpeake in earneſte. He ſweareth yea: let vs goe then (ſayth his felow) to my houſe: when they are come thether, the good man calleth forth his wife, ſaying vnto her:

Priestes.

Magistrates.

Artificers.

Labourers.

The succession of the kingdom.

As are ye priestes, such is ye people.

The priestes kepe the quene.

Exchaunginge of wyues.

Obedience in euyll.

One woman maried to seuen men.

The punishment of murther.

Sinne redemed for money.

Superstition.

Outeward clenlynes.

Deuylishe gestures.

Woman, come hether and folow this man: for he ſhall from henceforth be thy huſband. She aſketh him yf he ſpeake in earneſt: he anſwereth, in good earneſt. Then ſayth the woman: I wil folowe him gladly. He taketh her away with him, and in lyke maner ſendeth his wyfe to his frende. And this is the cuſtome which thei vſe in chaunging of wyues. But the children remaine with theyr fyrſte father. Other of theſe Idolaters vſe dyuerſe other cuſtomes. For among ſome of them, one woman is maried to ſeuen huſbandes, which lie with her by courſe one after another. And when ſhe hath broughte forth a child, ſhe ſendeth it to whiche of her ſeuen huſbandes ſhe liſt: who maye in no caſe refuſe it. When they eate, they lye along on the grounde, and haue theyr meate in great diſſhes, or treys of copper. In the ſtede of ſpones, they vſe leaues of trees. Their meate, is ryce, fiſhe, ſpyces, and fruites of the common ſorte. Yf any man committe murther, and bee apprehended, he is puniſhed after this maner.

They haue a kynde of gallowes made, with a poſte of the lengthe of foure paſes: On the whyche, not farre from the toppe, are faſtened two ſtaues with ſharpe endes, ye one lying ouer the other after the maner of a croſſe: then the body of ye offender is thruſt through vpon one of ye ſtaues. And ſo the miſerable wretche hangeth vntyll hē haue geuen vppe the ghoſt. But yf any man wound another, or beate hym with a ſtaffe, he redemeth th[e]offence, payinge to the king a certayn of golde. When they pray, they go fyrſt before the ryſing of the ſunne, to ſome ryuer or ſtandinge water, wherein they plunge themſelues, to th[e]intent to waſhe them cleane: And ſo beeinge waſhed, they touche nothing vntyll they haue at home at theyr houſes, poured forth theyr prayers before theyr Idols. When they laye them ſelues down on the grounde, ſecretely to praye, they make certayne deuyliſhe geſtures lyke vnto madde men, ſtaring with theyr eyes, and turning them inward after a ſtraunge ſorte, wyth no leſſe deforminge their countenaunce, very monſtrous to beholde. When the king prepareth him to ye warres he hath in a readyneſſe a hundreth thouſand ſotemen. For of horſemen they haue no vſe, but only of ſuch as fyght on Elephantes. Al that are of the Kinges bande, have a ſilken fyllet of ſcarlet colour, tied about their heades. When thei go to the warres they vſe round ſweordes, targets, iauelins, and bowes.

¶ *Of Pepper and other ſpices which growe in the region of Calicut.*

Howe pepper groweth

Fruitful grounde without tillage

Ginger.

A rote for a sede.

Fruytes vnknowen to us.

Aloe.

PEpper groweth in ye ſuburbes of the citie of *Calicut*. There is ſome alſo gathered within the citie. The ſtalke of pepper is veri weake: ſo that it can not ſtande vpryghte, without a ſtake or proppe to ſuſtein it, as haue ye vynes. It is not much vnlike vnto Iuie: and in like maner crepeth and ſtretcheth forth it ſelf embraſing and ouerſpreading ſuch trees as grow nere vnto it. This tree (or rather ſhrubbe) is deuided into many braunches, of the lengthe of two or thre hand bredth. The leaues are lyke the leaues of an Orenge tree: ſauinge that theſe are ſomewhat groſſer and fatter, with ſmall vaynes running betwene on the contrarye ſide. On euery twigge ther hangeth ſixe thicke cluſters of beries, a hand breadth in length, and of the colour of wild grapes. They are gathered in the monethes of October and Nouember: Inclininge yet to a grene colour, and ſo laying them on mattes or couerlettes, they ſet them in the ſunne to be dried: where, within the ſpace of thre dayes, it waxeth black, euen as it is brought hether. They vſe neyther cutting nor digging, or other tillage, but onely the ſimple and pure fruitfulnes and encreaſe of the earth. Plinie ſayth that the trees of pepper are lyke vnto oure iuniper trees. And that in his time, ſome affyrmed yat they were brought foorth only in the front of ye mount *Caucaſus* on the ſouthſyde toward the ſonne. But the Portugals, whiche in this our daies ſayle into the Eaſt partes, haue found it otherwiſe. The region of *Calicut*, beareth alſo Ginger: which doubtles is a roote, and is often tymes founde of the weighte of. xii. vnces: but al are not of lyke bignes. This roote entreth no deper into ye ground, then. iii. or. iiii. handbredth, like vnto the rede. When ginger is digged out of ye ground, they leaue the knotte or ioynte of the roote, in the pytte out of which they digged the ginger: couering ye ſame with earth as a ſede, agaynſt the next yeare to encreaſe and bring forth more ginger. It is found in playn ground of a redde erth, as ar *Mirabalanes*. Ther groweth alſo diuers other frutes and ſhrubbes vnknowen to vs, as *Iaceri, graccara, amba, Carocapel, Comolanga*, and ſuch other of which ſome haue the taſte and ſauoure of quinces, ſome of peaches, ſome of damaſke prunes, ſome of melones, and ſome of figges, etc. *Aloe* groweth alſo in that region: and is a certayn gumme, gathered from a litle tree, which is faſtened in the earth, onely with one roote after ye maner of a ſtaffe, pytched in the grounde. The bodie of the tree, is tender and redde, of ſtrong ſauour and bitter taſt. It ſomtyme putteth forth droppes of gumme withoute anye cuttinge. And this of India, is muche better then that which groweth in *India*.

¶ *Of byrdes and beaſtes which are found in the region of* Calicut: *and of the wyne of the merueylous tree.*

THere is found in *Calicut*, diuers and ſundry kyndes of foure footed beaſtes and foules. As lions, wilde boores, hartes, hyndes, wolues, kyne, wylde oxen, goates, and Elephantes: whych neuertheles are not engendred there, but brought thether. There bee alſo grene popingiays, and ſome [of] white fethers of variable colours, lying like ſcoutchins. Some alſo of purple coloure. Of theſe there is ſuch plentie, that they are fayne to appoint men to kepe them from the rice which groweth there in the feldes. They are merueilous chatteringe and of ſmall price. There are alſo birdes called *Sarau*, ſomwhat leſſe then popingayes, but make a much ſweter noyſe. There are alſo manye other kyndes of byrdes vnlyke vnto oures: Of which, euerye morning and euening is hearde ſuche a harmonie and ſo ſwete a noyſe, that nothing can be more delectable: In ſo little mouthes conſiſteth in maner al muſicke, and therfore the inhabitauntes lyue in greate pleaſure, as though they were in an earthly paradiſe, where floures are euer ſpringing, and trees continue grene al the hole yeare. The heauen is beneficiall vnto them, and the ayre moſt temperate continually. So that thei are nether bytten with colde in winter nor burnt with heate in ſomer, but lyue as it were in continual ſpringe tyme. The ſame region bringeth forth alſo Marmaſets and Munkeys, whiche are great hinderaunce to ye men of the countrey: and ſpecially to the poore ſorte, beecauſe they clyme the walnut trees, and ſpylle the ſweete liquoure of the fruyte thereof, of which the Indians make moſt pleaſaunt wyne. For theſe Indians haue a tree moſt excellent aboue all other trees of the world, which bringeth foorth dates lyke vnto the Palme tree. This tree ſerueth them for firewood: and beareth a kynde of walnuttes moſt delicate to be eaten: Alſo a kind of cordes, ſofte cloth, wine, oyle, and ſuger. But chiefly it bringeth foorth this excellent kynde of nuttes like vnto dates. From theſe they take awaye the fyrſte rynde or barke and caſt it in the fire. The other fruite is not muche vnlyke *Goſſampine* cotton, or ſylke. Of the floures they make cloth lyke ſilke: the flaxe whiche is leſte, they ſpinne agayne, and make therof ſmal roopes or cordes. The laſt barke or rinde, conteineth the nutte, whoſe thickeneſſe is no more then the lyttle fynger of a mans hande. Furthermore the ſweete liquoure or wyne, is engendered with the nutte, ſo that as the nutte groweth, the liquoure alſo encreaſeth: In ſo much that when the nut is full growen, the lyquoure fylleth the inne warde partes of the ſame. And thys liquoure or wyne, is moſt cleare, not muche vnlyke vnto roſe-water: Of which neuertheles is made a very fatte oile. They cut alſo the trunke or ſtocke of the tree in ye morning and euening: by whiche meanes they gather a moſt excellent liquour, which they ſeeth on the fyre, and make thereof ſo merueylous a drinke, that if a man drinke thereof beyond meaſure, he is drieuen into furie and madnes. This liquour is vſed there in the ſtede of wyne. But let vs nowe returne to the beaſtes which are found in *Calicut*. Serpentes growe there vnto ſuch houdge greatneſſe, that they are in maner as bigge as ſwyne. They haue heades muche larger then bores heades. Thei are foure foted, foure cubites in length, engendered and conuerſaunte in fennie and marriſhe groundes. The men of that countrei ſaye that theſe beaſtes are without poyſon. There are alſo found other kyndes of ſerpentes: of the whiche one kynde hath ſo mortall venime, that yf they drawe neuer ſo lyttle blud it cauſeth preſent death. There are other ſerpentes which in quantite repreſent the ſerpent called *Aſpis*. Again, otherſome are much higher of whiche there are greate plentie. The men of the countrey thinke yat they are ſpirites fallen from heauen: and therfore haue them in great reuerence. Thei haue conceaued this opinion of them, becauſe that in maner with touching, they bringe preſent death. And this is the cauſe whi there is ſo great abundaunc[e] of ſerpentes, that by the kinges commaundement it is not lawful to hurt them: and therefore they wander ſafelye where them liſteth, and are eſtemed of them as thinges that bring good fortune. For whereas the men of yat countrey, goe abroade aboute anye buſines, thei take it for good luck to mete any of them by the waye. The popingiayes of *India* are for the moſt part, of grene colour beſyde ye head, which is ether redde or yelowe like golde. They haue a great and large toung, and are therfore of a louder voyce, and ſpeake more plainly. They learne the fyrſt and ſecond yeare ſuch thinges as are taughte them. And beare them longer in memory. They drinke wyne, and vſe theyr fete in the ſtede of handes when they feede.

Papingiayes of dyuers kyndes.

Sweete singinge of birdes

Earthly paradise

Temperate ayre.

Continual spring.

Munkeys.

A tree of sundrye commodities.

Silke of trees.

Ropes of trees.

Wyne of trees

Oyle of water

Serpents as bigge as swine

Serpents without poyson.

Serpentes counted for heauenly spirites.

Grene poping[i]aies.

¶ *Of the ſundrye kindes of Spices, which are founde in* Calicut, *and from whence they are brought thyther.*

Canonor. CInger groweth in *Calicut*, yet is there much broughte thether from the cytie of *Canonor.*

Zaylon. Cinamome commeth from the Ilande of *Zaylon*, whyche is fyftye leages beeyonde *Calicut* Eaſtwarde.

Corimucol. Pepper groweth in *Calicut*: but muche more is broughte thether from *Corimucol*, whiche is. xij. leages beyonde *Calicut.*

Meluza. Cloues are gathered in a place, called *Meluza*, certayn leages diſtant from *Calicut.*

Molucha. Nutmegges and Mace, growe in *Molucha*, beyng diſtante from *Calicut* hundreth and thre ſcore leages, and ſomewhat more.

Pego. Muſke and Caſtoreum, is brought from the region of *Pego*, whiche is from *Calicut*, almoſte hundreth and fyftye leages.

Ormus. Pearles of the biggeſt ſorte, are gathered neare vnto the Iland and cytie of *Ormus*, ſituate in the goulfe called *Sinus Perſicus*: And are ſente from thence to *Calicut*, as to the generall market towne of all the Eaſt partes.

Cambaia. Spikenarde, and Mirabalanes, are brought from *Cambaia* to *Calicut.*

Arabia. Frankencenſe, and Myrre, come from *Arabia.*

Chiua. *Aloe*, and *Camphyre*, are brought from *Kyui*, or *Chiua.* l. [fifty] leages from *Calicut.*

Samotor. Long pepper cometh from *Samotor.* Cardamome ye greater, is brought from *Canonor.*

Darnasseri. *Preſilium*, or braſyll, cometh from *Darnaſseri*, otherwyſe called *Tarmaſſeri*, almoſt. CC. [two hundred] leages from *Calicut.*

¶ *Of the Iland of* Zaylon, *and of Cinomome found there.*

Elephantes. Precious stones. Cinomome. ZAylon is a very large region, and bringeth foorth chefelye Elephantes in greate plentie. It hath alſo Mountaynes of merueylous length: at the rootes wherof are found Rubines, Hiacinthes, Saphyres, Topaſes, and ſuche other precious ſtones. In this Iland groweth the Cinomome tree, not much vnlyke ye bayetree, ſpecially in the leaues. It bringeth forth graynes much lyke vnto baye berries, but ſomwhat leſſe and whytiſhe. That which we commonly call Cinomome, is nothinge els but the barke or rynde of a tree, which is gathered after this maner. Euery thyrde yeare they cut of the braunches of the trees, and take of the barke or rynde thereof, which is our Cinomome. They cut not the body of the tree, but only the branches. When it is firſt gathered, it is grene, and not perfectly ſwete vntyll it be kept a moneth. The Equinoctial lyne. This Iland is ſituate vnder the Equinoctial line, where is continuall ſpringe all the yeare. The inhabitauntes weare clokes, with one arme oute vncouered, and haue clothe made of *Goſſampine* cotton, or of ſilke. Weapons of redes. A rede is to them in the ſtede of ſworde, rapyre, and iauelyne. And are therefore ſeldome ſlayne in the warres.

¶ *Of the cytie of* Tarnaſseri, *and the maner of the cytezins there.*

Narsinga. THe cytie of *Tarnaſſeri*, is diſtaunte from the Kingdome of *Narſinga.* xiiij. dayes ſayling Eſtward, and hath a king of great puyſſaunce and marueylous riche. The ſoyle of this citie, bringeth forth wheate, cotton of *Goſsampine* trees, and plentie of ſilke. The fieldes bringe foorthe all kindes of fruites; quinces alſo and oranges. It is repleniſhed with manye and ſundrye kyndes of beaſtes aſwell wyld as tame, as kyne, ſhepe, gotes, ſwyne, hartes, hyndes, wolues and lyons. The beast whiche beareth the furre called Sables. There are alſo ſeene thoſe kyndes of cattes which beare the riche furres called *Zibellini*, which we call Sables. In all the fieldes and woodes of this region are founde many Peacockes, Faulcons, and moſt fayre Popingiayes of white colour intermingled with ſeuen variable coloures. There is alſo maruelous plentye of hares and partryches. Foules of meruelous bignes. There are manye of other ſtraunge kyndes of foules: and ſpecially ſuch as lyue by praye, whiche are muche higher then Eagles: whoſe vpper beakes are of ſuche bignes and hardnes, that handles for ſweordes are made thereof. Alſo the cockes and hennes of thys region are

muche hygher and bigger then ours. When the people of the countreye goe to theyr meate, they lye downe on the grounde withoute carpet or cloth: Yet vſe they woodden veſſelles, workemanlye made. Theyr drinke is water myxte with ſuger: but the poorer ſorte, drinke onelye water. Their beddes are made of Goſſampine cotton, wyth couerlettes alſo of cotton or ſylke. They goe all in generall barefooted excepte the Prieſtes. The Kynge of this cytye, doeth not commytte his wife to the Prieſtes to bee defloured, as doth the king of *Calicut*, but to whyte men, as are the chriſtians and Turkes. For this office is not committed to the Idoloters. But after that the new maried quene hath been thus defloured the fyrſt night, yf euer after ſhe doe diſhonour the Kyng her huſband, by violating the faith made to him, from thencefoorth neuer to knowe any other man carnally, her puniſhment is death incontinently. When the Kynges or the Prieſtes dye, their bodies are laid on a great fyre, and the aſhes thereof reſerued in erthen pottes, putting thereto a porcion of ſalte petre, and buryinge the ſame in theyr owne houſes. While the bodies are burning, they caſt into the fyre al kyndes of ſwete ſauouring gummes, and ſpices: as Aloe, Frankencenſe, Myrre, Storax, Coralle, ſandalles, and ſuche other innumerable: In the meane tyme blowing trumpets and ſhawmes, after the maner of them which amonge the gentiles were canonized into ye numbre of the goddes. And within xv. dayes after ye huſbandes death, the wyfe calleth to her all her kinſfolkes, bidding them to a banket: and ſo being decked with al her iewels, ſhe procedeth with them to the place where her huſbande was buried, where a graue is redye digged for her, incloſed about with ſilken cloth, hauinge in it a fyre made of ſweete wood. When the woman hath thus feaſted her kynſfolkes, ſhe eateth much of the herbe called *Betola*, wherby ſhe is driuen into a madnes. In thys meane whyle, innumerable trumpetters (wearing ſuch veſtures as they vſe in the deuyls ſeruice) go as it were on proceſſion aboute the graue, while the woman runneth vp and down, daunſing continually like a frantike bodie. And thus when the ceremonies are fyniſhed, ſhe caſteth her ſelfe headlong into the fyre and graue: and that with no leſſe cherefulnes then yf ſhe ſhould be receaued into heauen. And vnleſſe the woman ſhould performe thys cuſtome, ſhe ſhould incurre moſt vyle infamie, and be a mocking ſtocke to all her nacion, as one that loued not her huſband. But the common people vſe not thys cuſtome: but only the rulers and princes. And therfore the king him ſelfe is often tymes preſente at theſe ſolemnities.

Beddes of silke.

Priestes.

The quene defloured of whyte menne.

Adulteri punished with death

Howe the kinge is buried.

Ministrels.

The quene dyeth willingly.

The herbe *Betola*.

What credulitie maye doe in false religion.

Honour dere boughte.

¶ *Of the kingdoms and cities of Pego and Bangella.*

FRom the cytie of *Tarnaſſeri*, to the cytie of *Bangalla*, is. xi. dayes ſaylinge. This cytie hath a kynge: and the countrey is very fruyteful with great plentie of wheat, fleſhe, ſuger, ginger, and goſſampine cotton: and hath therfore very rich marchantes. There yearely paſſeth from this citie fyftie ſhyppes frayghted wyth goſſampine cotton, and ſilke clothes: which are caried from thence to the Turkes, Syrians, Arabians, Perſians, Ethiopians, and Indians. Here are alſo founde certayne Chriſtian merchaunt men, which come out of Th[e]empire of the great *Cham* of *Cathay*: bringing with them Aloe, Caſtoreum and the ſwete gumme called *Laſerpitium*, with other ſwete ſauours. In this cytie, the men ſpinne and carde and make clothe, and not the womenne. From this cytie Eaſtwarde, is another great citie called Pego, beyng ſituate by a verye fayre ryuer. The Kinge of thys cytie, is an Idolater, and hathe innumerable menne of warre, both horſemenne and footemenne. The ſoyle beareth wheate plentifullye: and bringeth foorth in maner all kyndes of beaſtes, and hath therfore great abundaunce of fleſhe, yet are there but fewe Elephants: But of other beaſtes and foules, great plentie as is at *Calicut*: and ſpeciallye of popingiayes, whiche are of louder voice then in any other place. There is little trafficque or marchaundiſe in this region, except iewels and precious ſtones, and ſpeciallye Rubies, called *Pyropi*, whiche are broughte thether from the cytie of *Capelan*. Theſe precious ſtones ſhyne ſo brighte in the darke nyghte, as thoughe it were the ſonne beames. The countrey adioyning, bringeth forth *Lacha*, *Sandalum*, called ſaunders: Alſo braſile, goſſampine cotton and ſylke. From *Pego* to the cytie of *Malaccha* (whiche ſome call *Melaqua*) is eygh[t]e dayes ſaylinge: where on the other ſyde is ſene a great Iland called *Sumatra*, otherwiſe *Samotra*, and was in time paſte called *Taprobana*. This *Malaccha*, hath a goodly and commodious hauen: by reaſon wherof, moe ſhippes arriue there then in any other place: bringinge with them ſpyces and other marchaundiſe in great abundance. The region is not generally fruytful, yet hath it wheat and fleſhe: but greate ſcarceneſſe of wood. The foules wander in the feldes as they doe in the region of *Calicut*. But the popingiayes are here much fayrer. It bringeth foorth alſo ſpices, ſaunders, tinne, elephantes, horſes, ſhepe, wilde oxen, pecokes, and ſuch other kyndes of beaſtes. It is not lawfull there to bye and ſell, except you bye ſpices and ſylke. It is alſo there very daungerous to walke in the citie in the nighte ſeaſon, beecauſe of the theft and cruelnes of the inhabitantes, which kil one another like dogges. And therfore the marchaund ſtraungers lodge not out of their ſhippes. How the Portugales ſubdued *Malaccha*, ſhalbe ſaid hereafter in the deſcripcion of the newe Ilandes.

The king and citie of *Bangella*

Silke.

Christian men of Cathay.

The citie of Pego.

Rubies shyning by night.

Lacha, Lacca, or *Lacta*, is ye gumme of a tree wherewith silke is colored.

Malaccha.

Sumatra.

Taprobana.

¶ *Of the greate and ryche Ilande of* Sumatra, *or* Samotra, *sometyme called* Taprobana.

The Iland of *Taprobana.*

SOme thinke this Sumatra, to be that Iland which of the old writers is called *Taprobana.* It is verye great and riche: and hath in it foure Kinges crowned with Diademes. They are Idolaters: in religion, maner of lyuinge, and apparell, not muche vnlyke the Kinge of *Tarnaſseri.* They exceade all other men in bigneſſe of bodie. They haue greye or blewe eyes, and are of cruell countenaunce, and terrible voyce. They are long lyued and lyue euen vntyl an hundreth yeares of age. The ſea in certaine chanels is of ſuch heigth and depth, that no anker may come to the bottome therof. The inhabitantes are great fyſhers on the ſea, and haue great pleaſure to take the ſhelle fyſhe, called the Tortoyſe of the ſea: of whiche, ſome are of ſuche houdge bignes, that the ſhelle of one of them may ſuffiſe to make a houſe well able to receaue a hole famelie. For ſome of them beare ſhelles of xv. cubites in length: and are therefore apt for that purpoſe. The moſt part of this Ilande is burnte with heate, and hath in it many deſolate places and wilderneſſes. There are founde many and greate Pearles. For theyr money, they vſe coyned golde, ſyluer and tynne. The golden coyne, hath on the one ſyde a deuils head grauen, and on the other ſyde a chariot which Elephantes draw. This region bringeth foorth more plentie of Elephantes, of greater ſtature, and a better broede, then are found in any other place. In the ſea about this Ilande, are often tymes ſene the great monſtrous fyſhes, and kynde of Whales, called Balene, which bring many incommodities to the inhabitantes. They are of ſuch monſtrous bignes, that when they approche to the Sea bankes, they ſeeme lyke vnto hylles: they haue rough backes full of ſharpe prickes. And except men walke very warely by the ſea bankes, they are in daunger to be ſodeynly ſwalowed vp of theſe monſters. Some of them haue ſo greate and wyde mouthes, that they ſometymes ſwallowe whole ſhippes with the men. This countrey bringeth foorthe *Lacha, Lacca,* or *Lacta,* which ſteyneth ſilke and cloth in high redde or crimiſon coloure. It is engendred in a tree, not much vnlyke vnto our walnut trees. Ther is alſo great plenty of pepper, higher then is founde in other places. In their mother tonge pepper is called *Molaga.* It is ſolde there by meaſure, as wheat is with vs, and not by weight. There is ſo great plentie hereof, that there are yearely certayne ſhippes laden therwith to *Cathay*, where ye aire is colder. From Sumetra to the Iland of Banda, which is but rude and barren, and of playne and lowe grounde, whoſe inhabitantes are barbarous, and little differinge from beaſtes, hauing lowe houſes, and no apparell but ſhertes, barefoted and bareheaded, with long heare, of deſpicable ſtature, dulle witted, of no ſtrength, and Idolaters. The ſoyle of this countrey, bringeth forth nothing but nutmegges, and a few other fruites. The ſtalke or bodi of ye nutmeg-tree, is not much vnlike ye ſtalke of a peache tree, bringing forth lyke braunches and leaues, but ſomewhat narower. Before theſe nutts be rype, ye mace crepeth on the tree, lyke a floriſhing roſe. And when the nutte waxeth rype, the mace embraſeth it round about. And ſo they gather both together in commune, at a tyme appointed: for they vſe no diſtribucion thereof, but he that gathereth moſt, hath moſt. This tree bringeth forth his fruyte plentifully without any arte of huſbandrye or tyllage. They are gathered at ſuch time as we gather cheſtnuttes. From this Iland within ſixe dayes ſayling, is the Iland of *Monoch,* in the which cloues are founde, as alſo in other Ilandes, therto adioyninge. The tree whiche beareth cloues, hath his ſtalke not much vnlike vnto the boxe tree, with leaues lyke the Cinomome tree, but ſomewhat rounder. And when the cloues beginne to waxe rype, they beate the trees with redes, ſpreding fyrſt couerlettes or mattes vnder ye ſame. The grounde where theſe trees grow, is of ye colour of cleye or ſand. This region is ſituate ſo low, that ye ſeuen ſtarres called *Septentriones* (being not farre from *Vrſa maior*, called charles wayne) can not there be ſene, becauſe ye ſouth pole (called pole Antartike) appeareth aboue the earth.

Men of a hundreth yeres of age.

Shelles of fiſhes for houses.

Great pearles.

Coyned golde and siluer for moneye.

Fishes of monstrous bignesse.

Lacha.

Pepper solde by measure.

Cathay.

The Iland of Banda.

The nutmeg tree.

Mace.

The Iland of *Monoch.*

Cloues.

Charles Waine.

Pole Antartike.

¶ *Of the Ilande of Bornei.*

THe Iland of Bornei (which ſome call Porne) is diſtant from *Monoch* fiftie leages. The inhabitantes are Idolaters, very quick witted, and of maner of liuing not greatly to be diſcommended. Thei vſe not al one kynde of apparell. Some weare ſhertes of goſſampine cotton, ſome beaſtes ſkinnes, and ſome high cappes lyke myters, of redde colour. This Iland bringeth forth yearely great plentie of *Camphora*, called camphyre, whiche they affirme to be the gumme of a certayn tree. Of this Ilande I wil ſpeake more hereafter in the nauigacions toward the Eaſt partes.

Idoloters.

Camphire.

¶ *Of the Iland of Giaua.*

THe Iland of *Gyaua*, is diſtant from *Bornei.* v. dayes ſayling towarde the ſouth. This Iland is ſo great, yat it conteineth in it many kingdoms: ye inhabitantes ar geuen to idolatri. It bringeth forth ſilke, which of it ſelfe groweth there plentifullye in the wooddes. The precyous ſtone called Smaragdus (which is ye true Emerode) is found there more excellent, then in any other place of the worlde. It hath abundaunce of golde and copper of the beſt kynd. The ſoyle beareth wheat and other corne, with al kindes of fruites in great plentie. When the men of this countrie goe to the ſea, theyr weapons are bowes, and arrowes of redes. They vſe alſo to infect theyr arrowes with venime, and to blowe them oute of a trunke as we doe pellets of claye: with the which yf they drawe neuer ſo little bloud, preſente death foloweth immedia[t]lye. They haue alſo this cuſtome, that when they ſee theyr parentes by reaſon of age to be vnprofitable, they bring them to the market towne, and there ſell them to the people called *Anthropophagi*, which eat mens fleſhe, of whom they are incontinently ſlayne, and eaten. The ſame doe they with the yonger ſorte alſo, yf they fall into any deſperate diſeaſe.

Silke groweth in woodes.
The smaragde or emerode.
Golde and copper
Arrowes of redes.
Arrowes infected with venime.
A strange custome.
Anthropophagi.

¶ *Of the Iland of Iaua.*

THere are two Ilandes of thys name, as Iaua the more and Iaua the leſſe. The biggeſt reacheth forth toward the South, and is ſayd to haue in it many kingdoms. The inhabitantes are Idolaters and haue a peculier language. In this Iland is greate plentie of pepper, Nuttemegges, Spikenarde, Galangale, and other ſpices. Mani marchauntes of other countreies are wont to reſorte thether, and geat great riches by ye ſpices which they carie from thenſe. In this Iland alſo are people called *Anthropophagi*, which are wont to eate mens fleſhe.

Spyces.

¶ *Of the Iland of* Madagaſcar.

THis Iland is counted to be one of the greateſt and rycheſte Ilandes of the worlde. The inhabitantes are of Mahumets ſecte as are the Turkes. It bringeth forth many Elephantes, by reaſon wherof there is greate plentie of Iuerye which is the Elephantes tothe. For it is thought that there is no greater plentie of Iuerie, then in this Iland and in the Iland of *Cuzibet.* They eate the fleſhe of none other beaſtes, but onely of Camels, becauſe the Ilande is full thereof, and alſo that it is founde to be more holeſome for the people of that countrey then any other fleſhe. There are alſo in this Iland many woddes that bringe foorth redde ſanders, for the which many marchauntes reſort thether. In the ſea about this Iland, great whales are taken, out of the which amber is gathered. There are lions, leopardes, hartes, hyndes, goates, and many other beaſtes and foules, by reaſon whereof, they vſe muche haukinge and huntinge.

Mahumetistes
Elephantes.
Iuerie
The Iland of *Cuzibet.*
Camels fleshe eaten.
Woddes of redde Sanders.
Whales
Amber.
Lions, and Leopardes.

¶ *Of the Iland of Zanzibar.*

THe Ilande of Zanzibar, hath a peculier Kinge and language. The inhabitantes are idolaters, and are of groſſe and ſhorte ſtature: but yf theyr heygth dydde aunſwere to theyr thickeneſſe and breadth, they mighte ſeme to be giauntes. They are all blacke, and goe naked, onely couering theyr pryuie partes. The heare of theyr heades, is merueylouſlye corlde. They haue greate mouthes, noſethrilles flyrtting vpwarde and wyde, with great eares and cruell eyes. Theyr women are deformed by reaſon of theyr greate eyes, greate mouthes, and greate nofethrilles. They liue with milke, flefſhe, ryce, and dates. They lacke wyne: yet they make a pleaſaunt drinke of ryce, ſuger, and other ſpices. Many marchauntes reſorte thether for yuerie and Amber, for there is greate plentye of Elephantes and greate whales.

Bigge men of low stature.
Peqple deformed
Ryce and Dates.
Drinke of spices.
Amber.

¶ *Of the two Ilandes, in one of the which dwell onely men, and in the other onely women.*

The Iland of men.

The Iland of women.

Christians

IN the mayne ſea, there are two Ilandes, diſtante the one from the other aboute. viiij. or. ix. leages toward the ſouth, ſituate betwene the cytie of *Aden* and *Calicut*. In one of the which dwel onely men without the company of women, and is called the Ilande of men. And in the other dwell onely women, without men, and is called the Ilande of women. They are Chriſtians and contract matrimonie. The women neuer come to the Ilande of men, but the men are accuſtomed to vyſyte the women once in the yeare, and tarye with them thre monethes continually, euery man with his owne wife in his owne houſe: after which time they returne agæyn to [t]her owne Ilande, where they remayne all the yere after. The women kepe the men children with them vntyll they bee xv. yeares of age, and then ſend them to theyr fathers. The women haue nought els to do, but to take charge of their children, and to gather certayne fruites. But the men labour and haue care how they may fynde theyr wyfe and chyldren. They are exercyſed in

Fishing.

fyſhing, and ſell fyſhes both newe taken and olde dryed, to marchaunte ſtraungers, whereby they receaue great commodities.

¶ *Of the greate Empyre of* Cathay, *being vnder the dominion of the great Cham (whiche ſome call the great Can) Emperoure of* Tartaria, *in olde tyme called* Scythia.

The great Cham of Tartari

THe ſuperiour or high *India*, whiche is nowe called *Cathay*, is a region excedinge large and of greate power, whoſe Emperour is ye great Cham of *Tartaria*, hauinge vnder him many Prouinces, people and Princes, and innumerable Ilandes in the great Eaſt ſea, called the greate Ocean. He hath vnder his dominion great and famous cities, as are theſe: *Cambalu, Quenquinafu, Mien, Cacaufu, Canglu, Tadinfu, Tingui*, and dyuers other. Among the people of this countrey, one man hath manye wyues, whiche declare theyr loue to their huſbandes after this ſort. When the huſband is dead, euery one of his wiues pleade their cauſe before a iudge, to proue which of them was moſt louing to her huſband and beſte beloued of him: ſo yat ſhe which by the ſentence of the iudges is found to haue been moſt faythfull and diligente, decketh her ſelfe moſte gorgiouſly in all her ſumptuous araye, and procedeth like a *Virago* ſtoutly and cherefully to the fire, where the corps of her huſbande was burnte, caſtinge her ſelfe into the ſame fyre, embraſing and kiſſing the dead bodi of her huſband, vntyll ſhe alſo be conſumed by the fyre, whiche ſhe reputeth for an honourable ſepulture: whereas his other wyues are eſtemed to lyue in ſhame and infamie. They ioyne in mariage, neyther in reſpect of riches or nobilite, but onlye for loue and beautie: and rather for ye encreaſe of poſteritie, then for pleaſure. There is alſo another ſtraunge cuſtome among theſe Indians: and yat is, that whereas the poorer ſort are not able to geue any dowry with theyr doughters to mariage, they bringe them forth, euen in ye floure of their age to ye market place, with trumpettes and ſuch other inſtrumentes as they vſe in the warres. Where, the multitude beynge called together, the maydes fyrſte of all, diſcouere theyr backe partes, euen vp to the ſhoulders, and afterward theyr forepartes in lyke maners. And vpon this declaring their pouertie and nakednes, are maried to ſuch as lyke them beſt. This people of *Cathay*, are of the nacion of them which in tyme paſt were called *Scythians*, a kind of men (as ſaith *Haitho*) of ſubtill wyt: affyrming that onely they ſee with two eies, and that all other men beſyde them are blind of the one eye. Theyr quickenes of witte is great, but their boaſting is more. The hole nacion is perſwaded that they greatly excel all other men in ſubteltie of wit and knowledge. The inhabitantes are whyte men, with ſmall eyes, withoute beardes, and vtterly voyde of all godly knowledge. For ſome of them pray to the ſunne, ſome to the mone, ſome to Images, ſome to an oxe, and ſome to other monſters of theyr phantaſticall ſuperſticion. They haue no law written, and are of no faith. And albeit that in workemanſhip and artes they are marueylous wyttie, yet haue they no knowledge of dyuine or godly thinges. It is a timorous kynde of men, and greatly fearinge death. And are therefore in theyr warres, more politike then valient. In the warres, they vſe arrowes, and certayne other kyndes of weapons vnknowen to men of other countreis. The monie which they vſe, is made of a certayne paper, beeinge foure ſquare, with ye Kinges ymage printed theron. Theyr houſholde ſtuffe is

Famous cities vnder the greate Cham.

Manye wyues.

What naturall affection may doe

A strange custome

The people of *Cathay*.

Idolatours.

Money of paper

of golde and ſyluer and other metals. They haue greate ſcarcenes of oyle. The great Emperour of *Cathay*, kepeth his courte in the riche and mightie cytie called *Cambalu*, being the chefeſt citie of all the Empyre, and of ſuch greatneſſe that it conteyneth in circuite ſixe leages. This citie is foure ſquare, ſo that euery quadrature or ſyde of the wall, hath in it thre principal portes or gates. Alſo in all the corners of the walles, are veri faire palaces, in which the artillery or armure of the cytie is reſerued. The ſtretes are made very ſtreyght and right forth: ſo that from any one gate to the other beinge directly ouer againſt the ſame, a man may ſe plainly through the cytie, hauing ye houſes on euery ſyde lyke palaces, placed in goodly ordre, moſt beautifull to behold. Without the cytie, there are twelue great ſuburbes, adherent to the. xii. gates of ye cytie, whether the marchauntes and ſtraungers, haue their continual recourſe as to ye burſe or ſtrete. It can not be ſpoken what great abundaunce of marchaundiſe and riches is brought to [t]his citie: a man wold thinke that it were ſufficient to ſerue all the worlde. Precious ſtones, pearles, ſilke, and ſpices of dyuers kindes are brought thether, from *India* and *Mangi*, and other regions. There paſſeth not a daye in the yeare in which there are not about a thouſand waynes laden with ſilke which are brought to this citie by ſtraunge marchauntes. What greate pompe, glory, and forniture of all thinges, is obſerued in the Emperours courte, it can not be ſpoken. He hath in his courte twelue thouſand horſemen, whiche haue the cuſtodie of his body: and diſtribute their waytinge dayes after this order, yat whereas one of ye captaynes of this gariſon with his thre thouſand ſouldiers hath wayted vpon the kinges perſonne, three dayes, another captayne in lyke order wyth as manye menne ſuccedeth in hys rowme for other three dayes, and lykewyſe an other after hym, executethe the ſame offyce. When the Emperoure maketh anye bankette, it cannot be ſaid what great pompe is obſerued. He hath ſytting at his lefte hand his chefeſt quene whom he moſt eſtemeth: and at his right hand hys ſonnes, and ſuche as are of the kinges bloud: but thei ſyt ſomwhat lower and further of. The other noble men which wayte not, ſytte in a place yet ſomewhat lower. All ſuch as in the court ſyt at meat, vſe none other drinking cuppes then of gold. The Princes whiche wayte on the Emperoure at hys meate, haue all theyr mouthes couered with fyne ſilken clothes, leaſt in any caſe they ſhould blow or breath on the kinges meate or drinke. And when the Emperour lifteth vp his cup to drinke, al the muſicions and minſtrels that ſtand about him, playe on theyr inſtrumentes, while in the meane time all ſuche as wayte on hym, ſtoupe downe and make lowe curteſie. How great honoure is exhibited to this Emperour, and howe many precious and riche preſentes are offred vnto him by his Princes, Dukes, Leauetenauntes and preſydentes of prouinces, and rulers of cities, no man is able to expreſſe, foraſmuche as he hath vnder him in maner innumerable Kingdomes, Prouinces, Nacions and Dominions, which are on euery ſyde about *Cathay*, and acknoweledge him to be theyr onelye Lorde and King, whom they honoure and reuerence as a great God and mighti Mahumet. In what pompe and triumphant magnificence he ſheweth him ſelf when he goeth to hauke or hunt, and how many tentes he pitcheth in the felde, which being ſene a farre of, a man would thinke to be a greate cytie, he that deſyreth to knowe, let him reade *Paulus Venetus*, in the ſecond boke of hys nauigacions into *India*, where he ſhal find thinges to marueyl at. In *Cathay* they make a pleaſaunt drinke of ryce and certayne ſpyces, which in drinking excelleth the ſwetenes of wine. In many places they haue great lacke of wood: In the ſtede wherof, they digge out of the mountaynes a certayn kinde of blacke ſtone whiche burne in the fyre like coles, and continue ſo long, that yf they be kyndled ouer night, they kepe fyre vnto the morning.

Golde and Syluer.

The cytie of *Cambalu*.

Marchandyse.

Precious stones and spyces.

Note.

The king of *Cathay* his court

The Quene.

Golden plate.

Worldly glory.

A liuing Idol.

Paulus Venetus.

Drinke of rice and spyces.

Digged cole.

¶ *Of certaine Prouinces and regions ſubiect vnder the dominion of the greate Cham Emperour of* Cathay.

THere paſſeth through the kingdom of *Cathay*, a certayne greate ryuer called *Puliſachnites*, which emptieth it ſelfe in the great Ocean Sea, by the whiche ryuer, ſhyppes haue their paſſage into that lande. Ouer this ryuer is a very fayre bridge of marble, beyng in length three hundreth paſes, and in breadth, eyghte paſes, with. xxiii. arches, and grauen Lions on euery ſyde, adourning the rayles or higheſt margentes of the ſame. From hence it is not farre to the fayre and greate kingdom of *Tainfu*, in the which are many goodli vynes. For in the kingdom of *Cathay* there groweth no wyne, but is brought thether from this region. In this kingdome is greate vſe of marchaundyſe, and hath plentie of conning artificers, ſo that al the armure which the great Cham vſeth in his warres, is made there. Toward the region of *Mangi*, is ſituate the ryuer *Caromoran*, whiche for the greate breadth and depth, hath no bridge. In this region is greate abundaunce of Ginger, ſilke, byrdes, and ſpeciallye Pheſantes. Somewhat beyonde this, is the great cytie of *Quenquinafu*, beynge the chief cytie of the ſame kingdome. In this region are founde many muſkecattes. This beaſt in this countreye, is

A greate bridge of marble.

The kingdome of *Tainfu*.

Conuyng artificers.

Ginger.

Quenquinafu.

The muske catte.

but lyttle and fayre, aboute the bigneſſe of a meane catte, with groſſe heare lyke a harte, hauinge blunte clawes on his fete, with two longe teeth in the vpper iawe, and two in the nether iawe: and hath nere vnto the nauell a bladder full of a certayne matter like vnto bloud, being of wonderful fragrant ſauoure, and is the true muſke.

Siuet or muske.

¶ *Of the Prouince of* Mangi, *and merueylous cyties conteyned in the ſame.*

THe Prouince of *Mangi*, hath in it many notable and great cities, in the whiche is great exercyſe of marchaundyſe: and ſpecially in the citie of *Conigangui*, is ſolde great plentie of ſalt. In the cytie of *Panchi*, there is great ſale of ſilke. In the cytie of *Sianfu*, is made great plentie of clothes of golde and ſilke. In the cytie *Singui* is a famous market, where great abundance of marchaundiſe is brought by the ryuer. Nere vnto the citie of *Caigui*, groweth plentie of blade and ryce, that it is caried from thence to the court of the greate Cham. In ye citie of *Singui*, are numbred to be about ſixe thouſande bridges of ſtone, hauinge ſo highe arches, that greate ſhippes maye paſſe vnder the ſame without bowing down of the maſt. There is another citie called *Quinſai*, which is ſo fayre and great, that there is thought to be no bigger in al the worlde. It conteyneth in circuite, a hundreth Italien miles, which make. xxv. leages. It hath twelue thouſande bridges of ſtone, and thoſe ſo highe that greate ſhippes with the maſte ſtanding vp right, maye paſſe vnder. This cytie is ſituate in a mariſſhe ground, muche lyke vnto venes. Therfore if they ſhould lack bridges, they could not paſſe ouer from the one ſyde of the ſtreete to the other. It hath innumerable artificers and many marchauntes. The cytezins lyue pleaſantly, and ſpecially the women, which are fayrer then in other partes of *India*. Toward the South ſyde of the cytye, there is a great lake or poole within ye walles of the cytie, whiche conteyneth in circuite about. viii. leages, hauinge about the bankes therof many noble mens houſes, very fayre both without and within. In the middeſte of this lake, there are two litle Ilandes and in euery of them a goodly palace, in ye which are reſerued al ſuche ornamentes and veſſels as they vſe for theyr mariages and ſolemne feaſtes, for whereas any of the cytezins entende to make any great banket, or feaſt, they bring theyr geſtes to one of theſe palaces, where they are honorably enterteined. In the ſtretes of ye citie, are certaine comon towres, into ye which, al ſuch as dwell neare therto, carie theyr goodes and ſtuffe, yf it ſo chaunce, yat fyre be in the citie. The inhabitantes are Idoloters: and eate the fleſhe of horſes and camels, and of other vnclene beaſtes. The great Cham hath in this cytie a myghtie gariſon to the intente to auoyde rebellion, theſte and murther. For on euery bridge there wayteth dayly and nightlye. x. watchmen for the ſame purpoſe: and becauſe the Prouince of *Mangi* is exceding large, the great Cham hath deuyded it into nyne Kingdomes, aſſigninge vnto euery one a peculier Kynge: whiche are al of greate powre, and yet ſubiecte to the greate Cham. One of them dwelleth in the citie of *Quinſai*. In thys Prouince of Mangi, is an other Kyngdomme, called Fugui, in whiche the people eate mannes fleſſhe, ſo that they dye not of any diſeaſe. They drinke the bloud and eate the fleſhe of ſuch as are ſlayne in ye warres. There are hennes found in this region, which in the ſtede of fethers, haue heare much lyke cattes heare of blacke colour: And laye very goode egges.

Marchandyse.
Salte.
Sylke.
Cloth of golde.
Ryce.
vi. M [six thousand] bridges of stone.
The great citie of *Quinsai*.
xij. M. [twelve thousand] bridges of stone.
Artificers.
Marchauntes.
Common banketinge houses.
A good prouysion againste fyre.
Flesh of horse eaten.
A prouision against rebellion.
Anthropophagi.
Hennes hauinge heare in the stede of fethers.

¶ *Of the region of* Tangut, *and of the great deſertes, and voyces of deuylles hearde in the ſame, and of the Salamandra.*

FRom the Kingdome of Perſia, there are two iourneyes to the region of *Cathay*. For either the ſouth ſide muſt be obſerued towarde *India*, or elles to paſſe by the prouinces of Carcham, Cotam, and Peim, Northeaſtwarde to the citie of *Lop*, beynge the greateſt and moſt notable cytie in all that region, lying betwene the Eaſt and the North at the entraunce at the great deſert. In this cytie, al ſuche marchauntes, as entende to paſſe the deſertes, make preparacion for all thinges neceſſarye for their yourneye: And reſt in the ſame, vntill they are well prouided of ſtrong aſſes and camels to carye there vitayles. And when in ye deſert their vitayles begin to fayle them, they kyl their aſſes or leaue them there in the wyldernes, becauſe they can no longer prouide them of paſture, vntyll they haue paſſed ouer the deſerte. But they preſerue theyr camelles, beecauſe they are ſuſteyned wyth leſſe meate, and beare greater burthens. In this deſerte are often tymes founde bytter waters: but more often freſſhe and ſweete waters: ſo that in maner euerye daye for the ſpace of thyrtye dayes, a man maye fynde freſſhe water, but that in ſo lyttle quantitie that it doeth not ſuffice al the marchauntes whiche paſſe that waye together. That

The way from Persia to *Cathay*.
The cytie of Lop.
The iorney by y^e^ desertes.
Bitter waters.

deſerte is verye full of mountaynes. And when you are come to the lowe and playn ground, the reſidue of the iourney is all together by the ſandes: it is throughout baren and ſaluage, ſo that it is not able to nouriſhe any beaſtes for lacke of paſture. In this wildernes are often tymes heard and ſene, as well by daye as by night, ſundrie illuſions of euyl ſpirites. And therefore ſuche as trauayle throughe the ſame, haue nede to take great hede leaſt they diſſeuer or depart farre in ſundre, or leaſte any linger behynde his companie, aſwel for that he may hereby loſe the ſight of them by reaſon of mountaynes or hilles, lyinge beetwene, as alſo becauſe there are heard voyces of deuyls, calling them that wander alone, by theyr proper names, conterfeyting the voyces of theyr companie that goeth beefore, by this meanes withdrawing them from the right waye, and bringinge them to deſtruccion. There is often tymes heard in the ayre, as it were a noyſe of muſicall inſtrumentes: but more often like the ſounde of drumſlades or timbrels. This great deſert being paſſed ouer, they come to the cytie called *Sachion*, which is ſituate in the enteraunce of the greate Prouince of *Tangut*, where amonge certayne Mahumetiſtes, are found a fewe Chriſtian men called *Neſtoriani* of the ſecte of *Neſtorius*. There are alſo manye Idoloters, hauinge theyr monaſteries conſecrated to dyuers Idols, to which they offre many ſacrifices and attribute greate honor to deuyls. And when a man hath a ſonne borne, he forthwith commendeth him to ſome Idol, in whoſe honoure he nouriſheth a ramme al that yeare, which after that his ſonne be twelue monethes olde, at the nexte feaſte of the ſame Idol, he and his ſonne offre with many ceremonies. When this oblacion is finiſhed, thei bringe the ſacrificed fleſhe to a place appoynted, where al his kinſfolkes being gathered together, they eate that fleſhe with great religion, and kepe the bones reuerently in a certayn veſſell: but in the funeralles of the dead they vſe theſe ceremonies and ſuperſticions. Al the neighbors of the dead, prouyde that the dead corps be burned: which cuſtome all the people of the Eaſt partes do obſerue. Yet ſome of them kepe ye dead bodye by them certayne dayes beefore they burne it: As ſome, ſeuen daies: ſome for the ſpace of a moneth and ſome ſixe monethes, preparing for the ſame a cloſe cheſte, ſo inuoluinge with cereclothe, and pouderinge with ſpyces the bodye therein incloſed, that no euyll ſauoure maye paſſe foorth. Thys done, they paynte the cheſte very curiouſlye, and couer it with a precious clothe, placinge theyr dyninge table harde by the ſame, where they dyne continually as long as the dead bodie is thus reſerued at home. And in the dyner tyme for the ſpace of one hole houre, they ſette wyne and meat vpon the cheſte, ſuppoſing the ſoule of the dead bodye to be partaker of the ſame. The Region of *Tangut*, is verye large, and conteyneth in it many priuate Prouinces, as the Prouince of *Camul*, of *Cinchital*, and *Suchur*, wyth dyuerſe fayre Cyties, whiche are all Subiecte and obeye to the great Cham of *Cathay*. Some of the inhabitantes beleue in Mahumet: ſome acknowledge Chriſte after the hereſye of *Neſtorius*. In the land of *Chinchital*, is a Mountayne oute of the whyche is dygged the myne of ſtele and Audanici. There is alſo founde the Serpente called *Salamandra*, which lyueth in the fyre wythoute any hurte. Of the heare of this ſerpent, is made a certayne cloth, which being caſt in the fyre when it is foule, is thereby made cleane and very white if it remaine there for ye ſpace of an houre. Such other innumerable and marueilous thinges, writeth *Paulus uenetus* that he hath ſene and founde in his nauigacions into theſe partes: of whom alſo I haue gathered thus muche, lettinge paſſe manye other thinges whereof he ſpeaketh more at large.

Illusions of euyl spirites

Voices of deuyls.

Straunge noises in the ayre.

The citie of *Sachion*.

Christians of the heresie of *Nestorius*.

Monasteries of Idoloters.

A strange custome

Ceremonies in funerals

A grosse and vayne perswasion

The region of *Tangut*.

Mahumetistes.

Stele.

Salamandra.

Paulus Venetus.

¶ *Here endeth the deſcripcion of the Nauigacions from Spayne to the newe India Eaſtward, and foloweth*

Of the newe Ilandes and India found in the Weſt Ocean ſea, from Spayne Weſtward and Southweſte.

¶ Of the newe India,
and Ilandes in the West Ocean Sea, how, when, and by whom they were found.

Christophorus Columbus.

Hriſtophorus Columbus, a Gentleman of Italie, and borne in the citie of *Genua*, when he had been longe conuerſaunt in the Kyng of Spaynes courte, he applyed hys mynde to ſearche vnknowen partes of the worlde. And for his better furtheraunce herein, made humble peticion to the kinge, to ayde him in this his enterpryſe, which doubtleſſe ſhoulde redownde to his great honour, and no little commoditie to all the hole countreye of Spayne, yf by his helpe and charges, he might fynde new regions. But the Kinge and Quene laughed him to ſcorne, ſaying: that his ymaginacion was but vayne and phantaſticall. At the length, eyght yeares beynge passed ouer, and *Columbus* ſtyll perſiſtinge in his purpoſe and ſute, the Kyng began to geue eare to his talke, and after muche reaſoninge and debating of the matter, determined to trie the witte of the manne. And there vpon commaunded a foyſt and two brigantines to be furniſhed with all kynde of ordinaunce and vitalyes: which being prepared, the fyrſt of September, in the yere of Chriſt 1492, *Columbus* departed from the coaſtes of Spayne, and wente forwarde in his viage longe deſyred. And when he had paſſed the Ilandes called *Gades*, he diuerted toward the fortunate Ilandes called *Inſulæ Fortunatæ*, which are now called *Canariæ*, becauſe they are full of dogges. They were in time paſt called Fortunate, for the excellente temperatenes of the ayre, and greate fruytefulnes. *Columbus* departinge from henſe, ſayled towarde the Weſte, and at the length founde certayne Ilandes, of the whiche two were very greate, wherof the one he called *Hiſpana*, and the other *Iohanna*.

Great enterprises have euer ben counted phantasticall.

The fyrst viage of *Christophorus Columbus.*

The Ilandes called *Gades.*

The Ilandes of *Canaria*,

¶ *Of the two Ilandes* Iohanna *and* Hiſpana.

Iohanna.

AS *Columbus* came to the Ilande whiche he called Iohanna, he hearde a merueylous ſweete noyſe of innumerable byrdes, and eſpeciallye of Nightingales whiche wandred in the thicke wooddes in the Moneth of Nouembre. He founde alſo mooſte fayre Ryuers, ſwete to drinke, and many goodly hauens. And as he ſayled by the coſtes of the Ilande Southweſte warde, and coulde fynd no ende, he thought it had been the mayne land, and therfore determyned to drawe backe, being partly enforſed by roughnes of the ſea: and thus returning ſome what Eaſtward, he came to an Iland whiche heafterwarde called *Hiſpana*, where arriuing to the land, he and his companye was ſene of the Inhabitantes of the Iland, which ſodeinly fled into the thicke woodes: whom the Spanyardes purſewinge, toke a womanne whome they brought to theyr ſhippe, entreatinge her verye gentillye, fyllinge her with delicate meates and wyne, and clothing her in fayre apparel, and ſo let her depart: for thei goe naked, and are not vſed to delicates. And as this womanne returned to her companie, ſome beyng moued by the lyberalitie declared vnto her, came by greate multitudes to the ſea bankes, bringinge golde with them, which they chaunged for earthen pottes, and drinkinge glaſſes. Thus a further frendſhip by this meanes contracted, the Spanyardes begonne more diligently to ſearche theyr maner of lyuinge and maners, and ſo vnderſtode that they had a king. And therefore entering further into the Iland, they were honorably receyued of the king. Thei vewyde their houſes, and merueyled to ſee them ſo bylded without the vſe of Iron, which they are vtterly without: in the ſtede whereof they vſe a certeyn ſtone, wherwith the cut and ſawe theyr timbre.

Hiſpana or *Hiſpaniola.*

Gold for earth and glasse.

The king of the Iland.

Bylding without the vse of Iron.

¶ *Of the people called* Canibales *or* Anthropophagi, *which are accuſtomed to eate mans fleſhe.*

WHeras the people of the forenamed Ilandes, fled at the ſight of our menne, the cauſe thereof was, that they ſuſpected them to haue been *Canibals*, that cruel and fearſe people which eate mans fleſhe, which nacion our men had ouerpaſſed, leauinge them on the ſouthſyde. But after they had knowledge of the contrary, they made greuous complaynt to our men, of the beaſtly and fearſe maners of theſe *Canibales*, which were no leſſe cruel agaynſt them, then the Tyger or the Lyon agaynſte tame beaſtes. Declaring furthermore, yat when ſoeuer they take any of them vnder the age of. xiiij. yeares, they vſe to gelde them, and francke them vntyll they be very fat, as we are wont to doe with capons or hennes: and as for ſuche as drawe towarde. xx. yeare olde, to kyll them forthwith and pull out theyr guttes, and eate the ſame freſhe and newe, wyth other extreme partes of the bodye, poudering the reſidue with ſalte, or keping it in a certayne pickle as we do iegottes or ſanſages. Yet eate they not the women, but reſerue them to encreaſe, as we doe hennes to lay egges. And if thei take any old women, they kepe them for drudges. And therfore when the *Canibales* make incurſion, the people of theſe Ilandes flye with all ſpede. For albeit they vſe arrowes, yet are they not able to reſiſte theyr fearſenes.

Canibales Anthropophagi.

The fearsenes of the *Canibales.*

Mans fleshe poudered.

¶ *Of the maners of the inhabitantes of the Iland of* Hiſpana *and of ſuche thynges as are found there.*

THe inhabitantes of this Ilande, vſe in ye ſtede of bread, certayne rotes like vnto nauie rotes, hauing the taſt of ſoft and grene cheſtnuttes. Gold with them is in eſtimacion, for they hange certayne peces therof at their eares: they go not out of ye limities of their own contrie, nor exerciſe any marchandiſe with ſtrangers: thei gather gold in ye ſandes of a certen riuer which ſpringeth out of veri high montaines They gather it with great laboure and melte it and caſte it, fyrſte into maſſes or wedges, and afterwarde into brode plates. They haue no foure foted beaſtes, except connies: they haue ſerpentes of monſtrous greatnes, but without hurte or venime. They haue alſo wylde turtle doues and duckes, muche greater then ours, and geſe whyter then ſwannes, ſauing yat they haue redde heades. Thei haue alſo many popingiayes: ſome grene, ſome yelowe, and ſome not muche vnlyke them of India, with redde circles about their neckes. This Iland bringeth forth alſo *Maſtix*, *Aloe*, and ſuche other gummes: and eſpecially certayne redde graynes, which are ſharper then pepper.

Rootes in ye stede of bread

Gold in estimacion.

Howe golde is gathred.

Serpents wythowt venime.

Popingiayes.

Spices and Gummes.

¶ *How* Columbus, *after he had found new Ilandes, returned agayne to Spayne, where preparinge a newe nauie, he toke his viage to ye* Canibales.

COlumbus, not a little ioyeful of the landes newly found, the ſpring tyme drawing nere, he determined to returne to his countrey: leauing with the king of the Iland. 38. men which ſhould diligently ſearche the ſituacion of the Ilande, the maners of the people, and the natures of trees and fruites. But he, hoyſeninge vp his ſayles, directed hys viage towarde Spayne, bringing with him tenne menne of the ſayd Ilande, to th[e]ende that they might learne the Spaniſhe tonge, which they might eaſely doe, becauſe al the wordes of theyr language may well be written with our letters. *Columbus*, after thys his returne, and fortunate ſucceſſe in his fyrſte viage, was honorablye receyued of the Kynge and Quene, and greatlye magnified with innumerable glorious tittles: willinge that he ſhould no more thenceforth be called *Columbus*, but the Admiral of the great Ocean Sea: and prepared for him towarde his ſecond viage. xvij. foiſtes and. xij. brigantines, wel furniſhed with al kynd of artillerye and plentie of vitayles, and in them twelue hundreth men wel appoynted:

The Indian tong

Columbus, at his returne, is made Admiral of the Ocean sea.

The second viage of *Columbus*

Corne alſo to ſowe, and al kindes of ſeedes and plantes. For, excepte pine apple trees and date trees, there growe none in theſe Ilandes that are knowen to vs. The Admirall toke alſo with him al ſortes of Iron tooles to th[e]intent to byld townes and fortreſſes where his men might lye in ſafegarde. Therfore the firſt day of September departing from the Ilandes called *Gades*, with a proſperous wind he arryued at the Iland of *Canaria* the fyrſt daye of October: from whenſe directing his viage towarde the lefte hande, he ſayled toward ye South, and at ye length came to the Ilandes of the *Canibals*. And becauſe he came thether on the Sundaye called the Dominical day, he called the Iland where he arryued, *Dominica*: which when he perceyued to be but ſaluage and rude, he ſayled on further: and in twentie dayes ſayling, came to another Iland repleniſhed with al kindes of trees, from which came a marueylous fragrant ſauour: By reaſon whereof, ſome being allured by the pleaſantnes of the place, went aland, where they ſawe no kynde of lyuinge beaſtes, ſauinge lyſertes of wonderful houdge greatnes. This Ilande he called *Infula Crucis*, whiche was alſo an Ilande of the *Canibales*, as afterward they proued in dede. For as they ſayled about the Iland, they founde certayne lowe cotages made of trees, lyke vnto ſtagies. For they ſet trees vpright in order round about, faſtening poſtes in them croſſe ouer, where vnto the trees cleaue faſte, ſo that by this meanes they cannot fall. They frame the rooſes of theſe cotages, with ſharpe toppes after the maner of rownde tentes. And laſt of al, they incloſe and couer theſe trees thus ſet in order, wyth the leaues of date trees, and certen other trees, to th[e]intent to make them a ſtronger defence agaynſt wynd and wether. And within the cotage, they tye the poſtes together with ropes of bombage cotton, and a certayne longe roote. They haue couches made, one aboue another, the flowres whereof they ſtrawe wyth heye and cotton. And as ſoone as they hadde ſpied our men, they fled incontinente. And when oure men came into theyr houſes, they found in theym certayne young men bound to poſtes, and kept to be made fatte, and lykewyſe many olde womenne whiche theſe *Canibales* kepte to be their drudges. They founde there alſo earthen veſſelles of all ſortes, in which they ſodde mens fleſhe with popingiayes, geeſe, and duckes fleſhe, al together in one veſſell. They roſted alſo mans fleſhe vpon ſpyttes, reſeruing the bones of the armes and legges, whiche they vſe in the ſtede of Iron, to piece and typpe theyr arrowes. For they are vtterlye without Iron. The[y] found alſo the head of a yong man, yet bleding and faſtened to a poſte. But certayne womenne whiche had fledde from the *Canibales* to oure menne, the Admiral commaunded to be gorgiouſly decked after the maner of our women, and with manye rewardes to be ſent agayne to theyr owne companye. By meanes whereof, the *Canibales* beynge allured by the lyberalitie and gyftes of our men, hoping that they alſo ſhoulde be lykewyſe rewarded, came running toward our men: but when they drew ſomwhat nere vnto them, they fled immediatly into the nexte wooddes. And thus our men departing from thence, returned to the Ilande of *Hiſpana*.

Gades.
The Ilandes of *Canaria.*
The Iland of *Dominica.*
Insula Crucis.
Lisertes.
Houses of trees.
Young men stalled to be made fatte.
Fine cokerye.
Canibales allured wyth lyberalite.

¶ *How the Admirall paſſed manye Ilandes, and what thynges chaunced to hym and his companie in that viage.*

AS the Admirall departed from the Iland of the *Canibales*, and went foreward on his viage, he paſſed by many Ilandes: among the whiche was one called *Matinina*, in whyche dwell only women, after the maner of them, called *Amazones*, as he learned of the men of the Ilandes which he brought with him into Spayne at his fyrſte viage, and ſaued them from the fearſenes of the *Canibales*. He paſſed alſo innumerable other Ilandes of which to ſome he gaue names, as *Mons Farratus*, *Sancta Maria rotunda*, *Sancta Martinus*, *Sancta Maria antiqua*, and *Sancta Crux*. Into the which oure men entering to th[e]intent to fetche freſhe water, found foure *Canibales*, which had taken foure yonge women: who, as ſoone as thei had ſpied our men, wringed theyr handes, ſeming therby to deſyre ayde of oure men: at whoſe coming to delyuer them, the men fled into the woodes and left the women. Shortly after, our men ſaw a bote coming on the ſea with viij. men and as many women: with whom oure men bickeringe loſt one of theyr companions, by reaſon that theſe barbariens are accuſtomed to infecte theyr arrowes with venime: yet oure men preuayled and ſlewe parte of them, and broughte the reſydue by forſe to the Admyrall. As they departed from hence, they found many other Ilandes, but ſuch as they could not come to for the roughnes of the ſea and multitude of rockes. But ſome of the ſmalleſt brigantines which drewe no great depth, went ſomewhat nearer, and noumbred aboue ſeuen and fortie Ilandes, and called the place *Archipelagus*. Sayling from hence, they found another Iland called *Buchema*, into the whiche ye *Canibales* make ſundry incurſions, by reaſon wherof the inhabitantes are at continual warre with them. Thus at the length, the Admiral with his hole nauie returned to the Iland of *Hiſpana*: but in an euyl tyme. For they which he hadde lefte there for a

Matinina An Iland of women onelye.
The names of sundrye Ilandes.
Arrowes infected with venime.
Archipelogus.
Buchema

garriſon, were all dead: as were alſo they whiche he toke with him from the ſame Ilande into Spayne to vſe them for intrepretours. Of whiche ſeuen dyed by chaunge of the ayre. One of them was permitted of the Admirall to departe, when the nauie came neare to hys countrey. The reſidue ſtole awaye priuelye, and ſwamme to lande: but the Admirall doubting whether all his men were dead or no, whiche he lefte in the Iland, commaunded certayne ordinaunce to be ſhot of, that by the noyſe thereof they myghte haue warning to come forth, yf any laye lurkinge in corners: but none appeared, whoſe fatall dayes had fyniſſhed theyr lyfe. At the length, the kyng of the Ilande beyng therto enforſed, declared the hole matter to the Admyrall as well as he coulde by interpretours: affyrming that there were in the Iland other Kynges beſyde him: and of greater power then he, which were ſore offended that the Spaniardes hadde ſubdued the Ilandes: and in reuenge therof, came to the town where the Spaniardes lay, which they ouercame and burnt, and ſlew al the men therin: and that he alſo at the ſame conflicte, taking part with our men, was ſore wounded with an arrow on the arme, for the better tryall whereof he bore hys arme in a towell, becauſe it was not yet hole of that wounde. But ſhortelye after they had knowledge, that the King fayned this tale: ſo that he hardely eſcaped the handes of the Admiral, who was determyned wyth ſome kynd of puniſhment to haue examined him further. But he ſuſpecting the matter, fled into ye inner partes of the Iland, declaring therby, that he was the deſtruction of our men: whom, certayn of our companie, purſuinge, founde manye marueylous thinges: and eſpeciallye ryuers in whiche is founde muche golde, and a mountayne, whoſe ſande is ſparkeled with gold. In this place, the Admiral bylded a citie, which he compaſſed about with a walle. And departing from hence, he ſearched almoſt all the Iland: in ye inner partes wherof he bylded a towre, and named it S. Thomas towre, whiche he made to th[e]intent that he might the more ſafely ſearche out the ſecretes of ſo plentifull a region, and eſpecially the gold mines of the ſame: and thus leauinge a garriſon there, he departed, takinge with him three foyſtes, wherwith he ſayled to ſeke newe Ilandes, and came firſt to the Ilande of *Cuba*, and from thence to *Iamaica*, being greater then *Sicilia*, very fruytfull and wel inhabited. Which, when he had vewed, he departed from thence, and ſayled about the ſea coſtes where he ſawe innumerable other ſmall Ilandes, ſtandinge ſo thicke, that the ſhip was in maner borne a lande: and was therfore enforſed to returne home, the ſame way which he came.

Chaunge of ayre is daungerous.

The king dissembleth with the Admyrall.

Goldefound in riuers and mountaines.

The Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Iamaica*.

A multitude of Ilandes

¶ *How the Spaniardes abuſed the ſubmiſſion and frendeſhippe of the inhabitantes of the Ilandes.*

IN this meane tyme, the Spaniardes which the admiral had left in the Iland of *Hiſpana*, had euyll entreated the inhabitauntes: ſo that for wante of vitayles and foode, they begonne to famyne: imputinge the fault hereof vnto the Chriſtian men, which had digged vp al the rootes wherwith thei were accuſtomed to make theyr bread. And whereas they yet perceaued, that ye Chriſtien men entended to continue there, thei ſent an ambaſſadour to the admiral to deſyre him to reſtrayne the outragiouſnes and crueltie of his men, at whoſe handes they ſuſtained ſuch iniuries and violence, as they ſcarcely loked for at the handes of mortal enemies. Declaringe further, that vnder the pretence of ſeking for gold they committed innumerable wronges and miſchieuous actes, ſpoyling in maner all the hole region: and that for the auoyding of ſuch enormities and oppreſſions, they hadde rather paye tribute, then to be thus dayly vexed with incurſions, and neuer to be at quiete. Vpon this complaynte it was agreed, that they ſhoulde paye yearely tribute to the Chriſtian king and that they ſhould applie them ſelues to gather and encreaſe theyr rotes, whiche were to them in the ſtede of flowre and wheat, and ſo conſumed that with great labour they coulde ſcarcely fynde any in the wooddes. They payde therefore for their tribute, euery thre monethes, certayn pound weyghtes of gold: but ſuche as had no gold, payde ſpyces, and goſſampine cotton. In the meane time the Spaniardes, who ſhould haue been occupied in digging for golde, gaue them ſelues to play, wantonnes and idlenes, contemning, and falling into hatered with their gouernour, by which theyr licentiouſnes, the people of the Iland beyng prouoked, became more diſobedient and wyld, degeneratinge from al kind of honeſtie and faithfulnes: yea ye ſpaniardes alſo became ſo negligent in ſeking for gold, yat ſometyme the charges exceaded the gaynes. Neuertheleſſe in the yere of Chriſt, 1501. they gathered within ye ſpace of two monethes twelue thouſand poundes weyght of golde. But the Admirall appoyntinge his brother *Bartholomeus Columbus*, to be gouernour of the Iland, he in the yeare. 1495. determined to returne to Spayne, to certifye the kyng of al theſe matters. In which viage, he manfullye defended him ſelf in battayl againſt the rebelles of certayne other Ilandes which had conſpyred agaynſt the Spanyardes.

The crueltie of the Christian men

Crueltie of couetousnes.

Bread of rotes.

The tribute of the barbarians

Disobedience foloweth Idlenes

Note.

Bartholomeus Columbus.

¶ *How the Portugals ſought new Ilandes in the Eaſt partes, and how they came to* Calicut.

IN this meane tyme that ye Spanyardes ſoughte newe and vnknowen landes in the Weſt partes, the Portugales attempted to doe the ſame in the Eaſte partes. And leaſt one of them ſhould be a lette or hinderaunce to the other, they deuyded the world betwene them by the aucthoritie of the Biſhop of Rome, Alexander the. vi. of that name. And that on this condicion, that from the Ilandes called *Heſperides* (whiche are now called *Caput ueride*) the one ſhould fayle Weſtwarde, and the other towarde the South pole, thus deuyding the world betwene them in two equal partes. So that whatſoeuer vnknowen landes ſhoulde be diſcouered in the Eaſte partes, the ſame to be dewe to the Portugales: And all ſuche as ſhoulde be founde in the Weſte partes, to appertayne to the Spanyardes. Whereby it came to paſſe, that the Spaniardes, euer by the South, fayled into the Weſte, where they founde a large mayne land, with Ilandes great and litle innumerable, hauing in them great plentie of golde and pearles, and other great riches. But the Portugales, by the Southe, and coſtes of the Ilandes called *Heſperides*, and *Equinoctial* lyne, and *Tropicus Capricorni*, came into ye Eaſt, by the goulfe called *Sinus Perſicus*, euen vnto the coſtes of India, within the riuer of *Ganges*, whereas is now the great market towne, and kingedom of *Calicut*. And from thence to the Iland of *Taprobana*, (now called *Sumetra*, *Zamara* or *Samotra*) and ſo forth to *Aurea Cherſoneſus*, whereas is nowe the great cytie of *Malaccha*, beyng one of ye moſt famous market townes of al ye Eaſt partes. From *Malaccha*, they entered into a great goulfe, by which they came to the region of *Sinarum*. Not farre from *Malaccha*, are the Ilandes called *Molucca*, in which al kyndes of ſpyces growe and are brought to the cytie of *Malaccha*. But the Spanyardes hauing knowledge what greate commoditie the Portugales had receyued by the Ilandes of *Molucca* attem[p]ted to proue yf they alſo might find the ſame Ilandes in ſayling ſo farre Weſtward that they mighte at the length by Weſt and ſouthweſt come into the Eaſt, as by good reaſon they preſuppoſed the roundneſſe of the earth would permitte, if they were not otherwyſe lette by the fyrme or mayne land lyinge in the waye and ſtoppinge theyr paſſage, whereof as yet was no certeyntie knowen. And this dydde they to th[e]intent that by this meanes they myghte more eaſelye and wyth leſſe charge bringe ſpyces from thence into Spayne. Therefore, the maner of this viage was, that they ſhould fayle from the Weſte, vnder the loweſt hemiſpherye or halfe compaſſe of the earth, and ſo to come into the Eaſt. A thinge furelye that myghte ſeeme verye harde to attempte, beecauſe it was vncertaine whether that, moſt prudente and beneficiall nature, (who worketh al thinges with moſt high prouidence) had not ſo deuided and ſeperated the Eaſt from the Weſt, partely by ſea, and partely by land, that there might by this way haue been no paſſage into the Eaſt. For it was not yet knowen, whether that great region of *America*, (whiche they call the fyrme or mayne lande) dyd ſeperate the Weſte ſea from the Eaſt: But it was founde that that fyrme lande extended from the Weſt to the South. And that alſo towarde the North partes were found two other regions, whereof the one is called *Regio Baccalearum*, and the other *Terra Florida*: which, if they were adherent to the ſayde fyrme land, there could be no paſſage by the Weſte ſeas into the Eaſt India, foraſmuch as ther was not yet founde any ſtrayghte of the ſea, wherby any enteraunce mighte be open into the Eaſt. In this meane while, the kyng of Spayne beynge elected Emperoure, prepared a nauie of fyue ſhippes, ouer the whiche he appointed one *Magellanus* to be captayne, commaundinge him that he ſhould ſayle towarde the coaſtes of the ſayd fyrme land, dyrectinge his viage by the ſouth partes thereof, untyl he had eyther found the ende of the ſame, or elles ſome ſtreyghte wherby he mighte paſſe to thoſe odoriferous Ilandes of *Molucca*, ſo famouſly ſpoken of for the great abundaunce of ſwete ſauours and ſpices founde therein. The ſhippes therefore, beyng well furniſſhed with all thinges neceſſarie, *Magellanus* departinge from Ciuile in Spayne, the tenth day of Auguſt, in the yeare of Chriſt. 1519. came fyrſt to ye Ilandes of *Canaria*, and from thence to ye Ilandes called *Heſperides*: from whiche dyrectinge hys courſe betwene the Weſt and the Eaſt toward the ſayd fyrme land, in few dayes with proſperous ſayling, he diſcouered a corner or poynt of the ſayd mayne land, called *Promontorium S. Mariæ*, where the people dwell, called *Canibales*, whiche are accuſtomed to eate mans fleſhe. From hence he ſayled on ſouthwarde by the long tracte of this firme land, which reacheth ſo farre into ye ſouth and extendeth ſo many degrees beyond ye circle called *Tropicus Capricorni*, yat the ſouth pole (called pole Antartike) is there eleuated fortie and fyxe degrees. And thus beyng brought into the Eaſt, they ſaw certayn Indians gatheringe ſhel fyſhes by the ſea bankes: beyng men of very high ſtature, clothed with beaſtes ſkinnes. To whom, whereas certayne of the Spaniardes went a land, and ſhewed them belles and paynted papers, they begon to daunce and leape aboute the Spaniardes, with a rude and murmuring ſonge. At the length there came three other, as thoughe they

The bishop of rome deuideth ye world.

Hesperides or *Caput ueride.*

How the Spanyardes and ye Portugales deuided the world betwene them.

Gold and Pearles

The *Equinoctial* lyne.

The ryuer of *Ganges.*

Calicut.

Taprobana.

Samotra.

The great cytie of *Malaccha.*

The region of *Sinarum.*

The Ilandes of *Molucca.*

Sayling into the East by the west

The roundnes of the erth.

The firme land

Spices

The viage from the West vnto the Easte.

America.

The firme land.

Regio Baccalearum

Terra Florida.

The king of spayne sendeth foorth shippes.

The viage of *Magellanus* by the west into ye east.

The Ilandes of *Molucca*

The Ilandes of *canaria.*

Promotorium S. Marie.

Canibales

The eleuacion of the south pole. 46 degrees

The Region of giauntes.

were ambaſſadours, whiche by certayn ſignes deſyred ye Spaniardes to go with them further into the land, making a countenaunce as though thei wold intertayn them wel, where vpon, ye captayne *Magellanus* ſent with them. vii. men well inſtructed, to th[e]intent to ſearche ye region and maners of the people. And thus they went with them into ye deſertes, wher they came to a low cotage couered with wylde beaſtes ſkinnes, hauing in it two manſions, in one of ye which were women and children and in the other only men. They interteined their geſtes after a barbaros and beaſtly maner, whiche neuertheles ſemed to them princelike: for they killed a beaſt, not much vnlike a wylde aſſe, whoſe fleſſhe (but halfe roſted) they ſet before our men, without any other kind of meate or drinke. Here were our men of neceſſitie conſtrained to lye al night vnder theſe ſkinnes, by reaſon of the great abundaunce of ſnowe and wynde. And when it was day, our men were very earneſt with them, and would in maner haue enforſed them to goe with them to the ſhippe: which thing thei perceauing, couered them ſelues from the head to the foote with certayn horrible beaſtes ſkinnes, and paynted theyr faces with ſundrye colours. Thus taking their bowes and arrowes, and bringing with them other of theyr companie, of much greater ſtature and terrible aſpect, then they were, they ſhewed them ſelues to oure men in araye, as thoughe they were ready to fight. But the Spanyardes, whiche thoughte that the matter would haue comen to hand ſtrokes, commaunded a piece of ordinaunce to be ſhotte of. The which although it dyd no hurte, yet theſe hardy giauntes, which a little before ſemed to be as bold as though they durſt haue made warre againſt Iupiter, were by the noyſe thereof put in ſuche feare, that they foorthwith beganne to entreate for peace. Our men entended to haue brought ſome of theſe Gyauntes wyth them into Spayne for the ſtraungenes of the thinge: but they all eſcaped oute of theyr handes. *Magellanus* therfore vnderſtandinge that it were vnprofytable to tarie there any longer, and that alſo the ſea was very rough, and the wether ſtormie and boyſte[r]ous, and that furthermore the firme lande extended further toward the ſouth, in ſo muche, that the further they ſayled that waye, they ſhould fynde it ſo much ye colder, he deferred hys proceding vnto [in?] the moneth of may, at whiche tyme, ye ſharpenes of winter, exceadeth with them, when as with vs, ſommer is begon. He found there greate plentie of wood. The ſea alſo miniſtred vnto them great abundaunce of ſhelfiſhe, beſyde other fyſhes of ſundrie kyndes. He found lykewyſe many ſpringes of freſhe and holeſome waters: and vſed huntinge and taking of foules. Only bread and wyne, was lackinge in the ſhippe. The ſouth pole was there eleuated fortie degrees.

Cotages couered with beastes skinnes.

Onager.

Abundaunce of snowe and wynde

The Giauntes are putte to flyght.

Extreme winter in maye.

The south pole eleuate.xl. degrees

¶ *How* Magellanus *by a ſtraygh̄t or narrow arme of the ſea, ſayled by the weſt into the Eaſt to dyuers Ilandes: where alſo he was ſlayne.*

THe wynter now being paſt, the. xxiiij. day of Auguſte, *Magellanus* departed from the place aforeſayde, and ſtyll folowed the tracte of the firme land toward the ſouth, vntyl at the length, the. xxvi. day of Nouember, he found in that firme land, certayn open places lyke vnto ſtrayghtes or narrow ſeas. Into the which entring with his nauie, he commaunded that certayn ſhippes ſhould ſearche the goulfes on euerye ſyde, yf anye way or paſſage might be found into the Eaſt. At the length, they found a certayn depe ſtraight, by the which they were perſwaded yat there was enteraunce into ſome other mayne ſea, inſomuch that *Magellanus* attempted to ſearche ye ſame. This ſtraight was found to be ſomtime of ye bredth of thre Italian myles, ſometyme of two, and ſometime of tenne, and reached ſomwhat toward the Weſt. The altitude or eleuacion of the ſouth pole in this place, was founde to be. lii. degrees. They coulde ſee no people ſtering in the coſtes of this entraunce Therfore *Magellanus* ſeing thys lande to be rough and ſaluage, and vnpleaſaunt to abide in, by reaſon of extreme cold, he thought it not worthye the trauayle, to ſpend any time in ſerching the ſame. Therfore ſailing forward in his viage thus attempted by ye ſaid ſtrayghte, (which is now called the ſtrayght of *Magellanus*) he was therby brought into another mayn ſea, verye greate and large. The length of this ſtrayght or narrow ſea, is eſtemed to be a hundreth ſpaniſhe miles. The land which he had on his right hande, he doubted not to be mayne lande: and that on the left hand, he ſuppoſed to bee Ilandes. *Magellanus* ſawe lykewyſe the ſyrme lande to be extended directly toward ye North: wherefore letting paſſe that great lande, he ſayled by that greate and large ſea betwene the Weſt and the North: and that for this intente, that at the length he might by the Weſt come into the Eaſt, and agayne vnder the burning lyne called *Zona Torrida*, beynge well aſſured that the Ilandes of *Molucca* (which he ſoughte) were in the Eaſte, and not farre from the *Equinoctial* lyne. When they hadde thus ſayled fortie dayes, and came now agayne vnder the line or circle called *Tropicus Capricorni*, they founde two lyttle Ilandes inhabyted, but very barren, and therfore called them infortunate Ilandes. Departinge from thence they ſailed on for a great ſpace, and found a certayne Ilande which ye inhabitantes called

The strayght of *Magellanus*.

The altitude of the south pole. lii. degrees.

The main sea beyond the strayghtes.

The fyrme land.

The burning line *Torrida Zona*.

The Ilandes of *Molucca*

Tropicus capricorni.

The Iland of *Inuagana.*
The Ilandes of *Gades* called Cales Males.
Archipellagus.
Acatan.
Selani.

Massana.
Subuth.

Bread of the trunke of trees.
Drinke of the dropping of date trees.
Golde and Ginger

Magellanus is slayne.

The new captaine *Serranus* is betraied of his bondman.

The king of *Subuth* conspyreth agaynst the Spanyardes.

The captayne Serranus is taken prisoner.

The Ilandes of *Gibeth* and *Porne.*
Siloli.

Peace and Idlenes.

Bread of Rice

Camphire

Inuaganà, where ye eleuacion of the Northe pole, (called pole Artike) was. xij. degrees: And the length from the Ilandes called *Gades*, by the Weſte, was iudged to bee. c.lviii. [one hundred and fifty-eight] degrees. Thus proceding, they ſaw dyuers other Ilandes, and that ſo manye, that they ſuppoſed they had been brought into a great ſea lyke vnto that called *Archipelagus*, where with ſygnes and poyntinges (as the dumme are wont to ſpeake with the dumme) they aſked of theſe Indians, the names of the Ilandes, whereby they learned that thei were in *Acatan*, and not farre from the Ilande called *Selani*, wel inhabited and repleniſhed with abundaunce of al thinges neceſſarie for the commodities of this life. Sayling therfore toward the Ilande of *Selani*, thei were with a contrary wind drieuen on the Iland of *Maſſana*, from whenſe they came to the greate Iland of *Subuth*, where ye Spanyardes were wel enterteyned of the Kinge of the Iland, who brought them into a certayn cotage, and ſet before them ſuch delicates as he hadde. Theyr bread, was of the trunke of a certen tree, cut in pieces, and fried with oyle. Theyr drinke was of the humoure or ioyſe which droppeth out of the braunches of the date trees, when they are cutte. Theyr meate was ſuche as they toke by foulinge, with ſuch fruites as the contrei brought forth. This Ilande was very riche of gold and ginger. In theſe partes *Magellanus* made warre agaynſte the inhabitauntes of certayne other Ilandes: In whiche conflicte, the ſpaniardes hauing the ouerthrow *Magellanus* was ſlayne with ſeuen of hys men. When the Spaniardes hadde thus loſt theyr captayne, they elected a new gouernoure of theyr nacie, appointing one *Iohannes Serranus* to that office. *Magellanus* had alſo a bondman borne in the Ilandes of *Molucca*, whom he had bought in the citie of *Malaccha*. This bondman vnderſtode the Spaniſhe tonge: and where as the captayn *Serranus* could do nothing without him, who now lay ſicke by reaſon of the woundes which he had receaued in the ſaid conflicte, ſo that he was fayne to ſpeake ſharpely to him and threaten to beate him or he could geat him out of the ſhyppe, he here vpon conceaued ſo great hatered and indignacion agaynſte the Spanyardes, that he wente immediately to the Kinge of *Subuth*, declaring the couetouſnes of the Spaniardes to be vnſaciable, and yat thei wold ſhortely vſe crueltie againſt him alſo, and bring him into ſubiection and ſeruitude. The barbarous king beleued his wordes, and therwith pryuelye with the ayde of the other Ilandes, conſpired againſt the Spanyardes, and toke or ſlew as many of them as came to a banket whereunto they were bidden vnder pretence of frendſhip. Among the which alſo, Serranus the Captaine was taken prieſoner. But the reſydue of the Spanyardes which remayned in the ſhippes, beyng taught and warned by the euyll chaunce which befell to theyr companions, and fearing greater deceytes and conſpiracies, lyft vp their ankers and gaue wind to their ſayles. In the meane tyme was Serranus brought bound to the ſea bankes, deſiring his companions to delyuer or redeme him from that horrible captiuitie of hys enemies. But the Spaniardes, albeit they toke it for a diſhonour, to leaue or forſake theyr Captayne, yet fearing fraude or further diſſimulacion, they ſayled aſyde from that Iland, and came to the Ilandes of *Gibeth* and *Porne.* In this mayne ſea, were two great Ilandes, wherof the one was called *Siloli*, and the other *Porne* the leſſe, where our men were wel entreated. The inhabitantes of *Porne* honoure the ſunne and the mone: they keepe alſo a certayn ciuile iuſtice and frendly loue one to another. And aboue all thinges, deſyre peace and ydlenes. Therfore their chiefe ſtudie is, in no caſe to moleſte their neyghboures or ſtraungers, or to be iniurious to anye man. They haue lyttle houſes, made of earth and wood, and couered partely with rubbiſhe, and partly with ye bowes of date trees. They take as manye wyues as they are able to kepe. Theyr comon meat, is ſuch as they take by foulinge or fiſſhinge. They make bread of ryce: and drinke, of the liquor whiche droppeth from the braunches of date trees, cutte. Some vſe marchaundyſe in the Ilandes nere about them: ſome applie themſelues to huntinge and fyſſhing, and ſome to huſbandry. Theyr apparell, is of Goſſampine cotton. They haue greate abundaunce of camphyre, ginger and cinomome.

¶ *How the Spaniardes came to the Ilandes of* Molucca, *and of the people with great hanging eares.*

Pearles as bigge as turtle doues egges.

A marueious big ſhelfiſhe

Gilona.
Men with hanging eares.

THe Spaniardes takinge theyr leaue of the king of *Porne*, departed: dyrecting theyr viage towarde the Ilandes of *Molucca*, whiche were ſhewed vnto them by the ſame King. They came fyrſt to the coſtes of the Ilande called *Solo*, where are found Pearles as bygge as turtle doues egges: but they are gathered in the depth of the ſea. The inhabitantes of this Ilande, at ſuche tyme as the Spanyardes came thether, toke a ſhelfyſſhe of ſuche houdge bignes yat the fleſhe therof wayed. xlvij. pound weyght. Wherby it is apparaunt yat great pearles ſhould be found there foraſmuch as pearles are the byrth of certayn ſhelfiſhes. From hence thei came to the Iland of *Gilona*, in which are certayn people hauing hanging eares of ſuch length, that they hang downe to theyr ſhoulders. Wherat as the Spaniardes marueyled, the men

of the Iland tolde them, that not farre from thence was another Iland in which were a kind of men, not onely with hanging eares, but alſo with eares of ſuche breadth and length, that with one of them they myghte couer theyr hole head. But the Spanyardes, who ſoughte for gold and ſpyces, and not for monſters, ſayled dyrectly to the Ilandes of *Molucca*, where they arryued, the eyghte moneth after the death of their gouernour *Magellanus*. Theſe Ilandes are fyue in noumbre, the names wherof are theſe *Tharant*, *Muthil*, *Thedori*, *Mare*, and *Mathien*. Some of them are ſytuate on thys ſyde the *Equinoctiall* lyne, ſome vnder it, and ſome beyonde it. Some beare cloues, ſome Nutmegges, and ſome Cinomome. They are not farre diſtaunt the one from the other. They are but little and narowe. The inhabitantes are very poore, becauſe ther is no encreaſe of anye other thinge ſauing onely of ſpyces. They lyue with bread and fyſhe, and ſometime popingiayes. They lurke in lowe cotages: And in fyne, all thinges with them are deſpicable and vile, beſide peace, idlenes, and ſpyces. In *Thedori* is great plentie of cloues, as alſo in *Tarante* and *Mathien*. The trees which bringe forth cloues, growe not, but on rockes and broken cliffes, which ſometime they grow ſo thicke, that they appeare lyke a lyttle woode or groue. This tree, bothe in leaues, biggenes, and heyght, is much lyke vnto the baye tree. It beareth the fruite in ye toppes of euery braunche. The budde ſpringeth out fyrſt, and then in it the floure, not much vnlike the floure of an orange tree. The cloue is fyrſt redde: but after beyng ſcorched by the heate of the ſonne, it is made blacke. The inhabitauntes deuide the groues of theſe trees betwene them, as we doe the vynes. The Iland of *Muthil*, bringeth forth cinomome. This tree, is ful of ſmall braunches and baren, beſt lyking in a drye ſoyle, and is very like vnto the tree, that beareth the pomgranate. The barke of this tree, by reaſon of the great heate of the ſonne, ryſing from the braunches, or bodie of the ſame, is gathered and dried at the ſonne, and is ſo made perfecte cinomome. Neare vnto this, is another Iland, called *Beda*, greater and larger, then anye of the Ilandes of *Molucca*. In this Iland groweth the Nutmegge, whoſe tree is bigge and highe, and much lyke vnto the walnutte tree, for as is the walnutte, ſo is this fruite defended with a double couering, as fyrſte with a grene huſke, vnder the whiche is a thinne ſkinne or rimme like a nette, encompaſſing the ſhell of the nutte: which ſkinne we call the flowre of the nutmegge, but of the Spanyardes, it is called mace, an excellent and holeſome ſpyce. The other couering, is the ſhell of the nutte, within the which is the fruite it ſelfe, which we call ye nutmegge. Ginger groweth here and there in all the Ilandes of this *Archipelagus*, or mayne ſea. Of the whiche, ſome is ſowen, and ſome groweth of it ſelfe. But that which is ſowen, is the better. The herbe of this, is lyke vnto that which beareth ſaffrane and hath hys roote, (which is Ginger,) much lyke vnto the ſame. In this meane time came two other ſhyppes out of Spayne: whereof the one ſayled directely to the poynte of *Aphrica*, called *Promontorium bonæ ſpei*: And the other by the greate mayne South ſea, to the coaſtes of that continent or fyrme land whereof we haue ſpoken here beefore. It ſhall ſuffyſe that we haue hetherto declared of the nauigacions whiche the Spanyardes attempted by the Weſte to ſayle into the Eaſte, by the ſtrayghte of *Magellanus*, where the paſſage by Sea is open into the Eaſte, by the continente or fyrme lande of the newe worlde, called *America*. Nowe therefore lette vs retourne to the other Nauigacions of *Columbus*, otherwyſe called the Admyrall, who longe beefore was the fyrſt fynder of the newe Ilandes, and of the ſayde mayne or fyrme land, and yet founde not that ſtrayght or narow ſea, by the which *Magellanus* ſayled from the Weſt into the Eaſt.

The ſpanyardes arriue at the Ilandes of *Molucca*.

The tree that beareth cloues.

The cinomone tree.

The nutmeg tree

Mace.
The nutmegge.
Ginger

Promontorium bonæ ſpei

Columbus the admyral, first finder of the new Ilandes

¶ *The thyrde nauigacion of* Chriſtophorus Columbus.

IN the yeare of Chriſt. 1498. *Columbus* the Admyral departed from Spayne with eyght foiſtes, and arryued fyrſt at the Ilandes of *Medera*, where he deuyded hys nauie into two partes. For. v. of theſe ſhippes he directed to the Iland of *Hiſpana*: and with the reſidue, he ſailed towarde the ſouth, entendinge to paſſe ouer the *Æquinoctial* line, and from thenſe to turne towarde the Weſte, to ſearche ſuche landes as were hetherto vnknowen to the Chriſtian men. Coming therfore to *Caput ueride*, he ſailed to the burning line, called *Torrida zona* where he found ſo great heate, that he was in daunger of death: but returninge his ſhyppes towarde the Weſt, he found a more holeſome ayre and (as God woulde) came at the length to a lande well inhabyted, where there came agaynſt him and his, a bote with. xxiiij. young men, armed with bowes, arrowes, and ſhieldes, couering only theyr priuie members with a clothe of Goſſampine cotton, hauing alſo very longe heare. The admirall, (as well as he could by ſignes) allured them to communicacion. But they truſted not our men, fearing ſome deceate. The Admirall perceauing that he could nought preuayle, by ſignes and tokens, he determined with Muſical inſtrumentes to appeaſe their wildneſſe. As the minſtrelles therefore blewe theyr ſhaulmes, the barbarous people drew neare, ſuſpecting that noyſe to bee a token of warre, whereupon they made ready theyr bowes and arrowes. But the Spaniardes drawinge nearer vnto them, caſte certayne apparell into theyr

The Ilandes of *Medera*
Hiſpana or *Hiſpaniola*

Greate heate vnder the burning lyne.

Signes and pointing

The faire region of *Parias*.
Gold and Pearles

Fearse beastes.
Canibales

The Spanyardes refuse to obey the admiral.

bote, willing by this token of frendſhippe to concile them, although all were in vayne. For they fled all awaye. Wherefore the Admyrall departing from thence, came to a region called *Parias*, wel inhabited and ful of ciuile people, declaring muche humanitie toward ſtraungers. They ſhewed our men Pearles and Gold, and ſuch other riches, deſyring them to come a land, where they gentelly entreated them. When our men aſked them where they had ſuche plentie of golde: they (with home poynting was in the ſtede of ſpeech) declared by ſignes and tokens, that thei had it in certayne mountaines, and that thei could not without great daunger reſort thether, by reaſon of certaine fearſe beaſtes in thoſe partes, and alſo becauſe of the cruell people called *Canibales*, whiche inhabite thoſe mountaynes. But the Admiral, becauſe his wheate fayled, was enforſed to departe thence. Dyrectinge therfore his viage toward ye North eaſte, he came to the Iland of *Hiſpana*, where he found all thinges confounded and out of ordre. For the Spanyardes which were lefte in the Ilandes, refuſed to obeye the Admirall and his brother, mouinge greuous complayntes agaynſte them before the King of Spaine, and at the length ſente them thether bound.

¶ *Howe* Petrus Alonſus *ſoughte newe Ilandes.*

Parias
Curtana.
Pearles for belles and nedles.
Peacockes.
Phesantes.
The Region of *Canchietes.*
The region of *Ciniana*
Pearles

AFter that the Admyrall hadde incurred the indignacion of the Kynge, manye of his companions, ſuche as hadde been broughte vppe with him, and were experte Sea menne, decreede to ſearche other partes of the worlde yet vnknowen. Among which number was *Petrus Alonſus*, who with a ſhippe wel furniſhed, ſayled to *Parias*, and from thence to *Curtana*, where he begon to exercyſe merchaundiſe with the inhabitantes, receauinge Pearles for belles and nedles. Entring alſo into the land, he was honourably entertayned. In their woodes, he ſaw innumerable Peacockes, nothinge vnlyke vnto oures, ſauing that the males differ litle from the females. In this region are great plentie of Phefantes. *Alonſus* departinge from henſe, ſailed to the region of *Canchietes*, beynge ſixe dayes ſayling from *Curtana*, toward the Weſt. In this region is great abundaunce of golde, Popingiayes, Goſſampine cotton, and moſte temperate ayre. From hence he ſayled into another fruiteful region, but inhabited with wilde menne, which could by no gentilnes be allured to frendſhippe. Departinge therefore from thence, he came to the region of *Ciniana*, whereas pearles are found in great plentie: but before he came there, he chaunced to come amonge the *Canibales*: agaynſt whom, diſchargeing a piece of ordinaunce, he droue them eaſely to flight. But *Alonſus* laden with pearles, returned home into Spayne.

¶ *Howe* Pinzonus, *companion to the Admirall, ſought newe Ilandes.*

Naked people.
Gold for belles.

A conflict betwene the wild men and the Spanyardes
The Region of *Payra.*
Woodes of Sanders.
The tree yat beareth *Caſſia fiſtula.*
A monsterous beast.

Incentius, otherwiſe called *Pinzonus* in the yeare of Chriſte. 1499. prepared foure brigantines, and ſailed fyrſt to the Ilandes of *Canaria*, and from thence to *Caput ueride.* From whence directinge his viage toward the ſouth farre beyonde the *Equinoctial* lyne, he found men in a certayne Iland, but ſuch as he could by no meanes concyle vnto him. Therefore leauinge them, he came to another lande, in whiche were innumerable naked people, diſſimuling that thei deſired to ioyne frendſhip with the Spaniardes. And whereas one of our men caſte a bell amonge them oute of the ſhippe, they againe caſt to the Spanyardes a maſſe or piece of golde: which, one of oure companye ſomewhat to bolde, attemptinge to take vp, they ſodeynlye toke him and caried him awaye with merueylous ſwiftenes: but our men leauing their ſhippes, made haſt to help their fellowe, in ſo muche that the matter came to handſtrokes. This conflict was ſo ſharpe, that our men hadde much a doe to eſcape wyth theyr lyues, by reaſon of the fearſenes of the barbarians. Departing therefore from thence, they ſayled toward the Northeaſte, and came to the region of *Payra*, and to the Ilandes neare aboute the ſame in the whiche are woodes of ſanders wherewith the marchauntes lade theyr ſhippes, and carie it into other countreys. In this Region alſo growe the trees, whiche beare *Caſsia fiſtula* of the beſte kynd. There is alſo founde a foure ſoted beaſt of monſtrous ſhape, whoſe former parte is lyke vnto a wolfe, ſauing that the feete are lyke vnto the fete of a man, with eares like an owle: Hauinge alſo beneath his comon belye, an other belye lyke vnto a purſe or bagge, in which he kepeth his yonge whelpes ſo longe, vntyll they be able ſafely to wander abrode alone, and to geat theyr meate withoute the helpe of theyr parents. The whelpes while they are very yong, neuer come out of this bagge but when they ſucke. This portentous beaſt with her three whelpes, was broughte to Ciuile in Spaine, and from thence to *Granata.*

¶ *Of the foure nauigacions of* Americus Veſputius *to the newe Ilandes.*

AMericus *Veſputius*, beyng ſent with *Chriſtophorus Columbus*, in the yeare of Chriſt. M.cccc.xcij. at the commaundement of Ferdinando King of Caſtile, to ſeke vnknowen landes, and wel inſtructed in ſayling on the ſea, after a fewe yeares, ſet forward foure viages of hys owne proper charges. That is to witte, two vnder the ſayd King Ferdinando, and two other vnder Emanuel, king of Portugale, of the which he himſelfe wryteth after this maner.

Ferdinando kinge of castile.

¶ *The fyrſte viage of* Americus Veſputius.

IN the yere of Chriſt, M.cccc.xcvij. the. xx. daye of Maye, we came with foure ſhippes, to the fortunate Ilandes, called *Inſulæ fortunatæ*, where the North pole hath his eleuacion. xxvij. degrees, and. xl. minutes. And from thence within the ſpace of. xxvij. dayes, we came to a land more Weſtwarde then the fortunate Ilandes, where the North pole was eleuate. xvi. degrees: where alſo we founde a nacion of naked people, of innumerable multitude, whiche as ſone as they ſawe vs, fled to the next mountayne. From hence within two dayes ſayling, we came to a ſafe port wher we founde manye men, which with much adoe, we could ſcarcely allure to communicacion, although we profered them belles, lokinge glaſſes, criſtallyne cuppes, and ſuche other iewelles. But at the length perceauing our good wyll and liberalitie towarde them, they came to vs by heapes, and ioyned frendſhyp with vs without all feare. They goe all as naked as they came forth of their mothers wombe. They ſuffre no heare on their bodie ſauing only on theyr head, in ſo much that they pul o[f]ye heares of their browes. They are all ſo perfectelye exercyſed in ſwimminge, that they can continue therein, for the ſpace of two leages without any thinge to beare them vp and eſpeciallye the women. Theyr weapons are bowes and arrowes. They arme theyr arrowes with ye teeth of beaſtes and fyſhes, bycauſe they lacke Iron and other metals. They kepe warre againſt their borderers whiche are of ſtraunge language. They fyght not for the enlargeing of theyr dominion, foraſmuche as they haue no Magiſtrates: nor yet for th[e]increaſe of riches, becauſe thei are contente with their owne commodities: but onely to reuenge the death of theyr prediceſſours. At theyr meate, they vſe rude and barberous faſhions, lying on the ground without any table clothe, or couerlet. They ſlepe in certayne greate nettes made of Goſſampine cotton and hanged a lofte in the ayre beetwene trees. Theyr bodies are verye ſmothe and clene by reaſon of theyr often waſhinge. They are in other thinges fylthy and withoute ſhame. Thei vſe no lawful coniunction of mariage, but euery one hath as many women as him liſteth, and leaueth them agayn at his pleaſure The women are very fruiteful, and refuſe no laboure al the whyle they are with childe. They trauayle in maner withoute payne, ſo that the nexte day they are cherefull and able to walke. Neyther haue they theyr bellies wrimpeled, or looſe, and hanginge pappes, by reaſon of bearinge manye children. Theyr houſes and cabbens, are all in common. Theyr houſes are faſhyoned lyke vnto belles: are made of greate trees faſtened together, couered wyth the leaues of date trees, and made very ſtronge againſt wind and tempeſtes. They are alſo in ſome places ſo great, that in one of them ſixe hundreth perſons may lodge. Thei vſe euery ſeuenth or eyght yeare, to remoue and chaunge theyr dwelling places, becauſe that by theyr longe continuaunce in one place, the ayre ſhoulde bee infected. They vſe no kynd of marchaundiſe or bying and ſelling, beyng content onely with that which nature hath leſte them. As for Golde, Pearles, precious ſtones, iewelles, and ſuche other thinges, which we in Europa eſteme as pleaſures and delicates, they ſette noughte by. They haue no kynde of corne. Theyr common fedinge, is a certayne roote whiche they drye and beate and make floure or meale therof. They eate no kynd of fleſhe except mans fleſhe: for they eate all ſuche as they kyll in theyr warres, or o[t]herwiſe take by chaunce When we had thus vewed the countreye, and conſydered the maners of the people, we determyned to ſayle further, downe by the landes ſyde, and came after a few daies, to a certayn hauen, where we ſawe about twentie greate houſes, rayſed vppe muche after the faſhion of belles. There came vnto vs a great multitude of men vnder pretenſe of frendeſhip. Some ſwimminge, and ſome in botes. Who, as ſone as thei drew neare vnto vs, ſodeynly bent theyr bowes againſt vs, where we defended oure ſelues manfully. In this bickeringe, we ſlewe of them about twentie, beeſyde manye that were wounded: But of our men, were onlye ſyue hurte, whiche were all perfectelye healed. Thus departinge from this hauen, we ſayled on, and came to another nacion, in conuerſacion and tongue vtterlye differing from the fyrſt. For

Insulæ fortunatæ

Naked menne.

Wylde men allured with gentlenes

People expert in swimminge.

Cabens hanging betweene trees.

Women in commen.

Women very stronge and fruitful.

Houses made of trees.

Houses of maruelous bignes.

Ryches and superfluites contemned

Bread of a certain roote.

Mans flesh eaten

A conflict

A gentle nacion *Parias.*

Fruites vnlike vnto oures.

Gold everywhere,

Canibales.

comming oute of our ſhippe, we were very frendly entreated of them, where we continued for the ſpace of nyne dayes. This region is verye fayre, and fruitefull, hauinge manye pleaſaunt woodes, which continue grene all the yeare longe. They haue fruites innumerable, vtterlye vnlyke vnto oures. The Region is ſituate dyrectelye vnder the lyne, called *Tropicus Calieri.* The inhabitantes them ſelues, call it *Parias.* Saylinge farre beyond this Region, and ouerpaſſinge manye countreyes and nacions, fyndinge Gold euery where, (but in no great quantitie) we came to another nacion full of gentleneſſe and humanitie, where we reſted. xxxvij. dayes. Theſe people made greuous complaynte vnto vs, that there was not farre from them, a certayne fearſe and cruell nacion, whiche vexed them ſore, and made incurſion into theyr countreye at a certayne tyme of the yeare, kyllinge them and violentlye carying them awaye, to th[e]intent to eate them, in ſo muche that they were not able to defend them ſelues againſte theyr fearſeneſſe. Whiche thinge when they hadde ſo lamentablye declared vnto vs, and we hadde made them promyſe that we woulde reuenge theyr ſo manye iniuries, they ioyned vnto oure company ſeuen of theyr men. Thus we wente forward: and after ſeuen dayes, came to an Ilande, called *Ity*: where theſe fearſe people dwelte. Who, as ſone as they hadde eſpyed vs, came armed agaynſte vs. We ioyned with them in battaile, which contynued for the ſpace of twoo houres. At the length we droue them to flyghte and ſlewe and wounded a greate numbre of them, and toke. xxv. captiues. But of our men was onely one ſlayne, and. xxi. wounded, and ſhortely after reſtored to health. We gaue to thoſe ſeuen men which went with vs, thre menne of oure priſouners and foure women, whom with greate reioyſinge they caried with them into theyr countreye: and we returninge home toward Spaine, with many captiues came fyrſte to a porte of Spayne called *Calicium*, where we ſolde oure prieſoners, and were ioyefullye receaued: In the yeare of Chriſt. M.cccc.xcix. the. xv. daye of Octobre.

An expedicion agaynst ye *Canibales*

¶ *The ſeconde viage of* Veſputius.

The *Equinoctial* line.

IN the moneth of May folowing *Veſputius* attempted another viage and came by Ilandes of Canaria, euen vnto the burninge lyne, called *Torrida zona*, and founde a lande beeyonde the *Equinoctial* line, toward the South, where the South pole is eleuate fyue degrees. And wheras he coulde fynde no apte enteraunce into the land, and ſayled vp and down alonge by the ſame, he eſpyed a bote in which was aboute twentie men: who, as ſone as they ſaw the Spanyardes, lepte into the Sea and eſcaped all, excepte two, which they toke. In theyr bote which they forſoke, were founde foure young men which they had by force taken oute of another countrey, hauinge theyr priuie members newelye cutte of. Theſe, *Veſputius* toke into his ſhippes and learned by theyr ſignes and tokens, that they hadde been taken of the *Canibales*, and ſhould ſhortly haue been eaten. But departinge from theſe coſtes, and ſaylinge on forward, they came to a commodious hauen, where they founde muche people, with whom they ioyned frendſhyp, and fell to chaungeinge of ware, receauinge for one bell, fyue hundreth Pearles. In this lande they drinke a certayne kynde of wyne, made of the iuyſe of fruites and ſedes, being lyke whyte and redde ſydar. Departinge from hence, and ſaylinge yet further, they founde a certayne Ilande in which was a beaſtly kind of people, and ſimple, yet very gentle. In this Ilande is no freſhe water: but they gather the dew which in the night ſeaſon falleth vpon certayne leaues muche lyke vnto the eare of an Aſſe. They lyue for the moſte parte, by ſea fiſhe. They haue no cotages or houſes: but haue certayne broade leaues, wherewith they defende them ſelues from the heate of the Sunne, but not from ſhowres: but it is verye lykely, that it rayneth but lyttle in that Iland. *Veſputius* wyth his companye departinge from hence, ſayled vnto another Ilande: into the whiche when he hadde entered, he founde certayne cotages, and in them two old women, and three young wenches, whiche were of ſo greate ſtature, that they marueyled thereat. And whereas our menne ſtryued with them to bringe them to the ſhyppe, to th[e]intente to haue caryed them into Spayne, they eſpyed cominge toward them ſyxe and thyrtie men, yet of muche greater ſtature then were the women, bearing with them bowes, arrowes, and great ſtakes lyke vnto clubbes: at the ſyghte of whome, oure menne beinge afrayd, made haſte to theyr ſhyppes. But theſe Gyauntes folowinge them euen to the Seaſyde, bended theyr arrowes towardes the Spanyardes, vntyll they diſcharged two pieces of ordinaunces, wyth the horryble ſounde whereof, they were immediatly drieuen to flight. Oure menne therefore departinge from thence, called that Ilande, the Ilande of Giauntes. And came to another nacion, which frendlye entreated them, and offered them many Pearles: in ſo muche that they boughte. xix. markes weyghte of pearles, for a ſmal price. They gaue vs alſo certayne ſhelfyſhes, of the whiche ſome conteyned in them a hundreth and thyrtie Pearles, and ſome fewer. Departinge from thence they came to the Ilande of *Antiglia*, which *Columbus* had diſcouered a few yeares before. Leauinge this, they ſayled directely to *Calicium*, a porte of Spayne, where they were honourablye receaued.

Canibales

Fyue hundreth pearles for one bell.

Wine of the iuyse of frutes

An Iland wythout fresh water.

Broad leaues.

The land of Giauntes.

Pearles

A hundreth and xxx. pearles in one shelfishe.

Antiglia.

Calicium

¶ *The thyrde viage of* Veſputius.

Eſputius beyng called from Caſtile to ſerue Emanuel the King of Portugale, in the yeare of Chriſte. M. ccccc. ij. the tenth daye of May, departed from the hauen of liſburne, and ſayled downe by the coaſtes of the ſea Atlantike, vntil he came vnder the *Equinoctial* lyne. And the. xvij. daye of Auguſte, they arryued at a certayne lande where they found a kind of beaſtly people. This land is ſituate toward the South, fyue degrees beyonde the *Equinoctial* lyne. A greate multitude of the inhabitantes wer gathered together, and as wel as they coulde by ſignes and poyntinges, deſired oure men to come alande and to ſee theyr countrey. There were two in the ſhippe, which toke vpon them to vewe the lande, and learne what ſpyces and other commodities might be had therein. They were appoynted to returne within the ſpace of fiue daies at the vttermoſt. But when eyght dayes were now paſte, they whiche remayned in the ſhippes, heard yet nothing of theyr returne: wheras in the meane time great multitudes of other people of the ſame lande reſorted to the Sea ſyde, but could by no meanes be allured to communicacion. Yet at the length they broughte certayne women, which ſhewed them ſelues familier towarde the Spaniardes: Wherupon they ſent forth a young man, beyng very ſtrong and quicke, at whom as the women wondered, and ſtode gaſinge on him and feling his apparell: there came ſodeynly a woman downe from a mountayne, bringing with her ſecretely a great ſtake, with which ſhe gaue him ſuch a ſtroke behynde, that he fell dead on the earth. The other womenne foorthwith toke him by the legges, and drewe him to the mountayne, whyle in the mean tyme the men of the countreye came foorth with bowes and arrowes, and ſhot at oure men. But the Spaniardes diſchargeing foure pieces of ordinaunce agaynſt them, droue them to flighte. The women alſo which had ſlayne the yong man, cut him in pieces euen in the ſight of the Spaniardes, ſhewinge them the pieces, and roſting them at a greate fyre. The men alſo made certayn tokens. wherby they declared that not paſt. viii. daies before, they had in lyke maner ſerued other chriſtian men. Wherfore ye Spaniardes hauinge thus ſuſtayned ſo greuous iniuries vnreuenged, departed with euyl wil: ſayling therfore further toward ye ſouth, they found a nacion of great multitude, and of much genteler condicions, with whom thei remained. viij. dayes, bartering and changeing ware with them. Sayling on yet farther, they went beyond ye line called *Tropicus Capricorni*, where the ſouth pole is eleuate. 32. degrees: and wheras in thoſe parts thei found no great riches, they failed yet further ſouthward vntill ye pole was eleuate. lij. degrees: where thei came into ſuch a tempeſte, that they were enforſed to gather vppe theyr ſayles, and to rowe only with the maſte, directinge theyr viage toward the coſtes of Ethiopia, from whence they returned againe to Liſburne in Portugale.

The ſea Atlantike.

Three of the Spanyardes ſlayne and eaten.

Fearſe and cruele women.

A ciuile people.

The ſouth pole eleuate. lij. degrees.

Lisburne.

¶ *The fourth viage of* Veſputius.

This nauigation was attempted in the yeare of Chriſt. M. ccccc. iij. but was not brought to the ende hoped for, by reaſon of a miſſortune which chaunced in the goulfe of the ſea Atlantike. *Veſputius* entended in this viage to ſayle to the Ilande of *Melcha*, beyng in the Eaſt, in which is ſayde to be great ryches, and the ſtacion of reſtinge place of all ſhippes comming from the goulfe *Gangeticus*, and from the Indian Sea. This *Melcha*, is ſituate more toward the Weſt, and *Calicut* more enclininge towarde the ſouth. *Veſputius* came fyrſt to ye grene Ilandes, called *Inſulæ ueride:* and ſayled from them to *Serraliona*, beynge in the Southe partes of Ethiopia: from whence, ſaylinge on yet further, he ſawe in the middeſt of the ſea an Iland, high and merueylous: where alſo the M[aſter]. Pilate of this nauie, loſt his ſhippe by running vpon a rocke: but all the mariners eſcaped. This ſhippe was of thre hundreth tunne, and had in it al the power of the nauie. When *Veſputius* had entered into the Iland, he found it rude and vnhabited: yet was it full of byrdes: but had no beaſtes except Liſertes with forked tayles, and Serpentes. Thus makinge prouiſion for neceſſaries, he was enforced to returne to portugale, failing of his purpoſe.

The Iland of *melcha.*

Calicut.

Insulæ ueri ides

A ſhippe wracke.

Liſertes and Serpents

¶ *How the king of Portugale ſubdued certayn places in India: and of the ryche Cytie of* Malacha.

The Portugales bild fortes in the Easte partes.

Alphonsus

Aurea chersonesus.

The great and ryche cytie of *Malacha*

Saracens.

Malacha besieged

The king fighteth on an elephant.

Plenty of copper.

Marchaunts.

Spyces.

The cytie of Goa.

The Ambassadors make a league wyth *Alphonsus*

The west Ilandes

Cuba.

Iucatana.

Cozumel or *Sancta Crux.*

Hispana.

Suger presses.

The wood called *Guaiacum.*

TOraſmuche as therefore in the yeares folowinge, there were more often nauigacions made from the Weſt by the ſouth into the Eaſt, and the Portugales had now founde a ſafe paſſage by ye ſea, they thought it expedient for theyr better ſaftetie, to make certaine fortifications and places of refuge in the Eaſte. The which theyr intent the better to accompliſhe, King Emanuel appoynted one *Alphonſus* an experte man on the ſea, to be captayne of this viage. Who, deſyring to reuenge the loſſes and iniuries which the Portugales had before ſuſtained, ſayled directly to *Aurea Cherſoneſus*, now called *Malacha*, a merueylous great and riche citie, whoſe king is an infydel of the ſecte of the Moores: for euen thus farre was the ſecte of Mahumet extended. *Alphonſus* therfore at his coming thether, beſieged the cytie, and made warre agaynſt the Saracens whiche helde the ſame. In this conflict a greate noumber of theyr enemies beynge ſlayne, the Portugales entred into the citie by forſe and kept the ſame, permitting free libertie to theyr ſouldiers to ſpoyle, kyll, and burne. The king himſelfe, fyghting vpon an Elephante, and beyng ſore wounded, fledde with the reſydue of his companye. A greate numbre of the Moores were ſlaine with the loſſe of a fewe Portugales: manye were taken, and great ſpoyle caried awaye, in the whiche were ſeuen Elephantes, and all kyndes of ordinaunces perteyning to the warres, made of copper, to the noumbre of two thouſande pieces. The cytye beinge thus taken and ſacked, and the enemyes drieuen to flyghte, *Alphonſus* the Capitayne the better to prouyde for the ſauegarde of the Chriſtians, buylded a ſtrong forte at the mouth or entraunce of the riuer which runneth through ye citie. At this time, that is to witte, in the yeare of Chriſt. M. ccccc. xij. there were in *Malacha* many ſtraungers and marchauntes of dyuerſe nacions, whereby the cytie was repleniſhed with great ryches and abundaunce of ſpyces. They of theyr owne mocion, deſyred to make a leage with *Alphonſus*, and were of him gently receaued: So that for theyr better ſafetie, he permitted them to dwell in the houſes neare about the forte. And by this meanes, this markette towne was reedified and broughte to muche better ſtate than euer it was before. Theſe thinges thus happely atchiued, and al thinges in *Malacha* ſet in good order, *Alphonſus* leauing in the forte a garriſon of. vi. hundreth valiante ſouldiours, returned into India, where he beſieged the chiefe caſtell of the cytie of *Goa*, which (he) a fewe yeares beefore, hadde with no ſmal daunger of our men, and great ſlaughter of their enemies, ſubdued vnder the dominion of Emanuel kynge of Portugale, and was now poſſeſſed of the mores, he manfully recouered agayne, and enforſed them to render vp the ſame. Alſo the ambaſſadours of the Kinge of *Narſinga*, the Kinge of *Cambaia*, and the King of *Groſapha* with the legates of dyuers other kinges and Princes, offered them ſelues to be at a leage wyth *Alphonſus*, and thereupon broughte theyr preſentes vnto hym. No leſſe power and dominion obtayned the king of Spayne in the Ilandes of the Weſte partes: In ſo muche that at his commaundement, were buylded ſixe townes in the Ilande of *Cuba*. Lykewyſe in the Ilande of *Iucatana*, was buylded a greate cytie wyth fayre houſes. The Ilande of *Cozumella*, the Spanyardes called *Sancta Crux*, beecauſe they came fyrſte thether in Maye, on the daye of the Inuencion of the Croſſe. In the Ilande of *Hiſpana* or *Hiſpaniola*, were erected. 28. ſuger preſſes, to preſſe ye ſugre whiche groweth plentifully in certaine canes or redes of the ſame countrey. From hence alſo is brought the wood of *Guaiacum*, otherwyſe called, *Lignum Sanctum*, wherewith dyuerſe diſeaſes are healed by the order of the newe dyete.

¶ *Of the Iland of* Medera, *and the fortunate Ilandes, otherwyſe called the Ilandes of* Canaria.

Medera or *Madera.*

Sawe milles.

Fayre tree

BEtwene Spaine and the Ilandes of *Canaria*, is the Ilande of *Medera*, which the Spaniardes in our time founde vnhabited and ſaluage. But perceauinge that the ſoyle thereof, was very fruiteſull, they burnt the woodes, and made the ground apt to bringe foorth corne, and buylded many houſes, and ſo tilled the ſame, that at this day is no where founde a more fruiteful lande. It hath in it many ſpringes of freſſhe water and goodly ryuers, vpon the which are bylded manye ſawe mylles, wherewith manye fayre trees, lyke vnto Ceder and Cypreſſe trees, are ſawed and cut in ſunder, whereof are made moſt fayre tables, coberdes, cofers, and chayres, and ſuch other curious workes made of wood. Theſe trees are of redde colour, and ſwete

ſauour, the bodies and braunches whereof are broughte into Spayne in great plentie. The Kynge of Portugale thought it goode to plante in this Iland, that kynde of redes in which ſuger groweth: wherein he was not deceaued in his opinion: For they growe there moſte fruitefully, and beare ſuger which excelleth the ſugre of Candye or *Sicilia*. There were alſo vynes broughte out of Candye and planted in this Ilande, where they proſper ſo wel, that for ye moſte parte they bring forth more grapes then leaues, and thoſe very great. In this Iland is alſo great plentie of Partriches, wyld doues, and Peacockes, wild bores, and diuers kindes of other beaſtes, which onely poſſeſſed the Iland before men dyd inhabite the ſame. Alſo the Ilandes called *Inſulæ fortunatæ*, (whiche are now called *Canaria*, for the multitude of dogges which are in them) are ſayd to be no leſſe fruytefull. Theſe Ilandes are tenne in noumbre, of the which ſeuen are inhabited, and thre remaine deſolate. They which are inhabited, are called by theſe names: *Fracta laucea*, *Magna ſors*, *Grancanaria*, *Teneriffa*, *Ginera*, *Palma*, and *Ferrum*. At *Columbus* firſt comming thether, the inhabitantes went naked, without ſhame, religion, or knowledge of God. But in ſucceſſe of time, foure of the greateſt Ilandes embraſed the Chriſtian faith: They haue eche of them a priuate language. *Teneriffa* and *Grancanaria*, are bigger then the other. *Teneriffa* may be ſene afarre of, to the diſtaunce of fiftie leages, in a fayre and clere daye. The reaſon whereof is, that in the middeſt of the Iland, ryſeth a marueylous great and ſtrong rock, which is thought to be. xv. leages high, and caſteth foorth continuallye greate flames of fyre and pieces of brimſtone, as doth the mount *Etna* in the Iland of *Sicilia*. The people of theſe Ilandes, lyue with barlye bread, fleſſhe, and mylke. They haue alſo greate plentie of Goates, wylde Aſſes, and Fygges. They lacke wyne and wheate.

Suger

Vynes

The Ilandes of *Canaria*.

Christians

A mount of burninge brimstone.

Fygges.

¶ *Whether vnder the* Æquinoctial *circle or burninge lyne (called* Torrida zona*) be habitable Regions.*

Libr. i. Capit. v.

Ius ſecundus (otherwiſe called *Eneas Siluius*,) of this queſtion, wryteth in this maner. It hath been muche doubted whether habitable regions maye be founde vnder the *Equinoctial* lyne. *Eratoſthenes* is of th[e]oppinion, that the ayre is there verye temperate. So thinketh *Polybius* alſo, affirming that the earth is there verye highe, and watered with many ſhowers. *Poſsidonius* ſuppoſed that there is no Mountaynes vnder the *Equinoctial*. Some thoughte that the *Equinoctial* lyne was extended beyond the earth ouer the mayne Ocean ſea: whiche thinge the Poete Homere ſemeth to inſinuate, where he ſaineth that the horſes which drawe the chariote of [the] ſunne, drinke of the Ocean ſea, and the ſunne it ſelfe to take his noriſhement of the ſame. Whiche ſentence *Macrobius* alſo foloweth. Neither was *Albertus Magnus* farre from this opinion, who ſuppoſeth yat the ſunne draweth vp ſo much moyſture vnder the *Equinoctial* circle, as engendreth the cloudes vnder the poles, where by reaſon of th[e]excedinge coldneſſe, ayre is continualli turned into water. But Ptolomeus thinketh the earth to bee extended beyonde the *Equinoctial*, whereas he placeth a part of the Iland of *Taprobana*, vnder the *Equinoctial*, and alſo many nacions of the *Ethiopians*. Many haue thought that th[e]earthly Paradyſe was ſette vnder that lyne: which opinion is contrary to th[e]auctoritie of the holy ſcripture which witneſſeth the two famous fluddes *Tigris* and *Euphrates* to ſpringe oute of Paradiſe: whiche neuertheleſſe we know from the North partes to fal into the goulfe called *Sinus Perſicus*: but as concerninge the heate vnder the *Equinoctial* lyne, the neareneſſe of the ſunne, or the directe beames of the ſame, are no ſufficiente cauſes why vnder that line ſhould be no habitable regions, if we conſider how thoſe places are otherwyſe ſhadowed, and tempered with the moyſtenes and dewes of the nightes, which are all the yeare throughe of equal length with the dayes. Yet wyl no man denye, but that vnder the *Equinoctial* throughoute all the burninge lyne there are manye wilderneſſes and deſolate places, lacking water, and incommodious for the lyfe of man: Albeit euen in *Ethiopia*, people dwell neare to the ryuers and woodes. Plinie alſo ſayth that one *Dalion*, and *Ariſtocleon*, and *Bion*, and *Baſilides*, went Southward beyonde *Meroæ* whiche is almoſte vnder the *Equinoctial*. And that *Simonides* who writte the deſcripcion of Ethiopia, dwelte fyue yeres in *Meroæ*: whiche Ilande, (beeynge in the fyrme lande and compaſſed aboute wyth the Ryuer of *Nilus*) he affyrmed to bee ſituate. 972. thouſande paſes beeyonde Syenes of Egypte, as the ſearchers of Nero declared. But at Sienes the Aſtronomers appoynte the ſommer conuerſion of the ſunne: and that there the burninge lyne beginneth, being diſtaunte from the *Æquinoctial* foure and twentie degrees, that is twelue thouſande furlonges. Wherby we maye perceaue that *Meroæ* is ſituate ſome what beeyonde the myddeſt betwene the Equinoctial and Sienes. Ptolomeus alſo deſcrybeth the Region of *Agiſimba* to bee inhabited beeyonde the *Equinoctial*. Lykewyſe the Mountaynes of the Mone, called Montes Luna, out of the which, the fennes or mariſes of the riuer *Nilus* haue their ſpring and originall. He addeth hereunto that there are certayne Ethiopians called *Anthropophagi*,

Eratosthenes.

Polibius.

Posidonius.

The *Equinoctial* line.

The poet Homere

Macrobius.

Albertus Magnus.

Ptolomeus.

Taprobana

Ethiopes

Tigris and *Euphrates.*

Sinus Persicus.

The nearenes of the sunne.

Temperatenes vnder the *Equinoctial.*

Torrida zona.

Ethiopa.

Plinie.

The Iland of *Meroæ*

Syenes in Egipte.

The conuersion of the sunne.

Of the furlonges of Italie viii. doe make one Italien myle, conteyning a. m. [thousand] pases.

Agisimba.

Montes Lunæ.

Paludes Nili.

Ethiopes

Anthropophagi. Habitable regions how farre extended. *Clima.*

that is, ſuch as eate mans fleſhe, which inhabite regions beyond the *Equinoctial* about the ſpace of. xvi. degrees. And thus the inhabitacion of men is found to be extended. x. hundreth thouſand paſes beyonde the *Equinoctial* lyne. Whiche ſpace conteyneth no leſſe then two clymes of earth. And a clyme is a porcion of the worlde betwene South and North, wherein is variacion in length of the daye, the ſpace of halfe an houre.

¶ Finis.

¶ *Thus endeth the fyfth boke of Sebaſtian Munſter, of the landes of Aſia the greater, and of the newe founde landes, and Ilandes.*

1553.

¶ *Imprinted at London, in Lombarde Strete, By Edward Sutton.*

¶ *To al aduenturers, and ſuche as take in hande greate enterpryſes.*

Who hath not of ſowrenes feſte the bitter taſt,
Is not worthy of ſwetenes to take his repaſt.
To cracke the nutte, he muſt take the payne,
The which would eate the carnell fayne.
Who that of bees feareth the ſtinge,
Shal neuer by hony haue great wonninge.
As the ſwete Roſe bringeth forth the thorne,
So is man truely to ioye and payne borne.
The byrde vpon hope byldeth her neſte,
Where oftentymes ſhe hath but euyll reſte,
Yet is ſhe not therby drieuen to ſuche feare,
But yat ſhe performeth the ſame the nexte yeare.
Much caſting of periles doth noble corage ſwage
Yet do not I commende raſhenes or outrage.
What foles do fable, take thou no hede at all,
For what they know not, they cal phantaſtical.
Nought venter nought haue, is a ſaying of old.
Better it is to blow the cole, then to fyt a cold.
Fortes fortuna adiuuat, the Latin prouerbe ſaith,
But fayleth to ſuch as faynt and lacke fayth.
God giueth al thinges, but not ye bul by ye horne
The plowman by trauaile encreaſeth his corne.
As fortune fauereth thou mayſt be riche or poore,
As *Creſus* or *Irus* that beggeth at the dore.

¶ *Omnis iacta ſit alea.*

[The Third English book on America.]

THE DECADES

of the newe worlde or west India,

Conteynyng the nauigations and conquestes of the Spanyardes, with the particular description of the moste ryche and large landes and Ilandes lately founde in the west Ocean perteynyng to the inheritaunce of the kinges of Spayne. In the which the diligent reader may not only consyder what commoditie may hereby chaunce to the hole christian worlde in tyme to come, but also learne many secretes touchynge the lande, the sea, and the starres, very necessarie to be knowē to al such as shal attempte any nauigations, or otherwise haue delite to beholde the strange and woonderfull woorkes of God and nature.

Wrytten in the Latine tonge by Peter Martyr of Angleria, and translated into Englysshe by Rychарde Eden.

LONDINI,
In ædibus Guilhelmi Powell,
ANNO. 1555.

¶ *The table of the contentes of this booke.*

Befyde the Decades (*the table of whofe contentes yow may reade in the ende of the bocke* [see pp. 391-397.]) *are conteyned furthermore in this boooke thefe thynges followynge.*

¶ Of the landes and Ilandes lately founde. . . Folio. 149. [*p.* 186.]
The popes bulle and donation . . . 167. and. 171. [*p.* 201.]
The hyſtorie of the Weſte Indies, wrytten by Gonzalus Ferdinandus. . . . . 174. [*p.* 208.]
The ordinarie nauigation from Spayne to the Weſte Indies. 175. [*p.* 210.]
Of two notable thynges as touchynge the Weſt Indies: and of the greate ryches brought from thenſe into Spaine. 176. [*p.* 211.]
Of the golde mines and maner of woorkynge in them. . 177. [*p.* 211.]
The maner of fyſſhynge for pearles. . . . . 180. [*p.* 213.]
The familiaritie that the Indians haue with the deuyl. . 181. [*p.* 215.]
Of temperate and habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall line. &c. . . . . 184. [*p.* 217.]
Of dyuers particular thynges, as woormes, ſerpentes, beaſtes, foules. &c. . . . . 185. [*p.* 218.]
Oftrees,fruites,and plantes,&c. 194.[*p.*225.] [Of Reedes or Canes. 196. *p.* 227.]
Of the venemous apples wherwith the Canibales inueneme theyrarrowes. 199.[*p.*229.] Of fyſſhes & theyr maner of fyſſhynge. 201. [*p.*230.]
Of the ryſynge and faulynge of owre Ocean ſea and the ſouth ſea called the ſea of Sur. . . . . 204. [*p.* 233.]
Of the ſtreight of lande beinge betwene the north and ſouth ſea. . . . . 205. [*p.* 234.]
Howe thynges of one kynde, dyffer by the nature of the place: and of the beaſtes cauled Tygers. . . . 206. [*p.* 235.]
Of the maners and cuſtomes of the Indians of the firme lande and of theyr women. . . . . 208. [*p.* 237.]
Of the Ilandes Hiſpaniola and Cuba. . . . . 210. [*p.* 239.]
Of the Ilande of Cuba and other. . . . . 213. [*p.* 241.]
Of the lande of Baccallaos. . . . . 213. [*p.* 242.]
Other notable thynges gathered owt of dyuers autours: and of the vniuerſall carde and newe worlde. . . 214. [*p.* 245.]
A diſcourſe of the maruelous vyage made by the Spanyardes rounde about the worlde. . . . . 215. [*p.* 246.]
The order of the ſtarres abowt the pole Antartike. . 222. [*p.* 253.]
The prices of precious ſtones and ſpices with their weightes and meaſures as they are ſoulde bothe of the Moores and Gentyles. . . . . 233. [*p.* 263.]
Of the weightes of Portugale and India, and howe they agree. 239. [*p.* 269.]
Of the dooues of the Ilande of Madera. . . . 239. [*p.* 270.]
Of the Ilande of ſaynt Thomas vnder the Equinoctial line. 240. [*p.* 270.]
The debate and ſtrife betwene the Spanyardes and Portugales for the diuiſion of the Indies and the trade of ſpyces. 240. [*p.* 271.]
Of the pole Antartike and the ſtarres about the ſame: and of the qualitie of the regions and diſpoſition of the elementes abowt the Equinoctiall line: Alſo of certeyne ſecreates touchynge the arte of ſaylynge. . . . 245. [*p.* 277.]
A diſcourſe of dyuers vyages and wayes by the which ſpices, precious ſtones, and golde were brought in owlde tyme from India into Europe and other partes of the worlde. Alſo of the vyage to Cathay and Eaſte India by the northe ſea: And of the viages of Sebaſtian Cabot. . . . 249. [*p.* 283.]
Of the vyages to Moſcouia and Cathay. . . . 249. [*p.* 283.]
A breefe deſcription of Moſcouia. . . . . 259. [*p.* 291.]
The deſcription of the north regions: and how they are habitable, contrary to th[e]opinion of the owlde wryters. 264. [*p.* 295.]
Scondia. 267. [*p.* 298.] Gronlande. 268. [*p.* 299.] Iſlande. 269. [*p.* 300.]
Laponia. 270. [*p.* 301.] Norway. 273. [*p.* 303.]
Suetia or Suethlande. 275. [*p.* 305.] Gothia or Gothlande. 276. [*p.* 306.]
Finlande and Eningia. 276. [*p.* 306.] Bothnia. 275. [*p.* 305.]
The dyfference of regions and cauſes of great cities. . 277. [*p.* 307.]
The hyſtorie of Paulus Iouius of the ambaſſade of great Baſilius Prince of Moſcouia to pope Clement the ſeuenth. 278. [*p.* 308.]
Other notable thynges as concernynge Moſcouia, gathered owt of the bookes of Sigiſmundus Liberus. . . . 289. [*p.* 318.]
The deſcription of the regions and people lyinge North and Eaſte from Moſcouia to the ryuer Petzora and the prouince of Iugaria and the ryuer Obi. &c. . . . . 294. [*p.* 322.]
Of the famous ryuer of Tanais. . . . . 297. [*p.* 324.]
More directly from Moſcouia to Cathay. . . . 298. [*p.* 325.]
Of the Tartars. 299. [*p.* 327.] The nauigation by the froſen ſea. 303. [*p.* 330.]
The letters miſſiue which kynge Edwarde the. vi. ſent to the kynges, princes, and other potentates inhabitynge the north eaſt partes of the worlde towarde the Empire of Cathay. 306. and. 308. [*p.* 333.]
The letters of the prince of Moſcouia ſente to kynge Edwarde. 319. [*These are not included in the work.*]
Other notable thynges as touchynge the Indies: and of the foreknowleage that the poet Seneca had of the fyndynge of the newe worlde and other regions not then knowen. 310. [*p.* 337.]
Of the greate Ilande whiche Plato cauled Atlantica or Atlantide. 310. [*p.* 337.] Of the coloure of the Indians. 311. [*p.* 338.]
Why they were cauled Indians. . . . . 311. [*p.* 339.]
The fyrſt diſcouerynge of the Weſt Indies. . . . 312. [*p.* 339.]
What maner of man Chriſtopher Colon was, and howe he came fyrſt to the knowleage of the Indies. . . . 313. [*p.* 340.]
What laboure and trauaile he tooke in attemptynge his firſte vyage to the Indies. . . . . 313. [*p.* 340.]
Of newe Spaine cauled Noua Hiſpania or Mexico. . 315. [*p.* 342.]
Of Peru. 316. [*p.* 343.] Of the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata. 316. [*p.* 343.]
Of the hygher or ſuperior India cauled India Tercera or Terciera. . . . . 317. [*p.* 344.]
Ageyne of the landes of Laborador and Baccalaos. . 318. [*p.* 344.]
The diſcouerynge of the lande of Florida. . . . 319. [*p.* 345.]
An opinion that Europe, Africa, and Aſia, are Ilandes: and of certeyne Nauigations abowt the ſame. . . 320. [*p.* 346.]
That the Spanyardes haue ſayled to the Antipodes whiche inhabite the vndermoſt halfe of the baule of the earth, contrary to th[e]opinions of the owlde wryters. . . . 321. [*p.* 347.]
Who fyrſt founde the nedle of the compaſſe and the vſe thereof. 322. [*p.* 348.] The ſituation and byggeneſſe of the earth. 323. [*p.* 349.]
What degrees are. . . . . 324. [*p.* 349.]
A demonſtration of the roundeneſſe of the earth. . . 324. [*p.* 350.]
What credit owght to be gyuen to wryters as touchynge the woorkes of nature. . . . . 325. [*p.* 351.]
The preface to the booke of metals. . . . . 326. [*p.* 355.]
Of the generation of metalles and theyr mines, with the maner of fyndynge the ſame. . . . . 327. [*p.* 356.]
Of the mine of golde and the qualitie therof. . . 334. [*p.* 362.]
Of the fhyne of ſyluer. . . . . 340. [*p.* 366.]
The maner of woorkynge in the golde mines of Egypte in oulde tyme. . . . . 342. [*p.* 369.]
The diſcription of the two vyages made owt of Englande to Guinea in Afrike. . . . . 343. [*p.* 373.]
A brieſe deſcription of Afrike. . . . . 344. [*p.* 374.]
The ſyrſte vyage to Guinea. . . . . 345. [*p.* 375.]
The ſeconde vyage to guynea. . . . . 350. [*p.* 379.]
The maner of ſyndynge the Longitude of regions by dyuers wayes. . . . . 360. [*p.* 389.]
A newe maner of ſyndynge the Longitudes of regions. . 361. [*p.* 390.]
A brieſe rehearſall of the contentes of the bookes of the Decades, &c. [*p.* 391.]

FINIS.

¶ *The interpretacion of certeyne woordes.*

¶ *Continente* (that is) the firme lande not incloſed with water, or no Ilande.
A *Caraucl* or *Caruel*, a kynde of ſhyppes.
Hemiſpherium, the halfe globe of the earth and water.
Peſus, a ducate and a halfe.
Equinoctial, the line that diuideth the heauen and the earthe in the myddeſt betwene the two poles, in the which when the ſonne commeth, the days and nyghtes are of equal length
Clime, is a portion of the worlde betwene north and ſouth.
Paralleles, are lines whereby the ſonne paſſynge cauſeth variation of tyme.
Gatti Mammoni, Monkeys.
Schoenus, is a ſpace of. xl. furlonges.
Werſt, is an Italian [? *Ruſſian*]-mile.
Colonie, an habitacion.

The Indian language.

¶ *Canoa*, a boate or barke.
Caciqui, kynges or gouernours.
Zemes an Idole.
Tuyra, the deuyll.
Machana, a ſworde.
Areitos, ſonges or balades.
Tona, the moone.
Tonatico, the ſoonne.
Quines, preſtes.
Chiuy, a man.
Ira, a woman.
Boa, a houſe.
Cauni, golde.
Mayani, nothynge. &c.

¶ Note that the Ilande of Hiſpaniola, is nowe cauled San Domingo by reaſon of the chiefe city ſo named. Alſo ſaynte Iohns Ilande cauled ſancti Iohannis, or Burichena, is otherwyſe cauled Boriquen.

¶ POTENTISSIMO AC SERENISSIMO PHILIPPO, AC SERENISSIMÆ POTENTISSIMÆQVE MARIÆ,

Dei gratia Regi ac Reginæ, Angliæ, Franciæ, Neapolis, Ieruſalem, et Hiberniæ: Fidei defenſoribus, Principibus Hiſpaniarum et Siciliæ, Archiducibus Auſtriæ, Ducibus Mediolani, Burgundiæ, et Brabantiæ, comitibus Haſpurgi, Flandriæ, et Tirolis, Richardus Edenus perpetuam optat fœlicitatem.

QVM IN PRIMO VESTRO ingreſſu in hanc celeberimam Londini vrbem (illuſtriſsimi Principes) cernerem quanto omnium applauſu, populi concurſu, ac ciuium frequentia, quanto inſuper ſpectaculorum nitore, nobilium virorum ſplendore, equorum multitudine, tubarum clangore, cæteriſque magnificis pompis ac triumphis, pro dignitate veſtra accepti eſtis dum omnes quod ſui eſt officij facere ſatagebant, vbi in tanta hominum turba vix vnus reperiatur qui non aliquid agendo aduentum veſtrum gratulabatur, cœpi et ego quoque aliorum exemplo (propius preſertim ad me accedentibus Celſitudinibus veſtris) tanto animi ardore ad aliquid agendum accendi ne ſolus in tanta hominum corona otioſus viderer, quod vix me continebam quin in aliquam extemporariam orationem temere erupuiſſem, niſi et præſentiæ veſtræ maieſtas, et mea me obſcuritas a tam audaci facinore deterruiſſent. Verum, cum poſtea penitius de hac re mecum cogitaſſem, conſyderaſſemque quam hæc omnia alioqui per ſe laude digna, veſtris tamen meritis ac regiæ dignitatis eminentiæ comparata, plebeia ac ludicra videantur, cœpi denuo cum animo meo reputare qua in re ita cum immortali rerum memoria fœliciſsimum veſtrum aduentum gratularer, vt inde nominis veſtri fama et ſplendor, non vllis ſpectaculorum temporarijs oſtentis, ſed rerum geſtarum gloria, ad poſteros perpetuo emanaret. Excutio ſtatim diuitias meas. Perſcrutor ſi quid ex penu meo depromere poſſum quod me ad aliquid agendum veſtris heroicis virtutibus dignum excitet. Sed cum penes me nihil tale reperio, agnoſco nuditatem meam, atque ad vos confugio. Patrum, auorum, proauorum, atque atauorum vitas et facta recolo. Syluam rerum geſtarum video, totque preclariſsimorum principum propagines, vt merito ab ipſis heroibus, Saturno videlicet, Ioue, ac Hercule, cæteriſque theanthropis, originem duxiſſe videantur. Quod cum ita ſit, non aliunde profecto quam ex hac ſylua materies mihi petenda erit quo in mentibus hominum et æterna rerum memoria, perpetua ſpectacula rerum a vobis et progenitoribus veſtris præclare geſtarum, in mundi theatro ab omnibus cum ſumma nominis veſtri fama ac veneratione cernantur. Cum itaque inter cætera a maioribus veſtris præclare geſta, nihil ſit admirabilius aut maiori laude dignum, quam quod incredibili fiducia et plus quam Herculeis laboribus ſuperato Oceano, fœliciſsimo tandem euentu, Indiæ Occidentalis

as Insulas atque Continentis ampliſsimas regiones, mortalium primi inuenerunt, is infinitas incolarum myriades ad fidem Chriſti conuerterunt (quo nihil auguſtius aut Chriſtianis principibus magis dignum excogitari poteſt) viſus ſum mihi quod non alia in re magis poſſem fœlicitati veſtræ merito gratulari, quam ſi noſtris quoque hominibus quibus hæc hactenus nihil aut parum cognita ſunt, innoteſcere faciam, vt perſpectis illorum ſimul et veſtrorum ampliſsimis imperijs non ſine diuina prouidentia (vt credere par eſt) ad ipſos vſque Antipodes et PLVS VLTRA terminatis, omnes boni, ipſa rerum magnitudine in admirationem ducti, vos ament et venerentur: Malis vero et improbis, os obſtruatur ſi quam in maledicendo voluptatem capiunt. Hæc dum cogito, venit mihi in mentem quod olim adoleſcens perlegi Decades de Nouo Orbe a Petro Martyre ab Angleria, illuſtriſsimi Ferdinandi regis Catholici, ac tui (Sereniſsime rex) proaui oratore, Latine conſcriptas, atque ſacræ Cæſariæ maieſtati patri tuo dedicatas. Tanti itaque autoris fide et eruditione motus, eum præ cæteris in noſtram linguam traducendum ſuſcepi, quod non ſolum vt hiſtoricus res Indicas cum ſumma fide ſcriptis mandauit, ſed etiam vt philoſophus (quod in cæteris ſcriptoribus deſyderatur) naturalium rerum occultas cauſas reddit, ac admirabilium naturæ operum (quibus hæc veſtra India plena eſt) rationes inueſtigat. Atque vt huius Indiæ poſterior ſtatus cognoſcatur, quantuſque theſaurus auri, gemmarum, aromatum, aliarumque ditiſsimarum mercium ac annui cenſus inde quotannis in Hiſpaniam aduehitur, adiunxi doctiſsimi viri Gonzali Ferdinandi Ouiedi libellum quem ille Indicæ hiſtoriæ generalis Summarij titulo inſcripſit, eiuſdemque illuſtriſsimi Caroli Imperatoris patris tui nomini conſecrauit: Cæteraque plurima ex recentioribus ſcriptoribus excerpſi, quæ mihi in tam immenſa rerum memorabilium bibliotheca, præcipue adnotanda videbantur. Quæ, quanta et qualia ſunt, quantiſque paraſangis, omnium heroum ac Argonautarum res geſtas toto terrarum orbe tantopere celebratas ſuperent, hæc mea ſequens præfacio vulgari ſermone ad huius hiſtoriæ lectores populumque Anglicum conſcripta, ſatis prolixa oratione indicabit, adeo vt idem hic repetere ſuperuacaneum ſit, minimeque neceſſarium, quandoquidem Anglica lingua tibi Sereniſsima Regina vernacula eſt, idemque illuſtriſsimo Regi quod tibi ſcriptum aut dictum exiſtimen, non ſolum quod diuino vinculo vnum ſitis in carne vna, ſed etiam quod eadem animi lenitate, humanitate, affabilitate, cæteriſque virtutibus, non minus animi moribus quam carnis vinculo vnum ſitis. Sed neque hic opus eſt vt ego Latino ſermone veſtras virtutes, animi moderationem, clementiam, religionem, pietatem, educationem, caſtitatem fœlicitatem, fortunas, opes, munificentiam, victorias, imperia, ſtemmata, cæteraque huiuſmodi multa enumerem, cum præſertim vir nobilis et doctus Leonhardus Goretius Polonus de his omnibus deque fœliciſsimo veſtro matrimonio, orationæ ſatis fuſa tractauit, in qua nihil pretermiſit quod ad Celſitudinis veſtræ et progenitorum veſtrorum gloriam virtute partam, pertineat. Cæterum cum regiæ veſtræ virtutes nominiſque ſplendor ac regnorum amplitudo alias per vniuerſa Chriſtiani orbis imperia ſatis nota ſint, niſi forte ibi minime vbi maxime nota eſſe deberent, nempe in hoc Angliæ regno, ideo opere præcium et rem omnibus bonis gratam, quodque mei eſt officij erga Celſitudines veſtras me facturum exiſtimaui, ſi hæc noſtris (vt dixi) hominibus, noſtraque lingua ob oculos contemplanda propoſuero. Quod quam fœliciter aut dextre a me factum ſit, aliorum eſto iudicium Quam vero fidelitur, ſyncere, ac animo in Maieſtatis veſtras propenſo hoc idem aggreſſus ſum, teſtis eſt mihi conſcientia mea in conſpectu illius qui hominum corda et renes ſcrutatur. Macte igitur virtutis iſtius animi veſtri eſtote Sereniſsimi Principes, atque Diuino auxilio freti, pergite ea qua cœpiſtis fiducia, huius deploratæ ac collapſæ reipublicæ noſtræ ſtatum, priſtino decori reſtituere, id quod omnes a vobis expectant atque efflagitant,

pollicentes inſuper vobis in eo negotio ſuam operam in nullo defuturam. Ne teri quorundam canum latratus qui bonis omnibus oblatrant, et tunc definent latra definent viuere. Vulgatiſsimum ſemper fuit improbos homines viris probis vel inuidiam vel propter diſsimilitudinem, ſolere latrare. Et tamen ille probus ſemper habitus eſt, quem peruerſi maxime improbauerint. Non eſt igitur curandum quid de nobis homunculi, ſed quid viri boni loquantur. Cogitate (Sereniſsimi Principes) quod magnanimitate ac maiorum inſignijs, aquilis et leonibus ſimiles eſtis. Aquilæ natura eſt, alta petere, et aduerſus ſolis radios in altum volare. Leonis proprium eſt parcere ſubiectis et debellare ſuperbos. Generoſus equus per plateas incedens, canes vt animalcula imbella præterit non perturbatus, Virtus non exercita (inquit Seneca ad Neronem) paruam laudem meretur. Non admodum magnificum fuerit mediocrem fortunam probe adminiſtrare: Sed tanta rerum omnium licentia non abuti, hoc vero admirabile eſt: Multo autem admirabilius in iuuenili ac lubrica ætate cui accedat ætas magiſtra: hijs præſertim qui contumelia laceſcuntur, quæ alioqui homines vel placidiſsimos ſolet de gradu dejicere. Sed (vt ſupra dixi) non eſt hic mei propoſiti (Sereniſsimi Principes) veſtras laudes pro meritis decantare, aut exprimere quo modo in ſummo rerum faſtigio vos humiles præbuiſtis, de quare fuſius in præfacione ad lectores tractaui. Iam itaque vt huic epiſtolæ dedicatoriæ finem imponam, rogo Sereniſsimas Maieſtates veſtras vt has meas lucubrationes in hijs autoribus vertendis, (quas veſtro nomini conſecraui) ea humanitate ac fauore ſuſcipiatis, quibus omnes beneuolo animo ad vos accedentes, facile admittitis ac neminem rejicitis. Quem admodum enim qui pomarium aut vineam plantauit ac maturos inde fructus collegit, illi merito primitias ſoluit a quo prima ſemina primaſque arborum inſitiones habuit, ita et ego qui a maiorum veſtrorum rebus geſtis primis ſumptis ſeminibus, hos qualeſcumque fructus ædidi, videor profecto mihi, debito veſtro honore vos defraudaſſe, niſi eoſdem veſtro nomini ac numini obtuliſſem.

Deus. Opt. Max. Celſitudines veſtras perpetuo ſeruat incolumes,
ſaxitque vt fœcunda ſobolis propagine, ſummaque pace
ac tranquillitate, huius regni habenas ad Diuini
nominis gloriam, diu gubernetis.

FINIS.

RYCHARDE EDEN TO THE READER.

THe moſte famous oratoure and learned Phyloſopher Marcus Tullius Cicero, wryteth, that in all conſultations as touchynge owre behauoure and order of lyuynge amonge men, it behoueth vs euer to beare in mynde howe farre the dignitie of mans nature, excelleth the condition of brute beaſtes. For they, beinge ruled altogether by ſence, delyte in nothynge but beaſtely appetites, whereunto they runne headlonge as to theyr onely felicitie. But the mynde of man, beinge of more noble nature, is nuryſſhed with knowleage, and taketh pleaſure in diuiſynge or excogitatynge ſume honeſt thynge, whereby it not onely leaueth amonge men a memorie of his immortall nature, but alſo engendereth the lyke affection in other that delyte to ſee and heare ſuch thinges as are commendable in theyr prediceſſours. And this ſurely thynke I to bee the cauſe that eyther the famous factes of woorthy men, or ingenious inuentions of experte artificers, haue not onely nobilitate the autours and diuiſers of the fame, or ſuch to whom they haue byn dedicate, but alſo that parte of theyr commendations haue redounded to all ſuche as haue ſpente theyr tyme and taken peynes in illuſtratynge and ſettynge furthe theyr doynges. For who ſhulde at this daye haue knowen Mauſolus the kynge of Caria, with his wyfe Artemiſia, or theſe famous artificers, Scopa, Bryaces, Timotheus, Leochares, or Pythis, if the wonderfull and ſumptuous woorke of the ſepulcher whiche Artemiſia made for kynge Mauſolus her huſband (beinge of ſuch woorkemanſhyppe that it was accompted for one of the marueyls of the worlde) had not geuen vnto all theſe immortall fame, whereas neuertheleſſe it coulde not defende it ſelfe ageynſt th[e]iniurie of tyme conſumynge all thynges. There remayneth at this daye no token of the laborious Tabernacle whiche Moiſes buylded, or of the renoumed and marueilous Temple that was buylded in Hieruſalem by Salomon and renewed by Eſdras. Yet ſhall the name of the excellente artificers Ooliab and Beſelchel, and Hyram the kynge of Tyrus, lyue for euer in the memory of men. Furthermore alſo, Salomon hym ſelfe, although he were many other wayes famous, yet gaue he a greate parte of his glory to that princely buyldynge. But certeynely the moſt trewe and permanent glory, procedeth of ſuch monumentes as brynge ſume great and notable commoditie and profite to the lyfe of men, rather then of the hugious heapes of ſtones of the Pyramides of Egypt, wherin is nought els to ſee but the fonde and barbarous oſtentation of ſuperfluous riches: Or of the Mazes cauled Labyrinthi, or of horryble great Images cauled Coloſſi, of knottes inexplicable, of braſen caudrons of monſtrous byggeneſſe, of hauens with echo ſeuen tymes reboundynge, and dyuers ſuche other portentous inuentions, the which as they do delite vs in conſiderynge the maruelous arte and witte of ſuche artificers as diuiſed and made the ſame, ſo are they otherwyſe vnprofitable: And brynge rather a fame to theyr inuentoures, then trewe glorye. Perillus was famous by diuiſynge his braſen bulle: yet ſo, that it had byn better for hym to haue byn obſcure and vnknowen. They haue therefore deſerued more trewe commendation whiche in buyldynge of cities, townes, fortreſſes, bridges, cundites, hauens, ſhyppes, and ſuche other, haue ſo ioyned magnificence with profecte, that bothe may remaine for an eternal teſtimonie of abſolute glory, whoſe perfection extendeth to the gratifyinge of vniuerſal mankind as farre as mans mortalitie wyll permit. The whiche thinge whyle I conſider, and caule to memorie howe Cicero defineth trewe glory to bee a fame of many and greate deſertes eyther towarde owre citizens, owre countrey, or towarde all man kynde, and the fame to bee of ſuch excellencie that the owlde poetes for ſume effecte fayned it to bee the ſweete Ambroſia and Nectar wherwith the goddes are fedde, and that of ſuch force that who ſo may drynke therof, ſhal alſo become a god, (that is to ſay immortall and happy) mee thynke verely that (yf man maye be a god to men as holy ſcripture ſpeaketh of Moiſes and other) the kynges of Spayne of late dayes (if I may ſpeake it without offence of other) may ſo much the more for theyr iuſt deſertes and good fortune be compared to thoſe goddes made of men (whom the antiquitie cauled Heroes and for theyr manyfolde benefites to man kynde honoured theym with diuine honoure) as theyr famous factes ſo farre excell al other, as I dare not ſpeake to ſuch as haue not yet harde or redde of the fame, leaſt the greatneſſe therof ſhulde at the firſt brunte ſo muche aſtonyſhe the reader that he myght geue the leſſe credite to the autoure of this booke, who neuertheleſſe hath moſte faythfully wrytten this hyſtorye of ſuche thynges wherof he hath ſeene a greate parte him ſelfe (as being by

Commendation of noble factes.

Mausolus.
Cunnynge artificers.

The Tabernacle of Moises.
The Temple of Salomon.
Hyram.

Trewe glory.

Great and sumptuous works.

Fame differeth from true glory.

Absolute glory.

What is true glory.

The kynges of Spayne.
Heroes.

The certentie of this hystory

the moſte catholyke and puiſſaunt kynge Ferdinando appoynted a commiſſionarie in th[e]affayres of India) and gathered the reſidewe partly by information and partly out of the wrytinges of ſuch as haue byn (as Vyrgyll wryteth of Eneas, *Et quorum pars magna fui*) that is, doers and parte of ſuch thynges as are conteyned in the hyſtorie: as Gouernours, Lieuetenauntes, Capitaynes, Admirals, and Pylottes, who by theyr paineful trauayles and prowes, haue not onely ſubdued theſe landes and ſeas, but haue alſo with lyke diligerce commytted th[e]order therof to wrytinge: And not this onely, but for the better tryall of the trewth herein, haue and yet doo in maner dayly ſende from thenſe into Spayne ſuch monumentes as are moſt certeyne teſtimonies of theyr doynge, as yow may reade in dyuers places in this boke. This newe worlde is nowe ſo much frequented, the Ocean nowe ſo well knowen, and the commodities ſo greate, that the kynge erected a houſe in the citie of Siuile (cauled the houſe of the contractes of India) perteynynge onely to th[e]affayres of the Ocean, to the which al ſuch reſorte for neceſſaries as attempte anye vyage to this newe worlde, and lykewyſe at theyr returne make theyr accompte to the counſayle for the Indies for the golde and ſuche other thynges as they brynge from thenſe. It is therefore apparent that the heroical factes of the Spaniardes of theſe days, deſerue ſo greate prayſe that th[e]autour of this booke (beinge no Spanyarde) doth woorthely extolle theyr doynge aboue the famous actes of Hercules and Saturnus and ſuch other which for theyr glorious and vertuous enterpryſes were accoumpted as goddes amonge men. And ſurely if great Alexander and the Romans which haue rather obteyned then deſerued immortall fame amonge men for theyr bluddye victories onely for theyr owne glory and amplifyinge theyr empire obteyned by ſlawghter of innocentes and kepte by violence, haue byn magnified for theyr doinges, howe much more then ſhal we thynke theſe men woorthy iuſt commendations which in theyr mercyſull warres ageynſt theſe naked people haue ſo vſed them ſelues towarde them in exchaungynge of benefites for victorie, that greater commoditie hath therof enſewed to the vanquiſſhed then the victourers. They haue taken nothynge from them but ſuch as they them ſelues were wel wyllynge to departe with, and accoumpted as ſuperfluities, as golde, perles, precious ſtones and ſuch other: for the which they recompenſed theym with ſuche thynges as they muche more eſtemed. But ſum wyll ſay, they poſſeſſe and inhabyte theyr regions and vſe theym as bondemen and tributaries, where before they were free. They inhabite theyr regions indeede: Yet ſo, that by theyr diligence and better manurynge the ſame, they maye nowe better ſuſteyne both, then one before. Theyr bondage is ſuche as is much rather to be deſired then theyr former libertie which was to the cruell Canibales rather a horrible licencioufneſſe then a libertie, and to the innocent ſo terrible a bondage, that in the myddeſt of theyr ferefull idleneſſe, they were euer in daunger to be a pray to thoſe manhuntynge woolues. But nowe thanked be God, by the manhodde and pollicie of the Spanyardes, this deuelyſſhe generation is ſo conſumed, partely by the ſlaughter of ſuche as coulde by no meanes be brought to ciuilitie, and partly by reſeruynge ſuch as were ouercome in the warres, and conuertynge them to a better mynde, that the prophecie may herein bee fulfylled that the woolfe and the lambe ſhall feede together, and the wylde fieldes with the vale of Achor, ſhalbe the folde of the heard of gods people. Moiſes as the miniſter of the lawe of wrath and bondage geuen in fyer and tempeſtes, was commaunded in his warres to ſaue neyther man, woman, nor chylde, and yet brought no commoditie to the nations whom he ouercame and poſſeſſed theyr landes. But the Spaniardes as the myniſters of grace and libertie, browght vnto theſe newe gentyles the victorie of Chryſtes death wherby they beinge ſubdued with the worldely ſworde, are nowe made free from the bondage of Sathans tyrannie, by the myghty poure of this triumphante victourer, whom (as ſayth the prophet) god hath ordeyned to be a lyght to the gentyles, to open the eyes of the blynde, and to delyuer the bounde owt of pryſon and captiuitie. What other men do phantaſie herein, I can not tell: but ſuer I am, that lyke as the ſlowe and brutyſſhe wyttes, for the ſclenderneſſe of theyr capacitie and effeminate hartes, do neuer or ſeldome lyfte vp theyr myndes to the contemplation of goddes workes and maieſtie of nature, but lyke brute beaſtes lookynge euer downewarde, thynke the worlde to be in maner no bygger then theyr owne dungehylles or cagies, lyttle paſſynge whether the Chryſtian fayth do ſpreade through the worlde, or bee dryuen to one corner: Euen ſo al good wyttes and honeſt natures (I doubte not) wyl not onely reioyce to ſee the kyngedome of God to bee ſo farre enlarged vppon the face of the earthe, to the confuſion of the deuyll and the Turkyſſhe Antichryſte, but alſo do the vttermoſt of theyr poure to further the ſame. For ſurely, as Gonſalus Ouiedus wryteth to the Emperours maieſtie in his hyſtorie of the Weſte Indies, that he thynketh hym no trewe Spanyarde whiche reioyceth not in the good fortune of theyr kynges by whoſe ayde and godly zeale this myghtie portion of the worlde hath byn added to the flocke of Chryſtes congregation, Euen ſo do I thinke them no trewe Chryſtian men that do not reioyce with the Angels of heauen for the deliuerie of theſe owre brootherne, owre fleſſhe, and owre bones, from the handes of owre commune enemie the oulde ſerpente who hath ſo longe had them in hys poſſeſſion, vntyll the fulneſſe of the gentyles be accomplyſſhed accordynge to the time prefinite by hym, who vnto the yeare after his incarnation. M. CCCC. lxxxxii. hath ſuffered the greate ſerpente of the ſea Leuiathan, to haue ſuche dominion in the Ocean and to caſte ſuch myſtes in the eyes of men, that ſence the creation of the worlde vntyll the yeare before named, there hath byn no paſſage from owr knowen partes of the world to theſe newe landes, whereas nowe the ſame

The house of the contractes of India.

The counsayl for the Indies

The heroicall factes of the Spanyardes.

Great Alexander.

The Spanyardes warres in the Indies.

The benefites that the Indians haue receaued by the Spanyardes.

Lybertie.

The Canibales,

Feareful idlenesse.

Isai. 65.

The warres of Moises.

The Indians subdued to the fayth.

Isai. 42.

The contemplation of gods workes.

The Christian Empire enlarged.

The conuersion of the gentyles.

Leuiathan.

are moſte ceiteynely knowen to be not paſt. xxx. dayes ſaylynge from Spayne. Neyther yet had the church of Europe any knowleage of the myghtie Chryſtian Empire of Precioſus Iohannes, otherwyſe cauled Preſbyter Iohannes, Emperour of many Chryſtian nations in Ethiope, vntyll the yeare of Chryſte. M. CCCC. xxxiii. as largely appeareth in the nauigations of the Portugales, and eſpecially in the booke of Damianus a Goes, wrytten to the byſſhop of Rome, Paule the thyrde of that name, of the fayth and religion of the Ethiopians which they haue hadde fence the tyme of the Apoſtles. A thynge certes moſt woonderfull, and ſuche, that yf the ſame were not hydde hetherto by gods vnſercheable prouidence, I can not but thynke much negligence or ignorance in owr foreſathers and prediceſſours vntyll the dayes of the ryght noble, prudent, and Catholike kynge of Aragon Don Ferdinando grandfather to Th[e]emperours maieſtie by his eldeſt dowghter, and to the queenes hyghneſſe by his ſeconde dowghter the moſt vertuous lady queene Catherine her graces moother: A prince doubteleſſe of ſuche nobilitie, prowes, magnificence, and all other vertues commendable in a prince, that who ſo ſhall indifferently way all his doinges and good ſucceſſe in all his affayres, comparinge the ſame to th[e]enterpryſes and doinges atchyued by ſuche famous princes in whome the Greekes and Romans haue ſo greately gloryed, maye with one eye perceaue not onely howe farre his noble factes do ſurmount theyrs, but alſo wel conſyder what noble braunches of iſſhewe were lyke to ſprynge owt of ſo woorthy a ſtocke. And ſuerly if ſence the begynning of the worlde, the ſauour of god toward men hath byn knowen by ſuch benefites and bleſſynges as he hath geuen to men, it ſeemeth to me that in maner (onely Chryſte excepted) there neuer lyued man to whom god hath geuen greater benefites and ſhewed more ſauoure. Great doubtleſſe was the ſauour and mercie that god ſhewed vnto Noe, by whom he ſaued the remanent of mankynde beinge but fewe in number. But much greater was the grace which he ſhewed to kynge Ferdinando vnder whom and by whoſe meanes he ſaued not onely the bodies but alſo the ſoules of innumerable millions of men inhabytynge a great part of the worlde heretofore vnknowen and drowned in the deluge of erroure. What ſhulde I here ſpeake of Abraham the father of fayth whoſe promyſes were great, and he cauled the frende of god: Dyd he or his poſteritie ſee Iſraell increaſe to ſuch multitudes and nations as kyng Ferdinandos poſteritie may ſee th[e]increaſe of this ſpirituall Iſraell vnto whome as a ſeconde Abraham he was the father of fayth? Moiſes was ſo great in the ſyght of god that he diſcloſed vnto hym his ſecreate name, and miraculouſly cauſed a corner of the ſea to open at his prayer. But howe greater a myracle was it that he opened vnto the nauie of Don Ferdinando the greate Ocean thowght before that tyme to bee without ende, where neuertheleſſe he and his poſteritie the kynges of Spayne haue nowe planted a newe Iſraell muche greater then that whiche Moiſes ledde throughe the red ſea. It were here ſuperfluous to ſpeake of Dauid whom Godde founde a man accordynge to his hartes deſyre: and yet maye it be doubted whether his plages and ſcourges were greater then his benefites? His ſonne Salomon for al his inconſtant and wauerynge wyſedome and his great ryches obteyned by his nauigations to Ophir, yet was there at this tyme no knowleage of Antipodes, neyther dydde any of his ſhyppes ſayle abowt the hole worlde, perce the Ocean, and trauerſe the Equinoctial line to th[e]inferiour hemiſpherie or halfe globe of the earthe and ſea as dyd the famous ſhyppe Victoria ſent furth by Th[e]emperours maieſtie. A thyng doubtleſſe ſo ſtrange and marueylous that as the lyke was neuer done before, ſo is it perhaps neuer lyke to be done ageyne: ſo farre haue the nauigations of the Spanyardes excelled the vyage of Iaſon and the *Argonautæ* to the region of Colchos, or all that euer were before. And although in the booke of kynges and Paralipomenon it bee hyperborically wrytten that in the dayes of Salomon golde and ſyluer were in Hieruſalem in maner as plentiful as ſtones, and that his ſeruantes brought from Ophir foure hundreth and fiftie talentes of gold, yet do we not reade that any of his ſhyppes were ſo laden with golde that they ſoonke, as dyd a ſhyppe of kynge Ferdinandos as yow maye reade in the laſt booke of the fyrſte Decade. Neyther was the dominion of Salomon extended from the ryuer of Euphrates to the lande of the Philiſtians and th[e]extreme confines of Egypte to be compared with the large Empire whiche the kynges of Spayne haue in the weſt Indies: Nor his ryches of golde to be thought much in reſpect of that which hath byn browght from thenſe into Spayne as ſhall playnely appere to al ſuche as wyll ſeeke to knowe the truth hereof. But to let paſſe to ſpeake any further of the myracles which god hath wrought by the handes of this noble prince in this newe world among theſe newe gentyles. Is it not well knowen to all the world what a defence and braſen wall he hath byn to all Chryſtendome in that he hath quite dryuen out of Spayne the Moores or Saraſens and Iewes which ſo many hundreth yeares poſſeſſed a greate parte of Spayne to no ſmaule daungioure of the hole Chriſtian Empire, and yet coulde neuer before bee cleane vanquyſſhed vntyll the dayes of this noble and Catholyke prince ſo named for his warres ageynſte the infidelles, whom God rayſed for a Capitayne of his people as an other Gedion vnder whoſe banner they myght ouercome theyr enemies and pourge his vineyarde from ſuche wycked weedes. The which thynge doubteleſſe may ſeeme ſo much the greater and more difficulte, foraſmuch as in the myddeſt of the chiefe heate of his chargeable

Prester Iohn the Christian Emperour of Ethiope.

Don Ferdinando kynge of Aragon.

The ſauour of god knowen by his benefites.

Noe.

What god hath wrought by kynge Ferdinando.

Abraham.

Spirituall Iſrael.

Moiſes.

Dauid.

Salomon.

Ophir.

Antipodes.

The nauigation rounde about the worlde.

The dominion of Salomon. Paral, 9.

The Indies.

The warres of kynge Ferdinando ageynſt the Sarasens.

The conqueste of the Indies

The conqueste of Naples.

warres ageynſte the Moores of Granada, he euen then and at the ſame tyme ſente furth ſhyppes for the conqueſtynge of the Indies, as thowgh he and the nation of the Spanyardes had byn appoynted by god eyther to ſubdue the enemies of the fayth or to bringe theym to Chriſtes religion. The ſelfe ſame kynge Ferdinando alſo abowte the yeare of Chryſt. 1503. ſente a nauie of ſhyppes into Italy, where they vanquyſſhed, chaſed, and ſlewe the Frenchemen, and recouered the kyngedome of Naples with all the dominions belongynge thereunto. By which noble victory, his ſucceſſion and poſteritie as the[e]mperours maieſtie and nowe his ſonne the kynge owre maſter and ſoueraigne lorde haue euer ſence enioyed th[e]inheritaunce of the ſame as of antiquitie by iuſt and ryght tytle dewe to them and theyr prediceſſours. And as it is the nature of god not only to ſhewe his loue and fauour to ſuch as haue pleaſed hym, but alſo to poure furth the plentie of his grace vppon theyr ſucceſſion from generation to generation, ſo hath he with lyke felicitie proſpered the reigne of Th[e]emperours maieſtie who by his wiſdome and prowes hath not onely pollitikly gouerned, but alſo augmented and inlarged ſuch dominions as fel to hym by diſcente of inheritaunce. What ſhuld I ſpeake of his warres and conqueſtes in India, in Aphrike, in Italie, in Fraunce, in Germanie, and in Flaunders: all the which to be declared accordyngely wolde rather require hole volumes then fewe ſheetes of paper. Yet hath one in fewe woordes effectually expreſſed his dominions and conqueſtes in theſe verſes folowynge,

Impiger expauit rapidas tranſire per vndas
Oceani Alcides: continuitque gradum.
Maximus at Cæſar, PLVS VLTRA tendere curſum
Auſus, et ignotis eſt dare iura locis.
Et domita aurifera nunc victor gente reuerſus,
Cætera ſub ſceptro ponat vt ipſe ſuo.
Nam pater omnipotens vt famam terminet aſtris
Iuſsit, et imperium fineat Oceano.

¶ An other alſo breefely hath declared the ſame in theſe verſes.

Conſortem Imperij voluit quia Iuppiter orbis,
Aſtra Deo cedunt, Carole terra tibi.

The Emperours maiestie.

And certes who ſo well conſidereth the progenie of kynges that in ſo ſhorte a time haue linially deſcended from Don Ferdinando, and howe many kyngedomes they poſſeſſe, may ſee that God hath fulfylled in hym alſo the promiſes and bleſſynges of Abraham, as to make hym the father of many nations, and his ſeede to growe great vpon the earth: Alſo that many kynges ſhulde come furth of his loynes, and to make a perpetuall league and conuenaunt with hym and his poſteritie to bee theyr god for euer. And here to omytte to ſpeake of other: Was there euer better hope or more likenes then now, that theſe bleſſynges and promyſes of god ſhulde continewe in this princely progenie, ſyth the vertues and felicitie of them al doo ſo ſhyne and floriſſhe in owr noble and gratious prince kynge Phylyppe, to whom euen in his youth his father (occupied in the warres of Italye and Aphrike) commytted the hole gouernaunce of the kyngedomes of Spayne and the Indies. Of his behauour in Englande, his enemies (which canker, vertue neuer lacked) They I ſay (if any ſuch yet remaine) haue greateſt cauſe to reporte well: ye ſo well, that yf his naturall clemencie were not greater then was theyr vnnaturall indignation they knowe them ſelues what myght haue folowed. The properties of fooles and wyſe men are declared in theſe owld verſes.

Quid ſtulti proprium? Non poſſe et velle nocere.
Quid ſapientis opus: Non velle et poſſe nocere.

The kinges maiestie

That is to ſay: What is the propertie of a foole? To wyl to doo hurte and can not. What is the woorke of a wyſe man? Not to wyll to hurte though he may. But whether he hath lacked poure or wyll, it is knowen to barbers and blere eyde men. Who lamented theyr folly more then he? Who more humbly admytted theyr ſutes and ſupplications? Ye who obteyned theyr pardon but he? Beynge a Lion he behaued hym ſelfe as a lambe, and ſtrooke not his enemie hauynge the ſwoorde in his hande. Stoope Englande ſtoope, and learne to knowe thy lorde and maſter, as horſes and other brute beaſtes are taught to doo. Be not indocible lyke Tygers and dragons, and ſuch other monſters noyous to man kynde. God by the mouth of Iſaias the prophet reproueth the Iſraelites that they knewe not ſo well theyr dewtie towarde hym as dyd the brute beaſtes the mangiers of theyr maſters. The oxe and the aſſe (ſayth he) knoweth the mangier of theyr maſter, but Iſraell knoweth not me. For ſhame let vs not be woorſe then oxen and aſſes, and lyke vnto horſes and mules in whom is no vnderſtandynge. But O vnthankefull Englande and voyde of honeſt ſhame? Who hath geuen the the face of a hoore and toonge of a ſerpent withowt ſhame to ſpeake venemous woordes in ſecreates ageynſt the annoynted of god. O paynted hoore that haſt Chryſte in thy mouth and the deuyl in thy harte. Hathe not the pocke of thy licentiouſneſſe bruſte furth in maner to thyne owne deſtruction. Howe longe wylt thou nuryſſhe in thy booſome

Gen. 17.

Apostrophe to Englande.

Isai. 1.

that ſerpente whoſe nature is to deuoure her moother? Take a vomyte in tyme leaſt thy diſeaſe become vncurable. What neede I rehearſe vnto the thy manyfolde infirmities and deformities whiche thou arte faulẽ into by thyne owne owtragiouſneſſe? If the greefes of them bee to thee vnſenſible by reaſon of thy feebleneſſe and longe ſickenes, take vnto the that glaſſe wherin thou glorieſt with the Iewe and thynkeſt that thou ſeeſt al thynges and canſt iudge all myſteries: Looke I ſay in that pure glaſſe and beholde thy owne deformities, which thou canſte not or wylte not feele. I feare greatly that if thou looke therein diligently and looke euen throughe thy ſelfe, thou wylte abhorre thy ſelfe to ſee howe many monſters lye hid in the vnder the ſhape of man. There is euen nowe great talke of the in the mouthes of all men that thou haſt of late yeares brought furthe many monſters and ſtraunge byrthes, wherof dyuers men make dyuers interpretacions more monſtrous then the monſters theim ſelues. But ſhall I breefely and ſimply declare vnto thee the ſignification of thy monſters? Fyrſt then conſyder that they are monſters of mankynde and not of other beaſtes. Secundarily marke well that in them al, the headde is perfect, ſo that the monſtroſitie groweth owt of the body, although not owt of the hole body but certeyne partes therof. But not to go to farre. Conſyder ageyne that diſorder of the partes is a deformitie to the hole. One hath well interpreted that ſuch monſtrous byrthes ſignifie the monſtrous and deformed myndes of the people myſſhapened with phantaſtical opinions, diſſolute lyuynge, licentious talke, and ſuch other vicious behauoures which monſtrouſly deforme the myndes of men in the ſyght of god who by ſuche ſignes dooth certifie vs in what ſimilitude we appere before hym, and thereby gyueth vs admonition to amende before the day of his wrath and vengeance. What deformed beaſtes are more monſtrous then lyinge, rebellion, ſtrife, contention, priuie malice, ſlaunderynge, mutterynge, conſpiraces, and ſuch other deuilyſſhe imaginations. But O Englande whyle tyme is gyuen thee, circumciſe thy harte. Put to onely thy good wyll, and thou mayſte fynde grace and fauoure to recouer thyne aunciente bewtie whiche hath ſo longe been defaced. Thou haſte nowe a kynge and queene that deſyre thee to remember thy dewtie, and holde theyr armes abrode to embraſe thee yf thou wylt drawe nere vnto them. They are ſory to occupie the whyppe yf thou mighteſt otherwyſe bee brought to obedience. But yf thou take pleaſure to perſiſt in frowarde ſtoobberneſſe, knowe thou that they are Lions whelpes and conquerours of monſters whereof thou haſt had ſuche experience, that proudely truſtynge in thyne owne ſtrengthe, and attemptynge lyke an other Nemroth to buylde a newe towre of confuſion, the woorkes of thy giantes were miraculouſly ouerthrowne by a woman who deliuered thee from that captiuitie, whereby thou oughteſte to knowe the daungiour thou waſt in, and bee thankefull to thy deliuerer. Beware therefore leaſte whyle thou contemne the peaceable princes that god hath ſent the, thou bee lyke vnto Iſopes frogges to whom for theyr vnquietneſſe, Iupiter ſent a hearon to picke them in the hedes. Conſider what benefites thou mayſt receaue at theyr handes if thou doo thy dewtie towarde them. Conſyder ageyne that as they are able, ſo may thy gentelneſſe make them wyllynge to recompenſe the ſame. Stoppe thyne eares from vayne fables as from the inchauntynge Mermaydes. For as manye ſpeake of Robbyn Hoode and of his bowe that neuer ſhot therin, ſo doo fooles prate of ſuch thynges as they knowe not. But O god? what phantaſies are nowe in the heades of men? Howe redy they are to inuent lyes and tales? and of howe ſmaul ſparkes they kyndle great flames? Summe are ſo curious to fynde faute in other, that for lacke of iuſt matter woorthy reproche in them whom they deſyre to depraue, they ſpeake euyll of theyr parentes and kynred of whom they knowe as lyttle. And not ſo ſatiſfyed they diſpiſe and with lyinge diſprayſe theyr hole nation and countrey. Ye ſum take ſuch pleaſure herein, that if they can fynde noughte els to diſprayſe, they wyll fynde faute in ſuche as they fauour not, bycauſe they weare not theyr apparell as they doo, or perhappes are not ſo effeminate as they, or eate not as they eate, or fight not as they fyght, ſo parciall is the iudgement of fooles in theyr owne rudeneſſe, thynkyng them ſelues the better for diſprayſynge of other. Spayne is a beggerly countrey ſayth one: Th[e]emperour is but poore ſayth an other: He is deade ſayth an other: The Indies haue rebelled ſayth an other, and eyther there commeth no more golde from thenſe, or there is no more founde nowe: with ſuche other falſe and licentious talke diuiſed by vnquiet braines in whoſe heades the hammers of ſedition ſeaſe not to forge ingens of iniquitie. If I ſhulde here anſwere to all theſe querels particularly and as the woorthyneſſe of the thynge requireth, I myght fynde matter ſufficient to make a volume of iuſte quantitie and perhappes be tedious to ſumme. Yet not to paſſe ouer ſo great a matter vntouched, and partely to ſtoppe the mouthes of ſuche impudente lyers, I haue thought good to ſpeake ſumwhat hereof. Fyrſt therfore to ſpeake of Spayne, and by the teſtimonie of oulde autours to declare the commodities therof: Plinie a graue and faythful autour, in the laſt boke and laſt chapiture of his natural hiſtory greatly commendynge Italy aboue al other contreys, giueth the ſecond prayſe vnto Spaine, aſwel for al ſuch thynges as in maner the heuen can geue and the earth brynge furth for the commoditie of this lyfe as alſo for the excellente wittes of men and Ciuile gouernaunce. Alſo Diodorus Siculus in the ſixt booke of his Bibliotheca ſpeakynge of Spayne (cauled of the Greekes Iberia) writeth that when in the mountaines named Pyrinei th[e]inhabitantes burnte vp the wooddes, there ranne owt of the mountaynes as it were dyuers ſtreames of pure ſyluer molten by the heate of the fyre. But the eſtimation and price of ſyluer beinge at thoſe dayes to them vnknowen, the Phenician marchauntes bought the ſame of them for thynges of ſmaule value: And caryinge

Monstrous byrthes.

The ſignifications of monstrus byrthes.

The deformity of monstrous myndes.

How curious summe are to fynde faute in other.

The kyng and Queene.

Lyes Imagined.

Commendations of Spain

Ryche syluer mynes in Spayne.

it into Grecia, Aſia, and other countreys, got great rycheſſe therby. For the deſyre of gaynes (ſayth he) ſo greatly moued the marchauntes, that when more ſyluer remayned then myght lade theyr ſhyppes, they tooke the leade frome theyr ankers, and put ſyluer in the place therof. The Phenices by theſe gaynes beinge made very ryche, dyd aſſigne many colonies both in Sicilie and the Ilandes there abowt, and alſo in Libya, Sardinia, and Iberia. But after many yeares when the Iberians (that is the Spaniardes) knewe the price of ſyluer, and applyed them ſelues to the ſeekynge of metals and founde great plentie of ſyluer, they obteyned greate ryches therby foraſmuch as in maner al that earth of the mountaynes is ſo replenyſſhed with ſyluer that it is a marueylous thynge to conſyder the nature of the region and the continual laboure of the woorkemen in thoſe mynes. Lykewyſe when afterwarde the Romans ſubdued the Iberians, the Italians which for the deſyre of gaynes ſearched thoſe metals, gotte great rycheſſe by the ſame. For they deputed to that laboure a multitude of bowghte ſeruauntes, whiche ſearchynge the vaynes of metals in dyuers places, and percyng the earth dyuers wayes for the ſpace of many furlonges, browght furthe great plentie of golde and ſyluer. But the rycheſſe of theſe mynes was fyrſt founde at ſuch tyme as the Carthaginenſes (the enemies of the Romane Empire) had the Iberians in ſubiection: which was the cauſe that theyr poure afterwarde increaſed. For, with monye hyringe the beſt and moſte experte ſouldiers, they kepte greuous warres ageynſt theyr enemies. And not vſynge the ayde eyther of theyr owne ſouldiers or theyr aſſociates, they were a terrour to the Romanes, Sicilians, and Libyans, whom they browght into great daungiour by reaſon they paſſed them al in abundaunce of golde and ſyluer. With better fortune therefore, and greater hope of gayne are ryche metals ſought in Spayne, the goodneſſe of whoſe ſoyle yeldeth cloddes of earth conteynynge much golde and ſyluer. And theſe be the very wordes of Diodorus Siculus, which the later wryters doo alſo confirme. For Iulius Solinus in his Polyhiſtor, compareth Spayne to the beſt contreys in plentie of grayne, vyttayles, oyle, ſyluer, golde, and Iron. Likewyſe Strabo, Statius, and Claudius, do no leſſe commende it. It were to longe here to ſpeake of the greate plentie of fine woolles lyttle inferiour vnto owrs: alſo abundaunce of ſugar, vines, pomegranates, limondes, and orangies in ſuch plentie that they ſuffice not only Spayne, but alſo in maner all Europe: whereas the apples and crabbes of Englande are ſcarſely able to ſerue it ſelfe. And althowghe here ſumme wyll obiecte, that they lacke corne, woodde, and certeyne other thynges, yet are theyr commodities ſo greate otherwyſe, that al ſuch thynges are browght them owt of other countreys for theyr wares: and that in ſuch plentie, that they are there better chepe then euer they were in Englande ſence the ſigne of the ſteeple the poore mans Inne was pulled downe in all places. Summe for lacke of other matter, fynde greate faute that in trauaylynge in Spayne, men ſhalbe ſerued with halfe a henne, and go to the cookes for theyr meate and to the tauerne for theyr drynke. And what then I praye yow? What inconuenience enſeweth hereof? Is it not better ſo to doo then to pay thryſe for one thinge as is the maner to doo in ſumme of owre Innes and in tauernes where all that eate roſte meate are beaten with the ſpitte, as where they that of late in Barthelmewe fayre payde fortie penſe for a pygge, where the good man of the houſe was not a ſhamed to make his vaunte that he had made foure ſhyllynges of a pygge, and had in one day taken foure pounde for pygges. But if I ſhuld here particularly and at large declare howe Englande is in fewe yeares decayed and impoueryſſhed, and howe on the contrary parte Spayne is inryched, I ſhulde perhappes diſpleaſe more in deſcrybyng the myſerie of the one, then pleaſe other in expreſſynge the floryſſhynge ſtate of the other, which by all reaſon is lyke dayly to increaſe, aſwell for the great rycheſſe that are yearely browght thyther from the Indies, as alſo for the ryche ſyluer mynes that are founde of late in Spayne in the countrey of Aſturia as I was credably informed by the woorthy and lerned gentelman Auguſtinus de Ceratta, Contador (that is) the auditour of the kynges myntes who had longe before byn ſurueyoure of the golde mynes of Peru, and browght from thenſe and from Rio de Plata. xiii. thouſand pounde weyght of ſyluer which was coyned to the kinges vſe in the towre of London where neuer ſo much hath byn ſeene at once as ſuche as haue byn owlde officers in the mynte doo affirme. What ſhulde I heare ſpeake of the golde which th[e]emperours maieſtie receaueth frome all the Indies, whereas onely in the two meltynge ſhoppes of the gold mines of the Ilande of Hiſpaniola, is molten yearely three hundreth thouſande pounde weyght of. viii. vnces to the pound, wherof the fyfte parte is dewe vnto hym, whiche amouñteth to three ſcore thouſande weyght yearely. Yet doo I not here ſpeake of the golde mines of the other Ilandes and the firme lande reachynge. viii. thouſande myles from the north to the ſouth: Neyther of the ryche Ilandes of the ſouth ſea cauled Mare del Sur, where the kynge of one lyttle Ilande named Tacarequi, Margaritea, or de las Perlas, lying in the goulfe of Saynt Michael, payeth yearely for his tribute a hundreth pounde weight of perles: Neyther yet of the fyfte parte of other thynges, as precious ſtones, braſile, goſſampine cotton, ſpices, and dyuers other thynges, wheras alſo the ryche Ilandes cauled the Maluchas perteyne to the inheritaunce of Caſtile, althowgh the kynge of Portugale enioy them for certeyne yeares by compoſition. But the Indies haue rebelled (ſay they) and there commeth no more golde from thenſe. But what if ſumme of them haue rebelled? dooth it therby folowe that there commeth no more gold from the other that lyue vnder obedience? But if thou wylte ſay that they haue al rebelled at once, thou muſt proue that thou ſayeſt eyther by hyſtorie or wytneſſe of ſuch as know the truth herof, as I (hauing made diligent ſearche for the ſame) am able to proue the contrarie, and that

The Romans inriched by the syluer of Spayne.

The Carthaginensis inriched by the syluer of Spain.

The commodities of Spain

The sygne of the steeple.

Englande impouerisshed, Spayne inriched.

Siluer mines founde of late in Spayne.

Syluer brought frome Peru into Englande.

Th[e]emperours reuenues from the Indies.

The Ilandes of the Southe sea.

The Ilandes of Maluca.

ſuche talke is onely imagined by buſie headdes. Ageyne: what if they haue rebelled in ſumme prouinces? dooth it folowe that they maye not ageyne be browght vnder ſubiection as were oftentymes the prouinces of the Romanes and as were in owre dayes dyuers countreys of Englande whiche haue byn ſore afflicted with that plage. But whether the ſandes of the ryuers and the mountaynes of the Indies bee ſo emptied with golde that no more can be founde there, I thinke it here ſuperfluous to anſwere to this obiection, foraſmuch as it is hereafter confuted in the booke of metals where yow ſhall fynde by experience that metals growe and increaſe, and that after certeyne yeares. ſuche owlde caues of the mynes as haue byn dygged, are ageyne replenyſſhed with vre: Alſo that the ſprynges of ſuche mountaynes turnynge theyr courſe and breakynge furth in other places, brynge with them greate plentie of ſuch golden ſande as is founde in the ryuers into the which they faule. What impudencie is it therfore with woordes of reproche to caule hym poore whoſe poure is ſo greate, his treaſure ſo infinite, and his doinges ſo chargeable, that I beleeue that when ſo euer it pleaſe almyghtie God to caule hym frome this lyfe to the greate domage of all Chryſtendome, it ſhalbe harde to fynde an other that ſhall in all poyntes bee ſo well able to ſupplye that roome and maynteyne th[e]imperiall dignitie. Let al honeſt natures therfore learne to ſpeake well of princes accordynge to the ſentence *De Principibus nil niſi bonum*, foraſmuch as they are the miniſters of god who hath theyr hartes in his hande and ruleth the ſame as ſeemeth beſte vnto hym. For there is no poure neyther good nor badde, but of god: and he that reſyſteth or ſpeaketh euyll of the poure, reſiſteth and ſpeaketh euyll of god. Thou ſhalt not ſpeake euyll of the prince or ruler of thy people ſaith ſaint Paule.

But wheras nowe by the poure of Neptunus (I wot nere with what wynde) I haue byn dryuen thus farre from my nauigations, I haue thought good to turne my ſayles and to folowe the ordinarie courſe which I beganne, and by th[e]exemple of this woorthy capitayne kynge Ferdinando, encourage al other to theyr poure to attempte the lyke vyages: As touchynge the which in fewe woordes to declare my opynyon, if any man ſhulde aſke me what I thynke theſe thinges wyll growe to in tyme, I wyll anſwere as dooth the autoure of this booke, that when I conſyder howe farre owre poſteritie ſhall ſee the Chriſtian religion enlarged, I am not able with tounge or penne to expreſſe what I conceaue hereof in my mynd. Yet one thyng I ſee which enforceth me to ſpeake and lament, that the harueſt is ſo great and the workemen ſo few. The Spanyardes haue ſhewed a good exemple to all Chryſtian nations to folowe. But as god is great and woonderfull in all his woorkes, ſo beſyde the portion of lande perteynyng to the Spanyardes (beinge eyght tymes bygger then Italye as yowe maye reade in the laſte booke of the ſeconde Decade) and beſide that which perteineth to the Portugales, there yet remayneth an other portion of that mayne lande reachynge towarde the northeaſt, thought to be as large as the other, and not yet knowen but only by the ſea coaſtes, neyther inhabyted by any Chriſtian men: whereas neuertheleſſe (as wryteth Gemma Phriſius) in this lande there are many fayre and frutefull regions, hygh mountaynes, and fayre ryuers, with abundaunce of golde and dyuers kyndes of beaſtes. Alſo cities and towres ſo wel buylded and people of ſuch ciuilitie, that this parte of the worlde ſeemeth lyttle inferiour to owre Europe, if th[e]inhabitauntes had receaued owre religion. They are wyſtie people and refuſe not barterynge with ſtraungers. Theſe regions are cauled Terra Florida and Regio Baccalearum or Bacchallaos of the which yow may reade ſumwhat in this booke in the vyage of the woorthy owlde man yet lyuing Sebaſtiane Cabote, in the. vi. booke of the thyrde Decade. But Cabote touched only in the north corner and moſt barbarous parte hereof, from whenſe he was repulſed with Iſe in the moneth of Iuly. Neuertheleſſe, the weſt and ſouth partes of theſe regions haue ſence byn better ſearched by other, and founde to bee as we haue ſayde before. The chiefe citie in the ſouthweſt partes of theſe regions, is cauled Temixtetan, or Mexico in maner vnder the circle cauled Tropicus Cancri, and ſtrongely defended by the nature of the place. For it ſtandeth in a very great lake hauynge abowt it innumerable bridges, and buyldynges to be compared to the woorkes of Dedalus. Th[e]inhabitauntes alſo can wryte and reade. Summe wryters connecte this lande to the firme lande of Aſia: But the truth hereof is not yet knowen. And althoughe the Spanyardes haue certeyne colonies in that part of this lande that is nowe cauled Noua Hiſpania, yet are the people for the moſte parte Idolatours. Howe much therfore is it to be lamented, and howe greatly dooth it ſounde to the reproche of all Chriſtendome, and eſpecially to ſuch as dwell nereſt to theſe landes (as we doo) beinge muche nearer vnto the ſame then are the Spanyardes (as within. xxv. dayes ſaylinge and leſſe) howe muche I ſaye ſhall this founde vnto owre reproche and inexcuſable ſlothfulneſſe and negligence bothe before god and the worlde, that ſo large dominions of ſuch tractable people and pure gentiles, not beinge hytherto corrupted with any other falſe religion (and therefore the eaſyer to bee allured to embraſe owres) are nowe knowen vnto vs, and that we haue no reſpecte neyther for goddes cauſe nor for owre owne commoditie to attempte ſumme vyages into theſe coaſtes, to doo for owr partes as the Spaniardes haue doone for theyrs, and not euer lyke ſleepe to haunte one trade, and to doo nothynge woorthy memorie amonge men or thankes before god, who maye herein woorthely accuſe vs for the ſlackeneſſe of owre dewtie towarde hym. Saynt Paule the doctoure of the gentiles (to whoſe Apoſtelſhippe alſo theſe newe gentiles doo perteine) was of ſuch zeale toward the Iewes whom god had reiected, that

The nauigations of the Spanyardes.

Itali is. 1020 myles in lengthe and. 126. in breadthe.

The lande cauled Terra florida, and regio baccalearum.

Looke the last booke, thirde decade.

This region is now cauled Noua Hispania. Sum thinke that this citie is Quinsai of Marcus Paulus.

Looke the last booke of the 3. decade, and the beginning of the booke of the landes lately found.

The godlye zeale of. S. Paule.

he wyſſhed hym ſelfe to bee accurſed of god for theyr ſakes. He went from Damaſcus to Arabie, prcached the goſpell in Grecia, came priſoner to Rome, was ſcourged and ſtoned, and ſuffered thryſe ſhypwracke, what then thinke yow he wold do if he were now aliue? Is it to be thought that he wolde not aduenture. xxv. dayes ſaylynge to come to ſuch a marte of ſoules in ſuch redineſſe to bee eaſely obteyned? I beleue verely that neyther death, nor the deuyll, nor Leuiathan, nor the worlde, ſhulde let hym but that he wolde geue th[e]onſet ageynſt them all in hope of victorie by hym by whom he ſayth he can doo all thynges. He was not negligent in his office nor ignorant of his rewarde, but truſted to the promeſſe of him that ſayde by the mouth of the prophet Iſai: Of them that ſhalbe ſaued, I wyl ſende ſum to the gentyles in the ſea, into Aphrike and Libia, Italie, and Grecia, and into the Ilandes a farre of, to them that haue not harde of me, and haue not ſeene my glorie. The like zeale that Paule had, and proceadynge of the ſame ſpirite, hath euer ſence Chryſtes tyme, moued not only the Apoſtles, but alſo many other famous and godly men (as ſuperuiſours of his teſtamente) to ſende owte preachers into dyuers partes of the worlde to ſhewe furth the gladde tydynge of the goſpell. By this zeale dyd Gregorye byſſhoppe of Rome and fyrſte of that name, when he ſawe Englyſſhe mens chyldren in Rome and aſked what nation they were, when anſwere was made hym in the laten tounge that they were Angli, (that is, Englyſſhe men) he ſayd (alludyng to the ſimilitude of the worde) that they myght wel be cauled Angeli, that is, Angels: Meanyng therby that lyke as god had done his part in geuyng them bodies of natural bewtie and comelyneſſe, ſo it apperteyned to his office beinge the cheefe paſtoure of goddes flocke, to prouyde that theyr ſoules might be made woorthy to inhabite ſuch bodies and the hole nation conſecrated vnto god by baptiſme. For he ſayde furthermore: It is meete that vnto theſe alſo, the goſpell of life bee preached: And hereuppon immediatly ſent preachers into Englande whereby the hole nation was in ſhorte tyme conuerted to Chriſtes faith, although ſum had receaued the goſpell long before euen from Chryſtes tyme by the preachyng of Ioſeph of Arimathia who aſked the body of Chryſte of Pilote, and buryed it reuerently. I wolde to god that there were now many mo ſuch Gregories in the worlde: And that there might lyke zeale and gentelneſſe bee founde in vs Englyſſhe men towarde other nations, as we haue founde in other towarde vs. Owre predeceſſoures were not vtterlye vnmyndefull of theſe benefites, but applyed them ſelues lykewiſe to ſpreade the goſpell in other nations. For Vadianus in his booke *De tribus terræ partibus*, wryteth, that more then ſeuen hundrethe yeares after the death of Chryſte, one Vnefride an Englyſſhe man and byſſhoppe of Mogunce, (nowe cauled Menſe) was the fyrſte that tawght the fayth of Chryſte amonge the Germaynes, at ſuch tyme as the Frankes and Almaynes had paſſed ouer the ryuers of Rhene and Danubius, and by puttynge the garryſons of the Romans to flight, had poſſeſſed a great parte of theyr moſt notable prouinces. For albeit that theſe rude and barbarous nations then accuſtomed onely to warre and robberie did hardly admitte that holſome doctrine at the beginning. Yet by the pollicie and wiſedome of the Frankes, it came ſo to paſſe that in maner through owt all Germanie, greate increaſe of the Chriſtian religion folowed there moſte ample victories, as the lyke ſucceſſe is alſo ſeene in theſe barbarous nations ſubdued by the Spanyardes. Whereby it is apparent, that although ſum holde opinion that none owght to bee compelled to the faythe, yet we ſee by experience that withowt diſputynge of opinions (leſte the pacientes ſhulde dye before the phiſitians agree of the remedie) theſe entrepriſes haue taken good effect to the great glory of god who cauleth men vnto hym by dyuers meanes and at dyuers ages of the declinynge worlde, otherwyſe nowe then in the tyme of Chryſte and his Apoſtles when the poure of miracles was giuen vnto men to confirme the newe fayth which had yet preuailed no where in the worlde. Albeit, I beleue verely, that if we wolde take the matter in hande accordyngly, god wolde not forget to ayde vs with miracles if it ſhuld ſo be requiſite, as yowe may reade in this booke howe he wrought miracles by the fayth of a ſimple mariner euen in th[e]infancie of faythe. And ſuerlye, lyke as there is no cauſe why we ſhulde anye thynge doubte of goddes goodneſſe in this behalfe if the faut be not in owre ſelues. Euen ſo, if we wolde fyrſte ſette owre handes to the plowe, we ought to hope that he wolde giue encreaſe and woorke with vs as he hath doone with other, by whoſe proſperous ſucceſſe we may plainely ſee that it was his wyll that ſuche thynges ſhulde go forwarde. For euen Iſraell to whom promeſſe was made by ſignes and miracles that they ſhulde poſſeſſe the lande to th[e]inheritaunce wherof, the ſea opened it ſelfe to giue them free paſſage, yet were they commaunded by the poure of the ſwoorde to make way, with greate loſſe and ſlaughter of men and by force of armes to obteyne the lande promyſed to theyr fathers, whiche neuertheleſſe fewe of them poſſeſſed that firſt fought for the ſame, but leſte theyr carkeſes in the wilderneſſe. Is it not alſo written of the Iuwes which repayred the walles of the citie of Hieruſalem after theyr captiuitie in Babilon, that Nehemias theyr capitaine ſet the people in order with ſwoordes, ſpeares, and bowes to defende the woorkemen? And that alſo euen the Princes of Iuda wrought vppon the walles and caried burdens? lykewyſe that they wrought with one hande and held theyr ſwoordes in the other? And if it were lawful for Iſraell accordynge to the fleſſhe, to vſe all meanes and pollicies to buylde vp the walles of earthly Hieruſalem, howe muche more then ought the ſpirituall Iſraelites to

Isai. 66.

Gregorie the First.

Th[e]office of byshoppes.

England converted to the faith of christ.

This vnifride was afterwarde named Boneface.

Whether any may bee compelled to the faythe.

The tyme of miracles.

Miracles of late dayes.

Howe Israell possessed the lande of promesse.

Esdra. 2. cap. 4.

vſe all poſſible meanes to buylde vp the walles and temples of ſpirituall Hieruſalem, whoſe fundation is Chriſte, wyllynge all the nations of the worlde to be buylded vppon the ſame. It is the propertie of a wyſe buylder to vſe ſuch tooles as the woorke requireth. And not at all tymes or in all woorkes to vſe one toole. For that that ſerueth in ſofte tymber, wyll not ſerue in knottie pieces, nor yet for ſtones. Th[e]expert phiſitian vſeth vehement remedies for deſperate diſeaſes: And cunninge ſurgians vſe burnynge and cuttynge if the caſe ſo require, as in cuttynge of the fynger to ſaue the hande, or in cuttyng of the hand to ſaue the hole body. Ye it hath ſumtymes ſo chaunſed that wheras men haue entended hurt, there hath good proceaded therof in fine: As he that wolde haue ſlaine Prometheus, wounded his wenne with his ſwoorde, whereby he was healed of that diſeaſe. So is god able to turne euyll into good, and to make thynges that are not, as thynges that are. Euen ſo although ſumme wyll obiecte that the deſyre of golde was the chiefe cauſe that moued the Spanyardes and Portugales to ſearche the newe founde landes, trewly albeit we ſhulde admitte it to bee the chiefe cauſe, yet dooth it not folowe that it was the only cauſe, foraſmuch as nothyng letteth but that a man may bee a warrier or a marchaunte, and alſo a Chriſtian. Therefore what ſo euer owre chiefe intente bee, eyther to obteyne worldely fame or rycheſſe, (althoughe the zeale to encreaſe Chriſtian religion ought chiefly to moue vs) I wolde to god we wolde fyrſt attempte the matter: And then I doubte not but that it wolde ſo comme to paſſe with vs as it dyd with them who of longe time after the beginning of the worlde before menne were accuſtomed to eate fleſſhe, thought it firſt ſufficient ſo to vſe them ſelues amonge beaſtes that they were not hurte of them: but ſhortly after, vſed them for theyr commoditie: Then begunne to weare theyr ſkinnes: And in fine, fell to eatynge of theyr fleſſhe, and to vſe certeine partes of them for remedies ageinſt diſeaſes. Euen ſo may theſe barbarians by the only conuerſation with the Chriſtians, (although they were enforced therto) be brought to ſuch familiaritie with ciuilitie and vertue, that not onely we maye take greate commoditie thereby, but they may alſo herewith imbibe trewe religion as a thing accidental although neyther they nor we ſhulde ſeeke the ſame. For lyke as they that goo much in the ſoonne, are coloured therewith although they go not for that purpoſe, So may the conuerſation of the Chriſtians with the gentyles induce theym to owre religion, where there is no greater cauſe of contrarye to reſyſte as is in the Iuwes and Turkes who are alredy drowned in theyr confirmed erroure. But theſe ſimple gentiles lyuinge only after the lawe of nature, may well bee lykened to a ſmoothe and bare table vnpaynted, or a white paper vnwritten, vpon the which yow may at the fyrſt paynte or wryte what yow lyſte, as yow can not vppon tables alredy paynted, vnleſſe yow raſe or blot owt the fyrſte formes. They may alſo th[e]eſlyer bee allured to the Chriſtian fayth, for that it is more agreable to the lawe of nature then eyther the cerimonious lawe of Moiſes, or portentous fables of Mahometes Alcharon. If we were therfore as deſyrous to enlarge the fayth of Chryſte as to ſeeke worldly gooddes, why do we deferre to aduenture that wherin we may doo bothe. We muſte not nowe looke for a newe Paule or doctoure of the gentiles to bee conuerted by heauenly reuelations: Or for a newe Moiſes to leade men through the ſea: Or for an Angel to cary men in the ayer from one place to an other as Habacucke the prophete was caryed by the heare of his heade from Iudea to Babilon: Or as Phylippe th[e]appoſtle was caryed by the ſpirite from Gaza to Azotus: but muſte (as ſayth the prophete Iſaias) euery man exhorte his neyghboure, and bid his broother be of good chere: That the maſon and carpenter may buylde togyther, and ſay to the glewe or cemente, it is good and faſte byndynge. What negligence and ſlackeneſſe hath hytherto byn in Chriſtian men in this kynde of buyldynge of goddes lyuely temple, the greate clerke Eraſmus hath declared in his booke intiteled Eccleſſiaſtes, whoſe woordes for the woorthyneſſe of the autoure, I haue here thowght good to rehearſe as they are wrytten by hym in the laten tounge in the fyrſte booke of the ſayde woorke. He wryteth therfore as foloweth.

The buylding of ſpirituall Hierusalem.

The conuersion of the gentiles.

The christian fayth.

Isai. 45.

Audimus quotidianas queremonias deplorantium collapſam Chriſtianam religionem, eamque ditionem quæ quondam complexa eſt vniuerſum terrarum orbem, in has anguſtias eſſe contractam. Hoc igitur quibus ex animodolet, eos decet ardentibus aſsiduiſque votis flagitare a Chriſto vt operarios dignetur mittere in meſſem ſuam, aut (vt melius dicam) ſeminatores mittere in ſegetem ſuam. Deum immortalem, quantum in orbe patet agrorum in quibus aut non dum iactum eſt ſemen Euangelicum, aut ita iactum eſt, vt plus ſit zizaniarum quam tritici. Orbis minima pars eſt Europa: Omnium florentiſsima pars eſt Græcia et Aſia minor in quam magno ſucceſſu primum a Iudæa demigrauit Euangelium. At hæc fere tota, nonne tenetur a Mahumetanis et ijs qui Chriſti nomen habent inuiſum? Iam in Aſia maiore quæ latiſsime patet, quid obſecro noſtrum eſt? quum ipſa Paleſtina vnde primo effluxit lux Euangelica, ſeruiat Allophylis? In Aphrica vero quid noſtrum eſt? Nec dubitandum eſt quin in tanta vaſtitate regionum ſint populi rudes et ſimplices qui facile poſſent ad Chriſtum alici, ſi mitterentur qui facerent bonam ſementem. Quid quod quotidie regiones hactenus incognitæ reperiuntur, ferunturque ſupereſſe quo nullus adhuc noſtratium peruenit. Omitto nunc infinitam Iudæorum vim nobis admixtam: omitto plurimos qui titulo Chriſti tegunt Ethnicos: omitto tantas ſchiſmaticorum et hæreticorum phalanges. Quantus in his eſſet prouentus Chriſto, ſi gnaui ac fideles mitterentur operarij qui iaciant ſemen bonum, qui reuellant zizaniam, qui plantent plantulas bonas, malas exterpent, qui extruant domum Dei, demoliantur ſtructuras non innitentes petræ Chriſto, denique qui metant maturam ſegetem, ſed Chriſto

Augustia Christianæ ditionis.

Presteian Aethiopia rex.

Pilapii.

me tant non ſibi, et animas Domino colligant, non opes ſibi. Nuper Aethiopiæ rex quem vulgus appellat Preſteian, per oratorem ſuum ſubmiſit ſe ſedi Romanæ, non nihil expoſtulans cum pontifice quod ea gens quum a fide Chriſti non ſit aliena, tam diu fuerit a tocius orbis paſtore neglecta. Quidam viri boni, et propagandæ religionis ſtudioſi, queruntur Pilapios Scythiæ ſeptentrionalis populum mire ſimplicem ac rudem, a neſcio quibus principibus Chriſtianis teneri ditione, ſed ita duro premi iugo humano, vt eis non imponatur ſuaue iugum Chriſti, atque ita ſpoliari bonis externis, vt non ditentur opibus euangelicis. Pulcherrimum, Deoque gratiſsimum erat dare potius quam accipere ijs quos ſtudemus Chriſto lucrifacere, ac ſic eos in ditionem noſtram recipere vt gaudeant ſe ſubiectos eſſe principibus ſub quorum imperio commodius degant quam antè degebant. Nouimus cicurare beſtias feras et horribiles, vel ad voluptatem, vel ad vſum vulgarem: et non nouimus manſuefacere homines vt ſeruiant Chriſto? Monarchæ alunt qui doceant elephantos ad ſaltandum, qui doment leones ad luſum, qui doment lynces et leopardos ad venatum: et monarcha eccleſiæ non inuenit quo homines alliciat ād amabile Chriſti ſeruicium? Scio vix vllam reperiri beluam domitu difficiliorem quam eſt Iudæus obſtinatus, et obduratus hæreticus: quanquam nullum eſt animal tam immite quod non cicuretur beneficentia et ſuauitate. E repertis regionibus euehitur aurum et gemmæ: Sed triumpho dignius erat illuc inuehere Chriſtianam ſapientiam auro precioſiorem, ac margaritum euangelicum quod omnibus diuenditis benæ comparatur. Dominus iubet ſuis rogare dominum meſsis vt extrudat operarios quod meſsis eſſet ampla, operarij pauci. Non minus opus eſt nunc rogare deum vt in tam late patentes agros ejiciat operarios, Sed excuſant omnes, alius aliud. Atqui Christiana ditio tot habet myriadas Franciſcanorum in quibus probabile eſt quamplurimos eſſe qui vere flagrant igni ſeraphico: nec pauciores ſunt myriades Dominicanorum, et in his conſentaneum eſt permultos eſſe Cherubici ſpiritus. Ex his cohortibus eligantur viri, mundo vere mortui, Chriſto viui, qui ſyncere apud barbaras gentes doceant verbum Dei. Excuſatur linguæ imperitia. Atqui principes ob humanas legationes inueniunt qui varias linguas perdiſcant: Et Themiſtocles Athenienſes vno anno ſic didicit ſermonem Aſiaticum vt abſque interprete cum rege loqui poſſet: An idem non ſtudebimus in tam ſublimi negocio? Inter barbaras et ignotas nationes Apostoli inuenerunt victum et amictum: et Deus pollicitus eſt nihil defuturum quærentibus regnum Dei. Nec miracula quidem defutura ſunt ſi res poſtulet, modo ad ſit ſyncera fides cum ſeraphica charitate, &c.

Franciscani Seraphici.
Dominicani Cherubici.
Linguæ impericia.
Miracula.

Damianus a Goes

Furthermore Damianus a Goes, wryteth in his booke *De deploratione Lappianæ gentis*, that he was the fyrſt that moued Eraſmus to ſpeake ſumwhat hereof: And that he (Eraſmus I meane) was determined to write a iuſt volume of this matter yf he had not byn preuented by death. Albeit (ſayth Damianus) in his booke entiteled Eccleſiaſtes, he dyd not keepe ſilence of ſo wicked an vngodlyneſſe, whiche ſurely is ſuche, that it may in maner make all Chriſtian men (and eſpeciallye ſuch vnto whom god hath gyuen poure and knowleage) giltie of ſo heyghnous a crime, that he may take vengeance of them in the day of iudgement before the iuſte iudge Chryſt. Nowe therfore (ſayth he) let the Chriſtian Monarches take heede what accoumpte they ſhall make before the tribunal of Chryſte at the laſte daye, when neyther fauoure, nor pardon, or flatterie can take place to bee any excuſe for the loſſe of ſo manye ſoules. And theſe be the very woordes of the woorſhipful and lerned man Damianus a Goes, wrytten to the byſſhoppe of Rome Paule the thyrde of that name, whom he further chargeth to looke diligently hereunto, as a thynge moſte chiefely perteynynge to the office of Chriſtian prelates. Mee thynke verely that the ſheepe of Europe ſhulde by this tyme be ſo well fedde, that they ſhulde by good reaſon be ſo ſtronge and mightie in Chriſtes religion (excepte they be infected with the dyſeaſe which the phiſicians caule Cachexia, beinge an euyl diſpoſition of the body whereby the more they are fed the worſe they lyke) that many ſheppardes myght well bee ſpared to bee ſent to other ſheepe which ought to be of the ſame foulde. For this purpoſe the doctoure of diuinitie when he commenſeth, hath his ſcapular caſt ouer his headde in token that he hathe forſaken the worlde for Chriſtes ſake: And his bootes on his legges in token that he ſhall euer bee in a redineſſe to go forwarde in preachynge the goſpell, as I doubte not there bee many in Englande wolde gladly doo euen amonge theſe newe gentyles if they were therto mainteyned by the ayde of the ſecular poure as in this caſe it ſhalbe requiſite for the furniture of neceſſaries hereunto apperteynynge, I muſt nowe therfore appele vnto yow, yow riche men and rulers of the worlde, to whom god hath giuen gooddes as thynges neyther good nor badde of them ſelues, but onely as they are vſed wel or euil. If yowe vſe them well, they are the gyftes of god wherwith yow may doo many thynges acceptable both to god and men. And if yow vſe them otherwyſe, yowe poſſeſſe not them, but they poſſeſſe yow, and theyr canker and ruſte (as ſaythe the Apoſtle) ſhalbe a teſtimonie ageinſt yow in the day of the great audit. Thinke not therfore that this thynge perteyneth not vnto yowe, if yowe perteyne vnto Chriſte and looke to haue any parte with hym. Conſyder with yowre ſelues if it were onely to get worldely ryches, howe redye and greedy yowe wolde bee to venture a greate deale to get a thyrde part, withowt caſtynge of any perell by lande or by ſea, as the wyttie poet Horaſe hath in fewe wordes deſcrybed the marchauntes deſyre and aduenture to obteyne rycheſſe.

To the christian princes.

The sheepe of Europe.

The doctoure of diuinitie

An admonition to riche men.

The marchant.

Impiger extremos currit mercator ad Indos,
Per mare pauperiem fugiens, per ſaxa, per ignes.

The which verſes are thus much to ſay in effecte.

The marchaunt in hope greate rycheſſe to fynde,
By fyer and by water paſſeth to Inde,
By the burnte line or Equinoctiall,
To flye from pouertie and haſarde all.

As the poet hath in theſe verſes, by the marchaunt declared the deſyre that couetous men haue to obteyne ſlippery riches, the lyke affection to obteyne worldly fame and honour, maye we ſee in valiant and noble capitaynes in the warres where they contende to put them ſelues forwarde to the moſte daungerous aduenture as to haue the forewarde of the battayle: a token ſurely of much nobilitie and manly corage. But oh immortall god? Is it not to bee lamented that men can be ſo valient, ſtowte, and in maner deſperate in theyr owne priuate matters, perteynyng onely to theyr bodies, and yet ſo coulde, negligent, and fearefull in goddes cauſe and thynges touchynge the health of theyr ſoules? If there were neyther deuyll nor lawe to accuſe men before god in this caſe, ſhall not theyr owne conſciences bee a lawe of condemnation ageynſte theym in that they haue not ſhewed that loue to mankynde, which the very lawe of nature moueth brute beaſtes to ſhewe one to an other in theyr generations? But what hope is there (excepte god wolde in maner by myracle conuerte the hartes of ſuch men) what hope is there I ſay, that they wyll depart with any of theyr gooddes, muche leſſe aduenture theyr bodies, to the furtheraunce of Chriſtes religion in theſe regions beinge ſo farre from them, wheras many ſhewe lyttle loue, charitie, or liberalitie (if not rather crueltie, tyrannie, and oppreſſion) to theyr poore neighbours and brootherne dwelling euen at home at theyr owne elbowes. But as this couetouſneſſe is to bee reproued, ſo is the liberalitie of ſuch to be commended as haue byn at greate coaſte and charges in ſettynge forwarde ſuche viages: wherein not onely the marchauntes of London, but alſo diuers noble men and gentelmen aſwell of the counſayle as other, which bothe with theyr money and furtheraunce otherwyſe haue furnyſſhed and ſent furth certeyne ſhyppes for the diſcouerynge of ſuche landes and regions as were heretofore vnknowen, haue herein deſerued immortall fame, for as much as in ſuch attemptes and daungerous vyages, they haue ſhewed no ſmaule liberalitie vppon vncerteyne hope of gayne: wherein they haue deſerued ſo much the greater prayſe as theyr intent ſeemed to bee rather to further honeſt enterpriſes then for reſpecte of vantage. And here certeynely in the mention of theſe viages I myght ſeeme vngratefull if I ſhulde omitte to giue dewe commendations to the two chiefe capitaynes of the ſame as the woorthy knyght ſyr Hugh Wylloby and the excellent pilotte Rycharde Chaunceler who haue therein aduentured theyr lyues for the commoditie of theyr countrey: Men doubtleſſe woorthye for theyr noble attemptes to bee made knightes of the Ocean or otherwyſe preferred if euer god ſende them home ageyne although they fayle of theyr purpoſe. For as ſuche haue obteyned abſolute glory that haue browght great thynges to paſſe, ſo haue they deſerued immortall fame which haue only attempted the fame: foraſmuch as fortune (who ſumtymes fauoureth the vnworthyeſt) is not in the poure of man. Xerſes obteyned glorie in makynge a bridge ouer the ſea Helleſpontus ioynynge Europe to Aſia, and Darius ouer Boſphorus when he paſſed with his armye towarde the Scythians. No leſſe fame and commendation (although not lyke glory) deſerued Demetrius, Ceſar, Calligula, and Seleucus Nicanor, whiche attempted to cutte in ſundre certeyne places cauled Iſthmi, (beinge narrowe portions of lande ſo diuidynge twoo ſeas, that there is no paſſage from the one to the other) and yet neuer finiſſhed that they tooke in hande, beinge hyndered eyther by deathe, warres, or other chaunces. The auncient Romans and Greekes gaue ſuch glorye vnto them that had eyther well deſerued of the common welthe, or otherwyſe attempted ſuch great enterpriſes as might bee profitable for mankynde, that after theyr death they cauſed Images of golde, ſyluer, braſſe, Iuery, and marble to bee made to theyr lykeneſſe, and the fame to be placed in theyr ſolemne haules, palaices, or temples, with certeyne verſes made to the commendation of them whom the Images repreſented. And this no leſſe to prouoke and encorage other forwarde natures to th[e]emulation of their vertues, then alſo to geue them the due honoure of theyr iuſt deſertes. And ſurely if euer ſence the begynnynge of the worlde any enterpryſe haue deſerued greate prayſe as a thynge atchyued by men of heroicall vertue, doubtleſſe there was neuer any more woorthy commendation and admiration then is that whiche owre nation haue attempted by the north ſeas to diſcouer the mightie and riche empire of Cathay, by which vyage not only golde, ſyluer, precious ſtones, and ſpices, may be browght hether by a ſafer and ſhorter way, but alſo much greater matters may hereof enſewe in tyme if it ſhall pleaſe God to gyue vnto Chriſtian men ſuch paſſage into thoſe regions, whereby ſuch familiaritie may further growe betwene the Chriſtian princes

The deſyre of wordely fame.

Men are slothfull in goddes cause.

Vyages from Englande.

Syr Hugh Wylloby and Rycharde Chaunceler.

Glory and fame.

The rewarde of noble enterprises.

The vyage to Cathay by the north seas.

Societie betwene the Tartars and the Christians
The Turke.
The Sophie, Tambulanes.
Baiasetes.

of Europe and the greate emperoure of Cathay, that (as wryteth Haytho *De ſocietate Chriſtianorum et Tartarorum*) there can nothynge be imagined more effectuall for the confuſion of the Turke if thc great Cham of Cathay and the Sophie of Perſia on the one ſyde, and the Chriſtian Princes on the other ſyde, ſhulde with one conſent inuade his dominions, as dyd Tamburlanes Th[e]emperoure of the Tartars who abowte the yeare of Chriſte. M. CCC. lxxxxviii. toke priſoner Baiaſetes Ottomanus Th[e]emperoure of the Turkes and ſlewe. xx. thouſande of his men in one battayle beſyde many other great victories, as yowe may further reade in this booke in the hyſtorie of Paulus Iouius. And to haue ſayde thus muche in maner of a preface it may ſuffice.

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION I.

Pietro Martire.

The First Decade, . *Of the Ocean.*
First printed in 1511.

The Second Decade, . *Of the supposed Continent.*

The Third Decade, . [*The discovery of the Pacific by Vasco Nunez de Balboa, on the 25th September* 1513. *The voyages of Pedro Arias, and Sebastian Cabot.*]
The Second and Third Decades were first printed in 1516.

Of the new found islands (i.e. Yucatan and Mexico.)

First printed in 1521.]

[This eloquent Dedication first appeared in the Second and enlarged Edition of the *Decades*, the printing of which was finished at Alcala on 9th November 1516. Nearly the whole of the following First *Decas* (*pp.* 65-105) had, however, been previously printed in 1511, and was for the most part *written* even earlier than that year.]

¶ To the moste noble Prince and Catholike kynge, Charles, Peter Martyr of Angleria wysheth perpetuall felicitie.

HE diuine prouidence, frome the tyme that he fyrſte created the worlde, hathe reſerued vnto this day the knowleage of the great and large Ocean ſea: In the which tyme he hath opened the ſame, chiefely vnto yowe (moſte mightie Prince) by the good fortune and happie ſucceſſe of yowr grandfather by yowr mothers ſyde. The ſame prouidence (I knowe not by what deſtenie) hath brought me owt of my natiue countrey of Milane, and owt of the citie of Rome (where I continued almoſt. x. yeares) into Spaine, that I myght particularlye collecte, theſe marueylous and newe thynges, which ſhoulde otherwyſe perhappes haue line drowned in the whirlepoole of obliuion: forasmuch as the Spanyardes (men woorthy [of] greate commendation) had onely care to the generall inuentions of theſe thynges. Notwithſtandinge, I doo not chalenge vnto me only, the thankes of the trauaile beſtowed herein, wheras the chiefe rewarde therof is due to Aſcanius vicounte Cardinal, who perceauynge that I was wyllyng to departe owt of the citie to be-preſent at the warres of Granatum, diſſuaded me from my purpoſe. But ſeing that I was fully reſolued to departe, exhorted and required me to wryte vnto hym ſuch newes as were famous in Spayne and woorthy to be noted. I tooke therfore my iorney into Spaine chiefely for the deſyre I had to ſee th[e]expedition whiche was prepared ageynſt the enemies of the fayth: foraſmuche as in Italye, by reaſon of the diſſention among the Princes, I coulde fynde nothynge wherewith I myght feede my wytte, beinge a younge man deſyrous of knowleage and experience of thynges. I was therefore preſente at the warres: from whenſe I writte to Cardinal Aſcanius, and by ſundry epiſtels certifyed hym of ſuch thynges as I thought moſte woorthye to be put in memorie. But when I perceaued that his fortune was turned from a natural moother to a ſteppedame, I ceaſed from wrytynge. Yet after I ſawe, that by th[e]ouerthrowe of the enemies of owre faythe, Spayne was pourged of the Moores as of an euyll weede plucked vp by the rootes, Leaſte I ſhulde beſtowe my ſlippery yeares in vnprofitable Idleneſſe I was mynded to returne to Italie. But the ſinguler benignitie of bothe the Catholyke Kynge and queene nowe departed, and theyr large promiſes towarde me vppon my reſurne from my legacie of Babilon, deteyned me frome my purpoſe. Yet dooth it not repent me that I drewe backe my foote: Aſwel for that I ſee in no other place of the worlde at this time the lyke woorthy thinges to bee done: As alſo that in maner throwgh owt all Italy, by reaſon of the diſcorde of the Chriſtian

The largenes of the Ocean vnknowen to this day.

Cardinal Ascanius.

The warres of Granatum ageynst the Moores.

The autour was sent ambassadour to the Soltane of Alcayr in Egypte.

Italy disquieted with warres.

The sequeles of warre.

Princes, I perceaued all thynges to runne headelonge into ruine, the countreys to be deſtroyed and made fatte with human bludde: The cities ſacked, virgines and matrones with theyr gooddes and poſſeſſions caried away as captiues and miſerable innocentes without offence to be ſlayne vnarmed within theyr owne houſes. Of the which calamities, I dyd not onely heare the lamentable owtcryes, but dyd alſo feele the ſame. For euen the bludde of mine owne kinſfolkes and frendes, was not free from that crueltie. As I was therfore muſynge with my ſelfe of theſe thynges, the Cardinal of Arragonie, after that he had ſeene the two fyrſte bookes of my Decades wrytten to Aſcanius,

Kynge Frederike.

required me in the name of kynge Frederike his vncle, to put foorth the other eyght epiſtell bookes. In the meane tyme alſo, while I was voyde of all care as touchynge the

Leo the tenth, byshoppe of Rome.

matters of the Ocean, the Apoſtolicall meſſengers of the byſſhoppe of Rome Leo the tenth, (by whoſe holſome counſayle and autoritie we truſte the calamities of Italy ſhalbe fynyſſhed) rayſed me as it were frome ſleape, and encoraged me to proceade as I had begunne. To his holyneſſe I writte two Decades compryſed in ſhort bokes after the maner of epiſtels, and added them to the fyrſt, which was printed withowt myne aduiſe, as ſhall further appeare by the preface folowynge.

Spayne subdued from the Moores.

But nowe I returne to yow (moſt noble Prince) from whom I haue ſumwhat digreſſed. Therfore wheras yowr graundefathers by your moothers ſyde, haue ſubdued all Spayne vnder yowr dominion except onely one corner of the ſame, and haue alſo lefte

The kyn[g]dome of Naples.

yowe the kyngedome of Naples with the frutefull Ilandes of owr ſeas, it is ſuerly a greate thynge and woorthy to be noted in owre cronacles. But not offendynge the reuerence due

Note, frome the begynnyng of the worlde.

to owre prediceſſors, what ſo euer frome the begynnynge of the worlde hath byn doone or wrytten to this day, to my iudgement ſeemeth but little, if wee conſyder what newe landes and countreys, what newe ſeas, what ſundry nations and tounges, what golde mynes, what treaſuries of perles they haue lefte vnto yowre hyghneſſe, beſyde other reuenues. The whiche, what they are and howe greate, theſe three Decades ſhall declare.

Come therfore moſte noble Prince elected of God, and enioy that hyghe eſtate of thynges not yet vnderſtode to men. We offer vnto yowe the Equinoctiall line hetherto

The temperatness of the Equinoctial vnknowen to the owlde wryters.

vnknowen and burnte by the furious heate of the ſoonne and vnhabitable after the opinion of the owlde wryters a fewe excepted: But nowe founde to bee moſt repleniſſhed with people, faire, frutefull, and moſte fortunate, with a thowſande Ilandes crowned with golde and bewtifull perles, beſyde that greate portion of earth ſuppoſed to bee parte of the firme

Continente or firme lande as bygge as thre Europes

lande, excedynge in quantitie three Europes. Come therfore and embraſe this newe worlde, and ſuffer vs no longer to conſume in deſyre of yowr preſence. From henſe, from henſe I ſaye (moſt noble younge Prince) ſhall inſtrumentes be prepared for yow, whereby al the worlde ſhalbe vnder yowr obeyſaunce.

Ryches are the instrumentes of conquestes.

And thus I byd yowr maieſtie farewell: To whoſe taſte if I ſhal perceaue the fruites of this my tyllage to be delectable, I wyll hereafter doo my endeuoure that yowe maye receaue the ſame more abundauntly. From Madrid. The day before the Calendes of October, In the yeare of. Chryſte. M. D. X V I.

FINIS.

¶ THE FIRSTE BOOKE OF THE DECADES OF THE OCEAN, WRITTEN BY PETER MARTYR OF Angleria, Milenoes, counſiler to the kyng of Spayne and Protonotarie Apoſtolicall, To *Aſcanius Sphorcia*, vicount Cardinall. etc.

1

THE REVERENDE AND thanckefull antiquite was accuſtomed to eſteme thoſe men as goddes, by whoſe induſtrie and magnanimitie ſuche Landes and Regions were diſcouered, as were vnknowen to theyr prediceſſoures. But vnto vs hauynge onely one god whom we honour in triplicitie of perſon, this reſteth, that albeit we do not woorſhip that kind of men with diuine honoure, yet do we reuerence them, and woorthely maruell at theyr noble actes and enterpriſes. Vnto kynges and princes we gyue due obeyſaunce, by whoſe gouernaunce and furtheraunce they haue bin ayded, to perfurme theyr attemptes. We commende bothe, and for theyr iuſt deſertes worthely extoll them. Wherfore, as concernyng the Ilandes of the weſt Ocean, lately diſcouered, and of the auctours of the ſame, (whiche thynge you deſyre by your letters to knowe) I wyll begynne at the fyrſt auctoure therof, leſte I be iniurious to any man. Take it therfore as foloweth.

The reward of vertue

The Ilandes of the weste Ocean.

¶ *Chriſtophorus Colonus* (other wiſe called *Columbus*) A gentilman of Italy, borne in the citie of *Genua*, perſwaded Fernando and Elyzabeth, catholike prynces, that he doubted not to fynde certayne Ilandes of *India*, nere vnto owre Occean ſea, if they wolde furnyſſhe hym with ſhyppes and other thynges apperteynynge. Affyrminge that therby not onely the Chriſtian religion myght be enlarged, but Spayne alſo enryched by the great plentie of golde, pearles, precious ſtones, and ſpices, whiche might be founde there. At the lengthe three ſhyppes were appoynted hym at the kinges charges: of the which one was a great caracte with deckes: and the other twoo were light marchaunte ſhyppes without deckes, whiche the Spaniardes call *Carauelas*. Thus he departed from the coſtes of Spaine about the calendes of September, in the yere of Chriſt 1492. and ſet forward on his viage, being accompanied with. CC. xx. [two hundred and twenty] Spanyardes. The fortunate Ilandes (as manye thinke them to be, whiche the Spaniardes call *Canariæ*, found but of late dayes) are diſtaunte from the Ilandes of *Gades*, a thouſande and twoo hundreth myles, accordyng to theyr accompte: for they ſay they are diſtant three hundreth leaques: wheras ſuch as are expert ſea men, affyrme that euery leaque conteyneth foure myles, after theyr ſupputations. Theſe Ilandes were called fortunate, for the temperate ayre whiche is in them. For neyther the coldeneſſe of wynter is ſharpe vnto them, nor the heate of ſommer intollerable. Yet ſome men are of opinion, that thoſe were in olde tyme called the fortunate Ilandes, whiche the Portugales call *Capo Verde*. *Colonus* therfore ſayled fyrſte to the Ilandes of *Canariæ*, to the intente there to refreſhe his ſhyppes with freſhe water and fuell, before he committed him ſelfe to thys ſo laborious a vyage. And bycauſe I haue here made mention of the Ilandes of *Canariæ*: It ſhall not be muche from my purpoſe, to declare howe of vnknowen they became knowen, and of ſaluage and wilde, better manured. For by the longe courſe of manye yeres, they were forgotten, and remayned as vnknowen.

Chriſtophorus Colonus.

India.

The fyrst viage of Colonus.

The Ilandes of Canarie.

Gades or Cals mals.

A leaque, what it conteyneth by sea.

The fortunate Ilandes.

Cabouerde.

Theſe ſeuen Ilandes (therfore) called the *Canaries*, were founde by chaunce by a frenche man, called *Betanchor*, by the permiſſion of queene Katharine, protectrixe of kyng Iohn her ſon, while he was yet in his nonage, about the yere of Chriſte. M. CCCC. V. This *Betanchor* inuaded twoo of theſe Ilandes called *Lancelotus* and *Fortiſuentura*, whiche he inhabited and brought to better culture. He beinge deade, his ſon and heire ſolde bothe the ſayde Ilandes to certayne Spaniardes.

The ſeuen Ilandes of Canarie.

Betanchor A frenche man subdued the ilandes of Canarie

Lancelotus.

Fortisuentura.

After this, *Fernandus Peraria* and his wyfe, inuaded *Ferrea* and *Gomera*. The other three were ſubdued in our tyme. *Grancanaria*, by *Petrus de Vera*, citezen of the noble citie of *Xericium*, and Michaell of *Moxica*.

Ferrea.

Gomera.

Grancanaria

Palma. Tenerifen. Alphonsus Lugo.

Palma and *Teneriſen*, by *Alphonſus Lugo*, at the kynges charges. *Gomera* and *Ferrea* were eaſely ſubdued: But the matter wente harde with *Alphonſus Lugo*. For that naked and wylde nation, fyghtinge onely with ſtones and clubbes, droue his armie to flighte at the fyrſte aſſaulte, and ſlewe about foure hundreth of his men. But at the length he ouercame them. And thus all the Ilandes of *Canariæ* were added to the dominion of Spayne. From theſe Ilandes *Colonus* directynge his viage towarde the weſte, folowinge the fallinge of the ſonne, but declining ſomwhat towarde the left hande, ſayled on forwarde. xxxiii. dayes continually, hauynge onely the fruition of the heauen and the water. Then the Spanyardes whiche were accompanied with hym, beganne fyrſte to murmure ſecretely among them ſelues: and ſhortly after with wordes of reproche ſpake euyll of *Colonus* theyr gouernoure, and conſulted with them ſelues, eyther to rydde hyin out of the waye, orelles to caſt hym into the ſea: Ragyng that they were deceyued of a ſtraunger, an outlandiſhe man, a Ligurian, a Genues, and brought into ſuche daungerous places, that they myght neuer returne ageyne. And after. xxx. days were paſte, they furiouſely cryed out againſte him, and threatned him that he ſhulde paſſe no further. But he euer with ientyll wordes and large promyſes, appeaſed theyr furie, and prolonged day after day, ſome tyme deſyring them to beare with hym yet a whyle, and ſome time putting them in remembrance that if they ſhulde attempte any thinge agaynſt him, or other wiſe diſobey hym, it wolde be reputed for treaſon. Thus after a fewe dayes, with cherefull hartes they eſpied the lande longe looked for. In this fyrſt nauigation, he diſcouered. vi. Ilandes, wherof twoo were exceding great: Of whiche, the one he called *Hiſpaniola*, and the other *Iohanna*. But at that tyme he knewe not perfectely that *Iohanna* (other wyſe called *Cuba*,) was an Ilande. As they coaſted alonge by the ſhore of certayne of theſe Ilandes, they harde nyghtingales ſynge in the thycke woodes in the month of Nouember. They found alſo great riuers of freſhe water, and naturall hauens, of capacitie to harborowe greate nauies of ſhippes. Saylinge by the coaſtes of *Iohanna*, from the northe poynte to the weſt, he rode lyttell leſſe then eyght hundreth miles (for they call it a hundreth and foure ſcore leaques) ſuppoſyng that it had byn the continent or fyrme land, bicauſe he coulde nother fynd the landes ende, nor any token of the ende, as farre as he coulde iudge with his eye: wherfore he determined to returne backe agayne, beyng therto partly enforced by the roughneſſe of the ſea. For the ſea banckes of the Ilande of *Iohanna*, by ſondrye wyndinges and turnynges, bende them ſelues ſo muche towarde the Northe, that the northnortheaſte wynde roughely toſſed the ſhyppes by reaſon of the wynter. Turnynge therfore the ſtemmes of his ſhyppes towarde the Eaſte, he affyrmed that he had founde the Ilande of *Ophir*, whyther Salomons ſhyppes ſayled for golde. But the deſcription of the Coſmographers well conſidered, it ſeemeth that bothe theſe, and the other Ilandes adioynyng, are the Ilandes of *Antilia*. This Ilande he called *Hiſpaniola*: on whoſe nortne ſyde as he approched nere to the lande, the keele or bottome of the biggeſte veſſell ranne vpon a blynde rocke couered with water, and cloue in ſunder. But the playneneſſe of the rocke was a helpe to them that they were not drowned. Makynge haſte therfore with the other two ſhips to helpe them, they brought awaye al the men without hurte. Here comming fyrſt a land, they ſawe certayne men of the Ilande: who perceauynge an vnknowen nation comminge towarde them, flocked together and ranne al into the thycke wooddes, as it hadde byn hares courced with grehoundes. Owre men purſuing them, tooke onely one woman, whom they brought to the ſhyppes: where fyllinge her with meate and wyne, and apparelinge her, they let her departe to her company. Shortly after a greate multitude of them came runnynge to the ſhore to beholde this newe nation, whom they thought to haue diſcended from heauen. They caſt them ſelues by heapes into the ſea, and came ſwimminge to the ſhyppes, bryngyng golde with them, which they chaunged with owre men for erthen pottes, drinking glaſſes, poyntes, pynnes, hawkes belles, lokinge glaſſes, and ſuche other trifles. Thus growing to further familiaritie, owre men were honorably enterteyned of the kynge of that parte of the Ilande, whoſe name was *Guaccanarillus*: for it hath many kynges, as when Eneas arriued in Italy, he founde *Latium* diuided into many kyngedomes and prouinces, as *Latium*, *Mezeutium*, *Turnum*, and *Tarchontem*, which were ſeperated with narow boundes, as ſhall more largely appere hereafter. At the euen tyde about the faulyng of the ſonne, when owre men went to praier, and kneled on their knees after the maner of the Chriſtians, they dyd the lyke alſo. And after what maner ſo euer they ſawe them praye to the croſſe, they folowed them in all poyntes as well as they coulde. They ſhewed much humanitie towardes owre men: and helped them with theyr lighters or ſmall boates (whiche they call *Canoas*) to vnlade theyr broken ſhyppe: And that with ſuche celeritie and cherefulneſſe, that no frende for frende, or kynſeman for kynſeman, in ſuche caſe moued with pitie, coulde do more. Theyr boates are made only of one tree, made holow with a certain ſharpe ſtone (for they haue no yron.) And are very longe and narowe. Many affirme that they haue ſene ſome of them with fortie ores. The wylde and myſcheuous people called *Canibales* or *Caribes*, whiche were accuſtomed to eate mannes fleſſhe (and called of the olde writers, *Anthropophagi*) moleſt them excedyngly, inuadynge theyr countrey, takynge them captiue, kyllyng and eatyng them. As owre men ſayled to the Ilandes of theſe meke and humayne people, they leſte the Ilandes of the *Canibales*, in maner in the middeſt of theyr viage towarde the ſouth. They complayned that theyr Ilandes were no leſſe vexed with the incurſions of theſe manhuntyng *Canibales* when they go forth a rouynge to ſeeke theyr praye: then are

2 Colonus men rebel against hym.

Faire wordes and promises.

Hispaniola. Iohanna.

Nightingales synge in Nouember.

The Ilande of Ophir.

The ilandes of Antilia.

A shypwrack

The people of the ilande. Naked people.

Expert swimmers. Gold for erth and glasse. Many kinges

Relygious and humaine people.

Canoas.

Monoryla. 3

They haue no Iren. Canibales or Caribes Anthropophagi.

The cruelte of the Canibales.

other tame beaſtes, of Lyons and Tigers. Such chyldren as they take, they geld to make them fat as we doo cocke chikyns and younge hogges, and eate them when they are wel fedde: of ſuche as they eate, they fyrſt eate the intralles and extreme partes, as handes, feete, armes, necke, and heade. The other moſte fleſſhy partes, they pouder for ſtore, as we do peſtelles of porke and gammondes of bakon. Yet do they abſteyne from eatynge of women and counte it vyle. Therfore ſuche younge women as they take, they keepe for increace, as we doo hennes to leye egges. The olde women, they make theyr drudges. They of the Ilandes (which we may nowe caul owres) bothe the men and the women when they perceaue the *Canibales* coming, haue none other ſhyfte but onely to flie: for althoughe they vſe very ſharpe arrowes made of reedes, yet are they of ſmall force to repreſſe the furie of the *Canibales*: for euen they them ſelues confeſſe, that tenne of the *Canibals* are able to ouercome a hundreth of them if they encountre with them. Theyr meate is a certeyne roote which they cal *Ages*: muche lyke a nauew roote in fourme and greatneſſe: but of ſweete taſte, muche lyke a greene cheſtnutte. They haue alſo an other kynde of rootes, whiche they call *Iucca*, wherof they make breade in lyke maner. They vſe *Ages* more often roſted or ſodden, then to make breade therof. But they neuer eate *Iucca*, excepte it be firſte ſliced and preſſed, (for it is ful of lycoure) and then baked or ſodden. But this is to be marueled at, that the iuyce of this roote is a poyſon as ſtrong as *Aconitum*, ſo that if it be dronke it cauſeth preſent death, and yet the breade made of the maſſe therof, is of good taſte and holſome, as all they haue proued. They make alſo an other kynde of breade of a certayne pulſe, called *Panicum*, muche lyke vnto wheate, wherof is great plentie in the dukedome of Mylane, Spayne, and Granatum. But that of this countrey is longer by a ſpanne, ſomewhat ſharpe towarde the ende, and as bygge as a mannes arme in the brawne: The graynes wherof are ſette in a maruelous order, and are in fourme ſomwhat lyke a peaſe. While they be foure and vnripe, they are white: but when they are ripe they be very blacke. When they are broken, they be whyter then ſnowe. This kynde of grayne, they call *Maizium*. Golde is of ſome eſtimation among them: for ſome of them hange certain ſmall pieces therof at theyr eares and noſethrilles. A lyttell beyonde this place, our men wente a lande for freſſhe water, where they chaunced vpon a Ryuer whoſe ſande was myxed with muche golde. They founde there no kindes of foure foted beaſtes excepte three kyndes of lyttell conyes. Theſe Ilandes alſo nouriſhe ſerpentes: but ſuch as are without hurt. Lykewiſe wylde geeſe, turtle doues, and duckes, much greater then ours, and as whyte as ſwannes, with heades of purple coloure. Alſo Popiniaies, of the whiche ſome are greene, ſome yelowe, and ſome lyke them of *India*, with yelowe rynges about theyr neckes, as Plinie deſcribeth them. Of theſe they broughte fortie with them, of moſte liuely and delectable coloures, hauyng theyr fethers entermengled with greene, yelowe, and purple, whiche varietie, deliteth the ſenſe not a litle. Thus muche thought I good to ſpeake of Popingiaies, (ryghte noble Prynce) ſpecially to this intente, that albeit the opinion of Chriſtophorus Colonus (who affirmeth theſe Ilandes to be parte of *India*) dothe not in all poyntes agree with the iudgement of auncient wryters as touchynge the bigneſſe of the Sphere and compaſſe of the Globe as concernynge the nauigable portion of the ſame beynge vnder vs, yet the Popingiaies and many other thynges brought from thence, doo declare that theſe Ilandes ſauoure ſomwhat of *India*, eyther beynge nere vnto it, or elles of the ſame nature: foraſmuche as Ariſtotle alſo, about the ende of his booke *De Cælo et Mundo*, and likewiſe *Seneca*, with diuerſe other authours not ignorant in Coſmography, do affirme that *India* is no longe tracte by ſea, diſtante from Spayne by the weſte Ocean, for the ſoyle of theſe Ilandes, bryngeth forthe Maſtix, Aloes, and ſundrye other ſweete gummes and ſpyces as doth *India*. Cotton alſo of the goſſampine tree, as in *India* in the countrey of the people called Seres.

¶ The languages of all the nations of theſe Ilandes, maye well be written with our Latine letters. For they cal heauen *Turei*. A houſe, *Boa*. Golde, *Cauni*. A good man, *Taino*. Nothing, *Mayani*. All other wordes of theyr language, they pronounce as playnely as we doo the Latine tongue. In theſe Ilandes they founde no trees knowen vnto them, but pyne app[l]e trees, and date trees: And thoſe of maruelous heyght and exceding harde, by reaſon of the greate moyſtneſſe and fatneſſe of the grounde, with continuall and temperate heate of the ſonne, whiche endureth ſo all the hole yere. They playnely affyrme the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola* to be the moſt fruiteful lande that the heauen compaſſeth aboute, as ſhall more largely appere hereafter in the particular deſcription of the ſame, whiche we intende to ſette foorthe when we ſhall be better inſtructed.

Thus makynge a leage of frendſhyppe with the kynge, and leauynge with hym. xxxviii. men to ſearche the Ilande, he departed to Spayne takyng with hym. x. of the inhabitauntes to lerne the Spaniſhe tongue, to the intent to vſe them afterwarde for interpretours. *Colonus* therfore at his returne, was honorably receaued of the kyng and queene: who cauſed him to ſytte in theyr preſence, whiche is a token of great loue and honoure amonge the Spaniardes. He was alſo made Admirall of the Ocean: and his brother goue[r]noure of the Iland.

Towarde the ſecond viage, he was furniſhed with. x[v]i. ſhippes: wherof three were great caractes of a thouſand tunne: xii. were of that ſorte, whiche the Spaniardes call *Carauelas*: without deckes: and twoo other of the ſame ſorte ſomewhat bygger, and more apte to beare deckes, by reaſon of the gretneſſe of theyr maſtes.

Ages.
Rootes in the steede of meate.
Iucca.
Breade of rootes.
An herbe of a straunge nature.
Maizium.
Golde in estimation.
Golde in the sandes of ryuers.
Serpentes without venime.
Turtle doues
Duckes.
Popingiayes.
Plini.
These Ilandes are parte of India.
The Indians are Antipodes to the spaniardes.
Aristotle.
Seneca.
India not far from Spaine
Mastix.
Aloe.
Gossampyne cotton or bombase
Seres.
The language of these Indians
Trees and frutes vnknowen to vs.
Fat and moyste grounde.
Heate continuall and temperate.
The fruitfulnes of hispaniolā
The seconde viage of Colonus.

He had alſo a thouſand and two hundreth armed footemen well appoynted: Amonge whiche were many artificers, as ſmythes, carpenters, myners, and ſuche other: Certayne horſemen alſo, wel armed: Likewiſe mares, ſhiepe, heyghfers, and ſuch other of bothe kindes for increaſe. Lykewiſe all kynde of pulſe or grayne and corne, as wheate, barlye, rye, beanes and peaſe, and ſuche other, as well for food as to ſowe: Beſyde vynes, plantes and ſeedes, of ſuche trees, fruites, and herbes, as thoſe countreyes lacke. And (not to be forgotten) ſundry kindes of artillery and iron tooles, as bowes, arrowes, croſſebowes, bylles, hargabuſes, brode ſwoordes, large targettes, pikes, mattockes, ſhoouelles, hammers, nayles, ſawes, axes, and ſuche other. Thus beynge furniſhed accordyngely, they ſet forwarde from the Ilandes of *Gades*, (nowe called *Cals*,) the. vii. day before the calendes of October, in the yere of Chriſte. 1493. and arriued at the Ilandes of *Canarie*, at the calendes of October. Of theſe Ilandes, the laſte is called *Ferrea*, in whiche there is no other water that maye be drunke, but onely that is gathered of the dewe whiche continually diſtilleth from one onely tree growynge on the higheſt backe of the Ilande, and falleth into a rounde trenche made with mannes hande. We were infourmed of theſe thynges within fewe dayes after his departure. What ſhal ſuccede, we wyl certifie yowe hereafter. Thus fare-ye well, from the courte, at the Ides of Nouember. 1493.

Corne and sedes to sowe.

Tooles and artillery.

Water droppyng from a tree continually.

¶ The seconde booke of the fyrste Decade *to* Aſcanius Phorcia, *vicounte Cardinall*, etc.

Methymna Campi.

Castella Vetus.

Gades

5

The Iland of Ferrea.

Ilands of the Canibales.

The Iland of Dominica.

viii. hundreth and xx. leaques in. xxi. dayes.

Lysertes,

The Ilande of Galanta.

The Iland of Guadalupea.

Vilages of. xx or. xxx. houses

The building of theyr houses.

Owe repete (ryghte honorable Prynce) that yowe are deſirous to knowe what newes we haue in Spayne from the newe worlde: and that thoſe thynges haue greatly delyted you which I wrote vnto yowre highneſſe of the fyrſte nauigation. Yowe ſhal now therefore receaue what hath ſucceded. *Methymna Campi*, is a famous towne in high Spayne in the reſpecte frome yowe, and is in that parte of Spayne whiche is called *Caſtella Vetus*: beynge diſtante from *Gades* about. xl. myles. Here the courte remayned, when aboute the. ix. of the kalendes of Aprell in this yere of nynetie and foure, there were poſtes ſente to the kynge and queene, certifyinge them that there were. xii. ſhippes come from the newe Ilandes and arryued at *Gades*. But the gouernoure of the ſhyppes ſente worde to the kynge and quene that he had none other matter to certifie them of by the poſtes, but onely that the Admiral with fiue ſhippes and. iiii. ſcore and tenne men remayned ſtyll in *Hiſpaniola*, to ſearche the ſecretes of the Ilande. And that as touching other matters, he hym ſelfe wolde ſhortly make relation in theyr preſence, by worde of mouthe. Therfore the daye before the nones of Aprel, he came to the courte himſelfe. What I learned of him and other faythefull and credible men whiche came with hym from the Admirall, I wyl reherſe vnto yowe in ſuch order as they declared the ſame to me when I demaunded them. Take it therfore as foloweth. The thyrde daye of the Ides of October, departynge from *Ferrea*, the laſte of the Ilandes of *Canariæ*, and from the coſtes of Spayne with a nauie of. xvii. ſhippes, they ſayled. xxi. dayes before they came to any Ilande: inclyning of purpoſe more towarde the lefte hand then at the fyrſt viage, folowyng the northnortheaſt wynde: and arriued fyrſt at the Ilandes of the *Canibales*, or *Caribes* of which, onely the fame was knowen to our men. Amonge theſe, they chaunſed fyrſte vpon one, ſo beſet with trees, that they coulde not ſe ſo muche as an elle ſpace of bare earthe or ſtony grounde. This they called *Dominica*, bicauſe they found it on the ſunday. They taried here no tyme, bycauſe they ſawe it to be deſerte. In the ſpace of theſe. xxi. dayes, they thynke that they ſayled viii. hundreth and. xx. leaques, the Northenortheaſt wynde was ſo full with them, and ſo freſſhely folowed the ſterne of theyr ſhyppes. After they hadde ſayled a lyttell further, they eſpied dyuerſe Ilandes replenyſſhed with ſundrye kyndes of trees, from the whiche came fragrant ſauours of ſpyces and ſweete gummes. Here they ſawe neyther man nor beaſte, except certayne lifartes of huge bigneſſe, as they reported whiche went alande to viewe the countrey. This Iland they cauled *Galana*, or *Galanta*. From the cape or poynt of this Iland, eſpying a mountayne a farre of, they ſayled thyther. Aboute. xxx. myles from this mountayne, they ſawe a ryuer diſcending whiche ſeemed to be a token of ſome great and large fludde. This is the fyrſte lande whiche they founde inhabited from the Ilandes of *Canariæ*, and is an Ilande of the *Canibales*, as they lerned by the interpretours whiche they tooke with them from *Hiſpaniola* into Spayne at theyr fyrſte viage. Serchynge the Ilande, they founde innumerable villages of. xx. houſes or. xxx. at the mooſte, ſette rounde abowte in order, makynge the ſtreete in coompaſſe lyke a markette place. And foraſmuch as I haue made mention of theyr houſes, it ſhal not be greately from my purpoſe to deſcribe in what maner they are buylded. They are made rounde lyke belles or rounde pauylions. Theyr frame is rayſed of excedynge hyghe trees, ſette cloſe together and faſt rampaired in the grounde, ſo ſtandyng a ſlope and bending inward that the toppes of the trees ioyne

togeʒther and beare one agaynſte an other, hauynge alſo within the houſe, certayne ſtronge and ſhorte props or poſtes, whiche ſuſteyne the trees from fallynge. They couer them with the leaues of date trees and other trees ſtrongly compact and hardened, wherewith they make them cloſe from wynde and wether. At the ſhort poſtes or proppes within the houſe, they tie ropes of the cotton of goſſampine trees, or other ropes made of certayne long and toughe rotes much lyke vnto the ſhrubbe called *Spartum*, wherof in olde tyme they vſed to make bondes for vynes and cabuls and ropes for ſhyppes. Theſe they tye ouerthwarte the houſe from poſte to poſte. On theſe they ley as it were certayne mattreſſes made of the cotton of the goſſampine trees, whiche growe plentifully in theſe Ilandes. This cotton the Spaniardes call *Algodon*, and the Italians *Bombaſine*. And thus they ſleepe in hangynge beddes. At the enteraunce of one of theyr houſes, they ſawe two Images of woodde lyke vnto ſerpentes, whiche they thoughte had byn ſuch idoles as they honour. But they lerned afterwarde that they were ſette there onely for coomlyneſſe. For they knowe none other god then the Sunne and Moone, althoughe they make certaine Images of goſſampine cotton to the ſimilitude of ſuch phantaſies as they ſay appere to them in the nyghte. Our men found in theyr houſes, all kyndes of erthen veſſels, not muche vnlyke vnto oures. They founde alſo in theyr kichens, mannes fleſſhe, duckes fleſſhe, and gooſe fleſſhe, al in one pot: and other on the ſpittes redye to be layde to the fire. Entrynge into theyr inner lodgynges, they founde faggottes of the bones of mennes armes and legges, which they reſerue to make heades for theyr arrowes, bycauſe they lacke iron. The other bones they caſte awaye when they haue eaten the fleſſhe. They founde likewiſe the heade of a yonge man faſtened to a poſte and yet bledinge. They haue in ſome villages, one great haule or pallaice, aboute the whiche theyr common houſes are placed. To this they reſort, as often as they come together to playe. When they perceaued the commynge of our men, they fledde, in theyr houſes they founde alſo about. xxx. chyldren and women captiues which were reſerued to be eaten, but our men tooke them awaye to vſe them for interpretoures. Searchyng more diligently th[e]ynner partes of the Ilande, they founde. vii. other ryuers, bygger then this whiche we ſpake of before, runnyng throughe the Ilande, with fruitefull and pleaſante banckes, delectable to beholde. This Ilande, they called *Guadalupea*, for the ſimilitude that it hath to the mounte *Guadalupus* in Spayne, where the Image of the virgin MARIE is religiouſly honored. But the inhabitauntes caul it *Carucueria*, or *Queraquiera*. It is the chiefe habitation of the *Canibales*. They brought from this Iland. vii. Popingayes, bygger then pheſantes, muche differynge from other in coloure: hauynge theyr backes, breſtes, and bealies of purple coloure, and theyr wynges of other variable coloures. In al theſe Ilandes is no leſſe plentie of popingiayes then with vs of ſparrowes or ſtarlinges. As we brynge vp capons and hennes to francke or make them fatte, ſo do they theſe bigger kyndes of popyngaies for the ſame purpoſe. After that they hadde thus ſearched the Ilande and dryuen theſe *Canibales* to flyghte, (whiche ranne awaye at theyr fyrſt approche as ſone as they had eſpied them) they cauled theyr company together. And as ſoone as they had broken the *Canibals* boates or lyghters (whiche they call *Canoas*) they lowſed theyr ankers the daye before the Ides of Nouember, and departed from *Guadalupea*. *Colonus* the admirall, for the deſyre he hadde to ſe his companions, whiche at his fyrſt vyage he leſte the yere before in *Hiſpaniola* to ſearche the countrey, lette paſſe many Ilandes bothe on his righte hande and lefte hande, and ſayled directly thyther. By the waye, there appeared from the Northe. A great Ilande which the captiues that were taken in *Hiſpaniola*, cauled *Madanino*, or *Matinino*: Affirmynge it to be inhabited only with women: To whom the *Canibales* haue acceſſe at certen tymes of the yeare, as in owlde tyme the *Thracians* had to the *Amazones* in the Ilande of *Leſbos*. The men children, they ſende to theyr fathers. But the women theye kepe with them ſelues. They haue greate and ſtronge caues or dennes in the ground, to the which they flye for ſafegarde if any men reſorte vnto them at any other tyme then is appoynted. And there defende them ſelues with bowes and arrowes, agenſt the violence of ſuche as attempte to enuade them. They coulde not at this tyme approche to this Ilande, by reaſon of the Northenortheaſt wynde which blewe ſoo vehemently from the ſame, wheras they nowe folowed the Eaſteſouth-eaſte. After they departed frome *Madanino*, and ſayled by the ſpace of. xl. myles, they paſſed not farre frome an other Ilande which the captyues ſayde to bee verye peopulous, and replenyſhed with all thynges neceſſarie for the life of man. This they cauled *Mons Serratus*, bycauſe it was ful of mountaynes. The captyues further declared that the *Canibals*, are wonte at ſome tyme to goo frome theyr owne coaſtes aboue a thouſande myle to hunte for men. The daye folowynge, they ſawe an other Ilande the whiche, bycauſe it was rownde, they cauled *Sancta Maria Rotunda*. The nexte daye, theye founde an other, which they cauled *S. Martini*. Which they lette paſſe alſo bycauſe they had no leaſure to tarye. Lykewyſe the thirde daye they eſpyed an other, whoſe *Diametral* ſyde extendynge frome the Eaſte to the weſte, they iudged to bee a hundreth and fyftie myle. Theye affirme all theſe Ilandes to be maruelous fayre and frutefull. This laſte, they cauled *Sancta Maria Antiqua*. Saylyng yet forwarde, and leauynge many other Ilandes, after they had ſayled aboute fortie myle, they chaunced vpon an other muche bygger then any of the reſte, which th[e]inhabitan[t]s caule *Ay Ay*, but they named it *Inſula crucis*. Heare they caſt anker to fetche freſſhe water. The Admiral alſo commaunded. xxx. men to go a lande out of his owne ſhyp, and to ſearch the Ilande Here they founde fowre dogges on the

Gossampine cotton.

Bombase.

Hanginge beddes

Images.

Fyne cookery

Arrowe heds of bones.

6

The mount Guadalupus.

Carucueria.

Popyngayes bygger then phesauntes

The Canibales dryuen to flyght

Matinino an Ilande of women.

The Ilandes of Mons Serratus.

Huntinge for men.

Sancta Maria Rotunda.

Sanctus Martinus.

Sancta Maria Antiqua.

Insula crucis An Ilande of the Canibals.

The Canibales are expert archers. Arrowes infected with veneme.

A conflict with the Canibales. 7

The fiercenes and terrible countenaunce of the Canibales.

Methymna Campi.

Innumerable ilandes.

The mynes of Metales and precious stones.

The sea cauled Archipelagus. Insula. S. Iohannes or Buchena.

Death for deathe

The mountaynes are coulder then the playnes.

From Dominica to Hispaniola fyue hundreth leaques

The Spanyardes lefte in the Iland are slayne. Kynge Guaccanarillus rebelleth.

Two images of goulde. 8

Libertie and idlenes.

A happy kind of lyfe.

ſhore. The Inhabitants are *Canibales*, and maruelous experte in ſhutinge, as well women as men: And vſe to infecte theyr arrowes with poyſon: when they had taryed there two dayes, they ſawe a farre of, a *Canoa*, in the whiche were eight men and as manye women hauynge with them bowes and arrowes. They fearſly aſſayled owre men withoute all feare, and hurte ſum of them with theyr venemous arrowes. Amonge theſe there was a certen woman to whome the other gaue reuerence and obeyde as though ſhe were theyr queene. Her ſonne wayted vppon her, beinge a younge man, ſtrongly made, of terrible and frownynge countenaunce and a lyons face. Owre men leaſte they ſholde take the more hurte by beinge wounded a farre of, thowght it beſte to ioyne with them. Therfore with all ſpede ſettinge forewarde with their ores the brigantine in whiche they were ſette alande, they ouerturned their *Canoa* with a great violence, which beinge ouerwhelmed, they notwithſtondinge, as well the women as the men ſwymminge, caſte theyr dartes at owre men, thicke and threefowlde. At the lengthe, gatherynge them ſelues together vpon a rocke couered with the water, they fowght manfully vntyll they were ouercome and taken, one being ſlayne, and the queenes ſonne ſore wounded. When they were browght into the Admirals ſhippe, they dyd no more put of their fiernes and cruell countenances, then do the Lyons of *Libia* when theye perceaue them ſelues to be bownde in chaynes. There is no man able to behowlde them, but he ſhall feele his bowelles grate with a certen horroure, nature hath endewed them with ſoo terrible menacynge, and cruell aſpecte. This coniecture I make of my ſelfe and other which often tymes wente with me to ſee them at *Methymna Campi.* But nowe to returne to the viage. Proceadinge thus further and further, more then fiue hundrethe myles, firſte towardes the Weſteſouthweſte, then towarde the Southweſt, and at the lengthe towarde the Weſte northe weſte, they entered into a mayne large ſea hauinge in it innumerable Ilandes, maruelouſlye differinge one frome an other, for ſum of them were verye frutefull and full of herbes and trees. Other ſum, very drye, barren, and rowgh with high rockye mountaynes of ſtone, wherof ſum were of bright blewe or aſurine coloure, and other glyſteringe white: wherfore they ſuppoſed them by good reaſon to bee the mynes of metalles and precious ſtones. But the rowghnes of the ſea, and multitude of Ilandes ſtandinge ſo thicke togyther, hindered them ſoo, that they cowlde caſte no anker leaſte the bigger veſſelles ſhulde runne vppon the rockes. Therefore they deferred the ſearchinge of theſe Ilandes vntyl an other tyme They were ſo manye and ſtoode ſo thicke, that they coulde not number them. Yet the ſmauler veſſelles which drewe no greate depthe, entered emonge them and numbered fortie and ſyxe Ilandes. But the bigger veſſelles, kepte aloofe in the mayne ſea for feare of the rockes. They caule the ſea where this multitude of Ilandes are ſituate, *Archipelagus.* Frome this tracte proceadinge forrewarde, in the mydde waye there lyeth an Iland which th[e]inhabitantes caule *Burichena*, or *Buchena.* But they named it *Inſula S. Iohannis.* Dyuers of theym whome we had delyuered frome the *Canibales*, ſayde that they were borne in this Ilande: affirminge it to be very peopulous and frutefull, hauinge alſo manye fayre wooddes and hauens. There is deadly hatred and continual battayle betwene them and the *Canibales.* They haue no boates to paſſe from their owne coaſtes to the *Canibales.* But if it bee their chaunce to ouercome them, when they make incurſion into theyr countreye to ſeke their praye (as it ſumtyme happeneth, the fortune of warre beinge vncerteyne) they ſerue them with like ſauſe, requitinge deathe for deathe. For one of theym mangeleth an other in pieces, and roſte them and eate them euen before their eyes. They taryed not in this Ilande. Yet in the weſte angle therof, a fewe of them went a lande for freſſhe water, and fownd a greate and high howſe after the maner of their buylding, hauinge. xii. other of their vulgare cotages placed abowte the ſame: but were all lefte deſolate, whether it were that they reſorted to the mountaynes by reſon of the heate which was that tyme of the yeare, and to returne to the playne when the ayre waxeth cowlder, or els for feare of the *Canibales* which make incurſion into the Ilande at certen ſeaſons. In all this Ilande is only one kinge. The ſouth ſyde hereof extendeth abowte two hundrethe myles. Shortlye after, they came to the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*, beinge diſtante frome the firſte Ilande of the *Canibales*, fyue hundrethe leaques. Here they fownde all thynges out of order, and theyr felowes ſlayne which they lefte here at their fyrſte vyage. In the beginninge of *Hiſpaniola*, (hauinge in it many regions and kyngedomes as we haue ſayde) is the region of *Xamana* whoſe kinge is named *Guaccanarillus.* This *Guaccanarillus* ioyned frendeſhippe with owre men at the fyrſte viage, and made a league with them: But in the abſence of the Admirall, he rebelled, and was the cauſe of owre mens deſtruction, althowgh he diſſimuled the ſame, and pretended frendſhip at the Admirales returne. As owre men ſayled on yet a litle further, they eſpied a longe *Canoa* with many ores, in which was the brother of *Guaccanarillus* with only one man waytinge on hym. He browght with hym two Images of goulde, which he gaue the Admirall in the name of his brother. And towlde a tale in his language as concerninge the deathe of owre men, as they proued afterwarde, but at this tyme had no regarde to his communication for lacke of interpretours, which were eyther all deade, or eſcaped or ſtoulne awaye when they drewe nere the Ilandes. But of the. x. [ten.] vii. [ſeuen] dyed by change of ayre and dyet. The inhabitantes of theſe Ilandes haue byn euer ſoo vſed to liue at libertie, in playe and paſtyme, that they can hardely away with the yoke of ſeruitude which they attempte to ſhake of by all meanes they maye. And ſurely if they had receaued owre religion, I wolde thinke their life moſte happye of all men, if they might

thẽrwith enioye their aunciente libertie. A fewe thinges contente them, hauinge no delite in ſuche ſuperfluites, for the which in other places men take infinite paynes and commit manie vnlawfull actes, and yet are neuer ſatiffied, wheras many haue to muche, and none inowgh. But emonge theſe ſimple ſowles, a fewe clothes ſerue the naked: weightes and meaſures are not needefull to ſuch as can not ſkyll of craſte and deceyte and haue not the vſe of peſtiferous monye, the ſeede of innumerable myſcheues. So that if we ſhall not be aſhamed to confeſſe the truthe, they ſeeme to lyue in that goulden worlde of the whiche owlde wryters ſpeake ſo much: wherin men lyued ſimplye and innocentlye without inforcement of lawes, without quarrellinge Iudges and libelles, contente onely to ſatiffie nature, without further vexation for knowelege of thinges to come. Yet theſe naked people alſo are tormented with ambition for the deſyre they haue to enlarge their dominions: by reaſon wherof they kepe warre and deſtroy one an other: from the which plage I ſuppoſe the golden world was not free. For euen then alſo, *Cede, non cedam*, that is, gyue place, and I wyll not giue place, had entred emonge men. But nowe to returne to the matter from which we haue digreſſed. The admiral deſyrous to knowe further of the death of his men, ſent for *Guaccanarillus* to come to him to his ſhip, diſſimuſinge that he knew any thinge of the matter. After that he came aboord ſhyp, ſaluting the Admiral and his company gyuing alſo certen golde to the Capetaynes and offycers, turned him to the women captiues which not longe before our men had deliuered from the *Canibales*. And erneſtly beholding one of them whome owre men cauled Catharyne, he ſpake gentelly vnto her. And thus when he had ſeene and marueyled at the horſes and ſuche other thinges as were in the ſhyppe, vnknowen to them, and had with a good grace and merelye aſked leaue of the Admirall, he departed. Yet ſum there were which counſeyled the Admirall to kepe hym ſtyll: that if they might by any meanes proue that he was conſentinge to the deathe of owre men, he might bee puniſhed accordinglie. But the Admirall conſidering that it was yet no tyme to incenſe th[e]inhabitantes myndes to wrathe, dyſmyſſed hym. The next daye folowing, the kinges brother reſortyng to the ſhyppes, eyther in his owne name or in his brothers, ſeduced the women. For on the next nyght about mydnight, this Katherine aſwell to recouer her owne libertie as alſo her felowes, being ſuborned therto eyther by the kinge or his brothers promiſes attempted a much more difficulte and daungerous aduenture then dyd *Cloelia* of Rome, which beinge in hoſtage with other maydes to the kynge *Porcena*, deceaued her kepers, and rode ouer the ryuer *Tiber*, with the other virgins which were pledges with her. For wheras they ſwamme ouer the ryuer on horſebacke. This Katharyne with ſeuen other women, truſtynge onlye to the ſtrengthe of theyr owne armes, ſwamme aboue three longe myles; and that alſo, at ſuche tyme as the ſea was ſumwhat rowghe. For euen ſoo farre of frome the ſhore, lay the ſhippes at rode, as nigh as they could coniecture But owre men folowinge them with the ſhippeboates, by the ſame light ſeene on the ſhore wherby the women were ledde, tooke three of them: ſuppoſinge that Katharyne with the other foure, went to *Guaccanarillus*. For in the ſpringe of the morninge, certen meſſengers beinge ſente to hym by the Admirall, had intelligence that he was fledde with all his familie and ſtuffe, and the women alſo. which thinge miniſtred further ſuſpection that he was conſentinge to the death of owre men. Wherfore the Admirall ſente forthe an armye of three hundrethe men, ouer the which he appoynted one *Melchior* to be capitayne, wylling him to make diligent ſearche to fynde owte *Guaccanarillus*. *Melchior* therfore with the ſmauleſte veſſels enteringe into the countreye by the ryuers and ſcouringe the ſhores, chaunced into certen croked goulfes defended with. v lyttle and ſtiepe hilles, ſuppoſinge that it had byn the mouth of ſum greate ryuer. He founde here alſo a verye commodious and ſafe hauen, and therefore named it *Portus Regalis*. They ſaye that the enteraunce of this is ſo crooked and bendinge, that after the ſhippes are once within the ſame, whether they turne them to the lefte hand, or to the ryght, they can not perceaue where they came in vntyll they returne to the mouth of the ryuer: Although it be there ſo brode that three of the byggeſte veſſels may ſayle together on a froont. The ſharpe and high hilles on the one ſyde and on the other, ſo brake the wynde, that they were vncerten howe to rule theyr ſayles. In the myddle gulfe of the ryuer, there is a promontorie or point of the lande with a pleaſaunte groue full of Popingayes and other byrdes which breede therein and ſinge verye ſweetlye. They perceaued alſo that two ryuers of no ſmaule largenes fell into the hauen. Whyle they thus ſearched the lande betwene bothe, *Melchior* eſpied a high houſe a farre of, where ſuppoſinge that *Guaccanarillus* had lyne hyd, he made towarde it. And as he was goynge, there mette hym a man with a frownynge countenaunce and a grymme looke, with a hundreth men folowynge hym, armed with bowes and arrowes, and long and ſharpe ſtaues like iauelynnes, made harde at the endes with fyre. Who approchyng towardes owre men, ſpake owte alowde with a terryble voyce, ſayenge that they were *Taini*, (that is) noble men, and not *Canibales*. But when owre men had gyuen them ſignes of peace, they lefte bothe theyr weapons and fiercenes. Thus geuynge eche of them certen haukes belles, they tooke it for ſo greate a rewarde, that they deſyred to enter bondes of nere frendeſhyppe with vs, and feared not immediatly to ſubmitte them ſelues vnder owre power, and reſorted to our ſhyps with theyr preſentes. They that meaſured the houſe (beinge made in rounde forme) fownde it to be from ſyde to ſyde. xxxii. greate paces, compaſed abowte with. xxx. other vulgare houſes, hauinge in them many beames croſſe ouer, and couered with reedes of ſundry colours, wrethed and as it

Superfluite.

Many haue to much and none inough.

The goulden worlde

Naked men troubled with ambicion.

Gyue place.

The Admiral sendeth for the kynge.

No horses in the Ilandes

A tyme for all thynges.

A desperate aduenture of a woman.

Cloelia of Rome.

Guaccanarillus is sought.

Melchior.

Popingayes and byrdes.

Taini.

Haukes belles.

A large hous

Reedes of sundry colours.

were weaued with maruelous art When owre men aſked ſum of them where they myght fynde *Guaccanarillus.* They aunſwered that that Region was none of his. But theyr kynges beynge there preſente. Yet they ſayde they ſuppoſed that *Guaccanarillus* was gone from the playne to the mountaynes. Makynge therfore a brotherly league with this *Caccicus*, (that is to ſaye a kynge) they retourned to the Admyrall to make relation what they hadde ſeene and harde: whervppon he ſent forth dyuers other Centurians with their hundrethes to ſearche the countrey yet further. Emonge the which were *Hoiedus* and *Gorualanus*, noble younge gentlemen and of great courage. And as they went towarde the mountaines to ſeeke *Guaccanarillus*, dyuidinge the mountaynes betwene them, one of them fownde on the one ſyde therof foure ryuers faulynge frome the ſame mountaynes: and the other founde. iii. on the other ſyde. In the ſandes of all theſe ryuers is fownd great plentye of goulde, which th[e]inhabitantes of the ſame Ilande which were with vs, gathered in this maner. Making holes in the ſande with theyr handes, a Cubette deape, and takynge vp ſande with their lefte handes from the botome of the ſame, they picked out graynes of goulde with their ryght handes withowte any more arte or cunnynge. And ſo deliuered it to owre men: who affirme that many of them thus gathered, were as bygge as tares or fytchis. And I my ſelfe ſawe a maſſe of rude goulde, (that is to ſay, ſuch as was neuer molten) lyke vnto ſuche ſtones as are founde in the bottomes of ryuers, weighinge nyne ownces, which *Hoieda* him ſelfe fownde. Beinge contented with theſe ſignes, they returned to the Admirall to certifie him hereof. For the Admirall had commaunded vnder payne of punyſhement that they ſhuld meddle no further then their commiſſion: which was only to ſearche the places with their ſignes. For the fame went that there was a certayne kynge of the mountaynes from whenſe thoſe ryuers had their faule, whom they caule *Cacicus Caunaboa* that is, the lord of the houſe of golde. For they caule a houſe *Boa*, goulde, *Cauni*: and a kynge or Lorde, *Cacicus*, as we haue ſayde before. They affirme that there can noo where be found better fyſſhe, nor of more pleaſant taſt, or more holſome then in theſe ryuers: alſo the waters of the ſame to be moſt holſom to drynke. *Melchior* hym ſelfe towld me, that in the moneth of December, the days and nyghtes bee of equal length among the *Canibales.* But the ſphere or circles of the heauen, agreeth not thervnto. Albeit that in the ſame moneth, ſume byrdes make their neſtes, and ſume haue alredy hatched their egges by reaſon of the heate beinge rather continuall then extreme. He towlde me alſo when I queſtioned with hym as concernynge the eleuation of the pole from the horizontal lyne, that al the ſterres cauled *Plaſtrum* or charles wayne, are hydde vnder the Northe pole to the *Canibales.* And ſurely there returned none from thenſe at this viage, to whome there is more credit to be gyuen, then to this man. But if he had byn ſkilfull in Aſtronomye, he ſhulde haue ſayde that the day was almoſte equall with the night. For in no place towarde the ſtay of the ſonne (cauled *Solſticium*) can the night be equall with the day. And as for them, they neuer came vnder the *Equinoctiall*, for aſmuch as they had euer the northe pole theyr guyde, and euer eleuate in ſight aboue the *Horizontal.* Thus haue I briefely written vnto yowre honoure, as muche as I thought ſufficiente at this tyme. And ſhall ſhortly hereafter (by Gods fauoure) wryte vnto you more largely of ſuche matters as ſhalbe dayly better knowen. For the admirall hym ſelfe (whome I vſe famylyerly as my verye frende) hathe promyſed me by his letters, that he wyl gyue me knowlege of al ſuch thynges as ſhall chaunce. He hath nowe choſen a ſtronge place where he may buyld a Citie nere vnto a comodious hauen. And hath alredy buylded many houſes and a chapell in the whiche (as in a newe worlde heretofore voyde of all religion) god is dayly ſerued with. xiii. preeſtes accordinge to the maner of owre churches. When the tyme nowe approched when he promyſed to ſende to the kynge and queene, and hauynge proſperous wynde for that purpoſe, ſent backe the. xii. Carauelles wherof we made mencion before it was no ſmaul hynderance and greefe, vnto hym: Eſpecially conſyderynge the death of his men whom he lefte in the Ilande at the fyrſt vyage, wherby we are yet ignorant of many places and other ſecretes wherof we might otherwyſe haue had further knowleage. But as tyme ſhall reueale them ageyne, ſo wyll I aduertyſe yowe of the ſame. And that you may the better knowe by conference had with the *Apothecaries* and marchaunt ſtrangers *Siropheniciens*, what theſe Regions beare, and howe hotte theyr ground is, I haue ſent you all kyndes of graynes, with the barke and inner partes of that tree whiche they ſuppoſe to bee the Cinamome tree. And yf it be your pleaſure to taſte eyther of the graynes, or of the ſmaule ſeedes the which you ſhoulde perceaue to haue fawlen from theſe graynes, or of the wodde it ſelfe, touch them firſte ſoftely mouinge them to your lyppes. For although they bee not hurtefull, yet for theyr exceſſe of heate, they are ſharpe and byte the tongue, yf they remayne any whyle theron. But if the tongue be blyſtered by taſtynge of them, the ſame is taken away by drynkynge of water. Of the corne alſo wherof they make theyr breade, this brynger ſhall delyuer ſume graynes to your Lordeſhyppe bothe whyte and blacke: And therwith alſo, a Trunke of the tree of *Aloes* The which if you cutte in peeces, you ſhall feele a ſweete ſauoure to proceade from the ſame. Thus fare you hartely wel. From the courte of *Methimna Campi.* The thyrde day before the Calendes of May. *Anno. Domini,* M. CCCC. XCIIII.

Golde in ryuers faulinge from mountaynes.

The maner of gathering golde.

Graynes of golde.

A masse of rude golde weighinge. ix ounces.

Caunaboa, kynge of the house of gold

Holsome water and plentie of fysshe.

The day and nyght of equal length in December.

Byrdes breed in December

The eleuation of the pole

The starres are cauled gardens of the pole.

The Equinoctial lyne.

A chapel and preestes.

Marchaunts Sirophenicians.

The Cynamome tree.

Xiloaloes or lignum Aloes.

¶ The thyrde boke of the fyrst Decade, *to* Lodouike *Cardinall of* Aragonye *and Neuie to the kynge.*

Owe deſyre that folyſhe *Phaeton* ſhulde ageine rule the Chariotes of the Sunne: And contende to drawe ſweete lycoures out of the harde flynte, wheras you requyre me to dyſſcribe vnto you the newe worlde, fownde in the weſte by the good fortune and gouernaunce of the Catholike Princes *Ferdinandus* and Heliſabeth, your Vncle and Aunte: ſhewyng me alſo the letters of kynge *Frederike* your vncle, wrytten to me in the ſame behalfe. But ſythe you haue layde this burden on my backe, in whoſe power it is to commaunde me to take vppon me more then I am wel able. Ye bothe ſhal receaue this precious ſtone, rudely cloſed in leade after my maner of workemanſhyppe. Wherfore when you ſhall perceaue the lerned ſorte frendelye: The malicious, enuiouſly: And the backebyters, furiouſly, to bende theyr ſclaunderous dartes ageynſt owre fayre *Nimphes* of the *Ocean*, you ſhall freely proteſte in howe ſhort tyme, and in the myddeſte of what troubles and calamities, you haue enforced me to wryte of the ſame. Thus fare you well frome *Granata* the ninthe day before the Calendes of May.

The fable of Phaeton.

Kynge Ferdinandus and queene Helizabeth

¶ We haue declared in the boke here before, howe the Admirall paſſed by the coaſtes of the *Canibales* to the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola* with his whole nauie. But nowe we entende further to ſhewe what he fownde as concernynge the nature of this Ilande, after that he had better ſearched the ſeacreates of the ſame: Likewyſe of the Ilande of *Cuba* nere vnto it which he yet ſuppoſed to bee the firme lande. *Hiſpaniola* therfore (which he affirmeth to bee *Ophir*, wherof we reade in the thyrde boke of the kynges) is of latitude, fyue ſouthe degrees: hauynge the northe pole eleuate on the northe ſyde. xxvii. degrees: And on the Southe ſyde (as they ſaye) xxii. degrees. It reacheth in length from the Eaſte to the Weſte, ſeuen hundrethe and foure ſcore myles. It is diſtant from the Ilandes of *Gades* (cauled *Cales*) xlix. degrees, and more as ſum ſaye. The forme of the Ilande, reſembleth the leafe of a cheſnutte tree. Vppon a high hyll on the North ſyde of the Ilande, he buylded a citie, bycauſe this place was moſt apte for that purpoſe by reaſon of a myne of ſtones which was nere vnto the ſame, ſeruynge well bothe to buylde with, and alſo to make lyme. At the bottome of this hyll, is there a great playne of three ſcore myles in lengthe: and in bredth ſumwhere. xii. ſumwhere. xx. myles where it is brodeſt, and. vi. myles where it is naroweſt Through this playne runne dyuers fayre ryuers of holſome waters. But the greateſt of them which is nauigable, fauleth into the hauen of the citie for the ſpace of halfe a furlonge. Howe fertile and fruitfull this valley is, you ſhal vnderſtand by theſe thynges which folowe. On the ſhore of this ryuer, they haue lymyted and encloſed certeyne grounde to make gardeynes and orchiardes, in the which al kyndes of bygger herbes, as radyſhe, letuſe, colewortes, borage, and ſuch other, waxe rype within. xvi. dayes after the ſeede is ſowen. Lykewyſe Melones, Gourdes, Cucumers, and ſuche other, within the ſpace of. xxxvi. dayes. Theſe garden herbes, they haue freſſhe and greene all the whole yeare. Alſo the rootes of the canes or reedes, of the lycour wherof, ſuger is made, growe a cubette high within the ſpace of. xv. dayes: but the lycoure is not yet hardened. The lyke they affirme of plantes or ſhrouddes of younge vines: And that they haue the ſecond yeare gathered ripe and ſweete grapes of the ſame. But by reaſon of to muche rankenes, they beare but fewe cluſters. Furthermore, a man of the countrey ſowed a lyttle wheat about the Calendes of February, and brought with hym to the citie a handefull of the rype eares of the ſame the thyrde day before the calendes of Aprell: which was that yeare the vigile of the Reſurrection of owre Lorde. Alſo, al kyndes of pulſe, as beanes, peaſon, fytches, tares, and ſuche other, are rype twyſe in the yeare, as all they which come from thenſe, affirme with one voyce: Yet that the grounde is not vniuerſally apte to beare wheate. In the meane tyme whyle theſe thynges were doinge, the Admirall ſent owte a companye of. xxx. men to ſearche the Region of *Cipanga*, otherwyſe cauled *Cibana* This Region is full of mountaynes and rockes: And the myddle backe of the hole Ilande in the whiche is greate plentie of goulde. When they that went to ſearche the Region, were returned they reported maruelous thynges as touchinge the great ryches of this Region. Frome theſe mountaynes, deſcende foure greate ryuers, which by the maruelous induſtrye of nature, deuided the hole Ilande into foure partes, in maner equall, ouerſpreadinge and wateringe the hole Ilande with their branches. Of theſe foure ryuers, the one reacheth towarde the Eaſte. This the inhabitantes caule *Iunna*: An other, towarde the Weſte, and is cauled *Attibunicus*. The thirde towarde the Northe, named *Iachem*: the laſte reacheth into the Southe, and is cauled *Naiba*. The daye before the Ides of Marche, the Admiral him ſelfe with al his horſe men and foure hundreth footemen, marched directly towarde the South ſyde of the goulden Region. Thus paſſinge ouer the ryuer, the plaine and the mountayne which enuironed the other ſyde of the playne, he chaunced vpon an other vale the which a ryuer muche bygger then the fyrſte, and many other meane ryuers

Nereides. He meaneth the Ilandes.

Hispaniola.

11 Ophir whether Salomons ships sayled for golde.

Isabella.

A playne of threescore myles of lengthe.

A token of maruelous fruitfulnes.

Herbes grene al the hole yeare.

Suger reeds plantes and vines.

Corne and grayne rype twise a yeare

The Region of Cipanga or Cibana.

Golde.

Foure greate ryuers.

The golden region of Cibana

Vales and mountaynes

The vale of Cibana.

runne throwgh. When he had alſo conueighed his armye ouer the ryuer and paſſed the ſeconde vale whiche was in no part inferiour to the firſte, he made away through the thirde mountayne, where was no paſſage before, and deſcended into an other vale which was nowe the beginninge of *Cibana*. Through this alſo runne many fluddes, and ryuers, out of euery hyll, and in the ſandes of theym all, is fownde great plentie of goulde. And when he had nowe entered three ſcore and twelue myles into the goulden region from the citie he entended to buylde a fortreſſe vppon the toppe of a hyll, ſtanding by the ſhore of a certeyne great ryuer, that he might the better and more ſafelye ſearche the ſecreates of the inner partes of the Region. This he cauled the fortreſſe of ſaynte Thomas. The which in the meane tyme whyle he was buyldynge, th[e]inhabitantes beinge deſirous of haukes belles and other of owre thinges, reſorted dayly thyther. To whom the Admirall declared, that if they wolde brynge goulde, they ſhulde haue what ſo euer they wolde aſke, Forthwith turnynge theyr backes and runnynge to the ſhore of the next ryuer, they returned in a ſhort tyme, brynginge with them their handes full of goulde. Amongeſt al other, there came a owld man bringynge with him two pybble ſtones of goulde weighinge an vnce, deſyrynge them to gyue him a bell for the ſame who when he ſawe oure men maruell at the byggenes therof, he made ſignes that they were but ſmaule and of no value in reſpecte of ſume that he had ſeene. And takynge in his hande foure ſtones the leaſt wherof was as bygge as a walnut, and the byggeſt as bygge as an orange, he ſayde that there was fownde peeces of goulde ſoo bygge in his countrey, beynge but halfe a dayes iourney from thenſe, and that they had no regarde to the gatheringe therof. Wherby we perceaue that they paſſe not muche for goulde in aſmuch as it is goulde only, but ſo farre eſteeme it, as the hande of the artificer hathe faſhioned it in any coomely fourme. For who doth greatly eſteeme rowgh marble or vnwrought Iuerye. But if they be wrought with the cunninge hande of *Phidias* or *Praxiteles*, and ſhaped to the ſimilitude of the fayre nimphes or fayeres of the ſea (cauled *Nereiades*) or the fayres of the wods, (cauled *Hamadriades*) they ſhal neuer lacke byers. Beſyde this owld man, there came alſo dyuers other, brynginge with them pypple ſtones of gold weighing. x. or. xii. drammes: And feared not to confeſſe, that in the place where they gathered that golde, there were found ſumtyme ſtones of gold as bygge as the heade of a chyld When he had taryed heare a fewe dayes, he ſent one *Luxanus*, a noble younge gentylman with a fewe armed men to ſearche all the partes of this Region. Who at his returne, reported that th[e]inhabitantes ſhewed him greater thinges then we haue ſpoken of here before. But he dyd openly declare nothynge therof: which they thought was doone by the Admirales commaundement. They haue wooddes full of certeyne ſpyces: but not ſuche as we commonly vſe. Theſe they gather euen as they do golde: that is as much as wyl ſerue for theyr purpoſe, euery man for hym ſelfe, to exchange the ſame with the inhabitantes of other countreys adioyninge to them, for ſuch thinges as they lacke, as dyſſhes, pottes, ſtooles, and ſuche other neceſſaries. As *Luxanus* returned to the Admiral, (which was about the Ides of Marche) he fownde in the wooddes, certeyne wylde vines, rype and of pleaſaunt taſte. But th[e]inhabitantes paſſe not on them. This Region though it bee full of ſtones and rockes (and is therfore cauled *Cibana*, whiche is as muche to ſaye as a ſtone) yet it is well repleryſhed with trees and paſtures. Ye they inſtantly affirme, that if the graſſe of theſe mountaynes bee cutte, it groweth ageyne within the ſpace of foure dayes, higher then wheate. And for as muche as many ſhowers of rayne doo faule in this Region, whereof the ryuers and fluddes haue their increaſe, in euery of the which, golde is fownde myxte with ſande in all places, they iudge that the golde is dryuen from the mountaynes, by the vehement courſe of the ſtreames which faule from the ſame, and runne into the ryuers. The people of this Region are gyuen to Idelnes and playe. For ſuche as inhabyte the mountaynes, ſyt quakynge for coulde in the wynter ſeaſon, and had rather ſoo wander vppe and downe Idelly, then take the peines to make them apparell, wheras they haue wooddes full of goſſampine cotton. But ſuch as dwel in the vales or plaines feele no coulde in wynter. When the Admirall had thus ſearched the beginninge of the region of *Cibana*, he repayred to *Iſabella* (for ſo he named the citie) where, leauinge the gouernance of the Ilande with his deputies, he prepared hym ſelfe to ſearch further the lymettes of the Ilande of *Cuba* or *Iohanna*, which he yet doubted to bee the firme lande, and diſtant from *Hiſpaniola*, onely three ſcore and ten myles. This dyd he with more ſpeedy expedicion, caulyng to remembraunce the kinges commaundement, who wylled hym fyrſt with all celeritie to ouer runne the coaſtes of the newe Ilandes, leaſte any other prince ſhulde in the meane tyme attempte to inuade the ſame. For the Kynge of Portugale affirmed that it perteyned only to hym to diſcouer theſe vnknowen landes. But the byſhop of Rome Alexander the. vi. to auoyd the cauſe of this diſcention, graunted to the Kynge of Spayne by th[e]auctoritie of his leaden bulles, that no other prince ſhulde bee ſo boulde as to make any viages to any of thoſe vnknowen regions, lyenge without the precinct of a directe lyne drawen from the North to the Southe a hundreth leaques weſtwarde without the paralelles of the Ilandes cauled *Capud Viride*. or *Cabouerde*, which we thynke to bee thoſe that in owlde tyme were cauled *Heſperides*. Theſe perteyne to the kynge of Portugale. And frome theſe, his pylottes whiche doo yearely ſearche newe coaſtes and regions, directe their courſe to the Eaſte, ſaylynge euer towarde the lefte hande by the backe of Aphrike and the ſeas of the Ethiopians: Neyther to this day had the Portugales at any tyme ſayled Southwarde, or Weſtewarde from the Ilandes of *Cabouerde*.

Golde for haukes bels. 12

Graynes and pipple stones of golde.

They passe not for golde, in that it is golde onely but. etc.

Stones of golde as byg as the heade of a chylde.

Spyces.

Wylde vines of pleasaunte taste.

Fruitful mountaynes

Golde in the sandes of ryuers faulinge from the mountaynes.

Libertie and Idelnes.

The mountaynes are coulde.

The Ilande of Cuba.

Least any other prince, &c

Discencion betweene the Portugales and Spaniardes.

The Ilandes of Cobouerde or Hisperides 13

The Portugales viages

Preparyng therfore three ſhippes, he made haſte towarde the Ilande of *Iohanna* or *Cuba* whyther he came in ſhorte ſpace, and named the poynt therof where he fyrſt arryued, *Alpha* and *O*: that is, the fyrſte and the laſte: for he ſuppoſed that there had byn th[e]end of owre Eaſte bycauſe the ſonne fauleth there: And of the weſte, bycauſe it ryſeth there. For it is apparente, that weſtwarde it is the beginninge of *India* beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*: And Eaſtewarde, the furtheſt ende of the ſame: which thinge is not contrary to reaſon foraſmuche as the Coſmographers haue lefte the lymites of *India* beyonde *Ganges* vndetermyned: where as alſo ſume were of opinion that *India* was not farre from the coaſtes of Spaine as we haue ſayde before. Within the proſpecte of the begynnynge of *Cuba*, he founde a commodious hauen in the extreme angle of the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*. For in this part, the Iland receaueth a greate goulfe. This hauen, he named ſaynt Nycolas porte, beinge ſcarſely. xx. leaques from *Cuba*. As he departed from henſe and ſayled weſtwarde by the ſouth ſyde of *Cuba*, the further that he went, ſo muche the more the ſea ſeemed to bee extended in breadth and to bende towarde the ſouth. On the ſouth ſyde of *Cuba*, he fownde an Ilande which th[e]inhabitantes caule *Iamaica*. This he affirmeth to bee longer and broder then the Iland of Sicilie: hauyng in it only one mountayne, which on euery parte begynninge from the ſea, ryſeth by little and little into the myddeſt of the Ilande: And that ſoo playnely without rowghnes, that ſuche as goo vp to the toppe of the ſame, can ſcarſely perceaue that they aſcende. This Ilande he affirmed to bee very fruitfull and full of people as well in th[e]inner partes of the ſame as by the ſhore: And that th[e]inhabitantes are of quicker wytte then in the other Ilandes, and more experte artificers and warrelyke men. For in many places where he woulde haue arryued, they came armed ageynſt him and forbodde him with threatening wordes. But beinge ouercome, they made a league of frendeſhip with hym. Thus departynge from *Iamaica*, he ſayled towarde the Weſte with a proſperous wynde for the ſpace of threeſcore and tenne dayes: thinkinge that he had paſſed ſo farre by the compaſſe of the earth being vnderneth vs, that he had byn nere vnto *Aurea Cherſoneſus* (nowe cauled *Malaccha*,) in owre Eaſte India beyonde the beginninge of *Perſides*. For he playnely beleued that he had lefte onely two of the twelue howres of the ſonne, which were vnknowen to vs, for the owlde wryters haue lefte halfe the courſe of the ſonne vntouched, where as they haue but onely diſcuſſed that ſuperficiall parte of the earth which lyeth betwene the Ilandes of Gades and the ryuer of Ganges: or at the vttermoſte, to *Aurea Cherſoneſus*. In this nauigation, he chaunced on many furious ſeas, running with a faule as it had byn the ſtreames of fluddes: Alſo many whorlepooles, and ſhelfes, with many other daungers, and ſtreyghtes by reaſon of the multytude of Ilandes, which ley on euery ſyde. But not regardinge all theſe perelles, he determyned to proceade vntyl he had certaine knowledge whether *Cuba* were an Ilande or firme lande. Thus he ſayled forward coaſtinge euer by the ſhore towarde the weſte for the ſpace of CC. xxii. [two hundred and twenty-two] leaques, that is, abowte a thouſande and three hundreth myles: And gaue names to ſeuen hundreth Ilandes by the waye: Leauynge alſo on the lefte hande (as he feared not to reporte) three thouſande here and there. But let vs nowe returne to ſuche thinges as he fownde worthy to be noted in this nauigation. Saylinge therfore by the ſyde of *Cuba*, and ſearchinge the nature of the places, he eſpied not farre from *Alpha* and *O*, a large hauen of capacitie to harborowe manye ſhippes: whoſe enterauñce is bendinge, beinge incloſed on bothe ſydes with capes or poyntes which receaue the water. This hauen is large within, and of exceadinge depthe. Saylinge by the ſhore of this porte, he ſawe not farre frome the ſame, two cotages couered with reedes, and in many places fyer kyndeled. Here he ſente certeyne armed men owte of the ſhippes to the cotages: where they fownde nother man nor woman, but roſtemeate enowgh. For they fownde certeyne ſpyttes of woodde lyenge at the fyre, hauinge fyſhe on theym abowt a hundreth pownde weight, and two ſerpentes of. viii. foote longe a piece, wherat marueylinge, and lokynge abowt if they coulde eſpye any of th[e]inhabitantes, and that none appeared in ſyght (for they fledde all to the mountaynes at the comminge of owre men) they fell to theyr meate, and eate the fyſhe taken with other mens trauayle: But they abſteyned from the ſerpentes, which they affirme to differ nothinge from Crocodiles of Egypt, but onely in byggenes. For (as *Plinie* ſayth) Crocodiles haue ſumetymes byn fownde of. xviii. cubettes long. But of theſe the byggeſt were but of. viii. fote. Thus beinge well refreſſhed, they entered into the next woodde where they fownde many of the ſame kynde of ſerpentes hangynge vppon bowghes of trees: of the which, ſume had theyr mouthes tyed with ſtrynges, and ſume theyr teethe taken owte. And as they ſearched the places nere vnto the hauen, they ſawe abowte. lxx. men in the toppe of a hyghe rocke, whiche fledde as ſoone as they had eſpied owre men. Who by ſignes and tokens of peace, caulinge them ageyne, there was one which came nere them and ſtoode on the toppe of a rocke, ſeemynge as thowgh he were yet ferefull. But the Admiral ſent one *Didacus* to hym, a man of the ſame countrey, whom he had at his fyrſte vyage taken in the Ilande of *Guanahaini*, beinge nere vnto *Cuba*: wyllinge hym to come nere and not to bee afrayde. When he harde *Didacus* ſpeke to him in his owne tonge he came bowldly to hym: and ſhortly after reſorted to his company, perſuadinge them to come without all feare. After this meſſage was doone, there deſcended frome the rockes to the ſhippes, abowt three ſcore and ten of th[e]inhabitantes, proferinge frende-ſhippe and gentelnes to owre men: whiche the Admirall accepted thankefully, and gaue them dyuers rewardes: And that the rather, for that he had intelligence by *Didacus* th[e]enterpretoure, that they were the kynges

Alpha and O

The ende of the Easte and west.

Note.

India not far from Spayne.

Saynt Nycolas porte.

The Iland of Iamaica.

Iamaica.

Quicke wytted people.

The compaseinge of the earth.

Aurea Chersonesus, or Malaccha.

A secreate of Astronomie.

The ryuer of Ganges.

Daungerous streightes by reason of many Ilandes.

The Admiral gaue names to seuen hundrethe Ilandes.

Thre thousand Ilandes.

A large hauen

Rosted fysshe and serpents of. viii. foote longe.

14

Crocodiles of Egypte.

Didacus th[e]interpretour.

The kynges fysshers.

Serpentes esteemed for delicate meat Ophiophagi.

Blossomes and fruites bothe at one tyme.

Trees which beare gourds

A multitude of Ilandes.

Hotte water.

A straunge kynde of fysshynge.
A huntynge fysshe.

Abundance of tortoyses.

Fyssher men.

The fysshe Guaicanum.

Humaine people.

A mountaine fruitefull and well inhabited.

Dogges of strange shape and dumme.
Duckes.
Hearons.
Streightes.

ſyſſhers, ſent of theyr lorde to take fyſſhe ageynſt a ſolemne feaſte which he prepared for an other kynge. And wheras the Admirales men had eaten the fyſſhe whiche they leſte at the fyre, they were the gladder therof, bycauſe they had leſte the ſerpentes. For there is nothinge amonge theyr delicate dyſſhes, that they eſteeme ſo muche as theſe ſerpentes: In ſoo muche that it is no more lawfull for the common people to eate of them, then peacockes or pheſantes amonge vs. As for the fyſſhes, they doubted not to take as many more the ſame nyght. Beynge aſked why they fyrſt roſted the fyſſhe which they entended to beare to their kynge. They anſwered, that they might bee the freſſher and vncorrupted. Thus ioyninge handes for a token of further frendeſhip, euery man reſorted to his owne. The Admirall went forwarde as he had appoynted, folowing the faulinge of the ſonne from the beginninge of *Cuba* cauled *Alpha* and *O*. The ſhores or ſea bankes euen vnto this hauen, albeit they be ful of trees, yet are they rowgh with mountains. Of theſe trees, ſume were ful of bloſſoomes and flowres, and other laden with fruites. Beyonde the hauen the lande is more fertile and peopulous, whoſe inhabitantes are more gentyll and more deſyrous of owre thinges. For as ſone as they had eſpied owre ſhippes, they flocked all to the ſhore, brynginge with them ſuche breade as they are accuſtomed to eate, and gourdes full of water, offeringe theym vnto owre men, and further deſyringe them to coome alande. In all theſe Ilandes is a certeyne kynde of trees as bygge as elmes, whiche beare gourdes in the ſteade of fruites. Theſe they vſe only for drinkynge pottes, and to fetche water in, but not for meate, for the inner ſubſtance of them, is ſowrer then gaule, and the barke as harde as any ſhelle. At the Ides of Maye, the watche men lokinge owte of the toppe caſtell of the ſhyppe towarde the Southe, ſawe a multitude of Ilandes ſtandinge thicke together, beynge all well repleniſhed with trees, graſſe, and herbes, and wel inhabyted. In the ſhore of the continent, he chaunced into a nauigable ryuer whoſe water was ſoo hotte, that no man myght endure to abyde his hande therein any tyme. The day folowinge, eſpying a farre off a Canoa of fyſher men of th[e]inhabitantes, fearinge leaſt they ſhulde flye at the ſyght of owre men, he commaunded certeyne to aſſayle them pryuily with the ſhyppe boates. But they fearinge nothinge, taryed the comminge of owre men. Nowe ſhal you heare a newe kind of fyſhinge. Lyke as we with greyhoundes doo hunte hares, in the playne fieldes. So doo they as it were with a huntyng fyſſhe, take other fyſſhes. This fyſſhe was of ſhape or fourme vnknowen vnto vs: but the body therof, not muche vnlyke a greate yele: hauinge on the hynder parte of the heade, a very towgh ſkynne, lyke vnto a greate bagge or purſe. This fyſſhe is tyed by the ſyde of the boate with a corde lette downe ſoo farre into the water, that the fyſſhe maye lye cloſe hyd by the keele or bottome of the ſame, for ſhee may in no caſe abyde the ſight of the ayer. Thus when they eſpie any greate fyſſhe, or tortoyſe (wherof there is great abundance bygger then great targettes) they let the corde at lengthe. But when ſhe feeleth her ſelfe looſed, ſhee enuadeth the fyſſhe or tortoyſe as ſwiftly as an arrowe. And where ſhe hath once faſtened her howld ſhee caſteth the purſe of ſkynne wherof we ſpake before: And by drawyng the ſame togyther, ſo graſpeleth her pray, that no mans ſtrength is ſufficient to vnlooſe the ſame, excepte by lyttle and lyttle drawinge the lyne, ſhee bee lyfted ſumwhat aboue the brymme of the water. For then, as ſone as ſhe ſeeth the brightnes of the ayer, ſhee letteth goo her howlde. The praye therfore, beinge nowe drawen nere to the brymme of the water, there leapeth ſoodenly owte of the boate into the ſea ſoo manye fyſſhers, as maye ſuffice to holde faſte the praye, vntyll the reſte of the coompany haue taken it into the boate. Which thinge doone, they looſe ſo muche of the cord, that the hunting fyſſhe, may ageyne returne to her place within the water: where by an other corde, they let downe to her a piece of the praye, as we vſe to rewarde greyhoundes after they haue kylled theyr game. This fyſſhe, they caule *Guaicanum*, But owre men caule it *Reuerſum*. They gaue owre men foure tortoyſes taken by this meanes: And thoſe of ſuch byggenes that they almoſte fylled theyr fyſſhinge boate. For theſe fyſſhes are eſteemed amonge them for delicate meate. Owre men recompenſed them ageyne with other rewardes, and ſoo lette them departe. Beinge aſked of the coompaſſe of that lande, they aunſwered that it had no ende weſtewarde. Moſt inſtantly deſyringe the Admirall to coome alande: or in his name to ſende one with them to ſalute their *Cazicus*, (that is) their kinge: Affirmynge that he wolde gyue owre men many preſentes, yf they wolde goo to hym. But the Admiral, leaſte he ſhulde bee hyndered of the vyage which he had begunne, refuſed to goo with them. Then they deſyred to knowe his name, and towld owre men lykewyſe the name of theyr kyng. Thus ſayling on yet further euer toward the Weſt, within fewe dayes he came nere vnto a certeyne exceding high mountayne, wel inhabyted by reaſon of the great fertilitie of the ſame. Th[e]inhabitauntes of this mountayne, browght to owre ſhippe, breade, goſſampine cotton, cunnies, and ſundry kyndes of wyldfowle: demaundynge relygiouſly of th[e]interpretoures, if this nation deſcended not from heauen. The kynge of this people, and dyuers other ſage men that ſtoode by hym, informed hym that that lande was no Ilande. Shortly after, enteringe into one of the Ilandes beinge on the lefte hande of this lande, they fownde no body therin: for they fledde al at the commyng of owre men. Yet fownde they there fowre dogges of maruelous deformed ſhape, and ſuche as coulde not barke. This kynd of dogges, they eate as we do goates. Here is great plentie of geeſe, duckes, and hearons. Betwene theſe Ilandes and the continente, he entered into ſoo narowe ſtreyghtes, that he coulde ſcarſely turne backe the ſhippes: And theſe alſo ſo ſhalowe, that the keele of the ſhyps ſumtyme raſed

on the ſandes The water of theſe ſtreyghtes, for the ſpace of fortie myles, was white and thycke lyke vnto mylke, and as thowgh mele had byn ſparkeled throwgh owte al that ſea. And when they had at the lengthe eſcaped theſe ſtrayghtes, and were nowe coome into a mayne and large ſea, and had ſayled theron for the ſpace of foure ſcore myles, they eſpyed an other excedinge hygh mountayne, whyther the Admirall reſorted to ſtore his ſhyppes with freſſhe water and fuel. Heare amonge certeyne wooddes of date trees, and pyneable trees of excedyng height he fownd two natiue ſprynges of freſſhe water. In the meane tyme whyle the woodde was cuttynge and the barrelles fyllyng, one of owre archers went into the wood to hunt: where he eſpyed a certeyne man with a whyte veſture, ſoo lyke a fryer of th[e]order of ſaynt Marye of *Mercedis*, that at the fyrſte ſight he ſuppoſed it had byn the Admiralles preeſte which he browght with hym, beyng a man of the ſame order. But two other folowed hym immediatlye owte of the ſame wooddes, ſhortly after, he ſawe a farre of a hole coompany of men clothed in apparel, beinge abowte. xxx. in nomber. Then turning his backe and cryinge owte to his felowes, he made haſte to the ſhyppes with all that he myght dryue. Theſe apparelled men, made ſignes and tokens to hym to tary and not to bee afrayde. But that notwithſtandinge, he ceaſed not to flye. The Admirall beinge aduertiſed hereof, and not a lyttle reioyſynge that he had fownde a ciuile people, incontinently ſent forth armed men, with commaundement, that yf neede ſhould ſoo requyre, they ſhulde enter fortie myles into the Ilande, vntyl they myght fynde eyther thoſe apparelled men, or other inhabitantes of that countrey. When they hadde paſſed ouer the woodde, they came into a greate playne full of graſſe and herbes, in which appeared no token of any pathe way. Here attemptinge to goo throwgh the graſſe and herbes, they were ſoo entangled and bewrapte therin, that they were ſcarſely able to paſſe a myle, the graſſe beinge there lyttle lower then owre rype corne. Beinge therfore weryed, they were enforced to returne ageyne, fyndyng no pathe way. The day folowing he ſent foorth. xxv. armed men an other way: Commaunding them to make diligent ſearche and inquiſition what maner of people inhabited the land. Who departinge, when they had fownde not farre from the ſea ſyde certeyne ſteppes of wylde beaſtes, of the which they ſuſpected ſum to bee of Lyons feete being ſtriken with feare, returned backe ageyne. As they came they fownde a woodde in the which were many natiue vines here and there crepinge abowte highe trees, with many other trees bearinge aromaticall fruites and ſpyces. Of theſe vines they browght with them into Spaine many cluſters of grapes very ponderous and full of lycoure. But of the other fruites, they browght none bycauſe they putrified by the waye in the ſhippe, and were caſte into the ſea. They ſaye alſo that in the launḍes or medowes of thoſe wooddes, they ſawe flockes of greate cranes twyſe as bygge as owres. As he went forward and turned his ſayles towarde certeyne other mountaines, he eſpied two cotages on the ſhore, in the whiche he ſawe onely one man: who beinge browght to the ſhyppe, ſignified with heade, fyngers, and by al other ſignes, that he coulde deuiſe that the lande which lay beyonde thoſe mountaynes, was very full of people. And as the Admirall drewe nere the ſhore of the ſame, there mette hym certeyne *Canoas* hauinge in them many people of the countrey, who made ſignes and tokens of peace and frendeſhyp. But here *Didacus* th[e]interpretour whiche vnderſtoode the language of th[e]inhabitantes of the beginning of *Cuba*, vnderſtode not them one whytte, wherby they conſydred that in ſundry prouinces of *Cuba*, were ſundry languages He had alſo intelligence, that in the inlande of this Region, was a kynge of greate power, and accuſtomed to weare apparell. He ſayth that all the tracte of this ſhore, was drowned with water and full of mudde, beſette with many trees, after the maner of owre maryſſhes, yet whereas in this place they wente alande for freſſhe water, they fownde many of the ſhel fyſſhes in the whiche pearles are gathered. But that coulde not cauſe the Admirall to tracte the tyme there, entendinge at this viage, only to proue howe many landes and ſeas he coulde diſcouer accordinge to the kynges commaundement. As they yet proceded forwarde, they ſawe here and there al the waye alonge by the ſhore, a great ſmoke ryſinge, vntyll they came to an other mountayne foure ſcore myles diſtant. There was no rocke or hyll that coulde be ſeene, but the ſame was all of a ſmoke. But whether theſe fyers were made by th[e]inhabitantes for their neceſſary buſynes, or as we are wont to ſette beacons on fyre when we ſuſpecte th[e]approche of owre enemies, thereby to gyue warninge to theyr neyghbours to bee in a redines, and gather togyther if perhappes owre men ſhulde attempte any thinge ageynſt them, or otherwyſe as ſeemethe moſt lykely, to caule them togyther as to a wonder to behould owre ſhippes, they knewe yet no certentie. In this tracte, the ſhores bended ſumetyme towarde the Southe, and ſumetyme towarde the Weſte and weſteſouthweſt: And the ſea was euery where entangeled with Ilandes: by reaſon whereof, the keeles of the ſhippes often tymes raſed the ſandes for ſhalownes of the water: So that the ſhyppes beinge very ſore bruſed and appayred, the ſayles, cables, and other tackelinges, in maner rotten, and the vytayles, (eſpecially the byſkette breade) corrupted by takynge water at the riftes euyll cloſed, the Admirall was enforced to turne backe ageyne. This laſte poynte where he touched of *Cuba* (not yet beinge knowen to be an Ilande) he cauled *Euangeliſta*. Thus turning his ſayles toward other Ilandes lyinge not farre from the ſuppoſed continente, he chaunced into a mayne ſea where was ſuche a multitude of greate tortoyſes, that ſumtyme they ſtayed the ſhyppes. Not longe after, he entered into a gulfe of whyte water, lyke vnto that wherof we ſpake before. At the length fearing the ſhelfes of the Ilands, he returned to the ſhore of *Cuba* by

Whyte and thicke water.

Wooddes of date trees.

Men appareled like white fryers.

16

Grasse almost as hyghe as corne.

Steppes of wyld beastes feete.

Natiue vines

Trees bearinge spyces and sweete fruites.

Greate Cranes.

Dyuers languages in the Ilande of Cuba.

Pearles in shelfysshes.

The sea entangeled with Ilandes

Euangelista.

A multitude of great tortoyses

A goufe of whyte water.

Humaine people.

Stock doues of more pleasaunt tast then partriches.

17

The humanitie of a reuerende owlde gouernour.

the ſame way which he came. Here a multitude of th[e]inhabitantes, as well women as men, reſorted to hym with cheerefull countenaunce and without feare: bringynge with them popingayes, breade, water, and cunnyes: But eſpecially ſtocke doues much bygger then owres: which he affirmeth, in ſauour and taſte, to bee muche more pleaſaunt then owre partryches. Wherfore where as in eatinge of them he perceaued a certeyne ſauoure of ſpyce to proceade from them, he commaunded the croppe to bee opened of ſuche as were newely kylled, and fownde the ſame full of ſweete ſpyces, whiche he argued to bee the cauſe of theyr ſtrange taſte. For it ſtandeth with good reaſon, that the fleſſhe of beaſtes, ſhulde drawe the nature and qualitie of theyr accuſtomed nuryſhemente. As the Admirall harde maſſe on the ſhore, there came towarde hym a certeyne gouernoure, a man of four ſcore yeares of age, and of great grauitie, althowgh he were naked ſauinge his pryuie partes. He had a great trayne of menne waytinge on hym. All the whyle the preeſte was at maſſe, he ſhewed hym ſelfe verye humble and gaue reuerente attendaunce with graue and demure countenaunce. When the maſſe was ended, he preſented to the Admirall, a baſkette of the fruites of his countrey, delyueringe the ſame with his owne handes. When the Admirall had gentelly interteyned hym, deſyringe leaue to ſpeake, he made an oration in the preſence of *Didacus* th[e]interpretoure, in this effecte. I haue byn aduertiſed (moſte mighty prince) that you haue of late with greate power ſubdued many landes and Regions hytherto vnknowen to you: and haue browght no little feare vppon all the people and inhabitantes of the ſame. The which your good fortune, you ſhal beare with leſſe inſolencie, if you remember that the ſoules of men haue two iourneyes after they are departed from this bodye. The one fowle and darke, prepared for ſuche as are iniurious and cruell to mankynde: The other pleaſaunt and delectable, ordeyned for them which in theyr lyfe tyme, loued peace and quietnes. If therefore you acknowleage your ſelfe to bee mortall, and conſyder that euery man ſhall receaue condigne rewarde or punyſhement for ſuch thinges as he hath done in this life, you wyl wrongefully hurte no man. When he had ſayde theſe wordes and other lyke, which were declared to the Admirall by th[e]interpretoure, he marueylinge at the iudgemente of the naked owlde man, anſwered, that he was gladde to heare his opinion as touchinge the ſundry iourneys and rewardes of ſowles departed from theyr bodyes: Suppoſinge that nother he, or any other of th[e]inhabitantes of thoſe Regions, had had any knowleage thereof. Declaringe further that the chiefe cauſe of his comminge thyther was to inſtructe them in ſuch godly knowleage and trewe religion: And that he was ſente into thoſe countreys by the Chriſtian kynge of Spayne (his lorde and maiſter) for the ſame purpoſe: And ſpecially to ſubdue and puniſſhe the Canibales and ſuch other miſcheuous people: And to defende innocentes ageynſt the violence of ſuch euyl doers wyllynge hym and all other ſuch as embraſed vertue, in no caſe to bee afrayde: But rather to open his mynde vnto him, if eyther he, or any other ſuche quiete men as he was, hadde ſuſteyned any wronge of theyr neyghbours: and that he wold ſee the ſame reuenged. Theſe comfortable wordes of the Admirall ſoo pleaſed the owlde man, that notwithſtandyng his extreeme age, he woulde gladly haue gone with the Admiral as he had doone in deede, if his wyfe and chyldren had not hyndered hym of his purpoſe. But he marueyled not a lyttle, that the Admirall was vnder the dominion of an other: And muche more, when th[e]interpretour towlde hym of the glorye, magnificence, pompes, greate powre, and furnymentes of warre of owre kynges, and of the multitudes of cities and townes which were vnder theyr dominions. Intendyng therfore to haue gonne with the Admirall, his wyfe and children fell proſtrate at his feete, with teares deſyrynge hym not to forſake them and leaue them deſolate. At whoſe pytifull requeſtes, the worthy owlde man beinge moued, remayned at home to the comfort of his people and famylie, ſatiſfyenge rather them then hym ſelfe. For not yet ceaſinge to woonder, and of heauy countenaunce bycauſe he myght not departe, he demaunded oſtentymes if that lande were not heauen, which browght foorth ſuche a kynde of men. For it is certeyne, that amonge them, the lande is as common as the ſonne and water: And that Myne and Thyne (the ſeedes of all myſcheefe) haue no place with them. They are contente with ſoo lyttle, that in ſoo large a countrey, they haue rather ſuperfluitie then ſcarſenes. Soo that (as wee haue ſayde before) they ſeeme to lyue in the goulden worlde, without toyle, lyuinge in open gardens, not intrenched with dykes, dyuyded with hedges, or defended with waules. They deale trewely one with another, without lawes, without bookes, and without Iudges. They take hym for an euyll and myſcheuous man, which taketh pleaſure in doinge hurte to other. And albeit that they delyte not in ſuperfluities, yet make they prouiſion for th[e]increaſe of ſuche rootes, wherof they make theyr breade, as *Maizium*, *Iucca*, and *Ages*, contented with ſuche ſimple dyet, wherby health is preſerued, and dyſeaſes auoyded. The Admirall therfore departinge from thenſe, and myndinge to returne ageyne ſhortly after, chauneed to coome ageyne to the Ilande of *Iamaica* beinge on the ſowthe ſyde therof: and coaſted all alonge by the ſhore of the ſame, from the Weſte to the Eaſte. From whoſe laſt corner on the Eaſt ſyde, when he ſawe towarde the North on his lefte hand, certeyn high mountains he knewe at the length that it was the ſowthe ſyde of the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*, which he had not yet paſſed by. Wherfore at the Calendes of September, enteringe into the hauen of the ſame Ilande, cauled ſayn Nycolas hauen, he repayred his ſhippes to th[e]intent that he myght ageyne waſt and ſpoyle the Ilandes of the Canibales, and burne all theyr Canoas, that thoſe raueninge wolues myght no longer perſecute and deuoure the innocent ſheepe. But he was at this tyme hyndered of his

An oration of the naked gouernour.

Theyr opinion of the soul of man.

Desyre of golde founde that which religion coulde not fynde. *Virtus post nummos. &c.*

The Iland as common as the sunne and water.

The golden worlde.

Prouision without care.

Simple diete

18

The Iland of Iamaica.

Hispaniola.

The Canibales.

purpoſe by reaſon of a dyſeaſe which he had gotten with to muche watchinge. Thus beinge feeble and weake, he was ledde of the maryners to the citie of *Iſabella*, where, with his two brytherne which were there, and other his familiers, he recouered his health in ſhorte ſpace. Yet coulde he not at this tyme aſſayle the Canibales, by reaſon of ſedicion that was ryſen of late amonge the Spanyardes which he had lefte in *Hiſpaniola*, wherof we wyll ſpeake more heareafter. Thus fare ye wel.

Sickenes of to much watchinge.

¶ The fourth booke of the fyrst decade *to* Lodouike *Cardinall of* Aragonie.

Olonus the Admirall of the Ocean, returning (as he ſuppoſed) from the continent or firme lande of Eaſt India, had aduertiſement that his brother *Boilus* and one *Peter Margarita*, an owld familier of the kinges, and a noble man, with diuers other of thoſe to whom he had left the gouernement of the Iland, were of corrupted mynde ageynſt him, departed into Spayne. Wherfore as wel to purge him of ſuch crimes as they ſhuld ley to his charge, as alſo to make a ſupply of other men in the place of them which were returned, and eſpecially to prouyde for vitailes, as wheat, wyne, oyle, and ſuch other which the Spanyardes are accuſtomed to eate, bycauſe they coulde not yet well agree with ſuch meates as they fownde in the Ilandes, determined ſhortly to take his vyage into Spayne. But what he dyd before his departure, I wyll brefely rehearſe.

Easte India.

The Spanyardes rebelle in the Admirals absence.

The kynges of the Ilande rebell.

The Spaniardes misbehauour.

The kynges of the Ilande rebell. The Spaniardes misbehauour.

The kynges of the Ilandes which had hytherto lyued quietly and content with theyr lyttle whiche they thowght abundante, wheras they nowe perceaued that owre men began to faſten foote within theyr Regions and to beare rule amonge them, tooke the matter ſo greuouſly, that they thowght nothynge elles but by what meanes they myght vtterly deſtroy them, and for euer abolyſſhe the memory of theyr name. For that kynde of men (the Spanyardes I meane which folowed the Admirall in that nauigation,) was for the moſt parte vnruly, regardynge nothinge but Idlenes, playe, and libertie: And wolde by no meanes abſteyne from iniuries: Rauyſhynge the women of the Ilandes before the faces of their huſbandes, fathers, and brethrene: By which theyr abhomynable myſdemaynour, they diſquieted the myndes of all th[e]inhabitantes: In ſo much that where ſo euer they fownde any of owre men vnprepared, they ſlewe them with ſuche fyercenes and gladnes, as thowgh they had offered ſacryfyce to God. Intendynge therefore to pacifie their troubled myndes, and to punyſhe them that ſlew his men before he departed from thenſe, he ſent for the kynge of that vale, which in the booke before, we deſcrybed to bee at the foote of the mountaynes of the Region of *Cibaua*. This kynges name was *Guarionexius*: who, the more ſtreyghtly to concyle vnto hym the frendeſhyppe of the Admirall, gaue hys ſyſter to wyfe to *Didacus*, a man from his chyldes age browght vp with the Admiral, whom he vſed for his interpretoure in the prouinces of *Cuba*. After this, he ſent for *Caunaboa*, cauled the lorde of the howſe of goulde: that is, of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*. For this *Caunaboa*, he ſente one capitayne *Hoieda*, whom the ditionaries of *Caunaboa* had enforced to keepe his howlde byſiegeinge for the ſpace of. xxx. dayes, the fortreſſe of ſaynte Thomas, in the which *Hoieda* with his fyftie ſouldiers, ſtoode at theyr defence, vntyll the comminge of the Admirall. Whyle *Hoieda* remayned with *Caunaboa*, many ambaſſadours of the kynges of dyuers Regions were ſent to *Caunaboa*, perſuadinge hym in no condicion to permitte the Chriſtians to inhabite the Ilande, except he had rather ſerue then rule. On the other parte, *Hoieda* aduertiſed *Caunaboa* to goo to the Admirall, and to make a league of frendeſhip with hym. But the ambaſſadours on the contrary part, threatened hym, that yf he wolde ſoo doo, the other kynges wolde inuade his Region. But *Hoieda* aunſwered theym ageyne, that wheras they conſpired to maynteyne their libertie, they ſhuld by that meanes be browght to ſeruitude and deſtruction if they entended to reſiſt or keepe warre ageinſt the Chriſtians. Thus *Caunaboa* on the one ſyde and the other, beinge troubeled as it were a rocke in the ſea, beaten with contrary fluddes, and much more vexed with the ſtormes of his gyltie conſcience for that he had priuilie ſlaine. xx. of owre men vnder pretence of peace, feared to coome to the Admirall. But at the length, hauing excogitated this deceyte, to haue ſlayne the Admirall and his coompany vnder the colour of frendſhippe if oportunitie wold ſoo haue ſerude, he repayred to the Admiral with his hole familie and many other wayting on hym, armed after theyr maner. Beinge demaunded why he browght ſoo greate a rout of men with hym, he aunſwered that it was not decente for ſoo great a prince as he was, to goo foorth of his howſe without ſuche a bande of men. But the thinge chaunced much otherwyſe then he looked for. For he fell into the ſnares which he had prepared for other. For wheras by the way he began to repente hym that he came foorthe of his howſe, *Hoieda* with many fayre wordes and promyſes, browght hym to the Admirall: At whoſe commaundement, he was immediatly taken and put in priſon: So that the ſowles of owre men were not longe

Guarionexius the kynge of the great vale

Didacus the interpretour

Caunaboa, the kynge of the house of golde.

Capitayne Hoieda

19

Kynge Caunaboa, had slain the Spanyardes.

Caunaboa conspireth the Admiralles death.

Fayre words make fooles fayne.

from their bodies vnreuenged. Thus *Caunaboa* with all his familie beinge taken, the Admirall was determined to runne ouer the Ilande. But he was certified that there was ſuch famine amonge th[e]inhabitantes, that there was alredye fyftie thouſande menne deade therof: And that they dyed yet dayly as it were rotton ſheepe: The cauſe wherof was wel knowen to bee theyr owne obſtinacie and frowardnes. For where as they ſawe that owre men entended to chooſe them a dwelling place in the Ilande, ſuppoſinge that they myght haue driuen them from thence if the vytailes of the Ilande ſhoulde fayle, they determyned with them ſelues, not only to leaue ſowing and plantyng, but alſo to deſtroy and plucke vp by the rootes euery man in his owne region, that whiche they had alredye ſowen of both kyndes of breade wherof we made mencion in the fyrſt booke. But eſpecially amonge the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, otherwyſe cauled *Cipanga*, for as muche as they hadde knoweleage that the golde which abundeth in that Region, was the cheefe cauſe that deteyned owre men in the Ilande. In the meane tyme, he ſent foorth a Capitayne with a bande of men to ſearche the ſowthe ſyde of the Ilande. Who at his returne, reported that throwghe out all the Regions that he trauayled, there was ſuche ſcarſenes of breade, that for the ſpace of. xvi. dayes he eate nowght elles but the rootes of herbes, and of younge date trees, or the fruites of other wylde trees. But *Guarionexius*, the kynge of the vale lyinge beneth the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, whoſe kyngedoome was not ſoo waſted as the other, gaue owre menne certeyne vytayles.

Famine in the Ilande of hispaniola.

The hunger of golde causeth great famine.

Within a fewe dayes after, bothe that the iourneys myght bee the ſhorter, and alſo that owre men myght haue more ſafe places of refuge, if the inhabitantes ſhuld hereafter rebell in lyke maner, he buylded an other fort[r]eſſe (whiche he cauled the towre of Conception) betwene the citie of *Iſabella* and ſaint Thomas fortreſſe, in the marches of the kyngdome of this *Guarionexius* within the precincte of *Cibaua* vpon the ſyde of a hyll, hauynge a fayre ryuer of holſome water runnynge hard by the ſame. Thus when the inhabitantes ſawe newe buyldynges to bee dayly erected, and owre ſhippes lying in the hauen rotten and halfe broken, they beganne to deſpayre of any hope of libertie, and wandered vp and downe with heuie chere. From the towre of Conception, ſearchynge diligently the inner partes of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, there was a certeine kyng whiche gaue them a maſſe of rude golde, as bygge as a mans fyſt, weighing. xx. vnces. This golde was not fownde in the banke of that ryuer, but in a heape of drye earthe: and was lyke vnto the ſtone cauled *Tofus*, whiche is ſoone reſolued into ſande. This maſſe of golde, I my ſelfe ſawe in Caſtile, in the famous citie of *Methymna Campi*, where the courte lay all that wynter. I ſawe alſo a great piece of pure *Electrum*: of the whiche belles and apothecaries morters, and many ſuche other veſſels and inſtrumentes maye bee made, as were in owlde tyme of copper of the citie of *Corinthus*. This piece of *Electrum*, was of ſuch weight, that I was not onely with both my handes vnable to lifte it from the grownde, but alſo not of ſtrengthe to remoue it eyther one waye or an other. They affyrmed that it wayde more then three hundreth pownde weight, after. viii. vnces to the pownde. It was fownde in the howſe of a certen prynce, and lefte hym by his predeceſſours. And albeit that in the dayes of th[e]inhabitantes yet liuynge, *Electrum* was no where digged, yet knewe they where the myne therof was: but owre men with muche adoo, coulde hardely cauſe them to ſhewe them the place, they bore them ſuche priuie hatred. Yet at the length, they browght theym to the myne, beyng nowe ruinate and ſtopped with ſtones and rubbiſſhe. It is muche eaſier to dygge then is the iren myne: and myght bee reſtored agein, if myners and other woorkemen ſkylfull therin, were appoynted therto. Not farre from the towre of Conception, in the ſame mountaynes, is fownd great plentie of Amber: and owte of certen rockes of the ſame diſtilleth a ſubſtance of the yelowe coloure whiche the paynters vſe. Not farre from theſe mountaynes are many greate wooddes, in the which are none other trees then braſile, whiche the Italians caule *Verzino*. But here perhappes (right noble prynce) yowe wolde aſke what ſhoulde be the cauſe, that where as the Spanyardes haue brought owte of theſe Ilandes certen ſhyppes laden with braſile, ſumwhat of goſſampine cotton, a quantitie of amber, a lyttel golde, and ſum ſpices, why they haue not broughte ſuche plentie of golde and ſuche other ryche marchaundies as the fruitfulneſſe of theſe regions ſeeme to promiſſe. To this I anſwere, that when *Colonus* the admirall was lykewiſe demaunded the cauſe hereof, he made anſwere that the Spanyardes whiche he tooke with him into theſe regions, were gyuen rather to ſlepe, pley, and ydleneſſe, then to laboure: And were more ſtudious of ſedition and newes, then deſyrous of peace and quietneſſe: Alſo that beynge gyuen to lycencioufnes, they rebelled and forſooke hym, fyndynge matter of falſe accuſations agaynſt hym, bycauſe he went aboute to repreſſe theyr owtragiouſenes. By reaſon wherof he was not yet able to breake the power of the inhabytantes, and freely to poſſeſſe the full dominion of the Ilande. And theſe hynderaunces to be the cauſe that hitherto the gaynes haue ſcarſely counteruayled the charges. Albeit, euen this yere whyle I wryte theſe thynges at yowre requeſte, they gathered in twoo moonethes the ſumme of a thouſande and twoo hundreth poundes weight of golde. But bycauſe we intende to ſpeake more largely of theſe thynges in theyr place, we wyll nowe retourne from whenſe we haue digreſſed. When the inhabitantes perceaued that they could by no meanes ſhake the yoke from their neckes, they made humble ſupplication to the Admirall that they myght ſtande to theyr tribute, and apply them ſelues to reincreaſe the fruites of theyr countrey, beinge nowe almoſte waſted. He graunted them theyr requeſte: and appoynted ſuch order that euery Region ſhulde paye their tribute, with the commodities of theyr countreys, accordinge to

A masse of gold weighinge. xx. ounces.

Tofus.

Electrum is a metall naturally mixt of one portion of golde and an other of siluer beinge of propertie to bewray poyson, and was therfore in owlde tyme in greater estimation then golde.

The myne of Electrum.

An other kynde of amber is taken out of greate whale fishes

Orpement or oker.

Wooddes of brasile trees.

Causes of hinderance.

Licenciusnes of to much libertie

And this only gathered and not digged out of the bodi of the mine

The people make supplication to stand to their tribute

theyr portion, and at ſuche tyme as they were agreed vppon. But the violent famine dyd fruſtrate all theſe appoyntmentes. For all the trauayles of theyr bodyes, were ſcarſely able to ſuffice to fynde them meate in the wooddes, whereby to ſuſteyne theyr lyues, beinge of long tyme contented with rootes and the fruites of wylde trees. Yet manye of the kynges with theyr people, euen in this extreme neceſſitie, browght parte of theyr tribute: Moſte humbly deſyringe the Admirall to haue compaſſion of theyr calamities, and to beare with them yet a whyle, vntyll the Iland were reſtored to the owlde ſtate. Promyſinge farther, that that which was nowe wantinge, ſhulde then bee dowble recompenſed. But fewe of the inhabitantes of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, kepte theyr promyſe, bycauſe they were ſorer oppreſſed with famine then any of the other. They ſaye, that the inhabitantes of theſe mountaynes, differ no leſſe in maners and language from them which dwel in the playnes, then amonge vs, the ruſticalles of the countrey from gentylmen of the cõurte: wheras notwithſtandinge, they lyue bothe as it were vnder one portion of heuen, and in many thinges, much after one faſſhion, as in nakednes, and rude ſimplicitie. But nowe lette vs returne to *Caunaboa*, the kynge of the howſe of golde, beinge in captiuitie. When he perceaued him ſelfe to be caſte in pryſon, fretinge and gratinge his teethe as it had bin a lyon of *Libia*, and dayely and nightlye deuiſinge with hym ſelfe howe he myght bee delyuered, beganne to perſuade the Admirall, that for as muche as he had nowe taken vnto his dominion the Region of *Cipanga* or *Cibaua* (wherof he was king) it ſhulde bee expedient to ſende thyther a garryſon of Chriſtian men, to defende the ſame from the incurſions of his owld enemyes and borderers. For he ſayde, that it was ſignyfied vnto hym, that the countreye was waſted and ſpoyled with ſuche incurſions. By this crafty deuiſe, he thought to haue browght to paſſe, that his brother whiche was in that regyon, and the other his kynſefolkes and frendes with their adherentes, ſhoulde haue taken, eyther by ſleyghte or force, as many of owre men, as myght haue redeemed hym. But the Admyrall vnderſtandynge his crafty meanynge, ſente *Hoieda* with ſuche a coompany of men, as might vanquiſhe the Cibauians, if they ſhulde moue warre ageynſte them. Owre men had ſcarſely entered into the Region, but the brother of *Caunaboa* came agenſte them with an armie of fyue thouſande naked menne, armed after theyr maner with clubbes, arrowes typte with bones, and ſpeares made harde at the endes with fyre. He ſtole vpon owre men beyng in one of theyr howſes: and encamped rownde about the ſame on euery ſyde. This Cibauian, as a man not ignorant in the diſciplyne of warre, abowte the diſtance of a furlonge from the houſe, diuided his armye into fyue batayles, appoyntinge to euery of them a circuite by equal diuiſion: And placed the froont of his owne batayle, directlye ageynſt owre men. When he had thus ſet his batayles in good array, he gaue certeyne ſignes that the hole army ſhulde marche forwarde in order with equal paces, and with a larome freſſhly aſſayle theyr enemies, in ſuch ſort that none might eſcape. But owre men iudginge it better to encounter with one of the batayles, then to abyde the brunt of the hole army, gaue onſet on the mayne batayle aranged in the playne, bycauſe that place was moſt commodious for the horſemen. When the horſemen therfore hadde gyuen the charge, they ouerthrewe them with the breſtes of theyr horſes, and ſlewe as many as abode th[e]ende of the fyght. The reſidue beinge ſtryken with feare, diſparcled, and fledde to the mountaynes and rockes: from whenſe they made a pytifull houlynge to owre men, deſyringe them to ſpare them: proteſtinge that they wolde neuer more rebelle, but doo what ſo euer they woulde commaunde them, if they wolde ſuffer theim to lyue in theyr owne countrey. Thus the brother of *Caunaboa* beinge taken, the Admirall licenced the people to reſorte euery man to his owne. Theſe thinges thus fortunately atchiued this Region was pacified. Amonge thoſe mountaynes, the vale which *Caunaboa* inhabited, is cauled *Magona*, and is excedynge fruitfull: hauinge in it many goodly ſpringes: and ryuers, in the ſande wherof, is fownde great plentie of golde. The ſame yeare in the mooneth of Iune, they ſaye there roſe ſuche a boyſt[r]ous tempeſte of wynde from the ſowtheaſte, as hath not lyghtly ben harde of: The violence hereof was ſuch that it plucked vppe by the roots what ſo euer greate trees were within the reache of the force therof. When this whirle wynde came to the hauen of the citie, it beate downe to the bottome of the ſea, three ſhippes which lay at anker, and broke the cables in ſundre: and that (which is the greater maruail) without any ſtorme or rowghnes of the ſea, onely turnynge them three or foure tymes abowte. The inhabitantes alſo affirme, that the ſame yeare, the ſea extended it ſelfe further in to the lande, and roſe higher then euer it dyd before by the memory of man, by the ſpace of a cubet. The people therfore, muttered amonge them ſelues, that owre nation hadde trowbled the elementes, and cauſed ſuch portentous ſignes. Theſe tempeſtes of the ayer (which the Grecians caule *Tiphones*, that is, whyrle wyndes) they caule, *Furacanes*: which they ſay, doo often tymes chaunce in this Ilande: But that neyther they nor theyr great grandfathers euer ſawe ſuche violent and furious *Furacanes*, that plucked vppe greate trees by the rootes: Neyther yet ſuche ſurges and vehement motions on the ſea, that ſoo waſted the lande. As in deede it may appeare, for as muche as, where ſo euer the ſea bankes are nere to any plaine there are in maner euery where, floriſhing medowes reachinge euen vnto the ſhore. But nowe let vs returne to *Caunaboa*. As kynge *Caunaboa* therefore and his brother ſhoulde haue binne browght into Spayne, they dyed by the waye for verye penſyuenes and anguyſhe of mynde. The Admiral, whoſe ſhippes were drowned in the forſayde tempeſte, perceauinge him ſelfe to bee nowe encloſed, commaunded foorthwith two other ſhippes (which the Spaniardes

Famine.

The nature of the Region disposeth the maner of the people.

Kynge Caunaboa in captiuitie.

The persuasion of Caunaboa.

21

Caunaboa his brother rebelleth.

A conflict betwene the Cibauians and the Spanyardes.

The Cibauians haue the ouerthrowe.

A great tempest in the moneth of Iune.

Three ships drowned lyinge at anker

Whyrle wyndes.

Furaeanes.

The death of kynge Caunaboa and his brother.

Bartholomeus Colonus the leauetenaunt searcheth the golde mines.

caule *Caruelas*) to bee made. For he had with hym, all maner of artificers perteyninge therunto. Whyle theſe thinges were dooinge, he ſent foorth *Bartholomeus Colonus* his brother, beinge leauetenaunt of the Ilande, with an army of men to ſearche the golde mynes beinge dyſtant three ſcore leaques from the citie of *Iſabella*, which were fownde by the conducte of certeyne people of the Ilande, beefore the mynes of *Cipanga* or *Cibaua* were knowen. In theſe mynes, they fownde certeyne deepe pittes which had byn digged in owlde tyme, owte of theſe pyttes, the Admirall (who affirmeth this Ilande of *Hiſpaniola* to bee Ophir, as we haue ſayde before) ſuppoſeth that Salomon the kynge of *Hieruſalem* had his greate ryches of golde wherof we reede in the owlde teſtamente: And that his ſhippes ſayled to this Ophir by the goulfe of *Perſia* cauled *Sinus Perſicus*. But whether it bee ſoo or not, it lyeth not in me to iudge, but in my opinion it is farre of. As the myners dygged the ſuperficiall or vppermoſt parte of the earthe of the mynes, durynge for the ſpace of. vi. miles, and in dyuers places ſyfted the ſame on the drye lande, they fownde ſuch plentie of golde, that euery hyred labourer could eaſely fynde euery day, the weyght of three drammes. Theſe mynes beinge thus ſearched and fownde, the Lieuetenaunte certifyed the Admirall hereof by his letters. The which when he had receaued the. v. daye of the Ides of Marche. Anno. 1495. he entered into his newe ſhippes, and tooke his viage directly to Spayne to aduertiſe the kynge of all his affayres, leauinge the hole regiment of the Iland with his brother the Lieuetenaunte,

22

The golde mynes of Salomon.

Golde in the superficiall partes of the earth.

The Admiral taketh his viage to spaine

¶ The fyfte booke of the fyrst decade, *to* Lodouike *Cardinall of* Aragonie.

The golden towre.

Lacke of vytayles.

After the Admyralles departyng into Spain his Brother the Lieuetenaunte, buylded a fort[r]eſſe in the golde mynes, as he had commaunded hym. This he cauled the golden towre, bycauſe the labourers fownde golde in the earth and ſtone wherof they made the waules of the fortreſſe. He conſumed three monethes in makynge the inſtrumentes wherwith the golde ſhulde bee gathered, waſhed, tryed, and molten. Yet was he at this tyme by reaſon of wante of vitayles, enforced to leaue all thynges imperfecte, and to goo ſeeke for meate. Thus as he with a bande of armed men, had entered three ſcore myles further within the lande, the people of the countrey here and there reſortynge to hym, gaue hym a certen portion of theyr breade in exchange for other of owre thynges. But he coulde not long tary here, bicauſe they lacked meate in the fortreſſe, whyther he haſted with ſuch as he had now gotten. Leauyng therfore in the fortreſſe a garryſon of tenne men, with that portion of the Ilande breade whiche yet remayned, leauynge alſo with them a hownde to take thoſe kyndes of lyttle beaſtes which they caule *Vſias*, not muche vnlyke owre conyes, he returned to the fortreſſe of Conception. This alſo, was the moonthe wherin the kynge *Guarionexius*, and alſo *Manicautexius*, bortherer vnto hym, ſhulde haue brought in theyr tributes. Remaynynge there the hole moonthe of Iune, he exacted the hole tribute of theſe twoo kinges, and vytayles neceſſary for hym and ſuche as he brought with hym, whiche were abowt foure hundreth in number. Shortely after, abowte the calendes of Iulye, there came three Caraueles from Spayne, bringynge with them ſundry kyndes of vitayles, as wheate, oyle, wyne, bacon, and marckelmas beaſe: whiche were dyuyded to euery man accordynge as neede required. Sum alſo was loſt in the cariage for lacke of good lookyng too. At the arryuall of theſe ſhyppes, the lieuetenaunte receaued commaundment from the kynge and the Admyrall his brother, that he with his men ſhulde remoue theyr habitation to the ſowthe ſyde of the Ilande, bycauſe it was nerer to the golde mynes: Alſo that he ſhoulde make dilygent ſearche for thoſe kynges whiche had ſlayne the Chriſtian men, and to ſende them with theyr confederates, bownd into Spayne. At the nexte vyage therfore, he ſent three hundreth captiues with three Kinges: And when he had diligently ſearched the coaſtes of the ſouth ſyde, he

Huntinge houndes.

Kynge Manicautexius.

Vytayles browght from Spayne.

tranſported his habitation, and buylded a fortreſſe there, vpon the toppe of a hyll, neere vnto a ſure hauen.

Saynt Dominikes towre.

Groues of date trees.

Isabella.

This fortreſſe, he cauled ſaynt Dominikes towre. Into this hauen, runneth a ryuer of holſome water, replenyſhed with ſundrye kyndes of good fyſſhes. They affyrme this ryuer to haue many benefytes of nature. For, where ſo euer it runneth all thynges are excedynge pleaſaunte and fruitfull: hauynge on euery ſyde, groues of date trees, and dyuers other of the Ilande frutes ſo plentyfully, that as they ſayled alonge by the ſhore, often tymes the branches therof laden with flowres and fruites, hunge ſoo ouer theyr heades, that they might plucke them with theyr handes. Alſo that the frutefulnes of this grownde, is eyther equall with the ſoyle of Iſabella, or better. In *Iſabella*, he lefte only certeyne ſicke men and ſhippe wrightes, whom he had appointed to make certeyne carauels The reſidue of his men, he conueighed to the ſowth, to ſaint Dominickes towre. After he had buylded this fortreſſe, leauinge therin a garryſon of. xx. men, he with the remanent of his ſouldiers, prepared

23

them ſelues to ſearche the inner partes of the Weſte ſyde of the Ilande, hytherto knowen onely by name. Therfore abowte. xxx. leaques, (that is) foure ſcore and tenne myles from the fortreſſe, he chaunced on the ryuer *Naiba*, whiche we ſayde to deſcende from the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, ryght towarde the ſowth, by the myddeſt of the Iland. When he had ouerpaſſed this ryuer with a coompanye of armed men diuided into. xxv. decurions, that is, tenne in a company with theyr capitaynes, he ſent two decurions to the regions of thoſe kinges in whoſe landes were the great woods of braſile trees. Inclyninge towarde the lefte hande, they ſownde the woodes, entered into them, and felled the hygh and precious trees, which were to that day, vntouched. Eche of the decurions fylled certeyne of the Ilande howſes with the trunkes of braſile, there to be reſerued vntyll the ſhyppes came which ſhulde cary them away. But the Lieuetenaunt directinge his iourney towarde the ryght hande, not farre from the bankes of the ryuer of *Naiba*, ſownde a certeyne kynge whoſe name was *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, encamped ageynſt th[e]inhabitantes of the prouince of *Naiba*, to ſubdue them vnder his dominion, as he had doone manye other kynges of the Ilande, bortherers vnto hym: The palaice of this great kynge, is cauled *Xaragua*: and is ſituate towarde the Weſte ende of the Ilande, diſtante from the ryuer of *Naiba*. xxx. leaques. All the prynces which dwell betwene the Weſte ende and his palaice, are ditionaries vnto hym. All that Region from *Naiba*, to the furtheſte marches of the weſte, is vtterly withowte golde, althowgh it bee full of mountaynes. When the kynge had eſpied owre men, layinge a parte his weapons, and gyuinge ſignes of peace, he ſpake gentelly to them, (incerteyne whether it were of humanitie or feare) and demaunded of them what they woolde haue. The Lieuetenaunte aunſwered: That he ſhulde paye tribute to the Admirall his brother, in the name of the Chriſtian kynge of Spayne. To whom he ſayde: Howe can yowe requyre that of me, whereas neuer a Region vnder my dominion bringeth foorth golde. For he had harde, that there was a ſtrange nation entered into the Ilande, whiche made greate ſearche for golde. But he ſuppoſed that they deſyred none other thynge. The leauetenaunt anſwered ageyne: God forbydde that we ſhulde enioyne any man to pay ſuch tribute as he myght not eaſely forbeare, or ſuch as were not engendered or growinge in the Region: But we vnderſtand that your Regions brynge foorth great plentie of Goſſampine cotton, and hempe, with ſuche other, whereof we deſyre yowe to gyue vs parte. When he harde theſe woordes, he promyſed with cherefull countenaunce, to gyue hym as muche of theſe thynges as he wolde requyre. Thus diſmiſſinge his army, and ſendynge meſſengers beefore, he hym ſelfe accoompanyed the Leauetenaunte and browght hym to his palaice, beinge dyſtante (as we haue ſayde). xxx. leaques. In al this tracte, they paſſed throwgh the Iuriſdiction of other princes beinge vnder his dominion: Of the whiche, ſume gaue them hempe, of no leſſe goodnes to make tackelinges for ſhippes then owre woodde. Other ſume, browght breade, and ſum goſſampyne cotton: And ſoo euery of them payde tribute with ſuche commodities as theyr countreys browght foorth. At the lengthe they came to the kinges manſion place of *Xaragua*. Before they entered into the palaice, a greate multitude of the kynges ſeruauntes and ſubiectes reſorted to the courte, honorably (after their maner) to receaue theyr kyng *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, with the ſtrangers which he browght with hym to ſe the magnificence of his courte. But nowe ſhall yowe heare howe they were interteyned. Amonge other tryumphes and ſyghtes, two are eſpecially to bee noted. Fyrſte there mette them a company of. xxx. women, beinge al the kynges wyues and concubines, bearinge in theyr handes branches of date trees, ſinginge and daunſinge: They were all naked, ſauynge that theyr pryuie partes were couered with breeches of goſſampine cotton. But the virgins, hauynge theyr heare hangynge downe abowte their ſhulders, tyed abowte the foreheade with a fyllet, were vtterly naked. They affirme that theyr faces, breſtes, pappes, handes, and other partes of theyr bodyes, were excedynge ſmoothe, and well proportioned: but ſumwhat inclyning to a louely brown. They ſuppoſed that they had ſeene thoſe moſt beawtyfull *Dryades*, or the natyue nymphes or fayres of the fontaynes wherof the antiquites ſpeake ſo muche. The branches of date trees which they bore in theyr right handes when they daunced, they delyuered to the Leauetenaunt with lowe curteſy and ſmylynge countenaunce. Thus enteringe into the kynges howſe, they ſownde a delycate ſupper prepared for them after theyr maner. When they were well refreſhed with meate, the nyght drawinge on, they were browght by the kynges officers, euery man to his lodginge, accordyng to his degree, in certeyne of theyr howſes abowte the palaice, where they reſted them in hangynge beddes after the maner of the countrey, wherof we haue ſpoken more largely in an other place.

¶ The daye folowyng they browght owre men to their common haule, into the whiche they coome together as often as they make any notable games or triumphes, as we haue ſaid before. Here, after many daunſynges, ſynginges, maſkinges, runnynges, wreſtlynges, and other tryinge of maſtryes, ſoodenly there appered in a large plaine nere vnto the haule. ii. greate armies of men of warre, whiche the kynge for his paſtyme had cauſed to bee prepared, as the Spaniardes vſe the playe with reedes whiche they caule *Iuga de Canias*. As the armies drewe neere together, they aſſayled the one the other as fierſely, as if mortal ennemies with theyr baners ſpleade, ſhulde fight for theyr goodes, theyr landes, theyr lyues, their libertie, theyr countrey, theyr wyues and theyr chyldren. Soo that within the momente of an howre, foure men were ſlayne, and many wounded. The battayle alſo ſhoulde haue contynued longer, if the kynge had not at the requeſt of owre men, cauſed them to ceaſe. The thyrde day, the

The ryuer of Naiba

Wooddes of braſile trees.

Kinge Beuchius Anacauchoa.

The palaice of xaragua.

Mountaynes without gold

Tribute.

The woolſe entreateth the sheepe.

Hempe and gossampine cotton.

Howe the Lieuetenant was receaued at the kynges palaice.

The kynges wyues.

Well fauered women.

Dryades.

24

A delicate supper.

Hanginge beddes.

A common haule.

A pretie pastyme.

Foure men slaine in spert

Lieuetenant conſelynge the kynge to ſowe more plentie of goſſampine vppon the bankes nere vnto the waters ſyde, that they myghte the better paye theyr tribute priuately accordynge to the multitude of theyr horſes, he repayred to *Iſabella* to vyſite the ſicke men whiche he had lefte there, and alſo to ſee howe his woorkes wente forwarde. In the tyme of his abſence. xxx. of his men were conſumed with diuerſe diſeaſes. Wherfore beinge ſore trowbled in his mynde, and in maner at his wyttes ende what he were beſt to doo, for as muche as he wanted al thynges neceſſarie as well to reſtore them to healthe whiche were yet acraſed, as alſo vitayles to maynitaine the hole multitude, where as there was yet no ſhippe coome from Spaine, as at the length he determyned to ſende abrode the ſicke men here and there to ſundrye Regions of the Ilande, and to the caſtelles which they had erected in the ſame. For directly from the citie of Iſabella to ſaynt Dominikes towre, that is, from the north to the ſouth, throwgh the Iland, they had buylded thus many caſtelles. Fyrſte. xxxvi. myles diſtante from Iſabella, they buylded the caſtell of *Sperantia*, from *Sperantia*. xxv. myles, was the caſtell of ſaynte Catharine, from ſaynte Catharines. xx. myles, was ſaynt Iames towre. Other. xx. miles from ſaynte Iames towre, was a ſtronger fortreſſe then any of the other, which they cauled the towre of Conception: which he made the ſtronger bicauſe it was ſituate at the rootes of the golden mountaynes of Cibaua, in the greate and large playne ſoo fruitefull and well inhabited as we haue before deſcribed. He buylded alſo an other in the mydde waye betwene the towre of Conception and ſaynt Dominikes towre. The which alſo was ſtronger then the towre of Conception, bycauſe it was within the lymittes of a great kynge, hauinge vnder his dominion fiue thowſande men: whoſe chiefe Citie and heade of the Realme, beynge cauled *Bonauum*, he wylled that the caſtell ſhulde alſo bee cauled after the ſame name. Therfore leauynge the ſicke men in theſe caſtels and other of the Ilande howſes nere vnto the ſame, he hym ſelfe repayred to ſaynte Dominikes, exactinge tributes of all the kynges whiche were in his waye. When he had taryed there a fewe dayes, there was a rumor ſpredde, that all the kynges abowte the borders of the towre of Conception, had conſpyred with deſperate myndes to rebell agenſte the Spaniardes. When the Lieuetenaunte was certified hereof, he tooke his iorneye towarde them immediately, not beyng diſcoraged eyther by the lengthe of the waye, or feebleneſſe of his ſouldyers, beynge in maner forweried with trauayle. As he drewe nere vnto them, he had aduertiſement that kynge *Guarionexius* was choſen by the other prynces to bee the Capitayne of this rebellion: And that he was enforſed therto halfe vnwilling, beynge ſeduced by theyr perſwaſions and prouocations. The whiche is more lykely to be trewe, for that he had before had experience of the power and policie of owre men. They came together at a daye appoynted, accoompanied with. xv. thouſande men, armed after their maner, once agen to proue the fortune of warre. Here the Lieuetenaunte conſultynge with the Capitayne of the fortreſſe and the other ſouldiers of whom he had the conducte, determyned to ſette vpon them vnwares in their owne howſes before they coulde prepare theyr army. He ſent foorthe therfore to euery kynge, a Centurian, that is, a capitaine of a hundreth, which were commaunded vppon a ſudden to inuade theyr howſes in the night, and to take them ſleepinge, beefore the people (beinge ſcattered here and there) might aſſemble togyther. Thus ſecreatly enteringe into their vylages, not fortified with waules, trenches, or bulwarkes, they broke in vppon them, tooke them, bounde them, and led away euery man his priſoner according as they were commaunded. The Lieuetenaunt hym ſelfe with his hundreth men, aſſayled kynge *Guarionexius* as the woorthier perſonage, whom he tooke pryſoner as dyd the other capitaynes theyr kynges, and at the ſame howre appoynted. Foureteene of theym were browght the ſame nyght to the towre of Conception. Shortlye after, when he had put to death two of the kynges which were the chiefe autours of this newe reuolte, and had ſuborned *Guarionexius* and the other kynges to attempte the ſame: leaſt the people for ſorowe of theyr kynges ſhulde neglecte or forſake their countrey, whiche thinge myght haue byn greate incommoditie to owre men, who by th[e]increaſe of theyr ſeedes and fruites were oftentymes ayded, he freely pardoned and diſmiſſed *Guarionexius* and the other kynges. The people in the meane tyme flocked togyther abowte the towre, to the nomber of fyue thowſande withowte weapons, with pytiful houling for the delyueraunce of theyr kynges: The ayer thundered, and the earth trembeled throwgh the vehemencie of theyr owtcry. The Lieuetenaunt warned *Guarionexius* and the other kynges, with threatenynges, with rewardes, and with promyſes, neuer hereafter to attempte any ſuche thynge. Then *Guarionexius* made an oration to the people of the great power of owre men, of theyr clemencie towarde offenders, and liberalitie to ſuche as remayne faithfull: deſyringe them to quiet theyr myndes: and from henſefoorth nother in deede nor thowght to interpryſe any thynge ageynſt the Chriſtians, but to obeye and ſerue them, excepte they wolde dayly brynge them ſelues into further calamyties. When the oration was fynyſhed, they tooke hym vp and ſet hym on theyr ſhulders, and ſoo caryed hym home to his owne palaice. And by this meanes, this Region was pacified for a whyle. But owre men, with heauy countenaunce, wandered vppe and downe, as deſolate in a ſtrange countrey, lackinge vytailes, and worne owte of apparell, whereas. xv. moonethes were nowe paſſed ſence the Admirals departure: duringe which tyme, they coulde heare nothynge owte of Spayne. The Leauetenaunt comforted them all that he coulde with fayre wordes and promyſes. In the meane tyme, *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, the kynge of the Weſte partes of the Region of *Xaragua* (of whom we ſpake before) ſente meſſengers to the Lieuetenaunt to ſignifye vnto hym, that he hadde in a redynes the

Prouiſion for diseased men

The castels or towres of hispaniola.

The golden mountaynes of Cibaua.

Bonauum

Tribute.

The kynges rebelle.

Guarionexius capitaine of the conspiracie.

An army of xv. thousande Barbarians.

25

The kynges are taken prisoners.

Kynge Guarionexius is pardoned.

Lacke of vytayles.

Beuchius Anacauchoa, the kynge of Xaragua.

goſſampine cotton and ſuche other thinges as he wylled hym to prepare for the paymente of his trybute. Wherupon the Lieuetenaunt tooke his iorney thyther, and was honorably receaued of the kynge and his ſyſter, ſumtyme the wyfe of *Caunaboa* the kynge of *Cibaua*, bearing no leſſe rule in the gouernaunce of her brothers kyngedome, then he hym ſelfe. For they affirme her to bee a wyſe woman, of good maners, and pleaſaunt in company. Shee erneſtly perſuaded her brother by th[e]example of her huſbande, to loue and obeye the Chriſtians. This woman was cauled *Anacaona*. He fownde in the palaice of *Beuchius Anacauchoa*. xxxii. kynges whiche hadde browght theyr tributes with them, and abode his comminge. They browght with them alſo beſyde theyr trybute aſſigned them, further to demerite the fauour of owre men, great plentie of vytayles: as bothe kyndes of breade, cunnyes, and fyſſhes, alredy dryed bycauſe they ſhulde not putrifie: Serpentes alſo of that kynd which wee ſayd to bee eſteemed amonge them as moſt delicate meate, and lyke vnto Crocodiles ſauing in byggenes. Theſe ſerpentes they caule *Iuannas*, which owre men learned ſumewhat to late to haue byn engendred in the Ilande. For vnto that day, none of them durſte aduenture to taſte of them by reaſon of theyr horrible deformitie and lotheſumnes. Yet the Lieuetenaunt beinge entyſed by the pleaſantnes of the kynges ſyſter, determined to taſte of the ſerpentes. But when he felte the fleſhe therof to bee ſo delicate to his tonge, he fel too, amayne without al feare. The which thinge his coompanyons perceauinge, were not behynde hym in greedines: In ſoo muche that they hadde nowe none other talke then of the ſweetenes of theſe ſerpentes: which they affyrme to bee of more pleaſaunte taſte, then eyther owre pheſauntes or pertriches. But they loſe theyr taſte, excepte they bee prepared after a certeyne faſſhion: as doo peacockes and pheſauntes except they bee interlarded beefore they bee roſted. They prepare them therefore after this maner. Fyrſt takynge owte theyr bowels euen from the throte to the thyghes, they waſhe and rubbe theyr bodies very cleane bothe within and withowte. Then rouling them togyther on a cyrcle, inuolued after the maner of a ſlepynge ſnake, they thruſte them into a potte of no bygger capacitie then to houlde them only. This doone, puttinge a lyttle water vnto them with a portion of the Ilande pepper, they ſeethe them with a ſoft fyer of ſweete woodde, and ſuche as maketh no greate ſmoke. Of the fat of them beinge thus ſodde, is made an excedinge pleaſaunte brothe or potage. They ſay alſo, that there is no meate to bee compared to the egges of theſe ſerpentes, which they vſe to ſeethe by them ſelues. They are good to bee eaten as ſone as they are ſodde: And may alſo bee reſerued many dayes after. But hauinge ſayde thus muche of theyr intertaynement and daintie fare, let vs nowe ſpeake of other matters. When the Lieuetenaunt had fylled one of the Ilande howſes with the goſſampine cotton which he hadde receaued for trybute, the kynges promyſed furthermore to gyue hym as muche of theyr breade, as he wolde demaunde. He gaue them hartie thankes and gently accepted theyr freendly profer. In the meane time whyle this breade was gatheringe in ſundry Regions to bee browght to the palaice of *Beuchius Anacauchoa* kynge of *Xaragua*, he ſent meſſengers to Iſabella for one of the two carauelles which were lately made there: intendinge to ſende the ſame thyther ageyne laden with breade. The maryners gladde of theſe tydynges, ſayled abowte the Ilande, and in ſhort ſpace browght the ſhippe to the coaſtes of *Xaragua*. The ſyſter of kynge *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, that wyſe and pleaſaunt woman *Anacaona*, (the wyfe ſumtyme of *Caunaboa* the kynge of the golden howſe of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, whose huſbande dyed in the way when he ſhulde haue byn caryed into Spayne,) when ſhee harde ſaye that owre ſhyppe was arryued on the ſhore of her natiue countrey, perſuaded the kynge her brother that they bothe myght goo togyther to ſee it. For the place where the ſhyppe lay, was not paſte. vi. myles diſtante from *Xaragua*. They reſted all night, in the mydde way, in a certeyne vyllage in the which was the treaſurye or iewell howſe of *Anacaona*. Her treaſure was nother goulde, ſyluer, or precious ſtones, but only thynges neceſſary to bee vſed, as cheyars, ſtooles, ſettels, dyſſhes, potingers, pottes, pannes, baſons, treyes, and ſuche other howſholde ſtuffe and inſtrumentes, workemanly made of a certeyne blacke and harde ſhyninge woodde which that excellent lerned phiſition Iohn baptiſte *Eliſius*, affirmeth to bee hebene. What ſo euer portion of wytte nature hath gyuen to the inhabitantes of theſe Ilandes, the ſame doth moſt appeare in theſe kynde of woorkes, in whiche they ſhewe great arte and cunnyng. But thoſe which this woman had, were made in the Iland of *Guanabba*, ſituate in the mouth of the weſte ſyde of *Hiſpaniola*. In theſe they graue the lyuely Images of ſuch phantaſies as they ſuppoſe they ſee walke by night which the Antiquitie cauled *Lemures*. Alſo the Images of men, ſerpents, beaſtes, and what ſoo euer other thyng they haue once ſeene. What wolde yowe thinke (moſt noble Prynce) that they coulde doo, if they had the vſe of Iren and ſteele? For they onely fyrſte make theſe ſofte in the fyre, and afterwarde make them holowe and carue them with a certeyne ſtone which they fynde in the ryuers. Of ſtooles and chayers, ſhee gaue the Lieuetenaunt. xiiii. And of veſſelles perteynynge to the table and kychen, ſhee gaue hym three ſcore, ſum of wood and ſume of earthe. Alſo of goſſampine cotton ready ſpunne foure great bottomes of excedinge weight. The day folowing when they came to the ſea ſyde, where was an other vylage of the kynges, the Lieuetenaunt commaunded the ſhyppe boat to bee browght to the ſhore. The kyng alſo had prepared two canoas, paynted after theyr maner: one for hym ſelfe and certeyne of his gentelmen: an other for his ſyſter *Anacaona* and her waytinge women. But *Anacaona* deſyred to bee caried in the ſhyppe boate with the

Queene Anacaona, the wife of kynge Caunaboa.

xxxii. kynges.

Serpentes eaten.

26

The dressing of serpentes to be eaten.

Serpentes egges eaten

Gossampine cotton.

Queene Anacaona

The treasurie of Queene Anacaona

Hebene woode.

The Ilande of Guanabba

Conninge artificers

A stone in the steede of Iren

Gunnes.

Lieuetenaunte. When they nowe approched nere vnto the ſhyppe, certeyne great pieces of ordinaunce were diſcharged of purpoſe. The ſea was fylled with thunder, and the ayer with ſmooke. They trembled and quaked for feare, ſuppoſinge that the frame of the world had byn in danger of fauling. But when they ſawe the Lieuetenaunte lawgh, and lóoke cherefully on them, they cauled ageyne theyr ſpirites. And when they yet drewe nerer to the ſhippe, and hárde the noyſe of the fluites, ſhalmes, and drummes, they were wonderfully aſtonyed at the ſweete harmony therof. Enterynge into the ſhyppe and beholdinge the foreſhippe and the ſterne, the toppe caſtel, the maſte, the hatches, the cabens, the keele, and the tackelinges, the brother fixinge his eyes on the ſyſter, and the ſyſter on the brother, they were bothe as it were dumme and amaſed, and wyſte not what to ſaye for too muche wonderynge. Whyle beholdinge theſe thinges they wandered vp and downe the ſhippe, the Lieuetenaunt commaunded the ankers to bee looſed, and the ſailes to be hoyſed vp. Then were they further aſtonyſhed, when they ſawe ſoo greate a mole, to moue as it were by it ſelfe, without ores and without the force of man. For there aroſe from the earth ſuche a wynde as a man wolde haue wyſhed for of purpoſe. Yet furthermore, when they perceaued the ſhyppe to moue ſumtyme forwarde and ſumtyme backewarde: ſumtyme towarde the ryght hande and ſumtyme towarde the lefte, and that with one wynde and in maner at one inſtante, they were at theyr wyttes ende for to muche admiracion. Theſe thynges fyniſhed and the ſhyppes beinge laden with breade and ſuche other rewardes, they beinge alſo recompenſed with other of owre thynges, he diſmiſſed not onely the kynge *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, and his ſyſter, but lykewiſe all theyr ſeruauntes and women replenyſhed with ioye and woonderinge. After this, he hym ſelfe tooke his iorney by foote with his ſouldiers to the citie of *Iſabella*: where he was aduertiſed that one *Roldanus Ximenus*, a nawghty felowe, (whom before beinge his ſeruante, he had preferred to bee capitayne of the myners and labourers, and after made hym a Iudge in cauſes of controuerſie) had vſed hym ſelfe owtragiouſly and was malyciouſly mynded ageinſt hym, and further, the cauſe of muche miſchiefe in his abſence. For kynge *Guarionexius* (who a whyle before was pardoned of his former rebellion, and perſuaded the people to obeye the Spanyardes) was by his nawghty vſage, and ſuche other as were confethered with hym, ſo accenſed to reuenge the iniuries which they ſuſteyned at his handes, byſyde the abhominable actes which they folowynge onely the lawe óf nature, abhorred to admytte, that he with his famelie, famylyers, and ditionaries, of deſperate mynde fledde to the mountaynes beinge diſtant from *Iſabella* onely tenne leaques Weſtwarde, towarde the north ſyde of the ſea. Theſe mountaynes, and alſo the inhabitantes of the ſame they caule by one name *Ciguaios*. The greate kyng of al the kynges and regions of theſe mountayne[s], is cauled *Maiobanexius*: and his courte or palaice is named *Capronus*. The mountaynes are rowgh, hygh, and ſuche as no man can paſſe to the toppes therof. They are alſo bendynge: and haue theyr corners reachinge downe to the ſea. Betwene bothe the corners of the mountaynes, is there a greate playne, by the which many riuers faule from the mountaynes into the ſea. The people are verye fierſe and warlyke men, hauing theyr original of the Canybales. For when they deſcende from the mountaynes to the playnes to keepe warre with theyr bortherers, they eate all ſuche as they kyll. *Guarionexius* therfore, flyinge to this kyng of theſe mountaynes, gaue hym many preſentes of ſuche thynges as are wantinge in his countrey: therwith declaringe howe vylely, vylaynouſly, and violently, he had byn vſed of owre men: with whom he could nothinge preuayle nother by fayre meanes, nor by foule: nother by humilytie nor by ſtoutnes. And that to bee the cauſe of his reſortinge to hym at that tyme: moſte humbly deſyring hym to bee his defence ageynſt th[e]oppreſſions of ſuche myſcheuous people. *Maiobanexius* here vppon, made hym promeſſe to ayde and helpe hym ageynſt the Chriſtians al that he myght. The Lieuetenaunt therfore made haſt to the fortreſſe of Conception: whyther as ſoone as he was coome, he ſent for *Roldanus Xeminus*, who with ſuche as folowed hym, lay in certeyne of the Ilande vylages, twelue miles diſtant from the fortres. At his comminge, the Leauetenaunt aſked hym what al theſe ſturres and tumultes ment. He anſwered without abaſhement: Yowre brother the Admirall hath to do therwith, and ſhall anſwere for the ſame before the kynge. For we perceaue that the kynge hath ſoo put hym in truſte, that he hath hadde no regarde to vs. Here we peryſhe for hunger whyle we folowe yowe: and are dryuen to ſeeke owre vnhappy foode in the deſertes. Yowre brother alſo, aſſigned me aſſiſtant with yowe in gouerninge the Ilande. Wherfore ſyth yowe haue no more reſpecte vnto vs, we are determyned noo longer to bee vnder yowre obedience. When *Roldanus* had ſpoken theſe wordes and ſuche other, the Lieuetenaunte wolde haue layde handes on hym: but he eſcaped his fyngers, and fledde to the weſte partes of the Region of *Xaragua*, hauinge with hym a trayne of threeſcore and tenne men whiche were of his confetheracie. Here this fylthy ſynke of rebels thus conſpired, played their vages and lyued with looſe brydels in al kyndes of myſcheſe, robbynge the people, ſpoylinge the countrey, and rauyſhinge bothe wyues and virgines. Whyle theſe thynges were doing in the Ilande, the Admirall hadde eyght ſhyppes appoynted hym by the kinge: Of the whiche he ſent two laden with vitayles, from *Cales* or *Cades* of Hercules pyllers, directly to the Lieuetenaunt his brother. Theſe ſhyppes by chaunce arryued fyrſt on that ſyde of the Ilande where *Rolandus Xeminus* ranged with his coompanyons. *Rolandus* in ſhorte tyme hadde ſeduced them: promyſinge them in the ſteade of mattockes, wenches pappes: for laboure, pleaſure: for hunger,

27

Musical instrumentes.

Ignorance causeth admiration.

Roldanus Xeminus.

The intemperancie and malice of a seruile witte aduaunced.

Ciguaians.

Maiobanexius, the great kynge of the mountaynes

The inhabytantes of the mountaynes.

Guarionexius rebelleth ageyne.

Roldanus Xeminus rebelleth.

28

Licenciousnes in libertie

Hercules pyllers.

A violente persasion.

abundance: and for wearynes and watchinge, ſleepe and quietnes. *Guarionexius* in the meane tyme, aſſemblynge a power of his freendes and confetherates, came oftentymes downe into the playne, and ſlewe as many of the Chriſtian men, as he coulde meete conueniently, and alſo of the Ilande menne whiche were theyr freendes: waſtynge theyr grounde, deſtroyinge theyr ſeedes, and ſpoylinge theyr vylages. But *Roldanus* and his adherentes, albeit they had knowleage that the Admiral wolde ſhortly coome, yet feared they nothynge bycauſe they had ſeduced the newe menne whiche came in the fyrſte ſhippes. Whyle the Lieuetenaunt was thus toſſed in the middeſt of theſe ſtormes, in the meane tyme his brother the Admyrall ſet forwarde from the coaſtes of Spayne: But not directly to *Hiſpaniola*: For he turned more towarde the ſouthe. In the which vyage, what he dyd, what coaſtes bothe of the lande and ſea he coompaſed, and what newe regions he diſcouered, wee wyl fyrſt declare. For to what ende and concluſion the ſayde tumultes and ſeditions came, wee wyll expreſſe in th[e]ende of the booke folowynge. Thus fare ye well.

The furie of guarionexius

The thyrde vyage of Colonus the Admirall.

¶ The syxte booke of the fyrste decade, *to* Lodouike *Cardinall of* Aragonie.

Colonus the Admyral, the thyrde day of the Calendes of Iune, in the yeare of Chriſte. 1498. hoyſed vp his ſayles in the hauen of the towne *Barramedabas*, not farre diſtante from Cales: and ſet forwarde on his vyage with eyght ſhippes laden with vytayles and other neceſſaries. He diuerted from his accuſtomed raſe which was by the Ilandes of *Canarie*, by reaſon of certeyne frenchemen pirates and rouers on the ſea, whiche laye in the ryght way to meete with hym. In the way from *Cales* to the Ilandes of *Canarie*, abowte foure ſcore and ten myles towarde the lefte hande, is the Ilande of *Madera*, more ſouthwarde then the citie of *Ciuile* by foure degrees. For the pole artyke is eleuate to *Ciuile*, xxxvi. degrees: But to this Iland (as the mariners ſaye) only xxxii. He ſayled therfore fyrſte to *Madera*. And ſendinge from thenſe directly to *Hiſpaniola*, the reſydue of the ſhippes laden with vytayles and other neceſſaries, he hym ſelfe with one ſhyppe with deckes, and two marchaunt carauelles coaſted towarde the ſouthe to coome to the *Equinoctial* lyne, and ſo furth to folowe the tracte of the ſame towarde the Weſt, to th[e]intent to ſearche the natures of ſuche places as he coulde fynde vnder or nere vnto the ſame, leauinge *Hiſpaniola* on the north ſyde on his ryght hande. In the myddle of his raſe, lye. xiii. Ilandes of the Portugales, whiche were in owlde tyme cauled *Heſperides*: And are now cauled *Caput Viride*, or *Cabouerde*. Theſe are ſituate in the ſea, ryght ouer ageynſt the inner partes of Ethiope, Weſtwarde two dayes ſaylinge. One of theſe the Portugales caule *Bonauiſta*. With the ſnayles, or rather tortoyſes of this Ilande, many leprous men are healed and clenſed of theyr leproſitie. Departing ſodainly from henſe by reaſon of the contagiouſnes of the ayre, he ſayled. CCCCLXXX. [four hundred and eighty] myles towarde the Weſte ſouthweſt, which is the myddeſt betwene the weſte and the ſouthe. There was he ſo vexed with maladies and heate (for it was the moneth of Iune) that his ſhyppes were almoſte ſette on fyre. The hoopes of his barrels cracked and brake, and the freſſhe water ranne owte. The men alſo complayned that they were not able to abyde that extremitie of heate. Here the northe pole was eleuate only. v. degrees from the Horizontall. For the ſpace of. viii. dayes in the which he ſuffered theſe extremites, only the fyrſt day was fayre: but all the other, clowdy and rayny: yet neuertheleſſe feruent hotte. Wherefore it oftentymes repented hym not a little that euer he tooke that way. Beinge toſſed in theſe dangiours and vexations eyght contynuall dayes, at the lengthe an Eaſtſoutheaſte wynde aroſe, and gaue a proſperous blaſte to his ſayles. Which wynde folowinge directly towarde the weſte, he fownde the ſtarres ouer that paralelle, placed in other order, and an other kynde of ayer, as the Admirall hym ſelfe towlde me. And they al affirme, that within three dayes ſaylinge, they fownde moſte temperate and pleaſaunte ayre. The Admirall alſo affirmeth, that from the clime of the great heate and vnholſome ayer, he euer aſcended by the backe of the ſea, as it were by a hygh mountayne towarde heauen. Yet in all this tyme, coulde he not once ſee any lande. But at the length, the day before the Calendes of Iuly, the watcheman lookynge foorth of the toppecaſtell of the greateſt ſhyppe, cryed owte alowde for ioy that he eſpyed three excedynge hyghe mountaynes: Exhortinge his felowes to bee of good cheere, and put away all penſiuenes. For they were very heauy and ſorowfull, as well for the greeſe which they ſuſteyned by reaſon of th[e]intollerable heate, as alſo that their freſhe water fayled them, which ranne owte at the ryftes of the barels, cauſed by extreme heate as we haue ſayde. Thus beinge wel conforted, they drewe to the lande. Yet at theyr fyrſt approche, they coulde not arryue by reaſon of the ſhalownes of the ſea nere the ſhore. Yet lookyng owte of theyr ſhyppes, they might wel perceaue that the Region was inhabyted and well cultured. For they ſawe very fayre gardens, and pleaſaunte medowes:

Frenche men pyrats.

The Iland of Madera.

The Admiral [s]ayleth to the Equinoctiall.

xiii. Ilandes of Hesperides, now cauled Cabouerde.

Healynge of the leper.

Contagious ayre and extreeme heate

The pole eleuate. v degrees.

29
The ſtarres placed in other order.

A ſea rysyng lyke a mountayne.

Heate cauſeth the barrels to breke.

Swete sauours proceadynge frome the lande.

frome the trees and herbes wherof, when the mornynge dewes beganne to ryſe, there proceaded manye ſweete ſauoures. Twentie myles diſtant from henſe, they chaunced into a hauen, verye apte to harborowe ſhippes, but it had no ryuer rünninge into it. Saylinge on yet ſumwhat further, he fownde at the lengthe a commodious hauen wherin he might repayre his ſhippes and make prouiſion of freſſhe water and fuell. *Arenalis* cauleth this lande *Puta*. They fownd no houſes nere vnto the hauen: but innumerable ſteppes of certein wilde beaſtes feete, of the which they fownde one deade much lyke a goate. The day folowynge, they ſawe a Canoa commynge a farre of, hauinge in it. xxiiii. younge men of godly corporature and high ſtature, al armed with targets, bowes and arowes The heare of theyr heds, was longe and plaine, and cutte on the forheade much after the maner of the Spanyardes. Theyr priuie partes were couered with fillettes of goſſampyne cotton, of ſundry coloures enterlaced: And were bẽſyde al ouer naked. Here the Admirall conſideringe with hym ſelfe the corporature of this people and nature of the lande, he beleaued the ſame to bee ſoo much the nerer heauen then other Regions of the ſame paralelle, and further remoued from the groſſe vapours of the vales and maryſſhes, howe muche the hygheſte toppes of the byggeſt mountaynes are diſtante from the deepe vales. For he erneſtly affirmeth, that in all that nauigation, he neuer wente owte of the paralelles of Ethiope: So greate difference is there betwene thẽ nature of th[e]inhabitantes and of the ſoyles of dyuers Regions all vnder one clyme or paralelle: as is to ſee betwene the people and regions being in the firme lande of Ethiope, and theym of the Ilandes vnder the ſame clime, hauinge the pole ſtarre eleuate in the ſame degree. For the Ethiopians are all blacke, hauinge theyr heare curld more lyke wulle then heare. But theſe people of the Iland of *Puta* (beinge as I haue ſayde vnder the clyme of Ethiope) are whyte, with longe heare, and of yelowe colour. Wherfore it is apparente, the cauſe of this ſoo greate difference, to bee rather by the diſpoſition of the earthe, then conſtitucion of heauen. For wee knowe, that ſnowe ſauleth on the mountaynes of the Equinoctiall or burnte lyne, and the ſame to endure there continually: We knowe lykewyſe that th[e]inhabitantes of the Regions farre diſtante frome that lyne towarde the northe, are moleſted with greate heate.

The Iland of Puta.

People of [goodl]ly corporature and longe heare nere the Equinoctiall.

The higher the coulder.

Difference betwene people of one clime.

Ethiopia.

Note the cause of difference.

¶ The Admiral that he myght allure the younge men to him with gentelnes, ſhewed them lokynge glaſſes, fayre and bright veſſelles of copper, haukes belles, and ſuche other thynges vnknowen to them. But the more they were cauled, ſo much the more they ſuſpected crafte and deceate, and fledde backewarde. Yet dyd they with greate admiracion beholde owre men and theyr thynges, but ſtyll hauinge their ores in theyr handes redy to flye. When the Admirall ſawe that he coulde by no meanes allure them by gyftes, he thought to proue what he coulde do with muſicall inſtrumentes: and therefore commaunded that they which were in the greateſt ſhippe, ſhulde play on theyr drummes and ſhalmes. But the younge men ſuppoſinge this to bee a token of battayle, lefte theyr ores, and in the twyn[k]lynge of an eye hadde put theyr arrowes in theyr bowes and theyr targettes on theyr armes: And thus directinge theyr arrowes towarde owre men, ſtoode in expectacion to knowe what this noyſe myght meane. Owre men lykewiſe preparinge theyr bowes and arrowes, approched toward them by lyttle and lyttle. But they departinge from the Admirals ſhippe, and truſtinge to the dexteritie of theyr ores came ſoo neare one of the leſſe ſhippes, that one of theym plucked the cloke from the gouernour of that ſhippe, and as wel as they coulde by ſignes, requyred hym to coome alande, promyſinge feyth that they wolde common with hym of peace. But when they ſawe hym goo to the Admirals ſhippe whether he went to aſke leaue that he might common with them, ſuſpectinge heareby ſume further deceate, they lept immediatly into the Canoa, and fledde as ſwyft as the wynde. So that to conclude, they coulde by no meanes be allured to familiaritie. Wherfore the Admirall thowght it not conuenient to beſtowe any longe tyme there, at this vyage. No greate ſpace frome this Ilande, euer towarde the weſte, the Admirall ſaith he fownde ſo owteragious a faule of water, runninge with ſuch a violence from the Eaſte to the Weſte, that it was nothynge inferioure to a myghty ſtreame faulynge from hyghe mountaynes. He alſo confeſſed, that ſince the fyrſt daye that euer he knewe what the ſea mente, he was neuer in ſuche feare. Proceadinge yet ſumwhat further in this daungerous vyage, he fownde certeyne goulfes of. viii. myles, as it had byn the[e]nteraunce of ſume greate hauen, into the which, the ſayde violent ſtreames dyd faule. Theſe goulfes or ſtreyghtes, he cauled *Os Draconis*, that is, the dragons mouth. And the Iland directly ouer ageynſte the ſame, he named *Margarita*. Owte of theſe ſtreyghtes, iſſhewed no leſſe force of freſſhe water: whiche encounteringe with the ſaulte, dyd ſtryue to paſſe foorth: Soo that betwene bothe the waters, was no ſmaule conflict. But enteringe into the goulfe, at the lengthe he fownde the water therof very freſſhe and good to drynke. The Admyrall hym ſelfe, and they which were his companions in this vyage, beinge men of good credit, and perceauinge my diligence in ſearchinge for theſe matters, towlde me yet of a greater thynge. That is, that for the ſpace of. xxvi. leaques, amountynge to a hundreth and foure myles, he ſayled euer by freſhe water: In ſo muche, that the further he proceaded, eſpecially towarde the weſt, he affirmeth the water to bee the freſſher. After this, he came to a highe mountayne, inhabited onely with moonkeys or marmaſits on that part towarde the Eaſt. For that ſyde was rowgh with rockye and ſtony mountains: And therfore not inhabyted with men. Yet they that went alande to ſearche the countrey, fownde nere vnto the ſea, many fayre fieldes well tylled and ſowen: But noo people, nor yet houſes or cotages. Parhappes they were

Musical instrumentes.

The violent course of the water from the Easte to the Weste.

The goulfe cauled Os Draconis.

A conflict betwene the freshe water and the salte.

A sea of fresh water.

Marmasets and monkeys.

goné further into the countrey to ſowe theyr cörne and applye theyr huſbandry, as wee often ſee owre huſbande men to leaue theyr ſtations and vylages for the ſame purpoſe. In the weſte ſyde of that mountayne, they eſpyed a large playne, whither they made haſte, and caſt anker in the brode ryuer. As ſoone as the inhabitantes had knowleage that a ſtrange nation was arryued in theyr coaſtes, they came flockinge withowte all feare to ſee owre men. We vnderſtode by theyr ſygnes and poyntynges, that this Region was cauled *Paria*: and that it was very large: In ſo muche that the further it reacheth towarde the weſte, to be ſo muche the better inhabited and repleniſhed with people. The Admiral therfore, takynge into his ſhyppe foure of the men of that lande, ſearched the weſte partes of the ſame. By the temperatenes of the ayer, the pleaſauntnes of the grownde, and the multytude of people which they ſaw dayly more and more as they ſayled, they coniectured that theſe thynges portended ſum great matter: As in deede their opinion fayled them not, as we wyll further declare in his place. The ſoonne not yet ryſen, but beginninge euen now to ryſe, beinge one day allured by the pleaſauntnes of the place and ſweete ſauours which breathed from the land to the ſhippes, they went alande. Here they fownde a greater multytude of people then in any other place. As owre men approched towarde them, there came certeine meſſengers from their *Cacici*, that is, the kynges of the countrey, to deſyre the Admirall in the name of theyr princes to coome to theyr palayces withowte feare, and that they and al theyrs ſhulde bee at his commaundement. When the Admirall had thanked them and made his excuſe for that tyme, there came innumerable people with theyr boates to the ſhippes: hauyng for the moſt parte cheynes abowte theyr neckes, garlandes on theyr heades, and braſelettes on theyr armes of pearles of India: And that ſo commonlye, that owre women in playes and tryumphes haue not greater plentie of ſtones of glaſſe and cryſtall in theyr garlandes, crownes, gerdels, and ſuche other tyrementes. Beinge aſked where they gathered them, they poynted to the next ſhore by the ſea bankes. They ſignified alſo by certeyne ſcorneful gieſtures which they made with theyr mouthes and handes, that they nothyng eſteemed perles. Taking alſo baſkettes in theyr handes, they made ſignes that the ſame might bee fylled with them in ſhorte ſpace. But bycauſe the corne wherwith his ſhyppes were laden to bee caryed into *Hiſpaniola*, had taken hurt by reaſon of the ſalte water, he determined to deferre this marte to a more conuenient tyme. Yet he ſent to lande two of the ſhippe boates laden with men, to th[e]intent to fetch ſum garlandes of perles for exchange of our thynges, and alſo ſumwhat to ſearche the nature of the Region and diſpoſition of the people. They enterteyned owr men gentelly: and came flockynge to them by heapes, as it hadde byn to beholde ſume ſtraunge monſters. Fyrſte there came to meete owre men, two men of grauitie, whome the multitude folowed. One of theſe was well in age, and the other but younge. They thinke it was the father with his ſoonne whiche ſhulde ſuccede hym. When the one had ſaluted and embraſed the other, they browght owre men into a certeyne rownde howſe, nere vnto the whiche, was a greate courte. Hether were browght many chayers and ſtooles made of a certeyne blacke woodde, and very coonningely wrowght. After that owre men, and theyr Princes were ſette, theyr wayting men came in laden, ſume with ſundry delicate dyſſhes, and ſume with wyne. But theyr meate, was only fruites: and thoſe of dyuers kyndes and vtterly vnknowen to vs. Theyr wyne was both whyte and redde: not made of grapes, but of the lycour of dyuers fruites, and very pleaſaunte in drynkynge. After this banquette made in the owlde mans howſe, the younge man browght them to his tabernacle or mancion place, where was a greate coompany bothe of men and women, but they ſtoode deceauered the one from the other. They are whyte, euen as owre men are, ſauynge ſuche as are much conuerſant in the ſonne. They are alſo very gentyll, and full of humanitie towarde ſtrangiers. They coouer theyr pryuie partes with goſſampine cotton wrowght with ſundry coloures: and are beſyde all naked. There was fewe or none, that had not eyther a coller, a cheyne, or a braſelette of golde and pearles, and many had all. Beinge aſked where they had that golde, they poynted to certeyne mountaynes, ſeemynge with theyr countenaunce to diſſuade owre men from goinge thyther. For puttinge theyr armes in theyr mouthes, and grynninge as thowgh they bytte the ſame, ſtylle poyntinge to the mountaynes, they ſeemed to inſinuate that men were eaten there: But whether they mente by the Canibales, or wylde beaſtes owre men cowlde not well perceaue. They tooke it excedinge greeuouſlye, that they coulde nother vnderſtande owre men, nor owre men them. When they which were ſente to lande, were returned to the ſhippes abowte three of the clocke at after noone the ſame daye, bringinge with them certeyne garlandes and collers of pearles, they looſed theyr ankers to departe, myndinge to coome ageyne ſhortly, when all thynges were ſette in good order in *Hiſpaniola*. But he was preuented by an other, which defeated hym of the rewarde of his trauayle. He was alſo hyndered at this tyme by reaſon of the ſhalownes of the ſea and violent courſe of the water, which with continual toſſing, brooſed the greateſt ſhip as often as any great gale of wynde aroſe. To auoyde the daungiours of ſuche ſhalowe places, and ſhelfes, he euer ſent one of the ſmauleſt carauelles before, to try the way with ſoundinge: and the byggeſt ſhyppes folowed behynde. The Regions beinge in the large prouince of *Paria* for the ſpace of. CCXXX. [two hundred and thirty] myles, are cauled of th[e]inhabitantes, *Cumana*, and *Manacapana*: from theſe regions diſtant three ſcore leaques, is there an other Region cauled *Curiana*. When he had thus paſſed ouer this long tract of ſea, ſuppoſing ſtyll that it had byn an Ilande, and doutinge that he

The fayre and large region of paria.

Temperate ayer and frutful grounde.

Swete sauours proceadynge frome the lande.

Humayne people.

Cheynes and garlandes of gold and perles

31

Baskettes ful of pearles, I knowe who had bags ful.

Howe the Admirals men were enterteyned.

Cheyers and stoles of hebene.

Fruites and wyne.

Wyne of the lycour of fruites.

Whyte men nere the Equinoctial

Mountaynes are the matrices of golde.

Canibales

Shalownes of the sea.

The vse of careuelles or brigantines.

Cumana and Manacapana regions of the prouince of Paria. Curiana.

A ryuer of maruelous depth and bredth.

A sea of weedes.

Lentiscus.

Mastix.

32

The eleuation of the pole at Paria.

Note a secreate as concerning the pole starre.

An experience

A maruelous secreate.

That the earth is not perfectly rownde.

Paradise is in the mountaynes of paria.

Looke the ninth booke seconde decade.

might paſſe by the Weſte to the Northe directlye to *Hiſpaniola*, he chaunced into a ryuer of. xxx. cubettes depthe, and of ſuch breadth as hath not lyghtly byn harde of. For he affirmeth it to bee. xxviii. leaques. A lyttle further toward the Weſte, yet ſumwhat more ſowthwarde as the bending of the ſhore requyred, he entered into a ſea full of herbes or weedes. The ſeede of the herbes whiche ſwymme on the water, are muche lyke the berryes of the tree cauled *Lentiſcus*, which beareth the ſweete gumme cauled *Maſtix*. They grewe ſoo thicke, that they ſumetyme in maner ſtayed the ſhippes. The Admirall reported, that here there is not one daye thorowghe owte all the yeare muche longer or ſhorter then an other: And that the Northe pole is here eleaute onely fyue degrees as at *Paria*, in whoſe tracte all theſe coaſtes lye. Hee alſo declared certeyne thynges as concerninge the variete of the northe pole: The which becauſe they ſeeme contrarye to th[e]oppinions of all the Aſtronomers, I wyll touche them but with a drye foote as ſayth the prouerbe. But it is wel knowen (moſte noble prince) that the ſtarre which we caule the pole ſtarre, or northe ſtarre, (cauled of the Italians *Tramontana*) is not the very poynte of the pole Artyke vppon the whiche the axes or extremities of heauens are turned abowte. The which thynge may well be proued, if when the ſtarres fyrſt appeare, yowe beeholde the pole ſtarre throwgh any narowe hole. For ſoo, applyinge yowre inſtrument therto in the morninge ſumwhat before the day ſpringe haue blemyſhed theyr lyght, yf then yowe looke throwgh the ſame hole, yowe ſhall perceaue it to bee moued from the place where yowe ſaweit fyrſt. But howe it commeth to paſſe, that at the beginnynge of the euenyng twilight, it is eleuate in that Region only fyue degrees in the moneth of Iune, and in the morninge twylight to bee eleuate. xv. degrees by the ſame quadrante, I doo not vnderſtande. Nor yet doo the reaſons which he bringeth, in any poynt ſatyſfye me. For he ſayth, that he hereby coniectured, that the earth is not perfectlye rownde: But that when it was created, there was a certeyne heape reyſed theron, much hygher then the other partes of the ſame. So that (as he ſaith) it is not rownde after the forme of an apple or a bal (as other thynke) but rather lyke a peare as it hangeth on the tree: And that *Paria* is the Region which poſſeſſeth the ſupereminente or hygheſt parte thereof neareſte vnto heauen. In ſoo muche that he erneſtly contendeth, the earthly Paradyſe to bee ſituate in the toppes of thoſe three hylles, which wee ſayde beefore, that the watche man ſawe owte of the toppe caſtell of the ſhippe: And that the outragious ſtreames of the freſhe waters whiche ſoo violentlye iſſhewe owte of the ſayde goulfes and ſtryue ſoo with the ſalte water, faule headlonge from the toppes of the ſayde mountaynes. But of this matter, it ſhall ſuffice to haue ſayde thus muche. Lette vs nowe therfore returne to the hiſtorye from which we haue dygreſſed. When he perceaued hym ſelfe to bee thus inwrapped in ſoo greate a goulfe beyonde his expectacion, ſoo that he had now no hope to fynde any paſſage towarde the northe whereby he myght ſayle directly to *Hiſpaniola*, he was enforſed to turne backe the ſame way by the which he came, and directed his viage to *Hiſpaniola* by the northe of that lande lyinge towarde the Eaſte. They which afterwarde ſearched this lande more curiouſlye, wyll it to bee parte of the continente or firme lande of India, and not of *Cuba* as the Admiral ſuppoſed. For there are many which affirme that they haue ſayled rownd abowt *Cuba*. But whether it bee ſo or not, or whether enuyinge the good fortune of this man, they ſeeke occaſions of querelinge ageynſte hym, I can not iudge: But tyme ſhall ſpeake, which in tyme appoynted, reuealeth both truth and falſehod. But whether *Paria* be Continent or not, the Admirall dothe not muche contende. But he ſuppoſeth it to bee Continente. He alſo affirmeth that *Paria* is more ſouthewarde then *Hiſpaniola*, by eyght hundreth foureſcore and two myles. At the length he came to *Hiſpaniola* (to ſee his ſouldiers which he left with his brethren) the thyrde day of the calendes of September: In the yeare 1498. But (as often tymes chaunceth in humayne thynges,) amonge his ſoo many proſperous, pleaſaunte, and luckye affayres, fortune mengeled ſume ſeedes of wormewoodde, and corrupted his pure corne with the malicious weedes of coccle.

Paria is part of the firme lande of india

Tyme reuealeth al things

Paria more southewarde then hispaniola

THE SEVENTH BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE,
to the ſame Lodouike Cardinall. etc.

The spanyardes rebell in the Admirals absence

WHen the Admirall was nowe coome to the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*, he fownde all thynges confounded and owte of order. For *Roldanus* (of whom wee ſpake beefore) refuſed in his abſence to obey his brother, truſtinge to the multitude of ſuch as were confethered with him. And not onely behaued hym ſelfe proudely ageynſt the Admiralles brother and Lieuetenaunt ſumtyme his maiſter, but alſo ſente letters to his reproche to the kynge of Spayne, therin accuſinge bothe the brethren, leying heynous matters to theyr charges. But the Admirall ageyne, ſent meſſengers to the kynge, which myght informe hym of theyr rebellion: Inſtantly deſyringe his grace, to ſende hym a newe ſupplye of men, wherby he myght ſuppreſſe theyr licentiouſnes and

punyſhe them for theyr miſcheuous actes. They accuſed the Admirall and his brother to bee vniuſt men, cruel, enemies and ſheaders of the Spanyſhe bludde: declarynge that vppon euery lyght occaſion, they wolde racke them, hange them, and heade them: And that they tooke pleaſure therin. And that they departed from them as from cruell tyrantes and wylde beaſtes reioyſinge in bludde, alſo the kynges enemyes. Affyrminge lykewyſe that they well perceaued theyr intente to bee none other then to vſurpe Th[e]empire of the Ilandes: whiche thynge (they ſayde) they ſuſpected by a thouſand coniectures. And eſpecially in that they wolde permitte none to reſorte to the golde mynes, but only ſuche as were theyr familiers. The Admirall on the contrary parte, when he deſyred ayde of the kynge to infringe theyr inſolencie, auouched that al thoſe his accuſers, which had deuiſed ſuche lyes ageynſte hym, were nowghtye ſelowes, abhominable knaues and vylaynes, theues and baudes, ruffians aduouterers and rauiſhers of women, faulſe periured vagabundes, and ſuche as had byn eyther conuict in pryſons, or fledde for feare of Iudgment: ſoo eſcaping punyſhement, but not leauinge vice wherin they ſtyll contynued and browght the ſame with them to the Ilande, lyuinge there in lyke maner as before, in theſte, lechery, and all kyndes of myſcheefe: And ſoo gyuen to Idlenes and ſleepe, that wheras they were browght thyther for myners, labourers, and ſcullyans, they wolde not nowe goo one furlonge from theyr houſes except they were borne on mens backes, lyke vnto them whiche in owlde tyme were cauled *Ediles Curules*. For, to this office, they put the miſerable Ilande men, whom they handeled moſte cruelly. For leaſte theyr handes ſhulde diſcontinewe from ſheadinge of bludde, and the better to trye theyr ſtrength and manhod, they vſed nowe and then for theyr paſtyme to ſtryue amonge them ſelues and proue who coulde moſt cleanely with his ſwoorde at one ſtroke ſtryke of the heade of an innocente. Soo that he which coulde with moſte agilitie make the heade of one of thoſe poore wretches to flye quyte and cleane from the body to the grounde at one ſtroke, he was the beſt man and counted moſte honorable. Theſe thynges and many ſuche other, the one of them layde to the others charge beefore the kynge. Whyle theſe thynges were doinge, the Admirall ſente his brother the lieuetenaunt with an army of foure ſcore and tenne footemen, and a fewe horſemen, (with three thouſande of the Ilande men which were mortall enemies to the Ciguauians) to meete the people of *Ciguaua*, with Kynge *Guarionexius* theyr graunde capitayne, who had doone muche myſcheefe to owre men and ſuche as fauoured theym. Therefore when the Lieuetenaunt had conducted his army to the bankes of a certeyne greate ryuer runnynge by the playne which we ſayd before to lye betwene the corners of the mountaynes of *Ciguaua* and the ſea, he fownde two ſcoutes of his enemyes lurkinge in certeyne buſſhes: wherof the one, caſtynge hym ſelfe head longe into the ſea, eſcaped: and by the mouthe of the ryuer ſwamme ouer to his coompanyons. The other beinge taken, declared that in the woodde on the other ſide the ryuer, there lay in campe ſyxe thouſande Cyguauians redy, vnwares to aſſayle owre men paſſynge bye. Wherfore the Lieuetenaunte fyndyng a ſhalowe place where he myght paſſe ouer, he with his hole army entered into the ryuer. The which thyng when the Ciguauians had eſpyed, they came runnynge owte of the wooddes with a terrible crye and moſte horrible aſpect, much lyke vnto the people cauled *Agathyrſi* of whom the poete virgile ſpeaketh. For they were all paynted and ſpotted with ſundry coloures, and eſpeciall with blacke and redde whiche they make of certeyne fruites nooryſhed for the ſame purpoſe in theyr gardens, with the ioyce wherof they paynt them ſelues from the forheade, euen to the knees: hauing theyr heare (whiche by arte they make longe and blacke if nature deny it them) wrethed and rowled after a thouſande faſſhions. A man wold thinke them to bee deuylles incarnate newly broke owte of hell, they are ſoo lyke vnto helhoundes. As owre men waded ouer the ryuer, they ſhotte at them and hurled dartes ſoo thicke, that it almoſte tooke the lyght of the ſonne from owre men. In ſo much that if they had not borne of the force therof with theyr targettes, the matter hadde gonne wronge with them. Yet at the length, many beinge wounded, they paſſed ouer the ryuer, which thynge when the enemies ſawe, they fledde: whome owre men perſuinge, ſlewe ſume in the chaſe: but not many, by reaſon of theyr ſwyftenes of foote. Thus beinge in the wooddes, they ſhotte at owre men more ſafely. For they being accuſtomed to the wooddes and naked without any lette, paſſed throwgh the buſſhes and ſhrubbes as it had byn wylde bores or hartes: wheras owre men were hyndered by reaſon of theyr apparell, targettes, longe iauelens, and ignorance of the place. Wherfore, when he had reſted there all that nyght in vayne, and the daye folowynge ſawe none ſteringe in the wooddes, he went (by the councel and conducte of the other Ilande men which were in his armye) immediatly from thenſe, to the montaynes in the which king *Maiobanexius* had his cheefe manſion place in the vylage cauled *Capronym*, by the which name alſo, the kynges palaice was cauled, beinge in the ſame vylage. Thus marchinge forwarde with his army, abowte twelue myle of, he encamped in the vylage of an other kynge, which th[e]inhabitantes had forſaken for feare of owre men. Yet makynge dyligent ſearch, they fownde two, by whom they had knowleage that there was tenne kynges with *Maiobanexius* in his palaice of *Capronum*, with an army of eight thouſand Ciguauians. At the Lieuetenantes fyrſt approche, he durſt not gyue them battayle vntyll he had ſumwhat better ſearched the Region: Yet did he in the meane tyme ſkyrmyſſhe with them twyſe. The nexte nyght abowte mydnyght, he ſent furth ſcoutes, and with them guydes of the Ilande men which knewe the countrey. Whom the Ciguauians eſpyenge from the mountaynes, prepared them ſelues

33

The Spanyardes accuse the Admirall.

The Admirales answere.

Insolencie and idelnes of libertie.

These had the custodies of the temples.

A cruel and deuelyshe pastyme.

Kynge Guarionexius is capitaine of. vi. thousand Ciguauians.

Picti Agathyrsi.
Naked men painted with the ioyce of certen fruites.
Heare made long and black by arte.

The vse of targettes.
The Ciguauians are dryuen to flyght.

34

Kynge Maiobanexius.

An army of viii. thousand Ciguauians.

A Larome.

The Ciguauians put to flyght ageine

to the battayle with a terrible crye or alarome after their maner: but yet durſt not coome owte of the wooddes, ſuppoſing that the Lieuetenaunt with his mayne army had byn euen at hande. The day folowynge, when he brought his army to the place where they encamped, leaping owt of the wooddes, they twyſe attempted the fortune of warre, fiercely aſſayling owre men with a mayne force, and woundinge manye before they coulde coouer them with theyr targettes. Yet owre men put them to flyght, ſlewe many, and tooke many. The reſydewe fledde to the wooddes, where they kept them ſtyll as in their moſte ſafe houlde. Of them which were taken, he ſent one, and wyth hym an other of the Ilande men which was of his parte to *Maiobanexius* with commaundement in this effect. The Lieuetenaunt brought not hether his army (O *Maiobanexius*) to kepe warre eyther ageynſt yowe or yowre people: For he greately deſyreth yowre frendeſhippe. But his entent is, that *Guarionexius* who hath perſuaded yowe to bee his ayde ageynſte hym to the greate deſtruction of yowre people and vndoynge of yowre countrey, may haue dewe correction aſwell for his diſobedience towarde him, as alſo for rayſing tumultes amonge the people. Wherfore, he requyreth yowe and exorteth yowe, to delyuer *Guarionexius* into his handes. The which thynge yf yowe ſhall performe, the Admirall his brother wyll not only gladly admitte yowe to his frendeſhyppe, but alſo enlarge and defende yowre dominion. And if herein yowe refuſe to accomplyſſhe his requeſte, it wyll folowe, that yowe ſhall ſhortelye repent yowe therof. For yowre kyngedome ſhall be waſted with ſwoorde and fyer, and yowe ſhall abyde the fortune of warre wherof yowe haue had experience with fauour, as you ſhall further know here after to yowre payne, yf with ſtobernes yowe prouoke hym to ſhewe the vttermoſte of his poure. When the meſſenger had thus doone his errante, *Maiobanexius* anſwered, that *Guarionexius* was a good man, indued with many vertues as all men knewe: And therfore he thought hym worthy his ayde: eſpecially in as muche as he fledde to hym for ſuccoure, and that he had made him ſuch promeſſe, whom alſo he had proued to bee his faithfull frende. Ageyne, that they were nawghty men, violent and cruell, deſyringe other mens gooddes, and ſuche as ſpared not to ſheede innocentes bludde: In fyne, that he wolde not haue to doo with ſuche myſcheuous men, nor yet enter into frendeſhippe with them. When theſe thynges came to the Lieuetenauntes eare, he commaunded the vylage to be burnte where he hym ſelfe encamped, with many other vylages there abowte. And when he drewe nere to the place where *Maiobanexius* lay, he ſent meſſengers to him ageyne, to common the matter with hym, and to wyll hym, to ſende ſume one of his moſte feythful frendes to entreate with hym of peace. Where vppon the kynge ſent vnto hym one of his cheefe gentelmen, and with hym two other to wayte on hym. When he came to the Lieuetenauntes preſence, he frendly requyred hym to perſuade his lord and maſter in his name, and erneſtly to admonyſſhe hym, not to ſuffer his floryſhinge kyngedome to bee ſpoyled, or hym ſelfe to abyde the haſarde of warre for *Guarionexius* ſake: And further to exhorte hym to delyuer hym, excepte he wolde procure the deſtruction bothe of hym ſelfe, his people, and his countrey. When the meſſenger was returned, *Maiobanexius* aſſembled the people, declaring vnto them what was doone, but they cried owte on hym to delyuer *Guarionexius*: And beganne to curſe the daye that euer they had receaued hym, thus to diſturbe theyr quietnes. *Maiobanexius* anſwered them, that *Guarionexius* was a good man, and had well deſerued of him, giuinge hym many princely preſentes: And had alſo tawght both his wyfe and hym to ſynge and daunce, whiche thynge he dyd not lyttle eſteeme. And was therfore fully reſolued in no caſe to forſake hym, or ageynſte all humanitie to betraye his frende whiche fledde to hym for ſuccoure: but rather to abyde al extremities with him, then to miniſter occaſion of obloquye to ſlaunderes to reporte that he had betrayed his geſte whom he tooke into his houſe with warranties. Thus diſmiſſinge the people ſighinge and with ſorowfull hartes, he cauled *Guarionexius* before hym, promyſinge hym ageyne, that he wolde bee partaker of his fortune whyle lyfe laſted. In ſo muche that he thowght it not beſte to ſende any further woorde to the Lieuetenaunt: but appoynted hym whome before he ſent to hym, to keepe the way with a garryſon of men, to th[e]intent that if any meſſengers ſhulde be ſent from the Lieuetenaunt, to ſleye them by the way, and admitte none to communication or further entretie of peace. In the meane tyme, the Lieuetenaunt ſent twoo, wherof the one was a captiue Ciguauian, and the other an Ilande man of them which were frendes to owre men: They were bothe taken and ſlayne. The Lieuetenaunt folowed them onely with ten footemen and foure horſemen. Fyndinge his meſſengers deade in the waye, he was further prouoked to wrathe, and determyned more extremely to deale with *Maiobanexius*. And therefore wente forwarde incontinently with his hole army to his cheefe palaice of *Capronum* where he yet laye in campe. At his approche, all the kynges fledde, euery man his way, and forſooke theyr capitayne *Maiobanexius*: who alſo with all his famelye, fledde to the rowgh mountaynes. Sum of the Ciguauians, ſowght for *Guarionexius* to ſley hym, for that he was the cauſe of all theſe troubles. But his feete ſaued his lyfe. For he fledde in tyme to the mountaynes where he lurked in maner alone amonge the deſolate rockes.

The Lieuetenaunt his ambassage to kynge Maiobanexius.

Kynge Guarionexius.

Maiobanexius his answere.

Natural hatred of vyce.

The Lieuetenauntes gentelnes toward maiobanexius

35

A rare faythfulnes in a barbarous kynge.

The Lieuetenauntes messengers are slayne.

Al the kinges are dryuen to flyght.

Whereas nowe the Lieuetenauntes ſouldiers were forweryed with longe warre, with watchinge, laboure, and hunger, (for it was nowe three moonethes ſence the warres beganne) many deſyred leaue to departe to the towre of Conception, where they had graneges and exerciſed tyllage. He gaue them theyr paſſeportes with alowance of vytayles, ſoo that only thyrtie remayned with hym. Theſe three moonethes warre, they

contynued very paynefull and myſerablye: Soo that duryng al that tyme, they had none other meate but only. *Cazibi*: that is, ſuche rootes whereof they make theyr breade, and that but ſyldome to theyr fyll: Alſo *Vſias*, that is, lyttle beaſtes lyke Conyes, if by chaunce now and then, they tooke ſume with theyr houndes. Their drinke was none other then water, ſuch as they fownde, ſumtyme ſweete, and ſumtyme muddy ſaueringe of the maryſſhes. Emonge theſe delicates, that lyttle ſleepe that they had, was euer for the moſte parte abrode vnder the firmamente: And that not without watchemen, and in contynual remoouinge as the nature of warre requyreth. With theſe fewe therfore, the Lieuetenaunt determined to ſearche the mountaynes, dennes, and caues, if he coulde in any place fynde the ſteppes of *Maiobanexius* or *Guarionexius*. In the meane tyme certeyne of his menne (whom hunger enforced to goo a huntinge to proue if they coulde take any conies) chaunced vppon twoo of *Maiobanexius* familyers, whiche were ſent to certeyne vylages of his, to make prouiſion of breade. Theſe he enforced to declare where theyr lord lay hydde. And vſed the ſame alſo for guides to bringe owre men to the place. Twelue of owre men tooke this enterpryſe in hand, painting them ſelues after the maner of the Ciguauians. Soo that by this ſtratageme or policie, they came ſodenly vppon *Maiobanexius*, and tooke hym priſoner with his wyfe, children, and familie, and conueighed them to the towre of Conception to the Lieuetenaunt. Within a fewe dayes after, hunger compelled *Guarionexius* to coome owte of the dennes: whome, certeine of the people fearinge the Lieuetenaunt, bewrayde to owre hunters. The Lieuetenaunt beinge certified hereof, ſent furthe a bande of foote men, commaunding them to lye in ambuſhe vntyll ſuche tyme as *Guarionexius* wente from the playnes to the mountaynes, and then ſoodenly to intrappe hym. They went as they were commaunded, tooke hym, and browght hym awaye with them. And by this meanes were all the Regions nere abowte, pacified and quyeted. A certeyne noble woman of nere kynred to *Maiobanexius*, and wyfe to an other kynge whoſe dominion was yet vntouched, folowed hym in al theſe aduerſities. They affirme this woman to bee the fayreſt and moſte bewetifull that euer nature browght foorthe in the Ilande. Whom, when the kynge her huſbande who looued her moſte ardently (as her bewetie deſerued) harde ſaye that ſhee was taken priſoner he wandered vppe and downe the deſertes lyke a man owte of his wytte, not knowinge what to doo or ſaye. But at the lengthe, he came to the Lieuetenaunte, promyſinge moſte faythfully that he wold ſubmitte hym ſelfe and all that he coulde make, vnder his poure, ſoo that he wolde reſtore hym his wyfe. The Lieuetenant accepted the condition and reſtored him his wife, with certeyne other rulers and gentelmen which he had taken priſoners before: Charginge them, and byndinge them with an othe, to bee euer redye at his commaundement. Shortly after, this kynge, of his owne free motion, came ageyne to the Lieuetenaunt, bringyng with hym fyue thouſande men without weapons, ſauynge onely ſuche inſtrumentes as they vſe in tyllage of theyr grownde. He brought with hym alſo, ſeedes to ſowe: wherwith at his owne charge, he cauſed ſuche plentie of theyr corne and fruites to growe in ſundry places of the large vale whereof wee ſpake before, that ſhortely after, were ſeene manye fayre and fruitefull fieldes that came therof. And for his gentelnes beinge rewarded of the Lieuetenaunte with certeyne of owre thynges, he departed ioyfully. When the report hereof came to the Ciguauians, it mooued the myndes of the kynges to hope of clemencie. Where vppon they came togyther to the Lieuetenaunt with humble ſubmiſſion and faythful promeſſe euer after to bee vnder his obedience: deſyring hym to reſtore vnto them theyr kynge, with his famylie. At theyr requeſte, the kynges wyfe and his houſeholde was ſette at Libertie, but he kepte ſtyll as a priſoner. Theſe thynges dyd the Lieuetenaunt in the Ilande, not yet knowinge what his aduerſaries and accuſers had layde to his charge before the kynge of Spayne: who beinge diſquyeted with theyr querelinges and accuſacions, and eſpecially for that by reaſon of theyr diſcention, of ſoo greate abundaunce of golde and other thynges, there was as yet but lyttle browght into Spayne, appointed a newe gouernour which ſhuld ſee a redreſſe in theſe thinges: And eyther to punyſhe ſuche as were fautie, or elles to ſende them to hym. What was fownde ageynſte the Admirall and his brother, or ageynſt his aduerſaries whiche accuſed hym, I doo not wel knowe. But this I am ſure of, that both the brethrene are taken, browght, and caſt in priſon, with their goodes confiſcate. But as ſoone as the kynge vnderſtoode that they were browght bounde to Cales, he ſent meſſengers in poſte, with commaundemente that they ſhulde bee looſed and coome freely to his preſence: wherby he declared that he tooke theyr troubles greeuouſlye. It is alſo ſayde, that the newe gouernoure ſent letters to the kynge, wrytten with the Admiralles hande in ſtraunge and vnknowen ſypheringes, to his brother the Lieuetenaunt beinge abſente, wyllynge hym to bee in a redynes with a poure of armed men to coome and ayde hym if the Gouernoure ſhulde profer hym any violence. Wherof the gouernour hauinge knowleage (as he ſaythe) beinge alſo aduertiſed that the Leauetenaunt was gonne to his brother before the men which he had prepared were in a redines, apprehended them bothe vnwares, before the multitude came togyther. What wyl folowe, tyme, the moſte trewe and prudent Iudge, wyll declare. Thus fare ye well.

The Spanyardes are peinful in the warres.

A desperate aduenture with xxx. men

A polic[i]e.

Kynge Maiobanexius is taken.

Guarionexius is taken.

36

A Bewtifull woman.

A kynge sendeth the lieuetenaunt fyue thousand men to tyll the grownde.

The kynges submit themselues to the Lieuetenaunt

A newe gouernour of the ilande.

An vnwoorthy rewarde for soo greate paynes.

¶ The eyghth booke of the fyrste Decade, *to Cardinall Lodouike.*

The Ocean sea heretofore vnknowen.

THe greate, ryche, and plentifull Ocean ſea, heretofore vnknowen, and nowe fownde by *Chriſtophorus Colonus* the Admyrall, by th[e]autoritie and furtherance of the Catholyke kynge, I haue preſented vnto yowre honoure (ryght noble Prince) lyke a golden cheyne vnwoorkmanly wrought. But yowe ſhall nowe receaue a precious iewell to bee appendaunt therto. Therfore emonge ſuche as were pylottes or gouernoures vnder the Admyrall, and had dylygently marked the courſes and differences of the wyndes, many had licences graunted them of the kynge to ſeeke further of theyr owne charges, vppon condicion to pay hym faithfully his portion, which is the fyft parte. But bycauſe emonge all other, one *Petrus Alphonſus* (cauled *Nignus* by his ſurname) ſayled towarde the Southe with more proſperous fortune then any of the other, I thinke it beſt firſt to ſpeake ſumwhat of his vyage. He therfore, with only one ſhippe, well furnyſhed at his owne charges, after that he had his paſſeporte with commaundement in no caſe to caſte anker paſte fyftie leaques diſtante from any place where the Admyrall hadde touched, ſayled fyrſte to *Paria* where the Admyrall fownde bothe the men and women ſoo laden with cheynes, garlandes, and braſelettes of pearles, as wee haue ſayde before. Coaſtynge therfore alonge by the ſame ſhore accordinge to the kynges commaundement, (yet leauinge behynde hym the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapana*) he came to the Region which th[e]inhabitantes thereof, caule *Curiana*: where he fownd a hauen (as he ſaythe) muche lyke the porte of *Gades* or *Cales*. In to the which enteringe, he ſawe a farre of certeyne howſes on the ſhore, and perceaued when he drewe nere, that it was a vylage of onely eyght howſes. Proceadynge yet further for the ſpace of three myles, he eſpyed an other vylage well replenyſhed with people, where there met hym fyftie naked men on a coompany hauinge with them a certeyne ruler, who deſyred Alphonſus to coome to theyr coaſtes. He browght with hym at this tyme, many haukes belles, pynnes, nedels, braſelettes, cheynes, garlandes, and rynges with counterfet ſtones and glaſſes, and ſuch other tryfelles, the which within the momente of an houre, he hadde exchaunged for. xv. vnces of theyr pearles which they wore abowte theyr neckes and armes. Then they yet more erneſtly deſyred him to ſayle to theyr coaſtes: Promyſynge hym that he ſhulde there haue as many pearles as he wolde deſyre. He conde[ſ]cended to their requeſte: And the daye folowynge, came to the place where they appoynted hym: Lyinge there at anker, a great multytude of people reſorted to hym, inſtantely requyringe hym to coome alande. But when he conſydered the innumerable multytude of people which was there aſſembled, and that he had only. xxxiii. men in his coompany, he durſte not commyt hym ſelfe to theyr handes, but gaue them to vnderſtand by ſignes and tokens that they ſhulde coome to the ſhyppe with theyr canoas. For theyr boates (which the men of the Iland caule *Canoas*) are made only of one hole peece of woodde as in the Ilandes: yet more rude, and not ſoo artificially as theyrs are. Theſe they caule *Gallitas*: They ſwarmed therefore to the ſhyp as faſte as they myght, brynginge with them great plentie of pearles (which they caule *Tenoras*) exchaunginge the ſame for owre marchaundies. He fownde this people to bee of gentyl nature, ſimple and innocente, beinge conuerſant with them in theyr houſes, for the ſpace of. xx. dayes. Theyr houſes are made of woodde, coouered with the leaues of date trees. Theyr meate for the moſte parte, is the ſhelfyſſhes in the whiche pearles are engendred, wherof theyr ſea coaſtes are ful. They haue alſo greate plentie of wylde beaſtes, as hartes, wylde bores, and coonys lyke vnto hares, both in colour and byggenes. Stocke doues alſo, and turtle doues. Lykewyſe geeſe and duckes which they nooryſhe in theyr houſes as wee doo. Peacockes flye abowte in maner in euerye woodde and groue: but they are not diſtinct with ſundry coloures as ours are: for the cockes are lyke vnto the hennes. Theſe people of *Curiana*, are craftie hunters and exceding cunning archers, ſoo that they wyll not lyghtly myſſe any beaſt or byrde that they ſhoote at. Owre men conſumed certeyne dayes here very pleſauntely. Durynge which tyme, who ſoo euer brought them a peacocke, had for the ſame, foure pynnes. He that brought a pheaſaunt, had twoo: And for a ſtocke doue or turtle doue, one: And for a gooſe, a ſmall lookyng glaſſe or a lyttle ſtone of glaſſe. Thus they bought and ſoulde with proferynge and byddynge, denyinge and refuſinge as it had byn in a greate market. When pynnes were profered them, they aſked what they ſhulde doo with them, beinge naked. But owre men ſatiſfied them with a craftie anſwere, declaring by tokens that they were very neceſſary to picke theyr teeth and to pul thornes owte of theyr fleſſhe. But aboue al thynges haukes belles were moſt eſteemed amonge them, for theyr ſounde and faire coloure: And wolde therfore gyue much for one of them. Owre men lodginge in theyr houſes, harde in the nyght ſeaſon horryble noyſes and rorynges of wylde beaſtes in the wooddes which are full of exceadinge greate and hygh trees of ſundry kyndes. But the beaſtes of theſe

The fifte portion dewe to the kynge.

37

The nauigation of Petrus Alphonsus.

Paria.

Cumana.
Manacapana.
Curiana.

Perles for tryfels.

Great plenſie of pearles.

Humayne people.

Shel fyshes in which perles are engendred.

Beastes and foules.

Hunters and archers.

Theyr maner of bargening

The vse of pynnes.

Haukes bels in great estimation.

Roringe of wyld beastes

wooddes, are not noyſome to men. For the people of the countrey goo dayly a hunting, naked, with theyr bowes and arrowes: Yet hath it not byn harde of, that any man hath byn ſlayne of any wylde beaſte. As many hartes or wylde bores as owre men woolde deſyre them to brynge, they woolde kyll in the wooddes with their bowes and arrowes, and not fayle to brynge theim. They lacke kyne, goates, and ſheepe. Theyr breade is made of rootes, as is theyrs of the Ilandes. This nation, hath blacke heare, groſſe and ſumwhat curlde, yet longe alſo. They keepe theyr teeth very whyte: And for that purpoſe vſe to cary a certeine herbe betwene theyr lyppes for the moſt parte of the day, and to waſſhe theyr mouthes when they caſt it away. The women doo all theyr buſynes at home in theyr howſes, and haue alſo the cure of tyllage of the grounde. But the men apply them ſelues to the warres and huntynge, to playe, ſingynge and daunſing. They haue ſundry kyndes of water pottes, iugges, and drinckinge cuppes made of earthe in other places abowt theym and brought thether for exchaunge of other thynges: For they vſe fayres and markettes for the ſame purpoſe: and are gretly deſyrous of ſuch thynges, as are not brought forth or made in theyr countrey, as nature hath gyuen a diſpoſition to al men to deſyre and bee delyted with newe and ſtrange thynges. Many of them, had hangynge at theyr pearles, the Images of certeine beaſtes and birdes very artificiouſly made of golde, but not pure. Theſe alſo are brought them from other places for exchange of other thynges. The golde wherof they are made, is natiue, and of much lyke finenes to that wherof the florenes are coyned. The men of this countrey, incloſe theyr priuie members in a gourde, cutte after the faſhion of a coddepiece: or els, coouer the ſame with the ſhelle of a tortoyſe, tyed abowte theyr loynes with laces of goſſampine cotton. In other places of that tract, they thruſt the ſynew within the ſheethe therof, and bynde the ſkinne faſt with a ſtringe. The greate wylde beaſtes wherof wee ſpake before, and many other thynges whiche are not founde in any of the Ilandes, teſtifie that this region is part of the continent or firme land. But the chiefeſt coniecture wherby they argue the ſame, is, that by the coaſtes of that lande, from *Paria* towarde the weſte, they ſayled aboute three thouſande myles, ſyndynge no ſigne or token of any ende. Theſe people of *Curiana* (whiche ſum caule *Curtana*) beinge demaunded where they hadde ſuche plentie of golde, ſignified that it was brought them from a Region cauled *Canchieta* or *Cauchieta*, being diſtant from them ſyxe ſoonnes, that is, ſyxe dayes iourney weſtwarde: And that theyr Images of goulde, were made in the ſame Region. Where vppon owre men directed theyr vyage thyther immediatly: and arryued there at the calendes of Nouember, in the yeare of Chriſt a thouſande and fyue hundreth. The people of the countrey reſorted to them withoute feare, bryngynge with them of the golde which we ſayde to bee natyue in that Region. This people had alſo collers of pearles abowte theyr neckes, whiche were brought them frome *Curiana* for exchange of theyr marchandies. None of them wolde exchaunge any of thoſe thinges which they had owte of other countreys: as nother the Curians golde, nor the Canchietans pearles. Yet amonge the Canchietans, they fownde but little gold redy gathered. They toke with them from thenſe, certen very fayre marmaſets or munkeys, and many popingayes of ſundry coloures. In the monethe of Nouember, the ayer was there moſt temperate, and nothyng coulde. The guardens of the north pole, were owte of ſyght to bothe theſe people, they are ſoo nere to the Equinoctiall. Of the degrees of the pole, they can gyue none other accoumpte. Theſe people, are wel diſpoſed men, of honeſt conditions, and nothinge ſuſpicious. For all moſt all the nyght longe, they reſorted to the ſhippe with theyr boates, and went aboorde ſhip withowte feare, as dyd the Curians. They caule pearles, *Corixas*. They are ſumwhat ielyous. For, when any ſtraungers coome emonge them, they euer place theyr women behynd them. In this Region of *Canchieta*, the goſſampine trees growe of them ſelues commonly in many places, as doo with vs elmes, wyllowes, and ſalowes. And therfore they vſe to make breeches of cotton, wherwith they coouer theyr pryuie partes in many other Regions there aboute. When they had yet ſayled on forwarde by the ſame coaſtes, there came foorth ageynſte them abowte twoo thouſande men, armed after theyr maner, forbydding them to coome aland. Theſe people were ſoo rude and ſaluage, that owre men coulde by no meanes allure them to familiaritie. Owre men therfore, contented only with their pearles, returned backe the ſame way they came: where they remayned with the Curians continually for the ſpace of twentie dayes, and fylled theyr bellyes wel with good meate. And here it ſeemeth to me, not farre from my purpoſe, to declare what chaunced vnto theim in theyr returne, when they came nowe within the ſyght of the coaſte of *Paria*. They happened therefore in the way, at *Os Draconis* and the goulfes of *Paria*, (wherof wee ſpake before) to meete with a nauie of. xviii. Canoas of Canibales which went a rouyng to hunt for men. Who as ſoone as they had eſpyed owr men, aſſailed theyr ſhippe fiercely and without feare encloſed the ſame, diſturbing owre men on euery ſyde with theyr arrowes. But owre men ſo feared them with theyr gunnes, that they fledde immediatly, whom owre menne folowinge with the ſhippe boate, tooke one of theyr Canoas, and in it, only one Canibal (for the other had eſcaped) and with hym, an other man bownde: Who, with teares runninge downe his cheekes, and with gieſture of his handes, eyes, and heade, ſignified that ſyxe of his coompanyons had byn cruelly cutte in pieces and eaten of that myſcheuous nation: and that he ſhulde haue byn lykewyſe handeled the day folowynge. Wherfore they gaue hym poure ouer the Canyball, to doo with hym what he wolde. Then with the Canibales owne clubbe, he layde on hym al that he might dryue with

Hartes and wyld bores.

38

Blacke and curlde heare.

White teethe.

Earthen vessels.

Conninge artificers.

Base golde.

A strange maner of coueringe theyr priuities.

Tokens of the continent or firme lande.

The golden Region of Canchieta.

Temperate ayer in Nouember.

The Equinoctial lyne.

Humane people

Gossampine trees.

Chorlyshe people

Alphonsus returneth to Paria.

Canibales in the goulfes of Paria.

39

Death for death.

hande and foote, grinninge and fretinge as it had byn a wylde bore: Thinkynge that he had not yet ſufficiently reuenged the death of his companyons, when he had beaten owte his braynes and guttes. When he was demaunded after what ſorte the Canibales were woont to inuade other contreys, he anſwered that they euer vſed to carye with them in theyr Canoas, a greate multitude of clubbes: The whiche, where ſoo euer they lande, they pitche in the grownde, and encampe them ſelues within the coompaſſe of the ſame, to lye the more ſafely in the nyght ſeaſon. In *Curiana*, they fownde the head of a capitaine of the Canibales, nailed ouer the doore of a certeyne gouernoure, for a token of victorie, as it hadde byn the ſtanderde or helmette taken from the enemye in battayle. In theſe coaſtes of *Paria*, is a Region cauled *Haraia*, in the whiche, greate plentie of ſalte is gathered after a ſtrange ſorte. For the ſea beinge there toſſed with the poure of the wyndes, dryueth the ſalte waters into a large playne by the ſea ſyde: where: afterward when the ſea waxeth caulme, and the ſoonne begynnethe to ſhyne, the water is congeled into moſte pure and whyte ſalte, wherewith innumerable ſhyppes might bee laden, if men doo reſorte thether for the ſame beefore there faule any rayne. For the rayne meltethe it, and cauſeth it to ſynke into the ſande, and ſoo by the pores of the earthe, to returne to the place from whenſe it was dryuen. Other ſay, that the playne is not fylled from the ſea, but of certeine ſpringes whoſe water is more ſharpe and ſalt then the water of the ſea. Th[e]inhabitantes doo greatlye eſteeme this bay of ſalte. Which they vſe, not only for theyr owne commoditie, but alſo woorkinge the ſame into a ſquare forme lyke vnto brickes, they ſell it to ſtrangers for exchaunge of other thynges whiche they lacke. In this Region, they ſtretche and drye the deade bodies of theyr kinges and noble men, layinge the ſame vpon a certeyne frame of woodde much lyke vnto a hurdle or grediren, with a gentell fyre vnder the ſame, thus by lyttle and lyttle conſuminge the fleſſhe and keepinge the ſkynne hole with the bones incloſed therein. Theſe dryed carcaſes, they haue in greate reuerence, and honour them for theyr houſeholde and famylier goddes. They ſay that in this place they ſawe a man, and in an other place a woman, thus dryed and reſerued. When they departed from *Curiana*, the. viii. day of the Ides of February to returne to Spayne, they had three ſcore and. xvi. poundes weight (after. viii. vnces to the pownde) of perles, which they bought for exchange of owre thynges, amountinge to the value of fyue ſhyllinges. Departinge therfore, they conſumed three ſcore dayes in theyr iourney (althowgh it were ſhorter then frome *Hiſpaniola*) by reaſon of the contynuall courſe of the ſea into the weſte, whiche dyd not only greately ſtey the ſhippe, but alſo ſumtymes dryue it backe. But at the length they came home ſoo laden with perles, that they were with euery maryner, in maner as common as chaffe. But the maſter of the ſhyppe, *Petrus Alphonſus*, beinge accuſed of his coompanyons that he had ſtowlen a great multitude of precious perles, and defrauded the kynge of his portion which was the fyueth parte, was taken of *Fernando de Vega*, a man of greate lerninge and experience and gouernour of *Gallecia*, where they arryued, and was there kepte in pryſon a longe tyme. But he ſtyll denyethe that euer he deteyned anye parte of the perles. Many of theſe perles were as bygge as haſell nuttes, and oriente, (as we caule it) that is, lyke vnto them of the Eaſte partes. Yet not of ſoo greate price, by reaſon that the holes therof are not ſoo perfecte. When I my ſelfe was preſente with the ryght honorable duke of *Methyna*, and was bidden to dyner with hym, in the citie of Ciuile, they browght to hym abone a hundreth and twentie vnces of perles to be ſoulde: which ſurely did greatly delyte me with their fayrenes and brightnes. Sum ſaye, that *Alphonſus* hadde not theſe perles in *Curiana* being diſtante from *Os Draconis* more then a hundreth and twentie leaques, but that he had them in the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapana*, nere vnto *Os Draconis* and the Ilande of *Margarita*. For they deny that there is any perles fownde in *Curiana*. But ſithe the matter is yet in controuerſie, we wyll paſſe to other matters. Thus muche yowe haue whereby yowe maye coniecture what commoditie in tyme to coome may bee looked for from theſe newe landes of the weſt Ocean, whereas at the fyrſte diſcoueringe, they ſhewe ſuch tokens of greate ryches. Thus fare ye well.

Howe the canibales fortifie theyr campe

Haraia.

Salte engendred of the water of the sea.

Sprynges of salt water.

The bodies of princes dryed and reserued

Threescore and xvi. poundes weight of perles for. v. shillynges.

The course of the sea toward the weste.

Perles as common as chaffe

Petrus Alphonsus in prison.

Orient perles as bygge as hasel nuttes.

40

Curiana
Os Draconis.
Cumana.
Manacapana.
The Iland of Margarita.

¶ The. ix. booke of the fyrst Decade *to Cardynall Lodouike.*

The nauigation of Vincentius and Aries Pinzonus

Licence and passeporte.

Incentiagnes Pinzonus, and alſo *Aries Pinzonus*, his neuie, by his brothers ſyde, which accompanyed the Admiral *Colonus* in his fyrſte vyage, and were by him appoynted to bee maſters of twoo of the ſmaule ſhippes which the Spaniardes caule *Carauelas*, beinge mooued by the greate ryches and amplytude of the new landes, furnyſhed of theyr owne charges, foure carauels in the hauen of theyr owne countrey which the Spanyardes caule *Palos*, bortheringe on the weſte Ocean. Hauynge therfore the kynges licence and paſſeporte to departe, they looſed from the hauen, abowte the Calendes of December, in the yeare 1499. This hauen

of *Palos* is three ſcore and twelue myles diſtant from *Gades*, commonly cauled *Cales*: and three ſcore and foure myles from Ciuile. All th[e]inhabitantes of this towne, not one excepted, are greately gyuen to ſearchinge of the ſea, and continually exercyſed in ſayling. They alſo directed theyr vyage fyrſt to the Ilandes of Canarie by the Ilandes of *Heſperides*, nowe cauled *Cabouerde*, which ſum caule *Gorgades Meducias*. Saylinge therfore directly towarde the ſouthe frome that Iland of the *Heſperides* which the Portugales (being poſſeſſers of the ſame) caule *Sancti Iacobi*, and departinge frome thenſe at the Ides of Ianuary, they folowed the ſouthweſt wynde, beinge in the myddeſt betwene the ſouth and the weſte. When they ſuppoſed that they had ſayled aboute three hundrethe leaques by the ſame wynde, they ſay that they loſte the ſyght of the Northe ſtarre: and were ſhortelye after, toſſed with excedinge tempeſtes bothe of wynde and ſea, and vexed with intollerable heate. Yet ſayled they on further (not without greate daunger) for the ſpace of twoo hundrethe and fortie leaques, folowing yet the ſame wynde by the loſt pole. Wherfore, whether habitable Regions bee vnder the Equinoctiall lyne or not, let theſe men and the owlde wryters, aſwel Philoſophers as poetes and coſmographers diſcuſſe. For theſe men, affirme it to bee habitable, and maruelouſly repleniſhed with people: and they, that it is vnhabitable by reaſon of the ſoone beames dependinge perpendicularly or directlye ouer the ſame. Yet were there many of the oulde wryters, whiche attempted to proue it habitable. Theſe maryners beinge demaunded, if they ſawe the ſouth pole, they anſwered that they knewe no ſtarre there lyke vnto this pole, that myght be decerned aboute the poynte. But that they ſawe an other order of ſtarres, and a certeyne thicke myſt ryſynge from the horizontall lyne, which greatly hyndered theyr ſyght. They contende alſo, that there is a great heape or ryſynge in the myddeſt of the earth, which taketh away the ſyght of the ſouthe pole, vntyll they haue vtterly paſſed ouer the ſame. But they verely beleue that they ſawe other images of ſtarres, muche differinge from the ſituation of the ſtarres of owre hemiſpherie or halfe circle of heauen. Howe ſoo euer the matter bee, as they informe vs, wee certifie yowe. At the lengthe, the ſeuenth day of the calendes of Februarye, they eſpied lande a farre of. And ſeinge the water of the ſea to bee troubelous, foundinge with theyr plummet, they founde it to bee. xvi. fathames deepe. Goinge a lande, and tarienge there for the ſpace of twoo dayes, they departed bycauſe they ſaw no people ſteringe, althowghe they fownde certeyne ſteppes of men by the ſea ſyde. Thus grauinge on the trees and the ſtones nere vnto the ſhore, the kynges name and theyrs, and the tyme of theyr comming thether, they departed. Not farre from this ſtation, folowynge the fyers on the lande by nyght, they founde a nation lyinge vnder the open fyrmamente after the maner of warre. Owre men thought it not beſte to trowble them vntyll the morninge. Therefore, at the ryſinge of the ſoone, fortie of owre men well armed, wente toward them: ageynſt whom came furth. xxxii. of them, with bowes, ſlinges and dartes, euen redy to the feyght. The other coompanye folowed them, armed after the ſame maner. Owr men affirme that they were of hygher ſtature then eyther the Almaynes or Pannonians. They behelde owre men with frownynge and threatenynge countenaunce. But owre men thought it not good to faule to bickeringe with them, vncerteyne whether it were for feare, or bycauſe they wolde not dryue them to flight. Wherfore they went aboute to allure them by faire meanes and rewardes. But they refuſed all kynde of gentelnes, and ſtoode euer in a redines to feight, declaringe the ſame by ſignes and tokens. Thus owr men reſorted to their ſhippes, and they to the place from whence they came, without any further buſynes. The ſame nyght abowte mydnyght, they fledde, and left the place voyde where they lay in campe. Owre men ſuppoſe them to bee a vagabunde and wanderinge nacion lyke vnto the Scythians, withowte houſes or certeyne dwellinge places, lyuinge onely with the fruites of the earth, hauing theyr wyues and chyldren folowinge them. Such as meaſured their footeſteppes in the ſande, affirme with greate othes, that one of theyr feete is almoſt as longe as twoo feete of owre men of the meane ſorte. Saylinge on yet further, they founde an other ryuer, but not of deapth ſufficient to beare the carauels. They ſent therfore the foure ſhippe boates to lande, ful of armed men to ſearch the countrey. They eſpyed vppon a hyghe hyll nere vnto the ſea ſyde, a greate multitude of people, to whom owre coompany ſent furthe one man with certeyne of owre thynges to allure them to exchaunge. And when he had caſt a haukes bell towarde them, they caſt downe a wedge of golde a cubette longe. The which as he ſtouped to take vppe, they ſoodenly incloſed hym, and caryed hym awaye. But he was ſhortly after reſcued by his coompanyons, to ſum of their paynes: for they ſlewe eyght of owre men, and wounded many a farre of, with theyr arrowes, and dartes made of wood hardened at the endes with fyre. After this, they encoompaſed owre ſhippe boates within the ryuer, and came raſſhelye within the reache of owre men, layinge houlde on the boates ſydes, where they were thruſt throwgh and hewen in peeces as it had byn ſheepe, by reaſon they were naked. Yet wolde they not for al this, gyue ouer: but tooke from owre men one of their boates, hauing noo men in it. For the gouernour therof being ſlayne with an arrowe, the other fledde and eſcaped. And thus they lefte this fierce and warlyke people, ſaylinge towarde the northweſte alonge by the ſame coaſtes, with ſorowfull hartes for the death of theyr coompanyons. When they had ſayled abowte. xl. leaques, they chaunced into a ſea of ſuche freſſhe water, that they fylled theyr barelles and hogges heades therwith. Searching the cauſe hereof, they vnderſtoode that a vehement courſe of ryuers diſcended with great violence from the toppes of certeyne greate hylles. They ſay

Cales. Ciuile.

The Ilandes of Canarie

Cabouerde.

S. Iames Ilande.

The North pole owte of syght.

Habitable Regions vnder the Equinoctial lyne.

An other order of starres

A thycke mist

A rysinge in the myddest of the earth.

41

People of hygh stature.

A vagabunde kynde of men

Giantes.

Desperate bouldenes.

A sea of freshe water.

Many fruitefull Ilandes.
Humane people.

Mariatamball.
Camomorus.
Paricora.

Regions of Paria.
Golde and perles.
Os Draconis.
Cumana.
Manacapana.
Curiana
The hole earth largely taken, maye bee cauled an Ilande.
Maragnonus a ryuer of exceadinge breadth and full of Ilands looke decade ii. liber. ix. 42

Boriostomea, and Spiriostomea, mouthes of the ryuer of Danubius.

The commodities of the Regions and Ilandes about Paria.
Brasile.

Mani fruitful Ilandes lefte desolate.
Canibales.

Trees of Cassia fistula.

Trees of maruelous byggenes.
A monstrous beaste.

Alteracion of ayer and change of meate

Cathay in India beyonde the ryuer of Ganges
A shipwrake by tempest.

alſo that there lyeth within the ſea, many fortunate and fruitfull Ilandes, and well inhabyted: And that th[e]inhabitantes of this tracte are men of meeke nature and ſuche as doo not refuſe ſtrangers: Yet lyttle proſytable to them, bycauſe they had noo marchandyes for their purpoſe, as golde or precyous ſtones. For lacke wherof, they brought frome thenſe thyrtie captiues to ſell for ſlaues. Th[e]inhabitantes caule this Region *Mariatambal.* The Region of the eaſte parte of that ryuer, is cauled *Camomorus*: And that of the weſte parte, *Paricora*: in the mid lande wherof, th[e]inhabitantes ſignified that there is greate plentie of golde. For, folowynge this ryuer directly toward the Northe (as the bendynge of the ſhore requyred) they recouered ageyne the ſyght of the north pole. All the coaſte of this tracte, perteyneth to *Paria*, the which (as we ſayd before) was fyrſt founde by *Colonus* hym ſelfe, and hath in maner in euery place, greate abundaunce of pearles. They ſaye that theſe coaſtes are adioynynge vnto, and all one with *Os Draconis*, and alſo bortherynge vppon the Regions of *Cumana*, *Manacapana*, *Curiana*, *Cauchieta*, and *Cuchibachoa.* Wherfore they thought it to bee parte of the firme lande of India beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges.* For the greate and large coompaſſe therof, dothe not permit that it ſhulde bee an Ilande. Albeit, the hole earth vncouered with water, largely taken, may bee cauled an Ilãnde. From the poynte of that land where they loſt the ſight of the north pole, ſaylynge by a continuall tracke abowte three hundreth leaques towarde the weſte ſyde of *Paria*, they ſay that almoſte in the mydde way, they chaunced into a ryuer cauled *Maragnonum*, which they affirme to bee of ſuch excedinge breadth, that it myght ſeeme incredible, if the antiquitie dyd not make mention of the lyke. Beinge demaunded of me if it were not ſalte water where it diuided the lande, they anſwered, that the water therof was very freſſhe and ſweete: And that the further it ranne, to bee ſoo muche the freſſher: Alſo full of Ilandes and holſome fyſhe. They dare auouche the breadth therof, to bee more then thirtie leaques. Yet if wee well weighe and conſyder the largenes and wydenes of *Borioſtomea* and *Spirioſtomea*, the mouthes of the famous ryuer of *Iſter* (nowe cauled *Danubius*) and howe farre they violate or corrupte the ſalte water with their freſhenes, wee ſhall ceaſe to marueile, althowgh this other ryuer bee greater. For, who can diminyſſhe the poure of nature, but that it may make this bigger then the other, and an other bygger then this. And I ſuppoſe this to bee the ryuer wherof *Colonus* the Admirall made mention in the diſcription of his vyage in theſe coaſtes. But wee ſhall hereafter haue further knowleage hereof. Let vs nowe therfore returne to the commodities of theſe Regions. They fownde in many Ilandes abowte *Paria*, great wooddes of braſile trees: And brought awaye with them, three thouſande poundes weight thereof. They ſay that the braſile of *Hiſpaniola*, is muche better then this, to dye clothe with a more fayre and durable colour. From henſe, folowynge the wynde (whiche the Spanyardes caule *Nordueſt*, and the Italians *Græco*) they paſſed by many Ilandes very fruitefull, yet lefte deſolate and waſted by reaſon of the crueltie of the Canibales. For they went alande in many places, and fownde the ruines of many deſtroyed howſes. Yet in ſum places, they founde men, but thoſe exceadinge fearefull, flyinge to the mountaynes, rockes, and wooddes at the ſight of euery ſtraunger or ſhippe, and wanderinge without houſes or certeyne abydinge places, for feare of the Caniballes layinge wayte and huntinge after them. Here they founde thoſe great trees which of them ſelues in dyuers places bringe furth the fruite or ſpice whiche the Apothecaries caule *Caſſia fiſtula*: And that of noo leſſe goodnes then that which the phiſitians miniſter to ſuch as bee diſeaſed with the ague. But it was not ripe at theyr beinge there. They affirme that there are trees of ſuche byggenes, that. xvi. men ioyninge handes togyther and ſtandinge in coompaſſe, can ſcarſely embraſe ſum of them. Emonge theſe trees is fownde that monſtrous beaſte with a ſnowte lyke a foxe, a tayle lyke a marmaſette, eares lyke a batte, handes lyke a man, and feete lyke an ape, bearing her whelpes abowte with her in an owtwarde bellye much lyke vnto a greate bagge or purſe. The deade carkas of this beaſt, you ſawe with me, and turned it ouer and ouer with yowre owne handes, marueylynge at that newe belly and wonderfull prouiſion of nature. They ſay it is knowen by experience, that ſhee neuer letteth her whelpes goo owte of that purſe, except it bee eyther to play, or to ſucke, vntyl ſuche tyme that they bee able to gette theyr lyuing by them ſelues. They tooke this beaſte with her whelpes: But the whelpes dyed ſhortely after in the ſhyppes. Yet the damme liued certeyne moonethes: But at the length, not beinge able to abyde ſoo greate alteration of ayer, and chaunge of meate, ſhee dyed alſo in the way. But of this beaſte, wee haue ſayde enowgh. Let vs now therfore returne to the autoures of theſe thynges. Theſe twoo *Pinzoni*, the vncle and the neuie, ſuſteyned manye great trowbles and horrible tempeſtes and perilles in this nauigation. For when they had nowe ſayled by the coaſtes of *Paria* abowte. vi. hundreth leaques, and (as they ſuppoſed) beyonde the citie of *Cathay* and the coaſtes of Eaſte India beyonde the ryuer of Ganges, there roſe ſoodenly ſoo fierce a tempeſte in the mooneth of Iuly, that, of the foure carauels which they had with them, twoo were drowned euen beefore theyr eyes: and the thyrde lyenge at anker, with lyke ſoodennes caryed owte of theyr ſyght throwgh the violence of the tempeſte: The fourth alſo lyinge at anker, was ſoo ſhaken and brooſed, that al the ſeames therof were almoſt looſed. Yet came they to lande owt of this laſte ſhyppe, but vtterlye deſpayrynge of the ſhyppe. Wherfore conſultynge with them ſelues what was beſt to bee doone in ſoo extreeme a caſe, and how to prouide them a ſafe dwellinge place in thoſe Regions beinge owt of al hope how to departe from thenſe, they determined

to ſley all the inhabitantes of the contrey nere abowte them, leaſte they with the other ſhulde conſpire togyther to kyl them, but theyr fortune was better. For the carauell which the tempeſte had caryed away, was coome to them ageyne. This had in it. xviii. men: And the other that remayned, was ſaued and repayred. With theſe two therfore, they tooke theyr vyage directly to Spaine And thus beinge toſſed with tempeſtes and vexed with aduerſities, they returned to theyr natiue contrey of *Palos*, to theyr wyues and children, the day before the Calendes of October, with the loſſe of many of theyr dere frendes and neighbours. They browght with them Cinamome and gynger: but not very good, bycauſe they were not there fully ſeaſoned with the heate of the ſoone before they brought them from thenſe. • They browght alſo, certeyne precious ſtones, whiche *Baptiſta Elyſius*, that excellent philoſopher and yowre lordeſhippes phiſitian, affirmeth to bee trewe Topaſes. After theſe mens returne, other of theyr neighbours beinge moued thereto by a certeyne emulation, to proue yf theyr fortune wolde bee anye better, lyke men of good corage, beinge nothing diſcomforted by the harde fortune of theyr neighboures, knowinge that it often tymes chaunceth that that which is one mans vndoinge is an other mans makynge, attempted a newe vyage towarde the ſowthe by the coaſtes of *Paria*, folowynge the ſteppes of *Colonus* the Admiral, who had fyrſt diſcouered the ſame. They alſo browght with them greate plentie of *Caſſia fiſtula*: And fownde that precious medicine cauled of the Spanyardes, *Animæ album*, whoſe perfume is of moſt excellent effect to heale the reumes, murres, and heauines of the heade. As touchinge this vyage, as yet I knowe noo other newes that I thought worthy to certifie yowe of. Wherfore, I wyl nowe make an ende of this booke, bycauſe yow put me ſo often in rememberance of your departure. Yet to accomplyſſhe the Decade, I wyll declare ſumwhat of the ſuperſtitions of *Hiſpaniola*. Yowe ſhall nowe therfore vnderſtand the illuſions wherwith the people of the Ilande haue byn ſeduced after the errours of the owlde gentilitie, and wandered in the ignorance and blyndenes of humane nature corrupted by the diſobedience of owr fyrſt parentes, which hath remayned in all nations vpon the face of the earth, except where it hath pleaſed god by the lyght of his ſpirite by his woorde, to poure vppon his electe the grace of renouation, by the lyght wherof the naturall darkenes receaueth ſume clearenes as in a glaſſe, vntyll imperfection ſhalbe abolyſhed. Owre men therefore, were longe in the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*, before they knewe that the people thereof honorede any other thynge then the lyghtes of heauen, or had any other Religion. But when theye had byne nowe longe conuerſante with them, and by vnderſtandyng their language, drewe to a further familiaritie, they had knowleage that they vſed dyuers rytes and ſuperſtitions. I haue therfore gathered theſe fewe thynges folowynge, owte of a booke wrytten by one *Ramonus* an heremyte, whom *Colonus* had leſte with certeyne kynges of the Ilande to inſtruct them in the Chriſtian fayth. And bycauſe in maner their hole religion is none other thing then Idolatry, I wyll begynne at theyr Idoles. It is therfore apparente by the Images which they honour openly and commonly, that there appere vnto them in the nyghte ſeaſons certeyne phantaſies and illuſions of euyll ſpirites, ſeducinge them into many fonde and folyſhe errours. For they make certeyne Images of goſſampine cotton foulded or wrethed after theyr maner, and harde ſtopped within. Theſe Images they make ſytting, much lyke vnto the pictures of ſprites and deuelles which owr paynters are accuſtomed to paint vppon waules. But foraſmuch as I my ſelfe ſent yowe foure of theſe Images, yowe may better preſently ſignifie vnto the kynge yowre vncle, what maner of thynges they are, and howe lyke vnto paynted deuelles, then I can expreſſe the ſame by wrytynge. Theſe Images, th[e]inhabitantes caule *Zemes*: wherof the leaſte, made to the lykenes of younge deuels, they bind to theyr forheades when they goo to the warres ageynſt their enemies: And for that purpoſe haue they thoſe ſtrynges hangynge at them which yowe ſee. Of theſe, they beleue to obteyne rayne if rayne be lackyng, and lykewyſe fayre wether. For they thinke that theſe *Zemes* are the mediatours and meſſengers of the greate god, whom they acknowleage to be only one, eternall, withowte ende, omnipotent and inuiſible. Thus euery kynge hath his particuler *Zemes* which he honoureth. They caule the eternall god, by theſe twoo names, *Iocauna*, and *Guamaonocon*, as theyr prediceſſours tawght them. Affirminge that he hath a father cauled by theſe fyue names: that is, *Attabeira*, *Mamona*, *Guacarapita*, *Liella*, *Guimazoa*. Nowe ſhall yowe heare what they fable on the earth as touchinge the originall of man. There is in the Ilande a Region cauled *Caunana*, wher they fayne that mankynde came fyrſt owte of twoo caues of a mountayne: and that the byggeſt ſorte of men, came furth of the mouth of the byggeſt caue, and the leaſt ſorte owte of the leaſte caue. The rocke in the which theſe caues are, they caule *Cauta*. The greateſt denne, they name *Cazibaxagua*, and the leſſe *Amaiaqua*. They ſay, that before it was lawful for men to come foorth of the caue, the mouth of the caue was kepte and watched nyghtly by a man whoſe name was *Machochael*. This *Machochael*, departinge ſumwhat farre from the caue to th[e]intente to ſee what thynges were abrode, was ſoodenly taken of the ſoonne (whoſe ſight he was forbydden) and was turned into a ſtone. They fayne the lyke of dyuers other, that whereas they went foorthe in the nyghte ſeaſon a fyſſhynge, ſo farre from the caue that they coulde not returne before the ryſynge of the ſoone (the which it was not lawful for them to behold) they were tranſformed into myrobalane trees, which of them ſelues growe plentifully in the Ilande. They ſaye furthermore, that a certeyne ruler cauled *Vagoniona*, ſent one furth of the caue to goo a fyſſhynge, who by lyke chaunce

Extreme remedie in a desperat case

43

Cinamome and gynger

Topases.

Men of noble corage.

A nother vyage

Animæ album.

The superstitions of hispaniola.

The errours of the owlde gentilitie.

The grace of renouation.

Ramonus an heremyte.

Idolatry and Idoles.

Illusions of euyl spirites.

Images of gossampine cotton

Zemes.

Younge deuyls.

Mediatours.

Only one god eternall.

The names of god.

The father of god.

The originall of man kynde

Fables much lyke Ouide his transformations.

44

The original of Mirobalane trees.

The nightingale.

was turned into a nyghtyngale bycauſe the ſoonne was ryſen beefore he came ageyne to the caue: And that yearelye aboẅte the ſame tyme that he was turned into a byrde, he dothe in the nyght with a moornynge ſonge bewayle his myſſortune, and caule for the helpe of his maiſter *Vagoniona.* And this they thynke to bee the cauſe why that byrde ſingeth in the night ſeaſon. But *Vagoniona,* beinge ſore troubled in his mynd for the loſſe of his familier frende whom he loued ſoo intierly, leauinge the men in the caue, brought foorth onely the women with theyr ſuckynge chyldren, leauinge the women in one of the Ilandes of that tracte, cauled *Mathinino,* and caryed the chyldren awaye with hym: which poore wretches oppreſſed with famine, fainted and remained on the banke of a certeine ryuer where they were turned into frogges, and cryed *toa, toa,* that is, *mama, mama,* as chyldren are wont to crye for the mothers pappe. And hereof they ſay it commeth that frogges vſe to cry ſo pytifully in the ſprynge tyme of the ẏeare: And that men were ſcattered abrode in the caues of *Hiſpaniola* withowte the companye of women. They ſay alſo, that whereas *Vagoniona* hym ſelfe, was accuſtomed to wander in dyuers places, and yet by a ſpeciall grace, neuer tranſformed, deſcended to a certeyne fayre woman whom he ſawe in the bottome of the ſea, and receaued of her certeyne pibple ſtones of marble (whiche they caule *Cibas*) and alſo certeine yelowe and bright plates of laton, whiche they caule *Guaninos.* Theſe thynges to this day are had in greate eſtimation amonge the kynges, as goodly iewels and moſt holy reliques. Theſe men whiche we ſayde before were lefte in the caues withowte women, went furth in the nyght (as they ſay) to waſſhe them ſelues in a ponde of raine water and ſawe a farre of by the way a greate multitude of certeine beaſtes in ſhape ſumwhat lyke vnto women, creping as thicke as antes aboute the myrobalane trees: And that as they attempted to take theſe beaſtes, they ſlypped owte of their handes as they had byn yeles. Where vppon they conſulted, and determyned by th[e]aduice of the elders, that al ſuche ſhulde bee ſowght foorthe amonge them, as were ſcabbyd and leprous, to th[e]intente that with theyr rowghe and harde handes, they myght th[e]eſelyer take holde of them. Theſe men, they caule *Caracaracoles*: And ſente them foorthe a huntinge to take theſe beaſtes. But of many which they tooke, they coulde keepe but only foure: The whiche as they wolde haue vſed for women, they ſownde that they lacked womans priuities. Wherefore caulinge th[e]elders ageyne to counſayle, to conſult what were beſte to bee done in this caſe, theyr aduice was that the byrde which wee caule the Pye, ſhuld bee admitted with his byll to open a place for that purpoſe, whyle in the meane tyme theſe men cauled *Caracaracoles,* ſhulde hould faſt the womens thighes abrode with theyr rowgh handes. Full wyſely therfore was the pye put to this office, and opened the womens priuities, and hereof the women of the Ilande haue theyr original and offſpringe. But nowe doo I ceaſe to marueyle that the owlde Grekes dyd fable and wryte ſo manye bookes of the people cauled *Myrmidones,* which they fayned to bee engendred of antes or piſſemeres. Theſe and ſuche lyke, the ſageſt and wyſeſt of the people, preache continually to the ſimple ſorte, and reherſe the ſame as moſte holy oracles. But it is yet more chyldyſſhe that they fable as touchinge th[e]originall of the ſea. For they ſaye that there was once in the Ilande, a man of greate power, whoſe name was *Iaia*: whoſe only ſoonne being dead, he buryed hym within a greate gourde. This *Iaia,* greuouſlye takyng the death of his ſoonne, after a fewe moonthes, came ageyne to the gourde: The which when he had opened, there iſſhewed foorth many great whales and other monſters of the ſea: where vppon he declared to ſuche as dwelt aboẅte hym, that the ſea was encloſed in that gourde. By which report, foure brethren (borne of one woman who dyed in her trauail) beinge moued, came to the gourde in hope to haue many fyſſhes. The whiche when they had taken in theyr handes, and eſpied *Iaia* comming, (who oftentymes reſorted to the gourd to viſet the boones of his ſoonne) fearing leaſt he ſhulde ſuſpecte them of theſte and ſacrileage, ſodaynely let the gourde faule owte of theyr handes: which beinge broken in the faule the ſea furthwith brake owte at the ryftes therof, and ſo fylled the vales, and ouerflowed the playnes, that only the mountaynes were vncouered, whiche nowe conteyne the Ilandes which are ſeene in thoſe coaſtes. And this is the oppinion of theyr wyſe men as concernynge th[e]originall of the ſea. But nowe (moſt noble prince) you ſhall heare a more pleaſaunt fable. There is a certeyne caue cauled *Iouanaboina,* in the territorye of a certeyne kynge whoſe name is *Machinnech.* This caue they honour more religiouſly then dyd the Grekes in tyme paſte, Corinth, Cyrrha, or Nyſa: And haue adourned it with pictures of a thouſand faſſhions. In th[e]enterance of this caue they haue twoo grauen *Zemes,* wherof the one is cauled *Binthaitel,* and the other *Marobu.* Beinge demaunded why they had this caue in ſoo greate reuerence, they anſwered erneſtly, bycauſe the Soonne and the Moone came fyrſt owt of the ſame to gyue lyght to the worlde. They haue religious concourſe to theſe caues, as wee are accuſtomed to goo on Pylgramage to Rome or Vaticane, *Compoſtele, or Hieruſalem, and moſt holye and heade* places of owre Religion. They are alſo ſubiect to an other kynde of ſuperſtition. For they thinke that deade folkes walke in the nyght, and eate of the fruite cauled *Guannaba,* vnknowen vnto vs, and ſumwhat lyke vnto a quynſe. Affirmynge alſo that they are conuerſant with lyuing people, euen in theyr beddes, and to deceaue women in takynge vpon them the ſhape of men, ſhewynge them ſelues as thowgh they wolde haue to doo with them: But when the matter commeth to actual deede, ſoodenly to vanyſſhe away. If any doo ſuſpecte that a deade body lyeth by hym when he feeleth anye ſtraunge thynge in the bedde, they ſay hee ſhalbe owt of dout

The Iland of Mathinino.

Children turned into frogges.

A speciall grace.

Holy reliques

Women are slippery cattayle.

Al wisedome goeth not by age.

Here nedeth sum tropologicall interpretour.

Myrmidones

Preachers for the deuyl.

A vengeable greate gourd.

The originall of the sea.

45

The originall of Ilandes.

A holy caue.

Images.

The originall of the soone and moone.

Pylgramage.

Walkynge sprytes.

Incubi.

A remedye ageynst walkyng sprites.

by feelynge of the belly therof: affirmyng that the ſpirites of deade men may take vppon them al the members of mans body, ſauinge only the nauell. If therfore by lacke of the nauell he doo perceaue that a deade body lyeth by hym, the feelynge is immediatly reſolued. They beleue verely, that in the nyght, and often tymes in theyr iourneys, and eſpecially in common and hygh wayes, deade men doo meete with the lyuynge. Ageynſte whome, if any man bee ſtoute and owte of feare, the phantaſye vanyſſheth incontinentely. But yf anye feare, the phantaſy or vyſion doth ſoo aſſaute hym and ſtryke hym with further feare, that manye are thereby aſtonyſſhed and haue the lymmes of theyr bodyes taken. Th[e]inhabytantes beinge demaunded of whom they had thoſe vayne ſuperſticions, they anſwered that they were lefte them of theyr forefathers as by diſcent of inheritance: And that they haue had the ſame (before the memory of man) compoſed in certeine rymes and ſonges, which it was lawful for none to lerne but onely the kynges ſoonnes, who commytted the ſame to memorye, bycauſe they hadde neuer any knoweleage of letters. Theſe they ſynge beefore the people on certeyne ſolemne and feſtiuall dayes, as moſt religious ceremonies: whyle in the meane tyme they play on a certeyne inſtrumente made of one hole peece of woodde ſumwhat holowe lyke a tymbrell. Their preeſtes and diuines (whom they caule *Boitios*) inſtructe them in theſe ſuperſtitions. Theſe preeſtes, are alſo phiſitians, diuiſinge a thouſande craftes and ſubtylties howe to deceaue the ſimple people which haue them in greate reuerence. For they perſuade them that the *Zemes* vſe to ſpeak with theym familierlye, and tel them of thynges to come. And if any haue bin ſicke and are recouered, they make them beleue that they obteyned theyr healthe of the *Zemes*. Theſe *Boitii*, bynde them ſelues to muche faſtinge and owtewarde clenlynes and pourgeinges: Eſpecially when they take vppon them the cure of any Prince. For then they drynke the pouder of a certeyne herbe, by whoſe qualitie they are dryuen into a furye: At whiche tyme (as they ſay) they lerne many thynges by reuelation of the *Zemes*. Then, puttinge ſecreatly in theyr mouthes, eyther a ſtone, or a bone, or a piece of fleſhe, they coomme to the ſicke perſon, commaundinge al to departe owte of that place, excepte one or twoo, whom it ſhall pleaſe the ſicke man to appoynt. This doone, they goo about hym three or foure tymes, greatly deforminge theyr faces, lyppes, and noſethrils with ſundry fylthy gieſtures: blowynge, breathinge, and ſuckyng the forheade, temples, and necke of the pacient, wherby (they ſaye) they drawe the euyll ayer from hym, and ſucke the diſeaſe owt of his veynes. Then rubbinge hym about the ſhoulders, thyghes, and legges, and drawynge downe theyr handes cloſe by his feete, holdinge them yet faſte togyther, they runne to the dore beinge open, where they vncloſe and ſhake theyr handes, affirminge that they haue dryuen away the diſeaſe, and that the pacient ſhall ſhortely bee perfectly reſtored to health. After this, commynge behynde hym, he conueygheth the piece of fleſhe owte of his owne mouth like a iuggeler, and ſheweth it to the ſicke man, ſayinge, behoulde what you haue eaten to muche: you ſhall nowe bee hole, bycauſe I haue taken this from you. But if he intende yet further to deceaue the pacient, he perſuadeth hym that his *Zemes* is angry, eyther bycauſe he hath not buylded hym a chapell, or not honored hym religiouſly, or not dedicated vnto him a groue or garden. And if it ſoo chaunce that the ſicke perſon dye, his kinſfolkes by wytchecrafte enforce the deade to confeſſe whether he dyed by naturall deſtenye, or by the neglygence of the *Boitius*, in that he had not faſted as he ſhulde haue doone, or not myniſtred a conuenient medicine for the diſeaſe. Soo that yf this phiſitian bee founde fautie, they take reuenge of hym. Of the ſtones or bones which theſe *Boitii* carye in theyr mouthes, yf the women can coome by them, they keepe them religiouſly beleauinge them to bee greatly effectuall to helpe women whiche trauayle with chylde: And therfore honoure them as they doo theyr *Zemes*. For dyuers of th[e]inhabitantes, honour *Zemes* of dyuers faſſhions. Sume make theim of woodde, as they were admonyſhed by certeyne viſions apperinge vnto them in the wooddes. Others, whiche haue receaued anſwere of them amonge the rockes, make them of ſtone and marble. Sum they make of rootes to the ſimilitude of ſuche as appeare to them when they are gathering the rootes cauled *Ages*, wherof they make theyr breade, as we haue ſayde before. Theſe *Zemes*, they beleue to ſend plentie and frutefulnes of thoſe rootes, as the antiquitie beleued ſuche fayries or ſpirites as they cauled *Dryades*, *Hamadryades*, *Satyros*, *Panes*, and *Nereides*, to haue the cure and prouidence of the ſea, wooddes, and ſprynges and fountaynes, aſſigninge to euery thynge, theyr peculier goddes. Euen ſoo doo th[e]inhabitantes of this Ilande attribute a *Zemes* to euery thynge, ſuppoſinge the ſame to gyue eare to theyr inuocations. Wherfore, as often as the kynges aſke counſaile of their *Zemes* as concerning their warres, increaſe of fruites or ſcarſnes, or health and ſickenes, they enter into the houſe dedicate to theyr *Zemes*, where, ſnuffinge vp into theyr noſethryls the pouder of the herbe cauled *Cohobba* (wherwith the *Boitii* are dryuen into a furye) they ſay that immediatly they ſee the houſes turne topſy turuy, and men to walke with theyr heeles vpwarde: of ſuche force is this pouder vtterly to take away all ſenſe. As ſoone as this maddenes ceaſeth, he embraſeth his knees with his armes, holdynge downe his heade. And when he hath remayned thus a whyle aſtonyſſhed, he lyfteth vp his heade as one that came newe owt of ſleepe: And thus loking vp towarde heauen, Fyrſt he fumbeleth certeyne confounded woordes with hym ſelfe. Then certeyne of the nobilitie or chiefe gentelmen that are about him (for none of the common people are admytted to theſe myſteries) with lowde voyces gyue tokens of reioyſing that he is returned to them from the ſpeache of the *Zemes*, demaundynge of hym what he hathe ſeene. Then hee openinge his

Phantasies proceadynge of feare.

Al is not good that is owlde

Syngynge and playinge

Preestes and diuines.

Phisitians.

Ignorance is noryshed with superstition.

Fastynge and outward clenlynes.

A pouder of maruelous effecte.

Iuggelynge.

A strange maner of curing

46

Angery gods

They make the deade to speake.

Diuers Idols of sundry shape.

Fayries or spirites of the gentyles.

Peculier goddes.

They aske consaile of Idols

The pouder of the herbe Cohobba.

Secreate misteries.

Reuelations.

The spirite of Apollo.
The Sibilles

I haue harde the lyke of other in Inglande.

Hungery and lecherous gods.

Children with two crownes

47

Wanderinge Images.

Mediatours.

A woman zemes of great poure.

Fyue dayes faſtinge.

A maruelous illusion of the deuyll.
The deuyll sumtyme telleth truth.

The Idols abolyshed.

mouthe, doateth that the *Zemes* ſpake to hym duryng the tyme of his traunce: declaring that he had reuelations eyther concerninge victorye or deſtruction: famyne or plentie: health or ſyckenes, or what ſoo euer happeneth fyrſt on his toonge. Nowe (moſte noble Prince) what neede you hereafter to marueyle of the ſpirite of *Apollo* ſoo ſhakynge his Sibylles with extreme furie? Yowe had thowght that the ſuperſtitious antiquitie hadde peryſhed. But nowe wheras I haue declared thus much of the *Zemes* in generall, I thowght it not good to lette paſſe what is ſayde of them in particuler. They ſaye therefore, that a certeyne kynge cauled *Guamaretus*, had a *Zemes* whoſe name was *Corochotum*: who (they ſay) was often tymes woonte to deſcende from the hygheſte place of the houſe where *Guamaretus* kepte hym faſte bounde. They affirme, that the cauſe of this his breakynge of his bandes and departure, was eyther to hyde hym ſelfe, or to goo ſeeke for meate, or els for the acte of generation: And that ſumtyſmes beinge offended, that the kynge *Guamaretus* had byn negligent and ſlacke in honouringe hym, he was woont to lye hyd for certeyne dayes. They ſay alſo that in the kynges vylage there are ſumtyme chyldren borne hauing twoo crownes which they ſuppoſe to bee the children of *Corochotum* the *Zemes*. They ſayne lykewyſe, that *Guamaretus* beinge ouercome of his enemies in the battayle, and his vylage with the palaice conſumed with fyer, *Corochotus* brake his bandes and was afterwarde founde a furlonge of, ſafe and withowte hurte. He hath alſo an other *Zemes* cauled *Epileguanita*, made of woodde, in ſhape lyke a foure footed beaſte: who alſo is ſayde, often tymes to haue gonne from the place where he is honoured, into the wooddes. As ſoone as they perceaue him to bee gonne, a great multitude of them gather togyther to ſeeke hym with deuoute prayers: And when they haue fownde hym, brynge hym home religiouſly on theyr ſhulders to the chapell dedicated vnto hym. But they coomplayne that ſence the commynge of the Chriſtian men into the Ilande, he fledde for all togyther, and coulde neuer ſence bee founde, wherby they diuined the deſtruction of theyr countrey. They honoured an other *Zemes* in the lykenes of a woman, on whom wayted twoo other lyke men, as they were miniſters to her. One of theſe, executed th[e]office of a mediatour to the other *Zemes* which are vnder the power and commaundement of this woman, to rayſe wyndes, cloudes, and rayne. The other is alſo at her commaundemente a meſſenger to the other *Zemes* whiche are ioyned with her in gouernaunce, to gather togyther the waters whiche faule from the hygh hylles to the valleys, that beinge looſed, they may with force burſt owte into greate fluddes and ouerflowe the countrey if the people doo not gyue due honoure to her Image. There remayneth yet one thynge woorthy to bee noted, wherwith we wyll make an ende of this booke. It is a thynge well knowen, and yet freſſhe in memory amonge the inhabitantes of the Ilande, that there was ſumetyme twoo kynges (of the which one was the father of *Guarionexius* of whom we made mention before) which were woont to abſteyne fyue dayes togyther continually from meate and drinke, to knowe ſumwhat of theyr *Zemes* of thynges to coome: And that for this faſtynge beinge acceptable to theyr *Zemes*, they receaued anſwere of them, that within fewe yeares, there ſhuld coome to the Ilande a nation of men couered with apparell, which ſhulde deſtroye al the cuſtomes and cerymonyes of the Iland, and eyther ſley all theyr chyldren, or brynge them into ſeruitude. The common ſort of the people, vnderſtoode this oracle to bee mente of the Canibales. And therefore when they had any knowleage of theyr commyng, they euer fledde, and were fully determyned neuer more [to] aduenture the battayle with them. But when they ſawe that the Spanyardes had entered into the Ilande, conſultinge amonge them ſelues of the matter, they concluded that this was the nation which was ment by th[e]oracle. Wherin, theyr opinion deceaued them not. For they are nowe all ſubiecte to the Chriſtians, all ſuche beinge ſlayne as ſtoobernely reſiſted. Nor yet remayneth there anye memory of theyr *Zemes*: for they are al brought into Spayne, that we myght bee certified of theyr illuſions of euyl ſpirites and Idoles, the which yowe yowre ſelfe (moſt noble Prince) haue ſeene and felte when I was preſente with yowe. I let paſſe many thynges bycauſe yow put me in remembrance that to morowe yowe take yowre iorney towarde yowre countrey, to brynge home the queene yowre aunte, whom yowe accoompanyed hether at the commaundemente of kynge Frederyke yowre vncle. Wherfore I byd yowe farewel for this tyme, deſyrynge yowe to remember yowre *Martyr*, whome yowe haue compelled in the name of the kynge yowre vncle, to gather theſe fewe thynges owte of a large feelde of hyſtoryes.

¶ THE TENTH AND LASTE BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE,

as a concluſion of the former bookes:

Wrytten to Inacus Iopez Mendocius, *countie of* Tendilla, *and viceroye of* Granata.

AT the fyrſt begynnynge and newe attempte, when *Colonus* had taken vppon hym th[e]enterpryſe to ſearch the Ocean ſea, I was erneſtly moued and requyred by the letters of certeyne of my frendes and noble men of Rome to wryte ſuche thynges as ſhoulde happen. For they whyſpered with greate admiracion, that where as there were many newe landes founde, and nations which liued naked and after the lawe of nature, they coulde here noo certentie therof, beinge greately deſyrous of the fame. In this meane tyme had fortune ouerthrowne *Aſcanius* (his brother Lodouike beinge caſt owt of Mylayne by the frenchmen) whoſe autoritie wold not ſuffer me to bee idle, but euer to haue my pen in hande. To hym I wryte the twoo fyrſt bookes of this decade, beſyde many other of my hyd commentaries whiche yowe ſhall ſee ſhortely. Fortune dyd noo leſſe withdrawe my mynde frome wrytynge, then diſturbe *Aſcanius* from power. As he was toſſed with contrary ſtormes and ceaſed to perſuade me, euen ſoo ſlacked my feruentnes to enquyre any further, vntyl the yeare of Chriſte. 1500. When the court remayned at *Granata* where yowe are viceroye: At which time Lodouike the Cardinall of Aragonie, neuie to kynge Frederike by his brothers ſyde (beinge at *Granata* with the queene *Parthenopea* the ſyſter of owre catholike kynge) browght me kynge Frederikes letters, wherby he exhorted me to fynyſhe the other bookes whiche folowed the twoo epyſtell bookes, which I wryte to *Aſcanius*. For they both acknowleaged that they hadde the copie of all that I wryte to cardinall *Aſcanius*. And albeit that euen then I was ſicke (as yowe knowe) yet tooke I the burden vppon me, and applyed my ſelfe to wrytynge. I haue therfore choſen theſe fewe thynges, owte of a greate heape of ſuche as ſeemed to me moſt woorthy to bee noted amonge the large wrytynges of the autoures and ſearchers of the ſame. Wherfore, foraſmuch as yowe haue endeuoured to wreſte owt of my handes the hole exemple of al my woorkes, to adde the ſame to the innumerable volumes of yowre librarie, I thowght it good nowe to make a breefe reherſall of thoſe thynges which were done from that yeare of a thowſande and fyue hundreth, euen vnto this yeare which is the tenth from that. For I entende to wryte more largelye of theſe thynges hereafter, if god graunte me lyfe. I hadde wrytten a hole booke by it ſelfe of the ſuperſtitions of the people of the Ilande, ſuppoſinge therwith to haue accomplyſhed the hole Decade conſiſtynge of tenne bookes. But I haue added this to the tenthe as a perpendiculer lyne, and as it were a backe guyde or rerewarde to the other: So that yowe may knytte the fyrſt tenthe, to the nynthe, and impute this to occupie the place of the tenthe to fyll vp the Decade. This order haue I appoynted, leſt I ſhulde bee compelled often times to wryte ouer the hole woorke, or ſende yowe the ſame defaced with blottes and interlynynge. But nowe let vs coome to owre purpoſe. The ſhippe maſters and maryners ranne ouer many coaſtes durynge theſe tenne yeares: But euer folowed ſuche as were fyrſte fownde by *Colonus*. For raſinge continually alonge by the tracte of *Paria*, which they beleue to bee parte of the firme lande or continent of eaſte India, ſume of theym chaunced vppon certeyne newe landes towarde the eaſte, and ſume towarde the weſte, in which they fownde bothe goulde and frankenſence. For they browght from thenſe many iewels and ouches of golde, and greate plentie of frankenſence, whiche they had of the people of thoſe countreys, partely for exchange of ſume of owre thynges, and partely by force, ouercommynge them by warre. Yet in ſume places, althowgh they bee naked, they ouercame owre men, and ſlewe hole armyes. For they are excedinge fierce, and vſe venemous arrowes, and longe ſtaues lyke iauelens, made harde at the ende with fyer. They fownde many beaſtes, both creepinge and foure footed, muche differinge from owres, variable and of ſundrye ſhapes innumerable: yet not hurtfull, excepte Lyons, Tygers, and Crocodiles. This I meane in ſundry Regions of that greate lande of *Paria*: but not in the Ilandes: Noo not ſoo much as one. For all the beaſtes of the Ilandes, are meeke and withowte hurte, except men which (as wee haue ſayde) are in many Ilandes deuourers of mans fleſſhe. There are alſo dyuers kyndes of foules. And in many places battes of ſuch bygnes, that they are equall with turtle doues. Theſe battes, haue often tymes aſſauted men in the nyght in theyr ſleepe, and ſoo bytten them with theyr venemous teethe, that they haue byn therby almoſte dryuen to madnes, in ſoo much that they haue byn compelled to flye from ſuch places, as from rauenous harpies. In an other place, where certeyne of them ſlepte in the nyght ſeaſon on the ſandes by the ſea ſyde, a monſter commynge owte of the ſea, came vppon one of them ſecreatly and caryed hym away by the myddeſte owte of the ſight of his felowes to whome he cryed in vayne for helpe vntyll the beaſte lepte into the ſea with her praye.

The Lawe of nature.

Milayne in the hands of the frenchmen

48

Epiſtel books

The hiſtorye folowing, conteyneth the actes of ten yeare

Paria, part of the firme land of East India

Golde and frankensence.

The fiercenes of the naked people.

Innumerable beastes vnlyke vnto owres.

Nothing hurtfull in the Ilandes.

Battes as bygge as turtle doues.

A man deuoured of a monster of the sea

The Spanyardes profer them selues to subdue the newe landes.

It was the kynges pleaſure that they ſhulde remayne in theſe landes, and buylde townes and fortreſſes. Where vnto they were ſoo wel wyllynge, that dyuers profered them ſelues to take vppon them the ſubduing of the lande, makyng great ſute to the kynge that they might bee appoynted therto. The coaſte of this tracte is exceadynge greate and large: and the Regions and landes therof extende maruelous farre: Soo that they affirme the continent of theſe Regions with the Ilandes abowte the ſame, to bee thryſe as bygge as al Europe, beſyde thoſe landes that the Portugales haue fownde ſouthwarde, whiche are alſo exceadynge large. Therfore doubtleſſe Spayne hathe deſerued greate prayſe in theſe owre dayes, in that it hath made knowen vnto us ſoo many thowſandes of *Antipodes* which leye hyd before and vnknowen to owre forefathers: And hath thereby mynyſtred ſo large matter to wryte of, to ſuche lerned wyttes as are deſyrous to ſette furthe knowleage to the commoditie of men: to whom I opened a way when I gathered theſe thynges rudely to gyther as yowe ſee: The which, neuertheleſſe I truſt yowe wyll take in good parte, aſwell for that I can not adourne my rudenes with better veſture, as alſo that I neuer tooke penne in hande to wryte lyke an hiſtoriographer, but only by epiſtels ſcribeled in haſte, to ſatiſfie theym, from whoſe commaundementes I myght not drawe backe my foote. But now I haue digreſſed enowghe. Let vs nowe therefore returne to *Hiſpaniola*. Owre men haue founde by experience, that the breade of the Iland is of ſmaule ſtrength to ſuch as haue byn vſed to owr breade made of wheate: And that theyr ſtren[g]thes were much decayed by vſynge of the ſame. Wherfore the king hath of late commaunded that wheate ſhulde bee ſowen there in diuers places and at ſundry tymes of the yeare. It groweth into holowe reedes, with fewe eares, but thoſe verye bygge and frutefull. They fynde the lyke ſoftenes or delicatenes to bee in herbes, which growe there to the height of corne. Neat or cattall, becoome of bygger ſtature and exceadynge fat, but theyr fleſſhe is more vnſauery, and theyr bones (as they ſay) eyther withowte marye, or the ſame to bee verye wateryſſhe. But of hogges and ſwyne, they affirme the contrarye, that they are more holſoome and of better taſte, by reaſon of certeyne wylde frutes whiche they eate, beinge of muche better nooryſhement then maſte. There is almoſt none other kynd of fleſſhe commonly ſoulde in the market. The multitude of hogges, are excedingly encreaſed, and becoome wylde as ſoone as they are owte of the ſwyneheardes keepynge. They haue ſuche plentie of beaſtes and foules, that they ſhall heareafter haue noo neede, to haue any brought from other places. Th[e]increaſe of all beaſtes, growe bygger then the broode they came of, by reaſon of the rankenes of the paſture, althowgh theyr feadynge bee only of graſſe, withowte eyther barley or other grayne. But wee haue ſayde enowgh of *Hiſpaniola*. They haue nowe fownde that *Cuba*, (which of longe tyme they thowght to haue byn firme lande for the greate length therof) is an Ilande. Yet is it noo maruell that th[e]inhabitantes them ſelues towlde owre men when they ſearched the length therof, that it was withowte ende. For this nacion being naked and contente with a lyttle, and with the limittes of theyr owne contrey, is not greatly curyous to know what theyr neyghbours doo, or the largenes of theyr dominion. Nor yet knewe they if there were any other thinge vnder heauen, beſyde that whiche they walked on with theyr feete. *Cuba*, is frome the Eaſte into the Weſte, muche longer then *Hiſpaniola*: And in breadthe from the Northe to the Southe, much leſſe then they ſuppoſed at the fyrſt: for it is very narowe in reſpecte to the length: And is for the moſte parte, very frutefull and pleaſaunt, Eaſtwarde not farre from *Hiſpaniola*, there lyethe an Ilande, leſſe then *Hiſpaniola* more then by the halfe, which owre men cauled *Sancti Iohannis*, beinge in maner ſquare. In this they founde excedynge ryche golde mynes. But beinge nowe occupied in the golde mynes of *Hiſpaniola*, they haue not yet ſent labourers into that Iland. But the plentie and reuenewe of golde of al other Regions, gyue place to *Hiſpaniola*, where they gyue theim ſelues in maner to none other thynge then to gather golde, of which woorke this order is appoynted. To euery ſuch wyttie and ſkylfull man as is put in truſte to bee a ſuruoier or ouerſeer of theſe woorkes, there is aſſigned one or more kynges of the Ilande with theyr ſubiectes. Theſe kynges accordyng to theyr league, coome with theyr people at certeyne tymes of the yeare, and reſorte euery of them to the golde myne to the which he is aſſigned: where they haue all maner of dygginge or myninge tooles deliuered them: And euery kynge with his men, haue a certeyne rewarde alowed them for theyr labour. For when they departe from the mynes to ſowynge of corne, and other tyllage (wherunto they are addict at certeyne other tymes, leaſte theyr foode ſhulde fayle them) they receaue for theyr laboure, one a ierken, or a dublet, an other a ſherte, an other a cloke or a cappe. For they nowe take pleaſure in theſe thynges, and goo no more naked as they were wont too doo. And thus they vſe the helpe and laboure of the inhabitantes both for the tyllage of theyr ground, and in theyr gold mines as thowghe they were theyr ſeruauntes or bondemen. They beare this yoke of ſeruitude with an euyll wyll: but yet they beare it. They caule theſe hyred labourers, *Anaborias*. Yet the kynge doth not ſuffer that they ſhulde bee vſed as bondemen: And onely at his pleaſure they are ſette at libertie or appoynted to woorke. At ſuche tyme as they are cauled together of theyr kynges to woorke (as ſouldiers or pioners are aſſembled of theyr centurians) many of them ſtele away to the mountaynes and wooddes, where they lye lurkynge, beinge content for that tyme to lyue with wyld frutes, rather then to take the paynes to laboure. They are docible and apte to lerne, and haue nowe vtterly forgotten theyr owlde ſuperſticions. They beleue godly, and beare wel in memory ſuche thynges as they haue lerned of owre faith. Theyr kynges children are brought vp with the chiefeſt of owre

The description of Cuba.

The Iland of Burichema or S. Iohannis.

Golde mynes

The order of woorkynge in the golde mynes.

The kynges brynge theyr subiectes to woorke in the golde mynes.

Tyllage.

They abhorre laboure

They are docible.

The kynges chyldren.

Note the largenes of the newe landes.

Commendacion of the Spaniardes.

49

Antipodes.

The autours excusse.

Hispaniola.

The nature of the place, altereth the formes and qualities of thynges.

Wheate.

Herbes.

Catayle.

Hogges.

Plentie of beastes and foule.

Cuba, is an Ilande.

50

men, and are inſtructed in letters and good maners. When they are growen to mans age, they ſende them home to theyr countreys to bee exemple to other, and eſpecially to gouerne the people if theyr fathers bee dead that they maye the better ſet foorthe the Chriſtian Religion, and keepe theyr ſubiectes in loue and obedience. By reaſon whereof, they coome nowe by fayre meanes and gentell perſuaſions to the mynes which lye in twoo Regions of the Ilande aboute thirtie myles diſtante frome the citie of *Dominica*: wherof the one is cauled *Sancti Chriſtophori*: And the other being diſtante aboute foure ſcore and tenne myles, is cauled *Cibaua*, not farre from the cheefe hauen cauled *Portus Regalis*. Theſe regions are very large: In the which in many places here and there, are fownd ſumtyme euen in the vpper cruſt of the earth and ſumtyme amonge the ſtones, certeyne rounde pieces or plates of golde, ſumtyme of ſmaule quantitie, and in ſum places of great weyght: In ſo muche that there hath byn found rounde pieces of three hundreth pounde weyght, and one of three thouſande, three hundreth and tenne pounde weyght: The whiche (as yowe harde) was ſente hole to the kynge in that ſhyppe in the which the gouernour *Boadilla* was comming home into Spayne, the ſhyppe with all the men beinge drowned by the way, by reaſon it was ouer laden with the weight of golde and multytude of men. Albeit, there were moo then a thoweſande perſons whiche ſawe and handeled the piece of golde. And wheras here I ſpeake of a pounde, I doo not meane the common pounde, but the ſumme of the ducate of golde, with the coyne cauled *Triens*, which is the thyrde parte of a pounde, whiche they caule *Peſus*. The ſum of the weyght hereof, the Spanyardes caule *Caſtellanum Aureum*. Al the golde that is dygged in the mountaynes of *Cibaua* and Porte Regale, is caryed to the towre of Conception, where ſhoppes with al thynges apperteyninge are redy furnyſſhed to fyne it, melte it, and caſte it into wedges. That doone, they take the kynges portion therof, whiche is the fyfte parte, and ſoo reſtore to euery man his owne whiche he gotte with his labour. But the golde whiche is fownde in ſaynt Chriſtophers myne and the Region there aboute, is caryed to the ſhoppes whiche are in the vylage cauled *Bonauentura*. In theſe twoo ſhoppes, is molten yerely, aboue three hundreth thouſand pounde weight of golde. If any man bee knowen deceatefully to keepe backe any portion of golde, whereof he hathe not made the kynges officers pryuie, he forfiteth the ſame for a fyne. There chaunce amonge them often tymes many contentions and controuerſies, the whiche onleſſe the magiſtrates of the Ilande doo fynyſſhe, the caſe is remoued by appellation to the hyghe counſayle of the courte, from whoſe ſentence it is not lawfull to appele in all the dominions of Caſtyle. But lette vs nowe returne to the newe landes frome whenſe we haue digreſſed. They are innumerable, dyuers, and exceadynge fortunate. Wherfore the Spanyardes in theſe owre dayes, and theyr noble enterpryſes, doo not gyue place eyther to the factes of *Saturnus*, or *Hercules*, or any other of the ancient princes of famous memorie which were canonized amonge the goddes cauled *Heroes* for theyr ſearchinge of newe landes and regions, and bringinge the ſame to better culture and ciuilitie. Oh God: howe large and farre ſhal owre poſteritie ſee the Chriſtian Religion extended? Howe large a campe haue they nowe to wander in, whiche by the trewe nobilitie that is in theym, or mooued by vertue, wyll attempte eyther to deſerue lyke prayſe amonge men, or reputacion of well doinge before god. What I conceaue in my mynde of theſe thynges, I am not able to expreſſe with penne or tonge. I wyll nowe therfore ſoo make an ende of this perpendiculer concluſion of the hole Decade, as myndinge hereafter to ſearche and gather euery thynge particulerlye, that I maye at further leaſure wryte the ſame more at large. For *Colonus* the Admiral with foure ſhyppes, and a hundreth threeſcore and tenne men appoynted by the kynge, diſcouered in the yeare of Chriſte. 1502. the lande ouer ageynſte the weſte corner of *Cuba*, diſtant from the ſame aboute a hundreth and thirtie leaques: In the myddeſt of which tracte, lyeth an Ilande cauled *Guanaſſa*. From henſe he directed his vyage backewarde towarde the Eaſte by the ſhore of that coaſt, ſuppoſinge that he ſhulde haue founde the coaſtes of *Paria*: but it chaunced otherwyſe. It is ſayd alſo that *Vincentius Agnes* (of whom we haue ſpoken before) and one *Iohannes Diaz* (with dyuers other of whoſe vyages I haue as yet no certeyne knowleage) haue ouer runne thoſe coaſtes. But if God graunt me life, I truſt to know the truthe hereof and to aduertiſe yowe of the ſame. Thus fare ye well.

The two chiefe golde mynes of hispaniola.

Golde founde in the vpper part of the earth.

A piece of golde weighinge three thousande three hundreth and ten pounds.

A coastly ship wrake.

Pesus.

The fynynge and distribution of golde.

Three hundreth thousand weyght of gold molten yerely in hispaniola.

Controuerses

The newe landes.

The Spanyardes noble enterpryses. are not inferiour to the actes of Hercules or Saturnus. etc.

Enlarging of the Christian Religion.

The originall of trewe nobilitie.

51

The Ilande of Guanassa

The vyage of Iohannes Diaz.

The ſeconde Decade foloweth.

¶ THE FYRST BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE, TO *LEO* BYSSHOP OF ROME, THE TENTHE OF THAT NAME,

Of the ſuppoſed Continent or firme lande.

West Antipodes.

ENSE the tyme that *Galeatius Butrigarius* of Bononie, and *Iohannes Curſius* of Florence (moſte holye father) came to the catholyke kynge of Spayne, the one, of yowre holynes ambaſage, and th[e]other for th[e]affaires of his common welth, I was euer for the moſte parte in theyr coompanie, and for theyr vertues and wyſedoome, had theym in greate reuerence. And wheras they were greatly gyuen to ſtudye, and continuall reuoluinge of dyuers autours, they chaunced vppon certeyne bookes negligently let ſlyppe owte of my handes, entreatinge of the large landes and Regions hetherto lyinge hyd, and almoſt weſt *Antipodes*, fownde of late by the Spanyardes. Yet beinge allured and delited with the newenes and ſtrangenes of the matter althowgh rudely adourned, they commended the ſame: Therwith erneſtely deſyringe me in theyr owne names, and requyring me in the name of yowr holynes, to adde here vnto all ſuche thynges as were fownde after that tyme, and to gyue them a copie thereof to ſende to yowre holynes, that yowe myght therby vnderſtande, bothe howe greate commoditie is chaunced to the progenye of mankynde, as alſo increaſe of the militante congregation in theſe owre dayes, by the fortunate enterpryſes of the kynges of Spayne. For lyke as raſed or vnpaynted tables, are apte to receaue what formes ſoo euer are fyrſt drawen theron by the hande of the paynter, euen ſoo theſe naked and ſimple people, doo ſoone receaue the cuſtomes of owre Religion, and by conuerſation with owre men, ſhake of theyr fierce and natiue barbarouſnes. I haue thowght it good therfore to ſatiſfie the requeſt of theſe wyſe men, eſpecially vſinge th[e]autoritie of yowre name, wherunto not to haue obeyed, I ſhulde eſteeme my ſelfe to haue commytted a heynous offence. Wherefore I wyl nowe brefely reherſe in order, what hyd coaſtes the Spanyardes ouerranne, who were the autours therof, where they reſted, what further hope they browght, and fynallye what great thynges thoſe tractes of landes doo promeſſe in tyme to coome. In the declaration of my decade of the Ocean, which is nowe printed and diſperſed throwghowte Chriſtendome vnwares to me, I deſcribed howe *Chriſtophorus Colonus* fownde thoſe Ilandes wherof we haue ſpoken, and that turnynge from thenſe towarde the lefte hande ſouthwarde, he chaunced into greate regions of landes, and large ſeas, diſtant from the Equinoctial lyne, onely from fyue degrees to tenne: where he founde brode ryuers and exceadinge hygh mountaynes couered with ſnowe and harde by the ſea bankes, where were many commodious and quyet hauens. But *Colonus* being now departed owte of this lyfe, the kynge beganne to take care, howe thoſe landes myght be inhabited with Chriſtian men to th[e]increaſe of owre fayth: Where vppon he gaue licence by his letters patentes to al ſuch as wolde take the matter in hand, and eſpecially to twoo, wherof *Diego Nicueſa* was one, and the other was *Alphonſus Fogeda*. Wherfore about the Ides of December, *Alphonſus* departinge fyrſt with three hundreth ſouldiers from the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola* (in the which wee ſayde the Spanyardes had builded a citie, and planted theyr habitacion) and ſaylynge in maner full ſouthe, he came to one of the hauens founde before whiche *Colonus* named *Portus Carthaginis*, bothe bycauſe of the Ilande ſtandynge ageynſte the courſe of the ſtreame, and alſo that by reaſon of the largenes of the place and bendynge ſydes, it is muche lyke to the hauen of Spaine cauled *Carthago*. Th[e]inhabitantes caule the Ilande *Codego*, as the Spanyardes caule the Ilande of theyr hauen, *Scombria*. This Region is cauled of the inhabitantes *Caramairi*: In the which they affirme bothe the men and women to bee of goodly ſtature, but naked. The men haue theyr heare cutte rownde by theyr eares, but the women were it longe. Bothe the men and women are very good archers. Owre men fownde certen trees in this prouince, which bore greate plentie of ſweete apples, but hurteful, for they turne into wormes when they are eaten. Eſpecially the ſhadowe of the tree, is contagious,

The increase of the Christian congregation.

Christophorus Colonus.
Of landes diſtante from the Equinoctiall from fyue degrees to ten.
The death of Colonus.
A generall lycence.

The nauigation of Alphonsus Fogeda.

52

Portus Carthaginis.

The Region of Caramairi.
People of goodly stature

Apples whiche turne into woormes.

for ſuche as ſleepe vnder it any tyme, haue theyr headdes ſwolne and loſe theyr ſight. But if they ſleepe but a whyle, theyr ſyght commeth ageyne after a fewe dayes. This porte is dyſtant foure hundreth fyftie and ſyxe myles from that parte of *Hiſpaniola* which the Spanyardes caule *Beata*, in the which alſo they furnyſſhe them ſelues when they prepare anye vyage to ſeeke other newe landes. When *Fogeda* had entered into the hauen, he inuaded, ſlewe, and ſpoyled the people, whome he founde naked and ſcattered. For they were gyuen hym for a praye, by the kynges letters patentes bycauſe they hadde bin before tyme cruel ageynſt the Chriſtians, and coulde neuer bee allured to permytte them quietly to coome within theyr dominions. Here they founde gold, but in no greate quantitie, nor yet that pure. They make of it, certeyne breſt plates and brooches, which they weare for coomelynes. But *Fogeda* not content with theſe ſpoyles, vſinge certeyne captiues whiche he had taken before, for guydes, entered into a vyllage twelue myles diſtante frome the ſea ſyde further into the lande, into the whiche they were fledde whom he fyrſt inuaded. Here he founde a naked people, but apte to warre. For they were armed with targettes, ſhieldes, longe ſwoordes made of wood, and bowes with arrowes typte with bone, or hardened with fyer. As ſoone as they had eſpyed owre men, they with their geſtes whom they had receaued, aſſayled them with deſperate myndes, beinge therto more erneſtly prouoked, beholding the calamitie of theſe whiche fledde vnto theym, by the violence doone to theyr women and chyldren, in the ſpoyle and ſlawghter. In this conflicte owre men had the ouerthrowe: In the which, one *Iohannes de Lacoſſa* (beinge in autoritie nexte vnto *Fogeda* the capitayne, and alſo the fyrſte that gathered golde in the ſandes of *Vraba*) was ſlayne with fyftie ſouldiers. For theſe people infecte theyr arrowes with the deadly poyſon of a certeyne herbe. The other with theyr capitayne *Fogeda* beinge diſcomfited, fledde to the ſhyppes. Whyle they remayned thus in the hauen of *Carthago* ſorowfull and penſyue for the loſſe of their companions, the other capitayne *Diego Nicueſa*, (whom they lefte in *Hiſpaniola*, preparyng hym ſelfe towarde the vyage in the hauen *Beata*) came to theim with fyue ſhippes and ſeuen hundrethe foure ſcore and fyfteene menne. For the greater number of ſouldyers, folowed *Nicueſa*, both bycauſe free libertie was gyuen them to chooſe which of the capytaynes them lyſt, and alſo that by reaſon of his age, he was of greater autoritie: But eſpecially bycauſe the rumoure was that *Beragua* beinge by the kynges commiſſion appoynted to *Nicueſa*, was rycher in golde then *Vraba* aſſigned to *Alphonſus Fogeda*. Therfore, at the arryuall of *Nicueſa*, they conſulted what was beſte to bee doone: And determyned fyrſte to reuenge the deathe of their felowes. Where vppon, ſettynge theyr battayle in arraye, they marched in the nyght towarde them whiche ſlewe *Coſſa* with his coompanyons. Thus ſtealynge on them vnwares in the laſt watche of the nyght, and encoompaſinge the vyllage where they laye, conſiſtynge of a hundreth howſes and more, hauynge alſo in it thryſe as many of theyr neyghbours as of them ſelues, they ſet it on fyer, with diligent watche that none myght eſcape. And thus in ſhorte tyme they browght theym and theyr howſes to aſſhes, and made them pay the raunſome of bludde with bludde. For of a greate multitude of men and women, they ſpared onely fyxe chyldren, al other being deſtroyed with fyer or ſword except fewe which eſcaped priuilye. They lerned by the reſerued chyldren, that *Coſſa* and his felowes were cutte in pieces and eaten of them that ſlewe them. By reaſon wherof, they ſuppoſe that theſe people of *Caramairi* tooke theyr originall of the *Caribes* otherwyſe cauled *Canibales*. Here they founde ſume golde amonge the aſſhes. For the hunger of golde, dyd noo leſſe encorage owr men to aduenture theſe perels and labours then dyd the poſſeſſynge of the landes. Theſe thynges thus fynyſſhed, and the death of *Coſſa* and his felowes reuenged, they returned to the hauen. After this, *Fogeda* whiche came fyrſt, fyrſt lykewyſe departinge with his army to ſeeke *Vraba*, commytted to his gouernaunce, ſayled by an Ilande cauled *Fortis*, lyinge in the mydwaye betwene *Vraba* and the hauen of *Carthago*. In to the which deſcendinge, he fownde it to bee an Ilande of the Canybales, brynginge with hym frome thenſe two men and ſeuen women: for the reſidue eſcaped. Here he fownde in the cotages of them that fledde, a hundrethe foure ſcore and tenne drammes of golde, caſte and wrought in dyuers formes. Saylynge forwarde from henſe, he came to the Eaſte coaſtes of *Vraba*, whiche th[e]inhabitantes caule *Caribana*, from whenſe the Caribes or Canibales of the Ilandes are ſayde to haue theyr name and originall. Here he beganne to buylde a fortreſſe, and a vyllage nere vnto the ſame, therein intendynge to place theyr fyrſt habitacion. Shortly after, beinge inſtructed by certeyne captyues that there was aboute twelue myles further within the lande, a certeyne vyllage cauled *Tirufi*, hauinge in it a ryche golde myne, he determyned to deſtroye the vylage. To the which when he came, he fownde th[e]inhabitantes redye to defende theyr ryght: And that ſoo ſtoutly, that encounteryng with them, he was repulſed with ſhame and domage. For theſe people alſo, vſe bowes and venemous arrowes. Within a fewe dayes after, beinge enforſed for lacke of vytayles to inuade an other vyllage, he hym ſelfe was ſtryken in the thyghe with an arrowe. Sume of his felowes ſay, that he was thus wounded of one of th[e]inhabytantes whoſe wyfe he had ledde awaye captiue before. They ſay alſo that he had firſt frendly comoned with *Fogeda* for redemynge of his wyfe, and had appoynted a day to brynge a portion of golde for her raunſome: And that he came at the daye aſſigned, not laden with golde, but armed with bowes and arrowes, with eyght other confetherate with hym, whiche had bin before partetakers of the iniuries doone to them firſt at the hauen of *Carthago*, and afterward at the burnyng of the vyllage. In

A tree whose shadowe is hurtfull.

Fogeda his autoritie confirmed by the kynges letters patents.

Warlyke people.

The Spanyardes haue the ouerthrowe.

Arrowes infected with poyson.

The nauigation of Diego Nicuesa.

The regions of Vraba and Beragua.

The Spanyardes reuenge the death of theyr companyons.

A greate slawghter.

Canibales.

The hunger of golde.

53

The Ilande Fortis

Wrought gold

Caribana.

A gold myne.

The Spanyardes are repulsed.

Fogeda is wounded.

Ransome.

reuenge wherof they had deſperatly conſecrated them ſelues to death. But the matter beinge knowen, the captayne of this conſpiracie was ſlayne of *Fogeda* his coompanyons, and his wyfe deteyned in captiuitie. *Fogeda* alſo throwgh the malicioufnes of the veneme, conſumed and was dryed vp by lyttle and lyttle. Whyle theſe thynges chaunced thus, they eſpyed *Nicueſa* the other capitayne to whom *Beragua* the region of the weſte ſyde of *Vraba*, was aſſigned to inhabite. He gaue wynde to his ſayles to take his vyage towarde *Beragua*, the day after that *Fogeda* departed owte of the hauen of *Carthago*. He with his army which he browght with hym, coaſted euer alonge by the ſhore vntyll he came to the goulfe *Coiba*, whoſe kynges name is *Careta*. Here he founde theyr language to bee in maner nothynge lyke vnto that of *Hiſpaniola* or of the hauen of *Carthago*: wherby he perceaued that in this tracte there are many languages differinge from theyr owne bortherers. *Nicueſa* departinge frome *Coiba*, wente to the prouince or Lieuetenauntſhippe of *Fogeda* his companion. Within a fewe dayes after he hym ſelfe enteringe into one of thoſe marchaunt ſhippes whiche the Spanyardes caule *Carauelas*, commaunded that the bygger veſſels, ſhulde folowe farre behynde. He tooke with hym twoo ſmaule ſhyppes commenly cauled bergantines or brygantynes. I haue thowght it good in all the diſcourſe of theſe bookes, to vſe the common names of thinges, bicauſe I had rather bee playne then curious: eſpecially foraſmuche as there doo dayly aryſe manye newe thynges vnknowen to the antiquitie, wherof they haue lefte noo trewe names. After the departure of *Nicueſa*, there came a ſhyppe from *Hiſpaniola* to *Fogeda*, the capitayne wherof, was one *Barnardino de Calauera*, who had ſtoulne the ſame from *Hiſpaniola* with three ſcore men, withowte leaue or aduice of the Admirall and the other gouernours. With the vytayles whiche this ſhippe browght they refreſſhed theym ſelues and ſumewhat recouered theyr ſtrengthes muche weakened for lacke of meate, *Fogeda* his companyons whyſpered and muttered ageynſte hym daylye more and more, that he fedde them furthe with vayne hope. For he had towlde them that he left *Anciſus* in *Hiſpaniola* (whom he choſe by the kynges commiſſion to bee a Iudge in cauſes, bycauſe he was lerned in the lawe) to coome ſhortly after him with a ſhippe laden with vytayles: And that he marueyled that he was not coome many dayes ſenſe. And herein he ſaid nothinge but trewth. For when he departed, he lefte *Anciſus* halfe redy to folowe hym. But his felowes ſuppoſinge that all that he ſayde of *Anciſus* had byn fayned, ſume of them determyned priuilie to ſteale away the twoo brigantynes frome *Fogeda*, and to returne to *Hiſpaniola*. But *Fogeda* hauing knowleage hereof, preuented theyr diuiſe. For leauynge the cuſtodie of the fortreſſe with a certeyne noble gentelman cauled *Franciſco Pizarro*, he hym ſelfe thus wounded, with a fewe other in his companie, entered into the ſhyppe wherof we ſpake before, and ſayled directly to *Hiſpaniola*, both to heale the wound of his thygh if any remedy myght bee found, and alſo to knowe what was the cauſe of *Anciſus* taryinge: Leauing hope with his felowes (which were nowe browght from three hundreth to three ſcore, partly by famyne and partly by warre) that he wolde returne within the ſpace of. xv. dayes: preſcribyng alſo a condition to *Pizarro* and his companions, that it ſhulde not bee imputed to them for treaſon to departe from thenſe if he came not ageyne at the day appoynted with vytayles and a newe ſupply of men. Theſe. xv. dayes beinge nowe paſte, whereas they coulde yet heare nothynge of *Fogeda*, and were dayly more and more oppreſſed with ſharpe hunger, they entered into the twoo brigantynes which were lefte, and departed from that land. And as they were nowe ſaylynge on the mayne ſea towarde *Hiſpaniola*, a tempeſte ſoodeynly aryſynge, ſwalowed one of the brygantynes with all that were therein. Sum of theyr felowes affirme that they playnely ſawe a fyſhe of houge greatenes ſwymmyng abowte the brygantyne (for thoſe ſeas brynge furthe greate monſters) and that with a ſtroke of her tayle, ſhe broke the rudder of the ſhyppe in peeces: which faylynge, the brigantine beinge dryuen abowt by force of the tempeſt, was drowned not farre from the Ilande cauled *Fortis*, lyinge betwene the coaſtes of the hauen *Carthago* and *Vraba*. As they of the other brygantyne wolde haue landed in the Ilande, they were dryuen backe with the bowes and arrowes of the fierce barbarians. Proceadynge therfore on theyr vyage, they mette by chaunce with *Anciſus* betweene the hauen of Carthago, and the Region of *Cuchibacoa* in the mouthe of the ryuer whiche the Spanyardes cauled *Boium gatti*, that is, the houſe of the catte, bycauſe they ſawe a catte firſt in that place: and *Boium*, in the toonge of *Hiſpaniola*, is a houſe. *Anciſus* came wyth a ſhyppe laden with all thynges neceſſarye, bothe for meate and drynke, and apparell, bryngynge alſo with hym an other brigantine. This is he for whoſe comming the capitayne *Fogeda* looked for ſoo longe. He looſed anker from *Hiſpaniola* in the Ides of September: And the fourth day after his departure, he eſpyed certeyne hyghe mountaynes, the whiche for the abundance of ſnowe which lyeth continually in the toppes therof, the Spanyardes cauled *Serra Neuata*, when *Colonus* the fyrſt fynder of thoſe Regions paſſed by the ſame. The fyfte daye, he ſayled by *Os Draconis*. They whiche were in the brygantyne, towlde *Anciſus* that *Fogeda* was returned to *Hiſpaniola*. But *Anciſus* ſuppoſing that they had fayned that tale, commaunded them by th[e]authoritie of his commiſſion to turne backe ageyne. The brigantiners obeyed and folowed hym: yet made they humble ſute vnto hym that he woolde graunte them that with his fauour they myght eyther goo ageyne to *Hiſpaniola*, or that he hym ſelfe woolde brynge theim to *Nicueſa*: And that they woolde for his gentelnes declared towarde them in this behalfe, rewarde hym with twoo thouſande drammes of golde. For they were

Fogeda consumeth by force of the [veneme.]

Beragua and Vraba.

Nicuesa.

The goulfe Coiba.

Dyuers languages.

Bergantynes or brigantynes.

Barnardino de Calauera.

Ancisus.

54

Fogeda returneth to hispaniola.

Famyne

A brigantine drowned with the stroke of a fyshe.

The Ilande Fortis.

Ancisus.

The Region of Cuchibacoa.

Boium gatti.

Mountaynes couered with snowe.

Serra Neuata.

Os Draconis.

ryche in golde, but poore in breade. But *Anciſus* aſſented to neyther of theyr requeſtes: affirmynge that he myght by no meanes goo anye other way then to *Vraba* the prouince aſſigned to *Fogeda.* Where vppon, by theyr conduct, he tooke his vyage directly toward *Vraba.* But nowe let it not ſeme tedious to yowre holynes to heare of one thyng worthy to bee remembred, which chaunced to this Lieuetenaunt *Anciſus* as he came thether. For he alſo caſt anker in the coaſtes of the region of *Caramairi* whiche wee ſayde to bee famous by reaſon of the hauen of *Carthago*: and of the goodly ſtature, ſtrength, and beawty of both men and women beinge in the ſame. Here he ſent certeyne to goo alande on the ſhore, both to fetche freſſhe water, and alſo to repaire the ſhippe boate which was ſore brooſed. In this meane tyme a greate multitude of the people of the countrey armed after theyr maner, came aboute owre men as they were occupied abowte theyr buſynes, and ſtoode in a redynes to feight, for the ſpace of three dayes contynually: durynge whiche tyme, neyther durſt they ſet vppon owre men, nor owre men aſſayle them. Thus bothe parties keepynge theyr arraye, ſtoode ſtyl three hole dayes the one gaſynge on the other. Yet all this tyme owre men applyed theyr woorke, placinge the ſhippewrightes in the myddeſte of theyr armye. As they ſtoode thus amaſed, twoo of owre coompanye wente to fyll theyr water pottes at the mouthe of the ryuer nere vnto them both, where ſoodenly there came furthe ageynſte them a capitayne of the barbarians with ten armed men which incloſed them, and with terrible countenaunce bent theyr arrowes ageynſte them, but ſhotte theym not of. One of owre men fledde: but the other remayned, caulynge his felowe ageyne and rebukynge hym for his fearefulnes. Then he ſpake to the barbarians in their owne language which he had lerned beinge conuerſant with the captiues that were caryed from thenſe longe before. They marueylynge to here a ſtraunger ſpeake in their natiue tonge, put of theyr fiercenes and fell to frendly communication, demaundinge who were the capitaynes of that coompanie whiche were arryued in theyr lande. He anſwered that they were ſtrangers paſſyng by: And that he marueyled why they wold attempte to dryue them from theyr coaſtes and diſturbe theyr ſhyppes: arguinge theim of follye and crueltie, and further threatinge their ruine and deſtruction, except they woold vſe them ſelues more frendely towarde them. For hee aduertiſed them that there wolde ſhortly coome into theyr lande armed men, in nomber lyke to the ſandes of the ſea: And that to theyr vtter deſtruction, not only if they refyſted them not, but alſo excepte they receaued them and enterteyned them honorably. In the meane tyme *Anciſus* was enformed that his men were deteyned. Wherefore ſuſpectinge ſume deceate, he browght furth al his target men for feare of theyr venemous arrowes: And ſettinge them in battell arraye, he marched forwarde towarde them which ſteyed his men. But he which communed with the barbarians, gyuinge him a ſigne with his hande to procede noo further, he ſteyed. And cauling to hym the other, he knewe that all was ſafe. For the barbarians profered him peace, bycauſe they were not they whom they ſuſpected them to haue byn: meanynge by *Fogeda* and *Nicueſa*, who had ſpoyled the vyllage ſtandinge there by the ſea ſyde, and caryed away many captiues, and alſo burnte an other vyllage further within the lande. And therefore (as they ſayde) the cauſe of theyr comminge thether, was to reuenge thoſe iniuries, if by any meanes they coulde. Yet that they woolde not exercyſe theyr weapons ageynſte the innocente. For they ſayde it was vngodly to feyght ageynſt any, not beinge prouoked. Layinge a parte therefore theyr bowes and arrowes, they enterteyned owre men gentelly, and gaue them great plentie of ſalted fyſſhe and breade of theyr contrey: And fylled theyr veſſels with ſyder made of theyr contrey frutes and ſeedes, not inferiour to wyne in goodnes. Thus *Anciſus* hauinge entered into frendſhyp and made a league of peace with th[e]inhabitantes of *Caramairi* whiche were before ſore prouoked by other capitaynes, he lanched from that lande, and directed his courſe to *Vraba* by the Ilande *Fortis*, hauinge in his ſhippe a hundreth and fyftie freſſhe men whiche were ſubſtitute in the place of ſuche as were deade. Alſo twelue mares, and manye ſwine, and other beaſtes both males and females for increaſe. Lykewyſe, fyftie pieces of ordinaunce, with a greate multytude of targettes, ſwoordes, iauelyns, and ſuche other weapons for the warres. But all this with euyl ſpeede and in an euyll houre. For as they were euen nowe enteringe into the hauen, the gouernour of the ſhippe which ſatte at the helme, ſtroke the ſhyppe vppon the ſandes, where it was ſoo faſt encloſed, and beaten with the waues of the ſea, that it opened in the myddeſte, and al loſt that was therin. A thynge ſurely miſerable to beholde. For of all the vytayles that they had, they ſaued onely twelue barels of meale, with a fewe chieſes, and a lyttle byſket breade. For al the beaſtes were drowned: And they them ſelues ſcaped hardly and halfe naked by helpe of the brigantine and ſhip boate, caryeng with them only a fewe weapons. Thus they fell from one calamitie into an other, beinge nowe more carefull ſo rtheyr lyues then for golde. Yet beinge browght alyue and in health to that land which they ſoo greatly deſyred, they coulde doo noo leſſe then to prouide for the ſuſteynynge of theyr bodyes, bycauſe they coulde not lyue onely by ayer. And wheras theyr owne fayled, they muſt needes lyue by other mens. Yet amonge theſe ſoo many aduerſities, one good chaunce offered it ſelfe vnto them. For they founde, not farre from the ſea ſyde, a groue of date trees, amonge the which, and alſo amonge the reke or weedes of the maryſhes, they eſpyed a multitude of wylde bores, with whoſe fleſhe they fed them ſelues wel certeine dayes. Theſe they ſay to bee leſſe then owres: And with ſoo ſhorte tayles, that they thought they had byn cutte of. They dyffer alſo from owres in theyr feete: for theyr hynder feete are hole vndiuided, and alſo withowte any

Riche in gold and pore in breade.

The Region of Caramairi

Feare on both partes.

Ship wryghtes.

55

The vse of targettes agenst venemous arrowes

The barbarians haue respect to iustice

Salted fishe.

Wyne of fruites and seedes.

Vraba.

Artillerie.

Ancisus ship wracke.

Meale, cheeses, and bysket.

A groue of date trees.

Wylde bores.

56 houſe. But they affirme that they haue proued by experience theyr fleſſhe to bee of better taſte and more holſoome then owres. Durynge this tyme, they fedde alſo of dates and the rotes of younge date trees, which they eate likewyſe in Ciuile and *Granata* where they caule them *Palmitos*, of the leaues wherof they make bieſomes in Rome. Sumetymes alſo, they eate of the appels of that Region, whiche haue the taſte of prunes, and haue alſo ſtones in them, and are but lyttle and of redde coloure. I ſuppoſe them to bee of that kynde wherof I eate in the citie of *Alexandria* in Egypt in the moneth of Aprell: The trees wherof, the Iewes that dwel there, beinge lerned in the lawe of Moyſes, affirme to bee the Ceders of Libane, which beare owlde fruites and newe all the yeare as dothe the orange tree. Theſe apples are good to bee eaten, and haue a certeyne ſweetnes myxte with a gentell ſharpnes, as haue the frutes cauled *Sorbes*. Th[e]inhabitantes plant theſe trees in theyr orchyardes and garedens, and nooryſhe theym with greate diligence as wee doo cheries, peaches, and quynſes. This tree in leaues, heyght, and trunke, is verye lyke vnto the tree that beareth the frute cauled *Zizipha*, which the Apothecaries caule *Iuiuba*. But wheras now the wylde bores beganne to faile them, they were ageyne enforced to conſulte and prouyde for the tyme to coome. Where vppon with theyr hole army, they entered further into the land. The Canibales of this prouince, are moſte experte archers. *Anciſus* had in his coompany, a hundreth men. They mette by the way with only three men of th[e]inhabitantes, naked, and armed with bowes and venemous arrowes, who without al feare, aſſayled owr men fiercely, wounded manye, and ſlewe manye: And when they had emptied theyr quyuers, fledde as ſwyftely as the wynde: For (as we haue ſayde) they are excedynge ſwyfte of foote by reaſon of theyr looſe goinge frome theyr chyldes age They affirme that they lette ſlyppe no arrowe owte of theyr bowes in vayne. Owre men therfore returned the ſame waye that they came, much more infortunate then they were before and conſulted amonge them ſelues to leaue that lande: eſpecyally becauſe th[e]inhabitantes had ouerthrowne the fortreſſe which *Fogeda* buylded, and had burnte thirtie houſes of the vyllage, as soone as *Pizarrus* and his company lefte of *Fogeda*, had forſaken the lande. By this occaſion therefore, beinge dryuen to ſeeke further, they had intelligence that the weſte ſyde of that goulfe of *Vraba*, was more frutefull and better to inhabite. Wherfore, they ſent the one halfe of theyr men thither with the brigantine, and lefte the other nere to the ſea ſyde on the eaſte part. This goulfe, is. xxiiii. myles in bredth: And howe muche the further it entereth into the firme lande, it is ſoo muche the narower. Into the goulfe of *Vraba*, there faule many ryuers: but one (as they ſay) more fortunate then the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypte. This ryuer is cauled *Darien*, vppon the bankes whereof, beinge verye frutefull of trees and graſſe, they entended to playnte their newe colonie or habitacion. But th[e]inhabitantes maruelynge at the brygantine beinge bygger then theyr canoas, and ſpecially at the ſayles therof, fyrſt ſente away theyr chyldren and weakeſte ſorte of theyr people with theyr baggage and houſholde ſtuffe, and aſſembled all ſuche togyther bothe men and women, as were meete for the warres: Thus beinge armed with weapons and deſperate myndes, they ſtoode in a redynes to feight, and taryed the comminge of owre men vppon a lyttle hyl, as it were to take th[e]aduantage of the grounde. Owre men iudged them to bee aboute fyue hundreth in nomber. Then *Anciſus* the capitayne of owre men, and Lieuetenaunt in the ſteede of *Fogeda*, ſettinge his men in order of battayle array, and with his hole coompany kneelinge on his knees, they al made humble prayers to god for the victorie, and a vowe to the Image of the bleſſed virgin whiche is honoured in Ciuile, by the name of *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, promyſinge to ſende her manye golden gyftes and a ſtraunger of that contrey: alſo to name the vyllage *Sancta Maria Antiqua* after her name: lykewyſe to erecte a temple cauled by the ſame name: or at the leaſte to dedicate the king of that prouince his palaice to that vſe, if it ſhulde pleaſe her to aſſiſte them in this daungerous enterpryſe. This doone, al the ſouldiers tooke an othe, that noo man ſhulde turne his backe to his enemies. Then the capytayne commaundinge them to bee in a redines with theyr targets and iauelens, and the trumpyter to blowe the battayle, they fiercely aſſayled theyr enemyes with a larome. But the naked barbarians, not longe able to abyde the force of owre men, were putte to flyght, with theyr kynge and capitayne *Cemaccus*. Owre men entered into the vyllage, where they fownde plentie of meate ſuche as the people of the contrey vſe, ſufficiente to aſſuage theyr preſent hunger, as breade made of rootes, with certeine fruites vnlyke vnto owres, whiche they reſerue for ſtore as wee doo cheſtnuttes. Of theſe people, the men are vtterly naked: but the women from the nauell downewarde, are couered with a fyne clothe made of goſſampine cotton. This Region is vtterly withowte any ſharpenes of wynter. For the mouthe of this ryuer of *Darien*, is onlye eyght degrees diſtante from the *Equinoctiall* lyne: So that the commone ſorte of owre men, ſcarſely perceaue anye difference in lengthe betwene the day and nyght all the hole yeare. But bycauſe they are ignorant in aſtronomie, they can perceaue noo ſmaule difference. Therfore wee neede not much paſſe if the degree do differ ſum what from theyr opinion, for aſmuche as the difference can not bee greate. The day after that they arryued at the lande, they ſayled alonge by the ryuer, where they founde a greate thicket of reedes continuinge for the ſpace of a myle in length ſuppoſing (as it chaunced in deede) that the bortherers there aboute which had fledde, had eyther lyne lurkynge there, or els to haue hyd theyr ſtuffe amonge thoſe reedes: Where vppon, armynge them ſelues with theyr targettes, for feare of the people lyinge in ambuſſhe. they ſearched the thicket dilygently,

Apples of a strange kynd

Ceders of Libane.

Sorbes are cauled in french Cormier they grow not in Englande.

The frute cauled zizipha or Iuiuba

Canibales.

Men of desperat boldnes.

The goulfe of Vraba.

The great ryuer of Darien, fauleth into the goulfe of Vraba.

Prayer and vowes.

The souldiers make an othe.

The barbarians are dryuen to flight.

57 Chestnuttes.

The ryuer of Darien, but viii. degrees from the Equinoctial.

Golde founde in a thicket of reedes.

and founde it withowte men, but replenyſhed with houſeholde ſtuffe and golde. They fownde alſo a great multitude of ſheetes, made of the ſylke or cotton of the goſſampine tree. Lykewyſe dyuers kyſides of veſſels and tooles made of woodde, and many of earth: Alſo many breſte plates of gold and ouches wrought after theyr maner, to the ſum of a hundreth and twoo pounde weight. For they alſo take pleaſure in the bewtie of gold, and worke it very artificially, although it bee not the price of thynges amonge them as with vs. They haue it owte of other Regions for exchaunge of ſuch thynges as theyr contrey bringeth furthe. For ſuche Regions as haue plentie of breade and goſſampine, lacke golde: And ſuche as brynge furth golde, are for the moſt parte rowght with montaynes and rockes, and therfore baren. And thus they exerciſe marchandies withowte the vſe of money. Reioyſing therfore with double gladdenes, aſwell in that they ſawe greate lykenes of golde, as alſo that fortune hadde offered them ſoo fayre and frutefull a contrey, they ſent for theyr felowes whom they hadde lefte before in the eaſte ſyde of the goulfe of *Vraba*. Yet ſume ſaye that the ayer is there vnholſome, bycauſe that parte of the Region lyethe in a lowe valley enuironed with mountaynes and maryſſhes.

Sheetes of gossampine.

Breste plates of golde.

The golden Regions, are for the moste parte baren.

¶ THE SECONDE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE,
Of the ſuppoſed continente.

IHaue deſcribed to yowre holynes where *Fogeda* with his coompany (to whome the large tractes of *Vraba* was aſſigned to inhabite) intended to faſten there foote. Lette vs nowe therfore leaue them of *Vraba* for a whyle, and returne ageyne to *Nicueſa* to whom the gouernaunce and Lieuetenaunteſhippe of the moſte large prouince of *Beragua* (beinge the weſte ſyde of the goulfe of *Vraba*) was appoynted. We haue declared howe *Nicueſa* departinge with one carauell and twoo brigantines frome *Vraba* the iuriſdiction of his frende and companyon *Fogeda*, directed his courſe weſtwarde to *Beragua*, leauinge the bygger ſhippes ſumewhat behynde hym, to folowe hym a farre of. But he tooke this diuiſe in an euyll howre. For he bothe loſte his felowes in the nyght, and went paſt the mouth of the ryuer of *Beragua*, which he chiefely ſowght. One *Lupus Olanus* a Cantabrian, and gouernoure of one of the greate ſhippes, had the conducte of one of the brigantines. He commynge behynde, lerned of th[e]inhabitantes which was the waye Eaſtewarde to the goulfe of *Beragua* ouer paſſed and lefte behynde of *Nicueſa*. *Olanus* therfore directinge his courſe towarde the Eaſte, mette with the other brigantine which had alſo wandered owte of the way by reaſon of the darkenes of the nyght. The gouernour of this brigantine, was one *Petrus de Vmbria*. Thus bothe beinge gladde of theyr meetinge, they conſulted what was beſt to bee doone, and which way they coulde coniecture their gouernour had taken his vyage. After deliberation, they iudged that *Nicueſa* could no more lacke ſum to put him in rememberaunce of *Beragua*, then they them ſelues were myndful therof, hopynge alſo to fynde hym there. They ſayled therefore towarde *Beragua*: where they founde within. xvi. myles dyſtant, a ryuer which *Colonus* named *Lagartos*, bycauſe it nooryſhethe greate lyſardes whiche in the Spanyſſhe toonge are cauled *Lagartos*. Theſe lyſertes are hurtfull bothe to man and beaſte, and in ſhape muche lyke vnto the Crocodiles of the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypte. In this ryuer, they founde theyr companyons and felowes of theyr erroure lyinge at anker with the greate ſhippes which folowed behynde by the gouernours commaundement. Here the hole aſſembl[i]e beinge carefull and diſquieted by reaſon of the gouernours erroure, after conſultacion, by th[e]aduiſe of the capitaynes of the brigantines, who had raſed nere vnto the coaſtes of *Beragua*, they ſayled directly thether. *Beragua*, in the language of th[e]inhabitantes of the ſame prouince, is as much to ſaye, as the golden ryuer. The region it ſelfe is alſo cauled by the ſame name, takynge name of the ryuer. In the mouth of this ryuer, the greateſt veſſels caſt anker, and conueighed al theyr vytailes and other neceſſaries to lande with theyr ſhippe boates: and elected *Lupus Olanus* to bee theyr gouernour in the ſteede of *Nicueſa* whom they had loſte. By th[e]aduice therfore of *Olanus* and the other vnder capitaynes, that all hope of departure myght bee taken from the ſouldiers which they had nowe browght thether, and to make them the more wyllinge to inhabite that land, they vtterly forſooke and caſte of thoſe ſhyppes beinge nowe rotten for age, and ſuffered them to bee ſhaken and brooſed of the ſurges of the ſea. Yet of theyr ſoundeſte plankes, with other newe, made of the trees of that Region (which they ſay to be excedinge bygge and hygh) they framed a newe carauel ſhortly after, whiche they myght vſe to ſerue for theyr neceſſitie. But *Beragua* was founde by the vnfortunate deſtenie of *Petrus de Vmbria*. For he, beinge a man of prompt wytte and apt forwardenes to attempte thynges (in whiche ſumetyme fortune wyll beare a ſtroke notwithſtandinge owre prouidence) tooke vpon hym th[e]aduenture to ſearche the ſhore to th[e]intent to find a waye for his felowes where they myght beſte coome alande. For this purpoſe, he choſe

Fogeda, the Lieuetenaunt of Vraba.

Nicuesa the Lieuetenaunt of Beragua.

Nicuesa loste his felowes in the night.

Lupus Olanus

Petrus de vmbria

The capitaynes consulte where to find theyr lost gouernour.

The ryuer Lagartos.

58

The golden ryuer of Beragua.

The enterprise and death of Petrus de Vmbria.

hym twelue maryners, and wente aboorde the ſhippe boate whiche ſerued the greateſte ſhyppes. The flowinge of the ſea, raged and rored there, with a horrible whurlinge as wee reede of the daungerous place of *Scylla* in the ſea of Scicilie, by reaſon of the houge and ragged rockes reachyng into the ſea, from which the waues rebounding with violence, make a greate noyſe and rowghnes on the water, whiche rowghnes or reflowinge, the Spanyardes caule *Reſacca.* In theſe daungers wretched *Vmbria* wreſteled a while. But in ſhorte ſpace, a waue of the ſea almoſte as bygge as a mountayne, reboundinge from the rockes, ouerwhelmed the boate and deuoured the ſame with the men, euen in the ſight of theyr felowes: So that of them all, onely one eſcaped by reaſon he was experte in ſwymmynge. For gettinge holde of the corner of a rocke, and ſuſteynynge the rage of the ſea vntyll the nexte daye when it wexed caulme, and the ſhore was drye by the faule of the water, he eſcaped and reſorted to his coompanye. But *Vmbria* with the other eleuen, were vtterlye caſte away. The reſydue of the coompany, durſt not commite them ſelues to the ſhippe boates, but went alande with theyr brigantines. Where remaynynge a fewe dayes, and ſaylinge alonge by the ryuer, they founde certeyne vyllages of th[e]inhabitantes, which they caule *Mumu.* Here they beganne to build a fortreſſe, and to ſowe ſeedes after the maner of theyr countrey, in a certeyne vale of frutefull grownde, bicauſe in other places the region is baren. As theſe thynges were thus dooinge in *Beragua*, one of their coompanye ſtandynge vppon the toppe of a hyghe rocke of eſpeciall, and lyftynge his eyes towarde the Weſte, beganne to crye, Lynnyn ſayles, lynnyn ſayles. And the nerer it drewe towarde hym, he perceaued it to bee a ſhyppe boate comminge with a lyttle ſayle. Yet receaued they it with muche reioyſinge: for it was the fyſſher boate of *Nicueſa* his carauele, and of capacitie to carye onely fyue men, and had nowe but three in it, which had ſtoulne it from *Nicueſa* bycauſe he refuſed to gyue credit to theim that he had paſſed *Beragua*, and lefte it behynde hym Eaſtwarde. For they feinge *Nicueſa* and his felowes to conſume dayely by famynne, thowght they woolde proue fortune with that boate, if their chaunce myght bee to fynde *Beragua*, as in deede it was. Debatinge therefore with theyr felowes, of theſe matters, they declared howe *Nicueſa* erred and loſte the carauele by tempeſt, and that he was nowe wanderinge amonge the maryſſhes of vnknowen coaſtes, full of myſerie and in extreeme penurie of all thynges, hauinge nowe lyued for the ſpace of three ſcore and tenne dayes, only with herbes and rootes, and ſyldoome with frutes of the countrey, contented to drinke water, and yet that often tymes faylynge, bycauſe he was inſtant to trauayle weſtwarde by foote, ſuppoſing by that meanes to come to *Beragua.* *Colonus* the fyrſte fynder of this mayne lande, had coaſted alonge by this tracte, and named it *Gratia Dei*: but the inhabitantes caule it *Cerabaro.* Throwghe this Region, there runneth a ryuer which owre men named *Sancti Matthei*, diſtante from the weſte ſyde of *Beragua* aboute a hundrethe and thirtie myles. Here I lette paſſe the name of this ryuer, and of manye other places by the names which th[e]inhabitantes vſe, bycauſe owre men are ignorant thereof. Thus *Lupus Olanus* the conductor of one of the ſhippes of *Nicueſa*, and nowe alſo vice Leauetenaunt in his ſteede, after that he hadde receaued this information of the maryners, ſente thether a brigantine vnder theyr guydynge, theſe maryners therfore, which came in the fyſſher boate, founde *Nicueſa*, and browght hym to the place where *Olanus* laye, whome at his commynge he caſte in pryſon, and accuſed hym of treaſon bycauſe he vſurped th[e]autoritie of the Lieuetenauntſhippe, and that for the deſyre he had to beare rule and bee in autoritie, he tooke no care of his errours: alſo that he behaued hym ſelfe negligently: demaundinge further more of hym, what was the cauſe of his ſoo longe delay. Lykewyſe he ſpake to al the vnder officers ſharplye and with a troubled mynde: And within fewe dayes after commaunded them to truſſe vp theyr packes, and make them redye to departe. They deſyred hym to quyet hym ſelfe, and to forbeare them a while vntyl they had reaped the corne that they had ſowne, which wolde ſhortly bee rype. For all kynd of corne waxeth rype there euery fourth moonethe after it is ſowne. But he vtterly denyed to tarye any whytte: but that he woolde foorthwith departe from that vnfortunate lande: And plucked vp by the rootes al that euer was browght into the goulfe of *Beragua*, and commaunded them to directe theyr courſe towarde the Eaſte. After they had ſayled aboute the ſpace of. xvi. myles, a certeyne younge man whoſe name was Gregorie, a Genues borne, and of a chylde browght vp with *Colonus*, cauled to rememberance that there was a hauen not farre frome thenſe: And to proue his ſayinge trewe, he gaue his felowes theſe tokens: that is, that they ſhulde fynde vppon the ſhore, an anker of a loſte ſhyppe halfe couered with ſande: And vnder a tree nexte vnto the hauen, a ſprynge of cleere water. They came to the lande: founde the anker and the ſprynge, and commended the wytte and memorye of the younge man, that he only amonge many of the maryne[r]s whiche had ſearched thoſe coaſtes with *Colonus*, bore the thynge ſoo well in mynde. This hauen, *Colonus* cauled *Portus Bellus.* Wheras in this vyage for lacke of vytayles they were ſumetymes enforced to goo alande, they were euel entreated of the inhabitantes. By reaſon wherof, theyr ſtrengthes were ſoo wekened with hunger, that they were not able to keepe warre ageynſt naked men, or ſcarſely to beare theyr harnes on their backes. And therfore owre men loſte twentie of theyr coompanie, which were ſlayne with venemous arrowes. They conſulted to leaue the one halfe of theyr felowes in the hauen of *Portus Bellus*: And the other parte *Nicueſa* tooke with hym towarde the Eaſte: where abowte twentie and eyght myles from *Portus Bellus*, he intended to buylde a fortreſſe harde by the ſea ſyde vppon the poynte or cape which in tyme paſte *Colonus* named *Marmor.*

The daungerous place of Scilla in the sea of Cicilie.

Swymminge

The fyssher boate of Nicuesa his carauele.

The miserable case of Nicuesa.

59

The Region of Gratia Dei or Cerabaro.

The ryuer of Sancti Matthei.

The rigorousnes of Nicuesa.

Corne waxeth rype euery fourth month

The commendation of a younge man browght vp with Colonus.

Portus Bellus.

Weakenes of hunger.

Cap. Marmor.

But they were ſoo feeble by reaſon of longe hunger, that theyr ſtrength ſerued them not to ſuſteyne ſuche labour̄e. Yet he erected a lyttle towre able to reſyſt the fyrſt aſſaute of the inhabitantes. This towre he cauled *Nomen Dei.* From the tyme that he left *Beragua*, what in the iorney amonge the ſandie playnes, then alſo for hunger whyle he buylded the towre, of the fewe which remayned a lyue, he loſte twoo hundreth. And thus by lyttle and lyttle, the multitude of ſeuen hundreth foure ſcore and fyue men, was nowe browght to ſcarſely one hundreth. Whyle *Nicueſa* lyued with theſe few miſerable men, there aroſe a contention amonge them of *Vraba*, as concerninge the Lieuetenantſhippe. For one *Vaſchus Nunnez*, by the iudgemente of all men, truſtynge more to his ſtrengthe then wytte, ſtoured vp certeyne lyght felowes ageynſt *Anciſus*, ſayinge that *Anciſus* had not the kynges letters patentes for that office: And that it was not ſufficient that he was autoriſed by *Fogeda*, And therfore forbodde that he ſhulde execute the office of the Lieuetenaunteſhippe: And wylled theym to chuſe certeyne of theyr owne coompanye, by whoſe counſayle and authoritie they myght bee gouerned.

Nomen Dei.
Nicuesa his men consumed

Contencion about the lieuetenauntship of Vraba.
Vaschus Nunnez moueth sedition.
Ancisus lieuetenaunt for Fogeda.

Thus beinge diuided into factions by reaſon that *Fogeda*, their capitayne came not ageyne, whom they ſuppoſed to bee nowe deade of his venemous wounde, they contended whether it were beſte to ſubſtitute *Nicueſa* in his place. The wyſeſte ſorte ſuche as were famylier with *Nicueſa*, and coulde not beare th[e]inſolencie of *Vaſchus Nunnez*, thowght it good that *Nicueſa* ſhuld bee ſowght owt throwgh owt all thoſe coaſtes. For they had knoweledge that he departed from *Beragua* bycauſe of the barennes of the grounde: And that by th[e]exemple of *Anciſus*, and ſuche other as had made ſhippewracke, it were poſſible that he might wander in ſume ſecreate place: And that they coulde not be quiete in theire myndes vntyll they knewe the certentie, whether he with his felowes were alyue or deade. But *Vaſchus Nunnez*, fearinge leaſte at the commyng of *Nicueſa* he ſhulde not bee had in autoritie emonge his felowes, ſayde they were mad men to thinke that *Nicueſa* lyued: And althowgh he were alyue, yet that they hadde noo neade of his helpe. For he auouched that there was none of his felowes, that were not as meete to rule as *Nicueſa*. While they were thus reaſonynge too and froo, one *Rodericus Colmenaris* arryued in thoſe coaſtes with two greate ſhippes hauinge in theym three ſcore freſſhe men, with greate plentie of vitailes and apparel. Of the navigation of this *Colmenaris*, I intende to ſpeake ſumewhat more. He therfore departed from the hauen of *Hiſpaniola* cauled *Beata* (where they prepare and furnyſſhe theym ſelues whiche make any viage into theſe landes) aboute the Ides of October in the yeare. 1510: And landed the. ix. of Nouember in a Region in the large prouince of *Paria* founde by *Colonus* betwene the hauen *Carthago* and the Region of *Cuchibachoa.* In this viage what by the rowghnes of the ſea and fiercenes of the barbarians, he ſuffered many incommodities. For when his freſſhe water fayled, he ſayled to the mouthe of a certeyne riuer which th[e]inhabitantes caule *Gaira*, beinge apte to receaue ſhippes. This ryuer had his courſe from the toppe of an exceadinge hyghe mountayne couered with ſnowe, hygher then the which, all the coompanyons of this capitayne *Rodericus*, ſaye that they neuer ſawe. And that by good reaſon, yf it were couered wyth ſnowe in that Region which is not paſt ten degrees diſtante from the *Equinoctial* lyne. As they beganne to drawe water owt of their ſhippeboate, a certeyne Kynge made towarde theym appareled with veſtures of goſſampine cotton, hauinge twentie noble men in his coompanye appareled alſo: Whyche thinge ſeemed ſtraunge to owre men, and not ſeene before in thoſe parties. The Kinges apparell, hunge looſe from his ſhoulders to his elbowes: And from the gerdle downewarde, it was muche like a womans kertle, reachinge euen to his heeles. As he drewe neere towarde owre men, he ſeemed frendly to admonyſſhe theym to take none of the water of that ryuer, affirminge it to bee vnholſome for men: And ſhewed theym that not farre from thenſe, there was a ryuer of good water. They came to the ryuer. And endeuouringe to coome nere the ſhore, they were dryuen backe by tempeſte. Alſo the burbulinge of the ſande, declared the ſea to bee but ſhalowe there. They were therefore enforced to returne to the fyrſte ryuer where they myght ſafely caſte anker. This Kinge layde wayte for owre men. For as they were fyllinge theire barrelles, he ſet on theym with abowt ſeuen hundreth men (as owre men iudged) armed after theire maner, althowgh they were naked. For only the kynge and his noble men were appareled. They tooke away the ſhippeboate, and brooke it in maner to chips: ſoo fiercely aſſaylynge owre menne with theyr venemous arrowes, that they ſlewe of them fortie and ſeuen beefore they coulde couer them ſelues with theyr targettes. For that poyſon is of ſuch force, that albeit the woundes were not great, yet they dyed therof immediatly. For they yet knewe noo remedie ageynſte this kynde of poyſon, as they after lerned of th[e]inhabitantes of *Hiſpaniola*. For this Ilande bringeth foorth an herbe which quencheth and mortifieth the violent poyſon of the herbe wherewith theyr arrowes are infected, ſoo that it bee miniſtred in tyme. Yet of owre coompany whiche went for water, ſeuen eſcaped that conflicte, and hyd them ſelues in a hollowe tree, lurkynge there vntyll nyght. Yet eſcaped they not the handes of theyr enemyes. For the ſhippe departed from thenſe in the nyght ſeaſon and lefte them there, ſuppoſinge that they had byn ſlayne. Thus by manye ſuche perels and daungers (which I lyghtly ouerpaſſe bicauſe I wyl not bee tedious to yowre holynes) he arryued at the length at the hauen of *Vraba*, and caſt anker at the eaſte ſyde therof, from whenſe not longe before, owre men departed to the weſt ſyde by reaſon of the barennes of that ſoyle. When he had

60
Nicuesa.

Rodericus Colmenaris.
The nauigation of Rodericus Colmenaris.

Cuchibacoa.

The ryuer Gaira.

An exceding hygh mountayne couered with snowe.

Appareled men.

Seuen and forty Spanyardes are slaine with venemous arrowes.
Ierua.
A remedy agenste venemous arrows

Seuen men left behynde.

The hauen of Vraba.

contynued a whyle in the hauen, and ſawe noo man ſtourynge, marueylinge at the ſilence of the places (for he ſuppoſed there to haue fownde his felowes) he coulde not coniecture what this ſhulde meane: and there vppon beganne to ſuſpecte that eyther they were deade, or that they had chaunged the place
61 of theyr habitacion. To knowe the certentie hereof, he commaunded all the greate ordinaunce and other ſmaule gunnes which he had in his ſhippes, to bee charged: And fyers to bee made in the nyght vppon the toppes of the rockes. Thus the fyers beinge kyndeled, he commaunded all the gunnes to bee ſhotte of at one inſtante: by the horrible noyſe whereof, the goulfe of *Vraba* was ſhaken, althowghe it were. xxiiii. myles diſtante: for ſoo brode is the goulfe. This noyſe was harde of theyr felowes in *Dariena*: And they aunſwered them ageyne with mutual fyers. Wherfore, by the folowynge of theſe fyers, *Colmenaris* browght his ſhippes to the Weſt ſyde. Here thoſe wretched and miſerable men of *Dariena* which nowe thorowgh famen and feeblenes helde theyr wery ſowles in theyr teethe redy to departe from theyr bodies by reaſon of the calamities which beefell vnto them after *Anciſus* ſhippewracke, lyftinge vp theyr handes to heauen, with the teares runnynge downe theyr cheekes bothe for ioye and ſorowe, embraſed *Rodericus* and his felowes with ſuch kynde of reioyſinge as their preſente neceſſitie ſeemed to requyre. For whereas they were before his comminge, withowte vytayles and almoſte naked, he brought them abundance of meate, drynke, and apparell. It reſtethe nowe (moſte holy father) to declare what came of the diſſention amonge them of *Vraba*, as concernynge the gouernaunce after the loſſe of theyr capitaynes.

Famen.

What became of the contencion of Vraba

The goulfe of Vraba.
Dariena.

¶ The thyrde booke of the ſeconde Decade
Of the ſuppoſed continent.

Beragua.

ALl the chiefe officers in *Beragua*, and ſuch as were moſt politike in counſayle, determyned that *Nicueſa* ſhulde bee ſowght owte if by any meanes he coulde bee founde. Where vppon they tooke from *Anciſus* the gouernoure refuſinge the commynge of *Nicueſa*, a brygantyne whiche he made of his owne charges: And agreed, ageynſt bothe the wyll of *Anciſus*, and the maſter of fence *Vaſchus Nunnez*, that *Nicueſa* ſhulde bee ſowght foorthe to take away the ſtryfe as touchinge the gouernement. They elected therfore *Colmenaris* (of whom we ſpake before) to take this matter in hande: wyllynge hym to make diligent ſearch for *Nicueſa* in thoſe coaſtes where they ſuppoſed he erred. For they harde that he had forſaken *Beragua*, the region of an vnfrutefull grounde. They gaue hym therfore commaundement to brynge *Nicueſa* with hym, and further to declare vnto hym that he ſhulde doo ryght good ſeruice to coome thether, in takyng away th[e]occaſion of theyr ſeditions. *Colmenaris* tooke the thynge vppon hym the more gladly bycauſe *Nicueſa* was his very frende: Suppoſinge that his commynge with vytayles ſhulde bee noo leſſe thankefull to *Nicueſa* and his coompanie, then it was to them of *Vraba*. Furnyſſhynge therefore one of his owne ſhippes whiche he browght with hym and alſo the brigantyne taken frome *Anciſus*, he frayghted the ſame with part of the vytayles and other neceſſaries which he browght with hym before from *Hiſpaniola* to *Vraba*. Thus courſynge alonge by all the coaſtes and goulfes nere there abowte, at the length at the poynte called *Marmor*, he founde *Nicueſa*, of all lyuynge men moſt infortunate, in maner dryed vppe with extreeme hunger, fylthye and horrible to beholde, with onely three ſcore men in his company, lefte alyue of ſeuen hundreth. They al ſeemed to hym ſoo miſerable, that he noo leſſe lamented theyr caſe, then yf he had founde them deade. But *Colmenaris* conforted his frende *Nicueſa*: and embraſinge hym with teares and cherefull woordes, relyued his ſpirites, and further encoraged hym with greate hope of better fortune: declarynge alſo that his commynge was looked for and greatelye deſyred of al the good men of *Vraba*, for that they hoped that by his autoritie, theyr diſcorde and contention ſhulde bee fynyſſhed. *Nicueſa* thanked his frende *Colmenaris* after ſuch ſorte as his calamitie requyred. Thus they tooke ſhyppe to gyther, and ſayled directly to *Vraba*. But ſo variable and vnconſtant is the nature of man, that he ſoone groweth owte of vſe, becommeth inſolente and vnmyndful of benefites after to much felicitie. For *Nicueſa*, after thus many teares and weepynges, after dyuers bewaylinges of his infortunate deſteny, after ſo many thankes geuynge, ye after that he had faulen downe to the grounde and kyſſed the feete of *Colmenaris* his ſauioure, he beganne to quarel with hym before he came yet at *Vraba*, reprouinge hym and them all for th[e]alteracion of the ſtate of thynges in *Vraba*, and for the gatheringe of golde: Affirming
62 that none of them owght to haue layde hande of any golde with owte the aduice of hym or of *Fogeda* his coompanion. When theſe ſayinges and ſuche lyke, came to the eares of theym of *Vraba*, they ſoo ſtoured vp the myndes of *Anciſus* Lieuetenaunte for *Fogeda*, and alſo of *Vaſchus Nunnez*, of the contrary parte, ageinſte *Nicueſa*,

Nicuesa is ſought foorth

Nicuesa is founde in a miſerable caſe.

Inſolencie of to much felicitie.

Nicuesa fauleth from one miſerie into an other.

that ſhortely after his arryuall with his three ſcore men, they commaunded hym with threatenynge to departe from thenſe. But this pleaſed not the better ſort. Yet fearynge leaſt tumult ſhulde bee amonge the people whom *Vaſchus Nunnez* had ſtered to factions, the beſt parte was fayne to giue place to the greateſt. This wretched man therfore *Nicueſa* thus drowned in miſeries, was thruſte into the brigantyne whiche he hym ſelfe browght: and with hym only ſeuentene men, of his three ſcore which remayned alyue. He tooke ſhyppe in the Calendes of Marche in the yeare. 1511. intendynge to goo to *Hiſpaniola* to coomplayne of the raſſhenes of *Vaſchus Nunnez*, and of the violence doone to hym by *Anciſus*. But he entered into the brigantine in an vnfortunate houre: for he was neuer ſeene after. They ſuppoſe that the brigantine was drowned with all the men therin. And thus vnhappie *Nicueſa* faulynge headlonge owte of one miſerye into an other, ended his lyfe more myſerablye then he lyued. *Nicueſa* beinge thus vylely reiected, and al theyr vytayles conſumed which *Colmenaris* browght them, faulynge in maner madde for hunger, they were enforced lyke raueninge woolues ſeakynge theyr praye, to inuade ſuche as dwelte abowte theyr confynes. *Vaſchus Nunnez* therefore, theyr newe capitayne of theyr owne election, aſſembling togyther a hundreth and thirtie men, and ſettinge them in order of battell after his ſwoordeplayers faſſhion, puffed vppe with pryde, placed his ſouldiers as pleaſed hym in the forwarde and rereward, and ſume as pertiſens abowt his owne perſon. Thus aſſociatinge with hym *Colmenaris*, he wente to ſpoyle the kynges which were bortherers there abowte, and came fyrſt to a Region abowte that coaſte, cauled *Coiba*, (wher of we made mencion before) imperiouſly and with cruel countenaunce commaundinge the kynge of the region whoſe name was *Careta*, (of whome they were neuer troubled as often as they paſſed by his dominions) to gyue them vytayles. But Careta denyed that he coulde gyue them any at that tyme: alleagyng that he had oftentymes ayded the Chriſtians as they paſſed by thoſe coaſtes: by reaſon wherof his ſtore was nowe conſumed: Alſo that by the meanes of the contynuall warre which he kepte euer from his chyldes age with a kyng whoſe name is *Poncha*, bortheringe vppon his dominion, he and his famelie were in greate ſcarſenes of all thynges. But *Vaſchus* woolde admytte none of theſe excuſes: And thervppon tooke *Careta* priſoner, ſpoyled his vyllage, and browght hym bownd with his twoo wyues and chyldren and all his famelie to *Dariena*. With this kynge *Careta*, they founde three of the felowes of *Nicueſa*, the whiche when *Nicueſa* paſſed by thoſe coaſtes to ſeeke *Beragua*, fearynge punyſſhement for theyr euyll deſertes ſtoule away from the ſhyppes lyinge at anker: And when the nauie departed, commytted them ſelues to the mercie of *Careta*, who enterteyned them very frendely. They had nowe bynne there. xviii. moonethes, and were therefore as vtterly naked as the people of the contrey. Duringe this tyme, the meate of th[e]inhabitantes ſeemed vnto them delicate diſſhes and princely fare: eſpecially bycauſe they enioyed the ſame withowte any ſtryfe for myne and thyne, which twoo thynges moue and enforce men to ſuch harde ſhyftes and miſeries, that in lyuing they ſeeme not to lyue. Yet deſyred they to returne to theyr owlde cares, of ſuche force is education and natural effection towarde them with whom we haue byn browght vp. The vytayles whiche *Vaſchus* browght frome the vyllage of *Careta* to his felowes lefte in *Dariena*, was rather ſumewhat to aſſuage theyr preſent hunger, then vtterly to take away theyr neceſſitie. But as touchinge *Anciſus* beinge Lieuetenaunt for *Fogeda*, whether it were before theſe thynges or after, I knowe not. But this I am ſure of, that after the reiectinge of *Nicueſa*, many occaſions were ſought agenſt *Anciſus* by *Vaſcus* and his factionaries. Howe ſoo euer it was, *Anciſus* was taken, and caſt in pryſon, and his goodes confiſcate. The cauſe hereof was, (as *Vaſchus* alleaged) that *Anciſus* hadde his commiſſion of the Lieuetenauntſhippe, of *Fogeda* onely whome they ſayde to bee nowe deade, and not of the kynge. Sayinge that he woolde not obey any man that was not put in office by the kyng hym ſelfe by his letters patentes. Yet at the requeſt of the graueſte ſorte, he was ſumwhat pacified, and delt more gentelly with hym, hauinge ſum compaſſion of his calamities. And thervppon commaunded hym to bee looſed. *Anciſus* beinge at libertie, tooke ſhyppe to departe from thenſe to *Hiſpaniola*. But beefore he had hoyſed vppe his ſayle, all the wyſeſt ſorte reſorted to hym, humbly deſyringe hym to returne ageyne: promyſynge that they wolde doo theyr diligence, that *Vaſchus* beinge reconciled, he myght bee reſtored to his full autoritie of the Lieuetenauntſhippe. But *Anciſus* refuſed to conſent to theyr requeſt and ſoo departed. Yet ſume there were that murmured that god and his angels ſhewed this reuenge vpon *Anciſus*, bycauſe *Nicueſa* was reiected throwgh his counſayle. Howe ſoo euer it bee, the ſearchers of the newe landes, ſaule headlonge into ruine by theyr owne follye, conſuminge them ſelues with ciuile diſcorde, not weighinge ſoo greate a matter, nor employinge theyr beſte endeuoure aboute the ſame as the woorthynes of the thynge requyreth. In this meane tyme, they determyned all with one agreemente, to ſende meſſengers into *Hiſpaniola* to the younge Admirall and viceroy, ſonne and heyre to *Chriſtophorus Colonus* the fynder of theſe landes, and to the other gouernoures of the Ilande (from whom the newe landes receaue theyr ayde and lawes) to ſignifie vnto them what ſtate they ſtoode in, and in what neceſſitie they lyued: alſo what they had founde, and in what hope they were of greater thinges if they were furnyſhed with plentie of vytayles and other neceſſaries. For this purpoſe they elected at the aſſignement of *Vaſcus*, one *Valdiuia*, beinge one of his faction, and inſtructed by hym ageinſt *Anciſus*. And to bee aſſiſtant with hym, they appoynted one *Zamudius* a Cantabrian: So that commaunde-

The greatest part ouercommeth the best

The death of Nicuesa.

Famen enforseth them to faule to spoylynge.

Vaschus vsurpeth th[e]autoritie of the Lieuetenantshippe.

Careta, kinge of Coiba.

Kynge Careta is taken and spoyled.

Hunger is the best sauce.

Myne and thine the seedes of al mischefe.

Ancisus, lieuetenaunt for Fogeda is cast in prison.

Ancisus taket his vyage to hispaniola.

63

The reueng[e] of God.

The inconueniences of discorde.

The sonne and heyre of Colonus, is Admirall and Viceroy of hispaniola.

Valdiuia.

Zamudius and Ancisus, take their vyage to Spayne.

ment was gyuen to *Valdiuia* to returne from *Hiſpaniola* with vytayles: And *Zamudius* was appoynted to take his vyage into Spayne to the kynge. They tooke ſhippe togyther with *Anciſus*, hauinge in mynde to certifie the kynge howe thynges were handeled there, muche otherwyſe then *Zamudius* information. I my ſelfe ſpake with both *Anciſus* and *Zamudius* at their commynge to the courte. Whyle they were occupied aboute theſe matters, thoſe wretched men of *Dariena* looſed *Careta* the kynge of *Coiba* vppon condicion that he ſhulde ayde theym in theyr warres ageynſt his enemy and theyrs, kynge *Poncha* bortheringe vpon his dominions. *Careta* made a league with them, promyſinge that as they paſſed by his kyngedome, he woolde gyue them all thynges neceſſarie, and meete them with an armie of men, to goo forwarde with them to the battaile agenſt *Poncha.* Theyr weapons are nother bowes nor venemed arrowes, as we ſayde th[e]inhabitantes to haue which dwel eaſtwarde beyonde the goulfe. They feight therefore at hande, with longe ſwordes (which they caule *Macanas*) made of wood bycauſe they haue noo Iren. They vſe alſo longe ſtaues lyke iauelens hardened at the endes with fyer, or typte with bone. Alſo certeyne ſlynges and dartes. Thus after the league made with *Careta*, bothe he and owre men had certeyne dayes appoynted them to tyll theyr grounde and ſowe theyr ſeedes. This doone, by the ayde of *Careta* and by his conduction, they marched towarde the palaice of *Poncha*, who fledde at theyr commynge. They ſpoyled his vyllage and mytigated theyr hunger with ſuch vytayles as they founde there. Yet coulde they not helpe their felowes therwith by reaſon of the farre diſtance of the place, althowghe they had greate plentie. For the vyllage of *Poncha*, was more then a hundreth myles diſtant from *Dariena*: wheras was alſo none other remedy but that the ſame ſhulde haue byn caryed on mens backes to the ſea ſyde beinge farre of, where they left theyr ſhyppes in the which they came to the vyllage of *Careta.* Here they founde certeyne powndes weyght of gold, grauen and wrought into ſundrye ouches. After the ſacking of this vyllage they reſorted toward the ſhips intendyng to leaue the kinges of the inland vntouched at this tyme, and to inuade onely them which dwelt by the ſea coaſtes. Not farre from *Coiba,* in the ſame tracte, there is a Region named *Comogra*, and the Kinge thereof, cauled *Comogrus* after the ſame name. To this Kinge they came fyrſt next after the ſubvertion of *Poncha*: And founde his palaice ſituate in a frutefull playne of twelue leaques in bredthe, at the rootes of the further ſyde of the nexte mountaynes. *Comogrus* had in his courte a certeyne noble man of nere conſanguinitie to Kynge *Careta*, whiche had fledde to *Comogrus* by reaſon of certeyne diſſention whiche was betwene *Careta* and hym. Theſe noble men, they caule *Iura.* This *Iura* therfore of *Coiba*, mette owre men by the way, and conciled *Comogrus* to them, bycauſe he was well knowen to owr men from the time that *Nicueſa* paſſed fyrſt by thoſe coaſtes. Owre men therefore went quietlye to the palaice of *Comogrus* beinge diſtante from *Dariena* thirtie leaques by a plaine waye abowte the mountaynes, This Kynge *Comogrus*, had ſeuen ſonnes, younge men of comelye forme and ſtature, whiche he had by ſundry wyues. His palaice was framed of poſtes or proppes made of trees faſtened togeyther after a ſtraunge ſorte, and of ſoo ſtronge bylding, that it is of no leſſe ſtrength then waules of ſtone. They which meaſured the length of the floure thereof, founde it to bee a hundreth and fyftie paſes, and in breadthe, foure ſcore foote: beinge roofed and paued with maruelous arte. They founde his ſtore houſe, furnyſſhed with abundance of delicate vitailes after the maner of theyr countrey: And his wyne celler repleniſhed with great veſſelles of earth and alſo of woodde fylled with theyr kynde of wyne and ſyder. For they haue noo grapes. But lyke as they make theyr breade of thoſe three kyndes of rootes cauled *Iucca*, *agis*, and *Maizium*, (whereof we ſpake in the fyrſte decade) Soo make they theyr wyne of the frutes of date trees, and ſyder of other frutes and ſeedes, as doo the Almaynes, Flemynges, Englyſſhe men, and owre Spanyardes whych inhabite the mountaynes, as the Vaſcons and Aſturians: likewiſe in the mountaynes of the Alpes, the Noricians, Sueuians, and Heluetians, make certeyne drynkes of barley, wheat, hoppes, and apples. They ſay alſo that with *Comogrus*, they droonk wynes of ſundry taſtes, both whyte and blacke. But nowe yow ſhall heare of a thynge more monſtrous too behoulde. Enterynge therfor into the inner partes of the palaice, they were browght into a chamber hanged aboute with the carkeſes of men, tyed with ropes of goſſampine cotton. Beinge demaunded what they ment by that ſuperſtition, they anſwered that thoſe were the carkeſes of the father, graundefather, and great graundfather with the other aunceſtours of theyr Kyng *Comogrus.* Declaringe that they had the ſame in greate reuerence, and that they tooke it for a godly thynge to honoure them religiouſly: And therfore appareled euery of the ſame ſumptuouſlye with golde and precious ſtones accordynge vnto theyr eſtate. After this ſorte dyd the antiquitie honoure theyr *Penates*, whyche they thowght had the gouernaunce of their lyues. Howe they drye theſe carkeſes vppon certeine inſtrumentes made of wood, like vnto hurdels, with a ſofte fyer vnder the ſame, ſo that onely the ſkynne remayneth to houlde the bones together, we haue deſcribed in the former decade. Of *Comogrus* his ſeuen ſonnes, the eldeſt had an excellente naturall wytte. He therfore thowght it good to flatter and pleaſe thys wandrynge kynde of men (owr men I meane) lyuynge onely by ſhiftes and ſpoyle, leaſt beinge offended and ſeekynge occaſions ageynſte hym and his familie, they ſhuld handle hym as they dyd other whiche ſowght noo meanes howe to gratifie theym. Wherefore, he gaue *Vaſchus* and *Colmenaris* foure thouſande ounces of golde artificially wrought, and alſo ſyftie ſlaues whyche he had taken in the warres. For ſuche, eyther they ſell for exchaunce of other thinges, or

Kynge Poncha.

Swoordes of woodde.

Kynge Careta conspireth with the Spanyardes agenst kynge Poncha.

Wrought gold

The region of Comogra, distant frome Dariena. xxx. leaques.

Kynge Comogrus.

The kynges palaice.

64

Wyne and syder

Blacke wine.

The bodyes of deade kynges religiously honoured.

Penates.

The carcases of men dryed

The kynges sonne a yonge man of excellent wytte.

Foure thousande vnces of wrought golde.

otherwiſe vſe them as theym lyſteth: For they haue not the vſe of money. This golde with as muche more which they had in an other place, owre men wayed in the porche of *Comogrus* his palaice to ſeparate the fyfte parte thereof, whiche portion is due to the Kynges eſcheker. For it is decreed that the fyft parte of both golde, perles, and precious ſtones, ſhulde be aſſigned to the Kinges treaſourers: And the reſydue, to bee diuided emoonge theym ſelues by compoſition. Here as brabblynge and contention aroſe emonge owr men abowt the diuidinge of gold, this eldeſte ſoonne of Kynge *Comogrus* beinge preſente, whome we prayſed for his wyſedome, commynge ſume what wyth an angery countenaunce towarde hym whiche helde the balences, he ſtrooke theym wyth his fyſte, and ſcatered all the golde that was therein, abowte the porche, ſharpely rebukynge theym with woordes in this effecte. What is the matter yowe Chriſtian men, that yow ſoo greatly eſteme ſoo litle a portion of golde more then yowr owne quietnes, whiche neuertheleſſe yow entend to deface from theſe fayre ouches and to melte the ſame into a rude maſſe. If yowre hunger of goulde bee ſoo inſatiable that onely for the deſyre yowe haue therto, yowe diſquiete ſoo many nations, and yow yowre ſelues alſo ſuſteyne ſoo many calamit[i]es and incommodities, lyuing like baniſhed men owte of yowre owne countrey, I wyll ſhewe yowe a Region floweinge with goulde, where yowe may ſatiffie yowr raueninge appetites. But yowe muſte attempte the thynge with a greater poure: For it ſtandeth yow in hande by force of armes to ouercome kynges of greate puiſſaunce, and rigorous defenders of theyr dominions. For beſyde other, the greate kinge *Tumanama* will coome foorthe ageynſte yowe, whoſe kengdome is moſte ryche with golde, and diſtante from henſe onely ſyx ſoonnes: that is, ſyx dayes: for they number the dayes by the ſonne. Furthermore, or euer yowe canne coome thether, yow muſt paſſe ouer the mountaynes inhabited of the cruell Canybales a fierce kynde of men, deuourers of mans fleſſhe, lyuing withowte lawes, wanderinge, and withowte empire. For they alſo, beinge deſyrous of golde, haue ſubdewed them vnder theyr dominion whiche before inhabited the golde mynes of the mountaynes, and vſe them lyke bondemen, vſyng their laboure in dygginge and worke-ynge theyr golde in plates and ſundry Images lyke vnto theſe whiche yowe ſee here. For we doo no more eſteeme rude golde vnwrought, then we doo cloddes of earthe, before it bee formed by the hande of the worke-man to the ſimilitude eyther of ſume veſſell neceſſarie for owre vſe, or ſume ouche bewetifull to be worne. Theſe thynges doo wee receaue of theim for exchaunge of other of owre thynges, as of priſoners taken in warre, whiche they bye to eate, or for ſheetes and other thynges perteynynge to the furnyture of houſeholde, ſuche as they lacke which inhabite the mountaynes: And eſpecially for vitayles wherof they ſtande in greate neede by reaſon of the barrennes of the mountaynes. This iorney therfore, muſt bee made open by force of men. And when yowe are paſſinge ouer theſe mountaynes (poyntinge with his fynger towarde the ſouthe mountaynes) yowe ſhal ſee an other ſea, where they ſayle with ſhyppes as bygge as yowres (meanynge the caraueles) vſinge both ſayles and ores as yowe doo, althowghe the men bee naked as wee are. All the waye that the water runnethe frome the mountaynes, and all that ſyde lyinge towarde the Southe, bryngeth foorth golde abundantly. As he ſayde theſe woordes, he poynted to the veſſelles in whiche they vſe to ſerue theyr meate, affirmynge that kynge *Tumanama*, and all the other kynges beyonde the mountaynes, had ſuche and al their other houſeholde ſtuffe of golde: And that there was noo leſſe plentie of golde amonge thoſe people of the Southe, then of Iren with vs. For he knewe by relation of owre men, wherof owre ſwoordes and other weapons were made. Owre capitaynes marueylyng at the oration of the naked younge man (for they had for interpretours thoſe three men whiche had byn before a yere and a halfe conuerſant in the court of kynge *Careta*) pondered in theyr myndes, and erneſtly conſidered his ſayinges. Soo that his raſſhenes in ſcatteringe the golde owte of the balances, they turned to myrth and vrbanitie, commendynge his dooinge and ſayinge therin. Then they aſked hym frendely, vppon what certeyne knoweleage he ſpake thoſe thynges: Or what he thowght beſte herein to bee doone yf they ſhulde brynge a greater ſupplye of men. To this, younge *Comogrus*, ſtayinge a whyle with hym ſelfe as it were an oratour preparinge him ſelfe to ſpeake of ſume graue matter, and diſpoſynge his bodye to a gieſture meete to perſuade, ſpake thus in his mother tonge. Gyue eare vnto me o yowe Chryſtians. Albeit that the gredie hunger of golde hathe not yet vexed vs naked men, yet doo we deſtroy one an other by reaſon of ambi-tion and deſyre to rule. Hereof ſpringeth mortall hatred amonge vs, and hereof commethe owre deſtruction. Owre predeceſſours kepte warres, and ſoo dyd *Comogrus* my father with princes beinge bortherers abowte hym. In the which warres, as wee haue ouercoome, ſo haue wee byn ouercoome, as dothe appere by the number of bondemen amonge vs, which we tooke by the ouerthrowe of owre enemyes, of the whiche I haue gyuen yowe fiftie. Lykewyſe at an other tyme, owre aduerſaries hauinge th[e]upper hande agenſte vs, ledde away manye of vs captiue. For ſuche is the chaunce of warre. Alſo, amonge owre familiers (wherof a great number haue byn captiues with them) beholde here is one whiche of longe tyme ledde a paynefull lyfe in bondage vnder the yoke of that kynge beyonde the mountaynes, in whoſe kyngdome is ſuche abundance of golde. Of hym, and ſuche other innumerable, and lykewyſe by the reſort of free men on theyr ſyde comminge to vs, and ageyne of owre men reſortinge to theim by ſafe conduct, theſe thynges haue byn euer as well knowen vnto vs, as owre owne poſſeſſions. But that yowe maye bee the better aſſured hereof, and bee owte of all ſuſpection that yowe

The distribution of golde.

Young Comogrus his oration.

The hunger of golde.

A region flowinge wyth golde.

Kynge Tumanama.

Canibales.

65

The golde mynes of the mountaynes.

Vnwrought golde not estemed.

Exchaunge.

Abundance of golde.

Householde stuffe of gold

Naked people tormented with ambition.

A vehement persuasion.

ſhal not bee deceaued, make me the guyde of this viage, byndynge me faſt and keepyng me in ſafe cuſtodie to bee hanged on the next tree, yf yowe fynde my ſayinges in any point vntrewe. Folowe my counſayle therfore, and ſend for a thouſande Chriſtian men apte for the warres, by whoſe power we may with alſo the men of warre of *Comogrus* my father armed after owre maner, inuade the dominions of owre enemyes: where, bothe yowe may bee ſatiſfyed with golde, and we for owre conductinge and aydynge yowe in this enterpryſe, ſhall thynke owre ſelues abundantly rewarded, in that yowe ſhall helpe to delyuer vs from the iniuries and perpetuall
66 feare of owre enemies. After theſe woordes, this prudente younge *Comogrus* helde his peace. And owre men
A token of hunger. moued with greate hope and hunger of golde, beganne ageine to ſwalowe downe theyr ſpettle.

¶ The fovrth booke of the seconde Decade, *Of the ſuppoſed Continent.*

Kynge Comogrus is baptised with his famely.

Valdiuia returneth from hispaniola.

After that they had taryed here a fewe dayes and baptiſed *Comogrus* with all his famelie, and named hym by the name of Charles after the kynge of Spayne, they returned to theyr felowes in *Dariena* leauinge with hym the hope of the thouſande ſouldyers, which his ſonne requyred to paſſe ouer thoſe mountaynes towarde the South ſea. Thus enteringe into the vyllage which they had choſen to inhabite, they had knowleage that *Valdiuia* was returned, within ſyxe moonethes after his departure: but with noo great plentie of vytayles, bycauſe he browght but a ſmaule ſhippe: yet with hope that ſhortely after, there ſhulde bee ſent them abundance of vytayles with a newe ſupply of men. For younge *Colonus*, the Admiral and viceroy of *Hiſpaniola*, and the other gouernours of the Ilande, acknowleaged that hetherto they had noo reſpecte to theym of *Dariena*, bycauſe they ſuppoſed that *Anciſus* the Lieuetenant had ſafely arryued there with his ſhippe laden with vatayles: wyllynge them from henſefoorth to bee of good cheere, and that they ſhulde lacke nothynge hereafter: But that at this preſent tyme, they had noo bygger ſhippe wherby they myght ſende them greater plentie of neceſſaries by *Valdiuia*. The vytayles therfore which he browght, ſerued rather ſumwhat to mytigate theyr preſent neceſſitie, then to ſatiſfye theyr lacke. Wherfore within a fewe dayes after *Valdiuia* his returne, they fel ageine into lyke ſcarſnes: eſpecially for aſmuch as a great ſtorme and tempeſt whiche came from the hyghe mountaynes with horrible thunder and lyghtnynge in the mooneth of Nouember, browght with it ſuche a fludde, that it partely caryed away and partly drowned all the corne and ſeedes whiche they had ſowne in the moonethe of September in a frutefull grounde before they went to kyng *Comogrus*. The ſeedes which they of *Hiſpaniola* caule *Maizium*, and they of *Vraba* caule *Hobba*: Wherof they make theyr breade, which alſo wee ſayde to bee rype thryſe euery yeare, bycauſe thoſe Regions are not bytten with the ſharpnes of wynter by reaſon of theyr nerenes to the Equinoctial lyne. It is alſo agreable to the principles of naturall philoſophie, that this breade made of *Maizius* or *Hobba*, ſhulde bee more holſome for th[e]inhabitantes of thoſe contreys then breade made of wheate, by reaſon that it is of eaſyer digeſtion. For wheras coulde is wantinge, the naturall heate is not dryuen frome the owtewarde partes into the inwarde partes and precordials, whereby digeſtion is much ſtrengthened. Beinge therfore thus fruſtrate of the increaſe of theyr ſeedes, and the kynges nere abowte them ſpoyled of both vytayles and golde, they were enforced to ſeeke theyr meate further of: And therwith to ſignifie to the gouernours of *Hiſpaniola* with what great neceſſitie they were oppreſſed: And what they had lerned of *Comogrus* as concernynge the Regions towarde the Southe: wyllynge them in conſideration therof to aduertyſe the kynge to ſende them a thouſande ſouldiers, by whoſe helpe they myght by force make waye throwghe the mountaynes diuidynge the ſea on bothe ſydes, if they coulde not brynge the ſame to paſſe quyetly. The ſame *Valdiuia* was alſo ſent on this meſſage, caryinge with hym to the kynges treaſourers (hauinge theyr office of recepte in *Hiſpaniola*) three hundreth poundes weyght of golde after eyght ounces to the pounde, for the fyfte portion dewe to the kynges eſcheker. This pounde of. viii. vnces, the Spanyardes caule *Marcha*, whiche in weyght amounteth to fyftie pieces of golde cauled *Caſtellani*. But the Caſtilians, caule a pound *Peſum*. We conclude therfore, that the ſume hereof, was. xv. thouſande of thoſe peeces of golde cauled *Caſtellani*. And thus is it apparente by this accompte, that they receaued of the barbarous kynges, a thouſande and fyue hundreth poundes of eyght ounces to the pounde. All the whiche they founde redy wrought in ſundry kyndes of ouches, as cheynes, braſelets, tablets, and plates, bothe to hange before theyr breſtes, and alſo at theyr eares, and noſethryls. *Valdiuia* therefore tooke ſhyppinge in the ſame carauell in the whiche he came laſt, and returned alſo beefore the thyrde day of the Ides of Ianuary, in the yeare of Chriſt M. D. XI. What
67 chaunced to hym in this vyage, we wyll declare in place conuenient. But let vs nowe returne to them which

Horrible thunder and lightnynge in the moneth of Nouember.

Bread of Maizius and hobba

Digestion strengthened by owtwarde colde.

Hunger.

A newe supply of a thousande souldyers.

Marcha.

Pesus.

A thousande and fyue hundreth pounds weyght of wrought gold

rem̃ayned in *Vraba.* After the diſmiſſinge of *Valdiuia*, beinge pricked forwarde with owtragious hunger, they determined to ſearche the inner partes of that goulfe in ſundry places. The extreme angle or poynt of the ſame goulfe is diſtant from the enterance therof, aboute foure ſcore myles. This angle or corner, thé Spanyardes caule *Culata.* *Vaſchus* hym ſelfe came to this poynte with a hundreth men, coaſtynge alonge by the goulfe with one brygantine and certeyne of the boates of thoſe regions, which the Vrabians caule *Vru*, lyke vnto them whiche th[e]inhabitantes of *Hiſpaniola* caule *Canoas.* From this poynt, there fauleth a ryuer from the Eaſt into the goulfe, ten tymes bygger then the ryuer of *Dariena* which alſo fauleth into the ſame. Saylyng alonge by the ryuer about the ſpace of thirtie m̃yles (for they caule it nyne leaques) and ſumwhat inclynynge towarde the ryght hande ſouthwarde, they founde certeyne vyllages of th[e]inhabitantes, the Kynge whereof, was cauled *Dabaiba.* Owre men alſo were certifyed before, that *Cemacchus* the kynge of *Dariena* whom they put to flyght in the battayle, fledde to this *Dabaiba.* But at the commynge of owre men, *Dabaiba* alſo fledde. It is thowght that he was admonyſſhed by *Cemacchus*, that he ſhulde not abyde the brunte of owre men. He folowed his counſayle: forſooke his vyllages, and lefte all thynges deſolate. Yet owre men founde heapes of bowes and arrowes: Alſo much houſehold ſtuffe and many fyſſhyng boates. But thoſe maryſhe-groundes were neyther apte for ſowinge of ſeedes or planting of trees. By reaſon wherof, they founde there fewe ſuche thynges as they deſyred: that is, plentie of vytayles. For th[e]inhabitantes of this Region, haue noo breade but ſuch as they get in other contreys nere abowte them by exchaunge for theyr fyſſhe, only to ſerue theyr owne neceſſitie. Yet founde they in the houſes of them that fledde, golde wrought and grauen, amountynge to the ſume of ſeuen thouſande of thoſe pièces whiche we ſayde to bee cauled *Caſtellani*: Alſo certeyne canoas: of the which they brought away twoo with them, and great plentie of theyr houſholde ſtuffe, with certeyne bundels of bowes and arrowes. They ſaye, that from the maryſſhes of that ryuer, there coome certeyne battes in the nyght ſeaſon, as bygge as turtle dooues, inuadyng men and bytinge them with a deadly wounde, as ſume of them teſtifie whiche haue byn bytten of the ſame. I my ſelfe communing with *Anciſus* the Lieuetenant whom they reiected, and amonge other thynges aſkynge him of the venemous bytinge of theſe battes, he toulde me that he hym ſelfe was bytten by one of them on the heele, his foote lyinge vncouered in the nyght by reaſon of the heate in ſommer ſeaſon: But that it hurt hym noo more, then yf he hadde byn bytten by any other beaſte not venemous. Other ſaye, that the bytynge of ſume of them is venemous: Yet that the ſame is healed incontinently, if it be waſſhed with water of the ſea. *Anciſus* toulde me alſo, that the venemous woundes made by the Canibales arrowes infected with poyſon, are healed by waſſhynge with water of the ſea, and alſo by cauteriſing with hotte Irens: And that he had experience thereof in the region of *Caribana*, where many of his men were ſo wounded. They departed therfore, from the poynte of the goulfe of *Vraba*, not well contented bycauſe they were not laden with vitailes. In this their returne, there aroſe ſoo greate a tempeſt in that wyde goulfe, that they were enforced to caſte into the ſea, all the houſeholde ſtuffe whiche they tooke from the poore wretches whiche lyued onely by fiſſhinge. The ſea alſo ſwalowed vpp the two boates that they tooke from theym, wherewyth the men were likewiſe drowned. The ſame tyme that *Vaſchus Nunnez* attempted to ſearche the poynte of the goulfe towarde the ſouthe, euen then by agremente, dyd *Rodericus Colmenaris* take his viage towarde the mountaynes by the eaſte, with thre ſcor[e] men, by the ryuer of the other goulfe. Aboute fortie miles diſtante from the mouthe of the ryuer, (for they caule it twelue leaques) he founde certeyne vilages ſituate vppon the bankes of the ryuer, whoſe *Chiui*, (that is,) kinge, they caule *Turui.* With this kinge dyd *Colmenaris* yet remayne when *Vaſchus* after his returne to *Dariena*, ſayling by the ſame ryuer, came to hym. Here refreſſhinge theyr hole coompany with the vitailes of this *Turui*, they departed from thenſe togyther. Other fortie myles from henſe, the ryuer encoompaſeth an Iland inhabited with fyſſher men. In this, bycauſe they ſawe greate plentie of the trees which beare *Caſſia fiſtula*, they named the Iland *Cannafiſtula.* They found in it, threeſcore villages of tenne cotages apiece. On the right ſyde of the Iland there runneth an other ryuer, whoſe chanell is of depth ſufficiente to beare brigantines. This ryuer they cauled *Riuum Nigrum*: from the mouthe wherof about. xv. myles diſtante they founde a towne of fyue hundreth houſes ſeuered: whoſe *Chebi*, (that is,) kinge, was cauled *Abenamachei.* They all forſooke theyr houſes as ſoone as they harde of owre mennes commyng. But when they ſawe that owre men purſued them, they turned ageyne and ranne vppon them with deſperate mindes, as men driuen from their owne poſſeſſions. Theyr wepons, are ſwordes of wod, and long ſtaues like iauelens, hardened at the ende with fyer: But they vſe neyther bowes nor arrowes: nor any other of th[e]inhabitantes of the weſte ſyde of the goulfe. The pore naked wretches were eaſely dryuen to flight with owre weapons. As owre men folowed theym in the chaſe, they tooke the kinge *Abenamachei* and certeine of his noble men. A common ſouldier of owres whom the kynge had wounded, coomminge to hym when he was taken, cutte of his arme at one ſtroke with his ſwoorde. But this was doone vnwares to the capitaynes. The number of the Chriſtian men which were here, was aboute a hundrethe and fiftie: the one halfe whereof, the capytaynes lefte here, and they with the reſydue, rowed vpp the ryuer ageyne with twelue of the boates of thoſe Regions, whiche they caul. *Vru*, as they of *Hiſpaniola* caule them *Canoas*, as we haue ſayde. From the ryuer of *Riuus Niger* and the Iland of *Cannafiſtula*,

The goulfe of Vraba.

Culata.

Vaschus searcheth the goulfe of Vraba.

A maruelous great ryuer, faulyng into the goulfe of Vraba.

Kynge Dabaiba and Chemacchus, are dryuen to flyght.

Marysshe grounde

Wrought gold wheyghynge vii. thousand Castellanes.

Battes as bygge as turtle doues.

Ancisus bytten of a batte

Remedies ageynst venemous arrows

A tempest.

Colmenaris taketh his vyage towarde the montains

Kynge Turui.

The Iland of Cannafistula.

68

The ryuer of Riuus Niger.

A towne of v. hundreth houses.

Th[e]inhabitantes of the west syde of the goulfe.

Kynge Abenamachei, is taken and his arme cut of.

Many other ryuers fauling into Riuus Niger.

for the ſpace of threeſcore and ten myles, leauing both on the right hande and on the lefte many riuers faul'nge into it bigger then it ſelfe, they entred into one by the conductynge of one of the naked inhabitantes, beinge appoynted a guyde for that purpoſe. Vppon the banke of this ryuer next vnto the mouthe of the ſame, there was a kynge cauled *Abibeiba*: who, bycauſe the Region was full of maryſſhes, had his palaice buylded in the toppe of a highe tree, a newe kynde of byldynge and ſeldome ſeene. But that lande beareth trees of ſuche exceding heig[h]th, that emonge theyr branches, a man may frame large houſes: As wee reede the like in diuers autoures howe in many Regions where the ocean ſea ryſethe and ouerflowethe the lande, the people were accuſtomed to flye to the high trees, and after the faule of the water, to take the fyſſhe lefte on the lande. This maner of buyldinge, is to laye beames croſſe ouer the branches of the trees, faſte bownde togyther, and there vppon to rayſe theyr frame, ſtrongly made ageynſte wynde and wether. Owre men ſuppoſe that they buylde theyr houſes in trees, by reaſon of the greate fluddes and ouerflowinge of ryuers whiche often tymes chaunce in thoſe Regions. Theſe trees are of ſuche heighth, that the ſtrength of no manes arme is able to hurle a ſtone to the houſes buylded therein. And therfore doo I gyue the better credit to Plinie and other autours whiche wrytte that the trees in ſume places in *India* are ſoo high by reaſon of the frutefulnes of the grounde, abundance of water, and heate of the Region, that noo man is able to ſhute ouer theym with an arrowe. And by iudgemente of all men, it is thowght that there is noo frutfuller ground vnder the ſoonne, then this is whereof wee nowe entreate. Owr men meaſuringe manye of theſe trees, founde theym to bee of ſuche biggnes, that ſeuen men, ye ſumetymes eight, holdinge hande in hande with theyr armes ſtreached furthe, were ſcarſely able too fathame them aboute. Yet haue they theyr cellers in the grounde, well replenyſſhed with ſuch wynes wherof wee haue ſpoken beefore. For albeit that the vehemencie of the wynde, is not of poure to caſte downe thoſe houſes, or to breeke the branches of the trees, yet are they toſſed therewith, and ſwaye ſumwhat from ſyde to ſyde, by reaſon wherof, the wyne ſhulde bee muche troubeled with moouinge. All other neceſſayre thinges, they haue with theym in the trees. When the kynge or any other of the noble men, dyne or ſuppe in theſe trees, theyr wynes are browght theym from the celleres by theyr ſeruantes, whyche by meanes of exerciſe, are accuſtomed with noo leſſe celeritie to runne vppe and downe the ſteares adherente to the tree, then doo owre waytynge boyes vppon the playne grounde, fetche vs what wee caule for from the cobbarde byſyde owr dyninge table. Owre men therfore, came to the tree of kinge *Abibeiba*, and by th[e]interpretoures cauled hym foorthe to communication, gyuinge hym ſignes of peace, and there vppon willinge hym to coomme downe. But he denyed that he woolde coomme owte of his houſe: Deſyringe them to ſuffer hym to lyue after his faſſhion. But owre men fell from fayre woordes to threateninge, that excepte he wolde deſcende with all his famelie, they wolde eyther ouerthrowe the tree, or elles ſet it on fyer. When he had denied them ageyne, they fell to hewinge the tree with theyr axes. *Abibeiba* ſeeinge the chippes faule from the tree on euery ſyde, chaunged his purpoſe, and came downe with only two of his ſoones. Thus after they had entreated of peace, they communed of gatheringe of golde. *Abibeiba* anſwered that he had noo golde, and that he neuer had any neede therof, nor yet regarded it any more then ſtones. But when they were inſtante vppon hym, he ſayde vnto them. If yowe ſoo greatly deſyre golde, I will ſeeke for ſume in the nexte mountaynes, and bringe it vnto yowe. For it is plentifully engendred in thoſe mountaynes. Then he appointed a day when he wold bringe this golde. But *Abibeiba* came neyther at the day, nor after the daye appoynted. They departed therfore from thenſe well refreſſhed with his vitailes and wyne, but not with goulde as they hoped. Yet were they enformed the like by *Abibeiba* and his ditionaries as concerninge the golde mynes and the Canibales, as they harde before of kinge *Comogrus*. Saylinge yet further aboute thirtie myles, they chaunced vppon certeyne cotages of the Canibales: But vtterly voyde with owte men or ſtuffe. For when they had knowleage that owre men wandered in the prouinces nere aboute theym they reſorted to the mountaynes, caryinge al theyr goodes and ſtuffe wyth them.

Frutefull grounde.

Cellers in the grounde.

Abibeiba, the kynge of the tree, yeldethe to Vaschus.

69

Gold no more estemed then stones.

Canibales.

¶ The fyfte booke of the seconde Decade

Of the ſuppoſed continent.

Kyng Abraiba

IN the meane tyme whyle theſe thynges were doone alonge by the ſhores or bankes of the ryuer, a certeyne Decurian, that is a capytayne ouer tenne, of the coompanye of thoſe which *Vaſcus* and *Colmenaris* had lefte for a garryſon in *Riuo Nigro* in the dominion of kynge *Abinamachei*, whether it were that he was compelled throwgh hunger, or that his fataule dayes was nowe coome, he attempted with his ſouldiers to ſearche the countreys nere there about, and entered into the vyllage of a king cauled *Abraiba*. This capitaynes name was *Raia*: whom *Abraiba* ſlewe, with twoo of his felowes: but the reſydue fledde. Within a fewe dayes

afte., *Abraiba* hauinge compaſſion of the calamitie of his kynſeman and neyghbour *Abenamacheius* being dryuen from his owne poſſeſſions (whoſe arme alſo we ſayd before that one of the ſouldiers cut of at the riuer of *Riuo Nigro* and nowe remaynynge with *Abraiba* to whome he fledde by ſtelth after he was taken, went to *Abibeiba* th[e]inhabitour of the tree, who had nowe lykewyſe forſaken his contrey for feare of owre men, and wandered in the deſolate mountaynes and wooddes. When he had therfore founde him, he ſpake to him in this effecte. What thynge is this Oh vnfortunate *Abibeiba*: or what nation is this that ſoo tormenteth vs that wee can not enioye owre quyet lybertie? Howe longe, howe longe I ſay ſhall wee ſuffer theyr crueltie? were it not much better for vs to die, then to abide ſuch iniuries and oppreſſions as yow, as *Abinamacheius* owre kynſeman, as *Cemacchus*, as *Careta*, as *Poncha*, as I and other princes of owr order doo ſuſteyne? Canne any thinge bee more intollerable then to ſee owre wyues, owre chyldren, and owre ſubiectes, to bee ledde awaye captiues, and owre goodes to be ſpoyled euen before owre faces.

Abraiba causeth the kynges to rebell.

I take the goddes to wytnes, that I ſpeake not ſoo much for myne owne part as I doo for yowe whoſe caſe I lament. For albeit they haue not yet touched me, neuertheleſſe, by the example of other, I owght to thynke that my deſtruction is not farre of. Let vs therfore (yf wee bee men) trye owre ſtrengthe and proue owre fortune ageynſt them whiche haue delte thus cruelly with *Abenamacheius*, and dryuen hym owte of his contrey. Let vs ſet on them with all owre poure, and vtterly deſtroy them And yf wee can not ſleye them al, yet ſhall wee make them afrayde eyther to aſſayle vs ageyne, or at the leaſt dimynyſſhe theyr poure. For what ſoo euer ſhall befaule, nothynge can chaunce woorſe vnto vs then that which we now ſuffer. When *Abibeiba* harde theſe wordes and ſuch other like, he conde[ſ]cended to doo in al thinges as *Abraiba* wolde requyre: Where vppon they appoynted a day to brynge theyr conſpiracie to paſſe. But the thynge chaunced not accordynge to their deſyre. For of thoſe whiche wee ſayde to haue paſſed to the Canibales, there returned by chaunce to *Riuus Niger* the nyght before the day appoynted to woorke theyr feate, thirtie men to the ayde of theym whiche were lefte there yf anye ſedition ſhulde ryſe as they ſuſpected. Therfore at the daunyng of the day, the confetherate kynges with ſyue hundreth of theyr ditionaries armed after theyr maner, beſeaged the vyllage with a terrible alarome, knowynge nothynge of the newe menne which came thether the ſame nyght. Here owre target men came foorth ageynſt them, and fyrſt aſſayled them a farre of with theyr arrowes, then with theyr pykes, and laſte with theyr ſwoordes: But the naked ſeely ſowles, perceauinge a greater number of theyr aduerſaries then they looked for, were ſoone dryuen to flyght, and ſlayne for the moſt parte lyke ſcaterynge ſheepe. The kynges eſcaped, they ſlewe manye, and tooke many captiues whiche they ſente to *Dariena* where they vſe them for labourers to tyll and ſowe they grounde. Theſe thynges thus happely atchyued, and that prouince quyeted, they returned by the ryuer to *Dariena*, leauinge theyr thyrtie men for a garryſon vnder the gouernance of one *Furatado* a capitayne. This *Furatado* therfore, ſente from *Riuo Nigro* where he was appoynted gouernoure, twentie of his felowes and one woman, with. xxiiii. captiues to *Vaſchus* and his company, in one of the byggeſt *Canoas* of that prouince. As they rowed downe by the ryuer, there came foorth ſoodenly ouerthwarte the ryuer ageynſt them, foure greate *Canoas*, which ouerthrew theyr boate and ſlewe as many of them as they coulde coome by, bycauſe they were vnprepared ſuſpecting noo ſuch thinge. Owre men were all drowned and ſlayne excepte twoo, which hyd them ſelues amonge certeyne fagottes that ſwamme on the water, in the whiche they laye lurkynge, and ſoo eſcaped to theyr felowes in *Dariena*: who by them beinge aduertyſed hereof, beganne to caſte theyr wyttes what this thyng might meane: beinge no leſſe ſolicitate for them ſelues, then meditatynge in what daunger theyr felowes had byn in *Riuo Nigro*, excepte by good fortune, thoſe thirtie newe men which were ſente to them, had coome to the vyllage the nyght before the conſpiracie ſhulde haue byn wrought. Conſultinge therefore what was beſt to bee doone herein, at the lengthe with dylygent ſearchynge they had intelligence that fyue kynges, that is to wytte, *Abibeiba* the inhabitoure of the tree, and *Cemacchus* dryuen from his vyllage whiche owre menne nowe poſſeſſed, *Abraiba* alſo and *Abenamacheius*, kynſemen, with *Dabaiba* the king of the fyſher men inhabytinge the corner of the goulfe whiche we cauled *Culata*, were all aſſembled to conſpire the Chriſtian mens deſtruction at a day aſſigned. Which thynge had ſurely coome to paſſe, if it had not byn otherwyſe hyndered by gods prouidence. It is therfore aſcrybed to a myracle: And trewly not vnwoorthely if wee weye howe chaunce detected and bewrayed the counſayle of theſe kynges. And bycauſe it is worthy to bee harde, I wyll declare it in fewe woordes. *Vaſchus Nunnez* therfore, who rather by poure then by election, vſurped the gouernaunce in *Dariena*, beinge a maſter of fence, and rather a raſſhe royſter then politike capitayne (althowgh fortune ſumtyme fauoureth fooles) amonge many women which in dyuers of theſe regions he had taken captyue, had one whiche in fauoure and bewtie excelled all other. To this woman her owne brother often tymes reſorted, who was alſo dryuen owte of his contrey with kynge *Cemacchus*, with whom he was very familier and one of his chiefe gentelmen. Amonge other communication which he had with his ſyſter whom he loued entierly, he vttered theſe woordes. My deare and welbeloued ſyſter, gyue eare to my ſayinges, and keepe moſte ſecreatelye that whiche I wyll declare vnto yowe, yf yowe deſyre yowre owne wealth and myne, and the proſperitie of owre contrey and kynſefolkes. The inſolencie and crueltie of theſe menne

Men good enowgh yf they had iren

The kynges are are dryuen to flyght.

70 Captyues.

A garyson of xxx. men.

xviii. Spanyardes slayne and drowned

The kinges which conspired the death of the Christians.

A strange chaunce.

Vaſchus.

Women can keepe no counsayle.

whiche haue dryuen vs owte of owre poſſeſſions, is ſoo intollerable, that the princes of the lande are determyned noo longer to ſuſteyne theyr oppreſſions.

An army of C [hundred] canoas and fyue. M. [thousand] men. Tryumphe before victory

By the conductinge therfore of fyue kinges (which he named in order) they haue prepared a hundreth greate *Canoas*, with fyue thouſande men of warre by lande and by ſea, with vitailes alſo in the village of *Tichiri*, ſufficient to maintayne ſuch an army. Declaringe further, that the kinges by agremente, had diuided emonge theym the goodes and headdes of owre men: And therfore admonyſhed her, at the daye appoynted by ſume occaſion to conueigh her ſelfe owte of the way, leſte ſhee ſhuld bee ſlayne in the confuſion of the bataile. For the ſouldier victourer, is not woonte to ſpare any that commethe in his raſe. And thus ſhewinge his ſyſter the daye aſſigned to the ſlawghter, he departed. But the younge woman (for it is the ſwoord that women feare and obſerue more then the grauitie of *Cato*,) whether it were for the loue or feare that ſhee had to *Vaſchus*, forgettinge her parentes, her kynſfolkes, her countrey and all her frendes, ye and all the kinges into whoſe throtes *Vaſchus*, had thruſte his ſwoorde ſhee opened all the matter vnto hym, and conceled none of thoſe thinges whiche her vndiſcrete broother had declared to her. When *Vaſchus* therfore had hard the matter, he cauſed *Fuluia*, (for ſoo hadˆ they named her) to ſende for her brother, who came to her immediatly, was taken, and enforced to tell the hole circumſtances of the matter. Where vppon, he playnely confeſſed that kinge *Cemacchus* hys lordē and maſter, ſente thoſe foure canoas to the deſtruction of owre men, and that theſe newe conſpiracies were attempted by his conſaile. Likewiſe that *Cemacchus* ſowght the deſtruction of *Vaſchus* hym ſelfe when he ſent hym fortie men vnder pretence of frendſhippe to tyll and ſowe his grownd after the maner of the contrey, gyuinge them in commaundement to ſleye *Vaſchus* at *Marris*, whyther he reſorted to comforte his laboures as the maner is of all good huſbandes. Yet durſte they at noo tyme execute theyr lordes commaundemente vppon hym, bycauſe *Vaſchus* came neuer emonge them afoote or vnarmed, but was accuſtomed to ryde to theym in harnes with a iauelen in his hande and a ſwoorde by his ſyde. Wherfore *Cemacchus* beinge fruſtrate of his particuler conſaile, tooke this laſte thing in hande to his owne deſtruction and his neighbours. For the conſpiracie beinge detected, *Vaſchus* cauled threeſcore and tenne ſouldiers, commaundinge them to folowe him, but declared nothing vnto them whether hee wente or what hee entended to do. He wente forwarde therfore fyrſte towarde *Cemacchus* which ley from hym, onely tenne myles. But he had knowleage that he was fledde to *Dabaiba* the kinge of the mariſhes of *Culata*. Yet ſearchinge his village, he founde a noble man a ruler vnder hym and alſo his kinſſeman, whome he tooke priſoner with many other of his familiers and frendes both men and women. The ſame houre that he ſette forwarde to ſeeke for *Cemacchus*, *Rodericus Colmenaris* rowed vp the ryuer with foure of theyr byggeſte *Canoas* and threeſcore men by the conduction of the maydes brother who browght hym to the village of *Tichiri*, in the which we ſayd all their vitailes to remayne whiche were prepared for theyr armye. *Colmenaris* therfore, ſacked the village, and poſſeſſed all their vitayles and wyne of ſundry colours: likewiſe tooke the gouernoure thereof priſoner, and hanged hym on the tree in whiche he dwelte hym ſelfe, commaundinge hym too bee ſhotte throwgh with arrowes in the ſight of th[e]inhabitantes, and with hym foure other rulers to bee hanged on iebbettes to the exemple of other rebelles. This punyſſhmente thus executed vppon the conſpiratours, ſtrooke the hartes of all th[e]inhabitantes of the prouince wyth ſuche feare, that there is not nowe a man that dare ſtoore his finger ageynſt the wrathe of owre men. They lyue nowe therefore quietly: And the other kinges by theyr exemple doo the gladlyer liue in ſubiection, with leſſe offence bearinge the yoke whyche they can by noo meanes ſhake of.

71

The conſpiracie of the kynges is detected.

Kyng Cemacchus, conſpyreth the deth of Vaschus.

Vaschus purseweth the kynges with three score and ten men.

Colmenaris sacketh the vyllage of Tichiri.

Fyue rulers hanged and shot throwgh with arrows.

THE SYXTE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE

Of the ſuppoſed continente.

THeſe thynges, thus fynyſſhed, aſſemblinge all their company togither they determined with one conſente, that a meſſynger ſhulde foorth with bee ſente to *Hiſpaniola* (from whenſe they haue their lawes and ayde) to declare the hole order of all theſe affayres, fyrſte to the admirall and gouernoure of the Ilande, and afterwarde to the Kinge of Spayne, and to perſuade hym to ſende thoſe thouſand men which younge *Comogrus* ſaid to bee expediente to paſſe ouer the mountaynes lying betwene them and the golden regions towarde the Southe. *Vaſchus* him ſelfe dyd greatly affecte this embaſage: But neyther woolde the reſydewe of his felowes electe hym therto, nor his factionaries ſuffer hym to departe: Aſwell for that therby they thought they ſhulde bee left deſolate, as alſo that they murmured that if *Vaſchus* ſhulde once goo from theym, he wolde neuer returne to ſuche turmoyles and calamities, by th[e]example of *Valdiuia* and *Zamudius*, who had byn now abſente ſence

The golden regions on the south side the mountaynes.

The death of Valdiuia and Zamudius.

the mooneth of January, in ſoo muche that they thowght they woolde neuer coomme ageine. But the matter was otherwiſe then they tooke it, as I wyl ſhewe in his place. For they were periſſhed. At the lengeth after many ſcrutinies, they elected one Iohn *Quicedus*, a graue man well in yeares, and treaſourer of the kings eſcheker in thoſe prouinces. They had conceaued a good opinion of this *Quicedus* that all thynges ſhulde bee well browght to paſſe by his meanes, aſwell for his wyſdome, as alſo that they were in good hop[e] of his returne, bycauſe he had brought his wiffe with hym to thoſe regions, whome he lefte with his felowes for a pledge of his comminge ageyne. When they had thus elected *Quicedus*, they were ageyne of diuers opinions whome they might ioyne with hym for aſſiſtance: Affirminge that it were a daungerous thinge to committe ſoo weightye a matter to one mans handes. Not that they miſtruſted *Quicedus*, but bycauſe the life of man is frayle, and the chaunge of the ayer perelous, eſpecially to theym hauynge nowe of longe tyme byn accuſtomed to the temperature nere vnto the *Equinoctiall*, if they ſhulde bee compelled to returne to the North with alteration of ayer and dyet. They thowght it therfore good to appoynt a companion to *Quicedus*, that if by chance the one ſhuld fayl the other might remayne: And that if they both eſcaped, the king ſhuld gyue the better credit to the relation of both: After longe conſultation therfore, they choſe *Rodericus Colmenaris* a man of good experience, of whom we haue often tymes made mencion. For from his youth, he had trauayled ouer al Europe by land and by ſea, and was preſent at the doinges of all thynges in Italy ageynſt the Frenchemen: Of whoſe returne alſo, they had noo ſmaule hope bycauſe he had many fermes and hadde tylled and ſowne much grounde in *Dariena*, by th[e]increaſe wherof he might get much gold by ſellyng the ſame to his felows. He lefte therfore the charge of al his affayres in *Dariena*, with his partener *Alphonſus Nunnez*, a Iudge of the lawe, who alſo was lyke to haue byn choſen procuratoure of this vyage before *Colmenaris* if one had not put theim in remembraunce that he had a wyfe at *Matritis*: fearyng leaſt beinge ouercoome with her teares, he woolde no more returne. *Colmenaris* therefore, a free man and at libertie being aſſociate aſſiſtant with *Quicedus* they tooke ſhyppyng togyther in a brigantine, the fourth day of the Calendes of Nouember, in the yeare of Chriſt. 1512. In this vyage, beinge toſſed with ſundry tempeſtes, they were by the violence of the wynde, caſt vppon the Weſte coaſtes of that large Ilande whiche in the fyrſte Decade we cauled *Cuba*, ſuppoſed to haue byn fyrme lande. They were ſore oppreſſed with hunger. For it was nowe three moonethes ſence they departed from theyr felowes. By reaſon whereof, they were enforced to take lande to proue what ayde they coulde gette amonge the inhabitantes. Theyr chaunce therefore, was to arryue in that part of the Ilande, where *Valdiuia* was dryuen alande by tempeſt. But oh yowe wretched men of *Dariena*? Tary for *Valdiuia* whom yowe ſent to prouide to helpe yowre neceſſities? Prouyde for yowre ſelues rather and truſt not to them whoſe fortune yowe knowe not. For when he arryued in *Cuba*, th[e]inhabitantes ſlewe him with al his felowes, and lefte the carauell wherin they were caried, torne in pieces and halfe couered with ſande on the ſhore: where *Quicedus* and *Colmenaris* fyndyng the fragmentes therof, bewayled their felowes myſſortune. But they founde none of theyr carkeſes: ſuppoſinge that they were eyther drowned, or deuoured of the Canibals, which oftentymes make incurſions into that Ilande to hunte for men. But at the length, by twoo of the Ilande men which they had taken, they had knowleage of *Valdiuia* his deſtruction: And that th[e]inhabitantes the more greedely attempted the ſame, for that they had harde by the bablynge of one of his felowes that he had great plentie of gold. For they alſo take pleaſure in the bewtie of gold, which they forme artificially into ſundry ouches. Thus owre men ſtryken with penſyuenes for the cruell deſtenie of theyr felowes, and in vayne ſeekynge reuenge for theyr iniuries, determyned to forſake that vnfortunate lande, departynge from thoſe couetous naked barbarians with more ſorowe and neceſſitie then they were in before. Or euer they had paſſed the South ſyde of *Cuba*, they fel into a thouſande myſſortunes: and had intellygence that *Fogeda* arryued thereaboute, leadynge a myſerable lyfe, toſſed and turmoyled with tempeſtes and vexed with a thouſand perplexities: Soo that departing from thenſe almoſt alone, his felowes beinge for the moſt parte all conſumed with maladies and famyn, he came with much difficultie to *Hiſpaniola*, where he dyed by force of the poyſon of his venemous wound which he had receaued in *Vraba* as we haue ſaid before. But *Anciſus* elected Lieuetenaunt, ſayled by all thoſe coaſtes with much better fortune. For as he hym ſelfe toulde me, he founde proſperous wyndes in thoſe parties, and was well enterteyned of th[e]inhabitantes of *Cuba*. But this ſpecially in the dominion of a certeyne kynge whoſe name was *Commendator*. For wheras he deſyred of the Chriſtian men whiche paſſed by, to bee baptiſed, demaundynge the name of the gouernour of the Ilande next vnto *Hiſpaniola*, beinge a noble man and a knyght of th[e]order of *Calatraua* of which order al are cauled *Commendatores*, this kynges deſyre was to bee named after hym. Kynge *Commendator* therfore, frendely receaued *Anciſus*, and gaue hym greate abundance of al thynges neceſſarie. But what *Anciſus* lerned of theyr religion durynge the tyme of his remaynynge there, I haue thowght good to aduertyſe yowre holynes. Yowe ſhall therefore vnderſtande, that certeyne of owre men ſaylinge by the coaſtes of *Cuba*, lefte with kynge *Commendator* a certeyne poore maryner beinge diſeaſed. Who in ſhorte ſpace recouerynge his health, and hauynge nowe ſumwhat lerned theyr language, beganne to growe into great eſtimation with the kynge and his ſubiectes, in ſoo muche that he was oftentymes

Iohannes Quicedus is sent to Spain

Rodericus Colmenaris, assistant with Quicedus.

A wyfe is a hynderance

72

Chaunge of the ayer is daungerous.

Cuba.

Three moonethes from Dariena to Cuba, by reason of tempests

The death of Valdiuia.

Hurt of lauyshenes of the tonge.

The calamitie and death of Fogeda.

Maladies and famen.

The prosperous vyage of Ancisus.

A kyng of Cuba baptised by the name of Commendator.

Ancisus

73

A maruelous historie howe God wrought miracles by the simple fayth of a maryner.

the kynges Lieuetenaunt in his warres ageynſt other princes his bortherers. This mans fortune was ſoo good, that all thynges proſpered well that he tooke in hande. And albeit that he were not lerned, yet was he a vertuous and well meanynge man accordynge to his knowleage, and dyd religiouſly honoure the bleſſed virgin, bearynge euer about with hym her picture fayre paynted vpon paper and fowd in his apparell nere vnto his breſte: Signifyinge vnto the kyng, that this holynes was the cauſe of al his victories: perſuadynge hym to doo the lyke, and to caſt away all his *Zemes* which were none other then the ſymilitudes of euyll ſpirites, moſte cruell enemyes and deuourers of owre ſowles: And to take vnto hym the holy virgin and moother of god to bee his patroneſſe if he deſyred all his affayres aſwell in warre as in peace to ſucceed proſperouſly. Alſo that the bleſſed virgyn woolde at noo tyme fayle hym, but bee euer redy to helpe him and his, if they woolde with deuoute hartes caule vppon her name. The maryner had ſoone perſuaded the naked nation: And there vppon gaue the kynge (who demaunded the ſame) his pycture of the virgin, to whom he buylded and dedicate a chapell and an altare, euer after contemnynge and reiectynge his *Zemes*. Of theſe *Zemes* made of goſſampine cotton to the ſimilitudes of ſprytes walkynge in the nyght which they oftentymes ſee, and ſpeake with them familierly, wee haue ſpoken ſufficiently in the nynth booke of the fyrſte Decade. Furthermore, accordynge to the inſtitution of this maryner, when the ſoonne draweth towarde the faule, this kynge *Commendator* with all his famely bothe men and women, reſorte daylye to the ſayde chapell of the virgin Marie, where kneelyng on theyr knees and reuerently bowyng downe theyr heades, holdynge theyr handes ioyned togyther, they ſalute th[e]image of the virgin with theſe woordes: *Aue Maria, Aue Maria.* For fewe of them can rehearſe any more woordes of this prayer. At *Anciſus* his beinge there, they tooke hym and his felowes by the handes, and ledde them to this chapell with reioyſinge, ſayinge that they woolde ſhewe theym maruelous thynges. When they were entered, they poynted with theyr fyngers to the Image of the virgin al to beſet and hanged abowte with ouches and iewels and many earthen pottes, fylled ſum with ſundry meates, and ſume with water, rownde aboute all the tabernacle. For theſe thynges they offer to the image in the ſteede of ſacrifice, accordyng to theyr owlde ſuperſticion towarde theyr *Zemes*. Beinge demaunded why they dyd thus, they anſwered, leaſte the image ſhulde lacke meate if perhaps it ſhuld be a hungerd. For they moſt certenly beleue that images may hunger, and that they doo eate and drynke. But what ayde and helpe they confeſſe that they haue had of the godly poure of this image, that is of the bleſſed virgin, it is a thynge woorthy to be harde, and moſt aſſuredly to bee taken for a truthe. For by the report of owre men, there is ſuch feruent godly loue and zeale in theſe ſimple men toward the holy virgin, that to them beinge in the daungers of warre ageynſt theyr enemies, they doo in maner (yf I may ſoo terme it) compel her to deſcende from heauen to helpe them in theyr neceſſities: For ſuch is the goodnes of god, that he hath leſte vnto men in maner a pryce wherby wee may purchaſe hym with his holy angels and ſayntes, that is to wytte, burnyng loue, charitie and zeale. Howe therfore can the bleſſed virgin at any time be abſent from them which cal for her helpe with pure faith and feruent loue? *Commendator* him ſelfe, with al his noble men and gentelmen, doo teſtifie with one voyce, that in a fought battayle in the which this maryner was capitayne, bearyng with hym this picture of the virgin Marie, the *Zemes* of theyr enemies turned their backes and trembeled in the preſence of the virgins Image and in the ſyght of them all. For euery of them brynge theyr *Zemes* to the battayle, hopynge by theyr helpe to obteyne the victorie. Ye they ſay further, that duryng the tyme of the battayle, they ſawe not only an Image, but a liuely woman clothed in fayre and whyte apparel, aydynge them ageinſt theyr enemies: whiche thynge alſo the enemyes them ſelues acknowleaged, confeſſynge that on the contrarye parte ſhee appeared to them, ſhakynge a ſepter in her hande with threatenynge countenaunce, whiche cauſed theyr hartes to ſhake and faynt for feare. But after that this maryner departed from them, beinge taken into a ſhyppe of certeyne Chriſtians paſſynge by thoſe coaſtes, *Commendator* declared that he with all his ſubiectes, continually obſerued his inſtitucions: In ſoo muche that beinge at contention with another prince, which of theyr *Zemes* were moſte holy and of greateſte poure, the matter grewe to ſuche extremitie that they tryed it with hande ſtrokes: And that in all theſe attemptes, the bleſſed virgin neuer fayled hym, but was euer preſente in the brunte of the battayle, and gaue hym eaſye victorie with a ſmaule poure of men, ageynſt a mayne armye of his enemies. Beinge demaunded with what woordes they cryed vppon the virgin Mary when they aſſayled theyr enemies, they anſwered that they had lerned noo other woordes of the mariners doctrine, but *Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos*: That is, holy Mary helpe vs, holy Marye helpe vs: And this alſo in the Spanyſſhe tonge. For he had lefte theſe woordes in the mouthes of all men. Whyle they murthered and deſtroyed them ſelues thus on bothe ſydes, they fell to entreatie of peace and agreed to trye the matter, not hande to hande by combatte of certeyne choſen for bothe parties as the maner was amonge the Romaynes and dyuers other nations in the owlde tyme, or by any ſlyght or policie, but that twoo younge men ſhulde bee choſen, for eche partie one, with theyr handes bounde faſt behynde them in the playne fielde, bothe parties beinge ſworne to acknowleage that *Zemes* to bee the better, which fyrſt looſed the bandes of the younge man whiche ſtoode bounde for the tryall of his religion. Thus diuidinge them ſelues, and placeinge the ſayde younge men before them in the ſyght of them al, with theyr handes faſt bounde by theyr enemyes, the

Be not raſhe in iudgement

Zemes.

A chapel builded to the picture of the virgin Mary

God respecteth the infancie of faithe for zeles sake

One Religion turned into an other, holdeth styl many thinges of the fyrst.

A ſtrange fantaſie.

The effect of godly zeale.

A miracle in the tyme of the battayle

The virgin Mary, is present at the battayle.

74

A maruelus experience of fayth

Muche lyke vnto this, is redde iii. Reg. xviii.

contrary parte cauled fyrſt on theyr *Zemes* (that is, the deuyll to whoſe ſimilitude theyr Images are made) who immediatly appered in his lykenes aboute the younge man that ſtoode bounde in the defence of Sathans kyngedome.

The deuil appeareth in his lykenes

But as ſoone as *Commendator* with his coompanye cryed *Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos*, forthwith there appeared a fayre virgin clothed in whyte, at whoſe preſence the deuell vanquiſſhed immediatly. But the virgin hauinge a longe rod in her hande, and putting the ſame on the bandes of the younge man that ſtoode for *Commendator*, his handes were looſed immediatly in the ſyght of them all, and his bandes founde about the handes of hym that ſtoode for the other partie, in ſomuch that they them ſelues fownde hym dowble bounde. But for all this, were not the enemies ſatiſſyed: querelinge that this thynge was doone by ſum ſlyght or diuiſe of man, and not by the poure of the better *Zemes*. And there vppon requyred for th[e]aduoydynge of all ſuſpection, that there myght bee eyght graue and ſage men appoynted, for eche ſyde foure, whiche ſhulde bynde the men in the ſyght of theim all, and alſo gyue iudgemente whether the thynge were doone withowte craſte or gyle. Oh pure ſimplicitie and conſtant fayth: Oh golden and bleſſed confidence. *Commendator* and his familiers, doubted not to graunte theyr enemies theyr requeſte with lyke faythe wherwith the diſeaſed woman obteyned healthe of the fluxe of her bludde, and wherby Peter feared not to walke on the ſea at the ſyght of his maſter Chriſte. Theſe younge men therfore were bounde in the preſence of theſe eight graue men, and were placed within theyr lyſtes in the ſyght of bothe parties. Thus vppon a ſigne gyuen, when they cauled vppon theyr *Zemes*, there appered in the ſyght of them all, a deuyll with a longe tayle, a wyde mouthe, greate teeth, and hornes, reſemblyng the ſimilitude of the Image which the kyng being enemye to *Commendator*, honoured for his *Zemes*. As this deuyl attempted to looſe the bandes of his cliente, the bleſſed virgin was immediatly preſente as before at the caule of *Commendator* and his ſubiectes, and with her rodde looſed the bandes of her ſuppliant, which were ageyne lykewyſe founde faſt tyed aboute the handes of hym that ſtoode for the contrarye parte. The enemies therefore of *Commendator*, beinge ſtryken with greate feare and amaſed by reaſon of this greate miracle, confeſſed that the *Zemes* of the virgin was better then their *Zemes*. For the better profe wherof, theſe pagans beinge bortherers to *Commendator*, which had euer before byn at continuall warre and enmitie with hym, when they had knowleage that *Anciſus* was arryued in thoſe coaſtes, they ſente ambaſadoures vnto hym, to deſyre hym to ſend them preeſtes of whom they might bee baptiſed: Where vppon he ſent them twoo which hee had with hym there at that preſent. They baptiſed in one day a hundreth and thirtie of th[e]inhabitantes, ſumtyme enemyes to *Commendator*, but now his frendes and ioyned with him in aliance. All ſuche as came to bee baptiſed, gaue the preeſtes of theyr owne liberalitie, eyther a cocke or a henne. But no capons: for they can not yet ſkyl how to carue theyr cocke chykens to make them capons. Alſo certeyne ſalted fyſſhes, and newe fyne cakes made of theyr breade: likewiſe certeyne foules franked and made fatte. When the preeſtes reſorted to the ſhippes, ſyxe of theſe newe baptyſed men accoompanied theym laden with vitailes, wherwith they ledde a ioyfull Eaſter. For on the Sunday two dayes before ſaynte *Lazarus* day, they departed from *Dariena*, and touched at that tyme, onely to the cape or angle of *Cuba* nere vnto the Eaſte ſyde of *Hiſpaniola*. At the requeſte of *Commendator*, *Anciſus* leſte with hym one of his coompanie, to th[e]intente too teache hym and his ſubiectes wyth other his bortherers, the ſalutacion of the angell whiche we caule the *Aue Maria*. For they thinke them ſelues to be ſoo much the more beloued of the bleſſed virgin, as they can reherſe the more woordes of that prayer. Thus *Anciſus* takinge his leaue of kynge *Commendator*, directed his courſe to *Hiſpaniola*, from whiche he was not farre. Shortely after, he tooke his viage to Spayne, and came to *Valladoleto* to the kynge, to whom he made greuous complaint of the inſolencie of *Vaſchus Nunnez*, in ſo muche that by his procuremente, the Kynge gaue ſentence ageynſte hym. Thus muche haue I thowght good (moſte holy father) wherof to aduertyſe yowr holynes as concernyng the religion of theſe nations, not only as I haue byn inſtructed of *Anciſus* (wyth whom I was dayly conuerſante in the court and vſed hym familiarlye) but alſo as I was enformed of dyuers other men of greate autoritie, to th[e]intente that yowre excellencie may vnderſtande howe docible this kynde of men is, and wyth what facilitie they may bee allured to embraſe owr religion. But this can not bee doone ſoodenlye. Yet we haue greate cauſe to hope that in ſhorte tyme they wilbe all drawen by litle and litle to the euangelicall lawe of Chriſte, to the great encreaſe of his flocke. But let vs nowe returne to the meſſengers or procuratours as concerniynge the affayres of *Dariena*.

An other miracle.

Math. 14.

The deuyl appereth agein.

The virgin Mary ouercommeth the deuyll.

Infidels conuerted by miracle, and baptised.

75

The preestes rewarde.

Aue Maria.

Ancisus vyage to Spain

Ancisus complayneth of Vaschus.

The haruest is great, but the labourers are fewe.

¶ The seventh booke of the seconde decade

Of the ſuppoſed continente.

From Dariena to Hispaniola viii. dayes saylyng.

FRom *Dariena* to *Hiſpaniola* is eyghte dayes ſailinge and ſumtymes leſſe with a proſperous wynde. Yet *Quicedus* and *Colmenaris* the procuratours of *Dariena*, by reaſon of tempeſtes and contrary wyndes, could ſcarſely ſaile it in a hundrethe dayes. When they had taryed a fewe dayes in *Hiſpaniola*, and had declared the cauſe of the comminge to the admirall and the other gouernours, they tooke ſhippinge in two marchante ſhippes beinge redye furnyſſhed, which were alſo accuſtomed to ſaile too and froo betwene Spayne and the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*. They departed from *Dariena* (as we ſayde before) the fourthe day of the calendes of nouember in the yeare of Chriſt. 1512, and came not to the courte before the calendes of May in the yeare folowinge beinge the yeare of Chriſte. 1513. At th[e]yr commynge to the courte, *Iohannes Fonſeca* (to whom at the begynnynge the charge of theſe affayres was committed, whom alſo for hys faithful ſeruice towarde the kinge, yowre holynes created generall commiſſarie in the warres ageynſte the moores) receaued them honorably, as men comminge from the newe world, from naked nations, and landes vnknowen to other menne.

The procuratours of Dariena, are honorably receaued at the courte.

¶ By the prefermente therefore of the byſſhope of *Burges*, *Quicedus* and *Colmenaris* were brought before the king, and declared theyr legacie in his preſence. Suche newes and preſentes as they brought, were delectable to the kinge and his noble men, for the newnes and ſtraungnes therof. They alſo ſuiorned with me often tymes. Theyr countenaunces doo declare the intemperatenes of the ayer and region of *Dariena*. For they are yelowe lyke vnto them that haue the yelowe gaundies: And alſo ſwolne. But they aſcrybe the cauſe hereof, to the hunger which they ſuſteyned in tyme paſt. I haue byn aduertiſed of th[e]affayres of this newe woorlde, not onely by theſe procuratours of *Dariena*, and *Anciſus*, and *Zamudius*, but alſo by conference with *Baccia* the lawier, who ranne ouer a greate parte of thoſe coaſtes. Likewyſe by relation of *Vincentius Annez* the patrone of the ſhippes, and *Alfonſus Nignus*, both being men of greate experience and wel trauayled in thoſe parties, beſide many other, of whom wee haue made mention in other places. For there came neuer any from thenſe to the court, but tooke greate pleaſure to certifie mee of al thynges eyther by woorde of mouth or by wrytynge. Of many thynges therfore which I lerned of them, I haue gathered ſuche as to my Iudgement ſeeme moſte worthy to ſatiſfie them that take delyte in hyſtories. But let vs nowe declare what folowed after the comminge of the procuratours of *Dariena*. Therfore, before theyr arryuall there was a rumoure ſpreade in the courte, that the chiefe gouernoures and Lieuetenauntes *Nicueſa* and *Fogeda*, alſo *Iohannes De la Coſſa* (a man of ſuch reputacion that by the kinges letters patentes he was named the greate maſter of the kynges ſhyppes) were all peryſhed by miſchaunce: And that thoſe fewe which yet remayned alyue in *Dariena*, were at contencion and diſcorde amonge them ſelues: So that they neyther endeuoured theyr diligence to allure thoſe ſimple nations to owre faythe, nor yet had regarde to ſearche the natures of thoſe Regions. In conſideration wherof, the kynge was determyned to ſende a newe capitayne thyther whiche ſhulde reſtore and ſet all thynges in good order, and put them owte of autoritie whiche hadde vſurped th[e]empire of thoſe prouinces withowte the kynges ſpeciall commaundement. To this office, was one *Petrus Arias* aſſigned, a man of greate prowes and a citiſen of *Segouia*. But when the procuratours of *Dariena* had publiſhed in the courte howe greate a matter it was, and of what moment, many laboured erneſtly to the kyng, to take the office owte of his handes. But the byſſhop of *Burges* beinge the kinges chiefe chaplayne, and one of the commiſſioners appoynted by hym in theſe matters, beinge aduertiſed hereof, came immediatly to the kynge, and ſpake to hym in this effect. May it pleaſe yowre hyghnes to vnderſtand (moſte catholyke Prince) that wheras *Petrus Arias* a man of valiente corage and greate ſeruice, hath offered hym ſelfe to aduenture his lyfe in yowre maieſties affayres, vnder vncerteyue hope of gayne and moſte certeyne perels, yet that notwithſtandynge ſum other haue ambiciouſly maliced his felicitie and preferment

Their complexion is altered

Of whom the autour had information

The greate master of the kynges ships

Petrus arias is elected gouernour of Dariena.

Th[e] oracion of the byshop. of Burges in the defence of Petrus arias.

laboringe for th[e]office whereto he is elected: It maye pleaſe yowre grace herein ſoo to ſhewe hym yowr fauour and permit hym to enioye his ſayde office, as yowre maieſtie doo knowe hym to bee a woorthy and meete man for the ſame, hauyng in tyme paſte had greate experience of his proweſſe and valiantneſſe, aſwell in behauinge hym ſelfe as orderinge his ſouldiers, as yowr hyghnes may the better conſyder if it ſhal pleaſe yowe to caule to remembrance his doinges in the warres of Aphrica, where he ſhewed hym ſelfe bothe a wyſe Capitayne, and valient ſouldier. As concerninge his maners and vſages other wayes, they are not vnknowen to yowre maieſtie, vnder whoſe wynge he hath of a chylde byn browght vp in the courte, and euer founde faythfull towarde yowre hyghneſſe. Wherfore, to declare my opinion vnder yowre graces fauour (whom it hath pleaſed to appoynt me a

The warres of Aphrica.

commiſſioner in theſe affayres) I think it were vngodly that he ſhuld bee put from his office at the ſute of any other, eſpecially beinge thereto moued by ambition and couetouſnes: who perchaunce woold proue them ſelues to be the ſame men in the office if they ſhuld obteyne it, as they nowe ſhewe them ſelues in the ambitious deſirynge of the ſame. When the byſſhoppe hade ſayde theſe woordes, the kynge confirmed the election of *Petrus Arias* in more ample maner then before: wyllynge the byſſhoppe to appoynt hym a thouſande and twoo hundreth ſouldiers at his charges, makynge hym a warrante to th[e]officers of his eſcheker to delyuer hym money in preſte for the ſame purpoſe. *Petrus Arias* therfore beinge thus put in office and authoryſed by the kynges letters patentes vnder his brode ſeale, choſe a greate number of his ſouldiers in the court, and ſoo departed frome *Valladoleto* aboute the calendes of October in the yeare 1513: And ſayled fyrſt to Ciuile beinge a verye ryche citie and well replenyſhed with people: where by the kinges magiſtrates he was furnyſhed with men and vytayles and other neceſſaries perteynynge to ſoo greate a matter. For the king hath in this citie erected a houſe ſeruinge only for th[e]affayres of the Ocean, to the which all they that goo or coome from the newe landes and Ilandes, reſorte to gyue accomptes aſwell what they cary thyther as what they brynge from thenſe, that the kynge may bee truly anſwered of his cuſtome of the fyfte part bothe of golde and other thynges as wee haue ſayde before. This houſe, they caule the houſe of the Contractes of *Indi*. *Petrus Arias* founde in Ciuile aboue twoo thouſand younge men which made great ſute to goo with hym: lykewyſe noo ſmall number of couetous owlde men: of the whiche, many offered them ſelues to goo with him of theyr owne charges withowt the kynges ſtipende. But leſte the ſhippes ſhulde bee peſtered with to great a multitude, or leaſt vytayles ſhulde fayle them, the libertie of free paſſage was reſtraynt. It was alſo decreed that noo ſtranger might paſſe withowt the kynges licence. Wherfore I doo not a lyttle maruaile at *Aloiſius Cadamuſtus* a venetian and wryter of the Portugales vyages, that he was not a ſhamed to wryte thus of the Spanyardes nauigations: we went: we ſawe: we dyd. Wheras he neuer went, nor any Venetian ſawe. But he ſtoule certeyne annotacions owte of the three firſt bookes of my fyrſt Decade wrytten to Cardinal *Aſcanius* and *Arcimboldus*, ſuppoſinge that I woolde neuer haue publyſſhed the ſame. It myght alſo happen that he came by the copie therof at the hande of ſum ambaſadoure of Venice. For I haue graunted the copie to many of them, and was not daungerous to forbyd them to communicate the ſame to other. Howe ſo euer it bee, this honeſte man *Aloiſius Cadamuſtus* feared not to chalenge vnto hym the frute of an other mans laboure. Of the inuentions of the Portugales (which ſurely are woonderfull) whether he haue wrytten that whiche he hath ſeene (as he ſayth) or lykewiſe bereaued other men of the iuſte commendations of theyr trauayles, I wyll not iudge, but am content to let hym lyue after his maner. Emonge the company of theſe ſouldiers, there were none embarked but ſuche as were licenced by the kynge, except a fewe Italians, Genues, who by frendſhippe and ſute were admitted for the Admirals ſake younge *Colonus*, ſonne and heyre to *Chriſtophorus Colonus* the fyrſt fynder of thoſe landes. *Petrus Arias* therfore tooke ſhippyng in the ryuer *Betis* (nowe cauled *Guadalqueuir*) runnyng by the citie of Ciuile, aboute the beginnynge of the yeare of Chriſte. 1514. But he looſed anker in an euyll houre. For ſuche a tempeſte folowed ſhortly after his departure, that it rent in pieces two of his ſhippes, and ſoo toſſed the other that they were enforced to heaue ouer boorde parte of theyr vytayles to lyghten them. All ſuch as eſcaped, ſayled backe ageyne to the coaſtes of Spayne: where, beinge newely furnyſhed and refreſhed, by the kynges officers, they went forwarde on theyr viage. The maſter pylot of the gouernoures ſhyppe, was *Iohannes Veſputius* a Florentine, the neuie of *Americus Veſputius*, who left hym as it were by diſcente of inheritance, th[e]experience of the mariners facultie, and knowleage of the ſea, carde and compaſſe. But wee were aduertiſed of late by certeyne which came from *Hiſpaniola*, that they had paſſed the Ocean with more proſperous wynde. For this marchaunt ſhyppe commynge from *Hiſpaniola* founde them landinge at certeyne Ilandes nere there aboute. But in the meane tyme whyle my importunate caulers on, *Galeaceus Butrigarius* and *Iohannes Curſius*, men ſtudious by al meanes to gratifie yowre holynes, ceaſed not to put me in rememberance that they had one in a redines to depart into Italy, and taryed onely to cary with hym vnto yowre holynes theſe my fayre *Nereides* althowgh rudely decked, leaſte I ſhulde beſtow muche tyme in vayne, I haue let paſſe many thynges, and wyll reherſe onely ſuch as ſeeme in my iudgement moſte woorthye memory, althowgh ſumwhat diſordered as occaſion hath ſerued. So it is therfore that this *Petrus Arias* hath a wyfe named *Heliſabeth a Boadilla*, beinge nieſe by the broothers ſyde to the marques of *Boadilla*, which rendered the citie of *Segouia* to Fernando and Heliſabeth princes of Spayne at ſuch tyme as the Portugales inuaded the kingdome of Caſtile: by reaſon wherof they were encoraged fyrſte to reſyſte, and then with open warre to aſſayle and expulſe the Portugales for the greate treſure which kynge Henry brother to queene Heliſabeth hadde gathered togyther there. This marqueſſe whyle ſhee lyued, dyd euer ſhewe a manly and ſtoute mynde, bothe in peace and warre, ſo that by her counſayle manye noble thynges were browght to good effecte in Caſtile: vnto this noble woman, the wyfe of *Petrus Arias* was nieſe by her brothers ſyde. Shee folowyng the magnanimitie of her aunt, perceauinge her huſbande nowe furnyſhyng hym ſelfe to depart to the vnknowen coaſtes of the newe woorlde, and thoſe large tractes of lande and ſea, ſpake theſe wordes vnto hym. My moſte deare and welbeloued huſbande, we owght not nowe to forget that from owre younge

Petrus Arias Lieuctenante of Dariena.

Petrus Arius hath a thousand and twoo hundreth men appoynted at the kynges charges.

A house in Ciuile appointed to the affayres of India.

Perularia.

77

Many profer them selues to go of theyr owne charges.

Aloisius Cadamustus is reproued.

The Portugales inuentions.

The nauigation of Petrus Arias.

A shipwracke

Americus Vesputius.

A notable exemple of a valient woman.

Kynge Henry.

The wyfe of Petrus Arias

yeares we haue byn ioyned togyther with the yoke of holy matrimonie to th[e]intente that wee ſhulde ſoo lyue togyther and not a funder durynge the tyme of owre naturall lyfe. Wherefore for my parte to declare my affection herein, yowe ſhall vnderſtande, that whyther ſo euer yowre fatal deſtenye ſhall dryue yowe, eyther by the furious waues of the greate Ocean, or by the manyfoulde and horrible daungers of the lande, I wyll ſurely beare yowe
78 coompany. There can no perell chaunce to me ſo terrible, nor any kynde of death ſo cruell, that ſhal not bee much eaſyer for me to abyde, then to liue ſo farre ſeperate from yowe. It were muche better for me to dye, and eyther to bee caſt into the ſea to bee deuoured of the fyſſhes, or on the lande to the Canibales, then with continuall mournynge and bewaylinge, to lyue in deathe and dye lyuinge, whyle I conſume in lookyng rather for my huſbandes letters then for hym ſelfe. This is my full determinacion, not raſhely nor preſentely excogitate, nor conceaued by the lyght phantaſie of womans brayne, but with longe deliberation and good aduiſement. Nowe therfore chooſe to whether of theſe twoo yowe wyll aſſente: Eyther to thruſte yowre ſwoorde in my throte, or to graunte me my requeſte. As for the chyldren which god hath giuen vs as pledges of owr inſeperable loue, (for they had foure ſonnes and as many dowghters) ſhal not ſtay me a moment. Let vs leaue vnto them ſuche gooddes and poſſeſſions as haue byn left vs by owre parentes and frendes wherby they may lyue amonge the woorſhipful of theyr order. For other thynges I take no care. When this noble matrone of manly vertue had fyniſſhed theſe woordes, her huſbande ſeinge the conſtant mynde of his wyfe, and her in a redynes to doo accordynge to her woordes, had no hart to denye her louinge peticion: but embraſinge her in his armes, commended her intente and conſented to her requeſte. Shee folowed hym therfore as dyd *Ipſicratea* her *Mithridates* with her heare hangeinge looſe aboute her ſhulders. For ſhee loueth her huſbande as dyd *Halicarnaſſea* of *Caria*, hers beinge deade, and as dyd *Artemiſia* her *Mauſolus*: We haue alſo had aduertiſement ſence their departure that ſhe (being browght vp as it were amonge ſoft fethers) hath with no leſſe ſtoute corage ſuſteyned the roringes and rages of the Ocean, then dyd eyther her huſband or any of the maryners brought vp euen amonge the ſourges of the ſea. But to haue ſayde thus much hereof, this ſhal ſuffice. Let vs nowe ſpeake of other thynges no leſſe woorthy memorie. Therfore, whereas in the fyrſte Decade we haue made mencion of *Vincentius Annez Pinzonus*, ye ſhal vnderſtande that he accoompanyed *Chriſtophorus Colonus* the Admirall in his fyrſt vyage, and afterwarde made an other vyage of his owne charges with onely one ſhyppe. Ageyne, the fyrſte yeare after the departinge of the Capitaynes *Nicueſa* and *Fogeda*, he ran ouer thoſe coaſtes of *Hiſpaniola*, and ſearched all the ſouthe ſyde of *Cuba* from the Eaſte to the weſte, and ſayled rownde about that Ilande which to that day for the greate length thereof, was thowght to haue bin part of the continent or firme land, althowgh ſume other ſay that they dyd the lyke. *Vincentius Annez* therfore, knowyng nowe by experience that *Cuba* was an Ilande, ſayled on further, and found other landes weſtward from *Cuba*, but ſuch as the Admirall had fyrſt touched. Wherfore, beinge in maner encompaſed with this newe lande, turninge his courſe towarde the lefte hande, and raſing the coaſtes of that lande by the Eaſt, ouerpaſſinge alſo the mouthes of the goulfes of *Beragua*, *Vraba*, and *Cuchibachoa*, he arryued at the Region which in the fyrſt Decade we cauled *Paria* and *Os Draconis*: And entered into the greate goulfe of freſſhe water, which *Colonus* diſcouered, beinge repleniſhed with great abundance of fyſſhe, and famous by reaſon of the multitude of Ilandes lying in the ſame, beinge diſtant Eaſtwarde from *Curiana* aboute a hundreth and thirtie myles, in the which tract are the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapana*, whiche alſo in the fyxte booke of the fyrſt Decade we ſayde to bee Regions of the large prouince of *Paria*, where many affirme to bee the greteſte plentie of the beſte pearles, and not in *Curiana*. The kinges of theſe regions (whom they caul *Chiacones*, as they of *Hiſpaniola* caule theym *Cacici*) beinge certified of the comminge of owre men, ſente certeyne ſpyes to enquire what newe nation was arryued in theyr coaſtes, what they browght, and what they woolde haue: and in the meane tyme furnyſſhed a number of theyr *Canoas* (whiche they caule *Chichos*) with men armed after their maner. For they were not a lytle aſtoniſſhed to beholde owre ſhippes with the ſayles ſpreade, wheras they vſe no ſayles, nor can vſe but ſmaule ons if they woolde, by reaſon of the narownes of theyr canoas. Swarmynge therfore aboute the ſhippe with theyr canoas (which we may well caule *Monoxyla*, bycauſe they are made of one hole tree,) they feared not to ſhute at owr men beinge yet within their ſhips and keepinge theym ſelues vnder the hatches as ſafely as yf they had byn defended with ſtone waules. But when owre men had ſhotte of certeyne pieces of ordinance ageynſt theym they were ſoo diſcomfited with the noyſe and ſlawghter therof that they droue them ſelues to flight. Beinge thus diſparcled, owr men chaſed them with the ſhippe bote, tooke many, and ſlewe many. When the kynges harde the noyſe of the gunnes, and were certyfied of the loſſe of their men, they ſent ambaſadours to *Vincentius Agnes* to entreate of peace, fearinge the ſpoyle of theyr goodes and deſtruction of theyr people, if owre men ſhulde coomme alande in theyr wrathe and furye. They deſyred peace therfore, as could bee coniectured by their ſignes and poyntinges. For owre men vnderſtoode not one woorde of theyr language. And for the better proofe that they deſired peace, they preſented owre men with three thouſand of thoſe weights of gold that the Spanyardes caule *Caſtellanum Aureum*, which they commonly caule *Peſum*. Alſo a greate barell of woodde full of moſte excellente maſculine frankenſence, weighing about two thouſande and ſyxe hundreth poundes weight after eight ounces to the pounde: Whereby they knewe that that lande

The thyrde nauigation of Vincentius Pinzonus.

Cuba.

Beragua.
Vraba.
Cuchibacoa.
Paria.
Os Draconis
Curiana.
Cumana.
Manacapana.

Plentie of Pearles.

Monoxyla.
The Barbarians assayle owre men beinge in theyr shyppes.
The vse of gunnes.
79

Great abundance of gold and frankensence.
Olibanum,

browght furthe greate plentie of frankenſence. For there is noo entercourſe of marchaundies betwene th̃[e]inhabitantes of *Paria* and the ſabeans beinge ſoo farre diſtante,wheras alſo the[y] of *Parta* knowe nothynge withowte theyr owne coaſtes. With the golde and frankenſence whiche the[y] preſented to owre men, they gaue them alſo a greate multitude of theyr peacockes, bothe cockes and hennes, deade and alyue, aſwell to ſatiſfie theyr preſent neceſſitie, as alſo to cary with theym into Spayne for encreaſe. Lykewyſe certeyne carpettes, coouerlettes, table clothes and hanginges made of goſſampine ſilke fynelye wrought after a ſtraunge diuiſe with pleſante and variable colours, hauing golden belles and ſuche other ſpangles and pendauntes as the Italians caule *Sonaglios*, and the Spanyardes *Caſcaueles*, hanging at the purfles therof. They gaue theym furthermore ſpeakinge popingiais of ſundry colours as many as they woolde aſke. For in *Paria*, there is no leſſe plentie of popingiais, then with vs of dooues or ſparous. Th[e]inhabitantes of theſe Regions both men and women are appareled with veſtures made of goſſampine cotton, the men to the knees, and the women too the calfe of the legge. The faſſhion of theyr apparell, is ſymple and playne muche like vnto the Turkes. But the mens, is double and quilted like that whiche the Turkes vſe in the warres. The princes of *Paria*, are rulers but for one yeare: But their autoritie is noo leſſe emonge the people both in peace and warre, then is th[e]autoritie of other kynges in thoſe Regions. Theyr villages are buylded in coompaſſe, along by the bankes of all that greate goulfe. Fyue of theyr princes came to owre men wyth theyr preſentes, whoſe names I thowght worthy to bee put in this hiſtorie in remembe-rance of ſoo notable a thinge *Chiaconus Chiauaccha*, (that is the prince of *Chiauaccha*, for they caule princes or kinges *Chiaconos*) *Chiaconus Pintiguanus*, *Chiaconus Chamailaba*, *Chiaconus Polomus*, and *Chiaconus Potto*. The goulfe beinge fyrſte founde of the admirall *Colonus*, they caule, *Baia Natiuitatis*, bycauſe he entered into the ſame in the day of the natiuitie of Chriſte: But at that tyme he only paſſed by it withowte anye further ſearching, and *Baia* in the Spanyſſhe tong, ſignifieth a goulfe. When *Vincentius* had thus made a league with theſe Princes, folowinge his appoynted courſe, he founde many regions towarde the Eaſt, deſolate by reaſon of diuers fluddes and ouerflowynges of waters: alſo many ſtandynge pooles in dyuers places, and thoſe of excedynge largenes. He ceaſed not to folowe this tracte vntyll he came to the poynte or cape of that moſte longe lande. This poynte ſemethe as though it woolde inuade the monte *Atlas* in *Aphrica*. For it proſpectethe towarde that parte of Aphrike, whiche the portugales caule *Caput Bonæ Sperantiæ*. The poyntes or capes of the mount *Atlas*, are rough and ſaluage nere vnto the ſea. The cape of *Bona Speranza*, gatherethe thirtie and foure degrees of the Southe pole, cauled the pole antartike: But that poynte, onely ſeuen degrees. I ſuppoſe this lande to bee that, whiche I fynde in owlde wryters of Coſmographie to bee cauled the greate Iland Atlantike, withowt any further declaringe eyther of the ſytuation, or of the nature therof.

Sabea, is a contrey in Arabie, which bringeth forth frankensence

Paria.

Peacockes which wee caule Turkye cockes.

Carpets and couerlettes fynely wrought.

Popyngayes.

Th[e]apparell of the inhabitants of paria

Rulers for one yeare.

The greate goulfe of Paria.

Baia Natiuitatis the gret goulfe of Paria.

Vincentius maketh a league with v. princes. of Paria.

Mount Atlas in aphrike.

The great Iland atlantike

¶ The eight booke of the seconde decade

Of the ſuppoſed continente.

When Iohan the king of portugale lyued which was prediceſſoure to hym that nowe reigneth, there aroſe a great contention betwene the Caſtilians and Portugales as concerninge the dominion of theſe newe founde landes. The Portugales, bycauſe they were the firſte that durſt attempte to ſearche the Ocean ſea ſence the memorie of man, affirmed that all the nauigations of the Ocean, owght to perteyne to theym onely. The Caſtilians argued on the contrarie parte, that what ſo euer god by the miniſtration of nature hath created on the earth, was at the begynnynge common emong men: And that it is therfore lawfull to euery man to poſſeſe ſuche landes as are voyd of Chriſtian inhabitours. Whyle the matter was thus vncerteynly debated, bothe parties agreed that the controuerſie ſhulde bee decerned by the byſſhope of Rome, and plighted faithe to ſtande to his arbitrimente. The kyngedome of Caſtile was at that tyme gouerned by that great Queene *Heliſabeth* with her huſbande: for the roialme of Caſtile was her dowerye. Shee alſo and the kynge of Portugale, were coſyn germaynes of two ſyſters: by reaſon wherof the diſſention was more eaſely pacified. By th[e]aſſent therfore of both parties, Alexander the byſſhop [of] Rome, the. vi. of that name, by th[e]autoritie of his leaden bull, drewe a right line from the North to the South a hundreth leaques weſtwarde withowte the paralelles of thoſe Ilandes whiche are cauled *Caput Viride* or *Cabouerde*, Within the compaſe of this lyne (althowgh ſoomme denye it) faulethe the poynte of this lande wherof we haue ſpoken, which they caule *Caput Sancti Auguſtini*, otherwyſe cauled *Promontorium Sancti Auguſtini*, that is, ſaynt Auguſtines cape or poynte. And therfore it is not lawful for the Caſtilians to faſten foote in the beginnynge of that lande. *Vincentius Annez* therfore, departed from thenſe, beinge aduertiſed of th[e]inhabitantes, that on the other ſyde of the hyghe mountaynes towarde the

Contention betwene the Castilians and Portugales for the newe landes 80

The byssshop of Rome diuideth the land

Cabouerde loke decade i. lib. iii

The golden region of Ciamba.

South, lyinge before his eyes, there was a Region cauled *Ciamba*, which browght foorth greate plentie of golde. Of certeyne captiues whiche he tooke in the goulfe of *Paria* (which certenly perteyneth to the dominion of Caſtile) he browght ſume with hym to *Hiſpaniola*, and lefte them with the younge Admirall to lerne owre language. But he hym ſelfe, repayred to the courte to make erneſt ſute to the kynge that by his fauoure, he myght bee gouernour of the Iland of *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwyſe cauled *Burichena*, beinge diſtante from *Hiſpaniola* onely. xxv. leaques) bycauſe he was the fyrſt fynder of golde in that Ilande. Before *Vincentius* made ſute for this office, one Don Chriſtopher a Portugale, the ſoone of the countie of *Camigna*, was gouernoure of the Ilande: whom the Canibales of the other Ilandes ſlewe, with all the Chriſtian men that were in the ſame, excepte the byſhop and his familiers, which fledde and ſhyfted for them ſelues, forſakynge the church and all the ornamentes thereof. For yowre holynes hath conſecrated fyue byſſhoppes in theſe Ilandes at the requeſt of the moſt catholyke kynge. In *Sancto Dominico* being the chiefe citie of *Hiſpaniola*, *Garſia de Padilla*, a reguler fryer of the order of ſaynt Fraunces, is byſſhop. In the towne of Conception, doctor *Petrus Xuarez* of *Deza*: And in the Ilande of ſaynte Iohn or *Burichena*, *Alfonſus Manſus* a licenciate, beinge bothe obſeruantes of th[e]inſtitucion of ſaynt Peter. The fourth, is fryer Barnarde of *Meſa*, a man of noble parentage, borne in *Toledo*, a preacher, and byſſhop of the Ilande of *Cuba*. The fyfte is *Iohannes Cabedus*, a fryer preacher, whom yowre holynes annoynted myniſter of Chriſt, to teache the Chriſtian faithe amonge the inhabitantes of *Dariena*. The Canibales ſhall ſhortely repent them, and the bludde of owre men ſhalbe reuenged: And that the ſooner, bycauſe that ſhortly after they had committed this abhominable ſlaughter of owre men, they came ageyne from theyr owne Ilande of *Sancta Crux* (otherwyſe cauled *Ay Ay*) to the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*. and ſlewe a kynge whiche was a frende to owre men, and eate hym and all his famely, vtterly ſubuertinge his vyllage, vppon this occaſion that violatinge the lawe of hoſtage, he had ſlayne ſeuen Canibales whiche were lefte with hym by compoſition to make certeyne canoas, bicauſe the Iland of *Sancti Iohannis* beareth greater trees and apter for that purpoſe, then doth the Ilande of *Sancti Crux* the chiefe habitacion of the Canibales. Theſe Canibales yet remaynynge in the Ilande, certeine of owre men ſayling from *Hiſpaniola*, chaunced vppon them. The thynge being vnderſtode by th[e]interpretoures, owre men quarelynge with theym and caulynge them to accompte for that miſcheuous deede, they immediatly directed theyr bowes and venemous arrowes ageynſt them, and with cruell countenaunces threatened them to bee quyet, leaſt it ſhulde repent them of theyr commyng thyther. Owre men fearynge theyr venemous arrowes (for they were not prepared to fyght) gaue them ſignes of peace. Being demaunded why they deſtroyed the vyllage, and where the kynge was with his famelye, they anſwered that they raſed the vyllage and cutte the kynge with his famelie in peeces and eate them in the reuenge of theyr ſeuen workemen: And that they had made faggottes of theyr bones to cary theim to the wyues and chyldren of theyr ſlayne woorkemen, in wytneſſe that the bodyes of theyr huſbandes and parentes lay not vnreuenged: and therewith ſhewed the faggottes of bones to owre men: who beinge aſtonyſhed at theyr fiercenes and crueltie, were enforced to diſſimble the matter and houlde theyr peace, quarelynge noo further with them at that tyme. Theſe and ſuche other thynges doo dayly chaunce, the which I doo let paſſe leaſt I ſhulde offende the eares of yowr holynes with ſuche bluddy narrations. Thus haue wee ſufficiently digreſſed from the regions of *Beragua* and *Vraba* beinge the chiefeſte foundations of owre purpoſe. Wee wyll nowe therefore entreate ſumewhat of the largenes and depthe of the ryuers of *Vraba*: Alſo declare bothe what they and the landes whiche they runne through doo brynge foorth: lykewiſe of the greatnes of the lande from the Eaſte to the Weſt, and of the bredth therof from the Southe to the North, and what theyr opinion and hope is of thynges yet vnknowen in the ſame. Wee wyll therfore beginne at the newe names wherwith the Spanyardes haue named theſe prouinces ſence they were vnder the dominions of the Chriſtians.

The Iland of S. Iohannes

Fyue byshoppes of the Iland[s] made by the bysshop of Rome.

The Canibales of the Iland of Sancta Crux.

81

Beragua and Vraba.

The ryuers of Vraba.

¶ The nynth booke of the seconde Decade,

Of the ſuppoſed Continent.

Beragua, cauled Castella aurifera, and Vraba, Andaluzia noua.

Sum caule Peru, Noua Castilia.

Beragua and Vraba, regions of Paria.

The frutefulnes of Vraba

Beragua therfore, they cauled *Caſtella Aurea*, that is golden Caſtile: And *Vraba* they named *Andaluzia Noua*, that is, newe Andaluſia. And lyke as of many Ilandes which they ſubdued, they chooſe *Hiſpaniola* for the chiefe place of theyr habitacion, ſoo in the large tract of *Paria*, they appoynted theyr colonie or bydyng place in the twoo regions *Vraba* and *Beragua*, that all ſuche as attempte any vyages in thoſe coaſtes, may reſorte to them as to ſafe portes to bee refreſhed when they are wery or dryuen to neceſſitie. All owre ſeedes, and plantes, do nowe marueloufly encreaſe in *Vraba*. Lykewyſe blades, ſettes, ſlippes, graſſes, ſuger canes, and

ſuche other as are brought from other places to thoſe regions, as alſo beaſtes and foules as we haue ſayde before. O maruelous frutefulnes. Twentie dayes after the ſeede is ſowne, they gather rype cucumers, and ſuch lyke, But colwortes, beetes, Letuſe, Borage are rype within the ſpace of ten dayes. Gourdes, melones, and pompones, within the ſpace of. xxviii. dayes. *Dariena* hathe many native trees and frutes of dyuers kyndes with ſundry taſtes, and holſome for the vſe of men: of the which I haue thowght it good to deſcrybe certeyne of the beſt. They nooryſſhe a tree which they caule *Guaiana*, that beareth a frute much reſemblynge the kynde of citrons which are commonly cauled limones, of taſte ſumwhat ſharpe myxt with ſwetenes. They haue alſo abundance of nuttes of pynetrees, and great plentie of date trees, whiche beare frutes bygger then the dates that are knowen to vs: but they are not apte to bee eaten for theyr to much ſowernes. Wylde and baren date trees, growe of them ſelues in ſundry places, the branches wherof they vſe for bieſommes, and eate alſo the buddes of the ſame. *Guarauana*, being higher and bygger then the orange tree, bringeth furth a great frute as bygge as pome citrons.

The frutefulnes of Dariena.

Dyuers holsomy frutes of trees.

Guaiana,

Pine trees.

Date trees.

Guarauana

Ther is an other tree much lyke to a cheſtnut tree whoſe frute is lyke to the bygger ſort of fygs, beinge holſome and of pleſant taſte. *Mameis*, is an other tree that bringeth foorthe frute as bygge as an orange, in taſte nothynge inferioure to the beſte kyndes of melones. *Guananala*, beareth a frute leſſe then any of the other, but of ſweete ſauoure lyke ſpice, and of delectable taſte. *Houos*, is an other tree whoſe frute bothe in ſhape and taſte, is much lyke to prunes, but ſumwhat bygger. They are ſurely perſuaded that this is the *Myrobalane* tree. Theſe growe ſoo abundantely in *Hiſpaniola*, that the hogges are fedde with the frute therof as with maſte amonge vs. The hogges lyke this kynde of feadynge ſoo well, that when theſe frutes wax rype, the ſwyneherdes can by no meanes keepe them owte of the wooddes of theſe trees: by reaſon wherof, a greate multytude of them are becoome wylde. They alſo affirme, that in *Hiſpaniola*, ſwynes fleſſhe is of much better taſte and more holſome then mutton. For it is not to bee doubted, but that dyuers kyndes of meates do engender ſundry taſtes and qualities in ſuche as are noryſhed therwith. The moſte puiſſaunte prince *Ferdinandus*, declared that he had eaten of an other frute browght from thoſe landes, beinge full of ſcales with keyes much lyke a pine apple in forme and coloure, but in tendernes equal to melopepones, and in taſte excedyng all garden frutes. For it is noo tre, but an herbe much lyke vnto an archichoke, or *Acantho*. The kynge hym ſelfe, gaue the cheefeſt commendation to this. I haue eaten none of theſe frutes. For of a great number which they browght from thenſe, only one remayned vncorrupted, the other being putrified by reaſon of the longe vyage. All ſuche as haue eaten of theym newely gathered in theyr natyue ſoyle, doo maruelouſly commende theyr ſwetenes and pleaſaunt taſte. They dygge alſo owte of the ground certeyne rootes growynge of theim ſelues, whiche they caule *Botatas*, much lyke vnto the nauie rootes of Mylayne, or the greate puffes or muſheroms of the earth. Howe ſoo euer they bee dreſſed, eyther fryed or ſodde, they gyue place to noo ſuch kynde of meate in pleaſant tendernes. The ſkyn is ſumwhat towgher then eyther of nauies or muſſheroms, and of earthy coloure: But the inner meate therof, is verye whyte. Theſe are nooryſſhed in gardens, as we ſayde of *Iucca* in the fyrſte Decade. They are alſo eaten rawe, and haue the taſte of rawe cheſtnuttes, but are ſumwhat ſweeter. Wee haue ſpoken ſufficiently of trees, herbes, and frutes. We wyll nowe therefore entreate of thynges ſencitiue. The laundes and deſolate paſtures of theſe regions, are inhabited and deuoured of wild and terrible beaſtes, as Lions, Tygers, and ſuch other monſters as we nowe knowe, and haue byn deſcrybed of owlde autoures in tyme paſt. But there is eſpecially one beaſt engendered here, in which nature hath endeuoured to ſhewe her cunnyng. This beaſte is as bygge as an oxe, armed with a longe ſnoute lyke an Elephant, and yet no Elephant. Of the colour of an oxe and yet noo oxe. With the houſe of a horſe, and yet noo horſe. With eares alſo much lyke vnto an Elephant, but not ſoo open nor ſoo much hangyng downe: yet much wyder then the eares of any other beaſte. Of the beaſt which beareth her whelpes about with her in her ſeconde belly as in a purſe (beinge knowen to none of the owlde wryters) I haue ſpoken in the fyrſt Decade which I doubte not to haue coome to the handes of yowre holynes. Let vs nowe therfore declare what reſteth of the fluddes and ryuers of *Vraba*. The ryuer of *Dariena* fauleth into the goulfe of *Vraba* with a narowe chanel, ſcarſly able to beare the canoas or lyghters of that prouince, and runneth by the vyllage where they choſe theyr dwellynge place. But the ryuer in the corner of the goulfe which we ſayde that *Vaſchus* paſſed by, they found to bee. xxiiii. furlonges in bredth (which they caule a league) and of exceadynge depthe, as of twoo hundreth cubettes, faulynge into the goulfe by dyuers mouthes. They ſay that this ryuer fauleth into the goulfe of *Vraba*, lyke as the ryuer *Iſter* (otherwyſe cauled *Danubius*, and Danowe) fauleth into the ſea Pontike, and *Nilus* into the ſea of Egypte: wherfore they named it *Grandis*, that is great: whiche alſo they affirme to nooryſhe many and great Crocodyles, as the owld wryters teſtifie of *Nilus*, and eſpecially as I haue lerned by experience, hauinge ſayled vp and downe the ryuer of *Nilus* when I was ſent ambaſadoure to the Soldane of Alcayr at the commaundement of the moſte catholyke Kynge. What I may therfore gather owte of the wrytynges of ſo many lerned autours as concerninge the ryuer of *Nilus*, I knowe not. For they ſay that nature hath gyuen two riuers of that name to water the lande, whether they wyll them to ſprynge owte of the mountaynes of the moone

82

Mameis.

Guananala.

Houos.

Mirobalani.

Hogges fed with mirobalanes

Swynes flesshe of better tast and more holsum then mutton.

Frutes putrifyed on the sea.

Botatas.

Lions and Tygers.

A straunge beast.

The ryuers of Vraba.

The ryuer of Darien fauleth into the goulfe of Vraba.

A league is xxiiii. furlonges

Danubius.

Grandis or Rio grandis.

A crocodile is much lyke an ente, but of excedyng bignes.

The autoure of this booke was in Egipt

The riuer Nilus in Egypte *Montes Lunæ.*

The Portugales nauigacions.

or the ſoonne, or owte of the toppes of the rowgh mountaines of *Ethiopia*: Affirming one of the ſame to faule into the goulfe of Egypte toward the Northe, and the other into the South Ocean ſea. What ſhall wee ſaye in this place? Of that *Nilus* in Egypte, there is noo doubte. The Portugales alſo whiche ſayle by the coaſtes of the Ethiopians cauled *Nigritæ*, and by the kyngedome of *Melinda* paſſinge vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, amonge theyr maruelous inuentions haue founde an other towarde the South, and erneſtly affirme the ſame to bee alſo deriued from the mountaynes of the moone: And that it is an other chanell of *Nilus*, bycauſe it bryngeth foorth Crocodyles, whereas it hathe not byn reade before tyme that any other ryuer nooryſſhed Crocodyles ſauinge onely *Nilus*. This ryuer, the Portugales caule *Senega*. It runneth throwgh the Region of the *Nigritas*, beinge very frutefull towarde the north ſhore: but on the ſouthe ſyde ſandie and rowghe. Crocodiles are alſo engendred herein. What ſhall wee then ſay of this thyrde: ye I may wel ſay the fourth. For I ſuppoſe them alſo to bee Crocodiles which *Colonus* with his coompany founde armed with ſcales as harde as ſhelles in the ryuer cauled *Delagartos* wherof wee haue made mention before. Shall wee ſay that theſe ryuers alſo of *Darien* and *Vraba*, haue theyr originall frome the mountaynes of the moone, wheras they ſprynge owte of the nexte mountaynes, and can by noo meanes haue the ſame originall with *Nilus* in Egypte, or that in *Nigrita*, or els that in the kyngedome of *Melinda*, from whenſe ſoo euer they are deryued. Whereas theſe other (as we haue ſayde) ſpringe owt of the next mountaines whiche deuyde an other ſouthe ſea with noo greate diſtaunce from the North Ocean. Wherfore it appeareth by experience of ſuch as haue trauayled the worlde in owre time, that other waters beſyde the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypte, maye lykewyſe brynge foorth Crocodiles. In the maryſſhes alſo and fennes of the Regions of *Dariena*, are founde greate plentie of Pheſauntes and peacockes, (but not of variable coloures) with many other kyndes of byrdes and foules vnlyke vnto owres, as well apte to bee eaten, as alſo to delite the eares of menne with pleaſaunt noyſe. But owre Spanyardes, bycauſe they are ignorant in foulynge, take but fewe. Alſo innumerable popingayes of ſundry kindes are found chattering in the groues of thoſe fenny places. Of theſe there are ſume equall to Capons in byggenes, and ſume as lyttle as ſparowes. But of the diuerſitie of popingayes, we haue ſpoken ſufficientely in the fyrſt Decade. For in the raſe of this large lande, *Colonus* hym ſelfe browght and ſent to the courte a greate number of euery kynde, the which it was lawfull for all the people to beholde, and are yet dayly browght in lyke maner. There remayneth yet one thynge moſte woorthy to bee put in hyſtorye: The which I had rather to haue chaunced into the handes of *Cicero* or *Liuie*, then into myne. For the thynge is ſoo marueylous in my eſtimation, that I fynde my wytte more entangeled in the deſcription hereof, then is ſayde of the henne when ſhee ſeeth her younge chekyn inwrapped in towe or flaxe. The breadth of that lande from the North Ocean to the ſouth ſea is only ſyxe dayes iourney by relation of th[e]inhabitantes. The multitude therfore and greatnes of the ryuers on the one ſide and on the other ſyde the narowenes of the lande, brynge me into ſuche doubte howe it can coome to paſſe, that in ſoo little a ſpace of three dayes iourney, meaſurynge from the hygh toppes of thoſe mountaynes, I doo not vnderſtande howe ſoo many and ſoo great ryuers, may haue recourſe into this north ſea. For it is to bee thought that as many doo flowe towarde th[e]inhabitantes of the ſouthe. Theſe ryuers of *Vraba* are but ſmaule, in compariſon of many other in thoſe coaſtes. For the Spanyardes ſay, that in the tyme of *Colonus*, they founde and paſſed by an other ryuer after this, whoſe goulfe faulynge into the ſea, they affirme to bee lyttle leſſe then a hundreth mylcs in the fyrſte coaſtes of *Paria*, as wee haue ſayde elſewhere. For they ſaye that it fauleth from the toppes of hyghe mountaynes with ſoo ſwyfte and furious a courſe, that by the violence and greatnes therof, it dryueth backe the ſea althowgh it bee rowghe and enforced with a contrary wynde. They all affirme lykewyſe, that in all the large tracte therof, they felt noo ſower or ſalte water, but that all the water was freſſhe, ſweete, and apte to bee dronke. Th[e]inhabitantes caule this ryuer *Maragnonum*: And the regions adiacent to the ſame, *Mariatambal*, *Camamorus*, and *Paricora*. Beſyde thoſe ryuers whiche I haue named before, as *Darien*, *Grandis*, *Dabaiba*, *Beragua*, *Sancti Mathei*, *Boius gatti*, *Delagartos*, and *Gaira*, they which of late haue ſearched thoſe coaſtes, haue founde many other. Deliberatinge therefore with my ſelfe, from whenſe theſe mountaynes beinge ſoo narowe and nere vnto the ſea on bothe ſydes, haue ſuch great holowe caues or dennes of ſuche capacitie, and from whenſe they are fylled to caſt foorth ſuch abundance of water, hereof alſo aſkynge them the opinions of the inhabitantes, they affirme them to bee of dyuers iudgementes herein: Alleagynge fyrſt the greatnes of the mountaynes to bee the cauſe, whiche they ſay to bee very hygh, which thynge alſo *Colonus* the firſt fynder therof affirmeth to bee trewe: Adding there vnto that the Paradiſe of pleaſure is in the toppes of thoſe mountaines whiche appeare from the goulfe of *Paria* and *Os Draconis*, as he is fully perſuaded. They agree therfore that there is greate caues within theſe mountaynes: but it reſteth to conſyder from whenſe they are fylled. If therefore all the ryuers of freſſhe waters by th[e]oppinion of manye, do ſoo flowe owte of the ſea as dryuen and compelled throwghe the paſſages or pores of the earth by the ponderous weyght of the ſea it ſelfe, as wee ſee them breake furth of the ſprynges and directe their courſe to the ſea ageyne, then the thynge is leſſe to bee marueyled at here then in other places. For wee haue not redde that in any other place twoo ſuch ſeas haue enuironed any lande with ſoo narowe lymittes. For it hath on the right ſyde, the great Ocean where the ſonne goeth downe on the lefte hande: And an other

The ryuer Senega, another channell of the ryuer of Nilus.

Crocodiles.

The thyrde and fourth Nilus. *Delagartos.*

83

The ryuers springe owt of the mountaynes.

Crocodiles engendred on other ryuers besyde Nilus in Egypte.

Byrdes and foules.

Popingayes.

A philosophical discourse as cuncerning th[e]original of springes and ryuers.

The breadth of the lande at Vraba, from the North Ocean to the South sea.

A ryuer of maruelous byggenes loke the first decade the ix. boke.

The great ryuer Maragnonus. liber. iv. decade. i. *Mariatambal.* *Camamorus.* *Paricora.*

Paradice. Loke. vi, boke fyrst decade.

The sea.

The land enclosed with two seas.

on the other ſyde where the ſonne ryſeth, nothynge inferioure to the fyrſt in greatenes, for they ſuppoſe it to bee myxte and ioyned as all one with the ſea of Eaſt India.

This lande therefore being burdened with ſo great a weight on the one ſyde and on the other (yf this opinion bee of anye value) is enforced to ſwalowe vp ſuch deuoured waters, and ageyne to caſt foorth the ſame in open ſpringes and ſtreames. But if wee ſhall denye that the earth draweth humours of the ſea, and agree that all fountaynes or ſprynges are engendered of the conuerſion or turnynge of ayer into water diſtilling within the holowe places of the montaynes (as the moſt part thinke) we wyll gyue place rather to th[e]autoritie of them whiche ſtycke to thoſe reaſons, then that owre ſenſe is ſatiffyed of the full truth therof. Yet doo I not repugne that in ſume caues of mountaynes, water is turned into ayer. For I my ſelfe haue ſeene, howe in the caues of manye mountaynes in Spayne, in maner ſhowers of rayne doo faule continually: And that the water gathered by this meanes, doth ſend furth certeyne ryuers by the ſydes of the mountaynes, wherwith al ſuche trees as are planted on the ſtiepe or foote of the mountaynes, as vines, Oliue trees, and ſuche other, are watered. And this eſpecially in one place: As the ryght honorable Lodouike the Cardinall of Aragonie moſte obſequious to yowre holynes, and twoo other byſhoppes of Italy, wherof the one is *Siluius Pandonus*, and the other an Archebyſſhop (whoſe name and tytle I doo not remember) can beare me wytnes. For when wee were togyther at *Granata*, lately delyuered from the dominion of the Moores, and walked for owre paſtyme to certeine pleaſaunte hylles (by the whiche there ranne a fayre ryuer) Whyle Cardinall Lodouike occupied hym ſelfe in ſhutynge at byrdes whiche were in the buſhes nere vnto the ryuer, I and the other twoo byſſhops determined to clime the mountaynes to ſearche th[e]originall and ſpringe of the ryuer: for wee were not farre from the toppes thereof. Folowynge therefore the courſe of the ryuer, wee founde a greate caue in which was a continuall faule of water as it had byn a ſhoure of rayne: the water wherof, faulyng into a trenche made with mans hand, encreaſeth to a ryuer, and runneth downe by the ſydes of the mountaynes. The lyke is alſo ſeene in this famous towne of *Valladoleto* (where we nowe ſuiorne) in a certeyne greene cloſe, not paſt a furlonge diſtant from the waules of the towne. I graunte therfore that in certeyne places by conuerſion of the ayrie dewe into water within the caues of ſuche mountaynes, many ſprynges and ryuers are engendred. But I ſuppoſe that nature was not ſollicitate to bryng furthe ſuche greate fluds by this ſo ſmaule induſtry. Twoo reaſons therfore, do ſound beſte to my iudgement: whereof the one is, the often faule of rayne: The other, the continuall autumne or ſprynge tyme which is in thoſe regions beinge ſoo nere vnto the Equinoctial that the common people can perceaue no difference betwene the length of the day and the night throwgh owt al the yeare whereas theſe two ſeaſons are more apte to engender abundance of rayne then eyther extreme wynter or feruent ſummer An other reaſon in effect much lyke vnto the fyrſt, is this: If the ſea bee full of pores, and that by the pores therof beinge opened by the Southe windes, wee ſhal conſent that vapours are lyfted vp wherof the watery cloudes are engendred, this lande muſt needes bee moyſted with moo ſhoures then anye other, yf it bee as narowe as they ſaye, and enuironed with twoo mayne ſeas collaterally beatinge on the ſame. Howe ſo euer it be: I can not but gyue credit to the report of ſuch worthy men as haue recourſe to thoſe regions: And can noo leſſe then declare the ſame albeit it may ſeeme incredible to ſume ignorant perſons not knowynge the poure of nature to whome Plinie was perſuaded that nothynge was impoſſible. Wee haue therfore thought it good to make this diſcourſe by the way of argument, leaſt on the one ſyde, men of good lernyng and iudgement, and on the other ſyde, ſuche as are ſtudious to fynde occaſions of quarelynge in other mens wrytynges, ſhulde iudge vs to bee ſo vndeſcreete lyghtly to gyue creditte to euery tale not beinge conſonant to reaſon. But of the force and greate violence of thoſe freſſhe waters, which repulſinge the ſea make ſo greate a goulfe (as wee haue ſayde) I thinke the cauſe therof to bee the greate multitude of fluddes and ryuers, whiche beinge gathered togither, make ſo great a poole: and not one ryuer as they ſuppoſe. And for as muche as the mountaynes are excedynge hyghe and ſtiepe, I thinke the violence of the faule of the waters to be of ſuch force, that this conflicte betwene the waters, is cauſed by th[e]impulſion of the poole that the ſalte water can not enter into the goulfe. But here perhappes ſume wyll marueyle at me why I ſhulde marueyle ſoo muche hereat, ſpeakynge vnto me ſcornefully after this maner. Why dothe he ſoo marueyle at the greate ryuers of theſe Regions? Hathe not Italye his *Eridanus*, named the kynge of ryuers of the owlde wryters? Haue not other regions alſo the lyke? as wee reede of *Tanais*, *Ganges*, and *Danubius*, which are ſayde ſoo to ouercoome the ſea, that freſhe water may be drawne fortie myles within the ſame. Theſe menne I woolde ſatiffie with this anſwere. The famous ryuer of *Padus*, in Italye (whiche they nowe caule *Po*, and was of the Greekes cauled *Eridanus*) hath the greate mountaynes cauled *Alpes* diuidinge Fraunce, Germanie, and Pannonie from Italye, lyinge at the backe therof as it were bulwarges full of moyſture: And with a longe tracte receauinge *Ticinum* with innumerable other great ryuers, fauleth into the ſea Adriatike. The lyke is alſo to bee vnderſtode of the other. But theſe ryuers (as owre men were enformed by the kynges) faul into the Ocean ſea with larger and fuller chanels nere hand. And ſume there are which affirme this lande to bee very large in other places althowgh it bee but narowe here. There commeth alſo to my remembrance an other cauſe: the whiche althowgh it bee of no greate force, yet doo I entende to wryte it.

84

Conu[e]rsion of ayer into water in the caues of mountaynes.

Showers of rayne in the caues of montaynes

The often fal of rayne and continuall sprynge time.

The Equinoctiall.

The pores of the sea and the South wynd.

Nothinge impossible to the poure of na[t]ure.

The cause of the greatnes and force of the goulfe.

Hygh and stiepe hylles

85

The fludde Eridanus.

Tanais.

Ganges.

Danubius.

Padus.

Alpes.

Ticinum.

The sea Adriatike, sume caule the goulfe of Venes

An other reason

The ryuer Alpheus.

Arethusa

Longe caues in the mountaynes.

Perhappes therfore the length of the lande reachyng far from the Eaſte to the weſte, if it bee narowe, may bee a helpe hereunto. For as wee reade that the ryuer *Alpheus* paſſethe through the holowe places vnder the ſea from the citie of *Elis* in *Peloponeſo*, and breaketh foorth at the fountayne or ſprynge *Arethuſa* in the Iland of *Sicilia*, ſo is it poſſible that theſe mountaynes may haue ſuche longe caues perteynynge vnto theim, that they may be the receptacles of the water paſſing through the landes beinge farre diſtante: And that the ſame waters commynge by ſoo longe a tracte, may in the way bee greately encreaſed by the conuerſion of ayer into water, as wee haue ſayde. Thus muche haue I ſpoken freely, permittinge bothe to them whiche doo frendely enterprete other mens doinges, and alſo to the malicious ſcorners, to take the thynge euen as them lyſteth. For hetherto I can make no further declaration hereof. But when the truth ſhalbe better knowen, I wyl do my diligence to commit the ſame to wryting. Nowe therefore, foraſmuche as we haue ſpoken thus muche of the breadth of this land, we entend to deſcribe the length and forme of the ſame.

¶ The tenth booke of the seconde Decade,
Of the ſuppoſed Continent.

The length and forme of the Iland. *Cap. S. Augusti.* Eyght tymes bygger then Italy besyde that part whiche the portugales possesse. Italy is in length a thousand and two hundreth myles, and in breadth foure hundreth and ten.

THat lande reacheth foorth into the ſea euen as doth Italy, althowgh not like the legge of a man as it doth. But I nowe compare a Pigmean or a dwarfe to a giant. For that part therof which the Spaniardes haue ouer runne from the ſayde Eaſte poynt which reacheth towarde the ſea Atlantike (the ende not beinge yet founde towarde the Weſte) is more then eyght tymes longer then Italye. And by what reaſon I am moued to ſay eyght tymes, yowre holynes ſhall vnderſtande. From the tyme therefore that I fyrſte determined to obeye their requeſtes who wylled me fyrſte in yowre name to wryte theſe thynges in the laten tonge, I dyd my endeuoure that all thinges myght coome foorth with dewe tryall and experience. Wherupon I repayred to the byſhoppe of *Burges* beinge the chiefe refuge of this nauigation. As wee were therfore ſecretly togyther in one chamber, we had many inſtrumentes perteynynge to theſe affayres as globes and manye of thoſe mappes which are commonly cauled the ſhipmans cardes, or cardes of the ſea. Of the which, one was drawen by the Portugales, wherunto *Americus Veſputius* is ſayde to haue put to his hande, beinge a man moſte experte in this facultie and a Florentyne borne: who alſo vnder the ſtipende of the Portugales, hadde ſayled towarde the ſouth pole many degrees beyond the Equinoctiall. In this carde we founde the fyrſt front of this land to bee brooder then the kynges of *Vraba* had perſuaded owre men of theyr mountaynes. To an other, *Colonus* the Admiral whyle he yet lyued and ſearched thoſe places had gyuen the beginnynge with his owne handes: Wherunto *Bartholomeus Colonus* his brother and Lieuetenaunt had addid his iudgement, for he alſo, had ſayled aboute thoſe coaſtes. Of the Spanyardes lykewyſe, as many as thought them ſelues to haue any knowleage what perteyned to meaſure the lande and the ſea, drewe certeyne cardes in parchement as concernyng theſe nauigations. Of all other, they moſt eſteeme them which *Iohannes de la Coſſa* the coompanion of *Fogeda* (whom wee ſayde to bee ſlayne of the people of *Caramairi* in the hauen *Carthago*,) and an other expert pylot cauled *Andreas Moralis*, had ſet foorth. And this aſwell for the greate experience which they bothe hadde (to whom theſe tractes were as wel knowen as the chambers of theyr owne houſes) as alſo that they were thought to bee cunninger in that parte of Coſmographie which teacheth the deſcription and meaſuringe of the ſea. Conferringe therefore all theſe cardes togyther, in euery of the whiche was drawen a lyne expreſſinge, not the myles, but leagues after the maner of the Spanyardes, we tooke owre compaſes and beganne to meaſure the ſea coaſtes after this order. From that poynt or fronte which we ſayde to bee included within the lyne perteynynge to the Portugales iuriſdiction, beinge drawen by the paralelles of the Ilandes of *Cabouerde*, but a hundreth leagues further towarde the weſte (which they haue nowe alſo ſearched on euery ſyde) we founde three hundreth leagues to the enterance of the ryuer *Maragnonum*: And from thenſe to *Os Draconis*, ſeuen hundreth leagues: but ſumwhat leſſe in the deſcription of ſume: For they doo not agree in al poyntes exquiſitely. The Spanyardes wyll that a league conteyne foure myles by ſea and but three by lande. From *Os Draconis*, to the cape or poynt of *Cuchibacoa*, which beinge paſſed, there is a goulfe on the lefte hande, we meaſured three hundrethe leagues in one carde, and much thereabout in an other. From this poynt of *Cuchibacoa*, to the region of *Caramairi* in which is the hauen *Carthago* (which ſum caule *Carthagena*) we found about a hundreth and ſeuentie leagues. From *Caramairi* to the Ilande *Fortis*, fiftie leagues. From thenſe to the goulfes of *Vraba* amonge the which is the vyllage cauled *Sancta Maria Antiquà* where the Spanyardes haye apoynted theyr habitacion, only. xxxiii. leagues. From the ryuer of *Vraba* in the prouince of *Dariena* to the ryuer of *Beragua*

Cardes of the sea.

The carde of Americus Vesputius.

The carde of Colonus.

The carde of Iohannes de la Cossa.

86

The carde of Andreas moralis.

The maner of measuring the cardes.

Loke decade i. liber. iii.

The Iland of Cabouerde.

Maragnonum
Os Draconis

A league.

Cuchibacoa.

Caramairi.
Carthago.
The Iland Fortis.
Vraba.
Beragua.

where *Nicueſa* hadde intended to haue faſtened his foote if god hadde not otherwyſe decreed, we meaſured a hundreth and thirtie leagues. Frome *Beragua* to that ryuer whiche wee ſayde of *Colonus* to bee cauled *Sancti Matthei*, in the which alſo *Nicueſa* looſinge his carauell, wandered in greate calamities, we founde in owre cardes, onely a hundreth and fortie leagues: Yet many other which of late tyme haue coome from theſe partes, haue deſcrybed many moo leagues in this tracte from the ryuer of *Sancti Matthei*: In which alſo, they place dyuers ryuers, as *Aburema* with the Ilande cauled *Scutum Cateba* lyinge before it, whoſe kynges name is *Facies combuſta*. Lykewiſe an other ryuer cauled *Zobraba*: after that, *Vrida*: and then *Duraba* in the which gold is founde. Furthermore, many goodly hauens, as *Cerabaro* and *Hiebra*, ſoo cauled of th[e]inhabitantes. And thus if yowre holynes wyll conferre theſe numbers togyther, yowe ſhall fynde in this accompte, a thouſand fiue hundreth twentie and fyue leagues, whiche amounte to fyue thouſande and ſeuen hundreth myles from the poynt of *Sancti Matthei*, which they caule *Sinum perditorum*: that is, the goulfe of the loſte men. But we may not leaue here. For after this, one *Aſtur Ouetenſes*, otherwyſe named *Iohannes Dias de Solis*, borne in *Nebriſſa* (which bringeth foorth many lerned men) ſaylinge frome this ryuer towarde the weſte, ouer ranne manye coaſtes and leagues: But the myddeſte of that ſhore, bendethe towarde the North: And it is therfore directly placed in order with the other. Yet may we gather by a diameter or ryght lyne, about three hundreth leagues. Hereby maye yowe gather what is the length of this lande. But of the breadth, perhappes wee ſhall hereafter haue further knowleage. Let vs nowe ſpeake ſumwhat of the varietie of the degrees of the eleuation of the pole ſtarres. This lande therfore, althowgh it reache foorth from the Eaſt into the Weſte, yet is it crooked and hathe the poynt bendynge ſo toward the ſouth, that it loſeth the ſight of the North pole, and is extended beyonde the Equinoctial lyne ſeuen degrees towarde the South pole. But the poynt herof, perteyneth to the iuriſdiction of the Portugales as we haue ſayde. Leauinge this poynt and ſaylinge toward Paria the north ſtarre is ſeene ageyne, and is ſo much the more lyfted vp, in howe much the region enclyneth more towarde the Weſte. The Spanyardes therfore, haue dyuers degrees of eleuations, vntyl they come to *Dariena* beinge their chiefe ſtation and dwellynge place in thoſe landes. For they haue forſaken *Beragua*, where they found the North pole eleuate. viii. degrees But from henſe the lande doth ſoo muche bende towarde the North, that it is there in maner equall with the degrees of the ſtrayghtes of Hercules pyllers: eſpecially yf wee meaſure certeyne landes founde by them towarde the Northe ſyde of *Hiſpaniola*. Emonge the which, there is an Ilande, about three hundreth and. xxv. leagues from *Hiſpaniola*, as they ſay whiche haue ſearched the ſame, named *Boiuca* or *Agnaneo*, in the which is a continual ſprynge of runnynge water of ſuch maruelous vertue, that the water therof beinge dronk, perhappes with ſume dyete, maketh owld men younge ageyne. And here muſt I make proteſtacion to yowre holynes, not to thynke this to bee ſayde lyghtly or raſhely. For they haue ſoo ſpredde this rumour for a truth throwghowt all the courte, that not onely all the people, but alſo many of them whom wiſedome or fortune hath diuided from the common ſort, thinke it to be true. But if yowe ſhal aſke my opinion herein, I wyl anſwere that I wyll not attribute ſo greate poure to nature: but that god hath noo leſſe reſerued this prerogatiue to hym ſelfe, then to ſearche the hartes of men, or to gyue ſubſtance to priuation, (that is) beinge to noo beinge: Excepte we ſhall beleue the fable of *Colchis* of *Eſon* renouate, to bee as trewe as the wrytinges of *Sibylla Erythrea*. Albeit perhappes the ſcoles of phiſitians and naturall philoſophers wyll not muche ſtycke to affirme that by th[e]uſe of certeyne ſecreate medecines and dyete, the accidentes of age (as they caule them) may be longe hydden and deferred, which they wyll to bee vnderſtoode, by the renouacion of age. And to haue ſayde thus much of the length and breadthe of theſe Regions, and of the rowghe and hugious mountaynes with theyr watery caues, alſo of the dyuers degrees of that lande, I thinke it ſufficient. But I thowght it not good to let paſſe what chaunced to theſe miſerable men amonge theyr generall calamities. I remember that when I was a chylde, mee thowght my bowelles grated and that my ſpirites were maruelouſlye troubeled for verye pitie, when I readde in the poet Virgyl howe *Achemenides* was lefte of *Vlyſſes* vpon the ſea bankes amonge the giantes cauled *Cyclopes* where for the ſpace of many dayes from the departinge of *Vlyſſes* vntyll the commynge of *Eneas* he eate none other meate but only berryes and hawes. But owre vnfortunate Spanyardes whiche folowed *Nicueſa* to inhabite *Beragua*, woolde haue eſtemed hawes and berryes for greate delicates. What ſhulde I heare ſpeake of the heade of an aſſe bowght for a greate price, and of ſuch other extremities as men haue ſuffered in townes beſeaged? After that *Nicueſa* hadde determyned to leaue *Beragua* for the barrennes of the ſoyle, he attempted to ſearche *Portum Bellum*, and then the coaſtes of the poynt cauled *Marmor*, if he myght there fynde a place more fortunate to inhabite. In this meane tyme, ſo greuous famen oppreſſed his ſouldiers, that they neyther abſteyned from eatinge of mangie dogges which they had with them aſwell for theyr defence as for huntynge (for in the warre ageynſt the naked people, dogges ſtoode them in greate ſteade) nor yet ſumtymes from the ſlayne inhabitantes. For they founde not there any frutefull trees or plentie of foules as in *Dariena*, but a barren grounde and not meete to bee inhabited. Here certeyne of the ſouldiers made a bargein with one of theyr felowes for the price of a leane dogge, who alſo was almoſte deade for hunger: They gaue the owner of the dogge many of thoſe pieces of golde which they caule *Peſos* or golden Caſtellans. Thus agreinge of the

R. Sancti Matthei.

R. Aburema
Scutum Cateba
R. Zobroba.
Vrida.
Duraba.
Cerabaro.
Hiebra.
Note.
R. d. las. perdidos
The nauigation of Iohannes Dias.

The eleuation of the pole.

The iurisdiction of the Portugales.
Paria.

Dariena.

Beragua.

Hercules pyllers.

87
The Ilande Boiuca or Agnaneo.
A water of maruelous vertue.

The renouation of age.

The accidentes of age may bee hydden.

Achemenides.
Vlysses.
Eneas.
Extreme hunger.

This was at the siege of hierusalem.

Portus Bellus
Marmor.

Mangy dogs eaten.

A mangy dog dere sold.

price, they-fleid the dogge to bee eaten, and caſte his mangie ſkynne with the bones of the heade hangynge therto, amonge the buſhes. The day folowynge, a certeyne footeman of theyr company, chaunced to fynde the ſkynne beinge nowe full of maggottes and ſtynkynge. He brought it home with hym, ſodde it, and eate it.

Broth of a mangy dogs skynne.

Toades eaten

Many reſorted to hym with theyr dyſſhes for the brothe of the ſodde ſkynne, proferinge hym for euerye dyſſhefull a piece of golde. An other founde twoo toades and ſodde them which a ſicke man bought of hym for twoo fyne ſhertes curiouſly wrought of lynen intermyxt with golde. Certeyn other wanderinge abowte to ſeeke for vytayles, founde in a patheway in the myddeſt of a fyelde, a deade man of th[e]inhabitantes whiche had byn ſlayne of his owne coompanye and was nowe rotten and ſtynkynge. They drewe hym a fyde,

A deade man eaten.

diſmemberde hym ſecreatly, roſted hym and eate hym, therewith aſſwagynge theyr hunger as yf they had byn fedde with pheaſauntes. One alſo, which departinge from his companions in the nyght ſeaſon, went a fyſhyng amonge the reedes of the maryſſhes, lyued only with ſlyme or mudde for the ſpace of certeyne dayes, vntyll at the lengthe creepinge and almoſte deade, he founde the way to his felowes. And thus theſe miſerable men of *Beragua* vexed with theſe and ſuche other a[f]ſſictions, were browgh[t]e from the number of ſeuen hundreth threſcore and ten ſouldiers, ſcarſely to fortie, beinge nowe alſo added to the coompany of them in *Dariena*. Fewe were ſlayne of th[e]inhabitantes. But the reſydewe conſumed by famen, breathed owt theyr wery

88

ſowles, openynge a waye to the newe landes for ſuch as ſhal coome after them, appeaſinge the fury of the barbarous nations, with the price of theyr bludde. Conſyderinge therfore after theſe ſtormes, with what eaſe other men ſhall ouerrunne and inhabite theſe landes, in reſpecte to the calamities that theſe men haue ſuffered, they ſhall ſeeme to goo to bryde feaſtes where all thynges are redy prepared ageynſt their commynge. But

Note.

Petrus Arias whom the Spanyardes caule Pediarias.

where *Petrus Arias* arryued with the kynges nauie and newe ſupply of men, to this houre I knowe no certentie. What ſhall chaunce herafter I wyll make diligente inquiſition if I ſhall vnderſtande this to bee acceptable to yowre holynes. Thus I byd yowe hartely farewell: from the courte of the mooſte Catholyke kynge, the daye beefore the nones of December, in the yeare of Chriſte, M. D. XIIII.

¶ THE FYRST BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE, TO THE BYSSHOPPE OF ROME LEO THE TENTH.

Was determyned (moſte holye father) to haue cloſed vp the gates to this newe worlde, ſuppoſinge that I had wandered farre enowgh in the coaſtes therof, while in the meane time newe letters were brought me frome thenſe, which cauſed me ageyne to take my penne in hande. For I receaued letters not only from certeyne of myne acquaintaunce there, but alſo frome *Vaſchus Nunnez* whome we ſayde by the confidence of his owne poure with his confetherates, to haue vſurped the gouernaunce of *Dariena* after the reiecting of *Nicueſa* and *Anciſus*, Lieuetenantes. By his letter wrytten after his warlyke maner, wee vnderſtand that he hath paſſed ouer the mountaynes, diuidyng the Ocean knowen to vs, from the other mayne ſea on the ſouth ſyde of this lande hetherto vnknowen. His epiſtell is greater then that cauled *Capreenſis de Seiano*. But wee haue gathered out of that and other, onely suche thynges as we thowght moſte woorthy to bee noted. *Vaſchus* ſoo behaued hym ſelfe in theſe affayres, that he dyd not onely pacifie the kynges diſpleaſure conceaued ageynſt hym, but alſo made hym ſo fauorable and gracious good lorde towarde hym, that he rewarded him and his coompanions with many honorable gyftes and priuileges for theyr attemptes. Wherfore I deſyre yowre holynes to inclyne yowre attentiue eares, and to conſyder with a ioyfull mynde what they haue browght to paſſe in theſe great enterpryſes. For this valiante nation (the Spanyardes I meane) haue not onely with greate paynes and innumerable dangers ſubdued to the Chriſtian empire, infinite hundredes and legions, but alſo myriades of men. *Vaſchus Nunnez* therfore, whether it were that he was impacient of Idlenes (for a valiente mynde can not reſt in one place or bee vnoccupyed) or leaſte any other ſhulde preuent hym in ſoo great a matter (ſuſpecting the newe gouernour *Petrus Arias*) or being moued by both theſe cauſes, and eſpecially for that the kynge had taken diſpleaſure with hym for ſuch thynges as he had doone before, toke th[e]aduenture vppon hym with a fewe men to brynge that to paſſe which the ſonne of kynge *Comogrus* thought could hardly haue byn doone with the ayde of a thouſande men, wherof *Petrus Arias* was appoynted capitayne for the ſame purpoſe. Aſſemblynge therfore certeyne of the owlde ſouldiers of *Dariena*, and many of thoſe whiche came lately from *Hiſpāniola*, allured by the fame of greater plentie of golde, he gathered an armye of a hundreth foureſcore and tenne men. Thus beinge furnyſſhed and redie to take his vyage by ſea, whyle the wynde ſerued hym, he departed frome *Dariena* with one brygantine and tenne of theyr boates whiche they caule Canoas as wee haue ſayde. Fyrſt therfore arryuynge in the dominion of *Careta* kynge of *Coiba* and frende to the Chriſtians, and leauynge his ſhyppe and boates there, he made his deuout prayers to almyghtie god, and therwith went forwarde on his iourney by lande toward the mountaynes. Here he fyrſt entered into the region of kynge *Poncha*, who fledde at his commyng as he had doone before. But *Vaſchus* ſent meſſengers to hym by the conduct of certeyne of *Careta* his men, promyſinge hym frendſhip and defence ageynſt his enemies, with many other benefites. *Poncha* thus entyſed with the fayre ſpeache and frendely profers bothe of owre men and of the Caretans, came to owr men gladly and wyllyngely makynge a league of frendſhippe with them. *Vaſchus* enterteyned hym very frendely, and perſuaded him neuer therafter to ſtande in feare. Thus they ioyned handes, embraſed, and gaue greate gyftes the one to the other to knytte vp the knotte of continuall amitie. *Poncha* gaue *Vaſchus* a hundreth and ten poundes weyght of golde, of that pounde which the Spanyardes caule *Peſum*. He had no greater plentie of golde at this tyme, by reaſon he was ſpoyled the yeare before as we haue ſayde. *Vaſchus* to recompence one benefyte with an other, gaue hym certeyne of owre thynges, as counterfet rynges, Chriſtal ſtones, copper cheynes and braſelettes, haukes belles, lokynge glaſſes, and ſuche other fyne ſtuffe. Theſe thynges they ſet much by and greately eſteeme. For ſuche thynges as are ſtraunge, are euery where counted precious. He gaue alſo to *Poncha* certeyne axes to fell trees: which he accepted as a princely gyfte,

Vaschus Nunnez, gouernor of Dariena.

The newe south Ocean.

Commendation of the Spanyardes.

A valient mynd can not bee ydle.

A desperate aduenture

Vaschus his viage toward the golden mountaynes.

Careta kynge of Coiba

Kyng Poncha

89

A hundreth and x. poundes weyght of golde.

Strange thinges are counted precious.

Lacke of iren

A stone in the steede of Iren.

Superfluities hynder libertie.

Carpenters.

Brydges.

The region of Quarequa.

Kinge Quarequa is dryuen to flyght.

Hargabusies.

Crossebowes

vi. C. [six hundred] Barbarians are slaine

Vnnatural lechery.

90

The vse of dogges in the warre agenst the naked Barbarians.

Naturau] hatred of vnnatural sinne.

Palatini.
I wolde all men were of this opinion.

The haruest is great and the woorkemen but fewe.

Warrelyke people.

The hygher the coulder.

bycauſe thcy lacke Iren and all other metals except golde: by reaſon wherof they are enforced with greate laboure to cut theyr trees to buylde theyr houſes, and eſpecially to make theyr boates holowe withowte inſtrumentes of Iren, with certeyne ſharpe ſtones whiche they fynde in the ryuers. Thus *Vaſchus* leauynge all thynges in ſafetie behynde hym, marched forwarde with his armye towarde the mountaynes, by the conducte of certeyne guydes and labourers which *Poncha* had gyuen hym, as well to leade hym the way, as alſo to cary his baggages and open the ſtraightes through the deſolate places and craggy rockes full of the dennes of wylde beaſtes. For there is ſeldoome entercourſe or byinge and ſellynge betwene theſe naked people, bycauſe they ſtand in neede of fewe thynges and haue not the vſe of money. But yf at any tyme they exerciſe any bartering they doo it but nere hande, exchangynge golde for houſholde ſtuffe with theyr confines whiche ſumewhat eſteeme the ſame for ornamente when it is wrought. Other ſuperfluities they vtterly contemne, as hynderances of theyr ſweete libertie, foraſmuch as they are gyuen only to play and Idelnes. And for this cauſe, the high wayes which lye betwene theyr regions are not much worne with many iorneys. Yet haue theyr ſcoutes certeyne priuie markes whereby they knowe the waye the one to inuade the others dominions, and ſpoyle and infeſte them ſelues on-bothe ſydes with mutual incurſions priuilie in the nyght ſeaſon. By the helpe therfore of theyr guydes and labourers, with owre carpenters, he paſſed ouer the horrible mountaynes and many greate ryuers lyinge in the way, ouer the which he made brydges eyther with pyles or trunkes of trees. And here doo I let paſſe manye thynges whiche they ſuffered for lacke of neceſſaries, beinge alſo in maner ouercome with extreme laboure, leaſte I ſhulde bee tedious in reherſinge thynges of ſmaule value. But I haue thought it good not to omitte ſuche doinges as he had with the kynges by the waye. Therefore or euer he came to the toppes of the hygh mountaynes, he entered into a Region cauled *Quarequa*, and mette with the kynge thereof cauled by the ſame name, with a greate bande of men armed after theyr maner, as with bowes and arrowes, longe and brode two handed ſwordes made of wodde, longe ſtaues hardened at the endes with fyer, dartes alſo and ſlynges. He came proudely and cruelly ageynſt owre men, and ſent meſſengers to them to byd theym ſtande and procede no further: demaundynge whyther they went and what they hadde to doo there. Herewith he came foorth and ſhewed hym ſelfe beinge appareled with al his nobilitie: but the other were all naked. Then approchinge towarde owre men, he thretened them with a lions countenance to depart from thenſe except they woolde bee ſlayne euery mothers ſonne. When owre men denyed that they woolde goo backe, he aſſayled them fiercely. But the battayle was ſone fynyſſhed. For as ſoone as they harde the noyſe of the hargabuſies, they beleued that owre menne caryed thunder and lyghtenynge about with them. Many alſo beinge ſlayne and ſore wounded with quarels of croſſebowes, they turned their backes and fledde. Owre men folowynge them in the chaſe, hewed them in pieſes as the butchers doo fleſſhe in the ſhamwelles, from one an arme, from an other a legge, from hym a buttocke, from an other a ſhulder, and from ſume the necke from the bodye at one ſtroke. Thus, ſyxe hundreth of them with theyr kynge, were ſlayne lyke brute beaſtes. *Vaſchus* founde the houſe of this kynge infected with moſt abhominable and vnnaturall lechery. For he founde the kynges brother and many other younge men in womens apparell, ſmoth and effeminately decked, which by the report of ſuch as dwelte abowte hym, he abuſed with prepoſterous venus. Of theſe abowte the number of fortie, he commaunded to bee gyuen for a pray to his dogges. For (as we haue ſayd) the Spaniardes vſe [t]he helpe of dogges in their warres ageynſt the naked people whom they inuade as fiercely and rauenyngely as yf they were wylde boares or hartes. In ſoo muche that owre Spanyardes haue founde theyr dogges noo leſſe faythful to them in all daungiours and enterpryſes, then dyd the Colophonians or Caſtabalenſes which inſtituted hole armies of dogges ſoo made to ſerue in the warres, that beinge accuſtomed to place them in the fore froonte of the battayles, they neuer ſhrunke or gaue backe. When the people had harde of the ſeuere punyſſhement which owr men had executed vppon that fylthy kynde of men, they reſorted to theim as it had byn to Hercules for refuge, by violence bryngyng with them al ſuch as they knewe to bee infected with that peſtilence, ſpettynge in theyr faces and cryinge owte to owre men to take reuenge of them and rydde them owte of the worlde from amonge men as contagious beaſtes. This ſtinkynge abhomination hadde not yet entered amonge the people, but was exerciſed onely by the noble men and gentelmen. But the people lyftinge vp theyr handes and eyes toward heauen, gaue tokens that god was greuouſly offended with ſuch vyle deedes. Affirmynge this to bee the cauſe of theyr ſoo many thunderinges, lyghtnynge, and tempeſtes wherwith they are ſoo often troubeled: And of the ouerflowinge of waters which drowne theyr ſets and frutes, whereof famenne and dyuers diſeaſes inſue, as they ſimplye and faythfully beleue, althowgh they knowe none other god then the ſoonne, whom onely they honoure, thinkynge that it dooth bothe gyue and take awaye as it is pleaſed or offended. Yet are they very docible, and eaſye to bee allured to owre cuſtomes and religion, if they had any teachers. In theyr language there is nothynge vnpleaſaunte to the eare or harde to bee pronounced, but that all theyr woordes may bee wrytten with latin letters as wee ſayde of th[e]inhabitantes of *Hiſpaniola*. It is a warlyke nation, and hath byn euer hetherto moleſtous to theyr bortherers. But the region is not fortunate with frutful ground or plentie of gold. Yet is it full of greate barren mountaynes beinge ſumewhat colde by reaſon of theyr heyght. And

therfore the noble men and gentelmen are apparelled. But the common people lyue content onely with the benefytes of nature. There is a region not paſt two dayes iourney diſtant from *Quarequa*, in which they founde only blacke Moores: and thoſe excedynge fierce and cruell. They ſuppoſe that in tyme paſte certeyne blacke mores ſayled thether owt of *Aethiopia* to robbe: and that by ſhippewracke or ſume other chaunce, they were dryuen to thoſe mountaynes. Th[e]inhabitantes of *Quarequa* lyue in continuall warre and debate with theſe blacke men. Here *Vaſchus* leauinge in *Quarequa* many of his ſouldiers (which by reaſon they were not yet accuſtomed to ſuch trauayles and hunger, fell into dyuers diſeaſes) tooke with hym certeyne guydes of the Quarequatans to conduct hym to the toppes of the mountaynes. From the palaice of kynge *Poncha*, to the proſpect of the other ſouth ſea, is only ſyxe dayes iorney: the which neuertheleſſe by reaſon of many hynderances and chaunces, and eſpecially for lacke of vytayles, he coulde accomplyſhe in noo leſſe then. xxv. dayes. But at the length, the ſeuenth daye of the calendes of October, he behelde with woonderinge eyes the toppes of the hygh mountaynes ſhewed vnto hym by the guydes of *Quarequa*, from the whiche he myght ſee the other ſea ſoo longe looked for, and neuer ſeene before of any man commynge owte of owre worlde. Approchinge therefore to the toppes of the mountaynes, he commaunded his armye to ſtey, and went him ſelfe alone to the toppe, as it were to take the fyrſt poſſeſſion therof. Where, faulynge proſtrate vppon the grounde, and rayſinge hym ſelfe ageyne vpon his knees as is the maner of the Chriſtians to pray, lyftynge vppe his eyes and handes towarde heauen, and directinge his face towarde the newe founde ſouth ſea, he poored foorth his humble and deuout prayers before almyghtie God as a ſpirituall ſacrifice with thankes gyuing, that it had pleaſed his diuine maieſtie to reſerue vnto that day the victorie and praiſe of ſo greate a thynge vnto hym, beinge a man but of ſmaule witte and knowleage, of lyttle experience and baſe parentage. When he had thus made his prayers after his warlike maner he beckened with his hande to his coompanions to coome to hym, ſhewynge them the greate mayne ſea heretofore vnknowen to th[e]inhabitantes of Europe, Aphrike, and Aſia. Here ageyne he fell to his prayers as before: deſyringe almyghtie God and the bleſſed virgin to fauour his beginninges, and to gyue hym good ſucceſſe to ſubdue thoſe landes to the glorie of his holy name and encreaſe of his trewe religion. All his coompanions dyd lykewyſe, and prayſed god with loude voyces for ioye. Then *Vaſchus*, with no leſſe manlye corage then Hanniball of Carthage ſhewed his ſouldiers Italye and the promontories of the Alpes, exhorted his men to lyft vp their hartes, and to behoulde the lande euen nowe vnder theyr feete, and the ſea before theyr eyes, whiche ſhulde bee vnto them a full and iuſt rewarde of theyr great laboures and trauayles nowe ouerpaſſed. When he had ſayde theſe woordes, he commaunded them to raiſe certeine heapes of ſtones in the ſteede of alters for a token of poſſeſſion. Then deſcendynge from the toppes of the mountaynes, leaſt ſuch as might come after hym ſhulde argue hym of lyinge or falſhod, he wrote the kynge of Caſtelles name here and there on the barkes of the trees bothe on the ryght hande and on the lefte: and rayſed heapes of ſtones all the way that he went, vntyll he came to the region of the nexte kynge towarde the ſouth whoſe name was *Chiapes*. This kynge came foorthe ageynſte hym with a greate multitude of men: threateninge and forbyddynge him not onely to paſſe through his dominions, but alſo to goo no further. Herevppon, *Vaſchus* ſet his battayle in array, and exhorted his men (beinge nowe but fewe) fiercely to aſſayle theyr enemies, and to eſteeme theym noo better then dogges meate as they ſhulde bee ſhortly. Placeinge therfore the hargabuſiers and maſties in the forefroonte, they ſaluted kynge *Chiapes* and his men with ſuch a larome, that when they hard the noyſe of the gunnes, ſawe the flames of fyer, and ſmelte the ſauour of brymſtone (for the wynde blewe towarde them) they droue them ſelues to flyght with ſuche feare leaſte thunderboultes and lyghtnynges folowed theim, that manye fell downe to the grounde: whom owre men purſuinge, fyrſt keepinge theyr order, and after breakyng theyr array, ſlewe but fewe and tooke many captiue. For they determined to vſe no extremitie, but to pacifie thoſe Regions as quietlye as they myght. Enteringe therfore into the palaice of kynge *Chiapes*, *Vaſchus* commaunded many of the captiues to bee looſed: wyllynge them to ſearch owte theyr kynge, and to exhorte hym to coome thyther: And that in ſoo doinge, he woolde bee his frende and profer hym peace, beſyde many other benefites. But if he refuſed to coome, it ſhulde turne to the deſtruction of hym and his, and vtter ſubuerſion of his contrey. And that they myght the more aſſuredly do this meſſage to *Chiapes* he ſent with them certeyne of the guydes whiche came with hym from *Quarequa*.

Thus *Chiapes* beinge perſuaded aſwel by the Quareqans who coulde coniecture to what ende the matter woolde coome by th[e]experience whiche they had ſeene in them ſelues and theyr kynge, as alſo by the reaſons of his owne men to whome *Vaſchus* hadde made ſoo frendely promyſes in his behalfe, came foorthe of the caues in the whiche he lurked, and ſubmytted hym ſelfe to *Vaſchus*, who accepted hym frendelye. They ioyned handes, embraſed the one the other, made a perpetuall league of frendeſhippe, and gaue greate rewardes on bothe ſydes. *Chiapes* gaue *Vaſchus* foure hundreth poundes weyght of wrought goulde of thoſe poundes whiche they caule *Peſos*: And *Vaſchus* recompenſed hym ageyne with certeyne of owre thynges. Thus beinge made freendes, they remayned togyther a fewe dayes vntyll *Vaſchus* ſouldiers were coome which he lefte behynde hym in *Quarequa*. Then caulinge vnto hym the guydes and labourers which came with hym from thenſe he

A region of black moores

Diseases of change of ayer and dyet.

The south sea.

Vaschus is coome to the syght of the newe south sea.

Prayer.

God rayseth the poore from the dungehyl

91

Hanniball of Carthage.

Vaschus taketh possession of the mountaynes

Kynge Chiapes.

A battayle.

Chiapes is dryuen to flyght.

Vaschus sendeth for king Chiapes.

Chiapes submitteth hymselfe to Vaschus.

iiii. C. [four hundred] pounds weyght of wrought gold

rewarded them liberallye and diſmiſſed theym with thankes. Shortly after, by the conduct of *Chiapes* hym ſelfe, and certeyne of his men, departinge from the toppes of the mountaynes, he came in the ſpace of foure dayes to the bankes of the newe ſea: where aſſemblynge al his men togyther with the kynges ſcribes and notaries, they addicted al that maine ſea with all the landes adiacent there vnto to the dominion and Empire of Caſtile. Here he left part of his ſouldiers with *Chiapes* that he myght th[e]eſelier ſearche thoſe coaſtes. And takyng with hym nyne of theyr lyghters made of one hole tree (which they caule *Culchas* as th[e]inhabitantes of *Hiſpaniola* caul them *Canoas*) and alſo a bande of foureſcore men with certeine of *Chiapes* men, he paſſed ouer a greate ryuer and came to the region of a certeyne kynge whoſe name was *Coquera.* He attempted to reſyſte owre men as dyd the other, and with lyke ſucceſſe: for he was ouercoome and put to flyght. But *Vaſchus* who entended to wynne hym with gentelnes, ſente certeyne Chiapeans to him to declare the greate poure of owre menne: howe inuincible they were: howe mercifull to ſuch as ſubmit them ſelues, alſo cruell and ſeuere to ſuch as obſtinatly withſtande them. Promyſinge hym furthermore, that by the frendſhippe of owre men, he myght bee well aſſured by th[e]exemple of other, not onely to lyue in peace and quietness hym ſelfe, but alſo to bee reuenged of th[e]iniuries of his enemies. Wylling hym in concluſion ſoo to weigh the matter, that if he refuſed this gentelnes profered vnto hym by ſoo greate a victourer, he ſhulde or it were longe, lerne by feelynge to repent him to late of that perel which he myght haue auoyded by hearing. *Coquera* with theſe woordes and exemples, ſhaken with great feare, came gladly with the meſſengers, bryngyng with him ſyxe hundreth and. l. [fifty] *Peſos* of wrought gold, which he gaue vnto owre men. *Vaſchus* rewarded hym lykewiſe as we ſayd before of *Poncha.* *Coquera* beinge thus pacified, they returned to the palaice of *Chiapes.* Where, viſitinge theyr companions, and reſtynge there a whyle, *Vaſchus* determyned to ſearch the nexte greate goulfe, the which, from the furtheſt reachynge therof into the lande of theyr countreys, from the enteraunce of the mayne ſea, they ſaye to bee threeſcore myles. This they named ſaynt Michaels goulfe, which they ſay to bee full of inhabited Ilandes and hugious rockes. Enteringe therefore into the nyne boates or *Culchas* wherwith he paſſed ouer the ryuer before, hauinge alſo with hym the ſame coompanye of foureſcore hole men, he wente forwarde on his purpoſe, although he were greatly diſſuaded by *Chiapes*, who erneſtly deſyred hym not to attempt that vyage at that tyme, affirming the goulfe to be ſoo tempeſtious and ſtormy three moonethes in the yeare, that the ſea was there by noo meanes nauigable: And that he had ſeene many *Culchas* deuoured of whirlepoles euen beefore his eyes. But inuincible *Vaſchus*, impaciente of idlenes, and voyde of all feare in goddes cauſe, aunſwered that god and his holy ſayntes woolde proſper his enterpryſes in this caſe, foraſmuche as the matter touched God and the defence of the Chriſtian religion, for the maynetenaunce wherof it ſhulde bee neceſſarie to haue great abundance of ryches and treaſure as the ſynewes of war ageynſte the enemies of the faythe. Thus vſinge alſo th[e]office both of an oratoure and preacher, and hauinge perſuaded his coompanyons, he lanched from the lande. But *Chiapes*, leaſt *Vaſchus* ſhulde any thynge doubt of his faythfulnes towarde hym, profered himſelfe to goo with hym whither ſoo euer he went: And wolde by noo meanes aſſent that *Vaſchus* ſhulde depart from his palaice, but that he woolde brynge hym on the waye and take part of his fortune. Therfore as ſoone as they were nowe entered into the maine ſea, ſuch ſourges and conflictes of water aroſe ageynſt them that they were at theyr wyttes endes whither to turne them or where to reſte. Thus beinge toſſed and amaſed with feare, the one loked on the other with pale and vncherefull countenaunces. But eſpecially *Chiapes* and his coompany, who had before tyme with theyr eyes ſeene th[e]experience of thoſe ieoperdies, were greatly diſcomforted. Yet (as god woolde) they eſcaped all, and landed at the nexte Ilande: Where makynge faſte theyr boates, they reſted there that nyght. Here the water ſoo encreaſed, that it almoſt ouerflowed the Iland. They ſay alſo that that ſouth ſea doth ſoo in maner boyle and ſwelle, that when it is at the hygheſt it doth couer many greate rockes, which at the faule therof, are ſeene farre aboue the water. But on the contrary parte, all ſuche as inhabite the North ſea, affirme with one voyce, that hit ſcarſely riſeth at any tyme a cubet aboue the bankes as they alſo confeſſe which inhabite the Ilande of Hiſpaniola and other Ilandes ſituate in the ſame. The Ilande therfore beinge nowe drye by the faule of the water, they reſorted to theyr boates which they founde all ouerwhelmed and full of ſande, and ſume ſore bruſed, with great ryſtes, and almoſt loſt by reaſon theyr cables were broken. Such as were bruſed, they tyed faſt with theyr gyrdels, with ſlippes of the barkes of trees, and with tough and longe ſtalkes of certein herbes of the ſea, ſtopping the ryftes or chynkes with graſſe accordynge to the preſente neceſſitie. Thus were they enforced to returne backe ageyne lyke vnto men that came frome ſhippewracke, beinge almoſt conſumed with hunger, bycauſe theyr vytayles were vtterly deſtroyed by tempeſte. Th[e]inhabitantes declared that there is harde all the yeare horrible rorynge of the ſea amonge thoſe Ilandes as often as it ryſethe or fauleth. But this moſt eſpecially in thoſe three monethes in the which it is moſte boyſt[r]ious as *Chiapes* towlde *Vaſchus* before: Meanynge (as they coulde coniecture by his woordes) October, Nouember, and December: for he ſignified the preſent moone and the twoo moones folowynge, countynge the moonethes by the moones, whereas it was nowe October. Here therefore refreſſhynge hym ſelfe and his ſouldiers a whyle, and paſſynge by one vnprofitable kynge, he came to an other whoſe name was *Tumaccus*, after the name of the region, beinge ituate on that ſyde

Vaschus addicteth the newe land and sea, to the dominion of Castile.

Kynge Coquera is dryuen to flyght.

Vaschus vseth both gentelnes and rigour.

92

vi. C. [six hundred] and l. [fifty] poundes weyght of wrought gold

A goulfe of threescore myles.

Saynt Michaels goulfe

The manly corage and godly zeale of Vaschus

Ryches are the synewes of warre

The faythfulnes of kynge Chiapes.

A tempest on the sea.

The increasing of the South sea.

The Northe Ocean.

Hard shyft in necessitie.

93

The Region Tumacca.

of the goulfe. This *Tumaccus* came foorth ageynſte owre men as dyd the other, and with lyke foꝛtune. For he was ouercoome, dryuen to flyght, and many of his men flayne. He hym ſelfe was alſo ſore wounded, but yet eſcaped. *Vaſchus* ſent certeyne meſſengers of the Chiapeans to hym to returne, and not to bee afrayde. But he could be nothyng moued nether by promyſſes nor threateninges. Yet when the meſſengers were inſtant, and ceaſſed not to threaten death to him and his famely, with the vtter deſolation of his kyngedome if he perſiſted in that obſtinacie, at the length, he ſent his ſoonne with them: whom *Vaſchus* honorably enterteyninge, apparelinge hym gorgiouſly and gyuing hym many gyftes, ſent hym to his father, wyllynge hym to perſuade hym of the puiſſaunce, munificence, liberalitie, humanitie, and clemencie of owre men. *Tumaccus* beinge mooued by this gentelnes declared toward his ſonne, came with him the thyrde day, bryngynge nothynge with hym at that tyme. But after that he knewe that owre men deſyred goulde and pearles, he ſent for ſyxe hundreth and. xiiii. *Peſos* of golde, and two hundreth and fortie of the biggeſt and fayreſt perles beſyde a great number of the ſmauleſt ſorte. Owre men marueyled at the byggenes and fayrenes of theſe perles although they were not perfectely whyte bycauſe they take theym not owte of the ſea muſculs excepte they fyꝛſt roſt them, that they may th[e]eſelyer open them ſelfe, and alſo that the fyſſhe maye haue the better taſte, whiche they eſteeme for a delicate and princely dyſſhe, and ſet more thereby then by the perles them ſelues. Of theſe thynges I was enformed of one *Arbolantius* beinge one of *Vaſchus* coompanions whom he ſent to the kyng with manye perles and certeyne of thoſe ſea muſculs. But when *Tumaccus* ſawe that owre men ſoo greatly regarded the bewtie of the perles, he commaunded certeyne of his men to prepare them ſelues to goo a fyſſhynge for perles. Who departinge, came ageyne within foure dayes, bringynge with them twelue pounde weight of orient perles after eight ounces to the pounde. Thus reioyſinge on bothe parties, they embraſed and made a league of continuall frendeſhippe. *Tumaccus* thought him ſelfe happie that he had preſented owre men with ſuch thankeful gyftes and was admitted to theyr frendſhippe: and owre men thinkynge them ſelues happie and bleſſed that they had founde ſuche tokens of great ryches, ſwalowed downe theyr ſpettle for thyrſte. At all theſe doinges, kynge *Chiapes* was preſent as a wytnes and coompanion. He alſo reioyſed not a lyttle, aſwell that by his conductinge he ſawe that owre men ſhulde be ſatiſfied of theyr deſyre, as alſo that by this meanes he had declared to the next kynge his bortherer and enemie, what frendes he had of owre men, by whoſe ayde he myght lyue in quyetnes and bee reuenged of his aduerſarie if neede ſhulde ſoo requyre. For (as wee haue ſayde) theſe naked kynges infeſte theim ſelues with greuous warres onely for ambition and deſyre to rule. *Vaſchus* boſteth in his epiſtell, that he lerned certeyne maruelous ſecreates of *Tumaccus* hym ſelfe as concernynge the greate ryches of this lande: wherof (as he ſayth) he woold vtter nothyng at this preſente, for aſſhuche as *Tumaccus* toulde it him in his eare. But he was enformed of bothe the kynges, that there is an Ilande in that goulfe, greater then any of the other, hauing in it but onely one kynge, and hym of ſoo great poure, that at ſuche tymes of the yeare as the ſea is caulme, he inuadethe theyr dominions with a greate nauie of *Culchas*, ſpoyling and caryinge a way for a praye, all that he meeteth. This Iland is diſtant from theſe coaſtes, onely twentie myles: Soo that the promontories or poyntes therof rechyng into the ſea, may bee ſeene from the hylles of this Continent. In the ſea nere about this Ilande, ſea muſculs are engendred of ſuch quantitie, that many of them are as brode as buckelers. In theſe are perles founde (beinge the hartes of thoſe ſhell fyſſhes) often tymes as bygge as beanes, ſumtymes bygger then olyues and ſuch as ſumptuous *Cleopatra* myght haue deſyred. Althoughe this Ilande bee ſoo nere to the ſhore of this firme lande, yet is the begynnyng therof in the mayne ſea without the mouth of the goulfe. *Vaſchus* beinge ioyfull and mery with this rych communication, fantaſinge nowe in maner nothing but princes treaſures, beganne to ſpeake fierce and cruell woordes ageynſt the tyranne of that Ilande, meanyng hereby too woonne the myndes of the other kynges, and bynde them to hym with a nearer bonde of frendeſhip. Yet therfore raylynge further on hym with ſpyteſull and opprobrious woordes, he ſwore great othes that he woolde furthwith inuade the Ilande, ſpoylynge, deſtroyinge, burnynge, drownynge, and hangynge, ſparinge neyther ſwoorde nor fyre, vntyll he hadde reuenged theyr iniuries: And therwith commaunded his *Culchas* to bee in a redynes. But the twoo kynges *Chiapes* and *Tumaccus*, exhorted hym frendly to deferre this enterpriſe vntyll a more quiete ſeaſon, bycauſe that ſea was not nauigable withowte greate daunger, beinge nowe the begynnynge of Nouember. Wherin the kynges ſeemed to ſaye trewe. For as *Vaſchus* hym ſelfe wryteth, great roryng of the ſea was harde amonge the Ilandes of the goulfe by reaſon of the raginge and conflicte of the water. Great ryuers alſo deſcending from the toppes of the mountaynes the ſame time of the yeare, and ouerflowyng theyr bankes, dryuyng downe with theyr vyolence greate rockes and trees, make a marueylous noyſe. Lykewiſe the furie of the South and Northeaſt wyndes, aſſociate with thunder and lyghtnynge at the ſame ſeaſon, dyd greatly moleſte them. Whyle the wether was fayre they were vexed in the night with could: and in the day time, the heate of the ſonne troubled them: wherof it is noo maruaile, foraſmuche as they were neare vnto the Equinoctiall lyne, although they make noo mention of the eleuation of the pole. For in ſuch regions, in the nyght, the mone and other coulde planettes: but in the daye, the ſoone and other hotte planettes, doo chiefely exerciſe theyr influence: Althowghe the antiquitie were of an other

Kynge Tumaccus is driuen to flyght.

Golde and perles.

Musculs of the sea.

Fysshyng for perles.

xii pounde weyght of perles.

The thyrst of golde.

Ambition amonge naked men.

This Ilande is cauled Margaritea Diues, or Dites.

A kynge of greate poure.

Bigge perles.

Cleopatra, queene of Egypt resolued a pearle in vineger and drunke it, price. v. thousande pounde of owr mony.

The fiercenes of Vaschus.

94

Great ryuers faulyng from mountaynes.

Thunder and lyghtnynge in Nouember.

Colde in the nyght nere the Equinoctial.

Habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall lyne.

The natiuitations [? nauigations] of the Portingales towarde the southe pole.

Antipodes.

He meaneth S. Augustine and Lactantius.

opinion, ſuppoſinge the Equinoctiall circle to bee vnhabitable and deſolate by reaſon of the heate of the ſoonne hauinge his courſe perpendiculerly or directly ouer the ſame: except a fewe of the contrary opinion, whoſe aſſertions the Portugales haue at theſe dayes by experience proued to bee trewe. For they ſaile yearely to th[e]inhabitantes of the ſouth pole, being in maner *Antipodes* to the people cauled *Hyperborei* vnder the North pole, and exerciſe marchaundies with them. And here haue I named *Antipodes*, foraſmuch as I am not ignorant that there hath byn men of ſingular witte and great lernyng, which haue denyed that there is *Antipodes*: that is, ſuch as walke feete to feete. But it is moſt certeyne, that it is not gyuen to anye one man to knowe all thynges. For euen they alſo were men: whoſe propertie is to erre and bee deccaued in many thynges. Neuertheleſſe, the Portugales of owre tyme haue ſayled to the fyue and fyftie degree of the ſouth pole: Where, coompaſinge abowte the poynt thereof, they myght ſee throughowte al the heauen about the ſame, certeyne ſhynynge whyte cloudes here and there amonge the ſtarres, lyke vnto theym whiche are ſeene in the tracte of heauen cauled *Lactea via*, that is, the mylke whyte waye. They ſay, there is noo notable ſtarre neare about that pole lyke vnto this of owres which the common people thynke to bee the pole it ſelfe (cauled of the Italians *Tramontana*, and of the Spanyardes *Nortes*) but that the ſame fauleth benethe the Ocean. When the ſonne deſcendeth from the myddeſte of the exiltree of the woorlde frome vs, it ryſethe to them, as a payre of balances whoſe weyght inclynynge from the equall poyſe in the myddeſt towarde eyther of the ſydes, cauſeth the one ende to ryſe as much as the other fauleth. When therefore it is autumne with vs, it is ſprynge tyme with them: And ſummer with vs when it is wynter with them. But it ſuffiſeth to haue ſayde thus much of ſtrange matters. Let vs now therfore returne to the hiſtorie and to owre men.

The starres aboute the southe pole.

Lactea via.

A simylitude declarynge Antipodes.

¶ The seconde booke of the thyrde Decade.

The maner of fysshynge for perles.

Thre kindes of perles.

95

Aſchus by th[e]aduice of kynge *Chiapes* and *Tumaccus*, determyned to deferre his vyage to the ſayde Ilande vntyll the nexte ſprynge or ſummer, at which tyme *Chiapes* offered hym ſelfe to accoompany owre men and ayde them therin all that he myght. In this meane tyme *Vaſchus* had knowleage that theſe kynges had nettes and fyſſhynge places in certeyne ſtations of that ſea nere vnto the ſhore, where they were accuſtomed to fyſhe for ſea muſculs in the which perles are engendred: And that for this purpoſe they had certeyne dyuers or fyſſhers exerciſed frome theyr youthe in ſwymmynge vnder the water. But they doo this onely at certeyne tymes when the ſea is calme, that they may th[e]eſelyer coome to the place where theſe ſhell fyſhes are woonte to lye. For the bygger that they are, ſoo much ly they the deaper and nerer to the bottome. But the leſſer, as it were dowghters to the other, are nerer the bryme of the water. Lykewyſe the leaſte of all, as it were their nieſes, are yet nearer to the ſuperficiall parte therof. Too them of the byggeſte ſorte whiche lye loweſte, the fyſſhers deſcende the depthe of three mens heyght, and ſumtyme foure. But to the doughters or nieſes as their ſucceſſion, they deſcend onelye to the mydde thygh. Sumtymes alſo, after that the ſea hathe byn diſquyeted with vehemente tempeſtes, they fynde a greate multytude of theſe fyſſhes on the ſandes, beyng dryuen to the ſhore by the vyolence of the water. The perles of theſe whiche are founde on the ſande, are but lytle. The fiſſhe it ſelfe, is more pleaſaunte in eatynge then are owre oyſters as owre men report. But perhappes hunger the ſweete ſauſe of all meates, cauſed owre men ſoo too thynke. Whether perles bee the hartes of ſea muſculs (as Ariſtotell ſuppoſed) or the byrthe or ſpaune of there intrals (as *Plinye* thought) Or whether they cleaue contynually to the rockes, or wander by coompanies in the ſea by the guydinge of th[e]eldeſte: Whether euerye fyſſhe brynge foorthe one perle or more, at one byrthe or at dyuers: Alſo whether theye bee fyled frome the rockes wherunto theye cleaue, or maye bee eaſylye pulled awaye, or otherwyſe faule of by them ſelues when theye are coomme to there full grouth: Lykewyſe whether perles bee harde within the ſhelle or ſofte, owre men haue as yet noo certayne experyence. But I truſte or it bee longe, too knowe the truth hereof. For owre men are euen nowe in hande with the matter. Alſo, as ſoone as I ſhall bee aduertyſed of the arryuall of *Petrus Arias* the capytayne of owre men, I wyll deſyre hym by my letters to make diligent ſearche for theſe thynges, and certifye me therof in all poyntes. I knowe that he wyll not bee ſlacke or omytte any thynge herein. For he is my verye frende: and one that taketh greate pleaſure in conſyderynge the woorkes of nature. And ſurelye it ſeemeth vnto me vndecente, that wee ſhoulde with ſylence ouerſlyppe ſo greate a thynge whiche aſwell in the owlde tyme as in owre dayes, hathe, and yet doothe, drawe bothe men and women to emmoderate deſyre of ſuperfluous pleaſure. Spayne therefore ſhalbe able hereafter with perles to ſatiſſie the gredye appetite of ſuche as in wanton pleaſures are lyke vnto *Cleopatra* and *Aſopus* So that frome henſforth we ſhal neyther enuye nor

Dyuers questions as concernynge perles

Petrus arias

Wanton and superfluous pleasures.

Cleopatra.

Asopus.

reuerence the nyſe frutefulnes of *Stoidum*, or *Taprobana*, or the redde ſea. But lette vs nowe returne to owre purpoſe. *Vaſchus* therfore determined with the fyſſhers of *Chiapes* to proue what myght bee doone in his fyſhe pooles or ſtations of ſea muſcules. *Chiapes* to ſhewe hym ſelfe obediente to *Vaſchus* his requeſte, although the ſea were boyſt[r]yous, coommaunded thirtye of his fyſſhers to prepare them ſelfes and to reſorte to the fyſſhinge places. *Vaſchus* ſente onelye ſyxe of his men with them to beehoſde them frome the ſea bankes, but not to coommitte them ſelues to the daunger of the ſea. The fyſſhynge place was diſtante frome the palayce of *Chiapes* aboute tenne myles. They durſte not aduenture to dyue to the bottome by reaſon of the furye of the ſea. Yet of the muſcules whiche lye hygheſt, and of ſuche as were dryuen to the ſhore by the vyolence of the water, theye broughte ſyxe greate farthels in the ſpace of a fewe dayes. The perles of theſe were but lyttle, aboute the bygnes of ſmaule fytches: yet verye fayre and bewtyfull, by reaſon theye were taken newely owte of the fyſſhe, beinge yet rawe. And that they ſhulde not bee reproued of lyinge as concerninge the bignes of theſe ſea muſculs, they ſente many of them into Spayne to the kynge with the perles, the fyſſhe beynge taken owte. Wee thinke verily that there maye in noo place bygger bee founde. Theſe ſhelle fyſſhes therfore beynge thus founde here in ſoo manye places in that ſea, and gold in maner in euery houſe, doo argue the ryche treaſurye of nature too bee hyd in thoſe coaſtes, foraſmuche as ſuche greate ryches haue byn founde as it were in the lytle fynger of a giantes hande. What then maye wee thynke of the hole hande of the gyante (for hetherto theye haue onely bynne in hande with the confynes of *Vraba*) when theye ſhall haue thorowly ſearched all the coaſtes and ſecreates of the inner partes of all that large lande. But *Vaſchus* contented with theſe ſygnes and ioyfull of his good ſucceſſe in theſe enterpriſes, determined by an other waye to returne to his felowes in *Dariena*, where alſo, they haue golde mynes aboute tenne myles from the village. He gaue therfore kyng *Chiapes* leaue to depart, and to folowe hym noo further: Confailyng hym to continue faythfull to the chriſtian kynge his lorde and maiſter. Thus embraſinge the one the other, and ioyninge handes, *Chiapes* departed, with teares declaring the good mynde which he bore to owre men. *Vaſchus* leauing his ſicke men with *Chiapes*, went forward on his iourney with the reſydue, hauinge alſo with him for guydes three of *Chiapes* maryners. He conueyghed his armye ouer a greate ryuer into the dominion of a certeine kynge cauled *Teaocha*: who beinge aduertiſed of the coommyng of owre men, of whoſe famous actes he had harde muche before, was verye gladde therof and enterteyned them honorably: So that for a token of his frendely affection towarde them, he gaue *Vaſchus* twentie poundes weyght of wrought golde after eyght ounces to the pounde: Alſo twoo hundreth bigge perles: but not fayre, by reaſon they were taken owt of the muſculs after they had byn ſodden. After they had ioyned handes, *Vaſchus* recompenſed hym with certeyne of owre thynges. Lykewiſe rewardynge his guydes the ſeruantes of *Chiapes*, he diſmiſſed them with commendations to theyr lord. Kyng *Teaocha* at the departure of owr men from his palaice, dyd not onely appoint them guydes to conduct them in the way, but alſo gaue them certeyne ſlaues in the ſteede of beaſtes to cary theyr vytayles, bycauſe they ſhulde paſſe throwgh many deſertes, baren and rowgh mountaynes and terrible wooddes full of tygers and Lions. He ſent alſo one of his ſonnes with theſe ſlaues, ladynge them with ſalted and dryed fyſhe, and breade of thoſe regions, made of the rootes of *Maizium* and *Iucca*. He alſo commaunded his ſonne not to depart from owr men vntyl he were licenced by *Vaſchus*. By theyr conductinge therfore, *Vaſchus* came to the dominion of an other kyng whoſe name was *Pacra*, a cruell tyranne, fearefull to the other kynges his bortherers, and of greater poure then any of them. This tyran, whether it were that his giltie conſcience for his miſcheuous actes, put him in feare that owre menne woolde reuenge the ſame, or that he thought hym ſelfe inferior to reſiſt them, fled at theyr commynge. *Vaſchus* wryteth that in theſe regions in the mooneth of Nouember he was ſore afflicted with greate heate and intollerable thirſt, by reaſon that fyde of the mountaynes hath lyttle water: In ſoo muche that they were in daunger to haue periſſhed but that certeyne of th[e]inhabitants ſhewed them of a ſprynge which was in the ſecreate place of a woodde, whither *Vaſchus* with all ſpeade ſent twoo quycke and ſtronge younge men of his coompanions with theyr gourdes and ſuche water veſſelles as *Teaocha* his men browghte with them. Of th[e]inhabitantes, there durſt none depart from there coompany bycauſe the wylde beaſtes doo ſoone inuade naked men. For in thoſe mountaynes, and eſpecially in the wooddes neare vnto the ſpringe, they ſaye that they are ſumtymes taken owte of there houſes in the nyght, excepte they take good heede that the doores bee well ſparde. It ſhall not bee frome my purpoſe here to declare a particular chaunce before I enter any further in this matter. Theye ſaye therfore that the laſte yeare the regyon of *Dariena* was noo leſſe infeſted and trowbeled with a fierſe tyger, then was *Calidonia* in tyme paſte with a wylde bore, and *Nemea* with a horrible lyon. For they affyrme that for the ſpace of ſyxe hole moonethes there paſſed not one nyghte withowte ſumme hurte doone: ſoo that it kylled nyghtlye eyther a bullocke, a mare, a dogge, or a hogge, ſumtimes euen in the highe wayes of the village. For owre men haue nowe greate heardes of cattayle in thoſe regions. They ſay alſo that when this tyger had whelpes, noo man myght ſafelye goo furthe of his doores, bycauſe ſhee ſpared not men if ſhee mette fyrſte with them. But at the lengeth, neceſſitye enforced them to inuente a policye howe they myght bee reuenged of ſuche bludſhed. Searchynge therfore dilygently her footeſteppes, and folowynge the pathe wherbye ſhee was accuſtomed in the

Stoidum.
Taprobana.

The fysshing place of king Chiapes.

Golde in maner in euery house.
The ryche treasurye of nature.

The golde mynes of Dariena.

96

Kynge Teaocha enterteyneth Vaſchus frendelye.
Twentye pounde weight of wroughte golde.

Desertes full of wylde beastes.

Dryed fysshe

Kynge Pacra a tyranne.

Greate heate in the monethe of Nouember.

Hurte by wylde beastes.

A tyger.
Calydonia is a foreste in Scotlande.
Nemea is a wodde in Greece.

Tigers whelpes.

Thus the Egiptians take Crocodiles.

nyght ſeaſon to wander owte of her denne to ſeeke her praye, theye made a greate trenſhe or pytte in her walke, coueringe the ſame with hurdels whervppon they caſte parte of the earthe and diſperſed the reſydue. The dogge tyger chaunſed fyrſte into this pitfaul, and fel vppon the poyntes of ſharpe ſtakes and ſuche other ingens as were of purpoſe fyxed in the bottome of the trenſhe. Beynge thus wounded, he rored ſoo terrybly, that it grated the bowels of ſuche as harde hym, and the wooddes and montaynes neare aboute, rebounded the noyſe of the horryble crye. When they perceaued that he was layde faſte, they reſorted to the trenſhe and ſlewe hym with ſtones, dartes, and pykes. With his teethe and clawes, he broke the dartes into a thouſande chyppes. Beynge yet deade, he was fearefull to all ſuche as behelde hym: what then thinke you he woolde haue doone beynge alyue and looſe. One *Iohannes Ledifma* of Ciuile, a nere frynde to *Vaſchus* and one of his coompanyons of his trauayles, toulde me that he hym ſelfe dyd eate of the fleſhe of that tiger: and that it was nothinge inferyor to biefe in goodnes. Beynge demaunded howe they knewe hit to bee a tyger foraſmuche as none of them had euer ſeene a tyger, they anſwered that they knewe hit by the ſpottes, fiercenes, agilitye, and ſuche other markes and token whereby the anciente writers haue deſcribed the tiger. For ſum of them, had before tyme ſeene other ſpotted wilde beaſtes, as lybardes and panthers. The dogge tiger beynge thus kylled, theye folowynge the traſe of his ſteppes towarde the mountaines, came to the denne where the bytche remayned with her twoo younge ſuckynge whelpes. But ſhee was not in the denne at there coommynge. Theye fyrſte caryed awaye the whelpes with them. But afterwarde fearynge leaſte they ſhulde dye bycauſe theye were very younge, entendynge when they were bygger to ſende them into Spayne, they put cheynes of yren aboute there neckes, and caryed them agayne to there denne: whither returnynge within a fewe dayes after, they founde the denne emptye and the cheynes not remoued frome there place. Theye ſuppoſe that the damme in her furye tore them in pyeces and caryed them awaye, leſte anye ſhulde haue the fruition of them. For theye playnely affirme that it was not poſſible that they ſhulde bee looſed frome the chaynes alyue. The ſkynne of the deade tyger ſtuffed with drye herbes and ſtrawe, they ſente to *Hiſpaniola* to the admyrall and other of the chiefe rulers frome whome the newe landes receyue there lawes and ſuccoure. It ſhall at this tyme ſuffyce to haue written thus much of the tygers, as I haue lerned by the reporte of them whiche bothe ſuſteyned domage by there rauenynge, and alſo handeled the ſkynne of that whiche was ſlayne. Let vs nowe therfore returne to kynge *Pacra* frome whome wee haue digreſſed. When *Vaſchus* had entred into the houſes forſaken of *Pacra*, he ſente meſſengiers to reconcyle hym as he had doone the other kinges. At the firſt he refuſed to coomme. But after threatenynges, he came with three other kynges in his coompanye. *Vaſchus* writethe that he neuer ſawe a more monſtrous and deformed creature: And that nature hath onely gyuen hym humane ſhape, and otherwyſe to bee worſe then a brute beaſte, with maners accordynge to the linyamentes of his bodye. He abuſed with moſte abhominable lechery the doughters of foure kynges his bortherers frome whome hee had taken them by vyolence. Of the fylthye behauoure of *Pacra*, of his crueltye and iniuryes doone by hym, many of the other kynges made greuous coomplayntes to *Vaſchus* as vnto a hygh Iudge and iuſte reuenger: Moſte humblye beſechyng hym to ſee ſuche thynges punyſſhed, foraſmuche as theye tooke hym for a man ſente of god for that purpoſe. Herevppon *Vaſchus* aſwell to wynne their good wylles, as alſo too ſhewe an exemple of terroure to ſuche as vſed lyke faſſhions, coommaunded that this monſtrous beaſte with the other three kynges whiche were ſubiecte to hym and of lyke conditions, ſhulde bee geuen for a praye to his feyghtinge dogges, and their torne carkeſes to bee burned. Of theſe dogges whiche theye vſe in the warres, theye tell maruelous thynges. For theye ſaye that theye runne vppon th[e]inhabitantes armed after there maner, with noo leſſe fiercenes then if theye were hartes or wylde bores, if the Spaniardes doo but onely poynte towarde them with their fyngers: In ſoo muche that oftentymes they haue had no neede too dryue their enemyes too flyght with ſwoordes or arrowes: But haue doone the ſame onely with dogges placed in the forefronte of their battayle, and lettynge them ſlyppe with their watche woorde and priuye token. Wheruppon the barbaryans ſtryken with feare by reaſon of the cruell countenaunces of the maſties, with their deſperate bouldenes and vnaccuſtomed houlynge and barkynge, haue diſparcled at the fyrſte onſette and broke their arraye. Yet it chaunſeth otherwyſe when theye haue anye conflicte agaynſt the Canibales and the people of *Caramairi*. For theſe are fyerſer, and more warrelyke men: Alſo ſo experte arche[r]s, that theye can moſte certenlye dyrect their venemous arrowes againſt the dogges with ſuche celeritye as if theye were thunderboltes: By reaſon wherof, they ſumtymes kyl many of them. Th[e]inhabytantes of theſe montaynes, doo not keepe warre with bowes and arrowes: But vſe onelye *Machanis*, that is certayne longe and broude ſwordes made of woodde: Alſo ſlynges, longe pykes and dartes hardened at the endes with fyere. Whyle kynge *Pacra* yet lyued, nõo man coulde knowe of hym neyther by fayre meanes nor by foule, where he had the golde whiche was founde in his houſe. For owre men founde in his iewel houſe fyftye poundes weyght of golde. Beynge therfore demaunded where he had it, he anſwered that they whiche gathered the ſame in thoſe montaynes in his fathers dayes, were all dearde: And that ſenſe he was a chylde, he neuer eſteemed golde more then ſtoones. More then this, theye coulde not gette of hym. By this ſeuere punyſhment executed vppon *Pacra*, *Vaſchus* concyled vnto hym the myndes of all the other kynges of that prouynce. And

The dogge tyger taken.

The rorynge of the tyger.

Tigers flesh eaten.

97

The bitche tyger.

Tigers whelpes.

A straunge thynge.

Kynge Pacra.

Naturall hatred of vyce.

Foure kinges deuoured of dogges.

The vse of dogges in warre ageinst naked men.

The Canybales are experte archers.

Swoordes of woodde.

Fiftie pounde weyght of golde.

98

by this meanes it came too paſſe, that when he ſente for the ſycke men whiche he lefte behynde hym with kynge *Chiapes*, an other kynge whiche was in the mydde waye (whoſe name was *Bononiama*) enterteyned them gentellye, and gaue them. xx. pounde weyght of pure wrought golde, beſyde great plentye of vyttayles. And not this onely, but alſo accoompanyed them hym ſelfe vntyll he had brought them ſafely frome his palaice into the domynyon of *Pacra*: Where takynge eche of them by the ryghte handes, he delyuered them to *Vaſchus* hym ſelfe, as a faythefull pledge commytted too his charge, and therewith ſpake to *Vaſchus* in this effecte. Mooſte myghtye and valyaunte vyctourer, beholde I here delyuer vnto yowe, yowre coompanions in ſuche plight as I receaued them: wiſſhynge that I had byn aſwell able to gyue them healthe, as they were hertely welcoome to ſuche pore enterteynement as I was able to ſhewe them. For the fauoure and gentelneſſe whiche I haue founde bothe in yowe and them, he ſhall rewarde yowe whiche ſendeth thunderynge and lyghtelyng to the deſtruction of myſcheuous men, and of his clemencye giueth vnto good men plentie of *Iucca* and *Maizium* in dewe ſeaſon. As he ſpake theſe woordes, he lyfted vppe his handes and eyes towarde the ſoonne whome they honoure for god. Then he ſpake further to *Vaſchus*, ſayinge: In that yowe haue deſtroyed and ſlaine owre vyolent and proude enemies, yowe haue browght peace and quyetneſſe to vs and owre famelyes, and bounde vs for euer to loue and obeye yowe. Yowe haue ſoo ouercoome and tamed wylde monſters, that wee thynke yowe to bee ſente from heauen for the punyſhement of euyll men and defence of innocentes, that vnder the protection of yowre myghtye ſwoorde, wee maye hereafter leade owre lyues withowte feare, and with more quietneſſe gyue thankes to the giuer of all good thinges for his mercie ſhewed vnto vs in this behalfe. When th[e]interpretoure had toulde *Vaſchus* that kyng *Bononiama* had ſayde theſe woordes, and ſuche lyke, *Vaſchus* rendered hym lyke thankes for his humanitye declared towarde owre men, and rewarded hym as he had doone other in whome he founde lyke gentilneſſe. *Vaſchus* wryteth that he lerned manye thynges of this kynge as concernynge the greate rycheſſe of theſe regions: But that he woolde at this preſent ſpeake nothynge therof: And reherſethe the ſame as thynges lyke to haue good ſucceſſe. What this implicate *Hiperbole*, or aduauncement meaneth, I doo not well vnderſtande. But he playnely ſeemeth hereby to promyſſe many greate thynges. And ſurely it is to be thought that accordynge to his hope, great riches maye bee looked for. For they came in maner into none of th[e]inhabytauntes houſes, but that they found in them, eyther breſteplates or curettes of golde, or elles golden ouches, iewels, or garlandes to weare aboute there heades, neckes, or armes. I coniecture therfore thus by a ſymilitude of owre houſes: If amonge vs any man of great poure were moued with the deſyre to haue great plentye of Iron, and woolde enter into Italye with a mayne force as dyd the Gothes in tyme paſte, what abundaunce of Iron ſhoulde he haue in their houſes: where as he ſhulde fynde in one place a friyngpan, in an other a chauldron, here a tryuet, and there a ſpytte, and theſe in maner in euery pore mannes houſe, with ſuche other innumerable: Whereby any man maye coniecture that Iren is plentifully engendred in ſuche regions where they haue ſoo greate vſe therof. Owre men alſo perceaued that th[e]inhabytantes of theſe regions do no more eſteeme golde then we do Iren: nor yet ſoo muche after they ſawe to what vſe Iren ſerued vs. Thus muche haue I thoughte good to write too yowre holyneſſe of ſuche thynges as I haue gathered owte of the letters of *Vaſchus Nunnez*, and learned by woorde of mouthe of ſuch as were his companyons in theſe affayres. As wee receyue them, ſo wee gyue them vnto yowe. Tyme which reueleth all ſecretes, ſhall hereafter mynyſter larger argument of wrytynge. Theye coulde at this tyme doo no greate thynge in ſearchynge the golde mynes, foraſmuche as of a hundreth foureſcore and tenne men whiche *Vaſchus* broughte with hym from *Dariena*, there remayned onely threeſcore and ten, or at the moſt foureſcore, whoſe ayde he nowe vſed in theſe daungerous aduentures, leauynge euer the craſed men behynd hym in the kynges houſes all the waye that he went. But they mooſte eſpecially fell into ſundrye diſeaſes, whiche came lately from *Hiſpaniola*. For they were not able to abyde ſuche calamities as to lyue onely contented with the breade of thoſe regions, and wylde herbes without ſalte, drinkinge none other then ryuer water, and that oftentimes eyther lackinge or vnwholſome, where as before their ſtomakes had byn vſed to good meates. But the owlde ſouldiours of *Dariena*, were hardened to abyde all ſorowes, and exceadynge tollerable of labour, heate, hunger, and watchynge: In ſo muche that merilye they make their booſte that they haue obſerued a longer and ſharper lent then euer yowre holineſſe inioyned. For they ſaye that for the ſpace of foure hole yeares, they eate none other then herbes and frutes, excepte nowe and then perhappes fyſhe, and verye ſeldoome fleſhe: yea, and that ſumtime for lacke of al theſe, they haue not abhorred from mangye dogges and fylthy toades as wee haue ſayde before. The owlde ſouldiers of *Dariena*, I caule thoſe whiche fyrſte folowed the capytaynes *Nicueſa* and *Fogeda* to inhabyte the lande, of the whiche nowe fewe were lyuynge. But lette vs nowe omytte theſe thynges, and retourne to *Vaſchus* the victourer of the montaynes.

Kynge Bononiama, frende to the christians.

Wroughte golde.

The oration of kynge Bononiama

The sparke of the lawe of nature, is the lawe written in the hartes of men.

Hiperbole.

Great plenty of golde.

A symilitude for the profe of plentye of golde.

Iren more estemed then golde.

99

Chaunge of dyet is daungerous.

Owlde souldiers.

A longe lent.

¶ The thyrde booke of the thyrde Decade.

Comogrus.

Two poore kynges.

WHen *Vaſchus* had remained thirtye dayes in the palayce of kynge *Pacra*, concilynge vnto hym the myndes of th[e]inhabitantes and prouidinge thynges neceſſarye for his coompanions, he departed frome thenſe by the conducte of certayne of kynge *Teaocha* his men, and came too the banke of the ryuer *Comogrus*, wherof the region and king therof, are named by the ſame name. He founde the ſydes of theſe montaynes ſo rude and baren, that there was nothinge apte to bee eaten, but wilde rootes and certayne vnpleaſante frutes of trees. Two kynges beinge neare of bludde, inhabyted this infortunate region, whiche *Vaſchus* ouerpaſſed with al ſpeede for feare of hunger. One of theſe poore kinges was named *Cotochus*, and the other *Ciuriza*. He tooke them bothe with hym to guyde hym in the waye, and diſmyſſed *Teaocha* his men with vytayles and rewardes. Thus for the ſpace of three dayes, he wandered throughe many deſerte wooddes, craggye mountaynes, and muddy maryſſhes full of ſuche quamyres that men are oftentymes ſwalowed vp in them if they looke not the more warelye to their fiete. Alſo through places not frequented with reſorte of men, and ſuche as nature had not yet opened to their vſe, foraſmuche as th[e]inhabitantes haue ſeldoome entercourſe betwene them, but onely by ſundrye incurtions, the one to ſpoyle and deſtroye the other: Beynge otherwiſe contented to lyue onely after the lawe of nature, withowte worldly toyle for ſuperfluous pleaſures. Thus enteringe at the lengthe into the territorye of another kynge whoſe name was *Buchebuea*, they founde all thynges voyde and in ſilence: For the kynge and his ſubiectes, were all fledde to the wooddes. When *Vaſchus* ſente meſſengers to fetche hym, he dyd not onely at the fyrſte ſubmytte hym ſelfe, but alſo promyſſe his ayde with all that he myghte make: Proteſtynge furthermore, that he fledde not for feare that owre men woolde doo hym any iniurie, but that he hyd hym ſelfe for verye ſhame and griefe of mynde, for that he was not able to receyue them honorablye accordynge vnto their dignitye, bycauſe his ſtore of vitayles was conſumed. Yet in a token of obedience and frendeſhyppe, he ſent owre men many veſſelles of golde, deſyring them to accepte them as the gifte of a frind whoſe good will wanted not in greater thynges if his abilytye were greater. By whiche woordes the poore man ſeemed to inſinuate that he had byn robbed and otherwiſe cruelly handled of his bortherers. By reaſon wherof, owre men were enforced to departe from thenſe more hungerly then theye came. As theye wente forwarde therfore, they eſpyed certeine naked men coomminge downe from a hylle towarde them. *Vaſchus* coommaunded his armye to ſtaye, and ſente his interpretours to them to knowe what they wold haue. Then one of them to whom the other ſeemed to gyue reuerence, ſpake in this effect. Owre lorde and kinge *Chioriſus*, greeteth yowe well: Wyllynge vs to declare that he hath harde of yowre puiſſaunce and vertue wherby yowe haue ſubdued euell men and reuenged the wronges doone to innocentes. For the whiche yowre noble factes and iuſtyce, as he doothe honour yowre fame, ſoo woolde he thinke him ſelfe moſte happye if he myght receiue yowe into his palaice. But, foraſmuche as his fortune hath byn ſo euell (as he imputeth it) that beynge owte of yowre waye, yowe haue ouerpaſſed hym, he hath ſent yowe this golde in token of his good wyll and fryndſhyppe towarde yowe. And with theſe woordes he deliuered to *Vaſchus* thirty diſſhes of pure golde. Addynge hereunto, that when ſo euer it ſhulde pleaſe him to take the paynes to coomme to their kynge, he ſhulde receyue greater gyftes. He declared further, that a kynge whyche was their bortherer and mortall enemye, was very ryche in golde: And that in ſubduynge of hym they ſhulde bothe obteine greate rycheſſe, and alſo delyuer them from daylye vexations: whiche thinge myght eaſilye be doone by their helpe bycauſe they knewe the countrey. *Vaſchus* put them in good coomforte, and gaue them for rewarde certayne Iren axes whiche they more eſteemed then greate heapes of golde. For they haue lyttell neede of golde, hauynge not th[e]uſe of peſtiferous money. But he that maye get but one axe or hatchet, thynketh hym ſelfe rycher then euer was *Craſſus*. For euen theſe naked men doo perceyue that an axe is neceſſarye for a thouſande vſes: And confeſſe that golde is deſyred onely for certayne vaine and effeminate pleaſures, as a thyng whiche the lyfe of man maye lacke withowte any inconuenience. For owre glutteny and ſuperfluous ſumptuouſneſſe hath not yet corrupted them: By reaſon wherof they take it for noo ſhame to lacke cobardes of plate, where as the pride and wantonnes of owre tyme dooeth in maner impute it to vs for ignominye to bee withowte that, wherof by nature we haue no neede. But their contentation with the benefytes of nature doothe playnly declare that men may leade a free and happy life withowt tables, table clothes, carpettes, napkyns, and towels, with ſuche other innumerable wherof they haue no vſe, excepte perhappes the kynges furniſhe their tables with a fewe golden veſſels. But the common people dryue awaye hunger with a pyece of their breade in the one hande, and a piece of broylde fyſhe or

Desertes.

Kynge Buchebuea submytteth him selfe

Vessels of golde.

Kynge Chiorisus sendeth Vaschus xxx. dysshes of pure golde.

100

Axes of Iren more estemed then any gold

Superfluous and effemynate plesures

An exemple of the lyfe of owre fyrst parentes.

ſumme kynde of fruite in the other hande. For they eate fleſhe but ſeldome. When their fingers are imbrued with any ounctuous meates, they wype them eyther on the ſoules of their feete, or on their thyghes, ye and ſumtymes on the ſkynnes of their priuye members in the ſteede of a nappekynne. And for this cauſe doo they often tymes waſhe them ſelues in the ryuers. Owre men therfore wente forwarde laden with golde, but ſore afflicted with hunger. Thus they came at the length to the dominion of kynge *Pocchorroſa* who fledde at their coommynge. Here for the ſpace of thirtye dayes they fylled their emptye bellies with breade of the rootes of *Maizium.* In the meane tyme *Vaſchus* ſente for *Pocchorroſa*: who beynge allured with promiſſes and fayre woordes, came and ſubmytted hym ſelfe brynginge with hym for a preſent. xv. poundes weighte of wrought golde, and a fewe ſlaues. *Vaſchus* rewarded hym as he had doone other before. When he was mynded to depart, he was aduertiſed that he ſhulde paſſe through the dominion of a certayne kynge whoſe name was *Tumanama.* This is hee whome the ſoonne of kynge *Comogrus* declared to bee of ſoo great poure and fearefull to all his bortherers, and with whom many of *Comogrus* familyers had byn captyue. But owre men nowe perceiued that they meaſured his poure by their owne. For their kinges are but gnattes compared to elephantes, in reſpecte to the poure and pollicye of owre men. Owre men were alſo enformed by ſuche as dwelte neare aboute *Tumanama*, that his region was not beyonde the montaynes as they ſuppoſed: Nor yet ſo ryche in golde as younge *Comogrus* had declared. Yet conſulted they of his ſubduyng: whiche they thoughte they myght th[e]eaſlyer brynge to paſſe bycauſe *Pocchorroſa* was his mortall enemye, who moſte gladly promyſed them his aduice and ayde herein. *Vaſchus* therfore, leauynge his ſycke men in the vyllage of *Pocchorroſa*, tooke with hym threſcore of his moſte valiante ſouldiers, and declared vnto them howe kynge *Tumanama* had oftentymes ſpoken proude and threatnyng woordes ageynſte them: Lykewiſe that it nowe ſtoode them in hande of neceſſitye to paſſe through his dominion: And that he thought is beſte to ſette vppon hym vnwares. The ſouldiers conſented to his aduice, and exhorted him to gyue th[e]aduenture, promiſinge that they woolde folowe hym whether ſo euer he wente. They determined therfore to go two dayes iorney in one daye, that *Tumanama* not knowynge of their ſooden commyng, myght haue no leaſure to aſſemble an armye. The thynge came to paſſe euen as they had deuyſed. For in the fyrſte watche of the nyght, owre men with the *Pocchorroſians*, inuaded the vyllage and palaice of *Tumanama*, where they tooke hym priſoner ſuſpectynge nothinge leſſe. He had with hym two younge men whiche he abuſed vnnaturally: Alſo fourſcore women which he had taken vyolently from dyuers kynges. Lykewiſe a greate number of his gentelmen and ſubiectes were taken ſtragelynge in other vyllages neare aboute his palaice. For their houſes are not adherent togither as owres bee, bycauſe they are oftentimes troubeled with vehement whirlewyndes by reaſon of the ſudden chaunges and motions of the ayre cauſed by the influence of the planetes in the equalitie of the daye and nyght beynge there in maner bothe of one lengthe throughowte all the yeare, foraſmuche as they are neare vnto the Equinoctiall lyne as we haue ſayde before. Their houſes are made of trees, couered and after their maner thetched with the ſtalkes of certayne towghe herbes. To the palayce of *Tumanama*, was onely one houſe adherent, and that euen as bygge as the palayce it ſelfe. Eyther of theſe houſes were in length a hundreth and twentie paſes, and in bredth fyftie paſes as owre men meaſured them. In theſe two houſes the kynge was accuſtomed to muſter his men as often as he prepared an armye. When *Tumanama* therfore, was thus taken captyue with all his Sardanapanicall famelye, the *Pocchorroſians* bragged and threatened hym beynge nowe bounde, that he ſhulde ſhortly bee hanged. The other kynges alſo his bortherers, reioyſed at his myſſortune. Wherby owre men perceaued that *Tumanama* was no leſſe troubleſome to his neighbours, then was *Pacra* to the kinges of the ſouthe ſyde of the montaynes. *Vaſchus* alſo the better to pleaſe them, threatned hym greuouſly: But in deede entended no euell toward him. He ſpake therfore ſharpely vnto hym with theſe woordes: Thou ſhalte nowe ſuffer punyſhment thou cruell tyranne, for thy pryde and abhominations. Thou ſhalte knowe of what poure the chriſtians are whom thou haſte ſoo contemned and threate[ne]d to drawe by the heare of their heades to the nexte ryuer and there to drowne them as thou haſte often tymes made thy vaunte emonge thy naked ſlaues. But thou thy ſelfe ſhalte fyrſte feele that whiche thou haſte prepared for other: And herewith commaunded hym to bee taken vppe. Neuertheleſſe gyuynge a priuye tooken of pardon to them whiche layde handes on him. Thus vnhappye *Tumanama*, fearynge and beleuynge that *Vaſchus* had mente in erneſte as he commaunded, fell proſtrate at his feete and with teares deſyred pardon: Proteſtynge that he neuer ſpake any ſuche woordes. But that perhappes his noble men in their droonkenneſſe had ſo abuſed their toonges whiche he coulde not rule. For their wynes although they bee not made of grapes yet are they of force to make men droonken. He declared furthermore that the other kynges his bortherers had of malice ſurmyſed ſuche lyes of hym enuyinge his fortune bycauſe he was of greater poure then they. Moſte humbly deſyringe *Vaſchus* that as he tooke hym to bee a iuſte vyctourer, ſoo to gyue no credytte vnto their vniuſte and malycious complaintes. Addynge herevnto that if it woolde pleaſe hym to pardon hym not hauinge offended, he woolde bringe him great plentie of gold. Thus layinge his ryght hande on his breaſt, he ſwore by the ſonne, that he euer loued and feared the chryſtians ſence he fyrſte harde of their fame and vyctoryes: Eſpecially when he harde ſaye that they had *Machanas*, that is, ſwoordes ſharper thei

Plentye of gold and scarcenesse of meate.

King Pocchorrosa submytteth hymselfe.

xv. pounde weyghte of wroughte golde.

Kyng Tumanama looke decad. ii. lib. iiii.

A good policye.

101

Kynge Tumanama is taken prisoner.

The cause of vehemente wyndes nere the Equinoctial.

Kynge Tumanama his palaice.

Vaschus his woordes to kynge Tumanama.

Oderunt quem metuunt.

Kyng Tumanama his woordes.

thearſe, and ſuch as cutte in pieces al thynges that coomme in their waye. Then directynge his eyes towarde *Vaſchus* who had his ſwoorde in his hand, he ſpake thus. Who (excepte he were owte of his wytte) dare lyfte vppe his hande ageynſte this ſwoorde of yowres wherwith yowe are able with one ſtrooke to cleaue a man from the heade to the nauell. Lette no man therfore perſwade yowe (o moſte myghtye victourer) that euer ſuche woordes proceded owte of my mouthe. As *Tumanama* with trembeling ſpake theſe woordes, therwith ſwalowynge downe the knot of deathe, *Vaſchus* ſeemed by his teares to bee moued to compaſſion: And ſpeakyng to hym with chearefull countenance commaunded hym to bee looſed. This doone, he ſente immediatly to his palaice for. xxx. poundes weyght of pure gold artifycially wrought into ſundry ouches whiche his wyues and concubynes vſed to weare. Alſo the thyrde daye folowynge, his noble men and gentylmen ſent threſcore poundes weight of golde for their fyne and raunſumme. *Tumanama* beyng demaunded wher they had that gold, anſwered that it was not gathered in his dominions But that it was brought his aunceſtours from the ryuer *Comogrus* toward the ſouthe. But the *Pocchorroſians* and other his enemies, ſayd that he lyed: Affirmynge that his kingdome was ryche in golde. *Tumanama* on the contrary part, inſtantly proteſted that he neuer knewe any golde myne in all his dominions. Yet denyed not but that there hath ſumtimes byn found certaine ſmaule graines of golde, to the gatherynge wherof, he neuer had any regarde, bycauſe they coulde not gette it without great and longe labour. Whyle theſe thynges were dooinge, the ſycke men whiche *Vaſchus* had lefte in the village of *Pocchorroſa*, came to hym the. viii. day of the Calendes of Ianuary in the yeare of Chriſte. M. D. XIII. bringyng with them certayne labourers from the kynges of the ſouthe with ſundrye inſtrumentes to dygge the grounde and gather golde. Thus paſſynge ouer the day of the natiuitye of Chriſt without bodely labour, vppon ſainte Steuens daye he brought certeyne myners to the ſyde of a hyll not farre dyſtante from the palaice of *Tumanama*, where (as he ſaith) he perceaued by the coloure of the earth that it was lykely to brynge furthe golde. When they had dygged a pytte not paſt a hand breadth and a halfe, and ſyfted the earthe therof, they founde certayne ſmaule graynes of golde no bygger then lintell ſeedes, amountynge to the weyght of twelue graynes as they prouyd with their balances of aſſaye before a notarie and wytneſſe that the better credytte myghte bee gyuen therto. Wherby they argued that the rycheneſſe of that lande was agreable to the report of the bortherers, although *Vaſchus* coulde by noo meanes cauſe *Tumanama* to confeſſe the ſame. They ſuppoſe that he nothynge eſteemed ſo ſmaule a portion. But other ſaye that he denyed his countrey to bee frutefull of golde, leaſte by reaſon therof the deſyre of golde, myght intyſe owre men to inhabyte his kyngdome, as in deede the ſeely kynge was a prophet in ſoo thinkynge. For they choſe that and the region of *Pocchorroſa* to inhabyte, and determyned to buylde townes in them bothe, if it ſhulde ſo pleaſe the kynge of Caſtyle: Aſwell that they myght bee baytinge places and vytailynge houſes for ſuche as ſhulde iorney towarde the ſouthe, as alſo that both the regions were frutfull and of good grounde to beare frutes and trees. Intendynge nowe therfore to departe from thenſe, he tried the earth by chaunce in an other place, where the colour of the grounde with certayne ſhyninge ſtones, ſeemed to bee a tooken of golde. Where caufynge a ſmaule pitte to bee dygged lyttell beneath th[e]upper crũſte of the earthe, he founde ſo muche golde as weyghed that pyece of golde whiche the Spaniardes caule *Caſtellanum aureum*, and is commonly cauled *Peſus*, but not in one grayne. Reioyſynge at theſe tookens in hope of great riches, he badde *Tumanama* to be of good coomforte, promyſynge hym that he woolde bee his frende and defender, ſoo that he troubeled not any of the kynges whiche were frendes to the Chriſtians. He alſo perſwaded hym to gather plentye of golde. Summe ſaye that he ledde awaye all *Tumanama* his women, and ſpoyled him leaſte he ſhuld rebell. Yet he delyuered his ſoonne to *Vaſchus* to bee broughte vppe with owre men, to learne their language and relygyon, that he myght therafter the better vſe his helpe aſwell in all thynges that he ſhulde haue to doo with owre men, as alſo more polytykely rule, and obtayne the loue of his owne ſubiectes. *Vaſchus* at this tyme fell into a vehement feuer by reaſon of exceſſe of labour, immoderate watchyng, and hunger: In ſomuche that departynge from thenſe, he was fayne too bee borne uppon mennes backes in ſhietes of goſſampyne cotton. Lykewyſe alſo many of his ſouldiers whiche were ſoo weake that they coulde nother go nor ſtonde. To this purpoſe they vſed the helpe of th[e]inhabytantes, who ſhewed them ſelues in al thynges wyllynge and obedyente. Alſo ſumme of them whiche were ſumwhat feeble and not able to trauayle, although not greuouſly ſycke, were ledde by the armes vntyll they came to the domynion of kynge *Commogrus* a greate frende to the Chriſtyans, of whom wee haue largely made mention before. At *Vaſchus* commynge thether, he ſounde that the owlde kynge was deade, and his ſoonne (whome we ſo prayſed for his wiſedome) to raygne in his ſteade: And that he was baptiſed by the name of Charles. The palayce of this *Comogrus*, is ſituate at the foote of a ſtiepe hyll well cultured. Hauynge towarde the ſouthe a playne of twelue leages in breadth and veary frutefull. This playne, they caule *Zauana*. Beyonde this, are the great and hyghe montaynes whiche deuyde the two ſeas wherof we haue ſpoken before. Owte of the ſtyepe hylles, ſpryngeth the ryuer *Comogrus*, whiche runneth throwghe the ſayde playne to the hyghe montaynes, receauynge into his chanell by their valleys, all the other ryuers, and ſo fauleth into the ſouth ſea. It is diſtante from *Dariena*, aboute threſcore and tenne leages

Tumanama is pardoned.

xxx. pounde weyghte of wroughte golde.

lx. poundes weyght of golde.

102

They abhorre labour.

The coloure of the golden earthe and a tryall of the same.

Tokens of great plentie of golde.

Vaschus fauleth sicke.

Feeblenes of hunger and watchinge.

Kynge Comogrus frendely to the Christians.

The large and fruteful plain of Zauana.

The ryuer Comogrus. 103

towarde the weſte. As owre men therfore came to theſe parties, kynge *Comogrus* (otherwyſe cauled Charles by his chriſtian name) mette them ioyfully and entertayned them honorably, gyuynge them their fyll of pleaſaunte meates and drynkes. He gaue alſo to *Vaſchus*, twenty pounde weyght of wrought golde. *Vaſchus* recompenſed him with thinges which he eſteemed muche more: As axes and ſundry kyndes of carpenters tooles. Alſo a ſouldiours cloke, and a faire ſherte wrought with needle woorke. By theſe gyftes, *Comogrus* thought hym ſelfe to bee halfe a god amonge his bortherers. *Vaſchus* at his departynge from henſe, erneſtly charged *Comogrus* and the other kynges to remayne faithfull and obedient to the chriſtian king of Caſtile, if they deſyred to lyue in peace and quietneſſe: And that they ſhulde hereafter more diligently applye them ſelues to the gatheringe of golde to bee ſente to the great chriſtian *Tïba* (that is) kyng. Declaryng further, that by this meanes they ſhuld bothe gette them and their poſterity a patrone and defender ageinſt their enemyes, and alſo obtayne great abundaunce of owre thinges. Theſe affayres thus happely achiued, he wente forwarde on his vyage to the palaice of kyng *Poncha*, where he founde foure younge men whiche were come from *Dariena* to certify hym that there were certayne ſhyppes coomme from *Hiſpaniola* laden wyth vyttayles and other neceſſaries. Wherfore takyng with him twentie of his moſte luſty ſouldiers, he made haſte to *Dariena* with longe iorneys: leauinge the reſydue behynd him to folow at their leaſure. He writeth that he came to *Dariena* the. xiiii. Cal. of Fe. An. 1514. The date of his letter is: From *Dariena*, the. iiii. day of march. He writeth in the ſame letter, that he had many ſore conflictes, and that he was yet neyther wounded, or loſte any of his men in the battaile. And therfore in al his large letter, there is not one leafe without thankes geuynge to almyghty god for his delyuery and preſeruation from ſo many imminent perels. He attempted no enterpriſe or tooke in hande any viage withowt th[e]inuocation of god and his holy ſaintes. Thus was *Vaſchus Balboa* of a vyolente Goliath, tourned into *Heliſeus*: And from *Anteus* too *Hercules* the conquerour of monſters. Beynge therefore thus tourned from a raſſhe royſter to a polytyke and diſcreate capitayne, he was iudged woorthy to bee aduaunced to greate honoure. By reaſon whereof, he was bothe receaued into the kynges fauour, and therevppon created the generall or Lieuetenaunt of the kynges army in thoſe Regions. Thus much haue I gathered bothe by the letters of certeyne my faythefull frendes beinge in *Dariena*, and alſo by woorde of mouth of ſuche as came lately frome thenſe. If yowre holynes deſyre to knowe what I thynke herein, Suerly as by ſuche thynges as I haue ſeene, I beleue theſe thynges to bee trewe, euen ſo th[e]order and agreinge of *Vaſchus* and his coompanions warrelyke letters, ſeeme to confirme the ſame. The Spanyarde therfore ſhall not neede hereafter with vndermynynge the earth with intollerable laboure to breake the bones of owre mother, and enter many myles into her bowels, and with innumerable daungers cut in ſunder hole mountaynes to make a waye to the courte of infernall *Pluto*, to brynge from thenſe wycked golde the ſeede of innumerable miſcheues, withowte the whiche notwithſtandynge we may nowe ſcarſely leade a happy lyfe ſithe iniquitie hath ſo preuayled and made vs ſlaues to that wherof we are lords by nature: The Spanyarde (I ſay) ſhall not neede with ſuch trauayles and difficultie to dygge farre into the earth for gold, but ſhal fynde it plentifully in maner in the vpper cruſt of the earth, or in the ſandes of ryuers dryed vppe by the heate of ſommer, onely waſſhynge the earth ſoftely frome the ſame: And ſhall with lyke facilite gather plentie of pearles. Certenly the reuerent antiquitie (by al the Coſmographers aſſent) obteyned not ſoo greate a benefyte of nature, nor yet aſpired to the knowleage hereof, bycauſe there came neuer man before owte of owre knowen worlde to theſe vnknowen nations: At the leaſte, with a poure of men, by force of armes, in maner of conqueſt: wheras otherwyſe nothyng can be gotten here, foraſmuch as theſe nations are for the moſt part ſeuere defenders of theyr patrimonies, and cruell to ſtraungers, in no condition admittinge them otherwyſe then by conqueſt: eſſpecially the fierce Canibales or Caribes. For theſe wylye hunters of men, gyue them ſelues to none other kynde of exercyſe but onely to manhuntynge and tyllage after their maner. At the commynge therfore of owre men into theyr regions, they loke as ſuerly to haue them faule into their ſnares as if they were hartes or wylde bores: and with no leſſe confydence licke their lippes ſecreately in hope of their praye. If they gette the vpper hande, they eate them greedely: If they myſtruſte them ſelues to bee the weaker parte, they truſte to theyr feete, and flye ſwyfter then the wynde. Ageyne, yf the matter bee tryed on the water, aſwell the women as men can dyue and ſwymme, as though they had byn euer brought vp and fedde in the water. It is noo maruayle therefore yf the large tracte of theſe regions haue byn hytherto vnknowen. But nowe ſithe it hath pleaſed God to diſcouer the ſame in owre tyme, it ſhall becoome vs to ſhewe owre naturall loue to mankynde and dewtie to God, to endeuoure owre ſelues to brynge them to ciuilitie and trewe religion, to th[e]increaſe of Chriſtes flocke, to the confuſion of Infidels and the Deuyll theyr father who delytethe in owre deſtruction as he hathe doone frome the begynnynge. By the good ſucceſſe of theſe fyrſt frutes, owre hope is, that the Chriſtian religion ſhall ſtreache foorth her armes very farre. Which thyng ſhulde the ſooner coome to paſſe yf all menne to theyr poure (eſpecially Chriſtian Princes to whom it chiefely perteyneth) wolde put theyr handes to the plowe of the lordes vineyarde. The harueſt ſuerly is greate, but the woorkemen are but fewe. As we haue ſayde at the begynnynge, yowre holynes ſhall hereafter nooryſhe many myriades of broodes of chekins vnder yowre wynges. But let vs nowe returne to ſpeake of *Beragua* beinge the weſte ſyde

xx. pounde weyght of wrought gold

Vaschus returneth to Dariena.

The good fortune of Vaschus.

Vaschus was turned from Goliath to Eliseus.

O flaterynge fortune, look his death in the booke of the Ilande[s] lately founde.

The earthe is owre general mother.

The courte of infernall Pluto.

There is a better waye then this.

The Spanyardes conquestes.

Manhunters

104

The fiersenesse of the Canibales.

Owre duty to god, and naturall loue to mankynde.

Th[e]office of Chrystian prynces

The haruest is great. etc.

Beragua.

Nicuesa. of *Vraba*, and fyrſt founde by *Colonus* the Admirall, then vnfortunately gouerned by *Diego Nicueſa*, and nowe lefte in maner deſolate: with the other large regions of thoſe prouinces brought from theyr wylde and beaſtly rudenes to ciuilitie and trewe religion.

¶ The fovrth booke of the thyrde Decade.

The fourth nauigation of Colonus the Admirall.

I Was determyned (moſte holy father) to haue proceded no further herein, but that one fierye ſparke yet remaynynge in my mynde, woolde not ſuffer me to ceaſe. Wheras I haue therfore declared howe *Beragua* was fyrſte fownde by *Colonus*, my thincke I ſhulde commytte a heynous cryme if I ſhuld defraude the man of the due commendations of his trauayles, of his cares and troubles, and fynally of the daungeours and perels, whiche he ſuſteyned in that nauigation. Therfore in the yeare of Chriſte. 1502. in the. vi. daye of the Ides of Maye, he hoyſed vppe his ſayles and departed from the Ilandes of *Gades* with. iiii. ſhyppes of fyftie or. iii. ſcore tunne a piece, with a hundreth threſcore and tenne men, and came with proſperous wynde to the Ilandes of *Canariæ* within fiue daies folowinge, from thenſe arryuinge the. xvi. day at the Ilande of *Dominica* beinge the chiefe habitation of the Canibales, he ſayled from *Dominica* to *Hiſpaniola* in fyue other daies. Thus within the ſpace of the. xxvi. daies, with proſperous wynde and by the ſwyfte faule of the *Ocean* from the Eaſte to the weſt, he ſayled from Spaine to *Hiſpaniola*: Which courſe is counted of the mariners to bee no leſſe then a thouſande and twoo hundrethe leaques. He taryed but a whyle in *Hiſpaniola*, whether it were wyllingly, or that he were ſo admoniſſhed of the viceroye. Directing therfore his vyage from thenſe towarde the weſte, leauyng the Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Iamaica* on his ryght hande towarde the northe, he wryteth that he chaunſed vppon an Ilande more ſouthewarde then *Iamaica*, whiche th[e]inhabitantes caule *Guanaſſa*, ſo floryſſhinge and frutefull that it myghte ſeeme an earthlye Paradyſe. Coaſtynge alonge by the ſhores of this Ilande, he mette two of the Canoas or boates of thoſe prouinces, whiche were drawne with two naked ſlaues ageynſt the ſtreame. In theſe boates, was caryed a ruler of the Ilande with his wyfe and chyldren, all naked. The ſlaues ſeeynge owre men a lande, made ſignes to them with proude countenaunce in their maiſters name, to ſtande owte of the waye, and threatned them if they woolde not gyue place. Their ſympelnes is ſuche that they nother feared the multitude or poure of owre men, or the greatnes and ſtraungenes of owre ſhippes. They thought that owre men woolde haue honoured their maiſter with like reuerence as they did. Owre men had intelligence at the length that this ruler was a greate marchaunte whiche came to the marte from other coaſtes of the Ilande. For they exceryſe byinge and ſellynge by exchaunge with their confinies. He had alſo with him good ſtoore of ſuche ware as they ſtande in neede of or take pleaſure in: as laton ſelles, raſers, knyues, and hatchettes made of a certeyne ſharpe yelowe bryght ſtone, with handles of a ſtronge kynd of woodde. Alſo many other neceſſary inſtrumentes with kychen ſtuffe and veſſelles for all neceſſary vſes. Lykewiſe ſheetes of goſſampine cotton wrought of ſundrye colours. Owre men tooke hym pryſoner with all his famely. But *Colonus* commaunded hym to bee loſed ſhortely after, and the greateſt parte of his goodes to bee reſtored to wynne his fryndeſhippe. Beinge here inſtructed of a lande lyinge further towarde the ſouthe, he tooke his vyage thether. Therfore lytle more then tenne myles diſtant from henſe, he ſounde a large lande whiche th[e]inhabitantes cauled *Quiriquetana*: But he named it *Ciamba*. When he wente a lande and commaunded his chaplaine to ſaye maſſe on the ſea bankes, a great confluence of the naked inhabitantes flocked thither ſymplye and without feare, bringynge with them plenty of meate and freſhe water, marueylynge at owre men as they had byn ſumme ſtraunge miracle. When they had preſented their giftes, they went ſumwhat backewarde and made lowe curteſy after their maner bowinge their heades and bodyes reuerently. He recompenſed their gentylnes rewardinge them with other of owre thynges, as counters, braſlettes and garlandes of glaſſe and counterfecte ſtoones, lookyng glaſſes, nedelles, and pynnes, with ſuche other traſhe, whiche ſeemed vnto them precious marchaundies. In this great tracte there are two regions wherof the one is cauled *Taia* and the other *Maia*. He writeth that all that lande is very fayre and holſome by reaſon of the excellent temperatneſſe of the ayer: And that it is inferiour to no lande in frutefull ground beinge partely full of montaines, and partely large playnes: Alſo replenyſhed with many goodly trees, holſome herbes, and frutes, continuynge greene and floryſhynge all the hole yeare. It beareth alſo verye many holy trees and pyne aple trees. Alſo. vii. kyndes of date trees wherof ſumme are frutefull and ſumme baren. It bringeth furth lykewyſe of it ſelfe *Pelgoras* and wilde vynes laden with grapes euen in the wooddes emonge other trees. He ſaythe furthermore that there is ſuche abundaunce of other pleaſaunte and profitable frutes, that they paſſe not of vynes. Of one of thoſe kyndes of date trees, they make certeyne longe and brode

From Spaine to Hispaniola a thousande and two hundreth leagues

The florysshing Ilande of Guanassa.

Simple people.

A greate marchaunt.

105

The regyon of Quiriquetana or Ciamba.

Gentle people.

The regyons of Taia and Maia.

Seuen kyndes of date trees.

Wylde vines.

ſwoordes and dartes. Theſe regyons beare alſo goſſampyne trees here and there commonly in the wooddes. Lykewiſe *Mirobalanes* of ſundry kyndes, as thoſe which the phiſitians caule *Emblicos* and *Chebulos*, *Maizium* alſo, *Iucca*, *Ages*, and *Battatas*, lyke vnto thoſe whiche we haue ſayde before to bee founde in other regions in theſe coaſtes. The ſame nooryſſheth alſo lyons, Tygers, Hartes, Roes, Goates, and dyuers other beaſtes. Lykewyſe ſundry kyndes of byrdes and foules: Emonge the whiche they keepe onely them to franke and feede, whiche are in colour, bygnes, and taſte, muche lyke vnto owre pehennes. He ſaith that th[e]inhabitantes are of high and goodly ſtature, well lymmed and proportioned both men and women: Couerynge their priuye partes with fyne breeches of goſſampine cotton wrought with dyuers colours. And that they may ſeeme the more cumlye and bewtifull (as they take it) they paynte their bodyes redde and blacke with the iuce of certeyne apples whiche they plante in their gardens for the ſame purpoſe. Summe of them paynte their hole bodies: ſumme but parte: and other ſumme drawe the portitures, of herbes, floures, and knottes, euery one as ſeemeth beſte to his owne phantaſye. Their language differeth vtterlye from theirs of the Ilandes nere aboute them. From theſe regions, the waters of the ſea ranne with as full courſe towarde the weſte, as if it had byn the faule of a ſwyfte riuer. Neuertheleſſe he determined to ſearche the Eaſte partes of this lande, reuoluynge in his mynde that the regions of *Paria* and *Os Draconis* with other coaſtes founde before toward the Eaſte, ſhulde bee neare theraboute as in deede they were. Departyng therfore from the large region of *Quiriquetana* the. xiii. daye of the calendes of September, when he had ſailed thirtie leaques, he founde a ryuer, without the mouth wherof he drewe freſhe water in the ſea. Where alſo the ſhoore was ſo cleane withowte rockes, that he founde grounde euery where, where he myght aptely caſte anker. He writeth that the ſwifte courſe of the *Ocean* was ſo vehement and contrarye, that in the ſpace of fortye dayes he coulde ſcarcelye ſayle threſcore and tenne leaques, and that with muche diffycultie with many fetches and coompaſynges, fyndyng him ſelfe to bee ſumtimes repulſed and dryuen farre backe by the vyolente courſe of the ſea when he woolde haue taken lande towarde the euenynge, leaſte perhappes wanderynge in vnknowen coaſtes in the darckeneſſe of the nyght, he myghte bee in daunger of ſhypwracke: He writeth that in the ſpace of eyght leaques, he found three great and fayre ryuers vppon the banckes wherof, there grewe reedes bygger then a mannes thygh. In theſe ryuers was alſo greate plentye of fyſhe and great tortoyſes: Lykewiſe in many places, multitudes of Crocodiles lyinge in the ſande, and yanyng to take the heate of the ſoonne: Beſyde dyuers other kyndes of beaſtes whervnto he gaue no names. He ſayth alſo that the ſoyle of that lande is very diuers and variable: beyng ſumwhere ſtonye and full of rough and craggie promontories or poyntes reachynge into the ſea. And in other places as frutfull as maye bee. They haue alſo diuers kynges and rulers. In ſumme places they caule a kynge *Cacicus*: in other places they caule hym *Quebi*, and ſumwhere *Tiba*. Suche as haue behaued them ſelues valiantly in the warres ageynſte their enemies, and haue their faces full of ſcarres, they caule *Cupras*, and honour them as the antiquitie dyd the goddes whiche they cauled *Heroes*, ſuppoſed to bee the ſoules of ſuche men as in their lyfe tyme excelled in vertue and noble actes. The common people, they caule *Chiui*: and a man, they caule *Homem*. When they ſaye in their language, take man, they ſay *Hoppa home*. After this, he came to an other ryuer apte to beare great ſhypppes: Before the mouthe wherof, leye foure ſmaule Ilandes full of floriſſhing and frutfull trees. Theſe Ilandes he named *Quatuor tempora*. From henſe ſaylynge towarde the Eaſte for the ſpace of. xiii. leaques ſtyll ageinſte the vyolent courſe of the water, he founde twelue other ſmaule Ilandes. In the whiche bycauſe he founde a newe kynde of frutes muche like vnto owre lemondes, he cauled them *Limonares*. Wanderynge yet further the ſame waye for the ſpace of. xii. leaques, he founde a great hauen enteryng into the land after the maner of a goulfe the ſpace of three leaques, and in maner as brode, into the whiche fell a great ryuer. Here was *Nicueſa* loſte afterwarde when he ſoughte *Beragua*: By reaſon wherof they cauled it *Rio de los perdidos*: that is, the ryuer of the loſte men. Thus *Colonus* the Admirall yet further contynuynge his courſe ageynſte the furye of the ſea, founde manye hyghe montaynes and horrible valleys, with dyuers ryuers and hauens, from all the whiche (as he ſaythe) proceaded ſweete ſauers greatly recreatynge and comfortynge nature. In ſo muche that in all this longe tracte there was not one of his men deſeaſed vntyll he came to a region whiche th[e]inhabitantes caule *Quicuri*, in the whiche is the hauen cauled *Cariai*, named *Mirobalanus* by the admyrall bycauſe the *Mirobalane* trees are natiue in the region therabout. In this hauen of *Cariai*, there came about two hundreth of th[e]inhabitantes to the ſea ſyde with euerye of them three or foure dartes in their handes: Yet of condition gentell enoughe, and not refuſyng ſtraungers. Their commyng was for none other purpoſe then to knowe what this newe nation mente, or what they broughte with them. When owre men had gyuen them ſygnes of peace, they came ſwymmynge to the ſhyppes and deſyred to barter with them by exchaunge. The admyrall to allure them to frendſhippe, gaue them many of owre thinges: But they refuſed them, ſuſpectynge ſumme diſceate thereby bycauſe he woolde not receyue theirs They wroughte all by ſygnes: for one vnderſtoode not a woorde of the others language. Suche gyftes as were ſente them, they lefte on the ſhore and woolde take no part therof. They are of ſuche ciuilitye and humanytie, that they eſteeme it more honorable to gyue then to take. They ſente owre men two younge women beinge vyrgines, of commendable ſauour and goodly ſtature,

Mirobalanes

Byrdes and foules.

People of goodly stature

They paynt theyr bodyes

The swyfte course of the sea from the East to the West.

Paria.

Fresshe water in the sea.

Fetches and compasinges

106

Faire ryuers.

Great reedes

Great tortoyses.

Dyuers languages.

Heroes.

Quatuor tempora.

Twelue Ilandes named Limonares

Rio de los perdidos.

The region of Quicuri.

The hauen of Cariai or Mirobalanus

Ciuile and humane people

ſygnifyinge vnto them that they myghte take them awaye with them if it were their pleaſure. Theſe women after the maner of their countrey, were couered from their ancles ſumwhat aboue their priuye partes with a certeyne clothe made of goſſampine cotton. But the men are al naked. The women vſe to cutte their heare: But the men lette it growe on the hynder partes of their heades, and cutte it on the fore parte. Their longe heare, they binde vppe with fyllettes, and winde it in ſundry rowles as owre maydes are accuſtomed to do. The virgins which were ſente to the Admirall he decked in fayre apparell, and gaue them many gyftes, and ſente theym home ageyne. But lykewiſe all theſe rewardes and apparel they left vppon the ſhore bycauſe owre men had refuſed their gyftes. Yet tooke he two men away with him (and thoſe very wyllyngly) that by lernyng the Spanyſhe tonge, he might afterwarde vſe them for interpretours. He conſidered that
107 the tractes of theſe coaſtes were not greately troubeled with vehement motions or ouerflowynges of the ſea, foraſmuche as trees growe in the ſea not farre frome the ſhore, euen as they doo vppon the bankes of ryuers. The which thynge alſo other doo affirme whiche haue latelyer ſearched thoſe coaſtes, declaring that the ſea riſeth and fauleth but lyttle there aboute. He ſayth furthermore, that in the proſpecte of this lande, there are trees engendred euen in the ſea, which after that they are growen to any height, bende downe the toppes of theyr branches into the grounde: which embraſing them cauſeth other branches to ſprynge owt of the ſame, and take roote in the earth, bringynge foorth trees in theyr kynde ſucceſſiuely as dyd the fyrſt roote from whenſe they had theyr originall, as do alſo the ſettes of vines when onely bothe the endes therof are put into the grounde. Plinie in the twelfth booke of his natural hiſtorie maketh mention of ſuche trees, deſcribynge them to bee on the lande, but not in the ſea. The Admirall wryteth alſo that the lyke beaſtes are engendered in the coaſtes of *Cariai*, as in other prouinces of theſe regions, and ſuch as we haue ſpoken of before. Yet that there is one founde here in nature much differinge from the other. This beaſte is of the byggenes of a greate moonkeye, but with a tayle muche longer and bygger. It lyueth in the wooddes, and remoueth from tree to tree in this maner. Hangynge by the tayle vppon the braunche of a tree, and gatheryng ſtrength by ſwayinge her bodye twyſe or thryſe too and fro, ſhe caſteth her ſelfe from branche to branche and ſo from tree to tree as though ſhe flewe. An archer of owres hurt one of them. Who perceauinge her ſelfe to be wounded, leapte downe from the tree, and fiercely ſet on hym which gaue her the wounde, in ſo muche that he was fayne to defende hym ſelfe with his ſwoorde. And thus by chaunce cuttyng of one of her armes, he tooke her, and with muche a doo brought her to the ſhips where within a whyle, ſhee waxed tame. Whyle ſhee was thus kepte and bownde with cheynes, certeyne other of owr hunters hadde chaſed a wylde bore owt of the maryſhes nere vnto the ſea ſyde. For hunger and deſyre of fleſhe, cauſed them to take double pleaſure in huntynge. In this meane tyme other which remayned in the ſhippes, goinge a lande to recreate them ſelues, tooke this moonkey with them. Who, as ſoone as ſhee had eſpied the bore, ſet vp her bryſtels and made towarde her. The bore lykewyſe ſhooke his briſtels and whette his teethe. The moonkey furiouſly inuaded the bore, wrappynge her tayle about his body, and with her arme reſerued of her victourer, helde hym ſo faſt aboute the throte, that he was ſuffocate. Theſe people of *Cariai*, vſe to drye the deade bodyes of theyr princes vppon hurdels, and ſo reſerue them inuolued in the leaues of trees. As he went forwarde about twentie leagues from *Cariai*, he founde a goulfe of ſuch largenes that it conteyned. xii. leagues in compaſſe. In the mouth of this goulfe were foure lyttle Ilandes ſo nere togyther, that they made a ſafe hauen to enter into the goulfe. This goulfe is the hauen which we ſayde before to be cauled *Cerabaro* of th[e]inhabitantes. But they haue nowe lerned that only the lande of the one ſyde therof, lyinge on the ryght hande at the enterynge of the goulfe, is cauled by that name. But that on the lefte ſyde, is cauled *Aburema*. He ſaythe that all this goulfe is ful of fruteful Ilandes wel replenyſſhed with goodly trees: And the grounde of the ſea to bee verye cleane withowt rockes, and commodious to caſt anker: Lykewyſe the ſea of the goulfe to haue greate abundance of fyſſhe: and the lande of both the ſydes to bee inferior to none in frutfulnes. At his fyrſt arryuynge, he eſpyed two of th[e]inhabitantes hauynge cheynes about theyr neckes, made of ouches (which they caule *Guanines*,) of baſe golde artificially wrought in the formes of Eagles, and lions, with dyuers other beaſtes and foules. Of the two Cariaians whiche he brought with hym from *Cariai*, he was enformed that the regions of *Cerabaro* and *Aburema* were rych in golde: And that the people of *Cariai* haue all theyr golde frome thenſe for exchaunge of other of theyr thynges. They towlde hym alſo, that in the ſame regions there are fyue vyllages not farre from the ſea ſyde, whoſe inhabitantes apply them ſelues onely to the gathering of gold The names of theſe vyllages are theſe: *Chirara*, *Puren*, *Chitaza*, *Iureche*, *Atamea*. All the men of the prouince of *Cerabaro*, go naked, and are paynted with dyuers coloures. They take great pleaſure in wearynge garlandes of floures, and crownes made of the clawes of Lions and Tygers. The women couer onely theyr priuie partes with a fyllet of goſſampine cotton. Departinge from henſe and coaſtynge ſtyll by the ſame ſhore for the ſpace of. xviii. leagues, he came to another ryuer, where he eſpyed aboute three hundreth naked men in
108 a company. When they ſawe the ſhippes drawe neare the lande, they cryed owt aloude, with cruell countenaunces ſhakynge theyr woodden ſwoordes and hurlynge dartes, takynge alſo water in theyr mouthes and

[Trees grow by the sea] syde.

Trees growynge in the sea after a straunge sort.

Plinie.

A straunge kynde of moonkeys.

A moonkeye feyghteth with a man.

A conflict betwene a monkey and a wylde bore.

The bodyes of kynges dryed and reserued

Cerabaro.

Aburema.

Cheynes of golde.

Plentie of golde.

Fiue villages rych in gold.

Crownes of beasts claws

ſpoutyng the ſame ageynſt our men: wherby they ſeemed to inſinuate that they woolde receaue no condition of peace or haue owght to doo with them. Here he commaunded certeyne pieces of ordinaunce to be ſhot of toward them: Yet ſo to ouerſhute them, that none myght be hurt therby. For he euer determyned to deale quietly and peaceably with theſe newe nations. At the noyſe therfore of the gunnes and ſyght of the fyer, they fell downe to the grounde, and defyred peace. Thus enteringe into further frendſhippe, they exchaunged theyr cheynes and ouches of golde for glaſſes and haukes belles and ſuch other marchandies. They vſe drummes or tymbrels made of the ſhelles of certeyne ſea fyſſhes, wherewith they encorage theym ſelues in the warres. In this tract are theſe ſeuen ryuers, *Acateba*, *Quareba*, *Zobroba*, *Aiaguitin*, *Vrida*, *Durriba*, *Beragua*, in all the whiche, golde is founde. They defende them ſelues ageynſte rayne and heate with certeyne great leaues of trees in the ſteade of clokes. Departinge from henſe, he ſearched the coaſtes of *Ebetere* and *Embigar*, into the which faule the goodly ryuers of *Zohoran* and *Cubigar*: And here ceaſeth the plentie and frutefulnes of golde, in the tracte of fiftie leagues or there about. From henſe onely three leagues diſtant, is the rocke whiche in the vnfortunate diſcourſe of *Nicueſa* we ſayde was cauled of owre men *Pignonem*. But of th[e]inhabitantes the Region is cauled *Vibba*. In this tracte alſo aboute ſyxe leagues frome thenſe, is the hauen which *Colonus* cauled *Portus Bellus* (wherof we haue ſpoken before) in the region whiche th[e]inhabitantes caule *Xaguaguara*. This region is very peopulous: but they go all naked. The kyng is paynted with blacke colours, but all the people with redde. The kynge and ſeuen of his noble men, had euery of them a lyttle plate of golde hangynge at theyr noſethrilles downe vnto theyr lyppes. And this they take for a cumly ornamente. The menne incloſe theyr priuie members in a ſhell: And the women couer theyrs with a fyllet of goſſampine cotton tyed about theyr loynes. In theyr gardens they nooryſſhe a frute muche lyke the nutte of a pine tree: the whiche (as we haue ſayde in an other place) groweth on a ſhrubbe muche lyke vnto an archichoke: But the frute is muche ſofter, and meate for a kynge. Alſo certeyne trees whiche beare gourdes, wherof we haue ſpoken before. This tree, they caule *Hibuero*. In theſe coaſtes they mette ſumtymes with Crocodiles lyinge on the ſandes, the whiche when they fled, or tooke the water, they lefte a very ſweete ſauour behynde them ſweeter then muſke or *Caſtoreum*. When I was ſente ambaſſadour for the catholike king of Caſtile to the Soltane of Babilon or Alcayer in Egipte, th[e]inhabitantes nere vnto the ryuer of *Nilus* toulde me the like of their female Crocodiles. Affyrmyng furthermore that the fatte or ſewette of them is equall in ſweetnes with the pleaſaunte gummes of Arabie. But the Admirall was nowe at the length enforced of neceſſytie to departe from henſe, aſwell for that he was no longer able to abyde the contrarye and vyolente courſe of the water, as alſo that his ſhyppes were daily more and more putrified and eaten throwgh with certeyne wormes whiche are engendred of the warmenes of the water in all thoſe tractes nere vnto the Equinoctial line. The Venetians caule theſe woormes *Biſſas*. The ſame are alſo engendred in two hauens of the citie of *Alexandria* in Egipt, and deſtroye the ſhyppes if they lye longe at anker. They are a cubet in length, and ſumwhat more: not paſſyng the quantitie of a fynger in bygneſſe. The Spanyſhe mariner cauleth this peſtilence *Broma*. *Colonus* therfore whom before the great monſters of the ſea coulde not feare, nowe fearyng this *Broma*, beynge alſo ſoore vexed with the contrary faule of the ſea, directed his courſe with the *Ocean* towarde the weſt, and came firſt to the ryuer *Hiebra*, diſtant onely two leaques from the ryuer of *Beragua*, bycauſe that was commodious to harborowe great ſhippes. This region is named after the riuer, and is called *Beragua* the leſſe: Bycauſe bothe the ryuers are in the dominion of the kyng which inhabiteth the region of *Beragua*. But what chaunſed vnto hym in this vyage on the ryghte hande and on the lefte, lette vs nowe declare. Whyle therfore *Colonus* the Admirall remayned yet in the ryuer *Hiebra*, he ſent *Bertholomeus Colonus* his brother and Lieuetenaunte of *Hiſpaniola*, with the ſhyppe boates and threſcore and. viii. men to the ryuer of *Beragua*, where the king of the region beinge naked and painted after the maner of the countrey, came towarde them with a great multitude of men waytynge on hym, but all vnarmed and without weapons, gyuinge alſo ſygnes of peace. When he approched nerer, and entered communication with owre men, certeyne of his gentelmen neareſte aboute his perſon, rememberinge the maieſtie of a king, and that it ſtoode not with his honour to bargen ſtondynge, tooke a greate ſtoone owte of the ryuer, waſſhynge and rubbynge it veary decently, and ſo put it vnder hym with humble reuerence. The kyng thus ſyttyng, ſeemed with ſygnes and tokens to inſinuate that it ſhuld be lawful for owre men to ſearche and viewe al the ryuers within his dominion. Wherfore, the vi. day of the Ides of February, leauing his boates with certeyne of his coompany, he wente by lande a foote from the bankes of *Beragua* vntyl he came to the ryuer of *Duraba*, whiche he affirmeth to be richer in gold then eyther *Hiebra* or *Beragua*. For gold is engendred in al the riuers of that land. In ſo muche that emonge the rootes of the trees growynge by the bankes of the ryuers, and amonge the ſtones left of the water, and alſo where ſo euer they dygged a hole or pyt in the grounde not paſte the deapthe of a handfull and a halfe, they founde the earthe taken owte therof, myxte with golde: Where vppon he determyned to faſten his foote there and to inhabyte. Whiche thynge the people of the countrey perceauynge and ſmellynge what inconuenyence and myſchiefe myght thereof enſewe to their countrey if they ſhulde permitte ſtraungers to plante their habitation there, aſſembled a great army, and with horrible owte crye aſſayled owre

Spytefull people.

Guns make peace.

Seuen golden ryuers

Note, where the plentie of golde endeth

Pignonem.

Vibba.

Portus Bellus.

Paynted people.

A strange syght.

A shel in the steede of a codpiece.

Crocodiles of sweete sauour.

Alcayr or Babilon in Egipt

Shippes eaten with wormes.

Alexandria in Egypte.

Broma.

Hiebra.

Beragua.

109

How the king of Beragua enterteyned the lyeuetenaunte.

Their reuerence to the kynge.

Golde in the ryuer Duraba.

Great plenty of golde.

men (who had nowe begoonne to buylde houſes) ſoo deſperately that they were ſcarcely able to abyde the fyrſte brunte. Theſe naked barbarians at their fyrſt approche, vſed onely ſlynges and dartes: But when they came nearer to hande ſtrookes, they foughte with their woodden ſwoordes whiche they caule *Machanas*, as wee haue ſayd before. A man woolde not thinke what great malice and wrath was kyndeled in their hartes ageinſt owre men: And with what deſperate myndes they fought for the defenſe of their lybertie whiche they more eſteeme then lyfe or rycheſſe. For they were nowe ſo voyde of all feare, and contemnynge deathe, that they neyther feared longe bowes or croſſebowes, nor yet (whiche is mooſte to be marueyled) were any thynge diſcouraged at the terryble noyſe of the gunnes ſhotte of from the ſhyppes. They retyred once. But ſhortly after encreaſynge their noumber, they returned more fiercely then at the fyrſte. They woolde haue byn contented to haue receyued owre men frendly as ſtraungers, but not as inhabitours. The more inſtante that owre men were to remaine, ſo muche the greater multitude of bortherers flocked togyther dayly, diſturbyng them both nyght and daye ſumtymes on the one ſyde and ſumtymes on the other. The ſhyps lying at anker neare vnto the ſhore, warded them on the backe halfe. But at the length they were fayne to forſake this lande, and retourne backe the ſame way by the which they came. Thus with much diffyculty and danger, they came to the Iland of *Iamaica* lyenge on the ſouth ſyde of *Hiſpaniola* and *Cuba*, with their ſhyppes as full of holes as ſieues, and ſo eaten with woormes, as though they had byn bored through with wimbles. The water entered ſo faſte at the ryftes and holes, that if they had not with the paynefull labour of their handes empted the ſame as faſte, they were lyke to haue peryſſhed. Where as yet by this meanes they arryued at *Iamaica*, althoughe in maner halfe deade. But their calamitie ceaſed not here. For as faſt as their ſhyppes leaked, their ſtrengthe dimyniſſhed ſo that they were no longer able to keepe theym from ſynkynge. By reaſon wherof, faulynge into the handes of the barbarians, and incloſed withowte hope of departure, they led their lyues for the ſpace of tenne monthes emong the naked people more myſerably then euer dyd *Achemenides* emonge the gyantes cauled *Ciclopes*: rather lyuing then beinge eyther contented or ſatiſfied with the ſtrange meates of that Ilande: and that onely at ſuch tymes as pleaſed the barbarians to giue them part of theirs. The deadly enmity and malice whiche theſe barbarous kinges beare one ageinſt an other, made greatly with owre men. For at ſuche tymes as they attempted warre ageinſt their bortherers they woold ſumtymes gyue owre men parte of theyr breade to ayde them. But howe myſerable and wretched a thyng it is to lyue onely with breade gotten by beggynge, yowre holyneſſe maye eaſylye coniecture: Eſpecially where all other accuſtomed foode is lackynge, as wyne, oyle, fleſſhe, butter, chieſe, and milke, wherwith the ſtomakes of owr people of Europe haue euer byn nooriſſhed euen from their cradelles. Therfore as neceſſyty is ſubiecte to no lawe, ſo doothe it enforce men to attempte deſperate aduentures. And thoſe the ſoner, which by a certeyne nobylytie of nature do no further eſteeme lyfe then it is ioyned with ſumme felicity. *Bertholomeus Colonus* therfore, intendynge rather to proue what god woolde do with hym and his companyons in theſe extremities, then any longer to abide the ſame, commaunded *Diegus Mendez* his ſteward with two guydes of that Ilande whome he had hyred with promyſſes of great rewardes at their retourne, to enter into one of their canoas and take their viage to *Hiſpaniola*. Beynge thus toſſed on the ſea two and fro from rocke too rocke by reaſon of the ſhorteneſſe and narownes of the canoa, they arryued at the length at the laſte corner of *Hiſpaniola*, beynge diſtante from *Iaĩnaica* fortie leagues. Here his guydes departynge from hym, returned ageine to *Colonus* for the rewardes which he had promyſed them. But *Diegus Mendez* wente on forward a foote vntyll he came to the citie cauled *Sanctus Dominicus* beynge the chiefe and heade citye of the Ilande. The offycers and rulers of *Hiſpaniola*, beinge enformed of the matter, appoynted hym two ſhyppes wherwith he retourned to his maiſter and coompanions. As he founde them, ſoo came they to *Hiſpaniola*, verye feeble and in maner naked. What chaunced of them afterwarde, I knowe not as yet. Lette vs nowe therfore leaue theſe particulers, and ſpeake ſumwhat more of generals. In al thoſe tractes whiche we ſayde here before to haue bynne found by *Colonus* the Admyrall, bothe he hym ſelfe writeth, and all his coompanyons of that vyage confeſſe, that the trees, herbes, and frutes, are floryſhing and greene all the hole yeare, and the ayer ſo temperate and holeſome, that of all his coompanye there neuer fell one man ſycke, nor yet were vexed eyther with extreme coulde or heate for the ſpace of fyftie leagues from the great hauen of *Cerabaro* to the ryuers of *Hiebra* and *Beragua*. Th[e]inhabitantes of *Cerabaro*, and the nations whiche are betwyxte that and the ſayde ryuers, applye not them ſelues to the gatherynge of golde but onely at certeyne tymes of the yeare: And are very experte and cunnyng herein, as are owre myners of ſyluer and Iren. They knowe by longe experience in what places golde is mooſte abundantly engendred: as by the colour of the water of the ryuers, and ſuche as faule from the montaynes: And alſo by the colour of the earthe and ſtones. They beleue a certeyne godly nature to be in golde, foraſmuche as they neuer gather it excepte they vſe certeyne relygious expiations or pourgynge, as to abſteyn from women, and all kyndes of pleſures and delycate meates and drinkes, during all the tyme that their golden harueſt laſtethe. They ſuppoſe that men do naturally lyue and dye as other beaſtes do, and therfore honour none other thynge as god. Yet doo they praye to the ſoonne, and honour it when it ryſeth. But lette vs nowe ſpeake of the montaines and ſituation of theſe landes

Slynges and dartes.

Liberty more esteemed then ryches.

The Spanyardes are dryuen to flight.

The Ilande of Iamaica.

A myserable case.

110

Necessytie hath no lawe howe farre lyfe is to bee esteemed.

A daungerous enterpryse.

Sanctus Dominicus.

Landes found by Colonus.

Temperate regions and holsome aier

Cerabaro.
Hiebra.
Beragua.

Experte myners.

A godly nature in golde.

Golden haruest.

From all the ſea bankes of theſe regyons, exceding great and hyghe mountaynes are ſeene towarde the Southe, yet reachynge by a continuall tracte from the Eaſte into the weſte. By reaſon wherof I ſuppoſe that the two greate ſeas (wherof I haue ſpoken larg[e]ly before) are deuided with theſe montaynes as it were with bulwarkes, leaſte they ſhoulde ioyne and repugne, as Italye deuideth the ſea cauled *Tirrhenum*, from the ſea Adriatyke, which is nowe commonly cauled the goulfe of Venes.

Hyghe and greate mountaynes.

Tyrrhennum is nowe cauled Tuscane

For whiche waye ſoo euer they ſayled from the poynt cauled *Promontorium, S. Auguſtini* (whiche perteyneth to the Portugales and proſpecteth ageynſte the ſea Atlantike) euen vnto *Vraba* and the hauen *Cerabaro*, and to the furtheſt landes found hytherto weſtwarde, they had euer greate mountaynes in ſyghte both nere hande and farre of, in all that longe raſe. Theſe mountaynes were in ſume place, ſmooth, pleaſaunt and frutfull, full of goodly trees and herbes: And ſumwhere, hygh, rowgh, ful of rockes, and baren, as chaunſeth in the famus mountaynes of *Taurus* in *Aſia*, and alſo in dyuers coaſtes of our mountaynes of *Apennini*, and ſuche other of lyke byggeneſſe. The rydgies alſo of theſe mountaynes are diuided with goodly and fayre valleis. That part of the mountaynes which includeth the lymettes of *Beragua*, is thought to be hygher then the clowdes, in ſo much that (as they ſaye) the tops of them can ſeldome bee ſeene for the multitude of thicke clowdes which are beneath the ſame. *Colonus* the Admirall the fyrſte fynder of theſe regions, affirmeth that the toppes of the montaynes of *Beragua* are more then fiftie myles in heyghth. He ſayth furthermore that in the ſame region at the rotes of the montaynes the way is open to the ſouth ſea, and compareth it as it were betwene Venice and *Genua*, or *Ianua* as the Genues wyll haue it cauled, whiche fable that theyr citie was buylded of *Ianus*. He affirmeth alſo that this lande reacheth foorth towarde the ſouth: And that from henſe it taketh the begynnynge of breadth, lyke as from the Alpes owte of the narowe thygh of Italy, we ſee the large and mayne landes of Fraunce, Germanye, and Pannonye, to the Sarmatians and Scythyans, euen vnto the mountaynes and rockes of Riphea and the frozen ſea, and embraſe therwith as with a continuall bonde, all T[h]racia, and Grecia, with all that is included within the promontorie or poynt of *Malea* and *Helleſpontus* ſouthwarde, and the ſea *Euxinus* and the maryſſhes of *Mœotis* in *Scythia* northwarde. The Admirall ſuppoſethe, that on the lefte hande in ſaylynge towarde the weſte, this lande is ioyned to *India* beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*: And that on the ryght hande towarde the North, it bee extended to the froſen ſea, beyonde the Hyperboreans and the North pole: So that both the ſeas (that is to meane that ſouth ſea which we ſayde to bee founde by *Vaſchus*, and owre Ocean) ſhulde ioyne and meete in the corners of that lande: And that the waters of theſe ſeas doo not onely incloſe and compaſſe the ſame withowt diuiſion as Europe is incloſed with the ſeas of *Helleſpontus* and *Tanais*, with the froſen Ocean and owre ſea of *Tyrrhenum* with the Spanyſſhe ſeas. But in my opinion, the vehement courſe of the Ocean toward the weſte, doth ſignifie and lette that the ſayde two ſeas ſhulde not ſo ioyne togither: But rather that that land is adherent to the firme landes towarde the Northe, as we haue ſayde before. It ſhall ſuffice to haue ſayde thus muche of the length hereof. Let vs nowe therfore ſpeake ſumwhat of the breadth of the ſame. We haue made mention before howe the ſouth ſea is diuided by narowe lymittes from owre Ocean, as it was proued by th[e]experience of *Vaſchus Nunnez* and his coompanions which fyrſt made open the way thyther. But as dyuerſly as the mountaynes of owre Alpes in Europe are ſumwhere narowe and in ſume place brode, euen ſo by the lyke prouidence of nature, this lande in ſume parte reacheth farre in breadth, and is in other places coarcted with narowe limettes from ſea to ſea, with valleys alſo in ſume places, wherby men maye paſſe from the one ſyde to the other. Where we haue deſcrybed the regions of *Vraba* and *Beragua* to bee ſituate, theſe ſeas are diuided by ſmaule diſtaunce. Yet owght we to thynke the region which the great ryuer of *Maragnonus* runneth through, to bee very large if we ſhall graunt *Maragnonum* to bee a ryuer and no ſea, as the freſhe waters of the ſame owght to perſuade vs. For in ſuche narowe caues of the earth, there can bee no ſwalowing goulfes of ſuch bygneſſe as to receaue or nooryſhe ſo great abundance of water. The lyke is alſo to bee ſuppoſed of the great ryuer of *Dabaiba* which we ſayde to bee from the corner of the goulfe of *Vraba* in ſume place of fortie fathomes depth, and ſumwhere fiftie: Alſo three myles in breadth, and ſo to faule into the ſea. We muſt needes graunt that the earth is brode there, by the whiche the ryuer paſſeth from the hyghe mountaynes of *Dabaiba* from the Eaſte and not from the weſt. They ſay that this ryuer conſiſteth and taketh his encreaſe of foure other ryuers faulynge from the mountaynes of *Dabaiba*. Owre men caule this ryuer *Flumen. S. Iohannis*. They ſay alſo that from henſe it fauleth into the goulfe of *Vraba* by ſeuen mouthes as doothe the ryuer of *Nilus* into the ſea of Egypte. Lykewyſe that in the ſame region of *Vraba* there are in ſume places narowe ſtreyghtes not paſſynge ſyftene leaques: and the ſame to bee ſaluage and withowt any paſſage by reaſon of dyuers maryſſhes and deſolate wayes, which the Latines caule *Lamas*: But the Spanyardes accordynge to their varietie, caule them *Tremedales*, *Trampales*, *Cenegales*, *Sumideros*, and *Zahondaderos*. But before we paſſe any further, it ſhall not bee greatly from owr purpoſe to declare from whenſe theſe mountaynes of *Dabaiba* haue theyr name accordynge vnto th[e]antiquities of th[e]inhabitantes. They ſaye therefore that *Dabaiba* was a woman of greate magnanimitie and wyſedome emonge theyr prediceſſours in owlde tyme: whom in her lyfe, all th[e]inhabitantes of thoſe prouinces did greatly reuerence, and beinge deade gaue her diuine honour and

Looke the nauigation of Cabote. deca[de]. iii. lib. vi.

The breadth of the lande

The regions of Vraba and Beragua.

The greate riuer Maragnonus.

The greate riuer Dabaiba, or sancty Iohannis.

The ryers haue theyr increase from the sprynges of the montaynes.

The ryuer of Nilus in Egypte.

Marisshes and desolate wayes.

A superstitious opinion of th[e]originall of montaines of Dabaiba.

Cap. S. Augustini.

Vraba.

Cerabaro.

Frutful mountaynes.

Apennini are mountaynes which diuide Italy into. ii. partes

Beragua

The mountaynes of Beragua higher then the cloudes.

Montaynes of fiftie miles heyght.

111

Ianus otherwyse cauled Iaphet, the son of Noe.

Italy is lyke vnto a legge in the sea, and the mountaynes of the alpes, are in the thyghe thereof

Colonus his opinion of the supposed Continent.

By this coniecture, the way shuld be open to Cathay by the hiperboreans

named the region after her name, beleuynge that ſhee ſendeth thunder and lyghtnynge to deſtroy the frutes of the earth yf ſhee bee angered, and to ſend plentie if ſhee bee well pleaſed. This ſuperſtition hathe byn
112 perſuaded them by a craftie kynde of men vnder pretenſe of religion to th[e]intent that they might enioye ſuche gyftes and offeringes as were brought to the place where ſhee was honoured. This is ſufficient for this purpoſe. They ſaye furthermore that the maryſſhes of the narowe lande wherof we haue ſpoken, brynge foorth great
Dragons and crocodiles in the marishes plentie of Crocodiles, dragons, battes, and gnattes beinge very hurtfull. Therefore when ſo euer they take any iorney towarde the ſouthe, they go owte of the way towarde the mountaynes, and eſchewe the regions neare vnto thoſe perelous fennes or maryſhes. Sume thinke that there is a valley lyinge that way that the ryuer runneth which owre men caule *Rio de los perdidos*, that is, the ryuer of the loſt men (ſo named by the miſſortune whiche there befell to *Nicueſa* and his coompany) and not far diſtant from the hauen *Cerabaro* whiche diuideth thoſe
The hauen Cerabaro. mountaynes towarde the ſouth. But let vs nowe fyniſhe this booke with a fewe other thynges woorthy to bee noted. They ſay therefore that on the ryght hande and lefte hande frome *Dariena*, there are twentie ryuers in
Twentie golden ryuers. all the whiche, greate plentie of golde is founde. Being demaunded what was the cauſe why they brought no greater abundance of golde from thenſe, they anſwered that they lacked myners: And that the men which they tooke with them from Spayne thyther, were not accuſtomed to laboure, but for the moſte parte brought vp in the warres. This lande ſeemeth alſo to promeſſe many precious ſtones. For beſyde thoſe which I ſayde
Precious stones. to bee founde neare vnto *Cariai* and *Sancta Martha*, one *Andreas Moralis* a pylot (who had trauayled thoſe coaſtes with *Iohannes de la Coſſa* whyle he yet lyued) had a precious diamonde which he bought of a
A precious diemonde of excedynge bygnes. naked younge man in the region of *Cumana* in the prouince of *Paria*. This ſtone was as longe as two ioyntes of a mans middell fynger, and as bygge as the fyrſt ioynte of the thumme: beinge alſo paynted on euery ſyde, conſiſtynge of eyght ſquares perfectly formed by nature. They ſay that with this they made ſcarres in anuilles and hammers, and brake the teethe of ſyles, the ſtone remaynyng vnperyſſhed. The younge man of *Cumana*, wore this ſtone aboute his necke emonge other ouches, and ſoulde it to *Andreas Moralis* for ſyue of our counterfect ſtones made of glaſſe of dyuers colours wherwith the ignorant younge man was greatly
Topases. delyted. They founde alſo certeyne topaſes on the ſhore. But th[e]eſtimation of golde was ſo farre entered
The Spanyardes contemne effeminate pleſures into the heades of owre men, that they had no regarde to ſtones. Alſo the moſt part of the Spanyardes, do lawgh them to ſcorne which vſe to weare many ſtones: ſpecially ſuch as are common: Iudginge it to bee an effeminate thynge, and more meete for women then men. The noble men onely when they celebrate ſolemne mariages, or ſet forth any triumphes, weare cheynes of gold byſet with precious ſtones, and vſe fayre apparell of
Sweete sauours. ſylke embrothered with golde intermixt with pearles and precious ſtones: And not at other tymes. They thynke it no leſſe effeminate for men to ſmell of the ſweete ſauours of Arabie: And iudge hym to bee infected with ſum kynde of fylthy lechery, in whom they ſmell the ſauour of muſke or *Caſtoreum*. But lyke as by one apple taken from a tree, we may perceyue the tree to bee frutfull, and by one fyſhe taken in a ryuer, we may
A similitude prouing great plentie of golde and precious stones. knowe that fyſhe is ingendered in the ſame, euen ſo, by a lyttel gold, and by one ſtone, we owght to conſyder that this lande bringeth forthe great plentie of golde and precious ſtones. What they haue found in the porte
The hauen of Sancta Martha. *Cariai.* of *Sancta Martha* in the region of *Cariai* when the hole nauye paſſed therby vnder the gouernaunce of *Petrus Arias* and his coompany with certeine other of the kynges offycers, I haue ſuffyciently declared in his place. To be ſhorte therefore, all thynges do ſo floryſſhe, growe, encreaſe, and proſper, that the laſte are euer better
The heroical factes of the Spaniardes. then the fyrſte. And ſurely to declare my opinion herin, what ſo euer hath heretofore byn diſcouered by the famous trauayles of *Saturnus* and *Hercules*, with ſuch other whom the antiquitie for their heroical factes honoured as goddes, ſeemeth but lyttell and obſcure if it be compared to the Spanyardes victorious laboures. Thus I byd yowre holynes fare well, deſyringe yowe to certifye me howe yowe lyke theſe fyrſte frutes of the *Ocean*, that beyng encoraged with yowre exhortations, I maye the gladlyer and with leſſe tedioufneſſe write ſuche thynges as ſhal chaunce heraſter.

THE FYFT BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.

113 ALL ſuche lyuynge creatures as vnder the cercle of the moone bringe forthe any thynge, are accuſtomed by th[e]inſtincte of nature as ſoone as they are delyuered of their byrthe, eyther to cloſe vppe the matrice, or at the leaſte to bee quyete for a ſpace. But owre mooſte frute-full Ocean and newe woorlde, engendereth and bringeth furthe dayly newe byrthes wherby men of great wytte, and eſpecially ſuche as are ſtudyous of newe and meruelous thinges, may haue ſumwhat at hand wherwith to feede their myndes. If yowre holyneſſe do aſke to what purpoſe is al this, ye ſhal vnderſtand, that I had ſcarcely fynyſſhed the hiſtorye of ſuche thynges as chaunſed to *Vaſchus Nunnez* and his coompanye in their vyage to the ſouthe ſea, when ſoodenly there came

newe letters from *Petrus Arias* the newe gouernour whom the kyng had appoynted the yeare before with an army of men and a nauye of ſhippes to ſayle to theſe newe landes. He ſygnifyeth by his letters, that he with his nauye and coompany, arryued all ſafelye. Furthermore, *Iohannes Cabedus* (whome yowre holynes at the requeſte of the moſte catholyke kynge had created byſſhoppe of that prouynce of *Dariena*) and three other of the chiefe offycers ioined in commiſſion to be his aſſyſtance, as *Alfonſus de Ponte*, *Diegus Marques*, and *Iohannes de Tauira*, confyrmed the ſame letters and ſubſcribed them with their names. The nauygation therfore of *Petrus Arias*, was in this maner. The daye before the Ides of Apryll, in the yeare of Chriſte. 1514. he hoyſed vppe his ſayles in the towne of ſaincte *Lucar de Barrameda*, ſytuate in the mouthe of the ryuer *Bætis*, whiche the Spaniardes nowe caule *Guadalchebir*. The ſeuen Ilandes of *Canaria* are about foure hundreth myles diſtant from the place where this riuer fauleth into the ſea. Summe thinke that theſe are the Ilandes which the owlde writers did caule the fortunate Ilandes. But other thynke the contrary. The name of theſe Ilandes, are theſe. The two whiche appere fyrſte in ſyght, are named *Lanzelota* and *Fortiſuentura*. On the backehalfe of theſe, lyeth *Magna Canaria* or *Grancanaria*. Beyonde that is *Tenerife*: and *Gomera* ſumwhat towarde the northe frome that. *Palma* and *Ferrea*, lye behynde as it were a bulwarke to all the other. *Petrus Arias* therfore, arriued at *Gomera* the eyghte daye after his departure, with a nauye of. xvii. ſhippes and a. M. [thousand] and fyue hundreth men, althoughe there were onely a thouſand and two hundreth aſſygned hym by the kynges letters. It is ſayde furthermore that he lefte behynd hym more then two thouſande verye penſyue and ſyghynge that they alſo myght not be receaued, proferynge them ſelues to go at their owne charges. He taried. xvi. dayes in *Gomera* to th[e]intente to make prouyſyon of fuell and freſhe water: But chiefely to repayre his ſhyppes beynge ſore broſed with tempeſtes, and eſpecially the gouernours ſhippe whiche had loſte the rudder. For theſe Ilandes are a commodious reſtynge place for all ſuche as intende to attempte any nauygations in that mayne ſea. Departynge from henſe in the nones of Maye, he ſawe no more lande vntyll the thirde daye of Iune, at the whiche he arriued at *Dominica* an Ilande of the *Canibales*, being diſtant from *Gomera* aboute eyght hundreth leaques. Here he remayned foure dayes, makinge newe prouiſion of freſhe water and fuell, durynge whiche tyme he ſawe no man nor yet any ſteppes of men: But founde plentie of ſea crabbes and greate lyſartes. From henſe he ſayled by the Ilandes of *Matinina* (otherwyſe cauled *Madanino*) *Guadalupea*, and *Galanta* (otherwyſe cauled *Galana*) of all whiche, we haue ſpoken in the fyrſte decade. He paſſed alſo throughe the ſea of herbes or weedes, continuyng a long tracte. Yet nother he, nor *Colonus* the Admyrall (who fyrſte founde theſe Ilandes and ſayled through this ſea of weedes) haue declared anye reaſon howe theſe weedes ſhoulde coome. Summe thynke the ſea too be verye muddye there, and that theſe weedes are engendered in the bottome therof, and ſo beynge looſed, to aſcende to the vppermooſte parte of the water, as wee ſee oftentymes chaunce in certeyne ſtondynge pooles, and ſumtymes alſo in greate ryuers. Other ſuppoſe that they are not engendered there, but to bee beaten from certeyne rockes by the vyolence of the water in tempeſtes. And thus they leaue the matter in dowte: Neyther haue they yet any certeyne experyence whether they ſtycke faſte and gyue place to the ſhyppes, or wander looſe vppon the water. But it is to bee thought that they are engendered there. For otherwyſe they ſhulde bee dryuen togyther on heapes by th[e]ympulſyon of the ſhyppes euen as a beaſome gathereth the ſwepynges of a houſe, and ſhulde alſo lette the courſe of the ſhyppes. The fourth day after that he departed frome *Dominica*, the hyghe mountaynes couered with ſnowe (wherof we haue ſpoken in the ſeconde decade) appered vnto hym. They ſaye that there the ſeas runne as ſwyftely towarde the weſte, as it were a ryuer faulyng from the toppes of hyghe montaynes: Although they ſayled not directly toward the weſt, but inclined ſumwhat to the ſouth. From theſe montaynes fauleth the ryuer of *Gaira*, famous by the ſlaughter of owre men at ſuch tyme as *Rodericus Colmenares* paſſed by thoſe coaſtes as we haue ſayde before. Lykewyſe many other fayre ryuers haue their originall from the ſame montaynes. This prouynce (in the whiche is, alſo the regyon of *Caramairi*) hath in it two notable hauens, of the which owre men named the one *Carthago* or *Carthagena*, and the other *Sancta Martha*, the regyon wherof, th[e]inhabitantes caule *Saturma*. The porte of *Sancta Martha*, is nearer to the montaines couered with ſnowe cauled *Montes Niuales*: for it is at the rootes of the ſame montaines. But the hauen of *Carthago*, is more weſtewarde aboute fyftie leaques. He writeth marueylous thynges of the hauen of *Sancta Martha*, whiche they alſo confirme that came lately from thenſe: Of the which younge *Veſputius* is one to whom *Americus Veſputius* his vncle (being a Florentine borne) left the exact knowlege of the mariners facultie, as it were by inheritance after his death for he was a very expert maiſter in the knowledge of his carde, his compaſſe, and the eleuation of the pole ſtarre with all that perteineth therto. This younge *Veſputius* was aſſygned by the kyng to bee one of the maiſters of the gouernours ſhyppe, bicauſe he was cunninge in iudgyng the degrees of the eleuation of the pole ſtarre by the quadrante. For the charge of gouernynge the rudder, was chiefely coommytted to one *Iohannes Serranus* a Spaniarde, who had oftentymes ouer runne thoſe coaſtes. *Veſputius* is my verye familyar frende, and a wyttie younge man in whoſe coompany I take great pleaſure, and therefore vſe hym oftentymes for my geſte. He hath alſo made many vyages into theſe coaſtes, and

The bysshop of Dariena.

The nauigation of Petrus Arias.

Saint Lucar.

The Iland of Canarie.

The Iland of Canarie.

Prouision of fresshe water and fuell.

The Iland of Dominica.

Gusdalupea, otherwyse cauled Carucueria, or Queraquiera.

The sea of herbes.

114

These mountaynes are cauled Montes Niuales or Serra Neuata, decade ii. liber. i. and ii.

The swyfte course of the sea towarde the west.

The ryuer Gaira.

Caramairi.

Carthago.

Saturma.

Mountaynes couered with snowe.

Americus Vesputius.

diligently noted ſuche thinges as he hath ſeene. *Petrus Arias* therfore writeth, and he confyrmeth the ſame, that th[e]inhabitantes of theſe regyons tooke their originall of the Caribes or Canibales, as appeared by the deſperate fiercenes and crueltie which they oftentymes ſhewed to owre men when they paſſed by their coaſtes. Suche ſtoutenes and fortitude of mynde is naturallye engendered in theſe naked Barbarians, that they feared not to aſſayle owre hole nauy and to forbyd them to coome a land. They feyght with venemous arrowes as we haue ſayde before. Perceauynge that owre men contempned their threatnynges, they ranne furiouſly into the ſea, euen vppe to the breaſtes, nothynge fearinge eyther the bygnes or multitude of owre ſhyppes, but ceaſed not continually beinge thus in the water, to caſt dartes and ſhute their venemous arrowes as thicke as hayle: In ſo muche that owre men had bynne in great daunger if. they had not byn defended by the cages or pauiſſes of the ſhyppes and their targettes. Yet were two of them wounded whiche died ſhortely after. But this conflycte continued ſo ſharpe, that at the length owre men were enforced to ſhute of their byggeſt pieces of ordinaunce with hayleſhotte: At the ſlaughter and terrible noyſe wherof the barbarians beynge ſore diſcomfited and ſhaken with feare, thynkynge the ſame to be thunder and lyghtnynge, tourned their backes and fledde amayne. They greately feare thunder bycauſe theſe regions are oftentymes vexed with thunder and lyghtnynge by reaſon of the hyghe montaynes and neareneſſe of the ſame to the region of the ayer wherin ſuch fierie tempeſtes are engendered which the philoſophers caule *Meteora*. And all be it that owre men had nowe dryuen their enemyes to flyght, and ſawe them diſparcled and owte of order, yet dowted they and were of dyuers opinions whether they ſhulde purſue them or not On the one partie, ſhame pricked them forwarde, and on the other ſyde feare cauſed them to caſte many perelles, eſpecially conſyderynge the venemous arrowes whiche theſe barbarians canne direct ſo certeynely. To departe from theym with a drye foote (as ſaithe the prouerbe) with ſo great a nauye and ſuche an armye, they reputed it as a thynge greately ſoundynge to their reproche and diſhonour. At the length therfore ſhame ouercommyng feare, they purſued them and came to land with their ſhippe boates. The gouernoure of the nauie, and alſo *Veſputius* doo wryte, that the hauen is no leſſe then three leagues in compaſſe, beinge alſo ſafe withowt rockes, and the water therof ſo clere, that a man may ſee pybble ſtones in the bottome twentie cubettes deape. They ſaye lykewyſe that there fauleth twoo fayre ryuers of freſſhe water into the hauen: but the ſame to bee meeter to beare the canoas of theſe prouinces then anye bygger veſſels. It is a delectable thynge to heare what they tel of the plentie and varietie, and alſo of the pleaſaunt taſt of the fyſſhes aſwel of theſe riuers as of the ſea there about. By reaſon wherof they founde here many fyſſher boates and nettes woonderfully wrought of the ſtalkes of certeyne herbes or weedes dryed and tawed and wrethed with cordes of ſpunne goſſampine cotton. For the people of *Caramairi*, *Gaira*, and *Saturma*, are very cunnynge in fyſſhynge, and vſe to ſell fyſſhe to theyr bortherers for exchaunge of ſuche thynges as they lacke. When owre men had thus chaſed the Barbaryans from the ſea coaſtes, and hadde nowe entered into theyr houſes, they aſſayled them with newe ſkyrmuſhes, eſpecially when they ſawe them faule to ſackynge and ſpoylyng, and theyr wyues and chyldren taken captiue. Theyr houſeholde ſtuffe was made of great reedes which growe on the ſea bankes and the ſtalkes of certeyne herbes beaten and afterward made harde. The floures therof were ſtrewed with herbes of ſundry coloures; And the waules hanged with a kynde of tap[e]ſtry artificially made of goſſampine cotton, and wrought with pictures of Lions, Tygers, and Eagles. The doores of theyr houſes and chambers were full of dyuers kyndes of ſhelles hangynge looſe by ſmaule cordes, that beinge ſhaken by the wynde they myght make a certeyne rattelynge and alſo a whyſtelynge noyſe by gatherynge the wynde in theyr holowe places. For herein they haue greate delyte, and impute this for a goodly ornamente. Dyuers haue ſhewed me many woonderfull thynges of theſe regions: Eſpecially one *Gonzalus Fernandus Ouiedus* beinge one of the maieſtrates appointed in that office which the Spanyardes caule *Veedor*, who hath alſo hetherto entered further into the lande then any other. He affirmeth that he chaunced vppon the fragmente of a ſaphire bygger then the egge of a gooſe. And that in certeyne hylles where he trauayled with thirtie men, he founde many of the precious ſtones cauled Smaragdes, calcidones, and Iaſpers, beſyde great pieces of amber of the montaines. He alſo with dyuers other do affirme that in the houſes of ſume of the Canibales of theſe regions; they founde the lyke precious ſtones ſet in golde and incloſed in the tap[e]ſtry or arras (if it may ſoo bee cauled) wherewith they hange theyr houſes. The ſame lande bryngeth foorth alſo many wooddes of braſile trees and great plentie of golde: In ſo much that in maner in al places they founde on the ſea bankes and on the ſhoores, certeyne marchaſites in token of golde: *Fernandus Ouiedus* declareth furthermore that in a certeyne region cauled *Zenu*, lyinge foure ſcore and tenne myles from *Dariena* Eaſtwarde, they exercyſe a ſtraunge kynde of marchaundies. For in the houſes of the inhabitantes, they founde greate cheſtes and baſkets made of the twigges and leaues of certeyne trees apte for that purpoſe, beinge all full of greſſehoppers, grylles, crabbes, or crefyſſhes: ſnayles alſo, and locuſtes whiche deſtrowe the fieldes of corne, all well dryed and ſalted. Beinge demaunded why they reſerued ſuch a multitude of theſe beaſtes, they anſwered that they kepte them to bee ſoulde to theyr bortherers which dwell further within the lande: And that for the exchange of theſe precious byrdes and ſalted fyſſhes, they receaued of them certeyne ſtrange thynges wherin partely they take pleaſure, and partly vſe them for

The ſtoutnes of the Barbarians.

The Canibales feyght in the water.

The vse of gunnes.

The generacion of thunder and lyghtnynge.

Meteora.

Venemous arrowes

115

Plentie of fysshe.

Cunnynge fysshers.

Theyr householde stuffe.

Tap[e]stry.

A straunge phantasy.

This is he whom Cardanus praiseth.

Precious stones

The Smaragde is the trew emerode

Another kind of amber is founde in whales.

Gold and brasile.

Marchasites are flowers of metals, by the colours wherof, the kyndes of metals are knowen.

These locustes burne the corne with toching and deuoure the residewe they are in India of. iii. foote length.

theyr neceſſary affayers. Theſe people dwel not togyther, but ſcattered here and there. Th[e]inhabitantes of *Caramairi*, ſeeme to dwel in an earthly Paradiſe, theyr region is ſo fayre and frutefull, withowt owtragious heate or ſharpe coulde, with lyttle difference of the length of day and nyght throwghowt all the yeare. After that owre men had thus dryuen the barbarians to flyght, they entered into a valley of two leagues in breadth and three in length, extendynge to certeyne frutful mountaynes ful of graſſe, herbes, and trees, at the rootes wherof, lye twoo other valleys towarde the ryght hande and the left, throwgh eyther of the which runneth a fayre ryuer, whereof the ryuer of *Gaira* is one, but vnto the other they haue yet gyuen noo name. In theſe valleys they founde manye fayre gardeyns and pleaſaunte fyeldes watered with trenſhes diſtrybuted in marueylous order, with no leſſe arte then owre Inſubrians and Hetrurians vſe to water theyr fyeldes. Theyr common meate, is *Ages*, *Iucca*, *Maizium*, *Battata*, with ſuche other rootes and frutes of trees, and alſo ſuche fyſſhe as they vſe in the Ilandes and other regions of theſe prouinces. They eate mans fleſhe but ſeldome, bycauſe they meete not oftentymes with ſtrangiers, except they goo foorth of theyr owne dominions with a mayne armye of purpoſe to hunt for men, when theyr rauenynge appetite pricketh them forwarde. For they abſteyne from them ſelues, and eate none but ſuche as they take in the warres or otherwyſe by chaunce. But ſuerly it is a miſerable thynge to heare howe many myriades of men theſe fylthy and vnnaturall deuourers of mans fleſſhe haue conſumed, and lefte thouſandes of moſte fayre and frutfull Ilandes and regions deſolate withowte menne: By reaſon wherof owre men founde ſo many Ilandes whiche for theyr fayrenes and frutefulneſſe myght ſeeme to bee certeyne earthly Paradyſes, and yet were vtterly voyde of men. Hereby yowre holyneſſe may conſider howe pernitious a kynde of men this is. We haue ſayde before that the Ilande named *Sancti Iohannis* (which th[e]inhabitantes caule *Burichena*) is nexte to *Hiſpaniola*. It is ſayde that onely the Canibales which dwell in the other Ilandes nere about this, as in the Ilande cauled *Hayhay* or *Sancta Crucis*, and in *Guadalupea* (otherwiſe cauled *Queraqueiera*, or *Carucuiera*) haue in owre tyme vyolentely taken owte of the ſayde Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*, more then fyue thouſande men to bee eaten. But let it ſuffice thus much to haue wandered by theſe monſtrous bludſuckers. We wyll nowe therfore ſpeake ſumewhat of the rootes whereof they make theyr breade, foraſmuch as the ſame ſhall hereafter bee foode to Chriſtian men in ſteede of breade made of wheate, and in the ſteade of radyſſhe with ſuch other rootes as they haue byn accuſtomed to eate in Europe. We haue oftentymes ſayde before that *Iucca* is a roote whereof the beſte and moſte delicate breade is made bothe in the firme lande of theſe regions, and alſo in the Ilandes. But howe it is tylled or huſbanded, howe it groweth, and of howe dyuers kyndes it is, I haue not yet declared. Therefore, when they intende to plante this *Iucca*, they make a hole in the earth knee deape, and rayſe a heape of the earth taken owte of the ſame, faſhionynge it lyke a ſquare bedde of nyne foote breadth on euerye ſyde, ſettynge twelue trunkes of theſe rootes (beinge about a foote and a halfe longe a piece) in euery of the ſayd beddes conteynynge three rootes of a ſyde, ſo layde a ſlope, that the endes of them ioyne in maner togyther in the center or myddeſt of the bedde within the grounde. Owt of the ioyntes of the rootes and ſpaces betwene the ſame, ſprynge the toppes and blades of newe rootes, which by lyttle and lyttle encreaſynge, growe to the byggenes and length of a mans arme in the brawne, and oftentymes as bygge as the thygh: So that by the tyme of theyr full rypenes, in maner all the earthe of the heape, is conuerted into rootes. But they ſay that theſe rootes are not rype in leſſe tyme then a yeare and a halfe: And that the longer they are ſuffered to growe euen vntyll twoo yeares complete, they are ſo muche the better and more perfecte to make breade therof. When they are taken foorthe of the earth, they ſcrape them and flyſe them with certeyne ſharpe ſtones ſeruynge for the ſame purpoſe: And thus layinge them betwene two great ſtones, or puttynge them in a ſacke made of the ſtalkes of certeyne towgh herbes and ſmaule reedes, they preſſe them (as we do cheeſe or crabbes to drawe owte the iuſe thereof) and ſo let them drye a daye before they eate them. The iuſe or lyquoure, they caſt away: for (as we haue ſayde) it is deadly poyſon in the Ilandes. Yet is the iuſe of ſuche as growe in the firme lande, holſome it it bee ſodde, as is the whey of owre mylke. They ſaye that there are manye kyndes of this *Iucca*, wherof ſome are more pleaſaunte and delycate then the other, and are therefore reſerued as it were to make fine manchet for the kynges owne tables. But the gentelmen eate of the meaner ſorte, and the common people of the baſeſt. The fyneſt they caule *Cazabbi*, which they make rounde lyke cakes in certeyne preſſes before they ſeeth it or bake it. They ſaye furthermore that there are lykewyſe dyuers kyndes of the rootes of *Ages* and *Battata*. But they vſe theſe rather as frutes and dyſſhes of ſeruice, then to make breade therof, as we vſe rapes, radyſſhes, muſſheroms, nauies, perſeneppes, and ſuch lyke. In this caſe, they mooſte eſpecially eſteeme the beſt kynde of *Battatas*, which in pleaſant taſt and tendernes farre exceadeth owre muſheromes. It ſhal ſuffice to haue ſayde thus muche of rootes. We wyll nowe ſpeake therfore of an other kynde of theyr breade. We declared before that they haue a kynde of grayne or pulſe muche lyke vnto *Panicum*, but with ſumwhat bygger graines, which they beate into meale vppon certeyne greate hollowe ſtones with the labour of their handes when they lacke *Iucca*: And of this is made the more vulgar or common breade. It is ſowen thriſe a yeare, ſo that the frutfulneſſe of the grounde may beare it by reaſon of the equalitie of the tyme, whereof wee haue ſpoken ſuffyciently before. In theſe regyons they founde alſo the graine of *Maizium*,

The fayre region of Caramairi.

Fruteful montaynes.

Gardens.

Insubres are nowe cauled Lumbardes, and hetrusci, Tuscans

116

Many countreys lefte desolate by the fiercenes of the Canibales.

One myriade is ten thousande.

A miserable hearynge.

Breade of rootes.

The maner of plantinge the roote Iucca.

Earth turned into rootes.

How breade is made of rootes.

A straunge thynge.

Cazabbi.

Ages and Battata

Panicum is a grayne sumewhat lyke nto. The Italians caule it Melica.

117

He meanethe the equall length of day and night which is continually vnder the Equinoctial lyne.

Maiziuꝑ

Earth of dyuers colours.

Golde in ryuers.

Hartes and bores.

Foules.

Holsome ayer

Gossampine cotton.

Fethers.

Bowes and arrowes.

Deade bodies reserued

Ouches of laton.

Gonzalus Ouiedus, sayth that they gilt maruelously with the iuse of a certeyne herbe.

Whyte marble.

The great ryuer Maragnonus.

This ioyneth with the myghty ryuer cauled Flumen Amazonum, found of late.

Clokes of fethers.

118

The swyfte course of the water.

xl. leaques in one nyght.

and fundry kyndes of frutes of trees diligentely planted and well huſbanded. The waye betwene the regyons of *Caramairi* and *Saturma*, is fayre, brode, and ryghte foorthe. They founde here alſo fundrye kyndes of waterpottes made of earthe of dyuers colours, in the whiche they bothe fetche and keepe freſhe water. Lykewiſe fundry kindes of iugges, godderdes, drynkyng cuppes, pottes, pannes, dyſſhes, and platters artifycially made. When the gouernour had gyuen commaundement by proclamation, that th[e]inhabitantes ſhulde eyther obey the Chriſtian kynge and embraſe owre relygion, or elles to depart owte of their countrey, they anſwered with venemous arrowes. In this ſkyrmyſhe, owre men tooke ſumme of theym: whereof clothynge the moſte parte in faire apparell, they ſente them ageyne to their owne coompany: But leadyng the reſydue to the ſhyppes to th[e]intent to ſhewe them the poure and magnyfycence of the chriſtians that they myght declare the ſame to their coompanions, therby to wynne their fauour, they appareled them lykewyſe and ſente them after their felowes. Theye affyrme that in all the ryuers of theſe coaſtes, theye ſawe great argumentes and tokens of golde. They founde here and there in their houſes good ſtore of hartes fleſſhe and bores fleſhe wherwith they fedde them ſelues dilycatcly. They alſo, haue greate plentie of ſundry kyndes of byrdes and foules, wherof they brynge vppe many in their houſes, ſumme for neceſſarye foode, and other for daynty dyſſhes as we do hennes and partriches. Owre men hereby coniecture that the ayer of theſe regions is veary holſome, for as muche as ſleapynge all nyghte vnder the fyrmament on the bankes of the ryuers, none of them were at any tyme offended with reumes or heade ache by reaſon of any noyſome humoure or vapoure proceadynge from the earthe, ayer, or water. Owre men furthermore, founde there many great bothomes of goſſampyne cotton ready ſpunne, and fardelles of dyuers kyndes of fethers wherof they make them ſelues creſtes and plumes after the maner of owre men of armes: alſo certeine clokes whiche they eſteeme as moſte cumly ornamentes. They founde lykewyſe an innumerable multitude of bowes and arrowes. Th[e]inhabitantes alſo of theſe regions, in ſumme places vſe to burne the carkeſes of their prynces when theye are deade, and to reſerue their bones buryed with ſpyces in certeyne hylles. In other places, they onely drye theym and imbaume them with ſpyces and ſweete gummes, and ſoo reſerue them in ſepulchers in their owne houſes. Sumwhere alſo, they drye them, ſpyce them, adourne them with precyous iewells and ouches, and ſo reuerently place them in certeyne tabernacles made for the ſame purpoſe in their owne palayces. When owre men had many of their tabellets, braſlettes, collers, and ſuche other ouches (whiche they caule *Guanines*) they founde them rather to bee made of laton then of golde: wherby they ſuppoſe that they haue vſed to exchaunge their ware with ſumme craftie ſtraungers whiche broughte them thoſe counterfect ouches to defraude them of their golde. For euen owre menne perceaued not the deceate vntyll they came to the meltynge. Furthermore, certayne of owre buylders wanderynge a lyttell way from the ſea coaſtes, chaunced to fynde certayne pyeces of white marble. Wherby they thynke that in tyme paſte ſumme ſtraungers haue coome too thoſe landes, whiche haue dygged marble owte of the mountaines, and lefte thoſe fragmentes on the plaine. There owre men learned that the ryuer *Maragnonus* deſcendeth frome the montaynes couered with ſnowe cauled *Montes Niuales* or *Serra Neuata*: And the ſame to bee encreaſed by many other ryuers whiche faule into it throughowte all the lowe and wate[r]lye regions by the whiche it runneth with ſo longe a tracte from the ſayde montaynes into the ſea: And this to bee the cauſe of the greatneſſe therof. Theſe thynges beyng thus brought to paſſe, the gouernour commaunded the trumpitour to blowe a retraite: Whervppon they whiche were ſente to lande (beynge fyue hundreth in noumber) makynge a great ſhoute for ioye of their victory, ſette them ſelues in order of battayle, and ſo keping their array, returned to the ſhippes laden with ſpoyle of thoſe prouinces, and ſhynynge in ſouldiers clokes of fethers, with faire plumes and creſtes of variable colours. In this meane tyme hauynge repaired their ſhyppes and furnyſſhed the ſame with all neceſſaries, they looſed anker the. xvi. daye of the Calendes of Iuly, directynge their courſe to the hauen of *Carthagena*, in the whiche viage they deſtroyed and waſted certayne Ilandes of the Canibales lyinge in the waye, accordynge as they were commaunded by the kynge. But the ſwifte courſe of the water deceaued bothe *Iohannes Serranus* the chiefe Pilot of the gouernours ſhyppe, and all the other, althoughe they made their boſte that they perfectely knewe the nature therof. For they affyrme that in one night they were caried forty leaques beyonde their eſtimation.

THE SYXTE BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.

HEre muſte we ſumwhat digreſſe from coſmography, and make a philoſophicall diſcours to ſearche the ſecreate cauſes of nature. For wheras they al affyrme with one conſent, that the ſea runneth there from the Eaſte to the weſte as ſwyftly as it were a ryuer faulinge from hyghe mountaynes, I thoughte it not good to lette ſo great a matter ſlyppe vntouched. The whiche while I conſyder, I am drawen into no ſmaule ambyguitie and doute, whether thoſe waters haue their courſe whiche flowe with ſo conſynuall a tracte in circuite from the Eaſte, as thowghe they fledde to the weſt neuer to retourne, and yet neyther the weſte therby any whitte the more fylled, nor the Eaſte emptied. If we ſhall ſaye that they faule to their centre (as is the nature of heuye thynges) and aſſigne the Equinoctiall lyne to be the centre (as ſumme affyrme) what centre ſhall we appointe to bee able to receaue ſo great aboundaunce of water? Or what circumference ſhal be founde weate? They whiche haue ſearched thoſe coaſtes, haue yet founde no lykely reaſon to be trewe. Manye thynke that there ſhulde bee certeyne large ſtraightes or enterances in the corner of that greate lande whiche we deſcribed to bee eyght tymes bygger then Italye, and the corner therof to be full of goulfes, wherby they ſuppoſe that ſumme ſtrayghtes ſhulde paſſe through the ſame lyinge on the weſte ſyde of the Ilande of *Cuba*: And that the ſayde ſtraightes ſhuld ſwalowe vp thoſe waters, and ſo conuey the ſame into the weſte and from thenſe ageyn into owre Eaſte Ocean, or north ſeas as ſumme thynke. Other wyll, that the goulfe of that great lande bee cloſed vppe: and the lande to reach farre towarde the northe on the backe ſyde of *Cuba*: ſo that it embrace the northe landes whiche the froſen ſea encompaſeth vnder the northe pole: And that all the lande of thoſe coaſtes, ſhoulde ioyne togyther as one firme lande: Wherby they coniecture that thoſe waters ſhulde bee turned aboute by the obiecte or reſyſtaunce of that lande ſo bendynge towarde the north, as we ſee the waters tourned aboute in the crooked bankes of certeyne ryuers. But this agreeth not in all poyntes. For they alſo whiche haue ſearched the frozen ſea, and ſayled from thenſe into the weſte, do lykewyſe affyrme that thoſe northe ſeas flowe contynually towarde the weſte, although nothing ſo ſwiftely. Theſe northe ſeas haue byn ſearched by one Sebaſtian Cabot a Venetian borne, whom beinge yet but in maner an infante, his parentes caryed with them into Englande hauyng occaſion to reſorte thether for trade of marchandies, as is the maner of the Venetians too leaue no parte of the worlde vnſearched to obteyne richeſſe. He therfore furniſſhed two ſhippes in England at his owne charges: And fyrſt with three hundreth men, directed his courſe ſo farre toward the northe pole, that euen in the mooneth of Iuly he founde monſtrous heapes of Iſe ſwimming on the ſea, and in maner continuall day lyght. Yet ſawe he the lande in that tracte, free from Iſe, whiche had byn molten by heate of the ſunne. Thus ſeyng ſuche heapes of Iſe before hym he was enforced to tourne his ſayles and folowe the weſte, ſo coaſtynge ſtyll by the ſhore, that he was thereby broughte ſo farre into the ſouthe by reaſon of the lande bendynge ſo muche ſouthward that it was there almoſte equall in latitude with the ſea cauled *Fretum Herculeum*, hauynge the north pole eleuate in maner in the ſame degree. He ſayled lykewiſe in this tracte ſo farre towarde the weſte, that he had the Ilande of *Cuba* [on] his lefte hande in maner in the ſame degree of longitude. As he traueyled by the coaſtes of this greate lande (whiche he named *Baccallaos*) he ſayth that he found the like courſe of the waters toward the weſt, but the ſame to runne more ſoftely and gentelly then the ſwifte waters whiche the Spanyardes found in their nauigations ſoutheward.

Sundry opinions why the sea runneth with so swyft course from the East into the west.

Th[e]equinoctiall lyne.

Why all waters moue towarde the southe or Equinoctial, reade *Cardanus de subtilit. liber. ii. de Elementis.*

Strayghtes.

As by the strayght of Magellanus.

The north landes.

The frosen sea.

Sebastian. Cabot.

The Venetians.

The viage of Sebastian Cabot from Englande to the frosen sea.

Frost in the moneth of Iuly.

Fretum Herculeum, diuideth Spayne and the Moores and is nowe cauled the strayghtes of Marrok.

Baccallaos, or Terra Baccallearum.

Wherefore, it is not onely more lyke to bee trewe, but ought alſo of neceſſitie to bee concluded, that betwene both the landes hetherto vnknowen, there ſhulde bee certeyne great open places wherby the waters ſhulde thus continually paſſe from the Eaſt into the weſte: which waters I ſuppoſe to bee dryuen about the globe of the earth by the vnceſſaunt mouynge and impulſion of the heauens: and not to bee ſwalowed vp and caſt owt ageyne by the breathynge of *Demogorgon* as ſume haue imagined bycauſe they ſee the ſeas by increaſe and decreaſe, to flowe and reflowe. Sebaſtian *Cabot* him ſelfe, named thoſe landes *Baccallaos*, bycauſe that in the ſeas therabout he founde ſo great multitudes of certeyne bigge fyſſhes much lyke vnto tunies (which th[e]inhabitantes caule *Baccallaos*) that they ſumtymes ſtayed his ſhippes. He founde alſo the people of thoſe regions couered with beaſtes ſkynnes: Yet not without th[e]uſe of reaſon.

The mouyng of heuen causeth the sea to moue.

Demogorgon is the spirite of the earth.

People couered with beastes skins

He ſaythe alſo that there is greate plentie of beares in thoſe regions, whiche vſe to eate fyſſhe. For plungeinge theym ſelues into the water where they perceue a multitude of theſe fyſſhes to lye, they faſten theyr clawes in theyr ſcales, and ſo drawe them to lande and eate them. So that (as he ſaith) the beares beinge thus ſatiffied with fyſſhe, are not noyſom to men. He declareth further, that in many places of theſe regions, he

How beares take and eate fysshes of the sea.

Perhappes this laton is copper which holdeth gold. For laton hath no myne, and is an artificiall metal and not natural.

ſawe great plentie of laton amonge th[e]inhabitantes. *Cabot* is my very frende, whom I vſe famylierly, and delyte to haue hym ſumtymes keepe mee company in myne owne houſe. For beinge cauled owte of England by the commaundement of the catholyke kynge of Caſtile after the deathe of Henry kynge of Englande the ſeuenth of that name, he was made one of owre counſayle and aſſyſtance as touchynge the affayres of the newe Indies, lookyng dayely for ſhippes to bee furnyſſhed for hym to diſcouer this hyd ſecreate of nature. This vyage is appoynted to bee begunne in March in the yeare next folowynge, beinge the yeare of Chryſt M.D.XVI. What ſhall ſucceade, yowre holynes ſhalbe aduertiſed by my letters if god graunte me lyfe. Sume of the Spanyardes denye that Cabot was the fyrſt fynder of the lande of *Baccallaos*: And affirme that he went not ſo farre weſtewarde. But it ſhall ſuffice to haue ſayde thus much of the goulfes and ſtrayghtes, and of Sebaſtian Cabot. Let vs nowe therefore returne to the Spanyardes. At this tyme, they let paſſe the hauen of *Carthago* vntouched, with all the Ilandes of the Canibales there aboute, whiche they named *Inſulas Sancti Bernardi*: Leauynge alſo behynde theyr backes, all the region of *Caramairi*. Heare by reaſon of a ſooden tempeſte, they were caſte vppon the Ilande *Fortis*, beinge about fyftie leagues diſtante from the enteraunce of the goulfe of *Vraba*. In this Ilande, they founde in the houſes of th[e]inhabitantes, many baſkets made of certeyne greate ſea reedes, ful of ſalte. For this Ilande hath in it many goodly ſalte bayes: by reaſon whereof they haue greate plentie of ſalte which they ſell to other nations for ſuch thynges as they ſtande in neede of. Not farre from henſe, a great curlewe as bygge as a ſtorke came flying to the gouernours ſhippe, and ſuffered her ſelfe to bee eaſely taken: which beinge caryed about amonge all the ſhippes of the nauie, dyed ſhortly after. They ſawe alſo a great multytude of the ſame kynde of foules on the ſhore a farre of.

The Ilandes of the Canybales.

The Ilande Fortis.

Salte

A straunge thynge.

The gouernour his ſhyppe whiche we ſayde to haue loſte the rudder beinge nowe ſore brooſed and in maner vnprofytable, they lefte behynde to folowe at leaſure. The nauie arriued at *Dariena* the twelfth day of the Calendes of Iuly, and the gouernour his ſhippe (beinge voyde of men) was dryuen a lande in the ſame coaſtes within foure dayes after. The Spanyardes whiche nowe inhabited *Dariena*, with theyr Capitayne and Lieuetenant *Vaſchus Nunnez Balboa* (of whom we haue largely made mention before) beinge certified of th[e]arryual of *Petrus Arias* and his coompanye, wente foorthe three myles to meete him, and receaued him honorably and religiouſly with the pſalme *Te deum Laudamus*, giuing thankes to god by whoſe ſafe conducte they were brought ſo proſperouſly thether to al theyr confortes. They receaued them gladly into theyr houſes builded after the maner of thoſe prouinces. I may well caule theſe regions, Prouinces, a *Procul victis*, (that is) ſuch as are ouercome farre of, foraſmuch as owre men doo nowe inhabite the ſame all the barbarous kynges and Idolatours beinge eiected. They enterteyned them with ſuch chere as they were able to make them: as with the frutes of thoſe regions, and newe breade bothe made of rootes and the grayne *Maizium*. Other delicates to make vp the feaſt, were of theyr owne ſtore whiche they brought with theym in theyr ſhyppes, as poudered fleſſhe, ſalted fyſſhe, and breade made of wheate. For they brought with them many barrelles of wheate meale for the ſame purpoſe. Here maye yowre holynes not withowt iuſte cauſe of admiracion beholde a kynges nauie and great multitude of Chriſtians, inhabytinge not onely the regions ſituate vnder the circle of heauen cauled *Tropicus Cancri*, but alſo in maner vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, contrary to th[e]opinion of the owlde wryters, a fewe excepted. But after that they are nowe mette togyther, let vs further declare what they determyned to doo. Therefore, the daye after that the nauie arriued, there aſſembled a coompany of the Spanyardes th[e]inhabitoures of *Dariena*, to the number of foure hundreth and fyftie men. *Petrus Arias* the gouernour of the nauie and his coompany, conferred with them bothe priuilie and openlye of certeyne articles wherof it was the kynges pleaſure he ſhulde enquire: And moſt eſpecially as concernyng ſuch thynges wherof *Vaſchus* the fyrſte fynder and Admirall of the Southe ſea, made mention in his large letter ſent from *Dariena* to Spayn. In this inquiſition they founde all thynges to bee trewe, wherof *Vaſchus* had certifyed the kynge by his letters: And therevppon concluded that in the dominions of *Comogra*, *Pocchorroſa*, and *Tumanama*, at th[e]aſſignement of *Vaſchus*, certeine fortreſſes ſhuld bee erected foorthwith to th[e]intente there to plant theyr colonie or habitacion. To the better accomplyſſhemente hereof, they ſent immediatly one *Iohannes Aiora* a noble younge gentelman of *Corduba* and vnder Lieuetenant, with foure hundreth men and foure carauelles and one other lyttle ſhippe. Thus departinge, he ſayled fyrſt directly to the hauen of *Comogrus*, dyſtant from *Dariena* aboute twentie and fyue leagues, as they wryte in theyr laſt letters. Frome henſe, he is appoynted to ſende a hundreth and fyftie of his foure hundreth, towarde the South by a newe and ryghter way founde of late, by the which (as they ſay) it is not paſte. xxvi. leagues from the palaice of kynge *Comogrus* to the enteraunce of the goulfe of *Sancti Michaelis*. The reſidewe of the foure hundreth, ſhall remayne there to bee an ayde and ſuccour to all ſuch as ſhall iorney to and fro. Thoſe hundreth and fiftie which are aſſigned to go ſouthwarde, take with them for interpretours certeine of owre men which had lerned the ſootherne language of the bonde men which were gyuen to *Vaſchus* when he ouerranne thoſe regions, and alſo certeyne of the bondemen them ſelues which had nowe lerned the Spanyſſhe tonge. They ſay that the hauen of *Pocchorroſa*, is onely ſeuen leaques diſtante frome the hauen of *Comogrus*. In *Pocchorroſa*, he is aſſigned to leaue fyftie men with the lyghteſt ſhyp which maye bee a

How Petrus Arias with the kynges nauy arriued at Dariena.

Howe Vaschus receaued the new gouernour.

Whye these regions are cauled prouynces.

120

Barrelles of meale.

Habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall lyne.

Where the newe gouernour planted his habitation

The viage of Iohannes Aiora

The hauen of Comogrus

Sainte Mychaels goulfe

The hauen [of] Pocchorrosa.

paſſinger betwene them: that lyke as we vſe poſte horſes by lande, ſo may they by this currant ſhippe, in ſhorte ſpace certifie the Lieuetenaunt and th[e]inhabitours of *Dariena* of ſuche thynges as ſhall chaunce. They entende alſo to buylde houſes in the region of *Tumanama*. The palaice of kynge *Tumanama*, is diſtant from *Pocchorroſa* about twentie leaques. Of theſe foure hundreth men, beinge of the owlde ſouldiers of *Dariena* and men of good experience, fyftie weare appoynted to bee as it were Decurians to guide and conducte the newe men from place to place to do their affaires. When they had thus ſette all thynges in order, they thought it good to aduertiſe the king hereof, and therwith to certifye hym that in thoſe prouinces there is a kynge named *Dabaiba* whoſe dominion is very riche in golde: But the fame to be yet vntouched by reaſon of his great power. His kingedome ioyneth to the ſeconde greate ryuer named *Dabaiba* after his name, whiche fauleth into the ſea owt of the corner of the goulfe of *Vraba* as we haue largely declared before. The common reporte is, that all the lande of his dominions is ryche in golde. The palayce of kynge *Dabaiba* is fyfty leaques diſtante from *Dariena*. Th[e]inhabitantes ſaye that from the palaice, the golde mynes reache to the borthers on euery ſyde. Albeit, owre men haue alſo golde mynes not to bee contempned, euen within three leaques of *Dariena*, in the which they gather golde in many places at this preſente: Yet doo theye affyrme greater plentie to bee in the mynes of *Dabaiba*. In the bookes of owre fyrſte frutes wrytten to yowre holyneſſe, we made mention of this *Dabaiba*, wherin owre men were deceaued and myſtooke the matter. For where they founde the fyſſher men of kyng *Dabaiba* in the maryſſhes, they thought his region had byn there alſo. They determyned therfore to ſende to kynge *Dabaiba*, three hundreth choyſe younge men to be choſen owte of the hole army as moſte apte to the warres, and well furnyſſhed with all kyndes of armoure and artillery, to th[e]intent to go vnto hym and wyl hym, eyther frendly and peaceably to permytte them to inhabyte parte of his kingdome with the fruition of the golde mynes, or elles to bydde him battayle and dryue hym owte of his countrey. In their letters, they often tymes repete this for an argument of great rycheſſe to coome, that they in maner dygged the grounde in noo place, but founde the earthe myxte with ſparkes and ſmaule graynes of golde. They haue alſo aduertiſed the kynge that it ſhalbe commodious to place inhabitours in the hauen of *Sancta Martha* in the region of *Saturma*, that it maye bee a place of refuge for them that ſayle from the Ilande of *Dominica* from the whiche (as they ſaye) it is but foure or fyue dayes ſaylyng to that hauen of the regyon of *Saturma*: And from the hauen, but thre dayes ſaylyng to *Dariena*. But this is to bee vnderſtode in goynge and not in returnynge. For the returnyng from thenſe is ſo laborious and difficulte by reaſon of the contrary courſe of the water, that they ſeeme as it were to aſcende hyghe montaynes and ſtryue ageynſte the poure of *Neptunus*. This ſwyfte courſe of the ſea towarde the Weſte, is not ſo violente to theym whiche retourne to Spayne frome the Ilandes of *Hiſpaniola* and *Cuba*: Althoughe they alſo do laboure ageynſte the faule of the Ocean: The cauſe wherof is, that the ſea is here verye large, ſo the waters haue their full ſcoope. But in the tracte of *Paria*, the waters are conſtrayned together by the bendynge ſydes of that great lande, and by the multytude of Ilandes lyinge ageynſte it, as the lyke is ſeene in the ſtraightes or narowe ſeas of Sicilie where the violent courſe of the waters cauſe the daungerous places of *Scylla* and *Charybdis*, by reaſon of thoſe narowe ſeas whiche conteine *Ionium*, *Libicum*, and *Tirrhenum*. *Colonus* the fyrſt fynder of theſe regyons, hath lefte in wrytynge, that ſaylynge from the Ilande of *Guanaſſa*, and the prouynces of *Iaia*, *Maia*, and *Cerabaro*, beyng regyons of the weſt marches of *Beragua*, he founde the courſe of the water ſo vehemente and furious ageynſte the fore parte of his ſhippe whyle he ſailed from thoſe coaſtes towarde the Eaſte, that he coulde at no tyme touche the grounde with his ſoundynge plummet, but that the contrary vyolence of the water woolde beare it vppe from the bottome. He affyrmeth alſo, that he coulde neuer in one hole daye with a meately good wynde, wynne one myle of the courſe of the water. And this is the cauſe why they are oftentymes enforced to ſayle fyrſte by the Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Hiſpaniola*, and ſo into the mayne ſea toward the North when they returne to Spaine, that the Northe wyndes maye further their vyage whiche they can not brynge to paſſe by a directe courſe. But of the motions of the Ocean ſea to and fro, this ſhal ſuffyce. Let vs now therfore reherſe what they write of *Dariena*, and of their habitation there, which they caule *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, planted on the ſea bankes of *Dariena*. The ſituation of the place, hath no natural munition or defenſe: And the ayer is more peſtiferous then in *Sardus*. The Spanyſhe inhabitours, are all pale and yelowe, lyke vnto them that haue the yelowe giaundyes. Whiche neuertheleſſe commeth not of the nature of the region as it is ſituate vnder the heauen. For in many regyons beyng vnder the ſelfe ſame degree of latitude, hauyng the pole of the ſame eleuation, they fynd holſome and temperate ayer, in ſuch places where as the earth bryngeth forth fayre ſprynges of water, or where holſome ryuers runne by bankes of pure earthe without mudde: but moſte eſpecyally where they inhabyte the ſydes of the hylles and not the valleyes. But that habytation whiche is on the bankes of the ryuer of *Dariena*, is ſytuate in a deepe valley, and enuironed on euery ſyde with hyghe hylles: By reaſon wherof, it receaueth the ſoonne beames at noonetyde directly perpenticular ouer their heades, and are therfore ſore vexed by reflection of the beames bothe before, behynde, and from the ſydes. For it is the reflection of the ſoonne beames whiche cauſeth feruente heate, and not their acceſſe or nereneſſe to the earth. Foraſmuche as

A passynger shyppe.

Kyng Tumanama.

Decurians are officers deuided into tennes. etc.

The gold mynes Kyng Dabaiba.

The pallaice of kynge Dabaiba.

The gold mynes of Dariena.

An erroure.

Expedition ageinst kynge Dabaiba.

121

Great plentie of golde.

The regyon of Saturma
The Ilande of Dominica.
Dariena.

Difficulte sayling ageynst the course of the sea.

The daungerous straightes of Scylla and Charybdis.
Guanassa.
Iaia.
Maia.
Cerabaro.
Beragua.
The vehement course of the sea from the east to the west.

The northe wynde.

Sancta Maria Antiqua, the fyrst habitation of the spaniardes in the fyrme lánde.
Sardus the Ilande of Sardinia.
The variety of regions lyinge vnder one paralel.

By what meanes the sonne beames are cause of feruent heate.

they are not paſſyble in them ſelues as dothe manyfeſtly appeare by the ſnowe lyinge contynually vnmolten vpon certeyne hygh montaynes, as yowre holyneſſe knoweth ryghte well. The ſoonne beames therfore faulyng on the montaynes, are reflected downewarde into the valley by reaſon of th[e]obiecte of the declynynge ſydes of the hylles, as it were the faule of a greate rounde ſtoone rowlde frome the toppe of a montayne. The valley therfore receaueth, both thoſe beames whiche faule directly theron, and alſo thoſe whiche are reflected downwarde from euery ſyde of the montaynes. Their habitation therfore in *Dariena*, is pernicious and vnholſome onely of the particular nature of the place, and not by the ſytuation of the regyon as it is placed vnder the heauen or nere to the ſoonne. The place is alſo contagious by the nature of the ſoyle, by reaſon it is coompaſed aboute with muddy and ſtynkynge maryſſhes, th[e]infection wherof is not a lyttle encreaſed by the heate. The vyllage it ſelfe, is in a maryſhe, and in maner a ſtandynge puddle, where, of the droppes faulyng from the handes of the bond men whyle they water the pauementes of their houſes, toades are engendered immediately, as I my ſelfe ſawe in an other place the droppes of that water turne into flees in the ſoomer ſeaſon. Furthermore, where ſo euer they dygge the grounde the deapthe of a handefull and a halfe, there ſpringeth owte vnholſome and corrupte water of the nature of the ryuer which runneth through the deepe and muddy chanel of the valley, and ſo fauleth into the ſea. Now therfore they conſulte of remouyng their habytation. Neceſſytie cauſed them fyrſt to faſten their foote heare, bycauſe that they whiche fyrſt arryued in thoſe landes, were oppreſſed with ſuche vrgente hunger, that they had no reſpecte to chaunge the place althoughe they were thus vexed by the contagion of the ſoyle and heate of the ſoonne, beſyde the corrupte water and infectious ayer by reaſon of venemous vapours and exhalations ryſynge from the ſame. An other greate incommoditie was, that the place was deſtitute of a commodious hauen, beynge three leaques diſtante from the mouthe of the goulfe. The waye is alſo roughe and diffyculte to brynge vyttayles and other neceſſaries from the ſea. But lette vs nowe ſpeake ſumwhat of other particular thynges whiche chaunſed. Therfore ſhortly after that they weare arryued, there happened many thynges wherof they had no knowledge before. A certayne well learned phiſytion of Ciuile, whome partely th[e]autorytie of the byſſhoppe of *Dariena*, and partely the deſyre of golde had allured to thoſe landes, was ſo ſcarred with lyghtnynge in the nyghte ſeaſon lyinge in bedde with his wyfe, that the houſe and all the ſtuffe therin beynge ſette on fyer and burnte, he and his wyfe bothe ſoore ſcorched, ranne foorthe cryinge and almoſte naked, hardely eſcapynge the daunger of deathe. At an other tyme, as certayne of them ſtoode on the ſhoore, a great Crocodyle ſodenly caryed awaye a maſty of a yeare and a halfe owlde, as a kyte ſhulde haue ſnatched vppe a chicken: And this euen in the preſence of theym all, where the myſerable dogge cryed in vayne for the helpe of his mayſter. In the nighte ſeaſon they were tormented with the bytynge of battes whiche are there ſoo noyſome that if they byte any man in his ſleape, they putte hym in daunger of lyfe, onely with drawynge of bludde: In ſo muche that ſumme haue dyed therof, faulynge as it were into a conſumption through the malyciouſneſſe of the venemous wounde. If theſe battes chaunce to fynde a cocke or a henne abrode in the nyght ſeaſon, they byte them by the combes and ſo kyll them. They alſo whiche wente laſte into theſe regions, do wryte, that the lande is troubeled with Crocodyles, Lyons, and Tigers: But that they haue nowe deuiſed artes and ingens howe to take them. Lykewyſe that in the houſes of their felowes, they founde the hydes and caſes of ſuche Lyons and Tygers as they had kylled. They wryte furthermore, that by reaſon of the rankeneſſe and frutefulneſſe of the grounde, kyne, ſwyne, and horſes, doo marueloufly increaſe in theſe regions, and growe to a muche bygger quantitie then they whiche weare of the firſt broode. Of the excedynge hyghneſſe of the trees with their fruites, of the garden herbes, fruites, plantes, and ſeedes whiche owre men broughte from Spayne and ſowed and ſet the ſame in theſe regyons, lykewyſe of the hertes and other foure footed beaſtes bothe tame and wylde, alſo of dyuers kyndes of foules, byrdes, and fyſſhes, they write euen as we haue declared in the decades before. *Careta* the kynge of the regyon of *Cioba*, was with them for the ſpace of three dayes: whome when they had frendly enterteyned and ſhewed hym the ſecreate places of their ſhyppes, their horſes alſo with their trappars, bardes, and other furnimentes, beſyde many other thinges whiche ſeemed ſtraunge to hym, and had further delited his mynd with the harmony of their muſycall inſtrumentes, and gyuen hym many rewardes, they dyſmyſſed hym halfe amaſed with to muche admyration. He ſygnifyed vnto them, that their trees in that prouynce, of the planckes wherof, if ſhyppes were made, they ſhoulde bee ſafe from the woormes of the ſea whiche they caule *Bromas*. Howe theſe woormes knawe and corrode the ſhyppes, wee haue declared before. Owre ſhyppes are greatly troubeled with this plage if they lye longe in the hauens of theſe regyons. But they affyrme that the woodde of this tree is ſoo bytter, that the woormes wyll not taſte therof. There is alſo an other tree peculyar to theſe landes: whoſe leaues if they onely touche the bare in any place of a mannes body, they cauſe greate blyſters, and thoſe ſoo malycious that excepte the ſame bee foorthwith healed with ſalte water or faſtynge ſpyttle, they doo incontynently engender deadely paynes. They ſaye lykewyſe, that the ſauour of the woodde is preſente poyſon: And that it can noo whither bee caryed without daunger of lyfe. When th[e]inhabitauntes of the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola* had oftentymes attempted to ſhake of the yoke of ſeruytude, and coulde neuer brynge the ſame to paſſe neyther by open warre nor yet by priuye conſpiraces,

The pernicious ayer of Dariena.

122

Toades and flees engendered of droppes of water.

Necessytie hath no lawe

A house sette on fyer with lyghtnynge.

A dogge deuoured of a crocodyle, *Tanquam canis e Nilo.*

The byting of battes.

Lyons and tygers.

Beastes wex bygger in their kynde.

How the gouernour enterteyned kyng Careta.

Note.

Broma or Bissa, are wormes whiche destroy shippes.

123

A venemous tree.

Perhappes theyr venemous arrows are made of this woodde or. &c.

they were determyned in the nyghte ſeaſon to haue kylled owre men in their ſleepe with the ſmoke of this woodde. But when the Chriſtian men had knowledge hereof, they compelled the poore wretches to confeſſe their intente, and punyſſhed the chiefe autours of the deuyſe. They haue alſo a certayne herbe with the ſauour wherof they are preſerued from the hurte of this venemous woodde ſo that they maye beare it ſafely. Of theſe ſmaule thynges it ſhall ſuffyce too haue ſayde thus muche. They looke dayly for many greater thynges to certyfye vs of from the Ilandes of the ſouth ſea. For at ſuche tyme as the meſſenger whiche broughte owre letters departed from thenſe, *Petrus Arias* prepared an expedition to that ryche Ilande whiche lyeth in the mouthe of the goulfe cauled *Sinus S. Michaelis*, and reacheth into the ſouthe ſea, beyng alſo lefte vntouched of *Vaſchus* by reaſon that the ſea was at that tyme of the yeare ſore troubeled with tempeſtes, as wee haue further declared in *Vaſchus* his vyage to the ſouthe. Wee looke therfore dayly for greater thynges then are hetherto paſte. For they haue nowe taken in hand to ſubdue manye other prouynces, whiche wee ſuppoſe too bee eyther verye ryche, or to brynge furthe ſumme ſtraunge woorkes of nature. *Iohannes Diaz Soliſtus* of *Nebriſſa* (of whome we haue made mention before) is ſente by the froonte of the cape or poynte of *Sancti Auguſtini* (whiche reacheth ſeuen degrees beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne, and perteyneth to the dominion of the Portugales) to th[e]intent to ouer runne the ſouthe ſyde from the backe halfe of *Paria*, *Cumana*, *Cuquibacoa*, with the hauens of *Carthago* and *Sancta Martha*, of *Dariena* alſo and *Beragua*, that more perfecte and certeyne knowledge may bee had of thoſe tractes. Furthermore, one *Iohannes Poncius* was ſente foorthe with three ſhyppes to deſtroye the Canibales bothe in the lande and Ilandes there aboute: aſwell that the nations of the more humane and innocente people maye at the length lyue without feare of that peſtiferous generation, as alſo the better and more ſafely to ſearche the ſecreates and rycheſſe of thoſe regions. Many other lykewiſe were ſente dyuers and ſundry wayes: as *Gaſper Badaiocius* too ſearche Weſt partes: *Franciſcus Bezerra*, to ſayle by the corner of the goulfe: And *Valleius*, to paſſe by the mouthe or enteraunce therof to the Eaſte coaſtes of the goulfe to ſearche the ſecreates of that lande, in the whiche *Fogeda* with his coompanye had of late begunne to plante their habitation, and had buylded a fortreſſe and a vyllage. *Badaiocius* departed fyrſte frome *Dariena* with foure ſcore ſouldiours well appoynted: Whome *Lodouicus Mercado* folowed with fyftye:

To *Bezerra* were alſo foureſcore aſſygned, and three ſcore and tenne to *Valleius*. Whether they ſhall arryue at ſafe and commodious hauens, or faule into vnfortunate ſtations, he onely knoweth whoſe prouydence ruleth all: For as for vs men wee are included within the knowledge of thinges after they haue chaunced. Lette vs nowe therfore coome to other matters.

A preseruatiue ageynst poyson.

The Ilands of the south sea.

The ryche Iland cauled Dites.

Cap[e], sancti Augustini.

Of the euyll successe of these viages, reade decade iii. Liber. ix.

An expedition to destroy the Canibales.

Fogeda.

Looke. decad. iii. Lib. ix.

¶ THE SEVENTHE BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.

Petrus Arias the gouernour of the ſuppoſed continente, was ſcarſly entred into the mayne ſea with his nauye onwarde on his vyage to *Dariena*. But I was aduertiſed that one *Andreas Moralis* a pilot who had oftentymes ouer runne the coaſtes of theſe new ſeas and the Ilandes of the ſame, was coome to the courte to ſell ſuche marchaundies as he broughte with hym frome thenſe. This man had dyligently ſearched the tracte of the ſuppoſed continente, and eſpecyally th[e]inner regyons of the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*, wherunto he was appoynted by his brother *Nicolaus Ouandus* (the gouernour of the Iland and chiefe Commendatory of the order of the knyghtes of *Alcantara*) bycauſe he was a wytty man and more apte to ſearche ſuche thynges then any other: So that with his owne handes he drewe faire cardes and tables of ſuche regyons as hee diſcouered. Wherin as he hath bynne founde faythfull of ſuche as haue ſenſe had better tryall hereof, ſo is he in moſt credyt emongeſt the beſt ſorte. He therfore reſorted to me as all they are accuſtomed to doo, whiche retourne from the Ocean. What I learned of hym and dyuers other of thinges heretofore vnknowen, I wyll nowe declare. The beginnynge of this narration, ſhalbe the particular deſcription of the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*, foraſmuche as it is the heade and as it weare the principall marte of all the lyberality of the Ocean, and hath a thouſande and againe a thouſande fayre, pleaſaunt, bewtifull, and ryche *Nereides* whiche lye aboute it on euery ſyde, adournynge this their ladye and moother, as it were an other *Tethis* the wyfe of *Neptunus*, enuyronynge her aboute, and attendynge vppon her as their queene and patroneſſe. But of theſe *Nereiades* (that is to ſaye, the Ilandes placed aboute her) we wyll ſpeake more hereafter. Lette vs in the meane tyme declare ſumwhat of the Ilande whiche owre men named *Margaritea Diues* (whiche the Spanyardes caule *De las perlas*) beyng nowe well knowen, and lyinge in the ſouthe ſea in the goulfe cauled *Sinus Sancti Michaelis* (that is) ſainte Michaels goulfe. This Iland hath preſently brought to owre knowledge many ſtraunge and woonderfull thynges and promyſſeth no ſmaule

The nauigations of Andreas Moralis.

124

A particular description of the Ilande of hispaniola

Nereides are nymphes of the sea, he meaneth Ilandes.

Tethis the wyfe of Neptunus and goddesse of the sea.

The Ilande of Margaritea Diues.

Saincte Michaels goulfe

Great perles

hope of greater thynges in tyme to coome. In this is founde great plentie of pearles ſo fayre and great, that the ſumptuous queene *Cleopatra* myght haue ſeemed to weare them in her crownes, cheynes, and braſlettes. Of the ſhelfyſſhes wherin theſe are engendered, wee wyll ſpeake ſumwhat more in th[e]ende of this narration. But let vs nowe returne to *Hiſpaniola* moſte lyke vnto the earthly paradyſe. In the deſcription hereof, we wyll begynne of the impoſytion of dyuerſe names: Then of the forme of the Ilande, temperate ayer and benefyciall heauen: And fynally of the deuiſyon of the regyons. Therfore for the ryghter pronunſyation of the names, yowre holyneſſe muſte vnderſtande that they are pronounced with th[e]accent, as yowe may know by the verge ſette ouer the heddes of the vowels, as in the name of the Ilande *Matininò*, where the accente is in the laſt vowell, and the lyke to be vnderſtoode in all other names. They ſaye therfore, that the fyrſte inhabitours of the Iland were tranſported in their *Canoas* (that is boates made of one hole pyece of woodde) from the Ilande of *Matinino*, beynge lyke banyſſhed men dryuen from thenſe by reaſon of certaine contrary factions and diuiſyons emonge them ſelues, lyke as wee reade howe *Dardanus* came from *Corytho*, and *Teucrus* from *Creta* into Aſia, and that the regyon where they placed their habitacion, was afterwarde cauled *Troianum*. The lyke wee reade howe the Tirians and Sidonians arryued with their nauye in *Lybia* by the fabulous conduction of *Dido*. Theſe Matininans in like maner beynge banyſſhed from their owne countrey, planted their fyrſte habytation in that parte of the Iland of *Hiſpaniola* whiche they caule *Cahonao*, vpon the banke of the ryuer named *Bahaboni*: As is redde in the begynnynge of the Romaynes that *Eneas* of Troye aryued in the region of Italy cauled *Latium* vppon the bankes of the ryuer of Tiber. Within the mouthe of the ryuer of *Bahaboni*, lyeth an Ilande where it is ſayde that th[e]inhabitauntes buylded their fyrſte howſe whiche they named *Camoteia*. This howſe they conſecrated ſhortely after, and honoured the ſame reuerently with continual gyftes and monumentes, euen vntyl the commynge of owre men, lyke as the Chriſtians haue euer relygyouſly honoured Ieruſalem the fountayne and oryginall of owre faythe: As alſo the Turkes attribute the lyke to the cytie of *Mecha* in Araby, and th[e]inhabytantes of the fortunate Ilandes (cauled the Ilandes of Canarye) to *Tyrma* buylded vppon a hyghe rocke from the whiche many were wounte with ioyfull myndes and ſonges to caſt them ſelues downe headlonge, beyng perſuaded by their prieſtes that the ſoules of all ſuche as ſo dyd for the loue of *Tyrma*, ſhulde therby enioye eternall felycity. The conquerours of the Ilandes of Canarie, founde them yet remaynyng in that ſuperſtition, euen vntyll owre tyme: Nor yet is the memory of their ſacrifyces vtterly worne awaye: The rocke alſo reſerueth the owlde name vnto this daye. I haue alſo learned of late, that there yet remayneth in the Ilande ſumme of the faction of *Betanchor* the Frenſhe man and fyrſte that broughte the Ilandes to good culture and ciuilitie beyng therto lycenced by the kynge of Caſtile as I haue ſayde before. Theſe doo yet (for the moſte parte) obſerue bothe the language and maners of the Frenſhemen, although the heres and ſucceſſours of *Betanchor*, had ſoulde the two ſubdued Ilandes to certeyne men of Caſtile. Yet th[e]inhabitours whiche ſucceded *Betanchor*, and buylded them houſes and encreaſed their families there, do contynue to this daye: And lyue quietly and pleaſauntly with the Spanyardes, not greued with the ſharpe coulde of Fraunce. But lette vs nowe returne to th[e]inhabitauntes of *Matinino* and *Hiſpaniola*. The Ilande of *Hiſpaniola* was fyrſte named by the fyrſte inhabitours, *Quizqueia*, and then *Haiti*. And this not by chaunce, or at the pleaſure of ſuche as diuiſed theſe names, but of credulitie and beleſe of ſumme great effecte. For *Quizqueia*, is as muche to ſaye as a great thinge: And that ſo great that none maye bee greater. They interprete alſo, that *Quizqueia* ſygnifyeth, large, vniuerſall, or al, in like ſignification as the Greekes named their god cauled *Pan*: Bycauſe that for the greatnes therof, theſe ſymple ſoules ſuppoſed it to bee the hole worlde: And that the ſoonne beames gaue lyghte to none other worlde but onely to this Ilande with the other adiacente aboute the ſame: And thervppon thoughte it moſt woorthy to bee cauled great, as the greateſt of all other knowen to them. *Haiti* is as muche to ſaye by interpretation, as roughe, ſharpe, or craggie. But by a fyguratiue ſpeache cauled denomination (wherby the hole is named by part) they named the hole Iland *Haiti* (that is) roughe: For as muche as in many places the face of this Iland is rough by reaſon of the craggie montaynes, horrible thicke wooddes, and terrible darke and diepe valleys enuyroned with great and highe montaynes, althoughe it bee in manye other places exceadynge bewtifull and floryſſhynge. Here muſte wee ſumwhat digreſſe from th[e]order we are entered into. Perhappes your holyneſſe wyll maruell by what meanes theſe ſymple men ſhoulde of ſoo longe contynuance beare in minde ſuche principles, where as they haue no knowledge of letters. So it is therfore, that from the beginninge, their princes haue euer byn accuſtomed to committe their children to the gouernaunce of their wiſe men whiche they caule *Boitios*, to bee inſtructed in knowledge, and to beare in memorie ſuche thynges as they lerne. They gyue them ſelues chiefly to two thynges: As generally to lerne th[e]originall and ſucceſſe of thynges: And particularlye to reherſe the noble factes of their graundefathers great graundefathers and aunceſtours aſwell in peace as in warre. Theſe two thynges they haue of owlde tyme compoſed in certeyne meters and ballettes in their language. Theſe rhymes or ballettes, they caule *Areitos*. And as owre mynſtrelles are accuſtomed too ſynge to the harpe or lute, ſo doo they in lyke maner ſynge theſe ſonges and daunce to the ſame, playinge on tymbrelles made of ſhels of certen

Hispaniola lyke vnto the earthly paradyse.

The fyrst inhabitours of hispaniola

Dardanus.
Teucrus.
Troianum.
Tirians, Sidonians.

Eneas.
Latium.

Hierusalem
Mecha.
The Ilandes of Canarie.

Betanchor, a frenchman.

125

The fyrst names of hispaniola.

Pan.

The roughnesse of hispaniola.

The maner of lernynge.

Ballets and rhymes.

ſyſſhes. Theſe tymbrels they caule *Maguei.* They haue alſo ſonges and ballettes of loue: And other of lamentations and moornyng: Summe alſo to encorage them to the warres, with euery of them their tewnes agreable to the matter. They exercyſe theym ſelues muche in daunceinge, wherin they are verye actyue and of greater agilitie then owre men, by reaſon they gyue them ſelues to nothyng ſo muche, and are not hyndered with apparell whiche is alſo the cauſe of their ſwifteneſſe of foote. In their ballettes lefte them of their aunceſtours, they haue prophecies of the comminge of owre men into their countrey. Theſe they ſynge with moornyng and as it were with gronyng, bewayle the loſſe of their lybertie and ſeruitude. For theſe prophecies make mention that there ſhoulde coome into the Ilande *Maguacochios*, that is, men clothed in apparell, and armed with ſuche ſwoordes as ſhulde cutte a man in ſunder at one ſtroke: vnder whoſe yoke their poſteritie ſhulde bee ſubdued. And here I do not maruell that their prediceſſours coulde prophecye of the ſeruitude and bondage of their ſucceſſyon, if it bee trewe that is ſayd of the familiaritie they haue with ſpirites whiche appeare to them in the night, wherof we haue largely made mention in the nynth booke of the firſt decade, where alſo wee haue entreated of their Zemes (that is) their Idoles and Images of diuelles whiche they honoured. But they ſaye that ſence theſe Zemes were taken awaye by the Chriſtians, the ſpirites haue no more appeared. Owre men aſcribe this to the ſygne of the croſſe wherwith they defende theym ſelues from ſuche ſpirites. For they are nowe all clenſed and ſanctifyed by the water of bapti[ſ]me wherby they haue renounced the deuel and are conſecrated the holy members of Chriſt. They are vniuerſally ſtudyous to knowe the boundes and lymettes of their regions and kingdomes: And eſpecially their *Mitaini* (that is) noble men. So that euen they are not vtterlye ignorante in the ſurueyinge of their landes. The common people haue none other care then of ſettynge, ſowynge, and plantynge. They are mooſte experte ſyſſhers, by reaſon that throughowte the hole yeare, they are accuſtomed dayiye to plounge them ſelues in the ryuers, ſo that in maner they lyue no leſſe in the water then on the lande. They are alſo giuen to huntynge. For (as I haue ſayde before) they haue twoo kyndes of foure footed beaſtes, wherof the one is lyttle cunnes cauled *Vtias*, and the other Serpentes named *Iuannas*, muche lyke vnto Crocodiles, of eyght foote length, of moſte pleaſaunte taſte, and lyuynge on the lande. All the Ilandes nooryſhe innumerable byrdes and foules: As ſtocke doues, duckes, geeſe, hearons, byſyde no leſſe number of popingiais then ſparowes with vs. Euery kynge hath his ſubiectes diuided to ſundrye affaires: As ſumme to huntynge, other to ſyſſhynge, and other ſumme to huſbandrye. But let vs now returne to ſpeake further of the names. We haue ſayde that *Quizqueia* and *Haiti* were the oulde names of this Ilande. The hole Ilande was alſo cauled *Cipanga* of the region of the montaynes aboundynge with golde: Lyke as owre anciente poetes cauled all Italye *Latium* of parte therof. Therfore as they cauled *Auſonia* and *Heſperia*, Italie, euen ſoo by the names of *Quizqueia*, *Haiti*, and *Cipanga*, they vnderſtode the hole Ilande of *Hiſpaniola.* Owre men dyd fyrſte name it *Iſabella* of queene Heliſabeth whiche in the Spaniſhe tongue is cauled *Iſabella*: And ſo named it of the fyrſt Colonie where they planted their habitation vpon the banke nere vnto the ſea on the Northe ſyde of the Ilande, as wee haue further declared in the fyrſte decade. But of the names, this ſhall ſuffyce. Lette vs nowe therfore ſpeake of the forme of the Ilande. They whiche fyrſte ouer ranne it, deſcribed it vnto me to bee lyke the leafe of a cheſtnutte tree, with a goulfe towarde the weſt ſyde, lyinge open ageynſt the Ilande of *Cuba.* But the experte ſhyppe mayſter *Andreas Moralis* broughte me the forme therof ſumwhat differynge from that. For from bothe the corners, as from the Eaſte angle and the Weſt, he deſcribed it to be indented and eaten with many great goulfes, and the corners to reache foorthe verye farre: and placeth manye large and ſafe hauens in the great goulfe on the Eaſt ſyde. But I truſt ſhortely ſoo to trauayle further herein, that a perfecte carde of the particular deſcription of *Hiſpaniola* maye bee ſente vnto yowre holyneſſe. For they haue nowe drawne the Geographicall deſcription therof in cardes, euen as yowre holyneſſe hath ſeene the forme and ſytuation of Spayne and Italye with their montaines, valleyes, ryuers, cities, and colonies. Lette vs therfore without ſhamfaſtneſſe compare the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola* to Italie, ſumtyme the heade and queene of the hole worlde. For if wee conſyder the quantitie, it ſhalbee founde lyttle leſſe, and muche more frutefull. It reacheth from the Eaſte into the Weſt, ſyue hundreth and fortye myles accordynge to the computation of the later ſearchers: Althoughe the Admyrall ſumwhat increaſed this number as wee haue ſayde in the fyrſte decade. It is in breadth ſumme where, almoſte three hundreth myles: And in ſumme places narower where the corners are extended. But it is ſuerlye muche more bleſſed and fortunate then Italie: Beynge for the mooſte parte therof ſo temperate and floryſſhynge, that it is neyther vexed with ſharppe coulde, nor afflycted with immoderate heate. It hath bothe the ſteyinges and conuerſyons of the ſoonne (cauled *Solſtitia*) in maner equall with the Equinoctiall, with lyttle difference betwene the length of the daye and nyghte throughout all the yeare. For on the ſouth ſyde, the day aſcendeth ſcarcely an houre in length aboue the nyghte, or contrary wyſe. But the dyfference is more on the northe ſyde. Yet are there ſumme regions in the Ilande in the whiche the coulde is of ſum force. But yowre holyneſſe muſte vnderſtonde this to bee incident by reaſon of the obiecte or nearneſſe of the mountaines, as wee wyl more largely declare hereafter. Yet is not this coulde ſo pearcynge and ſharpe, that th[e]inhabitantes are moleſted with ſnowe or bytynge froſte. In other places, the Ilande enioyeth perpetuall ſpringe tyme, and

Singing and daunceing.
Soonges of loue and moornynge.
Prophesies.
Note
Theyr familiaritie wi[th] spirites
The deuyl is dryuen awaye by baptisme
126
Surueyers.
They lyue as much in the water as on the lande
Serpentes
A Crocodile is much lyke to owr ewte or Lyserte
Byrdes and foules
Popingayes
Cipanga.
Italy cauled Latium
Isabella
The forme of the Ilande of hispaniola
A particular carde of hispaniola.
Hispaniola compared to Italie.
The temperature of Hispaniola.
The equinoctiall.
Coulde accidentall, and not by the sytuation of the region.
Perpetuall springe and soomer.

Maruelous frutfulnes 127

is fortunate with contynuall ſoomer and harueſt. The trees floryſhe there all the hole yeare: And the medowes contynue alway greene. All thynges are exceadynge fortunate, and growe to great perfection. How wonderfully all garden herbes and frutes doo encreaſe, ſoo that within the ſpace of ſyxtene dayes after the ſeede is sowne, al herbes of ſmaule ſteames, as letteſſe, borage, radyſhe, and ſuche other, coome to their full rypeneſſe: And alſo howe herbes of the bygger ſorte, as gourdes, melones, cucumers, pompons, citrons, and ſuche other, coome to their perfection in the ſpace of thirtie dayes, wee haue ſufficiently declared elles where. Of the beaſtes tranſported out of Spaine thether, wee haue ſayde howe they growe too a muche greater kynde: In ſo muche that when they faule into communication of the oxen or kyne, they compare them in bigneſſe to elephantes, and ſwyne to mules: But this ſumwhat by an exceſſyue kynde of ſpeache. We haue alſo made mention how their ſwynes fleſſhe is more ſauourye and farre better and more pleaſaunte taſte and more holſome then owres, by reaſon they are fedde with the frutes of Myrobalane trees, and other pleaſaunte and nuryſſhynge fruites of that contrey, whiche growe there of them ſelues, as do with vs beeches, holly, and okes. Vynes woolde alſo proſper there with maruellous encreaſe, if they had any regard to the plantinge therof. The lyke encreaſe commeth of wheate if it be ſowen vppon the mountaynes where the colde is of ſume ſtrength: but not in the playnes, by reaſon of to much fatnes and rankenes of the grownde. It is in maner incredible to heare, that an eare of wheate ſhuld bee bygger then a mans arme in the brawne, and more then a ſpanne in length, bearynge alſo more then a thouſande graynes as they all confeſſe with one voyce, and erneſtly affirme the ſame with othes. Yet they ſay the bread of the Ilande (cauled) *Cazabbi* made of the roote of *Iucca*, to bee more holſome [illegible]e it is of eaſyer digeſtion, and is cultured with leſſe labour and greater increaſe. The reſidue of the tyme which they ſpende not in ſettynge and plantynge, they beſtowe in gatheringe of golde. They haue nowe ſuche plentie of foure footed beaſts, that horſes and oxe hydes with ſheepe ſkynnes and goate ſkyns and ſuch other, are brought from thenſe into Spayne: So that nowe the doughter in many thynges helpeth and ſuccurreth her mother. Of the trees of braſile, ſpices, the graine which coloureth ſcarlet in bright ſhinynge redde, maſtix, goſſampine cotton, the precious metall cauled *Electrum*, and ſuch other commodities of this Ilande, we haue ſpoken ſufficiently before. What therefore can chaunce more happy vnto man vpon the earth, then there to lyue where he neede not to bee dryuen to cloſe chaumbers with ſharpe coulde or ſayntynge heate? Nor yet in wynter eyther to bee laden with heauy apparell, or to burne the ſhinnes with continual ſyttyng at the fyer, which thynges make men oulde in ſhort tyme by reſoluinge the natural heate, wherof a thouſande diſeaſes inſue. They alſo affirme the ayer to bee very healthfull: and the waters of the ryuers to bee no leſſe holſome, as they whiche haue theyr continuall courſe through the earth of the golden mynes. For there is in maner no ryuer, no mountaynes, and but fewe playnes that are vtterly without golde. But let vs nowe at the length coome to the particular deſcription of the inner partes of this bleſſed Ilande. We haue before declared howe it is in maner equally diuided with foure greate ryuers deſcendynge frome hygh mountaynes: wherof that which runneth towarde the Eaſt, is cauled *Iumna*, as that towarde the Weſt is named *Attibunicus*: The thyrde is *Naiba* or *Haiba* which runneth Southwarde: The fourth is cauled *Iache*, and fauleth towarde the North. But this ſhippe maiſter, hath brought an other deſcription obſerued of th[e]inhabitantes from the begynnynge. Let vs therfore diuide the hole Ilande into fiue partes, caulynge the regions of euery prouince by theyr owlde names: and fynally make mention of ſuche thynges as are woorthye memory in euery of them. The begynninge of the Ilande on the Eaſt ſyde, is conteyned in the prouince named *Caizcimu*: ſo named for that in theyr language *Cimu*, ſignifieth the front or begynnynge of any thynge. After this, foloweth the prouince of *Huhabo*, and then *Caihabo*. The fourth is *Bainoa*. *Guaccaiarima* conteyneth the weſt corner. But the laſt ſaue one, *Bainoa* is of larger boundes then the three other. *Caizcimu* reachethe from the fyrſt fronte of the Ilande to the ryuer *Hozama*, whiche runneth by the citie of ſaynt Dominicke. But towarde the North ſyde, it is ended at the rough mountaynes of *Haiti*. *Huhabo*, is included within the mountaynes *Haiti* and the ryuer *Iaciga*. *Cai*[*h*]*abo* the thyrde prouince, conteyneth all that lyeth betwene *Cuhabo* and *Dahatio*, euen vnto the mouth of the ryuer of *Iaccha* or *Iache* (one of the foure which diuide the Ilande equally) and aſcendethe to the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, where the greateſte plentie of golde is founde: Owte of the which alſo the ryuer *Demahus* ſpringeth: and ioynynge with the ſpringes of the ryuer of *Vaiba*, (being an other of the foure which diuideth the Ilande towarde the ſouth ſea) fauleth to an other banke of the ryuer of ſaynt Dominicke. *Bainoa*, begynneth at the confines of *Caiabi*, and reacheth euen vnto the Ilande of *Cahini* which lieth neare vnto the ſea bankes of the north ſyde of the Ilande where wee ſayde that they erected the fyrſt colonie or habitacion. The prouince of *Guaccaiarima*, occupieth the remanent towarde the weſt. This they named *Guaccaiarima*, bycauſe it is the extreme or vttermoſt parte of the Ilande. For *Iarima* in theyr language ſignifieth the tayle or ende of any thynge: And *Gua*, is an article whiche they vſe often tymes in the names of thynges: And eſpecially in the names of theyr kynges: as *Guarionexius*, and *Guaccanarillus*. In the prouince of *Caizimu*, are theſe regions: *Higuei*, *Guanama*, *Reyre*, *Xagua*, *Aramana*, *Arabo*, *Hazoa*, *Macorix*, *Caiacoa*, *Guaiagua*, *Baguanimaho* and the rough mountaynes of *Haiti*. Here let vs ſpeake ſume what of theyr aſpirations which they vſe otherwyſe then the Latins doo.

Beastes

Oxen and swyne of exceadyng bygnesse.

Swyne fed with Myrobalanes

Vines

Wheate

An eare of wheate as byg as a mans arme in the brawne

The bread of the Ilande.

Golde.

Great plentie of cattayle.

Brasile.

Mastyx.

Gossampine

Electrum.

Incommodities of intemperat regions

Holsome ayer and water

Golde euery where

The description of the inner partes of the Ilande.

The citie of s. Dominicke

The mountaynes of Haiti

The mountaynes of Cibaua 128

The Ilande of Cahini

Of prouinces diuided into regions

Of theyr aspirations

It is to bee noted that there is no aſpiration in theyr vowels, which hath not th[e]effecte of a conſonant. So that they pronounce theyr aſpirations more vehemently then wee do the conſonant. f. Ye, all ſuche woordes as in their tonge are aſpirate, are pronounced with lyke breath and ſpirite as is. f. ſauing that herein the neather lyppe is not moued to th[e]uppermoſt teethe. With open mouthes and ſhakynge theyr breſtes, they breath out theſe aſpirations, *ha, he, hi, ho, hu*, as the Hebrewes and Arabians are accuſtomed to pronounce theyrs. I fynde alſo that the Spanyardes vſe the lyke vehemence in the aſpirations of thoſe woordes whiche they haue receaued of the Moores and Arabians which poſſeſſed Spaine, and continued there many yeares: As in theſe woordes: *Almohadda*, whiche ſignifieth a pyllowe or bolſter: Alſo *Almohaza*, that is, a horſe combe: with dyuers ſuch other woordes whiche they ſpeake in maner with panting breſtes and vehement ſpirite. I haue thought it good to reherſe theſe thynges, bycauſe amonge the Latines it often tymes ſoo chaunceth that onely the accent or aſpiration, chaungeth the ſignification of the woorde: as *hora*, for an houre, and *ora* for the plurale number of this woorde *os*, which ſignifieth the mouth: Alſo *ora*, which ſignifieth regions or coaſtes. The lyke alſo chaunceth in the diuerſitie of the accente, as *occido* I kyll, and *occido* I faule. Euen ſo in the language of theſe ſimple men, there are many thynges to bee obſerued. But let vs nowe returne to the deſcription. In the prouince of *Huhabo*, are theſe regions: *Xamana, Canabacoa, Cuhabo*, with many other, the names wherof I haue not yet learned. The prouince of *Caihabo*, conteyneth theſe regions: *Magua*, and *Cacacubana*. Th[e]inhabitantes of this region, haue a peculyar language much differinge from the common language of the Iland, and are cauled *Macoryxes*. There is alſo an other region cauled *Cubana*, whoſe language differeth from the other. Lykewyſe the region of *Baiohaigua*, hath a dyuers toonge. There are alſo other regions, as *Dahabon, Cybaho*, and *Manabaho*. *Cotoy* is in the myddle of the Ilande. By this runnethe the ryuer *Nizaus*: And the montaynes cauled *Mahaitin, Hazua*, and *Neibaymao*, confine with the ſame. In the prouince of *Bainoa*, are the regions of *Maguana, Iagohaiucho, Bauruco, Dabiagua*, and *Attibuni*, ſo named of the ryuer: Alſo *Caunoa, Buiaici, Dahabonici, Maiaguariti, Atiei, Maccazina, Guahabba, Anniuici, Marien, Guaricco, Amaguei, Xaragua, Yaguana, Azzuei, Iacchi, Honorucco, Diaguo, Camaie*, and *Neibaimao*. In *Guaccaierima* the laſt prouince, theſe regions are conteyned: *Mauicarao, Guahagua, Taquenazabo, Nimaca, Bainoa* the leſſe, *Cahaymi, Iamaizi, Manabaxao, Zauana, Habacoa*, and *Ayqueroa*. But let vs entreate ſumwhat of the particulars of the regions. In the prouince of *Caizcimu*, within the great goulfe of the beginnynge, there is a greate caue in a hollowe rocke vnder the roote of a hygh mountayne, about twoo furlonges from the ſea. The enterie of this caue is not much vnlyke the doores of a great temple, beinge very large and turnynge many wayes. *Andreas Moralis* the ſhyp maſter, at the commaundement of the gouernoure, tempted to ſearche the caue with the ſmauleſt veſſels. He ſayth that by certeyne priuie wayes, manye ryuers haue concourſe to this caue as it were to a ſinke or chanell. After th[e]experience hereof, they ceaſed to maruaile whither other ryuers ranne whiche commynge foureſcore and tenne myles, were ſwalowed vp, ſo that they appeared no more, nor yet fell into the ſea by any knowen wayes. Nowe therfore they ſuppoſe that ryuers ſwalowed vp by the holowe places of that ſtony mountayne, faule into this caue. As the ſhipmaſter entered into the caue his ſhippe was almoſt ſwalowed. For he ſaith that there are many whyrlepooles and ryſinges or boylinges of the water, which make a violent conflicte and horrible rorynge one encounteryng the other. Alſo many huge holes and holowe places: So that what on the one ſyde with the whirle pooles, and on the other ſide with the boyling of the water, his ſhyp was long in maner toſſed vp and downe lyke a baule. It greatly repented hym that he had entered, yet knewe he no way how to come forth. He now wandered in darkeneſſe, aſwel for the obſcureneſſe of the caue into the which he was farre entered, as alſo that in it were thicke cloudes engendered of the moiſt vapours proceading of the conflicte of the waters whiche continually faule with great violence into the caue on euery ſyde. He compareth the noyſe of theſe waters, to the faule of the famous ryuer of *Nilus* from the montaines of Ethyope. They were al ſo deafe, that one could not here what an other ſaid. But at the length with great daunger and feare, he came foorth of the caue as it had byn owte of hel. Aboute three ſcore miles diſtante from the chiefe citie of faincte Dominicke, there are certeyne hyghe montaynes vppon the toppes wherof is a lake or ſtandynge poole inacceſſible, neuer yet ſeene of them whiche came latelye to the Ilande, bothe by reaſon of the roughneſſe of the montaines, and alſo for that there is noo pathe or open waye to the toppes of the ſame. But at the length the ſhyppe maiſter beinge conducted thether by one of kynges, aſcended to the toppes of the montaines and came to the poole. Hee ſaith that the coulde is there of ſum force. And in token of wynter, hee founde ferne and bramble buſſhes, whiche two, growe onely in coulde regions. Theſe montaynes, they caule *Ymizui Hibahaino*. This poole is of freſhe water three myles in compaſſe, and wel replenyſſhed with diuerſe kindes of fyſſhes. Many ſmaule riuers or brookes faule into it. It hath no paſſage owte, bycauſe it is on euery ſyde encloſed with the toppes of montaynes. But lette vs nowe ſpeake of an other poole whiche may well bee cauled a ſea in the mydlande, and bee coompared to the Caſpian or Hircanian ſea in the fyrme lande of *Aſia*: with certeyne other lakes and pooles of freſſhe water.

The pronunciation of the Hebrewes and Arabians

The Moores and Arabians possessed Spayne

Howe the aspiration changeth the signification of wordes

Dyuers languages in the Ilande

A greate caue in the rocke of a mountayne.

A daungerus enterprise

Riuers deuoured of caues.

129

Whirlepooles and conflicte of waters.

Clowdes in the caue.

The Cataractes of Nilus

A standynge poole in the toppe of a hygh mountayne.

Ferne and bramble busshes, growe only in coulde regions.

The Caspian and Hircanian sea.

¶ THE EYGHTE BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.

A great lake of soure and salte water.

THe prouynce of *Bainoa* beynge thriſe as bygge as the three fyrſt, that is, *Caizcimu*, *Vhabo*, and *Caihabo*, includeth a valley named *Caiouani*, in the whiche there is a lake of ſalte, ſoure, and bytter water, as wee reade of the ſea cauled *Caſpium*, lyinge in the firme lande betwene *Sarmatia* and *Hircania*. We haue therfore named it *Caſpium*, althoughe it not bee in the region of *Hircania*. It hath manye ſwalowinge goulfes, by the whiche, bothe the water of the ſea ſpringeth into it, and alſo ſuche as faule into it from the mountaines, are ſwalowed vppe. They thyncke that the caues therof, are ſo large and deepe, that great fyſſhes of the ſea paſſe by the ſame into the lake. Emonge theſe fyſſhes, there is one cauled *Tiburonus* whiche cutteth a man in ſunder by the myddeſt at one ſnappe with his teethe, and deuoureth hym. In the ryuer *Hozama*, runnynge by the chiefe citie of ſayncte Dominicke, theſe *Tiburoni* do ſumtymes coome from the ſea and deuoure manye of th[e]inhabitauntes: Eſpecially ſuche as do dayly ploonge them ſelues in the water to th[e]intent to keepe their bodyes verye cleane. The ryuers whiche faule into the lake, are theſe. From the Northe ſyde, *Guaninicabon*: From the Southe, *Xaccoei*: from the Eaſte, *Guannabo*: And from the Weſt, *Occoa*. They ſaye that theſe ryuers are great and continuall: And that beſyde theſe, there are. xx. other ſmaule ryuers whiche faule into this *Caſpium*. Alſo on the Northe ſyde within a furlonge of the lake, there are aboue twoo hundreth ſpringes, occupyinge lykewiſe aboute a furlonge in circuite, the water wherof is coulde in ſoomer, freſhe alſo, and holſome to bee droonke. Theſe ſprynges make a ryuer that can not bee waded ouer, whiche neare at hande ioynynge with the other, fauleth into the lake. Here muſte wee ſtaye a whyle. The kynge of this regyon founde his wyfe praying in a chapel builded by the Chriſtians within the precincte of his dominion, and required her coompanie to ſatiffye his fleſhely luſte. His wyfe reproued hym, and put hym in remembraunce to haue reſpecte to the holye place. The woordes whiche ſhee ſpake to hym, were theſe: *Teitoca*, *Teitoca*: whiche is as muche to ſaye, as, bee quyet, bee quyet: *Techeta cynato guamechyna*: That is, god wyl bee greatly angerie. *Guamechyna*, ſygnifyeth god, *Techeta* greatly, *Cynato* angrie. But the huſbande halynge her by the arme, ſayde: *Guaibba*, that is, go: *Cynato macabuca guamechyna*: That is: what is that to me if god be angerye? And with theſe woordes as he profered her violence, ſoodenlye he became dumme and lame. Yet by this myracle beynge ſtriken with repentaunce, he euer after ledde a relygious lyfe: In ſo muche that from thenſe foorthe hee woolde neuer ſuffer the chappell to bee ſwepte or decked with any other mannes hande. By the ſame myracle, manye of th[e]inhabitauntes and all the Chriſtians beyng moued, reſorted deuoutly to the chappell. They take it in good parte that the kynge ſuffered the reuenge of that reproche. Lette vs nowe retourne to *Caſpium*. That ſalte lake is toſſed with ſtormes and tempeſtes: And oftentymes drowneth ſmaule ſhyppes or fyſſher boates, and ſwaloweth them vppe with the maryners: In ſo muche that it hath not byn harde of, that any man drowned by ſhyppewracke, euer ploonged vppe ageyne, or was caſte on the ſhore, as commonly chaunceth of the deade bodyes of ſuche as are drowned in the ſea. Theſe tempeſtes, are the deintie banquetes of the *Tiburones*. This *Caſpium*, is cauled *Hagueigabon*. In the myddeſt hereof, lyeth an Ilande named *Guarizacca*, to the whiche they reſorte when they go a fyſſhynge: But it is not cultured. There is in the ſame playne, an other lake nexte vnto this, whoſe water is myxte of ſalte and freſhe: And is therfore nother apte to bee droonke, nor yet to bee refuſed in vrgente neceſſytie. This conteineth in length. xxv. miles, and in breadth eight myles: In ſumme places alſo nyne or ten. It receaueth manye ryuers whiche haue no paſſage owte of the ſame, but are ſwalowed vppe as in the other. Water ſpringeth out of the ſea into this alſo: but in no great quantitie, whiche is the cauſe that it is ſo commyxte. In the ſame prouynce towarde the Weſte ſyde, there is an other lake of freſhe water, not farre diſtante from *Caſpius*. This th[e]inhabitauntes caule *Iainagua*. The ſame ſalte lake, hath on the North ſyde therof, an other named *Guaccaa*. This is but lyttle: as not paſt three or foure myles in breadth, and one in length. The water of this, maye well bee droonke. On the ſouthe ſyde of the ſalte lake, there lyeth an other named *Babbareo*, of three myles in length and in maner rounde. The water of this is freſhe as of the two other. This lake bycauſe it hath no paſſage owte nor yet anye ſwalowynge goulfes, conueyeth the ſuperfluous waters to the ſea if it be encreaſed with the ſtreames whiche faule ſumtimes more abondantly from the montaines. This is in the region of *Xamana* in the prouince of *Bainoa*. There is an other cauled *Guaniba*, lying betwene the Eaſt and the South nere vnto the ſyde of *Caſpius*. This is ten mylcs in length and almoſte rounde. There are furthermore many other ſmaule ſtandyng pooles or lakes diſparſed here and there in the Iland, whiche I wyll lette paſſe leſte I ſhulde bee tedious in remainyng to longe

Swalowinge goulfes.

Sea fyſſhes in lakes of the midlande

The deuourynge fyſſhe cauled Tiburonus.

The ryuers that faule into the lake Caspium.

CC. [two hundred] ſprynges within the space of a furlonge.

A myracle.

The Indian language.

130

A kyng strickén dumme and lame by a myracle.

Such as are drowned in the lake are not cast vp ageyne.

The Ilande Guarizacca in the myddest of the poole.

A lake of salt and freſhe water.

A lake of freſſhe water

A lake of ten myles in length

in one thynge. I wyll therfore make an ende with this addition, that in all theſe, great plentie of fyſhe and foule is nouryſſhed. All theſe lakes lye in a large playne, the whiche from the Eaſt reacheth into the Weſt a hundreth and twentie myles: beyng of breadth. xviii. myles where it is naroweſt, and. xxv. where it is largeſt. Lookyng toward the Weſt, it hath collaterally on the lefte hande the montaines of *Daiguani*: And on the ryght hande, the montaines of *Caigua*, ſo cauled of the name of the vale it ſelfe. At the rootes of the montaines of *Caigua* toward the North ſyde, there lyeth an other vale much longer and larger then that before named. For it conteineth in length, almoſte two hundreth myles: And in bredth. xxx. wher it is largeſt, and about. xx. wher it is naroweſt This vale in ſumme parte therof, is cauled *Maguana*: In an other place, *Iguamu*, and elles where, *Hathathiei*. And foraſmuche as wee haue here made mention of this parte of the vale named *Hathathiei*, wee wyll ſumwhat digreſſe from the diſcourſe of this deſcription, and entreate of a thinge ſo ſtraunge and maruelous, that the lyke hath not byn hard of. So it is therfore, that the kyng of this region named *Caramatexius*, taketh great pleaſure in fyſſhinge. Into his nettes chanced a younge fyſhe of the kynde of thoſe huge monſters of the ſea whiche th[e]inhabitours caule *Manati*, not founde I ſuppoſe in owre ſeas nor knowen to owre men before this tyme. This fyſhe is foure footed, and in ſhape lyke vnto a tortoyſe althoughe ſhee be not couered with a ſhel, but with ſcales: And thoſe of ſuch hardneſſe and couched in ſuche order, that no arrowe can hurte her. Her ſcales are byſet and defend with a thouſand knobbes. Her backe is playne, and her heade vtterly lyke the heade of an oxe. She lyueth both in the water and on the lande: She is ſlowe of mouynge: of condition meeke, gentell, aſſocyable and louing to mankind and of a maruelous ſence or memorie as are the elephant and the delphyn. The king noriſſhed this fyſhe certeine daies at home with the breade of the countrey, made of the roote of *Iucca* and *Panycke* with ſuche other rootes as men are accuſtomed to eate. For when ſhee was yet but younge, he caſt her into a poole or lake neare vnto his palaice there to bee fedde with hande. This lake alſo receaueth waters and caſteth not the ſame foorth ageine. It was in tyme paſte cauled *Guaurabo*: But is nowe cauled the lake of *Manati* after the name of this fyſhe whiche wandered ſafelye in the ſame for the ſpace of. xxv. yeares, and grewe excedyng byg. What ſo euer is written of the Delphines of Baian or Arion, are muche inferior to the dooinges of this fyſh: which for her gentle nature they named *Matum*, that is gentle or noble. Therefore when ſo euer any of the kynges familyers, eſpecially ſuche as are knowen to her, reſorte to the bankes of the lake and caule *Matum*, *Matum*, then ſhe (as myndefull of ſuche benefites as ſhe hath receaued of men) lyftethe vp her heade and commeth to the place whither ſhe is cauled, and there receaueth meate at the handes of ſuche as feede her. If any deſirous to paſſe ouer the lake, make ſignes and tokens of theyr intente, ſhe boweth her ſelfe to them, therewith as it were gentelly inuitynge them to amount vppon her, and conueyeth them ſafely ouer. It hath byn ſeene that this monſtrous fyſſhe hath at one tyme ſafely caryed ouer tenne men ſinginge and playinge. But if by chaunce when ſhe lyfteed vp her heade ſhe eſpyed any of the Chriſtian men, ſhe woolde immediatly ploonge downe ageyne into the water and refuſe to obey, bycauſe ſhe had once receaued iniury at the handes of a certeyne wanton younge man amonge the Chriſtians, who hadde caſte a ſharpe darte at her, although ſhe were not hurte by reaſon of the hardenes of her ſkynne beinge roughe and ful of ſkales and knobbes as we haue ſayde. Yet dyd ſhe beare in memorie th[e]iniurie ſhe ſuſteyned, with ſo gentell a reuenge requitynge th[e]ingratitude of hym which had delte with her ſo vngentelly. From that day when ſo euer ſhe was cauled by any of her familiers, ſhe woolde fyrſt looke circumſpectly about her, leaſt any were preſent appareled after the maner of the Chriſtians. She woolde oftentymes play and wreſtle vppon the banke with the kynges chamberlens: And eſpecially with a younge man whom the kynge fauoured well, beinge alſo accuſtomed to feede her. Shee woolde bee ſumetymes as pleaſaunt and full of play as it had byn a moonkey or marmaſet: And was of longe tyme a great comfort and ſolace to the hole Ilande. For no ſmaule confluence aſwell of the Chriſtians as of th[e]inhabitantes, had dayly concourſe to beholde ſo ſtraunge a myracle of nature, the contemplation wherof was no leſſe pleaſaunt then woonderfull. They ſay that the meate of this kynde of fyſſhe, is of good taſte: And that many of them are engendered in the ſeas therabout. But at the length, this pleaſaunt playefelowe was loſte, and caried into the ſea by the great ryuer *Attibunicus*, one of the foure which diuide the Ilande. For at that tyme there chaunced ſo terrible a tempeſt of wind, and rayne, with ſuch fluds enſewing that the like hath not lightly byn hard of. By reaſon of this tempeſt, the ryuer *Attibunicus* ſo ouerflowed the bankes, that it fylled the hole vale and myxt it ſelfe with all the other lakes. At which tyme alſo, this gentell *Matum* and pleaſaunte companyon, folowynge the vehemente courſe and faule of the fluddes, was therby reſtored to his oulde moother and natyue waters, and ſence that tyme neuer ſeene ageyne. Thus hauynge digreſſed ſufficiently, let vs nowe coome to the ſituation of the vale. It hathe collaterally the mountaynes of *Cibaua* and *Caiguam* which brynge it to the South ſea. There is an other vale beyonde the mountaynes of *Cibaua* towarde the North. This is cauled the vale of *Guarionexius*, bycauſe that before the memorie of man, the prediceſſours and aunceſtours of kyng *Guarionexius* to whom it is deſcended by right of inheritaunce, were euer the lordes of the hole vale. Of this kynge, we haue ſpoken largely in the fyrſt narration of the Ilande in the fyrſt Decade. This vale is of length from the Eaſt to the Weſt, a hundreth and foureſcore myles: And of

A playne of a hundreth and twentie miles

A playne of two hundreth myles in length.

The maruelous fysshe Manati.

131

A monster of the sea fedde with mans hande.

Matum.

A fyshe caryeth men ouer the lake

A maruelous thynge.

The ryuer Attibunicus.

The situation of the great vale.

The mountaynes of Cibaua and Caiquam.

The greate vale of Guarionexius.

breadth from the South to the North, thirtie myles wher it is naroweſt, and fiftie where it is brodeſte. It begynneth from the region *Canabocoa* by the prouinces of *Huhabo* and *Caiabo*: And endeth in the prouince of *Bainoa* and the region of *Mariena*. It lyeth in the myddeſt betwene the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, and the mountaynes of *Cahonai* and *Cazacubuna*. There is no prouince nor any region, which is not notable by the maieſtie of mountaynes, frutefulnes of vales, pleaſauntneſſe of hylles, and delectablenes of playnes, with abundaunce of fayre ryuers runnynge through the ſame. There are no ſides of mountaynes or hylles, no ryuers, which abound not with golde and delycate fyſſhes, except only one ryuer which from th[e]originall therof, with the ſprynges of the ſame breakynge foorth of the mountaynes, commeth owt ſalte and ſo contynueth vntyll it peryſhe. This ryuer is cauled *Bahuay*: and runneth through the myddle of the region *Maguana* in the prouince of *Bainoa*. They ſuppoſe that this ryuer hathe made it ſelfe awaye vnder the grounde by ſume paſſages of playſter or ſalte earthe. For there are in the Ilande many notable ſalte bayes, wherof we wyl ſpeake more hereafter. We haue declared howe the Ilande is diuided by foure ryuers and fyue prouinces. There is alſo an other particion, whiche is this. The hole Ilande conſyſteth of the tops of foure mountaines which diuide it by the myddeſt from the Eaſt to the weſte. In all theſe is abundance of nooryſhynge moyſture and greate plentie of golde: of the caues alſo of the whiche, the waters of al the riuers (into the which the caues emptie them ſelues) haue theyr originall and increaſe. There are lykewyſe in them horryble dennes, obſcure and darke vales, and myghtie rockes of ſtone. There was neuer any noyſome beaſte founde in it: Nor yet any rauenynge foure footed beaſte. No lyon, no beare no fierce tygers, no craftie foxes, nor deuouring woolfes. All thynges are bleſſed and fortunate: And nowe more fortunate, for that ſo many thouſandes of men are receaued to bee the ſheepe of Chriſtes flocke, all theyr Zemes and Images of deuylles being reiected and vtterly out of memorie. If I chaunce nowe and then in the diſcourſe of this narration to repeate one thynge dyuers tymes or otherwiſe to make digreſſion, I muſt deſyre yowre holynes therwith not to bee offended. For whyle I ſee, heare, and wryte theſe thinges, mee ſeemeth that I am herewith ſo affected, that for verye ioy I feele my mynde ſtirred as it were with the ſpirite of Apollo as were the Sibylles, whereby I am enforced to repeate the ſame ageyne: Eſpecially when I conſyder howe farre the amplitude of owre religion ſpreadeth her wynges. Yet amonge theſe ſo many bleſſed and fortunate thynges, this one greeueth me not a lyttle: That theſe ſimple poore men neuer brought vp in labour, do dayly peryſhe with intollerable trauayle in the golde mynes: And are therby brought to ſuche deſperation, that many of them kyll them ſelues, hauynge no regarde to the procreation of chyldren. In ſo much that women with chylde, perceauynge that they ſhall brynge foorth ſuch as ſhalbe ſlaues to the Chriſtians, vſe medecines to deſtroy theyr conception. And albeit that by the kynges letters patentes it was decreed that they ſhulde bee ſet at lybertie, yet are they conſtrayned to ſerue more then ſeemeth conuenient for free men. The number of the poore wretches is woonderfully extenuate. They were once rekened to bee aboue twelue hundreth thouſande heades: But what they are nowe, I abhorre to rehearſe. We wyll therefore let this paſſe: and returne to the pleaſures of *Hiſpaniola*. In the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, which are in maner in the myddeſt of the Ilande in the prouince of *Caiabo* (where we ſayd to bee the greateſt plentie of natyue golde) there is a region named *Cotohi*, ſituate in the clowdes, enuironed with the toppes of hyghe mountaynes, and well inhabited. It conſiſteth of a playne of. xxv. myles in length, and. xv. in breadth. This playne is hygher then the toppes of other mountaynes: So that theſe mountaynes, maye ſeeme to bee the chiefe and progenitours of the other. This playne ſuffereth alterations of the foure tymes of the yeare: as the Sprynge, Soomer, Autumne, and wynter. Here the herbes waxe wythered, the trees looſe theyr leaues, and the medowes become hore: The whiche thynges (as we haue ſayde) chaunce not in other places of the Ilande, where they haue only the Spring and Autumne. The ſoyle of this playne bryngeth foorth ferne and bramble buſſhes bearynge blacke berries or wylde raſpes, which two are tokens of coulde regions. Yet is it a fayre region: for the coulde therof is not very ſharpe: neyther dooth it aflicte th[e]inhabitantes with froſte or ſnowe. They argue the frutefulnes of the region by the ferne, whoſe ſtalkes or ſteames are bygger then a ſpere or iauelen. The ſydes of thoſe mountaynes are ryche in golde. Yet is there none appoynted to dygge for the ſame, bycauſe it ſhalbe needfull to haue apparelled myners, and ſuch as are vſed to labour. For th[e]inhabitantes lyuynge contented with lyttle, are but tender: And can not therfore away with labour or abyde any coulde. There are two ryuers which runne through this region, and faule from the toppes of the preſent mountaynes. One of theſe is named *Comoiayxa*, whoſe courſe is towarde the Weſt, and fauleth into the chanell of *Naiba*. The other is cauled *Tirecotus*: which runnynge towarde the Eaſt, joyneth with the ryuer of *Iunna*. In the Ilande of *Creta* (nowe cauled Candie) as I paſſed by in my legacie to the Soldane of Alcayr or Babylon in Egypte, the Venetians toulde me that there laye ſuche a region in the toppes of the mountaynes of *Ida*, whiche they affirme to bee more frutefull of wheate corne then any other region of the Iland. But foraſmuch as once the Cretenſes rebelled agenſt the Venetians, and by reaſon of the ſtreight and narowe way to the toppes therof, longe defended the region with armes againſt th[e]auctoritie of the Senate, and at the length beinge forweryed with warres, rendered the ſame, the Senate commaunded that it ſhulde bee lefte deſerte, and the ſtreightes of th[e]enter-

132

Mountaynes.
Vales.
Hylles.
Playnes.
Ryuers.
Golde in all mountaynes, and golde and fyſſhe in all ryuers.
Salte bayes.

Howe the Ilande is diuided with mountaynes.
Golde.
The ryuers haue theyr increase from the caues of the mountaynes
No hurtful or raueninge beast in the Ilande.

The autours excuse.

By what meanes the people of the Iland are gretly consumed.

133

Th[e]inhabitantes of Hispaniola can abyde no labour nor coulde.

The Iland of Creta or Candie, vnder the dominion of the Venetians.

The plesures of Hispaniola.

The region of Cotohi, situate in the Clowdes.
A playne in the toppes of mountaynes
The hygher, the coulder.
Moderate coulde in the mountaynes.
Ferne of maruelous bignes

Golde.

aunces to bee ſtopped, leſte any ſhulde aſcende to the region without their permiſſyon. Yet in the yeare of Chriſte M. D. ii. lycence was graunted to the huſband men to tyll and manure the region, on ſuche condition that no ſuche as were apte to the warres, myght enter into the ſame. There is alſo an other region in *Hiſpaniola* named *Cotohy* after the ſame name. This diuideth the boundes of the prouinces of *Vhabo* and *Caiabo*. It hath mountaynes, vales, and plaines. But bycauſe it is baren, it is not muche inhabited. Yet is it richeſt in golde: For the originall of the abundaunce of gold, beginneth here: In ſo muche that it is not gathered in ſmaule graines and ſparkes as in other places: but is founde hole, maſſie, and pure, emonge certaine ſofte ſtones and in the vaines of rockes, by breakynge the ſtones wherof, they folowe the vaynes of golde. They haue founde by experience, that the vayne of golde is a lyuinge tree: And that the ſame by all wayes that it ſpreadeth and ſpringeth from the roote by the ſofte pores and paſſages of the yearth, putteth foorth branches euen vnto the vppermoſt part of the earth, and ceaſeth not vntyl it diſcouer it ſelfe vnto the open ayer: At whiche time, it ſheweth foorth certaine bewtifull colours in the ſteede of floures, rounde ſtones of golden earth in the ſteede of frutes, and thynne plates in ſteede of leaues. Theſe are they whiche are diſparcled throughout the hole Ilande by the courſe of the ryuers, eruptions of the ſpringes owte of the montaines, and violent faules of the fluddes. For they thincke that ſuch graines are not engendered where they are gathered: eſpecially on the dry land: but otherwiſe in the riuers. They ſay that the roote of the golden tree extendeth to the center of the earth and there taketh noriſhement of increaſe. For the deaper that they dygge, they fynd the trunkes therof to be ſo muche the greater as farre as they maye folowe it for abundaunce of water ſpringing in the montaines. Of the braunches of this tree, they fynde ſumme as ſmaule as a threde, and other as bygge as a mannes fynger accordynge to the largeneſſe or ſtraightneſſe of the ryftes and clyftes. They haue ſumetimes chaunced vpon hole caues ſuſteyned and borne vp as it were with golden pyllars: And this in the wayes by the whiche the branches aſcende: The whiche beynge fylled with the ſubſtaunce of the truncke creapynge from beneath, the branche maketh it ſelfe waye by whiche it maye paſſe owte. It is oftentymes diuided by encounterynge with ſum kynde of harde ſtone. Yet is it in other clyftes nooriſſhed by the exhalations and vertue of the roote. But now perhappes yowe will aſke me what plentie of golde is brought from thenſe. Yowe ſhall therfore vnderſtande that onely owte of *Hiſpaniola*, the ſum of foure hundreth and ſumtymes fyue hundreth thouſande ducates of gold is brought yearely into Spayne: as may be gathered by the fyfthe portion dewe to the kynges Excheker, which amounteth to the ſum of a hundreth and fourſcore, or foureſcore and ten thouſande Caſtellanes of golde, and ſumtymes more. What is to bee thought of the Ilande of *Cuba* and *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwiſe cauled *Burichena*) beyng both very ryche in golde, we wyll declare further hereafter. To haue ſayde thus muche of golde, it ſhall ſuffyce. We wyll nowe therfore ſpeake ſumwhat of ſalte wherwith wee may ſeaſon and reſerue ſuche thynges as are bought with golde. In a region of the prouince of *Bainoa*, in the montaynes of *Daiaguo*, about twelue myles diſtant from the ſalte lake cauled *Caſpius*, there are ſalte bayes in the montaynes in a maner as hard as ſtoones, alſo clearer and whiter then criſtall. There are lykewyſe ſuche ſalte baies whiche growe woonderfully in *Laletania* (now cauled *Catalonia*) in the territorie of the duke of *Cadona* the chiefe ruler in that region. But ſuche as knowe theym bothe, affyrme that theſe of *Bainoa* are moſte notable. They ſaye alſo that this can not be cleſte without wedges and beatelles of Iron. But that of *Laletana*, maye eaſlye bee broken as I my ſelfe haue proued. They therfore compare this to ſuche ſtoones as may eaſely bee broken: And the other to marble. In the prouince of *Caizimu*, in the regions of *Iguanama*, *Caiacoa*, and *Guariagua*, there are ſprynges whoſe waters are of maruelous nature, beynge in the ſuperfytial or vppermooſte parte, freſhe: In the myddeſt, myxte of ſalte and freſhe: And in the loweſt parte, ſalte and ſower. They thincke that the ſalte water of the ſea, iſſheweth owte ſoftely, and the freſhe, to ſpringe owte of the mountaines. The one fauleth downe and the other ryſeth: and are not therfore ſo vniuerſally myxt wherby the one may vtterly corrupt th[e]other. If any man laye his eare to the grounde neare to any of theſe ſpringes, he ſhal perceaue the ground there to bee ſo hollowe, that the reboundyng noyſe of a horſeman comminge may be harde for the ſpace of three myles, and a foote ma[n] one myle. In the laſte region towarde the ſouthe named *Guaccaiarima*, in the lordſhyp of *Zauana*, they ſay there are certeyne wyld men whiche lyue in the caues and dennes of the montaynes, contented onely with wilde frutes. Theſe men neuer vſed the companye of any other: nor wyll by any meanes becoome tame. They lyue without any certaine dwellynge places, and with owte tyllage or culturynge of the grounde, as wee reade of them whiche in oulde tyme lyued in the golden age. They ſay alſo that theſe men are withowte any certaine language. They are ſumtymes ſeene. But owre men haue yet layde handes on none of them. If at any tyme they coome to the ſyght of men, and perceyue any makynge toward them, they flye ſwifter then a harte. Ye they affyrme them to bee ſwifter then grehowndes. What one of theſe ſolytarie wanderers dyd, it is worth the hearyng. So it is that owr men hauyng granges adioyning nere vnto the thicke wods, certen of them repaired thither in the mooneth of September in the yeare. M. D. xiiii. In the meane tyme, one of theſe wylde men came leapynge owte of the woodde. And approchynge ſumwhat toward them with ſmyling countenaunce, ſoodenly ſnatched vppe a childe of therſe beynge the ſoonne of the owner of the graunge, whiche he begotte of a woman of the

Pure and massie golde in the region of Cotoy.

The vaine of golde, is a lyuynge tree.

These colers or floures are cauled Marchasites, Pyrites.

The roote of the golden tree.

The braunches of the golden tree.

Caues susteyned with pyllers of golde.

The stones of the golde mynes.

What gold is brought yerely from Hispaniola into Spayne.

Salte of the mountaynes, very hard and cleare.

134

Salt as hard as stones.

Sprynges of salt, fresshe and sówer water.

Holowe caues in the grounde

Certeyne wyld men lyuing in caues and dennes

Men without a certeyne language

Men as swift as greihounds

A wyld man runneth away with a chylde

Ilande. He ranne awaye with the childe, and made ſygnes to owre men to folowe hym. Many folowed aſwel of owre men as of the naked inhabytantes, but all in vayne. Thus when the pleaſaunt wanderer perceaued that the Chriſtians ceaſed to purſue hym, he lefte the childe in a croſſe waye by the whiche the ſwyneheardes were accuſtomed to dryue the ſwyne to their paſture. Shortly after, a ſwynehearde founde the chyld and brought hym home to his father yet tormentynge nym ſelfe for ſorowe, ſuppoſynge that wylde man to haue byn one of the kynde of the Canibales, and that his ſoonne was nowe deuowred. In the ſame Ilande they gather pytche whiche ſweateth owte of the rockes, beynge muche harder and fourer then the pitche of the tree: and is therfore more commodious to calke or defende ſhyppes ageynſte the woormes cauled *Bromas*, wherof wee haue ſpoken largely before. This Ilande alſo bryngeth foorth pitche in two kyndes of trees, as in the Pyne tree and an other named *Copeia*. I neede not ſpeake of the pyne tree, bycauſe it is engendered and knowen in maner euery where. Lette vs therfore ſpeake ſumwhat of the other tree cauled *Copeia*: Pitche is lykewyſe gathered of it as of the pyne tree: althoughe ſumme ſaye that it is gathered by diſtyllyng or droppyng of the woode when it is burnt. It is a ſtraunge thynge to here of the leafe thereof: and how neceſſary prouiſion of nature is ſhewed in the ſame. It is to be thought that this is the tree in the leaues wherof the Chaldeans (beynge the fyrſte fynders of letters) expreſſed their myndes before the vſe of paper was knowen. This leafe is a ſpanne in breadth and almoſt round. Owre men write in them with pynnes or nedles or any ſuche inſtrumentes made of metall or woodde, in maner as well as on paper. It is to bee lawghed at what owre men haue perſwaded the people of the Ilande as towchynge this leafe. The ſymple ſoules beleue that at the commandement of owre men, leaues do ſpeak and diſcloſe ſecreates. They were brought to this credulitie by this meanes. One of owre men dwellynge in the citie of *Dominica* the chiefe of the Ilande, delyuered to his ſeruaunte (beyng a man borne in the Ilande) certayne roſted connies, (whiche they caule *Vtias* beynge no bygger then myſe) wyllynge hym to carie the ſame to his frende whiche dwelte further within the Ilande. This meſſenger, whether it were that he was therto conſtrayned through hunger, or entyſed by appetite, deuoured three of the counnies by the waye. He to whome they were ſente, writ to his frynde in a leafe howe manye he receaued. When the mayſter had looked a whyle on the leafe in the preſence of the ſeruaunt, he ſayde thus vnto hym. Ah ſoonne, where is thy faythe? Coulde thy gredye appetyte preuayle ſo muche with the as to cauſe the to eate the connies commytted to thy fydelytie? The poore wretche trembelynge and greatlye amaſed, confeſſed his faute: And therwith deſyred his mayſter to tell hym howe he knewe the treweth therof. This leafe (quod he) whiche thou browghteſt me, hath toulde me all. Then hee further rehearſed vnto hym the houre of his coommynge to his frende, and lykewyſe of his departynge when hee retourned. And thus they meryly deceaue theſe ſeely ſoules and keepe theym vnder obedyence: In ſo muche that they take owre men for goddes, at whoſe coommaundement leaues doo diſcloſe ſuche thynges as they thyncke mooſte hyd and ſecreate. Bothe the ſydes of the leafe receaueth the formes of letters euen as dooeth owre paper. It is thycker then double parchement, and meruelous toughe. While it is yet floryſſhynge and newe, it ſheweth the letters whyte in greene. And when it is drye, it becommeth whyte and harde lyke a table of woodde: but the letters wexe yelowe. It dooeth not corrupte or putrifye: nor yet looſeth the letters thoughe it bee wette: nor by any other meanes excepte it bee burnte. There is an other tree named *Xagua*: the iuiſe of whoſe ſoure apple beynge of a darke redde coloure, ſtayneth and coloureth what ſoo euer is touched therwith: And that ſoo fyrmely, that noo waſſhynge canne take it awaye for the ſpace of twentie dayes. When the apple is full ripe, the iuiſe looſeth that ſtrength. The apple is eaten, and of good taſt. There is alſo an herbe whoſe ſmoke (as we haue reherſed the like before of a certen woodde) is deadly poiſon. On a tyme when the kynges aſſembled together and conſpired the deſtruction of owre men, whereas they durſte not attempte th[e]enterpriſe by open warre, theyr diuiſe was, priuilye to lay many bundels of thoſe herbes in a certeyne houſe, whiche ſhortly after they intended to ſet on fyer, to th[e]intent that owre men makynge haſte to quenſhe the ſame, myght take theyr death with the ſmoke therof. But theyr purpoſed practyſe beinge bewrayed, th[e]autours of the diuiſe were punyſſhed accordyngly. Nowe (moſte holy father) for as much as yowre holyneſſe wryteth that what ſo euer we haue written of the newe worlde, dooth pleaſe yowe ryght well, wee wyll reherſe certeyne thynges owte of order, but not greatly from owre purpoſe. Of the ſettynge the rootes of *Maizium*, *Agis*, *Iucca*, *Battatas*, and ſuch other beinge theyr common foode, and of th[e]uſe of the ſame, we haue ſpoken ſufficiently before. But by what meanes they were fyrſte applyed to the commoditie of men, we haue not yet declared. We nowe therefore entende to entreate ſumwhat hereof.

Pitche of the rocke.

Pitche of two kyndes of trees.
The pine tree.
The tree Copeia.

The leafe of a tree in the ſteede of paper.

They beleue that leaues do ſpeake.
A pretie ſtorie.

135

Ignorance causeth admiration.

The leafe wherin they wryte.

A ſtronge colour of the iuiſe of an apple.

An Herbe whose smoke is poyson.

¶ The nynth booke of the thyrde Decade.

THEY ſaye that the fyrſte inhabitours lyued contented with the rootes of dates, and Magueans, which is an herbe muche lyke vnto that which is commonly cauled Sengrene or Orpin. Alſo the rootes of Guaiegans, whiche are rounde and greate muche lyke vnto puffes of the earth or muſſheromes. They did lykewiſe eate *Guaieros*, lyke vnto perſeneppes: *Cibaios* lyke nuttes, *Cabaioes* and Macoanes, lyke vnto onions, with dyuers other ſuche rootes. They ſay that after many yeares, a certeyne *Boition*, that is, a wyſe oulde man, ſawe vppon the bankes ſyde, a buſhe lyke vnto fenel: and tranſplantyng the roote therof, brought it from wyldenes to a better kynde, by nooryſſhynge it in gardens. This was the begynnynge of *Iucca*, which at the fyrſte was deadely poyſon to all ſuche as dyd eate therof rawe. But for as muche as they perceaued it to bee of pleaſaunte taſte, they determyned many wayes to proue the vſe therof: And at the length founde by experience that beinge ſodde or fryed, it was leſſe hurtefull: by whiche meanes alſo, they came to the knowledge of the veneme lyinge hyd in the iuſe of the roote. Thus by dryinge, ſaltynge, ſeaſonynge, and otherwyſe temperynge it, they brought it to theyr fine breade which they caule *Cazabbi*, more delectable and holſome to the ſtomacke of manne then breade made of wheate, bycauſe it is of eaſyer digeſtion. The ſame is to bee vnderſtoode of other rootes and the grayne of *Maizium* whiche they haue choſen for their chiefe meate amonge the ſeedes of nature, as we reade howe *Ceres* the doughter of *Saturnus*, gathered wheate and barley (with ſuche other corne as are nowe moſt in vſe amonge men) in Egypte of certeyne graynes taken owt of the mudde dryuen from the mountaynes of Ethiopia by th[e]increaſe of the ryuer *Nilus*, and lefte in the plaine at ſuch tyme as *Nilus* reſorted ageyne to his chanell. For the which facte, we reade that the antiquitie gaue diuine honour to *Ceres*, who fyrſt noriſhed and increaſed ſuch choſen ſeedes. There are innumerable kyndes of *Ages*: the varietie wherof, is knowen by theyr leaues and floures. One kynde of theſe, is cauled *Guanaguax*. This is whyte boothe within and without An other named *Guaraguei* is of vyolet colour without and white within. The other kyndes of *Ages*, they caul *Zazaueios*. Theſe are redde without and whyte within. *Squiuetes*, are whyte within and without. *Tunna*, is all together of vyolet coloure. *Hobos* is yelowe booth of ſkynne and inner ſubſtance. There is an other named *Atibunieix*: The ſkynne of this is of violet colour, and the ſubſtance whyte. *Aniguamar*, hath his ſkynne alſo of vyolet coloure, and is whyte within. *Guaccaracca*, hath a whyte ſkynne, and the ſubſtance of vyolet colour. There are many other which are not yet brought to vs. But I feare me leaſt in the rehearſall of theſe, I ſhal prouoke the ſpurres of malicious perſons ageynſt me which wyll ſcorne theſe owr doinges for that we haue wrytten of many ſuch ſmaule thinges to a prince occupyed in ſuche weyghty affayres, as vnto yowre holynes vppon whoſe ſhulders reſteth the burthen of the hole Chriſtian worlde. But I wolde aſke of theſe malycious enuyers of other mens trauayles, whether Plinie and ſuch other famous wryters, when they dyrected and dedicated ſuch thinges to kynges and princes, entended only to profyte them to whom they conſecrated the frute of theyr knowleage. They ſumtymes intermyxte famous thynges with obſcure thynges, lyght with heauie, and greate with ſmaule, that by the foortheraunce of princes, theyr vniuerſall poſteritie myght enioye the fruition of the knowleage of thynges. At other tymes alſo, beinge intent about particular thinges, and deſyrous of newe thynges, they occupyed them ſelues iu the ſearchinge of particular tractes and coaſtes, with ſuche thynges as nature brought foorth in the ſame, by this meanes to coome the better to more abſolute and vniuerſal knowleage. Let theym therefore contemne owre doinge: And wee wyll laugh to ſcorne, not theyr ignoraunce and ſlothfulnes, but pernicious curiouſnes: And therewith hauynge pitie of theyr frowarde diſpoſitions, wyll commit theim to the venemous ſerpenſes of whom enuie tooke his fyrſt originall. It ſhall in the meane tyme abundantly contente vs that theſe thynges do pleaſe yowre holynes: And that yowe doo not diſpiſe owre ſimple veſtures wherwith we haue only weaued togyther and not adourned, gathered and not deſcribed ſuch maruelous thynges in the garnyſhynge wherof, nature hath ſufficiently ſhewed her cunnynge. Owre deſyre is none other but herein for yowre ſake to doo owre endeuoure that theſe thynges maye not peryſhe. Let euery man take hereof what lyketh hym beſt. Of the ſheepe or bullocke ſoulde in the market, nothynge remayneth in the euenynge, bycauſe the ſhulder pleaſeth one, the legge an other, and the necke an other. Ye, ſume haue moſt phantaſie to the bowels, and ſume to the feete. Thus hauynge enough wandered, lette vs returne to owre purpoſe and declare with what woordes they ſalute the kynges chyldren when they are fyrſt borne: or howe they apply the begynnyng of theyr lyues to the end: And why their kynges are cauled by many names. Therfore when the kynge hath a ſonne borne, ſuch as dwel neare about his palaice or vyllage, repayre to the queenes chamber, where

The kyndes of frutes wherwith the[e]inhabitantes lyued fyrst.

Necessitie the moother of all artes.

136

The fine breade Cazabbi, made of the rootes of Iucca.

Howe Ceres fyrst founde wheate and barly in Egypte.

The rootes of ages.

The autours excuſe.

Plinie.

By what names they salute the kynges chyldren when they are borne.

The names and tytles of the Romane Emperours.

one ſaluteth the newe borne chylde with one name, and an other with an other name. God ſaue the thowe ſhyninge lampe ſayth one: An other cauleth him bryght and cleare. Sume name him the victourer of his enemies: and other ſume, the puiſſaunt conquerour deſcended of bludde royall, and bryghter then gold, with dyuers other ſuche vayne names. Therfore lyke as euery of the Romane emperours was cauled *Adiabenicus*, *Parthicus*, *Armenicus Dacicus*, *Gothicus*, and *Germanicus*, accordynge to the titles of theyr parentes and aunceſtours, euen ſo by th[e]impoſition of names inuented by other kynges, *Beuchicus Anaca*[*u*]*choa* the lord of the region of *Xaragua* (of whome and of the wyſe woman *Anachaona* his ſyſter, we haue ſpoken largely in the fyrſte Decade) was cauled by all theſe names folowynge: *Tureigua Hobin*: whiche is as muche to ſaye, as, a kynge ſhynynge as bryght as laton. *Starei*, that is, bryghte: *Huiho*, hyghneſſe: *Duiheynequen*, a ryche fludde. With all theſe names and more then fortye other ſuche, dooeth kynge *Beuchius* magnifye hym ſelfe as often as he commaundeth any thynge to bee doone or cauſeth any proclamation to bee made in his name. If the cryer by neglygence leaue owte any of theſe names, the king thynketh it to ſounde greatly to his contumely and reproche. The lyke is alſo of other. Howe fondely they vſe them ſelues in makynge their teſtamentes, we wyll nowe declare. They leaue th[e]inheritaunce of their kyngedomes to th[e]eldeſt ſoonnes of their eldeſt ſyſters. If ſhee fayle, to th[e]eldeſt of the ſeconde ſyſter and ſo of the thirde if the ſecond alſo faile. For they are owte of doubte that thoſe children coome of their bludde. But the children of their owne wyues, they counte to bee not legitimate. If there remayne none of their ſyſters children, they leaue th[e]inheritaunce to their broothers. And if they faile, it deſcendeth to their owne ſoonnes. Laſte of all, if al theſe faile, they aſſygne it to the woorthieſt, as to hym that is of greateſt power in all the Ilande, that he may defende their ſubiectes from their auncient enemyes. They take as many wyues as them lyſteth. They ſuffer the beſt beloued of the kynges wyues, and concubynes to bee buryed with hym. *Anachaona* the ſyſter of *Beuchius* the kyng of *Xaragua*, being a woman of ſuche wiſedome and cunnynge that in makynge of rhymes and balettes ſhee was counted a prophetiſſe emonge the beſte, commaunded, that emonge all the wyues and concubynes of the kinge her brother, the fayrereſt (whoſe name was *Guanahattabenechina*) ſhulde be buried alyue with him, and two of her waytyng maydes with her. Shee woolde alſo haue appointed dyuers other to that offyce, if ſhee had not byn otherwiſe perſwaded by the prayers of certeyne fryers of ſaincte Fraunces order whiche chaunced then to bee preſente. They ſaye that this *Guanahattabenechina* had none in all the Iland comparable to her in bewtie. She buried with her all her iewelles and twentie of her beſt ornamentes. Their cuſtome is, to place beſyde euery of them in their ſepultures, a cuppe full of water and a portion of the fyne breade of *Cazabbi*. In *Xaragua*, the regyon of this kynge *Beuchius*, and in *Hazua*, parte of the regyon of *Caiabo*, alſo in the fayre vale of ſalte and freſhe lakes, and lykewiſe in the region of *Yaquino* in the prouynce of *Bainoa*, it rayneth but ſeldome. In al theſe regyons are foſſes or trenches made of oulde tyme, wherby they conueye the waters in order to water their fyeldes, with no leſſe arte then doo th[e]inhabitours of newe Carthage, and of the kyngedome of *Murcien* in *Spartaria* for the ſeldoome faule of rayne. The region of *Maguana*, deuydeth the prouynce of *Bainoa* from *Caiabo*, and *Zauana* from *Guaccaiarima*. In the deepe vales, they are troubled with raine more often then nedeth. Alſo the confynes of the chiefe citie named ſaincte Dominike are moiſter then is neceſſary. In other places, it rayneth moderately. There are therfore in the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*, dyuers and variable motions of the elementes, as we reade the lyke of manye other regions. Of their colonies or mantions which the Spaniardes haue erected in this Ilande we haue ſpoken ſuffycientelye beefore. They haue ſence that tyme buylded theſe vyllages: *Portus Platæ*, *Portus Regalis*, *Lares*, *Villanoua*, *Azuam*, and *Saluaterra*. Hauynge ſayde thus muche of the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola* the moother and ladye of the other Ilandes, and as it were *Tethys* the moſte bewtifull wyfe of *Neptunus* the god of the ſea, let vs nowe entreate ſumwhat of her Nymphes and faire *Nereides* whiche waite vppon her and adourne her on euery ſyde. Wee wyll therfore begynne at the neareſt cauled the newe *Arethuſa*, ſoo named of the fontayne *Arethuſa* in the Ilande of Sicilie. This is famous by reaſon of a ſprynge: but otherwyſe vnprofytable. Owre men named it of late, *Duas Arbores*, bycauſe it hath onely twoo trees groynge in it: nere vnto the whiche is a fountaine that commeth from the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola* throughe the ſecreate paſſages of the earth vnder the ſea, and breaketh foorth in this Ilande, as the ryuer *Alpheus* in *Achaia* runneth vnder the ſea from the citie of *Elide*, and breaketh foorth in the Ilande of Sicilie in the fountayne *Arethuſa*. That the fountayne of this newe *Arethuſa* hath his original from the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*, it is manifeſt hereby, that the water iſſhewynge owte of the fountayne, bryngeth with it the leaues of many trees whiche growe in *Hiſpaniola*, and not in this Ilande. They ſaye that the fountayne hath his originall from the ryuer *Yiamiroa* in the region of *Guaccaiarima* confynynge with the land of *Zauana* This Ilande is not paſte a myle in circuite, and commodious for fyſſher men. Directly towarde the Eaſte (as it were the porter kepynge the enterie to *Tethys*) lyeth the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwyſe cauled *Burichena*) wherof wee haue ſpoken largely before. This aboundeth with golde: and in fruitefull ſoile, is equall with her mother *Hiſpaniola*. In this are many colonies or manſions of Spaniardes, whiche applye them ſelues to gatherynge of golde. Towarde the weſt on the No the ſyde, great *Cuba* (for the longeneſſe therof, longe

Howe they make theyr testamentes

So dyd grea[t] Alexander

The kynges wyues and concubines are buryed with hym.

They burie theyr iewels with them.

A dreame of an other lyfe after this.

Where it rayneth but seldome.

Where it rayneth much.

Variable motions of the elementes.

The colonies and vyllages which the Spanyardes haue buylded

The other Ilandes about hispaniola.

The Ilande Arethusa.

A sprynge runnyng vnder the sea frome hispaniola to Arethusa.

137

138

The Iland of Sancti Iohannis.

The Ilande of Cuba.

ſuppoſed to be the continent or fyrme lande) wardeth owre *Tethys* on the backe halfe. This is muche longer then *Hiſpaniola*: And from the Eaſte to the Weſte, is diuyded in the myddeſt with the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancri*. *Hiſpaniola* and the other lyinge on the South ſyde of this, are included almoſt in the mydde ſpace betwene the ſayde Tropyke and the Equinoctiall lyne, whiche many of the oulde writers ſuppoſed to bee vnhabitable and deſert by reaſon of the feruent heate of the ſoonne in that clyme as they coniectured. But they were deceaued in their opinion They affyrme that rytcher golde mynes are founde in *Cuba* then in *Hiſpaniola*. They ſaye alſo that euen nowe while I wryte theſe thynges, there is golde gathered together ready to the meltyng, amountynge to the quantitie of a hundreth and foureſcore thouſande Caſtellans of gold, an argument ſurely of great rycheſſe. *Iamaica* is more towarde the Southe then theſe: And is a pleaſaunte and fruitefull Ilande, of ſoyle apte for corne, graſſes, and ſettes, it conſyſteth of onely one mountayne. Th[e]inhabitauntes are warrelyke men and of good wytte. *Colonus* compared it to Sicilie in bygneſſe. They whiche of late ſearched it more exactely, ſaye that it is ſumwhat leſſe: but not muche. It is thought to be without gold and precious ſtoones, as the like was ſuppoſed of *Cuba* at the begynnynge. The Ilande of *Guadalupea* (fyrſte named *Caraqueira*) lyinge on the Southe ſyde of *Hiſpaniola*, is foure degrees nearer the Equinoctiall. It is eaten and indented with two goulfes (as wee reade of great Britanye nowe cauled Englande, and Caledonia nowe cauled Scotlande) beinge in maner two Ilandes. It hath famous portes. In this they founde that gumme whiche the Apothecaries caule *Animæ Album*, whoſe fume is holſome ageynſt reumes and heauyneſſe of the heade. The tree whiche engendereth this gumme, beareth a fruite muche lyke to a date, beinge a ſpanne in length. When it is opened, it ſeemeth to conteyne a certayne ſweete meale. As owre huſbande men are accuſtomed to reſerue cheſtenuttes and ſuche other harde fruites all the wynter, ſoo do they the dates of this tree, beynge muche lyke vnto a fygge tree. They founde alſo in this Ilande, Pyne trees of the beſte kynde, and ſuche other deyntie dyſſhes of nature, wherof wee haue ſpoken largely before. Ye, they thyncke that th[e]inhabitauntes of other Ilandes, had their ſeedes of ſoo many pleaſaunt frutes from henſe. For the Canibales beinge a wylde and wanderynge people, and ouer runnynge all the countreys aboute them to hunte for mannes fleſhe, were accuſtomed to brynge home with them what ſo euer they founde ſtraunge or profytable in any place. They are intractable, and wyll admytte no ſtraungiers. It ſhall therfore bee needefull to ouercoome them with great poure. For as well the women as men, are experte archiers, and vſe to inueneme their arrowes. When the men go foorthe of the lande a man huntynge, the women manfully defende their coaſtes ageynſt ſuche as attempte to inuade the ſame. And hereby I ſuppoſe it was thought that there were Ilandes in the Ocean, inhabited onely with women, as *Colonus* the admirall hym ſelfe perſwaded me, as I haue ſayde in the fyrſte decade. This Ilande hath alſo frutefull mountaynes and playnes, and notable ryuers. It nouryſſheth honye in trees, and in the caues of rockes, as in *Palma* one of the Ilandes of *Canarie*, honye is gathered emong the briers and bramble buſſhes. Aboute. xviii. myles Eaſteward from this Iland, lieth an Iland which owr men named *Deſiderata*, beynge. xx. myles in circuite and verye fayre. Alſo aboute ten myles from *Guadalupea* towarde the Southe, lyeth the Ilande of *Galanta*, beynge thirtie myles in circuite and playne. It was ſo named for the neateneſſe and bewtifulnes therof. Nyne myles diſtant from *Guadalupea* toward the Eaſt, there are ſyxe ſmaule Ilandes named *Todos Sanctos* or *Barbata*. Theſe are full of rockes and barren: Yet neceſſarye to bee knowen to ſuche as vſe to trauayle the ſeas of theſe coaſtes. Ageyne, from *Guadalupea*. xxxv. myles towarde the Northe, there is an Ilande named *Monſſerratus*, conteynynge in circuite fortye myles, hauynge alſo in it a mountayne of notable heyght. The Ilande named *Antiqua*, diſtante from *Guadalupea* thirtie myles, is aboute fortye myles in circuite. *Diegus Colonus* the ſoonne and heyre of *Chriſtopher Colonus*, tould me that his wyfe (whome he lefte in the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola* at his comming into Spaine to the courte) did write vnto hym, that of late emonge the Ilandes of the Canibales, there is one founde whiche aboundeth with golde. On the lefte ſyde of *Hiſpaniola* towarde the Southe, neare vnto the hauen *Beata*, there lyeth an Ilande named *Portus Bellus*. They tell maruelous thynges of the monſters of the ſea aboute this Ilande, and eſpecially of the tortoyſes. For they ſaye that they are bygger then greate rounde targettes. At ſuche tyme as the heate of nature moueth theym too generation, they coome foorthe of the ſea: And makynge a deepe pytte in the ſande, they laye three or foure hundreth egges therin. When they haue thus emptied their bagge of conception, they putte as muche of the ſande ageyne into the pytte, as maye ſuffyce to couer the egges: And ſoo reſorte ageyne to the ſea, nothynge carefull of their ſucceſſyon. At the daye appoynted of nature to the procreation of theſe beaſtes, there creapeth owte a multitude of tortoyſes, as it were pyſſemares ſwarmynge owte of an ante hyll: And this onely by the heate of the ſoonne withowte any helpe of their parentes. They ſaye that their egges are in maner as bygge as geeſe egges. They alſo coompare the fleſhe of theſe tortoyſes, to be equall with veale in taſte. There are beſyde theſe, innumerable Ilandes the whiche they haue not yet ſearched: nor yet is it greatly neceſſarye to ſyfte this meale ſo fynely. It maye ſuffyce to vnderſtond that there are large landes and many regyons whiche ſhal hereafter receaue owre nations, tonges, and maners: and therwith embraſe owre relygion. The Troyans dydde not ſoodenly replenyſhe Aſia, the Tyrians Libia, nor the Greekes and Phoenices Spayne.

Habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall.

The ryche golde mynes of Cuba.

The Iland of Iamaica.

The Iland of Guadalupea.

England and Scotlande.

The gumme cauled Anime album.

Dates.

Pine trees.

The Canibales.

Whereby it was thought that there were Ilandes of women.

Hony in trees and rockes.

The Ilande desiderata.

The Ilande Galanta.

The Ilandes of Todos Sanctos or Barbata.

The Ilande monsserratus.

139

The Ilande Antiqua.

The Ilande Portus Bellus

Great Tortoyses.

The generation of Tortoyses.

The egges of Tortoyses.

Innumerable Ilandes.

Troians.
Tirians.
Greekes.
Phenitians.

The North Ilandes.

As touchynge the Ilandes which lye on the north ſyde of *Hiſpaniola*, I haue let paſſe to ſpeake. For albeit they are commodious for tyllage and fyſſhynge, yet are they lefte of the Spanyardes as poore and of ſmaule value. We wyll nowe therefore take owre leaue of this owlde *Tethis* with her moyſt and watery Nymphes: And receaue to owre newe acquaintance the bewetifull ladye of the South ſea rychely crowned with great pearles, the Ilande of *Dites* beinge ryche both in name and in treaſure. In my epiſtell booke whiche I ſente vnto yowre holynes this laſt yeare, I declared howe *Vaſchus Nunnez Balboa* the capitayne of them whiche paſſed ouer the daungerous mountaynes towarde the South ſea, learned by report that in the proſpect of thoſe coaſtes there laye an Ilande aboundynge with pearles of the greateſt ſorte: And that the kynge therof was ryche and of great power, infeſtynge with warres the other kynges his bortherers, and eſpecially *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus*. We declared further howe at that tyme it was lefte vntouched by reaſon of the ragynge tempeſtes whiche troubled that South ſea three moonethes in the yeare. But it is nowe better knowen to owre men, who haue nowe alſo brought that fierce kynge to humanitie: and conuerted hym from a cruell tyger to one of the meeke ſheepe of Chriſtes flocke ſanctifyed with the water of baptiſme with all his famelie and kyngedome. It ſhall not therefore bee from owre purpoſe to declare by the gouernaunce of what capitaines or by what meanes theſe thynges were ſo happely atchyued.

The Ilandes of the south sea.

The Iland of pearles.

Wylde beasts must be tamed with the rod.

¶ The tenth booke of the thyrde Decade.

An expedition to the Ilande of Dites in the south sea

AT the arryuall of *Petrus Arias* the newe gouernour of *Dariena*, he gaue commaundment that one *Gaſpar Moralis* ſhuld take in hande th[e]expedition to the Ilande of *Dites*. He therefore tooke his vyage fyrſt to *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus* kynges of the South, whom *Vaſchus* beefore had concyled and left fryndes to the Chriſtians. They frendely and magnifycally enterteyned owr men who prepared them a nauie of the kynges boates to paſſe ouer into this Ilande, which they caule *Dites* and not *Margarita* or *Margaritea*, although it abounde with pearles which in the latin tonge are cauled *Margaritæ*. For the fyrſt cauled an other by this name, which lyeth next to the mouth of *Os Draconis* in the region of *Paria*, in the which alſo is founde greate plentie of pearles. *Gaſpar* brought with hym onely threeſcore armed men to the Ilande, for that he coulde conuey ouer no greater number by reaſon of the ſmaulenes and narownes of theyr boates or barkes which they caule *Culchas*, made of one hole piece of tymber as we haue ſayde before. The kynge of the Ilande came foorth ageinſt them fiercely with cruell and threatenynge countenaunce, and with a great bande of armed men cryinge in maner of a larome and in token of the battayle, *Guazzauara, Guazzauara*, which is as much to ſaye as, battayle ageynſt the enemie: And is as it weare a watch worde to giue th[e]onſet, wherwith alſo they threwe theyr dartes. For they haue not th[e]uſe of bowes. They were ſo obſtinate and deſperate that they aſſayled owre men with foure *Guazzauaras*, that is, battayles. At the length owre men with certeyne of *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus* men (being eoulde enemies to this kynge of the Ilande) gotte the vpper hande by reaſon they aſſayled the kynge ſoodenly and vnwares. Yet was he determyned to aſſemble a greater power, and once ageyne to attempt the fortune of warre, but that he was otherwyſe perſuaded by the kinges his bortherers which counſayled him to gyue ouer and ſubmyt hym ſelfe: ſumtyme by th[e]exemple of them ſelues and other threatenynge the deſtruction of his flooryſhynge kyngedome: And otherwhyles declarynge vnto hym the humanitie and gentelnes of owre men, by whoſe frendſhip he might obteyne honoure and quyetnes to hym and his: wyllyng hym furthermore to conſider what chaunced vnto them which the yeare before reſyſted and aduentured the haſarde of the battayle as dyd theſe kynges, *Poncha*, *Pocchorroſa*, *Quarequa*, *Chiapes*, and *Tumaccus* with ſuch other. By theſe perſuaſions, the king ſubmytted hym ſelfe and came freendely to owre men whom he conducted to his palaice which they ſay to be maruelouſly adourned and princelyke. As ſoone as they entered into the pallaice, he brought foorth a baſket of curious woorkemanſhyp and full of pearles which he gaue them. The ſumme of theſe pearles amounted to the weyght of a hundreth and ten poundes after. viii. vnces to the pounde. Beinge ageyne rewarded of owre men with ſuch tryfles as they brought with them of purpoſe, as garlandes of Chriſtall and glaſſe and other counterfet ſtones of dyuers colours, with lookyng glaſſes alſo and laton belles, and eſpecially two or three Iren hatchets (which they more eſteme then great heapes of gold) he thought hym ſelfe abundantly recompenſed. They laughe owre men to ſcorne that they wyll departe with ſo great and neceſſarie a thyng for any ſumme of golde: affyrmynge an axe or hatchet to bee profytable for manye vſes of men: and that golde ſerueth onely for wanton pleaſures, and not to be greatly neceſſary. Beynge therfore ioyfull and gladde of the frendeſhyppe of owre men, he tooke the capitaine by the hand and brought

Os Draconis.
Paria.

The Iland of Margaritea.

140

A conflict.

The kynge of the Ilande of Dites submitteth himselfe.

The kynges pallaice.

A hundreth and ten pounde weight of pearles.

him with certeine of his familiars to the higheſt towre of his palaice, from whenſe they myght prōſpecte the mayne ſea. Then caſtyng his eyes about hym on euery ſide, and lookynge towarde the Eaſte, he ſayde vnto them. Beholde here lyeth open before yowe the infynite ſea extended beyond the ſconne beames. Then tournyng hym toward the Southe and Weſte, he ſygnyfied vnto them that the lande which laye before their eyes, the toppes of whoſe great montaynes they myght ſee, was exceadynge large. Then coommynge ſumwhat nearer, he ſayde: Beholde theſe Ilandes on the ryght hande and on the lefte, whiche all obeye vnto owre empyre, and are ryche, happye, and bleſſed, if yowe caule thoſe landes bleſſed whiche abounde with golde and perle[s]. Wee haue in this Ilande lyttle plentie of golde: But the deepe places of all the ſeas aboute theſe Ilandes, are full of perles: wherof yowe ſhall receaue of me as many as yow wyll requyre, ſo that ye perſyſte in the bonde of frendeſhyppe whiche yowe haue begunne. I greatly deſyre yowre frendeſhyppe, and woolde gladlye haue the fruition of yowre thynges, whiche I ſette muche more by then myllyons of perles. Yowe ſhall therfore haue no cauſe to doubte of any vnfaythfulneſſe or breache of frendeſhyppe on my behalfe. Owre men gaue hym lyke frendly woordes: and encouraged hym with many fayre promyſſes to doō as he had ſayde. When owre men were nowe in a redyneſſe to departe, they couenaunted with hym to paye yearely to the greate kynge of Caſtyle a hundreth pounde weyghte of perles. He gladlye agreed to their requeſt, and tooke it for no great thyng: nor yet thought hym ſelfe any whitte the more to becoome tributarie. With this kynge they founde ſuche plentie of hartes and connies, that owre men ſtondynge in their houſes myght kyll as manye as them lyſte with their arrowes. They lyue heare verye pleaſauntly, hauynge greate plentie of al thynges neceſſary. This Ilande is ſcarſely ſyxe degrees diſtant from the Equinoctiall lyne. They haue the ſame maner of breade made of rootes and the graine of *Maizium*, and wyne made of ſeedes and fruites, euen as they haue in the region of *Comogra* and in other places aſwell in the Ilandes as in the firme lande. This kynge is nowe baptiſed with all his familye and ſubiectes. His deſyre was at his baptiſme, to bee named *Petrus Arias* after the name of the gouernour. When owre men departed, he accompanied them to the ſea ſyde and furnyſſhed them with boates to retourne to the continent. Owre men diuided the perles emonge them, reſeruyng the fyfte portion to be delyuered to th[e]offycers of the kynges Excheker in thoſe partes. They ſaye that theſe perles were maruelous precious, faire, oriente, and exceadynge bygge: In ſo muche that they broughte manye with theym bygger then haſell nuttes. Of what price and value they myghte bee, I conſyder by one perle the which *Paulus* prediceſſour to yowre holines, bowght at the ſecond hand of a marchant of Venece for foure and forty thouſande ducates. Yet emonge thoſe whiche were brought from this Ilande, there was one bought euen in *Dariena* for a thouſande and two hundreth Caſtelans of golde. This was almoſt as bygge as a meane walnutte: And came at the length to the handes of *Petrus Arias* the gouernoure, who gaue it to that noble and faithefull woman his wyfe, of whoſe maner of departure with her huſbande, wee haue made mention before. Wee muſte then needes thinke that this was verye precious which was bowght ſo deare emonge ſuche a multitude of perles where they were not bought by one at once, but by poundes and at the leaſt by ounces. It is alſo to be thought that the Venecian marchaunte boughte his for no great ſum of mony in the Eaſt parts. But he ſould it the dearer for that he chaunced to lyue in thoſe laſciuious and wanton dayes when men were gyuen to ſuche nyſe and ſuperfluous pleaſures, and mette with a marchaunt for his purpoſe. But lette vs nowe ſpeake ſumwhat of the ſhelfyſſhes in the whiche perles are engendered. It is not vnknowen to yowre holyneſſe, that Ariſtotell, and Plinie his folower, were of dyuers opinions as concernynge the generation of perles. But theſe Indians and owre men, reſt onely in one aſſertion, not aſſentyng to them in any other: as eyther that they wander in the ſea, or that they moue at anye tyme after they are borne. They wyll therfore that there bee certayne greene places as it were medowes in the bottome of the ſea, bryngynge foorthe an herbe muche lyke vnto thyme, and affyrme that they haue ſeene the ſame: And that they are engendered, noryſſhed, and growe therin, as wee ſee th[e]increaſe and ſucceſſion of oyſters to growe aboute them ſelues. Alſo that theſe fyſſhes delyteth not in the conuerſation or coompanye of the ſea dogges: Nor yet to bee contented with onely one, twoo, or three, or at the moſte foure pearles: Affyrmyng that in the ſyſſhynge places of the kynge of this Ilande, there was founde a hundreth pearles in one fyſhe, the whiche *Gaſpar Moralis* the capitayne hym ſelfe, and his coompanions, diligently numbered. For it pleaſed the kynge at their beynge there and in their preſence, to commaund his diuers to go a fyſſhynge for thoſe kynde of fyſſhes. They compare the matrices of theſe fyſſhes, to the places of conception in hennes, in the whiche their egges are engendered in great multitudes and cluſters: And beleue that theſe fyſſhes brynge foorth their byrth in lyke maner. For the better proſe wherof, they ſaye that they founde certaine pearles coommynge foorthe of their matreces, as beynge nowe coome to the tyme of their full rypeneſſe, and moued by nature to coome owte of their moothers wombe openynge it ſelfe in tyme conuenient. Lykewiſe that within a while after, they ſawe other ſuccede in lyke maner. So that to conclude, they ſawe ſum coommynge foorthe, and other ſumme yet abydinge the tyme of their perfection: whiche beyng complete, they alſo became looſe and opened the matrice. They perceaued the pearles to bee incloſed in the mydd-eſt of their bellies, there to be noriſſhed and increaſe as an infante ſuckynge his moothers pappes within her wombe,

The kynges woordes.

Ilandes rych in golde and pearles.

C. [hundred] pounde weyght of perles yerely for a tribute.

Plentie of hartes and cunnies.

141

Wyne of frutes and sedes

The kynge is baptised.

The fyft part of perles due to the kynge.

Byg perles.

A perle for a pope.

An other perle of great price.

Nise and superfluous pleasures.

Dyuers opinions of the generation of pearles.

Herbes in the bottome of the sea.

A hundreth perles in one shell fysshe.

The matrice of the perle fysshe.

The byrth of perles.

before hee moue to coome foorthe of her priuye places. And if it chaunce any of theſe ſhelfyſſhes to be founde ſcatered in the ſande of the ſea (as I my ſelfe haue ſeene oyſters diſparcled on the ſhores in diuers places of the Ocean) they affyrme that they haue byn violently dryuen thither from the bottome of the ſea by force of tempeſtes, and not to haue wandered thither of them ſelues. But, that they becoome white by the cleareneſſe of the mornynge dewe, or waxe yelowe in troubled wether, or otherwyſe that they ſeeme to reioyce in faire wether and cleare ayer, or contrary wyſe to bee as it were aſtoniſſhed and dymme in thunder and tem-
142 peſtes, with ſuche other, the perfecte knowledge hereof is not to bee looked for at the handes of theſe vnlearned men whiche handell the matter but groſſely, and enquire no further then occaſyon ſerueth. Yet do

Where the byggest, meane, and least pearles are engendred

they affyrme by th[e]experience and induſtrie of the dyuers, that the greateſt pearles lye in the deepeſt places, they of the meane ſorte hygher, and the leaſt hygheſt of all and nearer to the brymme of the water. And ſaye therfore that the greateſt do not wander: but that they are created, nouryſſhed, and increaſe in the deepeſt places of the ſea, whether fewe, dyuers, and that but ſeeldome dare aduenture to diue ſo deepe to gather them,

Sea crabbes

aſwel for feare of the ſea crabbes whiche wander emonge theſe perle fyſhes to feede of them, and for feare of other monſters of the ſea, as alſo leſte their brethe ſhuld fayle them into long remayninge in the water. And

The sea muscles wherein perles are engendred.

this they ſaye to bee the cauſe why the owldeſt and therfore byggeſt ſea muſcles, inhabyte the deepeſt places from whenſe they are not lyghtly moued by tempeſtes. Furthermore, howe muche the bygger and oulder theſe fyſhes are, they ſay that in their larger matrices, the greater number and bygger pearles are founde: And that for this cauſe, there are fewer founde of the byggeſt ſorte. They thyncke alſo, that when they fyrſte faule from their fyſſhes in the deepe places, they are deuoured of other fyſſhes, bycauſe they are not yet harde. Ageyne, the ſmauleſt differ from the byggeſt in a certayne ſwellynge or impoſtumation whiche the Spaniardes caule a tympane. For they denye that to be a pearle which in oulde muſcles cleaueth faſt to the ſhel: But that it is a warte, whiche beynge raſed from the ſhell with a fyle, is rounde and bryght but onely of one ſyde, and not precious, beynge rather of the nature of the fyſhe it ſelfe, then of a pearle. They confeſſe that they haue ſeene certayne of theſe muſcles cleauynge on rockes: Yet theſe but fewe, and nothynge woorthe. It is alſo to bee thought that the pearle fyſſhes or ſea muſcles whiche are founde in India, Arabie, the redde ſea, or Taprobana, are ruled in ſuche order as the afore named famous autours haue written. For their opinion herein is not vtterly to bee reiected, foraſmuche as they were learned men and trauayled longe in the ſerchynge of theſe thynges. But wee haue nowe ſpoken ſuffyciently of theſe ſea fyſſhes and of their egges which the fonde nyſenes and wantonneſſe of men haue made dearer then the egges of hennes or geeſe. Lette vs therfore entreate ſumwhat of other particular thynges whiche are coome to owre knowledge of late. We haue elles where largely deſcribed the mouthes of the goulfe of *Vraba*, with ſundrye and variable regions diuided with the manyfolde goulfes of that ſea. But as concernynge the Weſt coaſtes in the whiche owre men haue buylded houſes and planted their

The regions of the East syde of the goulfe of Vraba.

habitations on the bankes of *Dariena*, I haue no newe matter to write. Yet as touching the Eaſt partes of the goulfe, I haue learned as foloweth. They ſaye that the vnyuerſal lande of the Eaſt region of the goulfe from the corner therof farre reachynge into the ſea, and from the extreame or vtter moſte mouthe of the ſame receauynge the waters of the ſea whiche faule into it, euen vnto *Os Draconis* and *Paria*, is by one generall name

The region of Caribana.

cauled *Caribana*, of the *Caribes* or Canibales whiche are founde in euery regyon in this tracte. But from whenſe

The original of the Canibales.

they had their particular originall, and howe leauynge their natiue ſoyle, they haue ſpredde their generation ſo farre lyke a peſtiferous contagion, we wyll nowe declare. Therfore from the fyrſte fronte reachynge foorth into the ſea (in whoſe tracte we ſaid that *Fogeda* faſtened his foote) toward the corner, about nyne myles diſtant,

The vylages of Caribana.

there lyeth a vyllage of *Caribana* named *Futeraca*. Three myles diſtant from this, is the vyllage of *Vraba*, of the whiche it is thoughte that the hole goulfe tooke his name, bycauſe this vyllage was once the heade of the kyngedome. Aboute ſyxe myles from this, is *Feti*. Nyne myles from *Feti*, is *Zerema*: And about twelue myles

Manhunters.

from this, *Sorache*. Owre men founde all theſe vyllages full of people, all the whiche gyue them ſelues onely to manhuntynge. In ſo muche that if they lacke enemyes ageynſt whom they maye keepe warre, they exceriſe crueltie ageynſt them ſelues, and eyther fleye one the other, or elles dryue the vanquyſſhed to flyghte. Whereby it is apparante that by theſe their continuall warres, and dryuynge the one the other owte of their countreis, this infection hath gonne ſo farre not onelye on the fyrme lande, but alſo into the Ilandes. I was alſo aduertiſed of an other thynge the whiche to my iudgement, ſeemeth woorthye to bee putte in memorye.

143 One *Corrales* a iudge in cauſes of lawe amonge the Spanyardes of *Dariena*, ſayth that on a tyme walkyng abrode with his booke in his hande, he met by the waye with a fugityue which had fledde from the great landes lyinge farre toward the weſte, and remayned here with a Kynge wyth whom he was enterteyned. When this

Bookes.

Loke in the begynnyng of the booke of the landes lately founde.

man perceaued the lawier lookynge on his booke, marueylynge thereat, he came runninge vnto him, and by interpretours of the kynge whom he ſerued, ſpake thus vnto him: Haue yowe alſo bookes wherin yowe may reſerue thynges in perpetual memorye? And letters wherby yowe maye declare yowre mynde to ſuche as are abſent? And herewith deſyred that the booke might be opened vnto hym, ſuppoſyng that he ſhulde therein haue founde the letters of his owne countrey. But when he ſawe theim vnlyke, he ſayde further that in his

countrey there were cities fortified with waules and gouerned by lawes: and that the people alſo vſed apparell. But of what religion they were, I dyd not learne. Yet had owre men knowleage both by the woordes and ſignes of this fugitiue, that they were circumciſed. What nowe thinke yowe hereby (moſt holy father) Or what do yowe diuine may come hereof when tyme ſhall ſubdue al theſe vnder yowre throne? Let vs nowe entermyngle certeyne ſmaule thynges amonge theſe great matters. I haue not thought good to pretermitte that which chaunced to *Iohannes Solyſius*, who, to ſearche the South ſyde of the ſuppoſed continent, departed with three ſhippes from porte *Ioppa* (not farre diſtante from the Ilandes of *Gades* or Cales in the Ocean) the fourth day of the Ides of September in the yeare. M. D. xv. Or what ſucceſſe *Iohannes Pontius* had, whom the newe gouernour *Petrus Arias* appoynted to vanquiſhe and deſtroy the Caribes or Canibales, deuourers of mans fleſhe. Alſo to what ende the vyages of the other capitaynes came, whiche were ſent foorth dyuers wayes at the ſame tyme: As *Gonzalus Badaiocius*, *Franciſcus Bezerra*, and *Valleius*. *Iohannes Solicius* tooke the matter in hande in an euyll houre. He ſayled beyonde the poynt of ſaynt Auguſtine, (which they caule *Cabo. S. Auguſtini*) toward the South ſyde of the ſuppoſed continent beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne. For (as we haue ſayde before) that poynt reacheth Southwarde to the ſeuenth degree of the South pole cauled the Antartike. He proceaded in that viage ſyxe hundreth leagues: And founde the lande from the poynte to extende ſo farre towarde the South beyonde the Equinoctiall, that he came to the thirtie degree of the South pole. As he ſayled thus forwarde, hauynge nowe on his backe halfe the ſtarres named *Caput Draconis*, (that is, the dragons heade) and the regions of *Paria* lyinge northwarde frome hym, and proſpectynge towarde the pole Artyke, he chaunced to faule into the handes of the fylthye Canibales. For theſe craftie foxes ſeemed to make ſignes of peace, when in theyr mindes they conceaued a hope of a daintie banquet: And eſpying their enemies a farre of, beganne to ſwalowe theyr pettle as their mouthes watered for greedines of theyr pray. As vnhappye *Solyſius* deſcended with as many of his coompanie as coulde enter into the boate of the byggeſt ſhippe, ſoodenly a great multytude of th[e]inhabitantes burſte foorth vppon them, and ſlew them euery man with clubbes, euen in the ſyght of theyr felowes. They caried away the boate, and in a moment broke it al to fytters. Not one man eſcaped. Theyr furye not thus ſatiffied, they cutte the ſlayne men in pieces euen vppon the ſhore where theyr felowes might beholde this horrible ſpectacle from the ſea. But they being ſtryken with feare through this exemple, durſt not coome foorth of theyr ſhyppes, or diuiſe howe to reuenge the death of theyr Capitaine and coompanyons. They departed therefore from theſe vnfortunate coaſtes: And by the waye ladynge theyr ſhippes with braſell returned home ageyne with loſſe and heauie chere. Of theſe thynges I was aduertyſed of late by theyr owne letters. What they haue els doone, I ſhal haue more particular knowleage hereafter. *Iohannes Pontius* was alſo repulſed by the Canibales in the Ilande of *Guadalupea* beinge one of the chiefe Ilandes of theyr habitacion. For when they ſawe owre men a farre of on the ſea, they ley in ambuſhe ſoodenly to inuade them when they ſhulde coome alande. Owre men ſent foorth a fewe foote men and with them theyr laundreſſes to waſſhe theyr ſhertes and ſheetes. For from the Ilande of *Ferrea* beinge one of the Ilandes of Canarie (euen vnto this Ilande, for the ſpace of foure thouſande and twoo hundreth myles) they had ſeene no lande where they myght fynde any freſſhe water: for as muche as in all this large ſpace, the Ocean is without Ilandes. At theyr commynge therfore to lande, the Canibales aſſayled them, caried awaye the women, and put the men to ſuche diſtreſſe that fewe of them eſcaped. By reaſon wherof, *Pontius* being greately diſcomfited, durſte not inuade the Canibales, fearynge theyr venemed arrowes which theſe naked manhunters can direct moſt certenly. Thus good *Pontius* faylyng of his purpoſe, was fayne to gyue ouer the Canibales, whome (beinge ſafe and vnder the houſe rouſe) he threatened to vanquyſhe and deſtroy. Whether he went from thenſe, or what newe thynges he founde, I haue as yet no further knowleage. By theſe myſſortunes, *Solyſius* loſte his lyfe, and *Pontius* his honour. Let vs nowe ſpeake of an other whoſe enterpryſe came to lyke purpoſe the ſame yeare. *Iohannes Aiora* borne in the citie of *Corduba*, a man of noble parentage, ſent in ſteade of the Lieuetenaunt (as we haue ſayde) more couetous of golde then carefull of his charge or deſyrous of prayſe for well deſeruynge, ſought occaſions of querelynge ageynſt the kynges and ſpoyled many, violently extortynge golde of them ageynſt ryght and equitie: And further handeled them ſo extremely, that of frendes they became moſt cruel enemies: In ſo much that they ceaſed not with deſperat myndes by all meanes they coulde to ſley owre men openly or priuilye. By reaſon wherof it is coome to paſſe, that where before they bartered quyetly exchanginge ware for ware, they are nowe fayne to doo all thynges by force of armes. When he had thus exacted a great quantitie of golde of them (as it is ſayd) he fledde priuilie and tooke away a ſhyppe with him by ſtelth as the common rumoure goeth: Nor yet hetherto haue we hard whyther he went or where he is arryued. Sum ſuſpect that *Petrus Arias* the gouernour ſhulde conſente to his departure bycauſe this *Iohannes Aiora* is brother to *Gonſalus Aiora* the kynges hiſtoriographer, a man booth lerned, and expert in the diſcipline of warre: and ſo much the gouernours frend, that theſe two amonge a fewe, may be counted exemples of rare amitie. I my ſelfe alſo am greately bounde vnto theym bothe and haue longe enioyed theyr frendeſhippe. Yet ſhal I deſyre them bothe to pardone me in declarynge my phantaſie herein, that in all the turmoyles and tragicall affayres of the Ocean,

Circumcised people.

What chaunced to the Capitaines whiche the gouernour sent dyuers wayes. Looke decade iii. liber. vi.

The vyage of Iohannes Solisius. *Cap. S. Augustini*

Iohn Solysius is slaine of the Canibales.

The fiercenes of the Canibales.

Brasell.

Iohannes Pontius is repulsed by the Canibales.

144

The vyage of Iohannes Aiora. Looke decade iii. liber. vi.

The lewde behauour of Iohn Aiora.

nothynge hath ſo muche diſpleaſed me as the couetouſnes of this man who hath ſo diſturbed the pacified myndes of the kynges. Nowe emonge theſe troubelous chaunces, let vs rehearſe the variable fortune of *Gonſalus Badaiocius* and his felowes, whoſe proſperous begynnynges, ended with vnfortunate ſucceſſe. *Gonſalus* therfore in the moneth of May in the yeare of Chriſte M. D. xv. departed from *Dariena* with foureſcore armed men, directynge his vyage towarde the Sonthe, and reſtynge in no place vntyll he came to the region of *Cerabaro* which owre men named *Gratia Dei*, diſtant from *Dariena* about a hundreth and foureſcore myles: for they caule it threeſcore leaques. He ſpente certeyne dayes here in Idelneſſe: for he coulde neyther by fayre meanes nor by foule, allure the kynge of the regyon to coome to hym. While he laye thus idelly, there came to hym other fyftie men ſente frome *Dariena* vnder the gouernaunce of capytayne *Lodouicus Mercado* who departed from *Dariena* in the calendes of Maye, to th[e]intent to ſearch th[e]inner partes of thoſe regyons. When they mette together, they determyned after conſultation, to paſſe ouer the montaynes lyinge towarde the Southe, euen vnto the Southe ſea latelye founde. Beholde nowe a wonderfull thynge: That in a lande of ſuche maruelous longitude in other places, they founde it here to bee onely aboute fyftie myles diſtant to the Southe ſea: for they counte it. xvii. leaques. as the maner of the Spanyardes is to reken, and not by myles. Yet ſaye they that a leaque conſyſteth of three myles by lande and foure by ſea as wee haue noted before. In the toppes of the mountaynes and turnynge of the waters, they founde a kynge named *Iuana*, whoſe kyngedome is alſo named *Coiba* as is the regyon of kynge *Careta*, of whome we haue made mention elles where. But for as muche as the regyon of this *Iuana*, is rycher in golde, they named it *Coiba Dites*, that is, *Coiba* the rych. For, wherſoeuer they dygged the grounde, whether it were on the drye lande or in the weate chanelles of the ryuers, they founde the ſande whiche they caſte foorthe, myxte with golde. *Iuana* fledde at the coommynge of owre men, and coulde neuer bee brought ageyne. They ſpoyled all the countrey neare aboute his palayce. Yet had they but lyttle golde: for hee had caryed all his ſtuffe with hym. Here they founde certeyne ſlaues marked in the faces after a ſtraunge ſorte. For with a ſharpe prycke made eyther of bone, or elles with a thorne, they make holes in their faces: and foorthwith ſprinkelynge a pouder theron, they moiſte the pounced place with a certeyne blacke or redde iuiſe, whoſe ſubſtaunce is of ſuche tenacitie and clammineſſe, that it wyll neuer weare awaye. They brought theſe ſlaues away with them. They ſaye that this iuiſe is of ſuch ſharpneſſe and putteth them to ſuche payne, that for extreeme doloure they haue no ſtomacke to their meate certaine dayes after. The kynges whiche take theſe ſlaues in their warres, vſe their helpe in ſeekynge for golde and in tyllage of the grounde, euen as do owre men. From the pallaice of *Iuana*, folowynge the courſe of the water aboute tenne myles towarde the Southe, they entered into the dominion of an other kynge, whome owre men named the oulde man, bycauſe hee was oulde, not paſſynge of his other name. In the regyon of this kynge alſo, they founde golde in all places bothe on the lande and in the ryuers. This region is verye fayre and frutefull: and hath in it many famous ryuers. Departynge from henſe, in fyue dayes iorneye they came to a lande leſte deſolate. They ſuppoſe that this was deſtroyed by ciuile diſcorde for as muche as it is for the mooſte parte fruiteful, and yet not inhabited. The fyfth daye, they ſawe two men commynge a farre of. Theſe were laden with breade of *Maizium*, whiche they caryed on their ſhulders in ſackes. Owre men tooke them: and vnderſtoode by them that there were twoo kynges in that tracte: The one was named *Periquete*, whoe dwelte neare vnto the ſea. The others name was *Totonoga*. This *Totonoga*, was blynde and dwelte in the continent. The twoo men whiche they mette, were the fyſſhers of *Totonoga*, whome he had ſente with certayne fardelles of fyſhe to *Periquete*, and had ageyne receaued breade of hym for exchaunge. For thus do they communicate their commodities one with an other by exchaunge, without th[e]uſe of wycked money. By the conductinge of theſe twoo men, they came to kynge *Totonoga* dwellynge on the Weſte ſyde of ſayncte Michaelles goulfe in the Southe ſea. They had of this kynge, the ſum of ſyxe thouſande Caſtellans of golde bothe rude and artifycially wrought. Emonge thoſe groumes of rude or natyue golde, there was one founde of the weyghte of two Caſtellans, whiche argued the plentifull rycheneſſe of the ground. Folowing the ſame coaſtes by the ſea ſyde toward the Weſt, they came to a kynge whoſe name was *Taracuru*, of whome they had golde amountynge to the weyght of eight thouſand *Peſos*. Wee haue ſayde before that *Peſus* is the weyghte of a Caſtelane not coyned. From henſe they wente to the dominion of this kynges brother named *Pananome*, who fledde at their commynge, and appered no more afterwarde. They ſaye that his kyngdome is ryche in golde. They ſpoyled his pallaice in his abſence. Syxe leaques from henſe, they came to an other kyng named *Tabor*. From thenſe they came to the kyng of *Cheru*. He frendly enterteyned owre men, and gaue them foure thouſande *Peſos* of golde. He hathe in his dominion many goodly ſaite bayes: the region alſo aboundeth with golde. About twelue myles from henſe, they came to another kyng cauled *Anata*, of whome they had. xv. thouſande *Peſos* of golde whiche he had gotten of the kinges his bortherers whom he had vanquiſſhed by warre. A great part of this golde was in rude forme bycauſe it was molten when he ſet the kynges houſes on fyer whom he ſpoyled. For they robbe and ſley the one the other, ſackynge and fyryng their villages, and waſtinge their countreys. They keepe warre barbarouſly and to vtter deſtruction, executinge extreeme crueltie ageinſt them that haue

The variable fortune of Gonsalus Badaiocius.

Cerabaro. Decade. iii. li[b]. iiii

The South sea.

A leaque conteyneth foure myles by sea and but three by lande.

The golden region of Coiba Dytes.

Sande myxte with golde.

Howe theyr slaues are marked in the face.

145

S. *Michael.*

Kynge Totonoga.

Six thousand Castellans of golde.

Kyng Taracuru.

viii. thousand pesos of gold

Kynge Panianome

Kyng Tabor.

Kynge Cheru.

iiii. thousande pesos of gold

Salte.

Kyng Anata.

xv. thousande pesos of gold

Golde.

A fruteful region left desolate by ciuile discorde.

Kynge Periquete.

Theyr maner of warre.

the ouerthrowe. *Gonſalus Badaiocius* with his felowes, wandered at lybertie vntyll they came to this kyng: And had gathered great heapes of gold of other kinges. For, what in braſlettes, collers, earinges, breſte plates, helmettes, and certeine barres wherwith women beare vppe their breſtes, they had gathered together in gold the ſum of foureſcore thouſande Caſtellans, whiche they had obteyned partly by exchaunge for owre thinges where they founde the kinges their frendes, and otherwiſe by forceible meanes where they founde the contrary. They had gotten alſo forty ſlaues whoſe helpe they vſed both for cariage of their vitailes and bagagies in the ſteade of moiles or other beaſtes of burden, and alſo to relieue ſuche as were ſycke and forweried by reaſon of their longe iorneys and hunger. After theſe proſperous viages, they came by the dominion of kynge *Scoria*, to the palaice of a kynge named *Pariza*: where (fearyng no ſuch thing) *Pariza* encloſed them with a great armye, and aſſayled them ſtraggelyng and vnwares, in ſuche ſorte that they had no leaſure to put on their armure. He ſlewe and wounded about fyftie, and put the reſydue to flyght. They made ſuche haſt, that they had no reſpect eyther to the gold they had gathered, or to their ſlaues: but lefte all behynde them. Thoſe fewe that eſcaped, came to *Dariena*. The opinion of all wyſe men as concernynge the varyable and inconſtant chaunces of fortune in humane thinges, were falſe, if al thinges ſhuld haue happened vnto them proſperouſly. For ſuch is the nature of this blynde goddeſſe, that ſhe oftentimes delyteth in the ouerthrowe of them whom ſhe hath exalted: and taketh pleſure in confounding hygh thinges with lowe, and the contrary. Wee ſee this order to bee impermutable, that who ſoo wyll applye hym ſelfe to gather rootes, ſhall ſumtymes meete with ſweete lyquereſſe, and other whiles with foure cockle. Yet wo vnto *Pariza*: for he ſhall not longe ſleape in reſt. The gouernour him ſelfe was of late determined with three hundreth and fyftie choiſe ſouldiers to reuenge the death of owr men: But where as he by chaunce fell ſycke, his poure went forward vnder the conducting of his Lieuetenant *Gaſpar Spinoſa*, a Iudge in caſes of lawe in *Dariena*. At the ſame time other were ſent foorth to the Ilande of *Dites* to exacte the portion of pearles lymited to the king for his tribute. What ſhal ſuccede, tyme will bring to owre knowleage. The other two, attempted th[e]inhabitantes beyonde the goulfe, *Franciſcus Bezerra* paſſyng ouer by the corner of the goulfe and the mouthes of the ryuer of *Dabaiba*, with two other capitaines and a hundreth and fyftie ſouldiers well appointed, went to make warre vppon the Canibales euen in *Caribana* their owne chiefeſt dominion, toward the vyllage of *Turuſy*, wherof we haue made mention before in the comming of *Fogeda*. They brought alſo with them diuers engens of warre: as three pieces of ordinaunce whoſe ſhot were bygger then egges: Likewiſe forty archers, and. xxv. hagbutters to th[e]intent to reache the Caniballes a farre of, and to preuent their venemed arrowes. But what became of hym and his company, or where they arriued, we haue yet no parfecte knowleage. Certaine which came of late from *Dariena* to Spaine, reported that at their departure, they of *Dariena* ſtode in great feare leaſt they alſo were toſſed with ſum miſſortune. The other capitaine *Valleius*, obteyned the fore parte of the goulfe. But he paſſed ouer by an other waye then dyd *Bezerra*. For he tooke the beginning of *Caribana*, and *Bezerra* the ende. *Valleius* returned ageine. But of the three ſcore and ten men whiche he conueighed ouer with hym, hee lefte fortye and eyght ſlaine emonge the Canibales. Theſe are the newes whiche they bringe that came laſte from *Dariena*.

There came to me the day before the Ides of October in this yeare. M. D. xvi. *Rodericus Colmenares* (of whom we haue made mention before) and one *Franciſcus Delapuente*. This *Franciſcus*, was one of the vnder capitaines of this bande, whoſe chiefe capitaine was *Gonſalus Badaiocius* who hardly eſcaped the handes of kyng *Pariza*. Theſe twoo capitaines therfore, *Rodericus* and *Franciſcus* who departed from *Dariena* immediatly after the miſſortune whiche befell to *Badaiocius* and his companye, do both affirme, the one that he hath harde, the other that he hath ſeene, that in the Southe ſea there are diuers Ilandes lying weſtwarde from the Iland of *Dites* and ſaincte Michaels goulfe, in many of the which are trees engendred and nouriſſhed which bring foorth the ſame aromaticall fruites, as doth the region of *Collocutea*. This lande of *Collocutea*, wirh the regions of *Cochinus* and *Camemorus*, are the chiefe marte places from whenſe the Portugales haue their ſpices. And hereby do they coniecture that the land where the frutfulneſſe of ſpyce begynneth, ſhulde not be farre from thenſe. In ſo much that many of them whiche haue ouerrunne thoſe coaſtes, do onely deſyre that leaue may be graunted them to ſearche further, and that they wil of their owne charges frame and furniſhe ſhippes and aduenture the viage to ſearche thoſe Ilandes and regions. They thinke it beſt that theſe ſhippes ſhulde bee made and prepared, euen in ſaincte Michaels goulfe: And not to attempte this vyage by ſainte Auguſtines point, which waye were both longe and diffyculte, and ful of a thouſande daungers, and is ſaide to reache beyonde the forty degree of the pole Antartike. The ſame *Franciſcus*, being partener of the trauailes and daungiers of *Gonſalus*, ſaithe that in ouer runninge thoſe landes, he founde great heardes of hartes and wylde bores: and that he toke many of them by an arte which th[e]inhabitauntes taught him: whiche was to make pittes or trenches in their walkes, and to couer the ſame with bouwes. By this meanes alſo they deceaue al other kindes of wild and foure footed beaſtes. But they take foules after the ſame maner hat we do: As ſtocke doues with an other tame ſtocke doue brought vp in their houſes. Theſe they tye by a ſtrynge, and ſuffer them to flye a lyttle emong the trees. To

Fourescore thousand Castellans of golde.

Kyng Scoria.
Kyng Pariza.
Gonsalus Badaiocius hath the ouerthrow and is spoyled of great ryches of golde.
146

The Inconstancie of fortune.

The expedition of Fraunces Bezarra ageynst the Canibales.

Gunnes.

Valeius repulsed of the Canibales.

The Ilandes of the south sea.
In this sea ly[e] the Ilandes of Molucca, most frutefull of spices.
Collocutea.
Cochinus and Camemorus, from whense the Portugales haue theyr spyces.

He meaneth by the streight of Magellanus.

Howe they take hartes and wylde bores.

Stocke doues

147

Theyr maner of foulynge.

the which as other birdes of their kind reſort, they kil them with their arrowes. Otherwyſe they take them with nettes in a bare place pourged from trees and buſhes: and ſcateryng certeyne ſeedes rounde about that place, in the myddeſte whereof they tye a tame foule or byrde of the kynde of them whiche they deſyre to take. In lyke maner do they take popingiayes and other foules. But they ſay that popingiayes are ſo ſimple, that a great multitude of them wyll flye euen into the tree in whoſe bouwes the fouler ſytteth: and ſwarme about the tame chatterynge popingiaye, ſufferynge them ſelues to bee eaſely taken. For they are ſo without feare of the ſyght of the fouler, that they tary whyle he caſt the ſnare about theyr neckes, the other beinge nothynge feared hereby, thoughe they ſee hym drawe them to him with the ſnare, and put them in the bagge which he hath about hym for the ſame purpoſe. There is an other kynde of foulynge, heretofore neuer harde of, and pleaſaunt to conſyder. We haue declared before howe that in certeyne of the Ilandes, and eſpecially in *Hiſpaniola*, there are dyuers lakes or ſtandynge pooles. In ſume of theſe (beinge no deaper then men may wade ouer them) are ſeene great multytudes of water foules: as wel for that in the bottome of theſe lakes, there growe many herbes and weedes, as alſo that by reaſon of the heate of the ſonne pearceinge to the naturall place of generation and corruption, where beinge doubled in force by reflection and preſerued by moyſter, there are engendered of the ſlymines of the earth and water, and by the prouidence of the vniuerſall creator, innumerable lyttle fyſſhes, with a thouſande ſundry kyndes of frogges, wormes, knattes, flyes and ſuch other. The foules which vſe theſe lakes, are of dyuers kyndes: As duckes, geeſe, ſwannes, ſeemewes, gulles, and ſuch other. We haue ſayde alſo that in theyr orchardes they noryſhe a tree which beareth a kynde of greate gourdes. Of theſe gourdes therefore well ſtopped leaſte any water ſhulde enter in at theyr ryftes and cauſe them to ſinke, they caſt many in the ſhalowe pooles: where, by theyr continuall wanderynge and wauerynge with the motions of the wynde and water, they put the foules owte of ſuſpection and feare. The fouler in the meane tyme, diſguyſinge hym ſelfe as it were with a viſour, putteth a great gourde on his head much lyke to a helmet, with two holes neare about his eyes, his face and hole heade beſyde beinge couered therwith. And thus entereth he into the poole euen vnto the chynne. For beinge from theyr infancie excerciſed in ſwymmynge and accuſtomed to the waters, they refuſe not to continue therein a longe ſpace. The foules thynkynge this gourde to be one of the other that ſwymme vppon the water, the fouler goeth ſoftly to the place wher he ſeeth the greateſt flocke of foules: And with waggynge his heade, counterfectinge the mouing of the wauerynge gourdes, drawethe nere to the foules: where ſoftely puttynge foorth his ryght hande, he ſoodenly ſnatcheth one by the legges and plungeth her into the water where he putteth her into a bagge whiche he hath with hym of purpoſe The other foules ſuppoſinge that this dyued into the water of her owne motion to ſeke for foode (as is their maner) are nothyng moued hereby, but go forwarde on their waye as before, vntyll they alſo faule into the ſame ſnare. I haue here for this cauſe entered into the declaration of theyr maner of huntynge and foulynge, that by theſe more pleaſaunt narrations I may ſumwhat mytigate and aſſwage the horrour conceaued in yowre ſtomake by the former rehearſall of theyr bluddy actes and cruell maners. Lette vs nowe therfore ſpeake ſumwhat ageyne of the newe and later opinions as concernynge the ſwyfte courſe of the ſea towarde the weſt about the coaſtes of *Paria*: alſo of the maner of gathering of golde in the golde myne of *Dariena*, as I was aduertiſed of late. And with theſe two quyet and peaceable thynges, we wyl make an ende of the tragical affayres of the Ocean: and therwith byd yowre holynes fare wel. So it is therfore, that *Andreas Moralis* the pylot, and *Ouiedus* (of whom we haue made mention before) repayred to me, at my houſe in the towne of Matrite, As we met thus togyther, there aroſe a contention betwene them two, as concernynge this courſe of the Ocean. They both agree that theſe landes and regions perteynynge to the dominion of Caſtile, doo with one continuall tract and perpetuall bonde, embraſe as one hole firme lande and continent al the mayne lande lyinge on the north ſyde of *Cuba* and the other Ilandes, beinge alſo northweſt both from *Cuba* and *Hiſpaniola*. Yet as touchynge the courſe of the water, they varie in opinion. For *Andreas*, wyll that this vyolent courſe of water bee receaued in the lappe of the ſuppoſed continente which bendeth ſo much and extendeth ſo farre towarde the North, as we haue ſaid: And that by the obiect or reſiſtance of the lande ſo bendynge and crookynge, the water ſhulde as it were rebounde in coompaſſe, and by force therof be dryuen about the north ſyde of *Cuba* and the other Ilandes excluded without the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancri*, where the largenes of the ſea maye receaue the waters faulynge frome the narowe ſtreames, and therby repreſſe that inordinate courſe, by reaſon that the ſea is there very large and great. I can compare his meanynge to nothynge more aptely then to the ſwyfte ſtreame commyng foorth of a mylle and faulyng into the myl poole. For in al ſuche places where waters runne with a vyolent faule through narowe chanels, and are then receaued in large pooles, they are ſoodenly diſparcled and theyr violence broken: So that wheras before they ſeemed of ſuch force as to ouerthrowe all thynges beinge in theyr waye, it can not then be perceaued which way they runne. The Admiral him ſelfe *Diegus Colonus*, ſonne and heyre to *Chriſtophorus Colonus* the fyrſt fynder of theſe landes (who had nowe in commyng and goinge, foure tymes paſſed throughe theſe ſeas) beinge demaunded of me what he founde or perceaued in aylynge too and fro, anſwered that there was muche difficultie in returnynge the ſame way by the which they go. But wheras they fyrſt take the waye by the mayne

Fysshes and wormes engendered of slime

Foules.

Gourdes of the tree.

Later opinions of the swift course of the Ocean towarde the West.

The continent or firme land.

148

The vyages of Diegus Colonus.

The vyage from the new landes to Spayne.

ſea towarde the North before they directe theyr courſe to Spayne, he ſaythe that in that tract, he fel the ſhippe ſumtymes a lyttle dryuen backe by the contrary courſe of the water. Yet ſuppoſeth that this chaunceth onely by the ordinarie flowynge and reflowynge of the ſea: And the ſame not to be enforced by the circumflection or courſe of the water reboundynge in compaſſe as we haue ſayde. But thinketh rather, that this mayne lande or ſuppoſed continent, ſhulde ſumwhere bee open: And that the ſayde open place, ſhoulde bee as it were a gate, enterie, or ſtreyght, diuydyng the North partes of that lande from the South: by the which alſo, the Ocean runnynge towarde the Weſt, may by the rotation or impulſion of the heauens, bee dryuen about the hole earth. *Ouiedus* agreeth with *Andreas Moralis* as touchynge the continuall adherence and cloſenes of the ſayde continente. Yet neyther that the waters ſhulde ſo beate ageynſt the bendynge backe of the Weſt lande, or bee in ſuche ſorte repulſed and dryuen into the mayne ſea. But ſaith that he hath diligently conſydered, that the waters runne from the deepeſt and myddeſt of the maine ſea, towarde the Weſt. Alſo that ſaylinge nere vnto the ſhore with ſmaule veſſelles, he founde the ſame waters to returne ageine towarde the Eaſt. So that in the ſame place, they runne together with contrary courſe, as we oftentimes ſee the lyke to chaunce in riuers wher by the obiecte of the bankes, diuers whirlepooles and turnynges aryſe in the water. By reaſon wherof, if any chaffe, ſtrawe, woodde, or any other thyng of lyght ſubſtance be caſte in any ſuche places in ryuers, it foloweth that al ſuch as runne with the water in the myddeſt of the chanell, procede well forwarde: But ſuche as faule into the bendynge goulfes and indented margentes of the crooked bankes, are caryed ouerthwarte the chanell, and ſo wander about vntyll they meete with the ful and directe courſe of the ryuer. Thus haue we made yowe partener of ſuche thinges as they haue gyuen vs, and writen their dyuers opinions. We wyll then gyue more certeyne reaſon, when more certeyne truth ſhalbe knowen. We muſt in the meane tyme, leane to opinions vntil the day coome appointed of god to reueale this ſecreate of nature, with the perfecte knowleage of the pointe of the pole ſtarre. Hauyng ſayd thus muche of the courſe of the Ocean, a briefe declaration of the golde mynes of *Dariena*, ſhall cloſe vppe owre Decades and make an ende of owre trauayles. Wee haue ſayde, that nyne myles diſtante from *Dariena*, are the ſydes of the hylles and the drye playnes in the whiche golde is gathered bothe on the drye lande, and alſo on the bankes and in the chanelles of ryuers. Therfore to al ſuch as are wyllynge to gather golde, there is of ordinarie cuſtome appointed to euery man by the ſuruoiers of the mynes, a ſquare plotte of grounde conteyning twelue paſes, at the arbitriment of the chooſer, ſo that it bee not grounde already occupied, or lefte of other. The portion of grounde beinge thus choſen (as it were aſſygned of the augures to buylde a temple) they incloſe their ſlaues within the ſame, whoſe helpe the Chriſtians vſe in tyllynge of their grounde and gatherynge of golde, as we haue ſaide. Theſe places appointed vnto them, they keepe as longe as them lyſte. And if they perceaue tookens of lyttle golde, they requyre an other plotte of ground of twelue paſes to be aſſigned them, leauyng the firſt in commen. And this is th[e]order which the Spaniardes inhabitinge *Dariena* obſerue in gatheryng of golde. I ſuppoſe alſo that they vſe the lyke order in other places: How be it, I haue not yet enquired ſo farre. It hath byn proued that theſe twelue paſes of grounde, haue yelded to their chooſers, the ſumme of foureſcore Caſtellans of gold. And thus leade they theyr lyues in fulfyllynge the holy hunger of golde. But the more they fyll their handes with fyndynge, the more increaſeth their couetous deſyre. The more woodde is layde to the fyer, the more furiouſly rageth the flame. Vnſaciable couetouſneſſe is no more diminiſſhed with increaſe of rycheſſe, then is the drineſſe of the dropſye ſatiſſyed with drinke. I lette paſſe manye thynges wherof I intende to write more largely in tyme conuenient, if I ſhall in the meane ſeaſon vnderſtande theſe to be acceptable vnto yowre holyneſſe: my dewtie and obſeruaunce to whoſe autoritie, hath cauſed me the gladlier to take this labour in hande. The prouidence of the eternall creatour of all thynges, graunt yowre holyneſſe many proſperous yeares.

The contrary course of waters.

The poynt of the pole star.

The golde mynes of Dariena, and the maner of gatherynge golde.

149

Owre inclosiers woolde leaue no such commens.

Auri ſacra Fames

The dropsie of couetousnes.

¶ The laste booke of Peter Martyr of Angleria, OF THE LANDES AND ILANDES LATELY FOUNDE: AND OF THE MANERS OF THE INHABITAVNTES OF THE SAME.

Loke Decade iii. Liber. x.

Haue partli declared before in mi decades how certeine fugitiues which came owt of the large Weſt landes arriued in the confynes of *Dariena:* And howe that marueylinge at the bookes of owre men, they declared that they ſumtyme dwelte in regions whoſe inhabitauntes vſed ſuche inſtrumentes and were ruled by politike lawes. Alſo that they had cities fortified with waules, and faire pallaces with ſtreates well paued, and common places whyther marchauntes reſort as to the burſe or ſtreate. Theſe landes, owre men haue nowe founde. Therfore who were th[e]autours hereof, or what ſucceſſe they had herein, who ſo deſireth to know with the conditions of ſtraunge regions and the maners of the people, let hym giue diligent attendance to ſuch thynges as folowe. Of the Iland of *Cuba* (nowe cauled *Fernandina*, lyynge nexte vnto *Hiſpaniola* on the weſt ſyde, and yet ſumwhat ſo bendynge towarde the Northe that the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancri* deuideth it in the myddeſte, wher as *Hiſpaniola* is diſtante from the Tropike and declinyge certen degrees toward the Equinoctial line) we haue ſpoken ſumwhat before. In this Iland of *Fernandina*, there are nowe ſyxe townes erected. Wherof, the chiefe is named *Sanctiago* of ſaynt Iames the patrone of the Spanyardes. In this, there is natiue golde, found both in the mountaynes and ryuers: By reaſon wherof they are daylye occupied in gathering and digging the ſame. But ſhortely after that I had finiſhed my ſayde bookes, thre Spanyardes that were the moſt auncient citizens of *Cuba*, as *Franciſcus Fernandes* of *Corduba*, *Lupus Ocho*, and *Chriſtophorus Morantes*, determined to ſeeke newe landes, as the myndes of the Spanyardes are euer vnquiet and geuen to attempte great enterpriſes. They furnyſhed at their owne charges, three of thoſe ſhyppes whiche they caule Carauels. And hauynge fyrſte lycence of *Diegus Velaſquen* the gouernour of the Ilande, they departed with a hundreth and ten men from the Weſt angle of *Cuba.* For this angle is moſte commodious to relieue ſhyppes and to make prouiſion for freſhe water and fuell. Thus they ſayled continually ſyxe dayes and a halfe, betwene the Weſt and the South, contented onely with the ſyght of the heauen and the water: durynge whiche tyme, they ſuppoſe that they ſayled not paſt threeſcore and ſyxe myles. For they ley at anker all nyght where ſo euer the faulynge of the ſoonne tooke the day light from them, leaſte by wanderynge in vnknowen ſeas, they myght chaunce to be caſt vppon rockes or ſandes. But at the length they chaunced vppon a great Ilande named *Iucatana*, whoſe beginnyng th[e]inhabitauntes caule *Eccampi.* Owre men went to the citie ſtondynge on the ſea ſyde, the whiche for the bygnes therof, they named *Cayrus* or Alcair. Th[e]inhabitauntes enterteined them very frendly. When they were entered into the citie, they marueyled to behold the houſes buylded lyke towres, magnifycall temples, ſtreates well paued, and great exerciſe of bying and ſellyng by exchaunge of ware for ware. Their houſes are eyther bylte of ſtone, or of bricke and lyme, and artifycially wrought. To the fyrſte porches of their houſes and fyrſt habitations, they aſcend by ten or twelue ſteares. They are couered eyther with tyles, ſlates, reades, or ſtalkes of certeyne herbes. They gratified the one the other with mutuall gyftes. The barbarians gaue owre men many brooches and iewelles of golde, verye fayre and of cunnyng woorkmanſhyppe. Owre men recompenſed them with veſtures of ſylke and woolle, counterfecte ſtones, of coloured glaſſe and chriſtall, haukes belles of laton, and ſuche other rewardes whiche they greatly eſteemed for the ſtraungenes of the ſame. They ſette nought by lookynge glaſſes, bycauſe they haue certeyne ſtoones muche brighter. This nation is appareled after a thouſande faſſhyons with veſtures made of goſſampyne cotten or bombage of dyuers colours. The women are couered from the girdle to the heele hauynge dyuers faſſhions of vayles aboute their heades and breſtes, with great cautele leaſt any parte of their legges or feete bee ſeene. They reſorte muche

Cities fortifyed with waules.

The Iland of Cuba or Fernandina.

The Spaniards of Cuba attempt new vyages.

The west angle of Cuba.

Note.

The Iland of Iucatana.
A great citie well buylded.
Temples.
Humane people.

Cunnyng artifycers.

Appareled people.

to their temples: vnto the which the chiefe rulers haue the wayes paued from their owne houſes. They are Idolatours and circumciſed. They occupie their maner of exchaunginge, with muche fydelitie. They vſe to adourne the heares of their heades. Being demanded by th[e]interpretours of whom they receaued their circumciſyon, they anſwered that there once paſſed an exceadynge fayre man by their coſtes, who lefte them that in tooken to remember hym. Other ſaye that a manne brighter then the ſoone, went emonge them and executed that offyce. But there is no certentie hereof. When owre men had remayned there certeyne dayes, they ſeemed to bee moleſtous to th[e]inhabitantes accordynge to the common ſayinge. The longer a geſte tarieth, the woorſe is his enterteynement. The whiche thynge owre men perceauyng, they made the more haſt awaye. Beynge therfore prouided of all thynges neceſſary, they tooke their vyage directly towarde the weſt by the prouince whiche th[e]inhabitauntes caule *Comi* and *Maiam*. They ouer paſſed theſe regions takyng onely freſhe water and fuel in the ſame. The barbarians both men, women, and children flocked to the ſea ſyde, aſtonyſſhed greatly to behold the huge bygneſſe of the ſhyppes. Owre men marueyled in maner no leſſe to viewe their buyldynges and eſpecially their temples ſytuate neare vnto the ſea, and erected after the maner of towers. Thus at the length hauyng ſayled about a hundreth and ten myles, they thought it good to ley anker in a prouince named *Campechium*, whoſe chiefe towne conſyſteth of three thouſande houſes. Th[e]inhabitauntes came ſwymmynge to the ſhyppes: marueylyng excedyngly at the maner of ſaylinge, and at the ſayles and other tackelynges But when they hard the thunder of the gunnes, ſawe the ſmoke, and ſmelte the ſauour of brimſtone and fyer, they ſuppoſed that thunderboultes and lyghtnynges had byn ſente from god. The kynge receaued owre men honorably and broughte them into his pallayce: where he feaſted them well after his maner. They are accuſtomed to eate fleſhe, and haue great plentie of beaſtes and foules: as peacockes, and other whiche they francke and feede in their houſes: Alſo dyuers kyndes of wylde foules of the mountaines, wooddes, and waters: Likewiſe partriches, quailes, turtle dooues, duckes, and geeſe. Of beaſtes, they haue connies, woolues, lyons, tigers, foxes, wylde boores, hartes, and hares. After this banquet, the kyng with his traine and famylie brought owre men into a brode croſſe way where many ſtreates do meete. In this, they ſhewed them as it were a great and highe aulter buylded foure ſquare of marble compacte together partly with the toughe cleye of Babilon cauled *Bitumen*, and partly with ſmaule ſtoones. It had on euery ſyde foure ſteares. Vppon the altare was an Image of a man made of marble: and faſt by it the Images of two beaſtes of vnknowen ſhape, whiche ſeemed as thoughe they wolde with yanynge mouthes haue torne in ſunder the bealy of the mannes Image. On the other ſyde ſtoode a great ſerpent compacte of the ſayde toughe cleye and ſmaule ſtoones. This ſerpent beynge in length. xlvii. foote, and of the bygneſſe of a large oxe, ſeemed to deuour a lyon of marble, and was al by ſparcled with freſhe bludde. Harde by the altare, were thre poſtes faſtned in the ground, the which three other trauerſed and were ſuſteined with ſtones. In this place offenders were put to death: In token wherof they ſawe innumerable arrowes ſteined with bludde, ſum ſcatered, ſum lyinge on heapes, and ſum broken: Alſo a great number of mennes bones lying in a court or yarde nere vnto this funeſtal place. Their houſes are here alſo builded of lime and ſtone. They named this king, *Lazarus*, bicauſe they arriued at this lande on ſaint *Lazarus* day. Departing from henſe and directing theyr courſe ſtyl toward the Weſt for the ſpace of. xv. myles, they came to a prouince named *Aquanil*, whoſe chiefe towne is cauled *Moſco*, and the kynge thereof, *Cupoton*. He behelde owre men with a frowarde countenaunce, and ſought occaſion to doo them ſume priuie miſchiefe whyle they ſought for freſſhe water. For he made ſignes vnto them that on the further ſyde of the nexte hyll, they ſhulde fynde ſprynges of water, intendyng to haue aſſayled them in that narowe paſſage. But by the colouryng of theyr forheades (as they are accuſtomed in theyr warres) and by the bearynge of theyr bowes and other weapons, owre men perceaued theyr wylynes, and refuſed to go any further. Yet a thouſande of the Barbarians aſſayled theym vnwares and vnprepared. By reaſon wherof, they were put to flyght, and dyuers of them ſlayne in the chaſe. Many that fledde towarde the ſhippes, were entangeled in the mudde and maryſhes nere vnto the ſhore. Twentie and two, were ſlayne with arrowes, and the reſydewe for the moſt parte, wounded. *Franciſcus Fernandes* the gouernour of the nauie, receaued in this conflicte three and thirtie woundes. And in maner none eſcaped without hurt. If they had gonne to the hylles whiche were appoynted them, they had byn ſlayne euery man. They therfore that eſcaped, returned to the Ilande of *Fernandina* frome whenſe they came, where they were receaued of theyr felows with heauie chere. But when *Diegus Velaſquen* the gouernoure of the Ilande, had intelligence hereof, he immediatly furnyſhed a newe nauie of foure Caraueles with three hundreth men. Of this nauie he appoynted Iohn Griſalua his neuie, to be the gouernour: And aſſigned for vnder capitaynes, Alphons[o] Auila, Frances Montegio, and Peter Aluarado. For the pylot he aſſigned Antonie Alamino who had the regiment of the fyrſt nauie. They attempted the ſame vyage ageyne, but declyned ſumwhat more towarde the South about threſcore and tenne myles. Before they ſawe any lande, they eſpyed a towre a farre of, by the viewe wherof, they came to an Ilande named *Cozumella*, from the whiche they ſmelte ſweete

Circumcised Idolaters.

Comi.
Maiam.

Campechium.
A towne of three thousand howses.

Plentie of beastes and foules.

Theyr Idoles and Idolatry.

Houses of lyme and stone.
151

The prouince Aquinall.
Mosco.

The Spanyardes are put to flyght and many slayne

An other expedition.

The Hand of Cozumella.

[* Eden points out later on that William Powell, the printer, had wrongly carried the headline, *The thyrde Decade*, over this, a perfectly distinct book.—(*See* p. 342.) We have therefore also inserted the true headline within brackets.—E. A.]

Sweete sauours. A frutefull Ilande.

ſauours proceadynge with the wynde, before they approched to the lande by the ſpace of three myles. They founde the lande to be fortie and fiue myles in circuite. It is playne and of maruelous frutefull ſoyle. There is alſo golde in it, but it is not engendered there, but brought thether from other regions. It aboundeth with hony, fruites, and herbes: And hath alſo great plentie of foules and foure footed beaſtes. Theyr order and maner of lyuyng, is in al thynges lyke unto theyrs of *Iucatana*. Lykewyſe theyr howſes, temples, ſtreates, and apparell. In many of theyr houſes, are great poſtes of marble after the maner of owre buyldynge. They founde there, the foundations of certeyne owlde towres ruinate: And one eſpecially with. xviii. ſteares aſcendynge to it, after the maner of ſolemne temples. They marueyled greatly at owre ſhippes and maner of ſaylynge. At the fyrſt, they wolde admyt no ſtraungers: but ſhortly after, receaued them gentelly. Theyr chiefe ruler (whom owre men ſuppoſed to bee a preeſte) led them vp to the toppe of the towre, where they erected a banner and addicted the Ilande to the dominion of the kynge of Caſtyle, namynge it *Sancta Crux*, bycauſe they entered into the ſame in the nones of Maye beinge then the feaſte of the holye croſſe. They ſaye that it was cauled *Cozumella* of kynge *Cozumellaus*, whoſe aunceſtours were the fyrſt that inhabited the Ilande. In the towre, they founde many chambers furnyſhed with Images, made bothe of earthe and marble to the ſimilytude of beares. Theſe they caule vppon with a houlynge and lamentable ſonge, perfumyng them with ſweete odours, and otherwyſe honourynge them as theyr domeſticall goddes They were alſo circumciſed. The kynge was in fayre apparel made of goſſampine cotton curiouſly wrought. He was lame on the one foote by reaſon that as he once exercyſed hym ſelfe in ſwymmynge, a deuourynge fyſhe cauled *Tuberon*, byt of al the toes, of one of his feete. He entreated owre men very frendly and made them great chiere. After they had byn here thre dayes, they departed. And ſaylynge ſtyll towarde the Weſte, they eſpyed great mountaynes a farre of. But as they drewe neare, they perceaued it to bee the Ilande of *Iucatana* beinge diſtant from *Cozumella* onely fyue myles. Directynge therfore theyr courſe towarde the ſouthe ſyde of *Iucatana*, they compaſed it on that ſyde which lyeth neareſt to the ſuppoſed continent: Yet coulde they not ſayle rounde about it by reaſon of the multitude of rockes, ſhalowe places, and ſhelfes of ſandes. Then Alaminus the pylot turned his ſailes to the North ſide wherof he had better knowleage. Thus at the length, they came to the towne *Campechium* and kynge *Lazarus* with whom they had bin that attempted the fyrſt vyage the yeare before. At the fyrſt, they were gentelly receaued, and requyred to reſort to the towne. But ſhortly after, they repented that they had bydden them: and there vpon wylled them to ſtay about a ſtones caſt from the towne, and to proceade no further. When owre men deſyred that they myght make prouiſion for freſhe water before theyr departure, they aſſigned them to a certeyne well which they had lefte behynde them. Declaringe further, that it ſhulde be lawfull for them to take water there or els no wheare. Owre men reſted that nyght in the fyelde adioynynge to the well. The which thynge the Barbarians ſuſpectinge, aſſembled an army of three thouſande men, and encamped not farre from them. Bothe partes paſſed awaye the nyght without ſleepe. They fearynge leaſte owre menne ſhulde breake into the towne: And owre men, leaſt the Barbarians ſhulde inuade them ſoodenly, on the one parte with trumpettes, and on the other ſyde with the noyſe of timbrels kept them ſtyll wakynge that were diſpoſed to ſleape. At the ſprynge of the day, the Barbarians approched to owre mens campe and cauled for th[e]interpretours of *Cuba*, whoſe language is much agreable vnto theyrs. They had diuiſed to lyghte a torche of frankenſence and to place the ſame betwene bothe th[e]armies to th[e]intent that if owre men dyd not depart before the torche were conſumed, to ſtande to theyr perell. The torch was waſted and the matter came to hand ſtrokes. They ſlewe onely one of owre men with an arrowe bycauſe his target fayled hym. But many were wounded. After this conflicte, owre men reſorted to theyr ordinaunce which they had planted neare vnto the well. When they had diſcharged certeyne peeces, the Barbarians fledde backe into the towne. Owre men were of fierce and greedy courage to haue purſued them, but that Griſalua the gouernour wolde not ſuffer them. From thenſe they proceaded to the laſt ende of *Iucatana*, which they founde to reache more then two hundreth myles frome the Eaſt to the Weſt. Here they founde a comodious hauen and named it *Portus deſideratus*. From henſe they ſayled to other landes, and came to the region nexte to *Iucatana* Weſtwarde, whiche they doubte whether it be an Ilande or parte of the firme lande: but thinke it rather to be annext to the continent. In this there is a goulfe which they ſuppoſe to be incoompaſed with bothe the landes. But of this, there is no certentie. Th[e]inhabitantes caule this region *Caluacam* or otherwiſe *Oloan*. They founde here alſo a great ryuer whiche by his violente courſe and faule, driueth freſhe water two myles into the ſea. This they cauled *Griſalua* after the name of the gouernoure. The barbarians marueilyng at the huge greatneſſe and mouynge of owre ſhyppes, came ſwarmyng the bankes on bothe ſydes the ryuer, to the number of ſyxe thouſande men armed with targettes and breſt plates of gold, bowes and arrowes, brode ſwoordes of heauy woodde, and longe iauelens hardened at the endes with fyer: Thus ſtondynge in battayle raye to defende their cooſtes, and with proude countenaunces forbyddinge owre men to coome alande. Bothe parties watched al that nyght in armes. In the dawne of the day, owr men eſpied about a hundreth Canoas (whiche we haue ſaide to be their boates) full of armed men. Here alſo the

Cozumella named Sancta Crux.

Idoles lyke beares.

Idolatry.

Gentell people.

Iucatana but fyue myles from Cozumella.

152

The Barbariane make reſiſtaunce.

A conflicte.

The length of Iucatana.

The region of Caluacam, or Oloan.

The ryuer Grisalua.

Targets and brest plates of golde.

language of th[e]interpretours of *Cuba* agreed well enowghe with thers. When they had admitted the peace profered them by th[e]interpretours, al the Canoas ſtaied excepte one whiche approched toward tne ſhippes. A certeyne ruler that was in this Canoa, demaunded of owre men what they ſought in other mennes landes. They anſwered, gold. And that, for permutation of other ware, and not of gift or vyolently. The *Canoa* returned and the ruler certified the kyng hereof, who came gladlye to the ſhyppes. When he had ſaluted the gouernour, he cauled his chamberlen vnto hym, commaundynge him to bringe his armure and other ornamentes of golde wherwith he armed *Griſalua* from the toppe of the heade to the ſoule of the foote: In ſo muche that, what ſo euer any man of armes armed at all partes, is emong vs accuſtomed to weare of Iren or ſteele when he commeth in to the fielde, all ſuche kynde of furnitures made of golde and wrought with woonderfull arte, the kyng gaue to the gouernour. He recompenſed hym with veſtures of ſy[l]cke, clothe, lynen, and other of owre thinges. In the beginning of this *Iucatana*, when they ſayled to *Cozumella*, they chaunced vppon a *Canoa* of fyſſher men to the number of nyne, fyſſhyng with hookes of golde. They tooke them all priſoners. One of them was knowen to this kyng, who promyſed the daye folowyng to ſende the gouernour as muche golde for his raunſome as the man hym ſelfe waied. But the gouernour denyed that he could releaſe hym withowte the conſent of his felowes: And therfore kept hym ſtyll to proue what he could further knowe of hym. Departing from henſe and ſaylynge ſtyll weſtwarde, they founde a great goulfe in the which three ſmaule Ilandes were ſytuate. Of theſe, they went to the byggeſt. But oh abhominable crueltie: oh moſt corrupted myndes of men, and deuelyſhe impietie? Let euery godly man cloſe the mouth of his ſtomake leſt he be deſturbed. They offer younge children of bothe kyndes to their Idoles of marble and earth. Emonge their Idoles of marble, there ſtandeth a lyon hauynge a hole throwgh the necke, into the whiche they poure the bludde of the miſerable ſacrifyce, that it maye from thenſe runne downe into a ſyncke of marble. Lette vs nowe declare with what ceremonies they ſacryfyce the bludde of theſe pore wretches. They cutte not their throtes, but open the very breſtes of theſe ſelye ſoules and take owte their hartes yet pantynge, with the hotte bludde wherof, they anoynte the lyppes of their Idoles, and ſuffer the reſydue to ſaule into the ſynke. This doone, they burne the harte and bowels, ſuppoſynge the ſmoke therof to be acceptable to their goddes. Of their Idoles, one is made to the ſhape of a man, bowynge downe his heade and lookynge toward the ſynke of bludde, as it were acceptyng the offeringe of the ſlayne ſacrifyce. They eate the fleſhe of the armes, thighes, and legges, eſpecially when they ſacrifyce an enemy taken in the warres. They founde a ſtreame of congeled blud as thoughe it had runne from a bouchery. For this myſcheuous purpoſe, they bringe theſe wretches from the nexte Ilandes. They ſawe alſo innumerable heades, and trunkes of bodies thus mangeled, beſyde many other yet remaining hole and couered with certeine mattes. All the tractes of theſe regions abounde with golde and precious ſtones. One of owre men wanderynge in the Ilande, chaunced to fynde two water pottes of alabaſter artifycially wrought and full of lyttle ſtones of dyuers colours. They ſaye alſo that they founde a ſtone of the value of two thouſand Caſtilans of gold, whiche they ſent to the gouernour. This Ilande they named the Iland of ſacrifyce. Th[e]inhabitauntes are circumciſed. There are alſo other Ilandes ſytuate about this *Col[l]uacana* or *Caluacam*, the whiche are inhabited onely with women lyuing without the coompanye of men after the maner of the *Amazones*. But they that ponder the matter more wiſely, thinke them rather to be certeyne women whiche haue vowed chaſtitie and profeſſed a ſolytarie lyfe as the nunnes doo with vs, or as the virgins cauled *Veſtales* or *Bonæ Deæ*, were accuſtomed to do amonge the gentiles in oulde tyme. At certeyne tymes of the yeare, men of the other Ilandes reſorte vnto them. But not for th[e]intent of generation, but moued with pitie to helpe them to dreſſe their gardens and tyll their grounde. The reporte goeth lykewiſe that there are other Ilandes of corrupte women to whom men reſorte for carnall copulation: And that they cutte of one of the pappes of their women children leaſt it ſhuld hinder their ſhootyng. Alſo that they kepe onely the women children and ſende awaye the men children. Owr men therfore drewe nere to the more of *Colluacana* where they quyetly exerciſed marchaundies with th[e]inhabitauntes. The kyng gaue them a great potte of gold: Alſo braſlettes, chaynes, brouches, with many other iewelles, and al of gold. Owre men ageyne on the other parte ſatiſfyed him with ſuch ſtuffe as they had done other before. Here wolde they gladly haue planted a newe colonie or habitation, but that the gouernour wolde not permytte them, wherat they gruged not a lyttle. The houſes and other edifyes of this prouynce, are buylded like vnto towres. It hath alſo. xv. great townes in it. Of theſe they affirme that they haue ſeene ſum conſiſting of more then. xx. thouſande houſes, not ioyning together, but deſeuered with courtes and gardens. They haue alſo certeyne large market places encompaſed with waules, and ſtreates well paued. Likewiſe fornaces and ouens made of lyme and bricke. Furthermore al ſortes of handy craftes men and very cunning artificers. This kinges name was *Potanchanus*: and the region is cauled *Palmaria*. The towne where the king kepeth his court, conteineth. xv. thouſand houſes. When they receaue any ſtraungiers and make a leage of frendſhyppe with them, they are accuſtomed with a knife made of a ſharpe ſtone, to let them ſelues bludde in the toonge, hande, arme, or ſum other parte of the body: And this euen in the ſyght of them whom they admitte to frendſhyp, in token that they are ready to ſhedde

Armure of golde.

Experte artificers

Fysshe hokes of golde.

153

The Ilandes of Sacrifice.

Chyldren sacrificed to Idoles.

Their Idoles of marble.

Gold and precious stones.

A stone of great price.

Ilandes of women.

Golde.

Houses lyke towres.

xv. greate townes in the prouince of of Colluacana.

Townes of xx. thousande houses.

The region of Palmaria.

A token of frendship.

Preestes.

154

Chastitie.

The punyshement of adulterie.

Marriage is honoured.

Fastynge.

their bludde in their fryndes cauſes. Their prieſtes profeſſe a vertuous lyfe, and liue vnmaried. What it is to haue to do with women, no man knoweth before he be maried. Fornication and adultery (which ſeldome chaunce emonge them) they counte abhomination. The women are of maruelous chaſtitie. Euery noble man after that he haue had one wife, may haue as many concubines as hym lyſteth. But a maried woman taken in adulterie, is ſoulde of her huſbande. But this onely to the prince: at whoſe handes it ſhal be lawfull for her kynſefolkes to redeeme her. It is not lawfull for ſuche as are not maried, to ſytte at the ſame table with them that are maried, or to eate of the ſame dyſhe or drinke of the ſame cup. In the moneth of Auguſt and September, they abſteine. xxxv. dayes not onely from fleſhe wherof they haue great plentie, but alſo from fyſhe and al other thinges that lyue by bludde: And durynge theſe daies, lyue onely with herbes and frutes. They reken twentie dayes to the moneth, and twentie monethes to the yeare. Owre men conſumed certeyne dayes here verye pleaſauntly. When they departed, coaſtynge ſtyll by the ſame ſhore, they came to an other kyng whom they named *Ouandus*. When he had intellygence that owre men deſired golde, he brought foorth certeyne plates of molten gold. But when the gouernour ſignified vnto him by th[e]interpretors that he deſyred great plentie of that metal, the day folowing he brought him a mannes Image of golde beinge a cubette in length: Alſo a fanne of golde, and an Idole of one of his domeſticall goddes of curious woorkemanſhyppe. Likewyſe garlandes of ſtones of ſundry colours, with many breſte plattes, brooches, and other kyndes of ornamentes, and all of golde. He gaue hym furthermore aboundaunce of delycate meates well ſalted and poudred with ſpices. When he had required owre men to coome alande, he commaunded his ſeruauntes with all ſpeede to prepare a great multitude of branches of trees and to waite vppon owre men to his pallayce. As they went thus in order, ſum behynde and ſum before on bothe ſydes, they ſeemed ſo to ſhadowe owre men with the bouwes as thoughe they had gonne in a continuall arbour. The kynge hym ſelfe hauynge a ſepter in his hand, dyd ſette them in their arraye, and ſumtyme ſtrike ſuche as were negligent in bearyng their bouwes. They ſhewed them ſelues obedient in all thynges, and with graue countenaunce, humbled them ſelues to receaue his ſtripes. When he was demaunded where he had ſuche plentie of golde, he pointed with his fynger to the next mountaynes, and to the ryuers deſcendyng from the ſame. They are ſo accuſtomed to the riuers and exerciſed in ſwymming, that it is al one to them to liue in the water and on the lande. When they deſyre to gather golde, they plunge theym ſelues in the ryuers and brynge from the bottome therof, bothe their handes full of ſande, whiche ſyftynge from hande to hande, they gather owte the graynes of golde. And by this meanes in the ſpace of twoo houres, they fyll a reede as bygge as a mannes fynger. Of the ſweete ſauours of theſe landes, many thinges myght be ſpoken, the whiche bycauſe they make rather to th[e]effeminatynge of the myndes of men, then for any neceſſarye purpoſe, I haue thought beſt to omytte them. The kynge alſo gaue the gouernour a younge virgine of twelue yeares of age, adourned with ryche and fayre iewelles. Of the ſtones whiche he had of this kynge, one was valued at twoo thouſande Caſtellans of golde. Thus at the length they departed from this kyng, laden with golde and precious ſtoones. *Griſalua* the gouernour, ſente one of the Carauelles to his vncle *Diego Velaſquen* gouernour of the Ilande of *Cuba*, with meſſengers to delyuer hym the golde, iewelles, and other ornamentes. The reſydue in the meane tyme ſtyll folowed the tracte toward the Weſt. One of them in the whiche Frauncis Montegius the vnder gouernour was caryed, ſayled harde by the ſhore: and the other twoo kept alooſe within proſpecte of the land. Th[e]inhabitauntes of theſe coaſtes alſo, no leſſe marueylynge at the ſhyppes then dyd the other, came with twelue Canoas to Montegius, deſyringe hym by th[e]interpretours to coome alande, promyſynge in the name of their kynge, that hee ſhoulde be honorably enterteyned. But Montegious anſwered that hee coulde not aſſente to their requeſt bycauſe his coompanions were ſo farre from hym. Yet dyd he gyue them certayne of owre thynges ſtraunge vnto them, and thankes for their gentylneſſe. Shortly after eſpyinge a great towne they directed their courſe thither. Th[e]inhabitauntes prohibyted them to coome alande, and came foorthe ageynſt them with bowes and quyuers ful of arrowes, brode ſwoordes made of heauy woode, and Iauelens hardned at the ende with fier. They ſhotte at owre men a farre of: And owre men diſcharged
155 certeyne pieces of ordinaunce ageynſt them. The Barbarians aſtonyſſhed at the noyſe of the gunnes, fledde amayne, and deſyred peace. Here owre mens vytayles began to fayle them, and theyr ſhyppes were brooſed with longe vyages. Hauynge therefore founde and doone theſe thynges whereof we haue ſpoken, *Griſalua* returned to the Ilande of *Fernandina* well contented, but ſo were not his companions. We muſte nowe diuerte ſumwhat from this matter, and ſpeake of an other nauigation. And from thenſe wyll we returne to theſe landes which owre men haue founde. So it is therfore, that *Diegus Velaſquen* the gouernour of the Iland of *Fernandina*, about the ſame tyme that he had ſent foorth this nauie of foure Caraueles, he prepared an other nauigation of onely one Carauell and one brygantine with fortie and fyue men. Theſe exerciſed vyolent handes ageinſt th[e]inhabitauntes of thoſe regions where they arryued, thynkynge that they myght forceably drawe them to the dyggynge of golde bycauſe they were Caffranite Icolaters and circumciſed. There are at the ſea ſyde not farre from the ſuppoſed continent, many lyttle Ilandes of moſte fortunate and frutefull ſoyle, whereof three are thus named: *Guarıpan*, *Guanguan*, and *Quitilla*. Owte of one of theſe (which they named *Sancta Marina*) they

A stone of great price.

Kynge Ouandus.

Idoles, iewels, and ouches of gold.

Gold in mountaynes and ryuers

Theyr maner of gatheryng golde.

Sweete sauours.

Other viages from Cuba or Fernandina.

Many Ilands betwene Cuba and the firme lande.

violentely caried away three hundreth men and women which they thruſt into the Carauell and returned immediatly to *Fernandina*, leauynge the brigantine with. xxv. of theyr felowes to th[e]intent to hunt for more men. The hauen where the Carauell fyrſte arryued, is cauled *Carenas*, beinge diſtante from the angle of *Cuba* and the chiefe citie of *Sanctiago*, two hundreth and fyftie myles. For this Ilande of *Cuba*, is very longe, reachyng in length from the Eaſt to the Weſt, and ſituate directly vnder the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancri* as we haue ſayde before. Now ſhall you heare how fortune fought the reuenge of theſe pore wretches. Therfore as theyr kepers went aland and few remained in the Carauel, they perceuing occaſion miniſtred wherby they myght recouer theyr libertie, ſoodeynely ſnatched vp owr mens weapons and ſlewe ſyxe of them which yet remayned in the Carauel, whyle the reſidue lepte into the ſea. And by this meanes the Barbarians poſſeſſed the Carauell which they had ſoone learned to rule, and thus returned to theyr owne countreys. But they ſayled fyrſte to the nexte Ilande where they burnte the Carauell and caried away the weapons with them. From henſe they conueyed them ſelues to theyr owne countreys with the Canoas of this Ilande. Heare in lyke maner they pryuilie aſſayled them that were lefte with the brigantyne, and ſlewe many of them alſo. The reſidue that eſcaped, fledde to the brigantine where they bewayled theyr felowes deathes and counted theyr owne eſcape a victorie. On the ſhore not farre from the place where they ſuffered this miſfortune, there is a tree, in the toppe wherof they ſet vp a croſſe, and graued this inſcription in the barke of the tree: *Vannuis Aldarieci.* There is a ryuer named *Darien*, on the banke wherof ſtandeth the chiefe citie of the ſuppoſed continent. The gouernour therfore hauing intelligence herof, ſent with all ſpeede two ſhippes of warre well furnyſhed, to the ayde of them that were lefte. But they were wyſe to late. Yet folowynge the viewe of the croſſe, they came to the ſhore and redde the letters grauen on the tree, but durſte not attempte fortune. Thus with all theyr hardie ſouldiers departinge from henſe with deſpayre, they ſayled to the nexte Ilande, out of the which they caryed away by violence fyue hundreth men and women, ſuppoſynge lykewyſe that they myght lawfully ſo doo bycauſe they were Idolaters and circumciſed. But the like chaunce happened vnto them when they landed at *Fernandina.* For the Barbarians eſpyinge oportunitie, ſette vppon the Spaniardes in one of the ſhippes with theyr owne weapons and ſlewe theyr keepers. The reſidue that eſcaped, caſtynge them ſelues into the ſea, ſwamme to the nexte carauell, and with theyr felowes aſſayled the carauell that was taken from them. This conflicte was ſo ſharpe, that for the ſpace of foure houres, it was doubtfull whether parte ſhulde obteyne the victorie. The Barbarians both men and women fought verye fiercely, aſwell to recouer theyr libertie, as alſo to holde faſte the praye whiche they had gotten. But in fine, the Spanyardes had the vpper hande by reaſon they were more experte in handelynge of theyr weapons and rulyng of theyr Carauell. The Barbarians beinge thus ouercoome, lepte into the ſea: but the Spanyardes tooke theym ageyne with the ſhippe boates. About a hundreth of the Barbarians peryſhed, beinge partely drowned and partly ſlayne with the ſwoorde: And but fewe of the Spanyardes. Theſe thynges thus pacified, the reſydue of the Barbarians were caryed to the towne of *Sanctiago* and condemned to laboure in the golde mynes. Shortly after they made owte a newe vyage to an other of the Ilandes, whiche lye there about ſo thicke, that they commonly caule the number of them *Archipelagus*, as they in owre ſea of *Ionicum* are cauled *Symplegades.* Here owre men were cruelly handeled: and as many of them as came alande eyther ſlayne or wounded. This Ilande they named *Florida*, bycauſe they arryued there on Eaſter day whiche the Spanyardes caule the floryſhynge day of the reſurrection. They ſay alſo that in this tracte they ſawe. xxvi. Ilandes which *Colonus* had ouerpaſſed: And the ſame ſo to lye aboute *Hiſpaniola* and *Cuba*, as though they warded them from the furie of the Ocean. In many of theſe they founde natiue golde of lyke goodnes to that which is founde in *Granatum.* Th[e]inhabitantes alſo weare many iewels, and haue many Images of theyr domeſticall goddes made both of golde artificially wrought and alſo of woodde gylted. Francis Cheregatus browght one of theyr Idoles with hym, wherby may bee conſidered of what wytte and aptenes they are. It is a maruelous thynge to ſee what maner of raſers they haue, made of certeyne yelowe ſtones cleare and tranſparent lyke vnto Cryſtal. With theſe they ſhaue and carue as though they were made of fine ſteele. When the edges are blunte with longe exerciſe, they ſharpen them not with a whetſtone, or powder, or any other ſtone, but temper them onely with water. They haue alſo a thouſande kindes of inſtrumentes or tooles and ſuch other thynges of fyne deuiſe, which were to longe to rehearſe. Let vs therefore returne from whenſe we haue digreſſed, as to *Cozumella*, *Iucatana*, *Colluacana* or *Olloa*, beinge al landes lately founde, and ſo rich, fruteful and pleaſaunt, that they may in maner be compared to the earthly Paradyſe. Therfore, after that it was knowen to owre men of howe greate momente theſe tractes were, the Spanyardes which inhabited the Ilande of *Cuba* Anunctus beinge the gouernour of the Ilande furnyſhed a newe nauie of ten Carauelles and fyue hundreth menne, with twoo ſmaule brigantines, as it weare in the ſteade of lyght horſemen or forerunners whoſe ayde they myght vſe as ſcoutes to ſearche the wayes for daunger of rockes and ſhalow ſandes or ſhelfes. They ſhipte alſo certeyne horſes, as fyue ſtoned horſes and xvi. mares apte for the warres. For their generall gouernour and Admiral of the nauy, they elected *Fernando Corteſius* who at that tyme was the chiefe ruler of the citie of *Sanctiago.* For vnder capitaines, they appointed Alfons *Portucarerius*, Francis Montegius, Alfons

Sanctiago the chiefe citie of Cuba.

The Barbarians sley the Spaniarde with theyr owne weapons.

The chiefe citie of the supposed continent.

The Spanyardes are slayne ageyne with theyr owne wepons.

The barbarians are slaine and put to flyght.

156

Another vyage. *Archipelagus.* A multitude of Ilandes.

xxvi. Ilandes about Hispaniola and Cuba.

Images of golde.

Rasers of stone.

Instrumentes and tooles.

Landes lyke vnto the earthly Paradyse.

An other vyage of x. Carauels and v. hundreth men.

Horses and mares.

Fernando Cortesius.

Auila, Alderado Spatenſe, Iohn *Velaſquen* and *Diegus Ordaſſus*. They ſtyll folowed the ſame wynde from the laſt angle of *Cuba* toward the weſt. As ſoone as Frauncis Fernandes of Corduba, and then Iohn Griſalua came within proſpecte of the Ilande of Sacrifyces (wherof we haue made mention before) ſoodenly a tempeſt of contrary wynde prohibited theym to take lande and droue them backewarde to *Cozumella* lyinge on the Eaſt ſyde of *Iucatana*. This Ilande hath oncly one hauen named ſainte Iohns porte. And hath in it, onely ſyxe townes. Alſo none other water then in welles and ceſterns, bycauſe it lacketh riuers and ſpringes by reaſon it is plaine, conteynynge onely. xlv. myles in circuite. At the coommynge of owre men, th[e]inhabitauntes fledde to the thicke woods, and forſoke their townes for feare. Owre men entered into their houſes where they founde plentie of vyttayles and many ornamentes perteynynge to the furnyſhynge of their houſes, as hanginges and carpettes of dyuers colours, ſheetes alſo of goſſampine cotton (whiche they caule *Amaccas*) and muche apparell. They haue furthermore innumerable bookes, of the whiche with many other thinges ſente to owre newe Emperour, we wyll ſpeake more largely hereafter. The ſouldiers wandered about the Iland and viewe[d] al thynges diligently, kepyng them ſelues ſtyll in battell raye leaſt they myght be ſodenly inuaded. They founde but a fewe of th[e]inhabitauntes and onely one woman in their coompanie. By th[e]interpretours of *Cuba* and other whiche the Spaniardes tooke fyrſt from *Iucatana*, they perſwaded the woman to caule the kynges that were abſente. They came gladly and made a leage of frendſhyp with owre men, wherby they were reſtored to their houſes and a great parte of their ſtuffe. They are circumciſed Idolatours, and ſacrifyce children of bothe kyndes to their *Zemes*, which are the Images of their familiar and domeſticall ſpirites whiche they honour as goddes. When I enquired of *Alaminus* the pilote, alſo of Frances Montegius and *Portucarerius*, from whenſe they had the children they offered in ſacrifyce, they anſwered that they bowght them in the Ilandes thereaboute by exchaunge for golde and other of their trafycke. For in al this ſo large a ſpace of land, the deuelyſhe anxietie for the deſyre of wicked money, hath not yet oppreſſed th[e]inhabitantes. They ſaye the ſame alſo of the Ilandes lately founde, wherof two are named *Deſtam* and *Seſtam*, whoſe inhabitauntes go naked: and for ſcarceneſſe of children, ſacrifice dogges whiche they nouriſhe, aſwell for that purpoſe as alſo to eate as wee do connies. Theſe dogges are dumme and can not barke, hauynge ſnowtes lyke vnto foxes. Suche as they deſtinate to eate, they geld while they are whelpes, wherby they waxe very fat in the ſpace of foure monethes. They reſerue al the bytches for increaſe, and but fewe dogges. Owre men diſwaded them from theſe ſuperſtitions, declarynge how they were abhominable and deteſted of god. They were ſoone perſwaded and deſyred a law whiche they myght folowe. Owre men therfore declared vnto them that there was onely one god which made heauen and earth, the geuer of al good thynges, beyng of one incomprehenſyble ſubſtaunce vnder triplicitie of perſon. As ſoone as they harde theſe woordes, they broke their *Zemes*, and pared, ſcraped, and waſhed the pauementes and waules of their temples. Owre men gaue them a painted picture of the bleſſed vyrgine which they placed reuerently in their temple, and aboue it a croſſe to be honored in the remembraunce of god and man and the ſaluation of mankynde. They erected alſo an other great croſſe of woodde in the toppe of the temple, whyther they oftentymes reſorte togither to honour the Image of the vyrgine. Th[e]inhabitantes ſignified by th[e]interpretours that in the Iland of *Iucatana* not far from them, there were ſeuen Chriſtians captiues which in tyme paſt were dryuen thither by tempeſte. The Ilande of *Cozumella*, is onely fyue miles diſtant from *Iucatana*. The gouernour *Corteſius* being aduertiſed herof, furnyſhed. ii. Carauels with fyftie men, wyllyng them incontinent to direct their viage thither and to make ſerch for theſe men. They toke with them thre interpretours of *Cozumella* (whoſe language agreeth with theirs) with letters to the Chriſtians if any myght be found. He further declared vnto theym howe goodly a matter they ſhulde bringe to paſſe if they coulde bringe away any of them. For he no wayes doubted but that by their information, he ſhuld be fully certified of the commodities of all thoſe tractes, and the maners of th[e]inhabitauntes. Thus they departed with commaundement to retourne within the ſpace of ſyxe dayes. But when they had remayned there now. viii. days, and hard no woorde of their Cozumellane interpretours whome they had ſent alande with the meſſage and letters, owre men returned to *Cozumella* without them, ſuſpectyng that they were other ſlaine or deteyned. And where as the hole nauye was now determyned to depart from *Cozumella* but that they were hyndered by contrary wynde, they ſodenly eſpied towarde the weſte a Canoa coommynge from *Iucatana*, and in it, one of the Chriſtian captiues (named *Hieronimus Aquillaris*) who had lyued ſeuen yeares in that Ilande. With what ioye they embraſed the one the other, the chance may declare. They were no leſſe deſyrous to heare, then he to tell of the myſſortune whiche befell to hym and his coompanions. And here it ſhal not bee greatly from my purpoſe breefely to rehearſe how the thynge chaunced. In my Decades I haue made mention of a certayne noble man named *Valdiuia*, whome the Spanyardes whiche inhabited *Dariena* in the ſuppoſed continente of the goulf of *Vraba*, ſent to the Iland of *Hiſpaniola* to *Colonus* the Admiral and viceroy with the reſidue of the Senate and counſel there (to whom perteyneth the redreſſe and orderynge of all thinges in theſe newe landes) to ſygnifye vnto them in what extreme neceſſitie and penurie they lyued. Vnhappy *Valdiuia* therfore, takynge this matter in hand in an euell houre, was with a ſudden and vyolent whirlewinde

The Iland of Cozumella.

Carpets and sheetes.

Innumerable bokes.

Circumcised Idolaters.

They Sacrifice Chyldren

157

The Ilandes of Distam and Sestam.

Sacrifice of dogges.

They are soone persuaded to owre religion.

The picture of the blessed Virgine

An other vyage

Aquillaris, vii. yeares captiue in the Iland of Iucatana.

Valdiuia.

The shipwracke of Valdiuia.

dryuen vppon certayne quickeſandes in the proſpecte of the Ilande of *Iamaica*, lyinge in the Southe ſyde of *Hiſpaniola* and *Cuba*. Theſe blind and ſwalowyng ſandes, the Spaniardes cáule vypers: And hat by good reaſon, bycauſe in them many ſhyppes are entangled, as the lycertes are implycate in the tayles of the vipers. While the Carauell thus wreſteled with the water, it was ſo bruſte in ſunder, that *Valdiuia* with thirtie of his felowes, coulde ſcarſely with muche difficultie deſcende into the ſhyppe boate: where, without oers, and without ſayles, they were caried awaye by the vyolence of the water. For (as we haue ſaid before in owre Decades) the ſeas do runne there continually with a vyolent courſe towarde the Weſt. They wandered thus. xiii. dayes not knowyng whyther they went nor yet fyndynge any thyng to eate. Famen conſumed ſeuen of them whiche were caſte in the ſea to feede the fyſhes. The reſydue lykewiſe in maner conſumed by famen and faulynge from one calamitie into an other, were driuen to *Iucatana* and fell into the handes of a cruell kynge who ſlewe *Valdiuia* the gouernour with certayne of his felowes. And when hee had fyrſt ſacrifyced them to his *Zemes*, ſhortely after he eate them with his frindes of that conſpiracie. For they eate onely their enemyes and ſtraungiers: And doo otherwiſe abſteyne from mannes fleſhe. In this meane tyme, while *Hieronimus Aquillaris* with ſyxe of his felowes were reſerued to be ſacrifyced the thirde daye, they brooke their bandes, eſcaped the handes of that cruell tyranne, and fledde to an other kynge beynge his enemye, who receaued them, yet onely as bondemen. It is a ſtraunge thinge to heare of the moother of this *Aquillaris*. For as ſoone as ſhe harde that her ſoonne was faulen into the handes of the nations that eate mannes fleſhe, ſhee fell madde incontinent: So that when ſo euer after, ſhee ſawe any meate roſtyng at the fyer, or onely ready ſpytted to laye to the fyer, ſhee ceaſed not to crye out in this maner. O me moſte wretched moother: Behold the members of my ſon. But to returne to owre purpoſe. When *Aquillaris* had now receaued the gouernours letter ſente by the Cozumellane meſſengers, hee declared to the kynge his mayſter (whoſe name was *Taxmarus*) what was their erraunt thither, and wherfore they were ſent: vſyng in the meane tyme many large diſcourſes in expreſſynge the great poure and magnifycence of their kynge who had of late arriued in thoſe coaſtes. Alſo of their humanitie and gentilneſſe toward their frindes and ſuche as ſubmytted them ſelues to them, and againe their rygour and fierceneſſe ageynſt ſuche as ſtoobernly eyther contemned them or denyed their requeſtes. With theſe woordes he broughte *Taxmarus* into ſuche feare, that the maiſter was now fayne to deſyre his ſeruaunt ſo to handell the matter that they myght quyetly enter into his dominion as his freendes and not as his enemies. *Aquillaris* promiſed in their behalfe that they ſhuld not onely coome in peace, but alſo to ayde hym ageynſt his enemyes if neede ſhulde ſo require. Whervppon hee diſmiſſed *Aquillaris* and with hym three of his familiers and coompanions. Thus they ſayled together from *Cozumella* to *Iucatana* to the ryuer whiche they had founde before in the fyrſte vyage thither by the gouernance of Alaminus the pilot. They found the mouthe of the ryuer ſtopped with ſande, as wee reade of the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egipte when the wyndes (cauled *Eteſii*) blowe in ſummer and eſpecially in the canicular dayes. Therfore where as they coulde not enter into the ryuer with the biggeſte veſſelles (although it bee otherwiſe apte to receaue great ſhyppes) the gouernour cauſed two hundreth men to be ſette alande with the brigantynes and ſhyppe boates: wyllynge *Aquillaris* to offer peace to th[e]inhabitauntes. They demaunded what owre men required. *Aquillaris* anſwered, vyttayles. There was a longe ſpace of ſande by the ſyde of the towne, whither they wylled them to reſorte, promyſynge to brynge them vyttayles thither the daye folowynge. Owre men wente and they came accordynge to their promiſſe and brought with them eyght of their hennes beynge as bygge as peacockes, of brownyſhe coloure, and not inferiour to peacockes in pleaſaunte taſt. They brought alſo as muche bread made of *Maizium* (whiche is a graine not muche vnlyke vnto panyke) as wolde ſcarcely ſerue tenne hungry men: And here with deſyred them to depart. But when they perceaued that owre men made no haſt away, immediately there came a great coompanye of armed men towarde theym demaundyng what they had to do thus to wander in other mennes landes. Owr men made anſwere by *Aquillaris*, that they deſyred peace, vyttayles, and golde for exchaunge of other thinges. They anſwered ageyne, that they wolde nother peace nor warre with them. But threatned them to auoyde the lande excepte they woolde bee diſtroyed euery manne. Owre men ſayde that they woulde not departe withowte ſuffyciente vyttayles to mayntayne their ſouldyers.

They appoynted the day folowynge to brynge them more vytayles: but they brooke promeſſe. Yet perceauing the ſecond day that owre men were encamped on the ſande and had repoſed there that nyght, they brought them as much more vytayles, and commaunded them in the name of theyr kynge to departe Owre men ſayde that they were deſyrous to ſee the towne, and to haue yet more ſtore of vytayles. The Barbarians denyed theyr requeſt, and therwith departed whiſperynge and mutterynge amonge them ſelues. In the meane tyme owre men were ſtyll ſo oppreſſed with hunger that they were enforced to ſeeke for meate. The gouernoure therefore ſent his vnder capitaynes to lande with a hundreth and fyftie men. As they went diſperſed in dyuers companyes about the vyllages of the countrey, the Barbarians met with one of theyr bandes, and put them to great diſtreſſe. But when theyr felowes beinge not farre from them, harde the noyſe of theyr alarome,

The quickesandes cauled vypers.

The course of the sea towarde the west.

158

Valdiuia is sacrificed to Idoles.

Howe Aquillaris escaped

Kynge Taxmarus.

The mouth of a ryuer stopped with sande.

Turky hens

159

A conflicte.

they came with all poſſible haſte to theyr reſcue. The gouernour on the other ſyde, placinge his ordinance in the brygantines and ſhippe boates, approched to the ſhore with the reſidue of his ſouldiers. The Barbarians lykewiſe, beinge redy furnyſhed to the battayle, came runnynge to the ſea ſyde to diſturbe theym that they ſhulde not coome alande: And with theyr arrowes, wounded manye a farre of vnprepared. The gouernoure diſcharged aboute. xx. pieces of ordinaunce ageynſte them: With the ſlaughter and terrible thunder wherof, and with the flame of fyer and ſmel of brimſtone, they were ſo aſtoniſhed and put to ſuch feare, that they fled and diſparcled lyke wylde beaſtes: whom owre men perſuinge, entered the towne which th[e]inhabitantes forſooke in maner for feare of theyr owne men whom they ſawe ſo diſmayde. On the banke of this ryuer there is a towne of ſuch portentous byggenes as I dare not ſpeake. But *Alaminus* the pylot, ſayth that it conteyneth in circuite fyue hundreth myles, and that it conſiſteth of. xxv. thouſande houſes. Sume make it ſumwhat leſſe: But they all agree that it is exceadynge great and notable. The houſes are diuided with gardens, and are buylded of lyme and ſtone verye artificially and of cunnynge woorkemanſhippe. To theyr haules, chambers, parlers, or other places of habitation, they aſcende by tenne or twelue ſteares: And haue certeyne ſpaces betwene euery houſe: ſo that it is not lawful for any to lade his neighbours waules with rafters or beames. Theyr houſes are ſeparate one from an other by the ſpace of three houſes: And are for the more parte couered with reede and thetche: And many alſo with ſlate or other ſtone. The barbarians them ſelues confeſſed that they were that day fortie thouſande men at the battayle, which were vanquiſhed of a fewe by reaſon of the newe and vnknowen kynde of feyght with gunnes and horſes. For the gouernour had vnbarked. xvi. horſes which were alſo at the battayle, and ſo fiercely aſſayled the Barbarians on the backehalfe, that they brake theyr array and ſcattered them as it had byn flockes of ſheepe, ouerthrowing, woundynge, and kyllynge them on euery ſyde. Whiche thynge the feely wretches ſo imputed to a miracle, that they had not the poure to occupie theyr wepons. For wheras before they had neuer ſeene any horſes, they thought that the man on horſebacke and the horſe, had byn all one beaſte, as the antiquitie dyd fable of the monſter *Centaurus*. Owr men poſſeſſed the towne. xxii. dayes where they made good chere vnder couert, whyle the owners of the houſes lay vnder the firmament and durſt not aſſayle owre men who had placed them ſelues in the ſtrongeſt parte of the towne, where ſume kepte continuall watche (leaſt the Barbarians ſhulde ſoodenly inuade theim) whyle other gaue them ſelues to reſte and ſleepe. Th[e]inhabitantes caule this towne *Potanchana*: But owre men for the victorie which they obteyned here, named it *Victoria*. It is a maruelous thynge to conſider the greatenes, magnificence and finenes of the buyldinge of certeyne palaices they haue in the countrey to the which they reſorte ſumtymes for theyr ſolace and paſtyme. Theſe are curiouſly buylded with many pleaſaunt diuiſes, as galeries, ſolars, turrettes, portals, gutters with chambers boorded after the maner of owre waynſcotte and well flowred. Foure of owr Spanyardes went into one of them of ſuch greatnes, that they wandered in the ſame for the ſpace of foure houres before they coulde fynde the waye owt. At the length by th[e]interpretours and certeyne captiues owre men ſent for the kynge and ſuche rulers as were nexte vnder hym in autoritie, wyllyng them to ſubmyt them ſelues and to coome into the towne vnarmed. Gyuinge the meſſengers further in commaundement to certifie them that in their ſo doinge, they wolde commen with them as concernynge conditions of peace, and reſtore them theyr towne. They came gladly, and entered euery man into his owne houſe vppon condition that they ſhulde euer thereafter abſteyne from ſuch cerimonies and horrible ſacrifices of mans fleſhe to deuils the mortal enemies to mankynd, whoſe Images they honoured. And to directe the eyes of theyr myndes to Chriſte owre god the maker of heauen and earth, who was borne into this world of a virgin, and ſuffered death on the croſſe for the redemption of mankynde. And fynally to profeſſe them ſelues ſubiectes to the great Chriſtian kynge of Spayne. They promyſed both, and were inſtructed as farre as the ſhortenes of tyme wolde permitte. Beinge thus reſtored, they recompenſed owre men with many rewardes: Suppoſynge ſuche men to be ſent from heauen, which being ſo fewe in number, durſt attempte battayle ageynſt ſo great a multitude. They gaue owre men alſo certeyne golde and twentie ſlaues. Departing therefore from henſe, and coaſtynge ſtyll alonge by the ſame ſhore, they came ageyne to the goulfe whiche *Alaminus* the pylot founde before vnder *Griſalua*. This they named *Bian Sancti Iohannis*, that is, Saynt Iohns goulfe: For *Bian* in the Spanyſhe tonge ſignifieth a goulfe. Here th[e]inhabitantes reſorted to them peaceably. Aboute a myle frome the ſhore, was a towne of a thouſande and fyue hundreth houſes ſituate vppon a hyll. They profered owre men halfe the towne if they wolde dwel with them for euer. This perhaps they dyd the rather eyther fearynge th[e]exemple of th[e]inhabitantes of *Potanchana*, the fame wherof myght haue coome to theyr eares, or els hopynge that vnder the ſhadowe of ſuche valiant menne, they myght obteyne ayde and ſuccour ageynſt theyr enemies and bortherers. For (as I haue ſayde before) they dyſtroye one an other with continuall warre for the deſyre to inlarge theyr dominions. Owre men refuſed perpetuall habitacion, and accepted theyr frendely profer for a tyme. As they came alande, the people folowed them on euery ſyde with bouwes in theyr handes which they helde ouer owre mens heades to defende them from the rayne as though they had walked in a continual arbour. Here they encamped. And leaſt the reſidue lefte in the ſhippes, ſhulde in the meane tyme waxe ſlothefull with Idlenes,

The Barbarians are put to flyght.

The great towne of Potanchana or Victoria.

A towne of xxv. thousand houses.

Gunnes and horses.

The man and the horse, thought to be one beast. *Centaurus.*

Palaices of maruelous bygnes and wel buylded.

A towne of a thousand and fyue hundred houses.

They receue owre religion.

160

the gouernour gaue commaundement to *Alaminus* the pylot and Francis Montegius to ſearch the weſt partes of that lande, whyle he relieued the weried ſouldiers and healed ſuche as were wounded. To the n that went forward on this vyage, he aſſigned two brigantines with fiftie men. Vnto this goulfe, the courſe of the water was gentyl enough and moderate. But when they had ſayled a lyttle further towarde the Weſte, they founde the ſea runnynge with ſo ſwift a courſe as if it were a great ryuer faûlynge from the tops of hygh mountaynes: In ſo much that in a ſhorte ſpace of tyme it caried them fiftie myles from theyr felowes. When they were now entered into this violent ſtreame of the water, they ſawe on their left hand a large playne ſea which mette with the courſe of the other waters faulynge from the weſte. And lyke as two great ryuers that runne contrary wayes, make a vehement conflycte where they meete, ſo ſeemed the waters commyng from the Southe to reſyſt theſe waters as enemyes that had entered into the ryght or poſſeſſyon of an other. On the contrary parte, they ſawe the lande reachynge farre bothe on the lefte hande and on the ryght. In this ſtrife betwene the waters, they were ſo toſſed on bothe ſydes and entangled with whirlepooles, that they longe wreſtled with owte hope of lyfe. At the length with muche difficultie, turnynge the ſtemmes or forpartes of their ſhyppes ageynſt the ſtreame from whenſe they came, and labourynge al that they myght with their oers and ſayles, they coulde ſcarſely ouercoome the rage of the water: In ſo much that where as they thought that they had in one nyght ſayled twoo myles, they founde that they were dryuen backe foure myles. Yet at the length with goddes helpe, they ouercame this daungerous conflycte. They ſpente. xxii. daies in this lyttle ſpace of ſea: And when they were nowe returned to their felowes, declared vnto them that that ende was the land of *Colluacana* whiche they adiudged to be parte of the ſuppoſed continent. The lande whiche they ſawe a farre of before their faſe, they ſuppoſed eyther to be annexed to owre continent, or to bee ioyned to the large North regions cauled *Baccalaos*, wherof we haue made mention in owr Decades in the vyage of Sebaſtian Cabote. This matter is yet doubtefull. But wee truſte it ſhall once bee better knowen. While Alaminus and Montegius ſearched theſe ſecreates, the kynge of the prouince (whoſe name was *Multoxumam*) ſent owre men by one of his chiefe offycers (beynge alſo his Lieuetenaunt of the ſayde towne) many ryche and goodly preſentes of golde, ſyluer, and precious ſtoones, ſette and wroughte after a marueylous ſtraunge deuyſe and with no leſſe cunnynge woorkemanſhyp. Here they determined to ſende meſſengiers to owre newe Emperour to knowe his pleaſure that they myght in this prouince plant a newe colonie or habitation. And this dyd they withowte th[e]aduiſe of *Diegus Velaſquen* the gouernour of the Iland of *Cuba Fernandina*, who fyrſte ſente them foorth with commaundement to returne ageyne after they had ſearched theſe regions and obteyned plentie of golde. While they conſulted hereof, they were of dyuers opinions. But the moſte part alleaged that in this caſe it was not requiſyte to make the gouernour of their counſaile. Foraſmuche as the matter ſhulde be referred to a higher Iudge, as to the kyng of Spaine him ſelfe. When they were thus agreed, they receaued vyttayles of the gentle kyng of the prouince, and aſſigned the place of their colonie twelue myles from the ſayde towne, in a fruteful and holſome ſoyle. For their generall gouernour, they elected *Corteſius* the gouernour of the nauye, againſt his wyll as ſum ſaye. For other magiſtrates to gouerne the citie which they intended to build he chooſe Portucarerius and Montegius of whome we haue made mention before. They choſe alſo certeyne meſſengiers to ſende to the kyng by the conduction of *Alaminus* the pylot. Furthermore, foure of the princes of this prouince offered them ſelues wyllyngly to go with owre men into Spaine to th[e]intent to ſee owre landes and that kynge whoſe poure is ſoo great and whoſe auctoritie reacheth ſo farre. They brought lykewiſe two women with them, which ſerued and obeied them in all thinges after the maner of theyr countrey. The people of this nation is of broune or yelowyſhe colour. Bothe the men and the women haue pendauntes of gold and precious ſtones hanginge at their eares. The men alſo, boore their nether lyppes full of holes from the vppermoſte parte of the lyppe euen vnto the nethermoſte parte of the gumme. At theſe they hange certeyne rynges and plates of golde and ſyluer faſtned to a ſmaule and thynne plate lyinge within betwene the lippe and the gumme. At the byggeſt hole in the myddeſt of the lip, there hangeth a rounde plate of ſyluer as brode as the coyne cauled a Corolyne, and as thicke as a mannes fynger. I do not remember that euer I ſawe any thynge that ſeemed more fylthy in myne eye. Yet do they thynke that there is nothing more cumly vnder the circle of the moone. Wherby we may ſee howe vainely mankynde wandereth in his owne blyndneſſe. The Ethiopian thincketh the blacke colour to be fayrer then the white: And the white man thinketh otherwiſe. They that are pouled, thinke that more decent then to weare a buſh and they that weare beardes, iudge it a deformitie to be ſhauen. As appetite therfore moueth, and not as reaſon perſwadeth, men runne after vanities: And euery prouynce is ruled by their owne ſenſe, as writeth ſaint Ierome. From whenſe they haue their golde, we haue ſpoken ſufficiently before. But as owre men marueyled where they had their ſyluer, they ſhewed them certayne highe mountaynes whiche are continually couered with ſnowe ſauynge that at certeyne tymes of the yeare, the onely toppes are ſeene bare bicauſe the ſnow is there molten by reaſon of the thicke and warme cloudes. The playnes therfore, or mylde, ſofte, and pleaſaunt mountaynes ſeeme to brynge foorthe golde: And the rough craggye mountaynes with their coulde valleyes, are the places where ſyluer

An other vyage of two brygantines and fiftie men.

Where the sea runneth swyftly from the East to the West.

A conflict betwene the waters comming from the west and from the south.

A dangerous and peinefull vyage.

The land of Colluacana.

The land of Baccaleos or Baccalearum

Rych presentes of golde and precious stones.

161

A newe colonie.

This Cortesius hath written a booke of these thinges

They weare rynges and plates at ther lyppes.

The dyuers phantasies of men.

Syluer

Note where gold and syluer are engendered.

I thinke this laton to be sum kynde of pure copper, or els copper that holdeth golde. For laton is an artificial metal, and hath no naturall myne.

is engenderd. They haue alſo laton, wherof they make ſuch maces and hammers as are vſed in the warres. Dyggynge mattockes alſo, and ſpades: for they haue nother Iren nor ſteele. But lette vs nowe ſpeake of the preſentes ſente into Spayne to the kyng: and fyrſte of the bokes. Theſe procuratours therfore of the newe colonie of the prouynce of *Colluacana*, emong other their preſentes, brought alſo a great number of bookes, the leaues wherof are made of the inner ryndes or barkes of trees, thinner then eyther that of the elme or of the ſalowe. Theſe they ſmere or annoint with the pytche of molten *Bitumen*, and while they be ſofte, extend them to what forme them lyſteth. When they be coulde and harde, they rubbe them ouer with a certeyne playſter. It is to bee thoughte that they beate the playſter into fine floure, and ſo temperynge it with ſum byndynge moiſter, to make a cruſte therwith vppon the leaues, wheron they wryte with any ſharpe inſtrument, and blotte the ſame againe with a ſpunge or ſum ſuche other thynge, as marchaunt men and noble mens ſtewardes are accuſtomed to do with their wrytynge tables made of the woodde of fygge trees. The leaues of their bokes are not ſet in order after the maner of owres, but are extended many cubettes in length. The matters whiche they wryte, are conteyned in ſquare tables: Not looſe, but ſo bounde togither with the toughe and flexible cley cauled *Bitumen*, that they ſeeme lyke woodden tables whiche had byn vnder the handes of cunnyng bokebynders. Which way ſo euer the booke lyeth open, there are two leaues ſeene and two ſydes written, with as many lyinge hyd vnder them, excepte the booke be vnfoulded in length. For vnder one leafe there are many leaues ioyned togyther. The formes of their letters are nothynge lyke vnto owres. But are muche more crooked and entangeled, lyke vnto fyſhehookes, knottes, ſnares, ſtarres, diſe, fyles, and ſuche other muche lyke vnto the Egiptian letters, and written in lynes lyke vnto owres. Here and there betwene the lynes, are pictured the ſhapes of men and dyuers beaſtes: And eſpecially the Images of kynges and other noble men. Wherby it is to be thought that in ſuche bookes, the factes of their kynges are conteyned as wee ſee the lyke emonge vs howe owre printers expreſſe the ſumme of hiſtories in pictures, that men may therby be the more allured to bye ſuche bookes. The couerynges of their bookes are alſo artifycially wrought and paynted. When they are ſhutte, they ſeeme to differre nothynge from owres in forme. In theſe bookes are furthermore comprehended their lawes, rytes of ceremonies and ſacrifyces, annotations of Aſtronomie, accomptes, computations of tymes, with the maner of graffynge, ſowyng, and other thynges perteinyng to huſbandry. They begynne the yeare from the goynge downe of the ſeuen ſtarres cauled *Vergiliæ* or *Pleiades*: And counte theyr monethes accordyng to the moones. They name a moneth, *Tona*, of the moone. For in theyr language, they caule the moone *Tona*, they reken the dayes by the ſoonnes. Therfore as many daies as they name, they ſaye, ſo many ſoonnes. The ſoonne in their tonge, is cauled *Tonatico*. They deſtribute the yeare (without any reaſon why) into twentie monethes: And the moneth into as many dayes. The temples whiche they frequent, they adourne with golden hangynges and other ornamentes of golde and ſyluer with precious ſtones intermixte. At the ſpringe of the daye, they perfume their temples with frankenſence and make their praiers before they take in hande any other buſyneſſe. But oh horrible crueltie. For th[e]inhabitauntes of all theſe tractes alſo, doo ſacrifyce children to their Idoles in lyke maner as wee haue ſayde before. At ſuche tyme as the ſeedes lye in the ground, and when the corne begynneth to ſhewe foorth the eare, they deſtinate to their *Zemes* ſuche bondmen as they haue bought, or ſuche captiues as they haue taken in the warres, which they ſacrifyce after that they haue made them great chiere and decked them in precious apparell. Alſo before they ſacrifyce theſe poore wretches, they lead them about the towne whyle al the people ſalute them humbly and reuerently, affyrmyng that in ſhorte ſpace, they ſhalbe receaued into the coompanye of the goddes. They honour their *Zemes* with an other ſharp kind of deuotion: For they lette them ſelues bludde, eyther in the tonge, lyps, eares, legges, thyghes, or breſt, which they take in their handes and hurle it vppe towarde heauen, ſoo that with the ſaule therof the pauement of the temple is all ſparcled with bludde, wherby they thincke that their goddes are well pleaſed. From the newe colonie (cauled *Villa Ricca*) nyne myles diſtante, there is a towne of. xv. thouſande houſes, whiche th[e]inhabitauntes caule *Cemobal*, but owre men named it *Sybilla*. The kynge of this towne had fyue men whiche he reſerued to be ſacrifyced. Whom when owre men wold haue delyuered, the kynge made humble requeſt to them, ſayinge that if they tooke awaye ſuche men as he had conſecrated to be offered to the goddes, they ſhulde brynge vtter deſtruction to hym and all his kyngdome. For if owre ſacrifyces (ſayd he) do ceaſe, owre *Zemes* wyll take ſuche diſpleaſure with vs that they wyll ſuffer owre corne, graffes, and frutes, to bee conſumed of woormes, ſcortched with drowth, deſtroyed with fluddes, or blaſted with lyghtnynge. Owre men perceauynge his erneſtneſſe herein, thought it beſte to choſe the leaſt euel, perceauynge that it was yet no tyme to diſquyet their myndes, and therfore ſuffered them to exerciſe their accuſtomed ceremonies. And althoughe their prieſtes promyſſe theym immortall glorie, eternall felicytie, and perpetuall conuerſation with the goddes after the ſtormye dayes of this lyfe, yet do they with heauy countenaunces giue eare to their promiſſes, and had rather be ſette at lybertie. Their prieſtes are named *Quines* in the plurell number, and *Quin* in the ſyngular. They leade a pure and chaſte lyfe: And are honoured of the people with feare and reuerence. They make fagots of the bones of their enemyes which they haue taken in the warres,

162 Theyr letters

What is conteyned in theyr bookes.

Temples rychly adourned.

Prayer.

They sacryfice chyldren and captiues.

A wronge way to heauen

Bluddy gods

Villa Ricca.

Siuilla Noua.

The force of an owlde errour.

Theyr priests lyue chast.

Faggots of bones.

and hange vppe the ſame at the feete of their *Zemes*, as tokens of the victories obteyned by their fauour. To theſe they adde certayne titles and ſuperſcriptions as teſtimonies of the ſame. This is ſtraunge and woorthy to be noted, that when their children are a yeare oulde, the prieſtes in their temples with deuoute ceremonies and murmurynge woordes, poure water in forme of a croſſe vpon their heades with a cruet, wherby they ſeeme to baptiſe them. Neyther do they as the Iewes and Turkes, thinke their temples polluted if any of a ſtraunge relygion bee preſent at their ſacrifyces and other ſolemnities. Wee haue nowe ſpoken ſuffycientely of their bookes, temples, and ſuperſtitions. Lette vs nowe therfore coome to the other preſentes which were brought to the kynge. Emonge theſe, there were twoo broode and rounde plates (whiche ſumme haue named the Images of the ſoonne and moone) the one of ſiluer and the other of gold in largeneſſe and roundneſſe muche lyke to the ſtones of hand mylles: yet but thynne, and in maner bothe of one of circumference, that is. xxviii. ſpannes in circuite.

163
A fygure of baptisme.

The presentes sent into Spayne to the kynge.

Two Images of gold and syluer.

That of golde is of the weyght of three thouſande and. viii. hundreth Caſtellans, where as wee haue ſayde before that a Caſtellane is a coyne of golde which weyeth more than a Ducate by a trient, that is the thyrde parte of a pounde. In the center of this, was the Image of a kynge of halfe a cubette longe, ſyttinge in a t[h]rone and appareled to the knee, lyke vnto a maumette, with ſuch countenaunce as owre paynters are wonte to paynte fayries or ſprites. About the Image, were the ſhapes of trees and floures, ſo that it ſeemed to ſytte as though it had byn in a fielde. The other of ſyluer, was made to the ſame ſimilitude, beinge alſo in maner of the ſame weyght, and both of pure metall. They brought lykewyſe certeyne graynes of rude golde (that is, ſuche as was neuer molten) about the byggenes of fytches or the pulſe cauled lintels in token of plentie of natiue golde. Alſo two cheynes of golde, wherof the one conteyned. viii. lynkes in the whiche were ſet two hundreth threeſcore and twoo fayre and cleare redde ſtones, and yet no rubyes: furthermore, a hundrethe foureſcore and three greene ſtones, and yet no emerodes. Neuertheleſſe, theſe are in lyke eſtimation with them as the other are with vs. At the edge of this cheine, there hange. xxvii. golden belles, hauynge betwene euery of them, foure iewels of precious ſtones incloſed in golde, at euery of the which in lyke maner hange certeyne ſpangels of golde. The other cheyne conſiſteth onely of foure golden lynkes, beſet rounde about with a hundreth and two redde ſtones, and a hundreth threeſcore and twelue greene ſtones, with. xxvi. golden belles curiouſly wrought and placed in comely order. In the verye myddeſt of the cheyne, are ten great precious ſtones incloſed in golde, at the whiche alſo hange a hundrethe golden, pendauntes of cunnynge woorkemanſhippe. They brought furthermore twelue paire of lether buſkynnes of diuers colours, ſumme imbrothered with gold and ſumme with ſyluer, with plates and iewelles of golde and precious ſtones incloſed, and at euery of them certayne golden belles. Alſo certeyne myters beſette with precious ſtoones of dyuerſe colours, emonge the whiche ſume are blewe like vnto ſaphires. Of creſtes, gerdles, and fannes made of fethers, I wotte not what I ſhulde ſaye. But ſuerly if euer the wyttes and inuentions of men haue deſerued honoure or commendacion in ſuche artes, theſe ſeeme moſte woorthy to bee had in admiracion. I do not maruaile at golde and precious ſtones. But am in maner aſtonyſhed to ſee the woorkemanſhyppe excell the ſubſtance. For I haue with woonderynge eyes behelde a thouſande formes and ſimilitudes, of the which I am not able to wryte. And in my iudgement, I neuer ſawe any thing whoſe bewtie myght ſo allure the eyes of men. As they marueyled at the naturall bewtie of the fethers of owre peacockes and pheaſantes, ſo dyd we no leſſe maruel at the artifycial bewtie of ſuche thinges as they make of fethers and quilles impaled with golde. For I ſawe in manye of their woorkes, all maner of natiue colours euen in the quilles wherof they make ſuche inſtrumentes. They brought alſo two helmettes garnyſſhed with precious ſtones of a whiteſhe blewe colour. One of theſe is edged with belles and plates of golde, and vnder euery bell two knobbes of golde. The other, beſyde the ſtones wherwith it is couered, is lykewyſe edged with. xxv. golden belles and knobbes: and hath on the creſt, a greene bird with the feete, bylle, and eyes, of golde. Alſo foure ſpeares muche lyke vnto troute ſpeares or yele ſpeares, the woodde wherof is all couered with quilles of diuers colours marueilouſly wrethed with golden wyers and plates intermyxte. Euery of theſe ſpeares haue three pikes, whoſe edges or teeth are all of precious ſtones made faſte with wyers of golde. Of like workmanſhip they brought a great ſcepter byſet with precious ſtoones and belles of gold, alſo a braſlet of gold, and ſhowes made of a hartes ſkynne, ſowed and imbrothered with golden wyers, with a white ſole beneth. Furthermore a glaſſe of a bryght blewe ſtone, and an other of white, both encloſed in golde. Likewiſe a precious ſtone of the kynde of them that are cauled *Sphinges*, incloſed in golde. Furthermore the heade of a great lyſarde, two great ſhelles, two duckes, the ſhapes of diuers other byrdes, foules, and fyſſhes, and all of maſſie golde. Furthermore. xxiiii. rounde and ſquare targettes, ſhieldes, and buckelers of golde, and fyue of ſyluer. Alſo a triple crowne of plates and wyers of golde marueylouſlye wreathed with quilles and fethers of diuers colours hauing on the fronte a plate of golde on the whiche is grauen the Image of the Idole *Zemes*. About this Image, hange foure other plates like croſſes of gold in the whiche are grauen the heades of diuers beaſtes, as lyons, tygers, woulues, and ſuch other. They brought alſo the ſymilitudes of certeyne beaſtes made ſumme of roddes or twygges, and ſum of woodde with the beaſtes owne

Two cheines of gold maruelously byset with precious stones and iewels.

Buskyns.

Myters.

How can we then caul them beastly or Barbarous.

If they had changed their gold for owre Iren, they had not so soone byn subdued.

Quylles.

Helmets.

A byrde.

Speares.

A scepter.
A braselet.
Shoocs.
164
Glasses.
Byrdes, foules, and fysshes of gold.
Targets, etc. of gold.
A crowne of golde

Crosses.

Images of beastes. Shietes.

ſkynnes theron, and garnyſſhed with collers of laton belles. Lykewiſe diuers ſhietes weaued of goſſampyne cotton of ſundry colours, wherof two are rychely frynged with golde and precious ſtones, and three other with quilles and fethers intermyxte with goſſampine cotton of ſundrye colours and chekered lyke the panes of a cheſte borde. Sum are on the one ſyde, of blacke, white, and redde colours: and on the other ſyde, plaine without any varietie. Other ſum, are wrought in lyke maner with variable colours with a wheele or circle of blacke in the myddeſt intermyxte with ſhyning fethers and ſparkes of golde lyke ſtarres. They brought alſo

Cloth of arras. A souldyers clooke.

cloth of Aras or Verdure of marueylous workmanſhyppe. Likewiſe a ſouldiers cloke ſuche as their prynces weare in the warres, with certeyne priuye coates of fence, and ſundrye tirementes perteynyng to their heades, with alſo many ſuche other thynges more bewtifull to the eye then ryche or precious, wherof to entreate particularly, it ſhoulde be more tedious then profytable. I lette paſſe here alſo to ſpeake of many particular nauigations and of the trauailes and daungers whiche they ſuſteyned in the ſame, with the moniſters and

Regesters of the th[e]affayres of India.

ſecreates of nature they ſawe: whiche are all conteyned in the regeſters of owre Senate of th[e]affayres of India, owte of the whiche I haue ſelected theſe fewe annotations, ſuche as ſeemed to me moſte meete to bee publiſſhed. Notwithſtandyng theſe ryche and goodly preſentes, yet were they that brought them, and alſo *Corteſius* the

Th[e]autoritie of the Lieuetenaunt.

gouernour of the nauye and autour of erectinge their newe colonie in thoſe remote regions, adiudged by the Senate to haue doen ageinſt ryght and equitie, in that they attempted the ſame withowte th[e]aduice of the gouernour of the Ilande of *Cuba* who ſente them foorthe by the kynges auctoritie, where as they dyd other thinges beſyde their commyſſyon, ye althoughe they wente to the kynge, not fyrſt knowynge his pleaſure whom the kyng had ſubſtitute his Lieuetenaunt in that Ilande. In ſo muche that by his procuratour, he accuſed them before the Senate as fugitiue theeues and traytours. They on the other parte alleaged that they had dooen the kyng better ſeruyce then he: And that they had ſhewed ſuffycient obedience in appealyng to the kyng as the hygher Iudge. But the gouernour required by the vertue of his commiſſion and the kinges letters pattentes that they myght be headed for their diſobedience ageinſt hym whom they knewe to be autoriſed by the kynge. They ageine replied that they had not offended the kyng, but rather deſerued rewarde for their great dangiers and trauails. Bothe the rewarde and puniſhment were deferred, and a daye appointed when bothe

The Spanyardes of Dariena.

parties ſhoulde bee harde. Leete vs nowe therfore coome to the Spaniardes of *Dariena*, th[e]inhabitours of the goulfe of *Vraba* in the ſuppoſed Continent. We haue ſayde before that *Dariena* is a ryuer runnynge towarde the Weſte ſyde of the goulfe of *Vraba*. On the banke of this ryuer, the Spaniardes planted theyr fyrſt colonie

Sancta Maria Antiqua.

or habitation after they had vanquiſſhed kynge *Chemaccus*. This colonie they named *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, by reaſon of a vowe whiche they made to the virgine Marie in the tyme of the battaile ageynſt *Chemaccus*. To

Petrus Arias whom the Spanyardes name Pedrarias.

theſe (as wee haue made mention in the ende of owre decades) was *Petrus Arias* ſente with a thouſande and two hundreth men at the requeſt of *Vaſchus Nunnez Balboa*, who was then the gouernour of *Dariena*, and the fyrſt that found and diſcoured the large South ſea heretofore vnknowen. Wee haue alſo declared how at the arriual of *Petrus Arias* the newe gouernour, he deuided his armye into Centurions, that is, capitaines ouer hundrethes,

This sea the spanyardes caule Mar del sur.

whom hee ſent foorth dyuers waies. What tragedies folowed hereof, I wyll abſolue in fewe woordes, bycauſe all are

165

horrible and vnpleaſaunte. For ſence we fynyſhed owre Decades, there hath byn none other then kyllynge,

Contention betwene Vaschus and Petrus Arias.

ſleyinge, murtherynge and accuſinge. The kynge made *Vaſchus* gouernoure but durynge his pleaſure. His courage was ſuch, and his factes ſo notorious, that he coulde not longe abyde the hautynes of *Petrus Arias*. To bee breefe, theyr faulynge owte and diſcord confounded al thynges. Iohn Cacedus the pulpitte fryer of the order of ſaynt Frances, dyd his vttermoſte endeuour to make them frendes, promyſynge vnto *Vaſchus* the dowghter of *Petrus Arias* to wyfe. But no meanes coulde be founde howe theſe two which bore the chiefe rule, myght bee brought to agreement. At the length the matter grewe to ſuch extremitie, that *Petrus Arias* fyndynge occaſion of

Petrus Arias commandeth that Vaschus be put to death.

querelynge ageynſte *Vaſchus*, ſent proceſſe to the maieſtrates of the towne, wherby he commaunded them to ſtrangle *Vaſchus*, and fyue other which were chiefe capitaynes vnder hym: Alleagynge that they and their confetherates conſpired to rebel in the South ſea: And that *Vaſchus* hym ſelfe for that intente, had buylded and furniſhed foure ſhippes to ſearch the ſouth coaſtes of the ſuppoſed continent: Alſo that to his three hundreth

Vaschus is accused.

ſouldiers and companions which he had with hym, he ſhulde ſpeake woordes of this effecte as foloweth. My frendes, and felowes of my longe peynes and trauayles: Howe longe ſhall we be ſubiecte to the commaundement of other, ſythe wee haue bydden the brunt and ouercumme th[e]enterpriſe for the whiche this newe gouernour was ſent with ſo great a multitude? Who can any longer abyde his pryde and inſolencie? Lette vs therefore folowe theſe coaſtes whyther ſo euer fortune ſhall dryue vs: And among theſe ſo many pleaſaunt and fruteful prouinces of this large lande, let us choſe one in the whiche wee maye with libertie ſpende that portion of owre lyues which yet remayneth. Who can fynde vs, or ſhalbe able to profer vs vyolence? When theſe or the lyke woordes were declared to *Petrus Arias*, he ſente to the Southe partes for *Vaſchus*, wyllynge hym by the vertue of his commiſſion to repayre to him foorthwith. *Vaſchus* obeyed, and at his commynge was caſte in

Vaschus is put to death.

pryſon: yet conſtantly denyinge that euer he entended any ſuche thynge. Wytneſſes were brought ageynſt hym, and his wordes rehearſed from the begynnynge To conclude, he was iudged woorthy death, and was put to

execution. And this is the rewarde wherwith the blynde goddeſſe oftentymes recompenſeth ſuch as haue ſuſteyned great trauayles and daungiours to bee hyghly in her fauoure. *Petrus Arias* leauynge his wyfe in *Dariena*, embarked hym ſelfe in the ſhippes left of *Vaſchus*, to th[e]intent to ſearche thoſe coaſtes. But whether he be returned or not, we haue yet no certeyne knoweleage. He hath alſo his fortune. Yet is there an other gouernour aſſigned, whoſe name is *Lupus Soſa*, the viceroye of the Ilandes of *Canarie*. What ſtomake *Petrus Arias* may haue yf he returne, let good men iudge. There was nothyng doone vnder hym woorthy glorie. Sume thynke that he was at the begynnyng ſo ſlacke and negligent in his office, and not ſeuere in correctynge errours and miſorders. But we wyll leaue him and rehearſe ſumwhat wherof we haue byn lately informed as touchynge the great and diepe ryuer of *Dabaiba*, the whiche for the greatnes and largenes therof, owre men named *Grandis*, that is, great, as we haue noted in owre Decades. This riuer fauleth into the furtheſt corner of the goulfe of *Vraba* by ſeuen portes or mowthes as dooth the ryuer of *Nilus* into the Egyptian ſea, whoſe large deſcription yowe may alſo reade in owre Decades. That the mountaynes on euery ſyde about this ryuer, are rych in golde, we haue learned by th[e]information of th[e]inhabitauntes, of whom we made diligent inquiſition. *Vaſchus*, and beſyde hym other gouernoures and Lieuetenauntes, haue foure tymes entered into this ryuer with theyr armyes in battayle array, and with dyuers kyndes of ſhippes fyrſte for the ſpace of fortie myles, then fyftie, and at the laſt foureſcore, at an other tyme alſo ouerthwarte the ryuer. Oh ſhamefull chaunce and deteſtable couwardenes of owre men. A naked nation encounterynge with them that had apparell, the armed ageynſte the vnarmed, had the ouerthrowe in maner in all conflictes, and were other all ſlayne or wounded. They vſe inuenemed arrowes, and are ſuche experte archers, that if they eſpye any place of theyr enemie bare or vnarmed, they wyll not lyghtly fayle to ſtryke him there. They vſe alſo many dartes, which in the tyme of the battayle they hurle ſo thicke a farre of, that they take the lyght of the ſonne from theyr enemies as it were with a clowde. They haue lykewiſe brode and longe ſwoordes made of a heauie and harde kinde of woodde, wherewith they feyght fiercely neare at hande. *Vaſchus* hym ſelfe receaued many woundes in encounterynge with them. And thus by reaſon of the fiercenes of theſe barbarians, the ryuer of *Dabaiba* is yet lefte vnſearched. We wil nowe ſpeake ſumwhat more of the Iland of *Hiſpaniola* (which the Spanyardes caule *Spagnuola*) the moother and chiefe of al other landes or Ilandes wherof we entended to wryte. In it the Senate is now reſtored, and fyue Iudges aſſigned to giue lawes to all the inhabitauntes of thoſe tractes. But in ſhorte tyme, they ſhall ceaſe gatherynge of golde although there bee greate plentie: by reaſon they ſhall lacke labourers and myners, foraſmuch as th[e]inhabitauntes whoſe helpe they vſed herein, are brought to a ſmaule number, conſumed partly by warre, and many more by ſamen that yeare that they dygged vp the rootes wherof they made theyr beſte breade, and lefte of ſowynge theyr grayne of *Maizium* which is theyr common foode, ſuppoſinge hereby to haue dryuen owre men owte of the Ilande, who had vytayles ſente them from Spayne. A great number of them alſo, dyed of newe and ſtraunge diſeaſes which in the yeare of Chriſte a thouſande fyue hundreth and. xviii. conſumed theym lyke rotton ſheepe.

Petrus Arias.

Lupus Sosa.

The great ryuer of Dabaiba or Grandis

The goulfe of Vraba.

The ryche mountaynes of Dabaiba.

Fierce and warlyke people.

Dartes.

Swoordes of heauie wood.

166

Hispaniola.

Quiedus wryteth that ther are nowe. v. monasteries.

Newe and strange diseases.

And (to ſaye the truth) owre mens vnſaciable deſyre of gold, ſo oppreſſed theſe poore wretches with extreme labour and toyle, where as before they lyued pleaſauntly and at lybertie, gyuen onely to playes and paſtymes as daunſynge, fyſſhinge, foulynge, and huntyng of lyttle connies, that many of them periſſhed euen for verye anguyſhe of mynde, the whiche (with their vnaccuſtomed labour) are thynges of them ſelues ſuffycient to engender many newe diſeaſes. But the kynge and the Senate haue nowe determyned that they be reduced to a people, and to gyue them ſelues onely to increaſe, and tyllage of the ground: And that onely ſuch as are bought or taken owte of other regions, bee appointed to labour in the golde mynes. But it ſhall ſuffyce to haue ſayde thus muche of the peſtiferous hunger of golde. Therfore to ſpeake of other matters: It is a marueylous thynge to conſyder howe all thynges increaſe and proſper in this Ilande. There are nowe. xxviii. ſuger preſſes wherwith great plentie of ſuger is made. The canes or reedes wherin the ſuger groweth, are bygger and hygher then in any other place: And are as bygge as a mans arme in the brawne, and higher then the ſtature of a man, by the halfe. This is more woonderfull, that where as in Valentia in Spaine (where a great quantitye of ſuger is made yearely) where ſo euer they applye them ſelues to the great increaſe therof, yet doth euery roote bring foorthe not paſte fyue, or ſyxe, or at the moſte ſeuen of thoſe reedes: wheras in *Hiſpaniola* one roote beareth twentie, and oftentymes thirtie. Foure footed beaſtes and cattayle, are marueylouſly increaſed in this Ilande. And albeit that the rauenynge hunger of golde hath hitherto greatly hyndered owre men from tyllage of the ground, yet is there great plentye of wheate, whiche proſpereth ſo wel that it yealdeth ſumtyme a hundreth foulde: And this eſpecially on the hylles or rydges of the mountaynes proſpectynge towarde the North. Vines do alſo increaſe here with no leſſe frutefulneſſe. What ſhuld I ſpeake of the trees that beare *Caſsia fiſtula*, brought firſt into this Iland from the other Ilandes neare vnto the ſuppoſed Continent, as we haue noted in owr decades? There is nowe ſuche plentie hereof, that after a fewe yeares we ſhall haue a pounde of the price that wee paye nowe for an ounce. Of the breſyle and mirobalane trees, with other innumerable prerogatiues and benefites whiche nature hath plentifully giuen to this bleſſed Iland, we haue ſpoken ſuffyciently

The suger of Hispaniola.

Suger of Valentia.

A token of marueilous frutfulnes.

Cattayle.

Wheate.

Vines.

Cassia fistula.

Brasyle.
Myrobalanes

in owr decades. Yet haue I thought good to repeate part of the ſame, bycauſe I think that the wittes of many readers haue diuerted from the weyght of great affaires, to the recordation of ſuch pleaſaunt thynges. And yet do not ſuche thynges as are ſauery, engender tedyouſneſſe, ſoo that a precious matter bee adourned with a precious veſture.

FINIS.

167 EXEMPLAR BVLLAE SEV DONATIONIS, AVTORITATE CVIVS, EPISCOPVS ROMANVS Alexander eius nominis ſextus, conceſsit et donauit Caſtellæ regibus et ſuis ſucceſſoribus, regiones et Inſulas noui orbis in Oceano occidentali Hiſpanorum nauigationibus repertas.

ALEXANDER EPISCOPVS, ſeruus ſeruorum Dei, Chariſsimo in Chriſto filio Ferdinando Regi, et Chariſsimæ in Chriſto filiæ Elizabeth Reginæ Caſtellæ, Legionis, Aragonum, Siciliæ, et Granatæ, illuſtribus, ſalutem et Apoſtolicam benedictionem.

Inter cætera Diuinæ maieſtati beneplacita opera et cordis noſtri deſiderabilia, illud profecto potiſimum exiſtit vt fides catholica et Chriſtiana religio noſtris præſertim temporibus exaltetur ac vbilibet amplietur ac dilatetur, animarumque ſalus procuretur, ac barbaræ nationes deprimantur et ad fidem ipſam reducantur. Vnde cum ad hanc ſacram Petri ſedem Diuina fauente clementia (meritis licet imparibus) euocati fueremus, cognoſcentes vos tanquam veros catholicos reges et principes: quales ſemper fuiſſe nouimus, et a vobis præclare geſta, toti pene orbi notiſsima demonſtrant, nedum id exoptare, ſed omni conatu, ſtudio, et diligentia, nullis laboribus, nullis impenſis, nulliſque parcendo periculis, etiam proprium ſanguinem effundendo efficere, ac omnem animum veſtrum, omneſque conatus ad hoc iam dudum dedicaſse, quemadmodum recuperato regni Granatæ a tyrannis de Sarracenorum hodiernis temporibus per vos, cum tanta Diuini nominis gloria facta, teſtatur. Digne ducimur non immerito, et debemus illa vobis etiam ſponte, ac fauorabiliter concedere, per quæ huiuſmodi ſanctum ac laudabile ab immortali deo acceptum propoſitum, indies feruentiori animo ad ipſius dei honorem et Imperij Chriſtiani propagationem, proſequi valeatis. Sane accepimus quod vos qui dudum animum propoſueratis aliquas

171 THE COPPIE OF THE BULL OR DONATION, BY TH[E]AUTORITIE WHEROF, POPE Alexander the ſyxte of that name, gaue and graunted to the kynges of Caſtyle and theyr ſucceſſours the Regions and Ilandes founde in the Weſte Ocean ſea by the nauigations of the Spanyardes.

Alexander byſhoppe, the ſeruaunte of the ſeruantes of God: To owre moſte deare beloued ſonne in Chriſt Kynge Ferdinande, And to owre deare beloued doughter in Chryſte Elyzabeth Queene of Caſtyle, Legion, Aragon, Sicilie, and Granata, moſt noble Princes, Gretynge and Apoſtolical benediction.

Amonge other woorkes acceptable to the diuine maieſtie and accordynge to owre hartes deſyre, this certeinely is the chiefe, that the Catholyke fayth and Chriſtian religion, ſpecially in this owre tyme may in all places bee exalted, amplified, and enlarged, wherby the health of ſoules may be procured, and the Barbarous nations ſubdued and brought to the fayth. And therefore wheras by the fauoure of gods clemencie (although not with equall deſertes) we are cauled to this holy ſeate of Peter, and vnderſtandynge you to bee trewe Catholyke Princes as we haue euer knowen you, and as youre noble and woorthy factes haue declared in maner to the hole worlde in that with all your ſtudie, diligence, and induſtrye, you haue ſpared no trauayles, charges, or perels, aduenturynge euen the ſhedynge of your owne bludde, with applyinge yowre hole myndes and endeuours here vnto, as your noble expeditions achyued in recoueryng the kyngdome of Granata from the tyrannie of the Sarracens in theſe our dayes, doo playnely declare your factes with ſo great glorye of the diuine name. For the whiche as we thinke you woorthy, ſo owght we of owre owne free wyl fauorably to graunt all thynges whereby you maye dayely with more feruent myndes to the honoure of god and enlargynge the Chriſtian empire, proſecute your deuoute and laud-

insulas et terras firmas remotas et incognitas, ac per alios hactenus non repertas, quærere et inuenire, vt illarum incolas et habitatores ad colendum redemptorem nostrum et fidem catholicam profitendum reduceretis, hactenus in expugnatione et recuperatione ipsius regni Granatæ plurimum occupati, huiusmodi sanctum et laudabile propositum vestrum ad optatum finem perducere nequiuistis: Sed tamen sicut Domino placuit, regno predicto recuperato, volentes desiderium vestrum adimplere, dilectum filium Christophorum Colonum virum vtique dignum et plurimum commendatum ac tanto negotio aptum, cum nauigijs et hominibus ad similia instructis, non sine maximis laboribus, ac periculis, et expensis destinastis vt terras firmas et Insulas remotas et incognitas, huiusmodi per mare vbi hactenus nauigatum non fuerat, diligenter inquireret. Qui tandem (Diuino auxilio facta extrema diligentia in mari Oceano nauigantes) certas insulas remotissimas et etiam terras firmas quæ per alios hactenus repertæ non fuerant, inuenerunt. In quibus plurimæ gentes pacifice viuentes, et (vt asseritur) nudi incedentes, nec carnibus vescentes, inhabitant: Et vt præfati nuncij vestri possunt opinari, gentes ipsæ in Insulis et terris prædictis habitantes, credunt vnum deum creatorem in Cœlis esse, ac ad fidem catholicam amplexandum et bonis moribus imbuendum, satis apti videntur: Spesque habetur, quod si erudirentur, nomen Saluatoris Domini nostri Iesu Christi in terris et insulis prædictis facile induceretur. Ac prefatus Christophorus in vna ex principalibus Insulis prædictis, iam vnam turrim satis munitam, in qua certos Christianos qui secum iuerant, in custodiam et vt alias Insulas ac terras firmas remotas et incognitas inquirerent posuit, construi et ædificari fecit. In quibus quidem Insulis et terris iam repertis, aurum, aromata, et aliæ quamplurimæ res præciosæ diuersi generis et diuersæ qualitatis reperiuntur. Vnde omnibus diligenter, et præsertim fidei catholicæ exaltatione et dilatatione (prout decet Catholicos Reges et Principes) consideratis, more progenitorum vestrorum claræ memoriæ Regum, terras firmas et insulas prædictas, illarumque incolas et habitatores, vobis diuina fauente clementia subiicere et ad fidem Catholicam reducere proposuistis.

Nos itaque huiusmodi vestrum sanctum et laudabile propositum plurimum in domino commendantes, ac cupientes vt illud ad debitum finem perducatur, et ipsum nomen saluatoris nostri in partibus illis inducatur, hortamur vos quamplurimum in domino, et per

168

able purpose most acceptable to the immortall God. We are credably informed that wheras of late you were determyned to seeke and fynde certeyne Ilandes and firme landes farre remote and vnknowen (and not heretofore found by any other) to th[e]intent to bringe th[e]inhabitauntes of the same to honoure owre redemer and to professe the catholyke fayth, you haue hetherto byn much occupied in th[e]expugnation and recouerie of the kyngedome of Granata, by reason whereof yowe coulde not brynge yowre sayde laudable purpose to th[e]ende desyred. Neuertheless as it hath pleased almyghty god, the foresayde kyngedome beinge recouered, wyllyng t[o]accomplyshe your sayde desyre, you haue, not without great laboure, perelles, and charges, appoynted owre welbeloued sonne Christopher Colonus (a man certes wel commended as moste worthy and apte for so great a matter) well furnyshed with men and shippes and other necessaries, to seeke (by the sea where hetherto no manne hath sayled) suche firme landes and Ilandes farre remote and hitherto vnknowen. Who (by gods helpe) makynge diligente searche in the Ocean sea, haue founde certeyne remote Ilandes and firme landes whiche were not heretofore founde by any other. In the which (as is sayde) many nations inhabite lyuinge peaceably and goinge naked, not accustomed to eate fleshe. And as farre as yowre messengers can coniecture, the nations inhabitynge the foresayde landes and Ilandes, beleue that there is one god creatoure in heauen: and seeme apte to be brought to th[e]imbrasinge of the catholyke faythe and to be imbued with good maners: by reason whereof, we may hope that if they well be instructed, they may easely bee induced to receaue the name of owre sauiour Iesu Christ. We are further aduertised that the forenamed Christopher hathe nowe builded and erected a fortresse with good munition in one of the foresayde principall Ilandes in the which he hath placed a garrison of certeine of the Christian men that wente thyther with him: aswell to th[e]intent to defende the same, as also to searche other Ilandes and firme landes farre remote and yet vnknowen. We also vnderstande, that in these landes and Ilandes lately founde, is great plentie of golde and spices, with dyuers and many other precious thynges of sundry kyndes and qualities. Therfore al thinges diligently considered (especially th[e]amplifyinge and enlargyng of the catholike fayth, as it behoueth catholike Princes folowyng th[e]exemples of yowre noble progenitours of famous memorie) wheras yowe are determyned by the fauour of almightie god to subdue and brynge to 172
the catholyke fayth th[e]inhabitauntes of the foresayde landes and Ilandes.

Wee greatly commendynge this yowre godly and laudable purpose in owr lorde, and desirous to haue the same brought to a dewe ende, and the name of owre sauioure to be knowen in those partes, doo exhorte yowe in owre Lorde and by the receauynge of yowre holy baptisme wherby yowe are bounde to

ſacri lauacri ſuſceptionem, qua mandatis Apoſtolicis obligati eſtis, et per viſcera miſericordiæ Domini noſtri Ieſu Chriſti attente requirimus, vt cum expeditionem huiuſmodi omnino proſequi et aſſumere prona mente orthodoxæ fidei zelo intendatis, populos in huiuſmodi Inſulis et terris degentes, ad Chriſtianam religionem ſuſcipiendum inducere velitis et debeatis, nec pericula nec labores vllo vnquam tempore vos deterreant, firma ſpe fiduciaque conceptis quod Deus omnipotens conatus veſtros fœliciter proſequetur. Et vt tanti negotij prouintiam Apoſtolicæ gratiæ largitate donati, liberius et audacius aſſumatis, motu proprio non ad veſtram vel
169 alterius pro vobis ſuper hoc nobis oblatæ petitionis inſtantiam, ſed de noſtra mera liberalitate, et ex certa ſcientia, ac de Apoſtolicæ poteſtatis plenitudine, omnes Inſulas et terras firmas inuentas et inueniendas, detectas et detegendas verſus Occidentem et Meridiem, fabricando et conſtruendo vnam lineam a polo Arctico, ſcilicet Septemtrione, ad polum Antarcticum, ſcilicet Meridiem, ſiue terræ firmæ et inſulæ inuentæ et inueniendæ ſint verſus Indiam aut verſus aliam quamcunque partem quæ linea diſtet a qualibet Inſularum quæ vulgariter nuncupantur de los Azores et Cabo verde centum leucis verſus Occidentem et Meridiem.

Itaque omnes Inſulæ et terræ firmæ repertæ et reperiendæ, detectæ et detegendæ a præfata linea verſis Occidentem et Meridiem, quæ per alium Regem aut Principem Chriſtianum non fuerint actualiter poſſeſſæ vſque ad diem natiuitatis Domini noſtri Ieſu Chriſti proxime præteritum, a quo incipit annus præſens Milleſſimus Quadringenteſſimus Nonogeſſimus tercius, quando fuerunt per nuncios et capitaneos veſtros inuentæ aliquæ prædictarum Inſularum, Autoritate omnipotentis Dei nobis in beato Petro conceſsa, ac vicariatus Ieſu Chriſti qua fungimur in terris, cum omnibus illatum dominijs, ciuitatibus, caſtris, locis, et villis, iuribuſque et iuriſdictionibus ac partinentijs vniuerſis, vobis heredibuſque et ſucceſſoribus veſtris (Caſtellæ et Legionis regibus) in perpetuum tenore præſentium donamus, concedimus, et aſſignamus: Voſque et hæredes ac ſucceſſores præfatos illarum Dominos, cum plena, libera, et omnimoda poteſtate, autoritate, et iuriſdictione, facimus, conſtituimus, et deputamus. Decernentes nihilo minus per huiuſmodi donationem, conceſsionem, et aſſignationem noſtram, nullo Chriſtiano Principi qui actualiter præfatas Inſulas et terras firmas poſſederit vſque ad prædictum diem natiuitatis Domini noſtri Ieſu Chriſti ius quæſitum, ſublatum intelligi poſse aut auferri debere.

Et inſuper mandamus vobis in virtutæ ſanctæ obedi-

Apoſtolicall obedience, and erneſtely require yowe by the bowels of mercy of owre Lorde Ieſu Chriſt, that when yowe intende for the zeale of the Catholyke faythe to proſecute the ſayde expedition to reduce the people of the foreſayde landes and Ilandes to the Chriſtian religion, yowe ſhall ſpare no labours at any tyme, or bee deterred with any perels, conceauynge firme hope and confidence that the omnipotent godde wyll gyue good ſucceſſe to yowre godly attemptes. And that beinge autoryſed by the priuilege of the Apoſtolycall grace, yowe may the more freely and bouldly take vpon yowe th[e]enterpryſe of ſo greate a matter, we of owre owne motion, and not eyther at yowre requeſt or at the inſtant peticion of any other perſon, but of owre owne mere liberalitie and certeyne ſcience, and by the fulneſſe of Apoſtolycall power, doo gyue, graunt, and aſſigne to yowe, yowre heyres and ſucceſſours, al the firme landes and Ilandes found or to be found, diſcouered or to be diſcouered toward the Weſt and South, drawyng a line from the pole Artike to the pole Antartike (that is) from the north to the Southe: Conteynynge in this donation, what ſo euer firme landes or Ilandes are founde or to bee founde towarde *India*, or towarde any other parte what ſo euer it bee, beinge diſtant from, or without the foreſayd lyne drawen a hundreth leaques towarde the Weſte and South from any of the Ilandes which are commonly cauled *De los Azores* and *Cabo Verde.*

All the Ilandes therfore and firme landes, founde and to be founde, diſcouered and to be diſcouered from the ſayde lyne towarde the Weſt and South, ſuch as haue not actually bin heretofore poſſeſſed by any other Chriſtian kynge or prynce vntyll the daye of the natiuitie of owre Lorde Ieſu Chryſte laſte paſte, from the which begynneth this preſent yeare beinge the yeare of owre Lorde. M. CCCC. lxxxxiii. when ſo euer any ſuch ſhalbe founde by your meſſingers and capytaines, Wee by the autoritie of almyghtie God graunted vnto vs in ſaynt Peter, and by the office which we beare on the earth in the ſteede of Ieſu Chriſte, doo for euer by the tenoure of theſe preſentes, gyue, graunte, aſſigne, vnto yowe, yowre heyres, and ſucceſſoures (the kynges of Caſtyle and Legion) all thoſe landes and Ilandes, with theyr dominions, territories, cities, caſtels, towres, places, and vyllages, with all the ryght, and iuriſdictions therunto perteynynge: conſtitutynge, aſſignynge, and deputynge, yowe, yowre heyres, and ſucceſſours the lordes thereof, with full and free poure, autoritie, and iuriſdiction. Decreeinge neuertheleſſe by this owre donation, graunt, and aſſignation, that from no Chriſtian Prince whiche actually hath poſſeſſed the foreſayde Ilandes and firme landes vnto the day of the natiuitie of owre lorde beforeſayde theyr ryght obteyned to bee vnderſtoode hereby to be taken away, or that it owght to be taken away.

Furthermore wee commaunde yowe in the vertue

entiæ (vt ſicut pollicemini et non dubitamus pro veſtra maxima deuotione et regia magnanimitate vos eſse facturos) ad terras firmas et Inſulas prædictas, viros probos et Deum timentes, doctos, peritos, et expertos ad inſtruendum incolas et habitatores præfatos in fide Catholica et bonis moribus imbuendum, deſtinare debeatis, omnem debitam diligentiam in præmiſsis adhibentes.

A quibuſcumque perſonis, cuiuſcunque dignitatis, etiam imperialis et regalis ſtatus, gradus, ordinis vel conditionis, ſub excommunicationis latæ ſententiæ pœna quam eo ipſo ſi contra fecerint incurrant,
170 diſtrictius inhibemus ne ad Inſulas et terras firmas inuentas et inueniendas, detectas et detegendas verſus Occidentem et Meridiem, fabricando et conſtruendo lineam a polo Arctico ad polum Antarcticum, ſiuæ terræ firmæ et Inſulæ inuentæ et inueniendæ ſint verſus Indiam aut verſus aliam quamcunque partem quæ linea diſtet a qualibet Inſularum quæ vulgariter nuncupantur de los Azores et Cabo verde centum leucis verſus Occidentem et Meridiem vt præfertur, pro mercibus habendis vel quauis alia cauſa accedere præſumat abſque veſtra ac hæredum et ſucceſsorum veſtrorum prædictorum licentia ſpeciali: Non obſtantibus conſtitutionibus et ordinationibus Apoſtolicis, cæteriſque quibuſcunque, in illo in quo imperia et dominationes et bona cuncta procedunt: Confidentes quod dirigente Domino actus veſtros, ſi huiuſmodi ſanctum ac laudabile propoſitum proſequamini, breui tempore cum fœlicitate et gloria totius populi Chriſtiani, veſtri labores et conatus exitum fœliciſsimum conſequentur. Verum quia difficile foret præſentes literas ad ſingula quæque loca in quibus expediens fuerit deferri, volumus ac motu et ſcientia ſimilibus decernimus, quod illarum tranſſumptis manu publici notarij inderogati ſubſcriptis, et ſigillo alicuius perſonæ in eccleſiaſtica dignitate conſtitutæ, ſeu curiæ eccleſiaſticæ munitis, ea prorſus fides in iudicio et extra ac alias vbilibet adhibeatur, quæ præſentibus adhiberetur ſi eſsent adhibitæ vel oſtenſæ.

Nulli ergo omnino hominum liceat hanc paginam noſtræ commendationis, hortationis, requiſitionis, donationis, conceſsionis, aſsignationis, conſtitutionis, deputationis, decreti, mandati, inhibitionis, et voluntatis infringere vel ei auſu temerario contraire. Si quis autem hoc attentare præſumpſerit, indignationem omnipotentis Dei, ac beatorum Petri et Pauli Apoſtolorum eius, ſe nouerit incurſurum.·.

Datum Romæ apud ſanctum Petrum: Anno incarnationis Dominicæ. 1493. quarto nonas Maij: Pontificatus noſtri anno primo.·.

of holy obedience (as yowe haue promyſed, and as wee doubte not you wyll doo vppon mere deuotion and princely magnanimitie) to ſende to the ſayde firme landes and Ilandes, honeſte, vertuous, and lerned men, ſuche as feare God, and are able to inſtructe th[e]inhabitauntes in the Catholyke fayth and good maners, applyinge all theyr poſſible diligence in the premiſſes.

We furthermore ſtreightly inhibite all maner of perſons, of what ſtate, degree, order, or condition ſo euer they bee, although of Imperiall and regall dignitie, vnder the peyne of the ſentence of excommunication whiche they ſhall incurre yf they doo to the contrary, that they in no caſe preſume without ſpeciall lycence of yowe, yowre heyres, and ſucceſſours, to trauayle for marchaundies or for any other cauſe, to the ſayde landes or Ilandes, founde or to bee found, diſcouered, or to bee diſcouered, toward the weſt and ſouth, drawing a line from the pole Artyke to the pole Antartike, whether the firme lands and Ilandes found and to be found, be ſituate toward *India* or towarde any other parte beinge diſtant from the lyne drawen a hundreth leagues towarde the weſt from any of the Ilandes commonly cauled *De los Azores* and *Cabo Verde*: Notwithſtandynge conſtitutions, decrees, and Apoſtolycall ordinaunces what ſo euer they are to the contrary: In him from whom Empyres, dominions, and all good thynges doo procede: Truſtynge that almyghtie god directynge yowre enterpriſes, yf yowe folowe yowre 17
godly and laudable attemptes, yowre laboures and trauayles herein, ſhall in ſhorte tyme obteyne a happy ende with felicitie and glorie of all Chriſtian people. But foraſmuch as it ſhulde bee a thynge of great difficultie theſe letters to bee caryed to all ſuche places as ſhuld bee expedient, we wyll, and of lyke motion and knowleage doo decree that whyther ſo euer the ſame ſhalbe ſent, or wher ſo euer they ſhalbe receaued with the ſubſcription of a common notarie therunto requyred, with the ſeale of any perſon conſtitute in eccleſiaſticall dignitie, or ſuche as are autoryſed by the eccleſiaſticall courte, the ſame fayth and credite to bee gyuen thereunto in iudgement or els where, as ſhulde bee exhibyted to theſe preſentes.

It ſhall therefore bee lawefull for no man to infringe or raſhely to contrarie this letter of owre commendation, exhortacion, requeſte, donation, graunt, aſſignation, conſtitution, deputation, decree, commaundement, inhibition, and determination. And yf any ſhall preſume to attempte the ſame, he owght to knowe that he ſhall thereby incurre the indignation of almyghtie God and his holye Apoſtles Peter and Paule. (.·.) (:) (·.·)

¶ Gyuen at Rome at ſaynt Peters: In the yeare of th[e]incarnation of owre Lord M. CCCC. LXXXXIII. The fourth day of the nones of Maye, the fyrſte yeare of owre ſeate. ( ) ( ) ( )

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION II.

Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés.

The Natural History of the West Indies.

First printed in 1526.]

To the reader.

Although amonge dyuers which haue wrytten of the Ocean and Weſte Indies, there is none to be compared to Peter Martyr of Angleria, in declarynge by philoſophical diſcourſes the fecreate cauſes of naturall affectes bothe as touchynge the lande, the ſea, the ſtarres, and other ſtraunge woorkes of nature, yet foraſmuche as of later dayes thoſe countreys haue byn better knowen and ſearched, and dyuers ſuche particular and notable thynges founde as are conteyned in the hyſtories of later wryters, emonge the number of whom *Gonzalus Ferdinandus Ouiedus*, (whom lerned *Cardanus* compareth to the ancient writers) is doubtles the chiefe, I haue therfore thought good to ioyne to the Decades of Peter Martyr certeyne notable thynges which I haue gathered owte of his booke intiteled the Summarie or abbrigement of his generall hyſtorie of the Weſt Indies wrytten in the firme lande of the ſame in the citie of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena* (where he dwelte and was gouernoure many yeares) And dedicated to Th[e]emperou[r]s maieſtie, as maye appeare by the epyſtell folowynge.

¶ TO THE MOST HYGH AND MYGHTIE PRINCE CHARLES THE FYFTE OF THAT NAME:

EMPEROUR OF ROME, KYNGE OF SPAYNE, AND OF THE TWOO SICILIES,
of bothe the ſydes of the ſtreyght of *Faro*, Kynge of Hieruſalẽm
and Hungarie, Duke of Burgonie and Earle of Flaunders,
Lord and inheritoure of the firme lande and Ilandes
of the Weſte Ocean, etc. *Gonzalus Ferdinandus Ouiedus* his moſt humble ſeruant
wyſheth health and perpetual felicitie.

174 HE thynges whiche principally preſerue and mayntayne the woorkes of nature in the memories of men, are hyſtories and bookes compoſed of the ſame. Amonge the whiche certes thoſe are eſteemed moſte trewe and autentyke which haue byn wrytten by wyttie and expert men well trauayled in the worlde, as faythfull wytneſſes of ſuche thynges as they haue partely ſeene and byn partely informed by credible perſons. Of this mynde and opinion was Plinie, who better then any other autoure hathe wrytten in xxxvii. bookes al that perteyneth to the naturall hiſtorie, conteyned al in one volume dedicated to Veſpaſian. Th[e]emperour. Wherein, as a prudente hiſtoriographer, he declareth ſuche thynges as he had harde: Attributynge the ſeconde autoritie to ſuche as he had redde in autoures that wrote before hym: And thyrdely ioyned to the ſame hyſtorie, ſuch thynges as he hym ſelfe had ſeene as moſte certeyne teſtimonie. Whoſe exemple I folowynge, wyl in this my breefe ſummarie reduce and repreſent to yowr maieſties memorie ſuche thynges as I haue ſeene in yowre Empyre of the Weſt Indies afwell in the Ilandes as in the firme lande of the Ocean ſea, where I haue ſerued nowe more then twelue yeares in the place of ſuruoyer of the golde mynes by the commaundemente of the Catholyke kynge *Don Fernando* the fyfte of that name and graundfather vnto yowre maieſtie, to whom god gaue great fame and glorie. Senſe whoſe death alſo I haue lykewies ſerued and truſt whyle the reſt of my lyfe yet remayneth, to ſerue yowre maieſtie as ſhall pleaſe yowe to commaunde. As touchynge which thinges and ſuch other lyke, I haue more largely written in a hyſtorie begunne as ſone as my age was rype to take ſuche matters in hande. Wherein furthermore I haue made mention of ſuche thynges

as haue chaunced in Spaine, from the yeare. 1494. vnto this tyme. Addynge alſo thereunto ſuche thynges woorthy memorie as I haue obſerued in other realmes and prouinces where I haue trauayled. And haue likewiſe particulerly wrytten the lyues and woorthy actes of the catholyke Princes of famous memorie *Don Ferdinando* and lady Elizabeth his wyfe to theyr laſt dayes. After whoſe fruition of heauenly Paradyſe, I haue noted ſuche thynges as haue chaunced in yowre moſt fortunate ſucceſſion. Not omittynge particularly to wryte a large booke of ſuch thynges as haue ſeemed moſte woorthy to bee noted as touchynge yowre maieſties Indies. But for aſmuche as that volume remaineth in the citie of *San. Dominico* in the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola* where I dwell and am placed in houſholde with wyfe, chyldren, and famelie, I haue brought no more with me of that my writynge then I beare in memorie. Determynynge notwithſtandynge for yowre maieſties recreation to make a breefe rehearſall of certeyne notable thynges wherôf I haue more largely entreated in my ſayde general hiſtorie, and ſuch as may ſeeme moſte woorthy to bee redde of yowre maieſtie. Of the which, although a great parte haue byn wrytten by other who haue alſo ſeene the ſame, yet perhappes they are not ſo exactly and particularly deſcribed as of me, foraſmuche as in maner all that trauayle into theſe Indies haue greater reſpecte to luker and gaynes then diligently to ſearche the woorkes of nature wherunto I haue byn euer naturally inclyned, and haue therfore with all poſſible endeuour applyed myne eyes and intelligence to fynde the ſame. And this preſente Summarie ſhall not bee contrary or dyuers from my larger hiſtorie wherein (as I haue ſayde) I haue more amplye declared theſe thynges: but ſhal onely more breefely expreſſe th[e]ffect therof vntyl ſuch tyme as Godde ſhal reſtore me to myne owne houſe, where I may accomplyſhe and fyniſhe my ſayd general hyſtorie. Wherevnto to gyue the fyrſt principle, I ſay that Don Chriſtopher Colonus (as it is well knowen) beinge the fyrſte Admyrall of this India, diſcouered the ſame in the dayes of the Catholyke kynge Don Ferdinando and the lady Elyzabeth his wyfe, graundfather and graundmother vnto yowre maieſtie: In the yeare. 1491. And came to *Barzalona* in the yeare 1492. with the fyrſt Indians and other ſhewes and profes of the great ryches and notice of this weſt Empire. The whiche gyfte and benefyte was ſuche, that it is vnto this daye, one of the greateſt that euer any ſubiect or ſeruant hath done for his prince or countrey, as is manifeſte to the hole worlde. And to ſaye the trewth, this ſhall doubtleſſe bee ſo commodious and profytable vnto the hole realme of Spayne, that I repute hym no good Caſtilian or Spanyarde that doothe not recogniſe the ſame. And (as I haue ſayde before) foraſmuch as in my ſayde generall hiſtorie I haue more largely intreated of theſe thynges, I intend at this preſent only briefely to rehearſe certeyne eſpeciall thynges, the whiche ſuerly are verye fewe in reſpecte of the thouſandes that myght bee ſayde in this behalfe. Fyrſt therfore I wyl ſpeake ſumwhat of the nauigation into theſe parties. Then of the generation of the nations whiche are founde in the ſame, with their rytes, cuſtomes, and cerimonies. Alſo of beaſtes, foules, byrdes, woormes, fyſſhes, ſeas, ryuers, ſprynges, trees, plantes, herbes, and dyuers other thynges which are engendered boothe on the lande and in the water. And foraſmuche as I am one of th[e]order and company of them that are appointed to returne into theſe regions to ſerue yowre maieſtie, yf therfore the thynges conteyned in this booke ſhall not bee diſtincte in ſuch order as I promiſed to performe in my greater woorke, I deſyre yowre maieſtie to haue no reſpecte herevnto, but rather to conſyder the noueltie of ſuche ſtraunge thynges as I haue herein declared, whiche is the chiefe ende that moued me to wryte. Proteſtyng that in this Summarie I haue wrytten the trewth of ſuche thynges as coome to my remembraunce: wherof not onely I my ſelfe can teſtifye, but alſo diuers other woorthy and credible men which haue bin in thoſe regions, and are nowe preſente in yowre maieſties courte. And thus it ſhal ſuffyce to haue ſaide thus much vnto yowre maieſtie in maner of a proheme vnto this preſent worke which I moſt humbly deſyre yowre maieſtie as thankfully t[o]accept, as I haue wrytten it faythfully.

¶ *Of the ordinary nauygation from Spayne to the Weſte Indies.*



He nauygation whiche is commonly made from Spayne to the Weſte India, is from Siuile, where yowre maieſtie haue yowre houſe of contractation for thoſe partes, with alſo yowre offycers thervnto perteynynge, of whom the capitaines take their paſſeporte and lycence. The patrones of ſuche ſhyppes as are appoynted to theſe vyages, imbarke theym ſelues at *San Luca di Barameda*, where the ryuer *Cuadalchiber* entereth into the Ocean ſea. And from henſe they folowe their courſe toward the Ilandes of Canarie. Of theſe ſeuen Ilandes, they commonly touche two, that is, eyther *Grancanaria* or *Gomera*. And here the ſhyppes are furnyſſhed with freſhe water, fuell, cheeſe, bieſe, and ſuche other thynges whiche may ſeeme requiſyte to be added to ſuche as they brynge with them owte of Spayne. From Spayne to theſe Ilandes, is coommonly eyght dayes ſaylinge, or lyttle more or leſſe. And when they are arryued there, they haue ſayled two hundereth and fyftie leaques, whiche make a thouſande myles, accomptyng foure myles to a leaque as is their maner to recken by ſea. Departynge from the ſayde Ilandes to folowe their courſe, the ſhippes tary. xxv. dayes, or a lyttle more or leſſe, before they ſee the fyrſte lande of the Ilandes that lye before that whiche they caule *La Spagnuola* or *Hiſpaniola*. And the lande that is commonly fyrſte ſeene, is one of theſe Ilandes whiche they caule *Ogni ſanc̃ti Marigalante* (or *Galanta*) *La Deſſeada* (otherwiſe cauled *Deſyderata*) *Matanino*, *Dominica*, *Guadalupe*, *San. Chriſtoual*, or ſumme other of the Ilandes wherof there are a great multitude lyinge aboute theſe aforeſaide. Yet it ſumtymes ſo chaunceth that the ſhippes paſſe withowte the ſyght of any of the ſayde Ilandes, or any other that are within that courſe vntyll they coome to the Iland of *Sanc̃ti Iohannis* or *Hiſpaniola*, or *Iamaica*, or *Cuba*, whiche are before the other. It may alſo chaunce that they ouerpaſſe all theſe likewyſe, vntyll they ſaule vppon the coaſtes of the ſyrme lande. But this chaunceth when the pylote is not well practiſed in this nauigation or not perfecte in the trewe carde. But makynge this viage with experte maryners (wherof there is nowe great plentie) one of the ſayde fyrſte Ilandes ſhall euer bee knowen. And from the Ilandes of Canarie to one of the fyrſte of theſe, the diſtaunce is nyne hundreth leaques by ſaylinge, or more. And from henſe to the citie of ſaynte Dominike which is in the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*, is a hundreth and fyftie leaques: So that from Spayne hitherto, is a thouſand and three hundreth leaques. Yet foraſmuche as ſumtimes the nauigation procedeth not ſo directly, but that it chaunceth to wander on the one ſyde or on the other, wee may well ſaye that they haue nowe ſayled a thouſande and fyue hundreth leaques and more. And if the nauigation be ſlowe by reaſon of ſumme hynderaunce, it commonly chaunceth to be fyniſſhed in. xxxv. or. xl. dayes. And this happeneth for the moſte parte, not accomptynge the extremes: that is, eyther of them that haue ſlowe paſſage, or of them that arryue in verye ſhorte tyme. For wee owghte to conſyder that which chaunceth moſt commonly. The returne from thoſe partes to Spayne, is not fynyſſhed without longer tyme, as in the ſpace of. l. [fifty] dayes, or a lyttle more or leſſe.

176 Neuertheleſſe in this preſent yeare of. 1525. there came foure ſhyps from the Iland of *San Dominico* to ſaint *Luca* in Spaine, in. xxv. dayes. But (as I haue ſayd) we ought not to iudge of that whiche chaunceth ſeldome, but of that which happeneth moſt ordinarily. This nauigation is very ſafe and much vſed, euen vnto the ſayd Ilande. And from this to the firme land, the ſhyppes trauerſe diuers wayes for the ſpace of fiue, ſyxe, or ſeuen dayes ſaylynge, or more, accordyng to the partes or coaſtes whither they directe their vyages, foraſmuche as the ſayde fyrme lande is verye great and large, and many nauigations and vyages are directed to dyuers partes of the ſame. Yet to the fyrme land whiche is neareſt to this Iland, and lyeth directly ageynſt *San Dominico*, the paſſage is fyniſſhed in the tyme aforeſayde. But it ſhalbe muche better to remytte all this to the carde of theſe nauigations and the new Coſmographie, of the whiche no parte was knowen to Ptolomie or any other of the owlde wrytters.

¶ *Of twoo notable thynges as touchyng the Weſt Indies: And of the great rycheſſe brought from thenſe into Spayne.*

AFter my vniuerſall deſcription of the hiſtorie of the Indies, there commeth to my remembraunce two thynges chiefely to be noted as touchynge th[e]empire of this Weſt Indies perteynynge to the dominion of yowre maieſtye. And theſe beſyde the other particulars wherof I haue ſuffyciently ſpoken, are to be conſydered as thinges of great importaunce. Wherof, the one is the ſhorteneſſe of the way and with what expedition yowr maieſties ſhyppes maye paſſe beyonde the mayne fyrme lande of theſe Indies into the newe Southe ſea cauled *Mare del Sur* lyynge beyond the ſame. And this to th[e]intent to coome to the Ilandes where the ſpices growe, beſyde the other innumerable rycheſſe of the kingedomes and ſignïories whiche confine with the ſayde ſea where are ſo many people and nations of dyuers ſoonges and maners. The other thinge, is to conſyder howe innumerable treaſures are entered into Spayne by theſe Indies, aſwell that whiche commeth dayly from thenſe as alſo that is continually to bee looked for, bothe of golde and perle and other marchaunties which are firſt brought into this yowre realme of Spaine before they are ſeene of other nations or traded into other realmes. Wherby not onely this yowre realme is greatly inriched, but alſo the benefyte therof redoundeth to the great profyte of other countreys which are neare thervnto. A teſtimonye of this, are the double ducades whiche yowre maieſtie haue cauſed to bee coyned, and are diſparſed throughowte the hole worlde. But after they are once paſſed owt of this yowre realme, they neuer returne agein bycauſe they are the beſt curraunt money of the world. And therfore if after they haue byn in the handes of ſtraungers they chaunce to be retourned ageyne into Spaine, they coome diſguiſed in an other habite, and are diminiſſhed of the goodneſſe of their golde, with the ſtampe of yowre maieſtye chaunged: So that if it were not for their ſuche defacynges in other realmes for the cauſe aforeſayde, there ſhulde not bee founde ſo great quantitie of fyne golde of the coyne of any prynce in the worlde as of yowre maieſties. And the cauſe of all this, are yowre Indies.

¶ *Of the mynes of golde, and the maner of woorkynge in theym.*

THis particular of the mynes of gold, is a thing greatly to bee noted: And I maye muche better ſpeake hereof then any other man, foraſmuche as there are nowe twelue yeares paſte ſenſe I ſerued in the place of the ſurueier of the meltynge ſhoppes perteynynge to the golde mynes of the firme lande, and was the gouernour of the mynes of the Catholyke kyng *Don Ferdinando,* after whoſe departure from this lyfe, I ſerued longe in the ſame roome in the name of yowr maieſtie: By reaſon wherof, I haue had great occaſion to knowe howe golde is founde and wrought owte of the mynes: And do knowe ryght well that this lande is exceadynge ryche: hauynge by my accompte and by the labour of my Indians and ſlaues, gathered and fyned a great portion of the ſame: and may therfore the better affyrme this by teſtimonie of ſyght. 177
For I am well aſſured that in no part of *Caſtilia del oro,* that is, golden Caſtile (otherwiſe cauled *Beragua*) no man coulde aſke me of the mynes of golde, but that I durſte haue bounde my ſelfe to haue diſcouered them in the ſpace of ten leagues of the countrey where it ſhulde haue byn demaunded me, and the ſame to bee verye ryche. For I was alowed all maner of charges to make ſearche for the ſame. And although golde be founde in maner euery where in theſe regions of golden Caſtile, yet owght wee not in euery place to beſtowe the trauell, and charge to get it owte, bycauſe it is of leſſe quantitie and goodneſſe in ſum place then in ſum. And the myne or veyne whiche owghte to be folowed, ought to bee in a place whiche may ſtande to ſaue muche of the charges of the labourers, and for the adminiſtration of other neceſſary thinges that the charges may bee recompenſed with gaynes. For there is no doubte but that golde ſhalbe founde more or leſſe in euery place. And the golde whiche is founde in golden Caſtile, is verye good, and of. xxii. caractes or better in fyneſſe. Furthermore, beſyde this great quantitie of golde whiche I haue ſayde to be founde in the mynes, there is alſo from day to day found or otherwiſe gotten, great treaſure of ſuche wrought gold as hath byn in the cuſtodie of the ſubdued Indians and their kynges, aſwell of ſuche as they haue gyuen for their fyne and raunſome, or otherwiſe as frendes to the Chriſtians, beſyde that whiche hath byn vyolently taken from the rebelles. But the greateſt parte of the wrought gold whiche the Indians haue, is baſe and holdeth ſumwhat of

copper. Of this they make braſlettes and chaines and in the ſame they cloſe their iewels whiche their women are accuſtomed to weare and eſteeme more then all the richeſſe of the worlde. The maner howe golde is gathered, is this, eyther of ſuche as is founde in *Zauana*, that is to ſaye in the plaines and riuers of the champian countrey being withowt trees, whether the earth be with graſſe or without. Or of ſuche as is ſumtymes founde on the land without the riuers in places where trees growe, ſo that to coome by the ſame, it ſhalbe requiſite to cutte downe many and great trees. But after whiche ſo euer of theſe two maners it be founde, eyther in the riuers or ruptures or breaches of water, or elles in the earth, I wyll ſhewe howe it is founde in bothe theſe places, and howe it is ſeperate and pourged. Therfore when the myne or veine is diſcouered, this chaunceth by ſerchyng and prouyng in ſuche places as by certeyne ſygnes and tooken do appeare to ſkylfull men apte for the generation of golde and to holde golde. And when they haue founde it, they folowe the myne and labour it, whether it be in the ryuer or in the plaine as I haue ſayde. And if it bee founde on the plaine, fyrſt they make the place verye cleane where they intende to dygge. Then they dygge eyght or ten foote in length and as muche in breadth: but they goo no deeper then a ſpanne or two, or more as ſhall ſeeme beſt to the maiſter of the myne, dyggynge equally. Then they waſhe all the earthe whiche they haue taken owte of the ſayde place. And if herein they fynde any golde, they folowe it. And if not, they dygge a ſpanne deeper, and waſhe the earth as they dyd before. And if then alſo, they fynde nothynge, they continue in dyggyng and waſſhyng the earth as before vntil they come to the hard rocke or ſtone. And if in fyne they fynd no golde there, they folowe no further to ſeeke golde in that place, but go to an other parte. And it is to be vnderſtode, that when they haue founde the myne, they folowe it in digginge in the ſame meaſure in leuell and deapth vntill they haue made an ende of al the myne which that place conteyneth, if it appere to be riche. This myne ought to conſyſt of certen feete or paſes in length or breadth accordynge to certeyne orders determined. And within that compaſſe of earth, it is not lawfull for any other to dygge for golde. And where as endeth the myne of hym that fyrſte founde the gold, immediatly it is lawfull for any other man that wyl, with a ſtaffe to aſſygne hym ſelfe a place by the ſyde of the ſame, incloſynge it with ſtakes or pales as his owne. Theſe mynes of *Zauana* (that is ſuch as are found in the playne) owght euer to bee ſoughte nere to ſum ryuer or brooke or ſpringe of water, or dyke, or ſtandyng poole, to th[e]ende that the golde maye be waſſhed, for the whiche purpoſe they vſe the laboure of certeyne Indians as they doo other in dygginge of the myne. And when they haue dygged owte the myne, they fyl certeine traies with that earth, whiche other Indians haue the charge immediatly to receaue at their handes, and to carye thoſe treyes of earth to the water where it maye bee waſſhed. Yet do not they that brynge it,
178 waſhe it, but delyuer it to other, puttynge it owte of their owne trayes into theirs which they haue ready in their handes to receaue it. Theſe waſſhers for the moſte parte, are the Indian women, bycauſe this woorke is of leſſe paine and trauayle then any other. Theſe women when they waſhe, are accuſtomed to ſytte by the waters ſyde, with their legges in the water euen vppe to the knees or leſſe as the place ſerueth their purpoſe. And thus holdynge the trays with earth in their handes by the handles therof, and puttynge the ſame into the water, they moue them rownde aboute after the maner of ſyftynge, with a certeyne apteneſſe in ſuche ſorte that there entreth no more water into the trais then ſerueth their turne: And with the ſelfe ſame apte mouynge of their trais in the water, they euer auoyd the foule water with the earth owte of the one ſyde of the veſſell, and receaue in cleane water on the other ſide therof. So that by this meanes by little and lyttle, the water waſſheth the earth as the lyghter ſubſtaunce owte of the trais, and the golde as the heauier matter reſteth in the bottome of the ſame, beyng rounde and holowe in the myddeſt lyke vnto a barbars baſen. And when all the earth is auoyded, and the golde gathered togither in the bottome of the traye, they putte it aparte, and returne to take more earth, whiche they waſhe continually as before. And thus they that laboure in this woorke, do gather dayly ſuche portion of golde as ſhal pleaſe god to graunt to the patrones of theſe Indians and ſuche other as trauaile in the ſame. Furthermore, it is to bee noted that for euery two Indians that waſhe, it is requiſite that two other ſerue them to brynge earthe from the myne, and other twoo to breake the ſame ſmaule and fylle their trais therwith. Alſo beſyde theſe labourers, it is neceſſarye that there bee other people in the place where they woorke and reſte in the nyghte. Theſe are ſuche as make their breade, and prouyde for vyttayles and other neceſſaryes. So that to conclude, there are in all, fyue perſons ordinarily aſſigned to euery traye of waſſhers.

There is an other maner of woorkyng the mynes in riuers or brookes of runnynge waters. And this is, that in auoydynge the water of his courſe, after that the beddes of the ryuers are drye and vtterlye emptied, they fynde golde emonge the breaches, cliftes, and ryftes of ſtones, and among all that is in the bottome of the chanell, and where naturally the riuer runneth of greateſt force. So that it chaunceth ſum tyme, that when the bedde of the ryuer is good and ryche, they fynde in it great quantitie of golde. And therfore yowr maieſtie ought to vnderſtande for a generail rule, as it appereth in facte, that all golde is engendered in the toppes and hygheſt places of the montaines: And in continuance of time is by lyttle and lyttle browght downe to the vales and plaines by ſhowres of rayne, and the faules of ſprynges, ryuers, and brookes hauynge their originall in the mountaynes and deſcendynge from the ſame, notwithſtandynge it bee oftentymes founde in the plaines farre

from the mountaynes. But when it chaunceth to be founde in great quantitie, it is for the moſte parte amonge the mountaynes and in the riuers, or their branches, more then in any other parte of the plaine. And in theſe two maners is it commonly founde moſte abundauntly. And for the better profe that golde is engendered on hyghe, and is brought downe into the lowe places, I haue one great tooken therof whiche cauſeth me to beleue it for certeine. And this is to conſyder that coles neuer putrifie nor cõrrupt vnder the ground, if they be made of ſtronge woodde. Wherby it chaunceth that diggyng the earth by the fouldes or indented places of the mountaynes, or on the ſydes, and breakynge a myne in the earthe where it had not byn broken before, and hauyng nowe dygged one or two or three poles in meaſure, the myners founde certeyne coles of wood vnder the ſame leuel where they found gold. And this I ſaye in the earth whiche was taken for a vyrgine: that is to ſaye, ſuch as had not before byn opened for any myne. The which coles coulde not naturally bee engendred there, or enter in by any meanes. But when the ſuperficial part of the earth was equal with the leuel where the coles were founde, it is lyke that the coles were left there by ſum occaſion of fyre, and that they faſtned there in tyme, and that afterwarde in longe continuance of tyme, they were by lyttle and lyttle couered with the earth which the often ſhowers of rayne waſhed from the mountaynes, ſo that by the courſe of yeares the earth ouergrewe the coles vnto the ſayde leuell and meaſure whiche had before tyme byn the ſuperficiall parte of the earthe where the coles and golde were founde togyther: whereby it maye appeare that the golde was no more engendered there then were the coles, but brought thyther from the mountaynes by the faules of waters as we haue ſayde: foraſmuche as the mountaynes are the matrices and bowels of all ryche metals. Further and beſyde this, I ſay that in how much more the gold is gonne farre from the naturall place of his generation to the place where it is founde, it is ſo muche the more puryfied and fyned and of a better carracte. And the nearer that it is founde to his proper myne or vaine where it is engendered, it is ſo muche the baſer, fouler, and more crude, and of a baſer alay and caracte, and dothe waſt ſo much the more in meltynge, and remayneth more brickle. Sumetyme there are founde graynes of golde of greate quantitie and of greate weyght aboue the earth and ſumtymes alſo vnder the earth. And the greateſte of all other that was founde to this daye in the Indies, was that which was loſte in the ſea aboute the Ilande *Beata*, whiche weyed three thouſande and twoo hundreth Caſtellans of golde, which are in value foure thouſand a hundreth, thirtie and eyght ducades of golde, which waye one *Arroua* and ſeuen pounde, or. xxxii. pounde. after. xii. ounces to the pounde, whiche make threeſcore and foure markes of golde. And I ſawe in the yeare. 1515. in the handes of Mychel Paſſamonte treaſurer to yowre maieſtie, two graines of the which one wayde ſeuen poundes, which are. xiiii. markes, and are in value aboute threeſcore and fyue ducades of golde euery marke. The other was of. x. markes, which are fyue poundes of lyke value, and of very good golde of. xxii. caractes and better. There are alſo founde many other greate graynes, although not equall vnto theſe in byggenes. And foraſmuche as I haue ſpoken of golde, I haue thought good to declare ſumewhat howe the Indians can very excellently gylte ſuche veſſelles of copper and baſe golde as they make. For they can gyue them ſo fayre and floryſhynge a coloure, that all the maſſe whiche they gylte, appearethe as though it were golde of. xxii. caractes and better. This colour they gyue with a certeyne herbe as thoughe it were wrought by the arte of any goldeſmyth of Spayne or Italie, and wold of them bee eſteemed as a thynge of greate ryches, and a ſecreate maner of gyldynge. And for as muche as I haue ſpoken ſufficiently of the myne of golde, I wyll nowe ſpeake ſumwhat of copper bycauſe I haue made mention thereof. This metall is founde in many of the Ilandes of the Indies and alſo in the firme lande: And is founde dayely in greate quantitie holdynge ſumwhat of golde. But for the deſyre that owre men haue to golde, they nothynge eſteeme the copper, although there myght great commoditie and profitte be had therby, and alſo by other metals whiche they nothynge regarde excepte ſyluer whiche is founde abundantly in that parte of the firme lande which is cauled newe Spayne. But of this it ſhall ſuffice to haue ſayde thus muche, bycauſe I haue more particularly entreated of theſe thynges in my generall hyſtorie of India.

179

A marke, is a pounde of viii. ounces: summa. xlii. li. [forty-two pounds] weyght viii. ounces, after xii. ounces to the li. [pound].

¶ *Of the maner of fyſhynge for perles.*

THe Indians exerciſe this kynde of fyſſhynge for the moſte parte in the coaſtes of the North in *Cubagua* and *Cumana*. And manye of theym which dwell in the houſes of certeyne particular lordes in the Ilandes of *San Dominico* and *Sancti Iohannis*, reſort to the Ilande of *Cubagua* for this purpoſe. Theyr cuſtome is to go fyue, fyxe, or ſeuen, or more in one of theyr *Canoas* or barkes erly in the mornynge to ſume place in the ſea there about where it appeareth vnto them that there ſhulde bee greate plentie of thoſe ſhell fyſhes (which ſume caule muſcles and ſume oyſters) wherin perles are engendered. And there they plonge

them ſelues vnder the water, euen vnto the bottome, ſauynge one that remaynethe in the Canoa or boate which he keepeth ſtyll in one place as neare as he can, lookynge for theyr returne owte of the water. And when one of them hath byn a good whyle vnder the water, he ryſeth vp and commeth ſwymmynge to the boate, enterynge into the ſame, and kauynge there all the oyſters whiche he hath taken and brought with hym. For in theſe, are the perles founde. And when he hathe there reſted hym ſelfe a whyle, and eaten parte of the oyſters, he returneth ageyne to the water, where he remaynethe as longe as he can endure, and then ryſeth ageyne, and ſwimmeth to the boate with his pray, where he reſtethe hym as before, and thus continueth courſe by courſe, as
180 doo all the other in lyke maner, being all moſte experte ſwymmers and dyuers. And when the nyght draweth neare, they returne to the Ilande to theyr houſes, and preſente all the oyſters to the maſter or ſtewarde of the houſe of theyr lorde who hath the charge of the ſayde Indians. And when he hath gyuen them ſumwhat to eate, he layeth vp the oyſters in ſafe cuſtodie vntyll he haue a great quantitie therof. Then hee cauſeth the ſame fyſſher men to open them. And they fynde in euery of theym pearles other great or ſmaul, two or three or foure, and ſumtymes fiue and fyxe, and many ſmaule graines accordyng to the lyberalitie of nature. They ſaue the pearles bothe ſmaule and great whiche they haue founde: And eyther eate the oyſters if they wyl, or caſte them away, hauynge ſo great quantitie therof that they in maner abhorre them. Theſe oyſters are of hard fleſhe, and not ſo pleſaunt in eatyng as are owres of Spayne. This Ilande of *Cubagua* where this maner of fyſſhing is exerciſed, is in the Northe coaſte, and is no bygger then the Iland of Zelande. Oftentymes the ſea encreaſeth greatly, and muche more then the fyſhers for pearles wold, bycauſe where as the place is very depe, a man can not naturally reſt at the bottome by reaſon of the aboundaunce of aery ſubſtaunce whiche is in hym, as I haue oftentymes proued. For althoughe he may by vyolence and force deſcende to the bottome, yet are his feete lyfted vp ageyne ſo that he can continue no tyme there. And therfore where the ſea is verye deepe, theſe Indian fyſſhers vſe to tye two great ſtoones aboute them with a corde, on euery ſyde one, by the weyght wherof they deſcend to the bottome and remayne there vntyl them lyſteth to ryſe ageine: At which tyme they vnloſe the ſtones, and ryſe vppe at their pleaſure. But this their apteneſſe and agilitie in ſwimming, is not the thynge that cauſeth men moſte to marauile: But rather to conſyder how many of them can ſtande in the bottome of the water for the ſpace of one hole houre, and ſumme more or leſſe, accordynge as one is more apte hereunto then an other. An other thynge there is whiche ſeemeth to me very ſtraunge. And this is, that where as I haue oftentymes demaunded of ſumme of theſe lordes of the Indians, if the place where they accuſtomed to fyſhe for pearles beynge but lyttle and narrowe, wyll not in ſhorte tyme bee vtterly withowt oyſters if they conſume them ſo faſte, they al anſwered me, that althoughe they bee conſumed in one parte, yet if they go a fyſſhynge in an other parte or an other coaſte of the Ilande, or at an other contrary wynd, and continue fyſſhing there alſo vntyll the oyſters be lykewyſe conſumed, and then returne ageyne to the fyrſte place, or any other place where they fyſſhed before and emptied the ſame in lyke maner, they find them ageine as ful of oyſters as though they had neuer bin fyſſhed. Wherby we may iudge that theſe oyſters eyther remoue from one place to an other as do other fyſſhes, or elles that they are engendered and encreaſe in certeyne ordinarie places. This Iland of *Cumana* and *Cubagua* where they fyſhe for theſe perles, is in the twelfe degree of the part of the ſaid coaſte which inclineth toward the North. Lykewiſe pearles are founde and gathered in the South ſea cauled *Mare del Sur*. And the pearles of this ſea are verye bygge. Yet not ſo bigge as they of the Ilande of pearles cauled *de las perlas*, or *Margaritea*, whiche the Indians caule *Terarequi*, lying in the goulfe of ſaincte Michael, where greatter pearles are founde and of greater price then in any other coaſte of the Northe ſea, in *Cumana*, or any other parte. I ſpeake this as a trewe teſtimonie of ſyght, hauyng byn longe in that South ſea, and makynge curious inquiſition to bee certenly informed of al that perteyneth to the fyſſhynge of pearles. From this Ilande of *Tararequi*, there was brought a pearle of the faſſhyon of a peare, wayinge. xxxi. carattes, whiche *Petrus Arias* had amonge a thouſande and ſoo many poundes weight of other pearles whiche hee had when capitayne Gaſpar Morales (before *Petrus Arias*) paſſed to the ſaide Ilande in the yeare. 1515. whiche pearle was of great priſe. From the ſaide Ilande alſo, came a great and verye rounde pearle, whiche I brought owte of the ſea. This was as bygge as a ſmaule pellet of a ſtone bowe, and of the weight of. xxvi. carattes. I boughte it in the citie of *Panama* in the ſea of *Sur*: And paide for it fyxe hundreth and fyftie tymes the weyght therof of good gold, and had it thre yeares in my cuſtodie: and after my returne into Spaine, ſoulde it to th[e]erle of *Nanſao*, Marqueſſe of Zenete, great chamberleyne to yowre maieſtie, who gaue it to the Marqueſſe his wyfe, the ladye *Mentia* of *Mendozza*. I thyncke verely that this pearle was the greateſt, fayreſt, and roundeſt that hath byn ſeene in thoſe partes. For yowre
181 maieſtie owght to vnderſtande that in the coaſte of the ſea of *Sur*, there are founde a hundreth great pearles rounde after the faſſhyon of a peare, to one that is perfectely rounde and greate. This Ilande of *Terarequi*, which the Chriſtians caule the Ilande of pearles, and other caule it the Ilande of floures, is founde in the eyght degree on the ſouthe ſyde of the firme lande in the prouynce of golden Caſtyle or *Beragua*. And theſe are the coaſtes of the firme lande where pearles are founde euen vnto this day. I vnderſtande alſo that there are perles founde in the prouynce and Ilandes of *Cartagenia*. And ſence yowr maieſtie appoynted me a gouernour and

Of this reade more largely in the decades.

By the computation of venice. iiii. graines make a carette.

capytayne, I haue made further ſearche, and am aduertiſed that pearles are founde in dyuers other places as about the Iland of *Codego* which lyeth ageynſt the mouth of that porte of the Ilande of *Cartagenia* which the Indians caul *Coro*. The which Iland and porte, are on the North ſyde in the tenthe degree of the coaſtes of the firme lande.

¶ *Of the familiaritie which certeyne of the Indians haue with the deuyll, and howe they receaue anſwere of hym of thynges to coome.*

WHen the Indians begynne theyr battayle, or go to any combat or attempte any other greate matter, they haue certeyne electe menne whom they reuerendely eſteme and caule them *Tequinas*, whiche in theyr tonge is as muche to ſaye as maſters. Notwithſtandynge that they caule euery man that is cunnynge in any ſcience, by the ſame name, as fyſſhers, foulers, hunters, or makers of nettes. Theſe *Tequinas* therfore, they caule the maſters of theyr aunſweres bycauſe they ſpeake with *Tuyra*, that is the deuyll, and brynge them aunſwere what he ſaythe, eyther as touchynge ſuche thynges as they haue to doo or ſhall chaunce to them the day folowynge, or many dayes to coome. For the deuyll beinge ſo auncient an Aſtronomer, knowethe the tymes of thynges and ſeeth howe they are naturally directed and inclined. And makethe theym beleue that they come ſo to paſſe by his ordynaunce, as though he were the lorde and mouer of all that is and ſhalbe: And that he gyueth the day lyght and rayne: cauſeth tempeſt and ruleth the ſtations of tymes, gyuyng lyfe or takynge awaye lyfe at his pleaſure. By reaſon wherof, the Indians being deceaued of hym, and ſeing alſo ſuch effectes to coome certeynely to paſſe as he hath tolde them before, beleue hym in all other thynges and honoure hym in many places with ſacrifyces of the bludde and liues of men and odoriferous ſpices. And when god diſpoſeth the contrary to that whiche the deuell hath ſpoken in oracle wherby he is proued a lyer, he cauſeth the *Tequinas* to perſwade the people that he hath chaunged his mynde and ſentence for ſumme of their ſynnes, or deuiſeth ſumme ſuche lye as lyketh hym beſte, beynge a ſkylfull maiſter in ſuche ſubtile and craftie deuiſes to deceyue the ſymple and ignorant people whiche hath ſmaule defence againſt ſo mighty and craftie an aduerſarie. And as they caule the deuell *Tuyra*, ſo doo they in many places caule the Chriſtians by the ſame name, thynkyng that they greatly honoure them therby, as in deede it is a name very feete and agreable to many of them, hauynge layde aparte all honeſtie and vertue, lyuynge more lyke dragons then men amonge theſe ſymple people.

Before th[e]inhabitauntes of the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola* had receaued the Chriſtian faithe there was amonge them a ſecte of men whiche liued ſolytarily in the deſertes and wooddes and ledde their lyfe in ſylence and abſtinence more ſtraightly then euer dyd the phyloſophers of Pythagoras ſecte, abſteinyng in lyke maner from the eatyng of al thynges that liue by bludde contented onely with ſuche fruites, herbes, and rootes as the deſertes and wooddes myniſtred vnto them to eate. The profeſſours of this ſecte were cauled *Piaces*. They gaue them ſelues to the knowleage of naturall thynges, and vſed certeine ſecreate magicall operations and ſuperſtitions wherby they had familiaritie with ſpirites whiche they allured into theyr owne bodyes at ſuche tymes as they wolde take vppon them to tell of thynges to coome, whiche they dyd in maner as foloweth. When any of the kynges had occaſyon to caule any of them owte of the deſertes for this purpoſe, their cuſtome was to ſende them a portion of their fyne breade of *Cazabbi* or *Maizium*, and with humble requeſte and ſute to deſyre them to tell them of ſuche thynges as they woulde demaunde. After the requeſt graunted and the place and daye appoynted, the *Piaces* coometh with twoo of his diſciples waytynge on hym, wherof the one bryngeth with hym a veſſell of 182
a ſecreate water, and the other a lyttle ſyluer bell. When he coommeth to the place, he ſytteth downe on a rounde ſeate made for hym of purpoſe. Where hauynge his diſciples the one ſtandynge on the one hande and the other on the other euen in the preſence of the kyng and certeyne of his nobles (for the common people are not admytted to theſe miſteries) and turnynge his face toward the deſerte, he begynneth his inchauntment and cauleth the ſpirit with loude voyce by certeyne names which no man vnderſtandeth but he and his diſciples. After he hath dooen thus a while, if the ſpirite yet deferre his coommyng, he drinketh of the ſayde water, and therwith waxeth hotte and furious, and inuerteth and turneth his inchauntement, and letteth hym ſelfe bludde with a thorne, marueilouſly turmoylyng hym ſelfe as wee reade of the furious Sybilles not ceaſynge vntyl the ſpirite bee coome: who at his coommyng entereth into hym and ouerthroweth hym as it weare a grehounde ſhulde ouertũrne a ſquerell. Then for a ſpace, he ſeemeth to lye as thoughe he were in great payne or iñ a rapte, wonderfully tormentynge hym ſelfe, durynge whiche agonie, the other diſciple ſhaketh the ſyluer bell

contynually. Thus when the agonie is paſte and he lyeth quietly (yet withowte any ſence or feelyng) the kynge or ſumme other in his ſteade, demaundeth of hym what he deſyreth to knowe, and the ſpirite anſwereth by the mouth of the rapte *Piaces* with a directe and perfecte anſwere to all poyntes. In ſo muche that on a tyme certeyne Spanyardes beynge preſente at theſe myſteries with one of the kinges, and in the Spanyſhe tounge demaundynge the *Piaces* of their ſhyppes whiche they looked for owte of Spayne, the ſpirite anſwered in the Indian toonge, and toulde them what daye and houre the ſhyppes departed from Spayne, how many they were, and what they brought withowt faylynge in any poynte. If he be alſo demaunded of the eclypſe of the ſoonne or moone (which they greatly feare and abhorre) he geueth a perfecte anſwere, and the lyke of tempeſtes, famen, plentie, warre or peace, and ſuche other thinges. When all the demaundes are fynyſſhed, his diſciples caule hym aloude, rynging the ſyluer bell at his eare and blowynge a certeyne pouder into his noſethrilles wherby he is rayſed as it weare from a deade ſleape beinge yet ſumewhat heauy headed and faynt a good whyle after. Thus beinge ageyne rewarded of the kynge with more breade, he departeth ageyne to the deſertes with his diſciples. But ſence the Chriſtian fayth hath byn diſparſed throwghe owte the Ilande, theſe deuyllyſhe practiſes haue ceaſed, and they of the members of the deuyll, are made the members of Chryſte by baptiſme forſakynge the deuyll and his workes, with the vaine curioſitie of deſyre of knowleage of thynges to coome, wherof for the moſt part it is better to be ignorant then with vexation to knowe that which can not be auoyded.

Furthermore, in many places of the firme lande, when any of the kynges dye, all his houſholde ſeruauntes, aſwell women as men which haue continually ſerued hym, kyl them ſelues, beleauynge as they are taught by the deuyl *Tuyra*, that they which kyll them ſelues when the kynge dyeth, go with hym to heauen and ſerue hym in the ſame place and office as they dyd before on the earth whyle he lyued. And that all that refuſe ſo to doo, when after they dye by theyr naturall death or otherwyſe, theyr ſoules to dye with theyr bodyes and to bee diſſolued into ayer and become nothynge as do the ſoules of hogges, byrdes, or fyſſhes or other brute beaſtes. And that only the other may enioy the priuileage of immortalitie for euer to ſerue the kynge in heauen. And of this falſe opinion commeth it that they which ſowe corne or ſet rootes for the kynges breade, and gather the ſame, are accuſtomed to kyll them ſelues that they may enioy this priuileage in heauen. And for the ſame purpoſe, cauſe a portion of the graine of *Maizium* and a bundle of *Iucca* (wherof theyr breade is made) to bee buryed with them in theyr graues that the ſame maye ſerue them in heauen if perhappes there ſhuld lacke ſeedes to ſowe. And therfore they take this with them to begyn with all, vntyl *Tuyra* (who maketh them all theſe fayre promiſſes) prouyde them of greater quantitie. This haue I my ſelfe ſene in the toppe of the mountaynes of *Guaturo*, where hauynge in pryſon the kynge of that prouince (who rebelled from th[e]obedience of yowre maieſtie) and demaundynge of hym to whom perteyned thoſe ſepultures or graues whiche I ſawe in his houſe, he anſwered that they were of certeyne Indians whiche ſlewe them ſelues at the death of his father.
183 And bycauſe they are oftentymes accuſtomed to burye greate quantities of wrought golde with them, I cauſed twoo graues to bee opened, wherein was nothynge founde but a veſſell full of the grayne of *Maizium*, and a bundell of *Iucca* as I haue ſayde. And demaunding the cauſe hereof of the kinge and the other Indians, they aunſwered that they that were buryed there, were the labourers of the grounde, and men ſkylful in ſowynge of ſeedes and makynge of breade, and ſeruauntes to the kynges father. And to th[e]ende that theyr ſoules ſhoulde not dye with theyr bodyes, they ſlewe them ſelues at the deathe of the kynge theyr maſter to lyue with hym in heauen. And to th[e]intent that they myght ſerue him there in the ſame office they reſerued that *Maizium* and *Iucca* to ſowe it in heauen. Whereunto I aunſwered them in this maner. Beholde howe your *Tuyra* deceaueth yowe? And howe all that he teacheth yow is falſe? Yowe ſee how in ſo long a tyme ſence they are deade, they haue not yet taken awaye this *Maizium* and *Iucca* which is nowe putrified and woorth nothynge, and not lyke to bee ſowen in heauen. To this the kynge replyed, ſayinge. In that they haue not yet taken it away nor ſowen it in heauen, the cauſe is that they chaunced to ſynde enowgh there, by reaſon wherof they had no neade of this. To this erroure manye thynges were ſayde which ſeemed of lyttle force to remoue hym from his falſe opinion, and eſpecially any ſuch as at that age are occupyed of the deuyll, whom they paynt of the ſelfe ſame forme and coloure as he appereth vnto theym in dyuers ſhapes and formes. They make alſo Images of golde, copper, and woodde, to the ſame ſimilitudes in terrible ſhapes and ſo variable as the paynters are accuſtomed to paynt them at the feete of ſaynte Mychaell th[e]archangell or in anye other place where they paynt them of moſt horrible port[r]iture. Lykewyſe when the deuyll greatly intendeth to feare theym, he threteneth to ſende them great tempeſtes which they caule *Furacanas* or *Haurachanas*, and are ſo vehement that they ouerthrowe many howſes and great trees. And I haue ſeene in montaynes full of many and greate trees, that for the ſpace of three quarters of a league the mountayne hathe byn ſubuerted and the trees ouerthrowen and plucked owte of the earthe with the rootes: a thynge doubteleſſe ſo fearefull and terrible to behold, that it may verely appere to be doen by the hand of the deuell. And in this caſe the Chriſtian men ought to conſider with good reaſon, that in al places where the holy ſacrament is reſerued, the ſayd tempeſtes are no more ſo owtragious, or so perelous as they were wonte to bee.

¶ *Of the temperature of the regions vnder or neare to the burnt lyne cauled* Torrida zona *or the Equinoctiall: and of the dyuers ſeaſons of the yeare.*

THe landes and regions that are neare about the clymes of the Equinoctiall lyne, are naturally hotte, althowghe they bee otherwyſe temperate by the diuine prouidence. And therfore ſuche fleſſhe or fyſhe as is taken and kylled in theſe regions, can not bee preſerued from putrefaction except it be roſted, ſodden, or perboylde, the ſame daye that it is kylde. And wheras I haue ſayde that ſuch regions are naturally hot, and yet temperate by the prouidence of god, it is ſo in deede. And therfore not without cauſe the auncient autours were of opinion that the burnte lyne or *Torrida zona* where paſſeth the lyne of the Equinoctiall, ſhulde be vnhabitable by reaſon the ſoonne hath greater dominion in that place then in any other of the ſphere, remaynynge continually betwene the two tropykes of Cancer and Capricorne. For when in theſe regions the earth is opened or dygged from the ſuperficial parte therof to the depth of a mans heyght, it is founde temperate. And within this ſpace, the trees and plantes faſten and ſpreade their rootes, and no dieper. Extendynge the ſame as farre in breadth in the ground as do their braunches in the ayer: And enter no dieper into the grounde then I haue ſayde, bycauſe that beneth the depth of the ſaid ſpace of a mans heyght, the earth is verye hotte, the vpper parte beinge temperate and verye moyſte aſwell by reaſon of th[e]aboundaunce of water whiche fauleth from heauen vppon that earth at certeyne ordinarie ſeaſons of the yeare, as alſo for the multitude of great ryuers, brokes, ſprynges and maryſſhes, wherby the myghtie and ſupreme lorde which made theſe landes, hath moſte prudently prouyded for the perſeruation of the ſame.

R. E. As touchynge this poynt whiche was vnknowen to the owlde wryters, and without conſideration wherof reaſon can not perfectly conceaue howe temperate regions ſhulde be vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, I haue thought good for the better manifeſtynge of this ſecreate woorke of nature, to note owte of Cardanus his booke de Elementis, howe all waters haue theyr courſe toward the South as to the loweſt part of the earth. He wryteth therefore as foloweth. The water was made of leſſe quantitie then the earth and only in maner in the ſuperficiall parte therof, that place might bee lefte for the habitation of beaſtes, and that water by his couldneſſe myght temperate and not deſtroy the lyfe of beaſtes. And bicauſe this generation of lyuynge creatures, was only neceſſary on the ſuperficiall partes of the earth in compariſon to the hole, therfore was the water made to occupie onely the ſuperficiall parte, in the which, metals, plantes, beaſtes, and fyſſhes ſhulde bee nuryſhed. And bycauſe there was great perell leaſt it ſhulde be to much conſumed by the ayer and heate of the ſoonne, continuall mouinge was ioyned to it, wherby it gathereth couldnes and is preſerued from ſodeyne reſolution. For ſuche waters as do not moue, doo ſoone putrifie, and are eaſely reſolued into ayer. By reaſon wherof nature prouyded for the generation of water in coulde places, as vnder the poles and mountaynes. And whereas the earth vnder the Equinoctiall ſhulde otherwiſe for lacke of moyſter haue bin to much burned and ſcorched, nature alſo prouyded that that parte of the earth ſhulde bee loweſt, by reaſon whereof all waters haue theyr courſe towarde the South to mitigate with moyſter th[e]extremitie of heate which otherwiſe ſhulde haue byn intollerable in that clyme. And by this reaſon, the famous ryuer of Nilus in Egypte. albeit it haue his originall and ſprynge, owt of the mountaynes of the mone cauled Montes Lunae nere vnto the cyrcle of Capricorne, yet runnynge with all his braunches vnder and beyonde the Equinoctiall cyrcle, it diſparſeth throwgh owt the burnt line of Torrida zona, and by the ſame vyolent courſe fauleth into owre ſea nere vnto the citie of Alexandria. It was neceſſary therfore that the greateſt parte of the coulde and moyſt element ſhulde haue recourſe thyther and conſyſt there, whereas was the greateſt neceſſitie therof to temper the heate of the ſoonne by moyſtynge and coolynge the earthe and the ayer, as vnder the Equinoctiall. And herewith alſo hath moſt prudent nature prouyded for the ſecuritie and preſeruation of the places lyinge betwene bothe th[e]extremities of heate and colde, as betwene the poles and the Equinoctiall. For the waters flowynge euer one wayes and kepynge one courſe, no regions can be drowned by fluddes: which thynge they well obſerue that delyuer fieldes from inundations or ouerflowynges, and that take in hande to drye vp maryſſhes. If therfore waters had not theyr courſe and faul towarde places lowe or declynynge, the hole earth ſhulde bee ouerflowne as a marryſſhe. And that the moſt declynynge parte ſhulde bee towarde the South, and ſumwhat hygher about the poles, the cauſe is aſwell the conſumynge heate of the ſoonne in the Southe partes, as the preſeruynge coulde of the hygh mountaynes nere to the poles. For we haue els where proued that heate conſumeth and waſteth as coulde gathereth and preſerueth. And for this cauſe that parte of the earthe that is neareſt the poles, is, was, and euer ſhalbe higheſt, and likewiſe loweſt in the middeſt furtheſt from the poles. And therfore it was not conuenient that the ſonne ſhuld haue his courſe on euery ſyde, neither to the poles. For if it weare caryed alyke to euery parte throughowt the worlde, it is neceſſary that the earth bee equall: and by that reaſon ſhulde it euer bee altogether dryed, or elles all ouerflowed with water. But where as this coulde not ſuffyce to the free courſe of ryuers for the often intercourſe of higher places lyinge in the waye, whereby ouerflowynges and ſtayes of waters and their corruption myght enſue, mooſte prouydent nature hath gyuen this priuileage to water that it maye ſo muche aſcende as it hath diſcended: that by this meanes paſſynge ouer mountaynes and hylles, it maye at the length bee caryed into the ſea. etc. Hytherto Cardanus, lette vs nowe returne to the hiſtorie. 184

There are alſo many roughe and hyghe mountaynes with temperate ayer and pleaſaunt, cleare and moderate nightes. Of the whiche particularitie the auncient writers hauyng no certeyne knowleage, affyrmed

the ſaid burnte lyne or *Torrida zona*, or Equinoctial to be naturally vnhabitable. As touching which thing I am able to witneſſe the contrary by teſtimonie of ſyght and feelyng as by moſt certeine ſenſes, hauyng liued many yeares in theſe regions, by reaſon wherof better credit ought to be giuen to me then to ſuche as haue grounded their opinion onely vpon coniectures. And to ſpeake further of the ſytuation of theſe regyons, yowe ſhall vnderſtande that the coaſte of the Northe ſea, beynge in the goulfe of *Vraba* and in the porte of *Dariena*, where the ſhyppes arryue whiche coome owte of Spayne, is in the ſyxte degree and a halfe, and in the ſeuenth, and from ſyxe and a halfe vnto eyght, excepte a ſmaule pointe which entereth into the ſea toward the North. That pointe which of this land and new parte of the worlde lieth moſte towarde the Eaſt, is the cape of ſaincte Auguſtine which is in the eight degree. So that the ſaid goulfe of *Vraba* is diſtant from the Equinoctiall lyne, from a hundreth and twentie to a hundreth and thirtie leaques and three quarters of a leaque after th[e]accompte of. xvii. leaques and a halfe for euerye degree from pole to pole. And thus for a lyttle more or leſſe, goeth all the coaſte. By reaſon wherof, in the citie of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, and in all that courſe of the forſayde goulfe of *Vraba*, at all tymes of the yeare the dayes and nyghtes are in maner of equall length. And
185 if there bee any dyfference betwene theym by reaſon of this ſmaule diſtance from the Equinoctial, it is ſo lyttle, that in. xxiiii. houres makynge a naturall daye, it canne not bee perceaued but by the iudgement of ſpeculatiue men and ſuche as vnderſtande the ſphere. From henſe the North ſtarre is ſeene very lowe And when the ſtarres which are cauled the wardens of the north ſtarre, are vnder the chariotte, it can not bee ſeene, bycauſe it is vnder the horiſontal. And whereas I haue ſayde beefore that it rayneth in theſe regions at certeyne ordinarie tymes, it is ſo in deede. For it is wynter and ſummer there at contrary tymes to that whiche is in Spayne, where the greateſte coulde of froſte and rayne is in December and Ianuary: And the greateſt heate of ſommer aboute ſaynt Iohannes daye at mydſommer or in the moneth of Iuly. But in golden Caſtile or *Beragua*, it is contrary. For the ſommer and tyme of greateſt drowght and withowt rayne, is at Chryſtmas and a moneth before and a moneth after. And the tyme when it rayneth moſt, is about midſommer and a moneth before and a moneth after. And this ſeaſon whiche they caule wynter, is not for that it is any coulder then, then at any other tyme of the yeare, or hotter at Chriſtmas then at other ſeaſons, the tyme in theſe regions being euer after one maner, but for that that in this tyme which they caule wynter, the ſoonne is hyd from theyr ſyghtes by reaſon of cloudes and rayne more then at other tymes. Yet foraſmuch as for the moſte parte of the yeare they lyue in a cleare, open, and temperate ayer, they ſumwhat ſhrynke and feele a lyttle coulde durynge the tyme of the ſaid moiſt and cloudy ayer, althowgh it bee not coulde in deede, or at the leaſt ſuche coulde as hath any ſenſible ſharpenes.

¶ *Of dyuers particular thynges, as woormes, ſerpentes, beaſtes, foules, trees. etc.*

MAny other thynges myght be ſayde, and much differyng from theſe wherof I haue ſpoken. But to lette paſſe the multitude of thynges whiche are as variable as the power of nature is infinite, and to ſpeake of ſuche thynges as coome chiefely to my rememberaunce as mooſte woorthy to be noted, I wyll fyrſte ſpeake of certeyne lyttle and troubelous beaſtes whiche maye ſeeme to bee engendered of nature to moleſt and vexe menne, to ſhewe them and gyue them to vnderſtand howe ſmaule and vyle a thynge may offende and diſquiete them, to th[e]ende that they maye remember the pryncipall ende for the whiche they were created, that is, to knowe theyr maker and procurer of theyr ſaluation by the waye whiche is open to all Chriſtian men and all other whiche wyll open the eyes of theyr vnderſtandynge. And although the thynges whereof wee entende nowe to ſpeake may ſeeme vyle and lyttle to bee eſteemed, yet are they woorthy to bee noted and conſydered to vnderſtand the difference and variable woorkes of nature. So it is therfore, that whereas in many partes of the firme lande by the which aſwell the Chriſtians as Indians doo trauel, there are ſuch maryſſhes and waters in the way that they are fayne to go withowt breeches amonge the herbes and weedes, by reaſon wherof, certeyne ſmaule beaſtes or woormes (which they caule *Garapates*) much lyke vnto tykes, cleaue faſt to theyr legges. Theſe wormes are as little as the pouder of beaten ſalt: And cleaue ſo faſt that they can by no meanes be taken away except the place bee noynted with oyle. And after that the legges bee noynted awhyle with oyle, or the other partes where theſe lyttle tykes are faſtened, they ſcrape the place with a knyfe and ſo take them away. But the Indians whiche haue no oyle, ſmoke them and burne them with fyer, and abyde great peynes in takynge them awaye by this meanes. Of other lyttle beaſtes which trouble men and are

engende[red] in theyr heades or other partes of theyr bodies, I ſaye that the Chriſtian men which trauell into theſe partes, haue them but ſeldome tymes, and that not paſt one or two, and this alſo very ſeldome. For paſſynge by the lyne of the Diameter where the compaſſe makethe difference of ſaylynge by the wynde cauled *Greco*, (that is North Eaſt) and *Magiſtral*, (that is ſouth weſt) which is in the courſe of the Ilandes of *Azori*, they ſayle but a lyttle way folowing owre vyage by the weſt, but that all the lyſe which the Chriſtians cary with them, or are engendered in theyr heades or other places of theyr bodies, dye and vtterlye conſume by lyttle and lyttle, and are not engendered in India excepte in the heades of lyttle chyldren in thoſe partes aſwel amonge the chyldren of the Chriſtians which are borne there, as alſo amonge the natural Indians who haue theym 186
commonly in theyr heades and ſumetymes in other partes of theyr bodyes, and eſpecially they of the prouince of *Cueua*, which is a region conteynynge more then a hundreth leaques in length, and embraſeth the one and the other coaſt of the North ſea and of the Eaſt. When theſe Indians are infected with this fylthyneſſe, they dreſſe and clenſe one an other. And they that exerciſe this, are for the moſte parte women who eate all that they take: And haue herein ſuch dexteritie by reaſon of theyr exercíſe, that owre men can not lyghtly atteyne therunto. There is alſo another thynge greatly to bee conſydered. And this is how the Chriſtian men beinge there cleane frome this fylthynes of India, aſwell in theyr heades as the reſte of theyr bodyes, yet when they returne to coomme ageyne into Europe and begyn to arryue in that place of the Ocean ſea where wee ſayde before that the lyſe dyed and forſoke them, ſuddenly in theyr repaſſynge by the ſame clyme (as thoughe the lyſe had taryed for them in that place) they can by no meanes auoyde theym for the ſpace of certeyne dayes although they change theyr ſhertes two or three tymes in a day. Theſe lyſe are at the fyrſte as lyttle as nyttes, and growe by lyttle and lyttle vntyl they bee of the byggeneſſe that they are in Spayne. This haue I often tymes proued, hauynge nowe foure tymes paſſed the Ocean ſea by this vyage.

Beſyde theſe woormes and vermyn wherof we haue ſpoken, there is another lyttle miſcheuous woorme, whiche we may number amonge the kyndes of fleas. This peſtilence the Indians caule *Nigua*: And is much *Nigua.*
leſſe then a flea. It perſeth the fleſhe of a man, and ſo launſeth or cutteth the ſame (while in the meane tyme it can nother bee ſeene nor taken) that from ſume it hath cutte of theyr handes, and from other theyr fiete vntyll the remedy was founde to annoynte the place with oyle and ſcrape it with a raſoure.

In the firme lande in golden Caſtyle or *Beragua*, there are many vypers lyke vnto them of Spayne. They *Vypers.*
that are bytten of them, dye in ſhort ſpace. For fewe lyue to the fourthe daye except preſent remedy. Of theſe, ſume are of a leſſe kind then other: And haue theyr tayle ſumwhat rounde, and leape in the ayer to aſſayle men. And for this cauſe, ſume caule this kynde of vypers *Tyro*. Theyr bytyng is moſt venemous, and for the moſte parte incurable. One of theym chaunced to byte an Indian mayde whiche ſerued me in my houſe, to whome I cauſed the ſurgians to myniſter theyr ordinarye cure, but they coulde doo her no good, nor yet get one droppe of bludde owt of her, but only a yelowe water, ſo that ſhee died the thyrd day for lacke of remedy as the like hath chaunced to dyuers other. This mayde was of th[e]age of. xiiii. yeares and ſpoke the Spanyſſhe toonge as yf ſhee had byn borne in Caſtyle. Shee ſayde that the vyper whiche bytte her on the foote, was two ſpannes longe or lyttle leſſe. And that to byte her ſhee lepte in the ayer for the ſpace of more then ſyxe ſpaces, as I haue harde the lyke of other credible perſons.

I haue alſo ſeene in the firme lande, a kynde of adders very ſmaule and of ſeuen or eyght foote longe. *Adders.*
Theſe are ſo redde that in the nyght they appeare lyke burnynge cooles, and in the day ſeeme as redde as bludde. Theſe are alſo venemous, but not ſo much as the vypers. There are other much leſſe and ſhorter and blacker. Theſe coome owt of the ryuers and wander ſumtymes farre on the lande, and are lykwyſe venemous. There are alſo other adders of a ruſſet coloure. Theſe are ſumwhat bygger then the vypers, and are hurtful and venemous. There are lykewyſe an other ſorte of manye coloures and very longe. Of theſe I ſawe one in the yeare of Chriſt 1515. in the Iland of *Hiſpaniola* nere vnto the ſea coſtes at the foote of the mountaynes cauled *Pedernales*. When this adder was ſlayne, I meaſured her and founde her to be more then. xx. foote longe, and ſumwhat more then a mans fyſt in byggenes. And althoughe ſhe hadde three or foure deadely woundes with a ſwoorde, yet dyed ſhee not nor ſtoonke the ſame daye, in ſo much that her bludde continued warme all that tyme. There are alſo in the maryſſhes and defertes of the firme lande many other kyndes of lyſertes, dragons, *Dragons.*
and other dyuers kyndes of ſerpentes wherof I entende not here to ſpeake much, bycauſe I haue more particulerly entreated of theſe thynges in my generall hiſtorie of the Weſte Indyes.

There are alſo ſpiders of marueylous bygneſſe. And I haue ſeene ſumme with the body and legges, bygger *Spyders.*
then a mannes hande extended euery waye. And I ones ſawe one of ſuche bygneſſe, that onely her bodye was as bygge as a ſparowe, and full of that laune wherof they make their webbes. This was of a darke ruſſette coloure, 187
with eyes greater then the eies of a ſparow. They are venemous and of terrible ſhape to beholde. There are alſo ſcorpions and dyuers other ſuche venemous wormes. Wherby we maye ſee, that where as natural cauſes and influence of the planettes are of ſtrongeſt actiuitie, they ceaſe not to engender and brynge foorthe bothe good and badde accordynge to the diſpoſytion of the matter, whiche they alſo doo partely diſpoſe as the phyloſophers affyrme.

Furthermore in the ſyrme lande, there are manye toades beyng very noyous and hurteful by reaſon of their great multitude. They are not venemous. They are ſeene in greate aboundance in *Dariena* where they are ſo bygge that when they dye in the time of drouth, the bones of ſum of them (and eſpecially the rybbes) are of ſuche greatneſſe that they appere too bee the bones of cattes or of ſumme other beaſtes of the ſame byggeneſſe. But as the waters dyminiſhe and the moyſture conſumeth in the tyme of drouth (as I haue ſayde) they alſo conſume therwith vntyll the yeare nexte folowing when the rayne and moyſture increaſe, at whiche tyme they are ſeene ageyne. Neuertheleſſe, at this preſent, there is no ſuch quantitie of them as was wonte to bee, by reaſon that as the land is better cultured by the Chriſtians, as well by the fellynge of wooddes and ſhrubbes as alſo by the paſture of kine, horſes, and other beaſtes, ſo is it apparent that this poyſon diminiſheth dayly, wherby that regyon becometh more holſome and pleaſaunt. Theſe toades ſynge after three or foure ſortes. For ſumme of them ſynge pleaſauntly: other, lyke owres of Spayne. Summe alſo whiſtle: and other ſumme make an other maner of noyſe. They are lykewyſe of dyuers colours: as ſumme greene, ſumme ruſſette or grey, and ſumme almoſt blacke. But of all ſortes, they are great, and fylthye, and noyous by reaſon of their great multitude: yet are they not venemous as I haue ſayde.

Crabbes.

There are alſo a ſtraunge kynde of crabbes, whiche coome foorthe of certeyne holes of the earth that they them ſelues make. The head and bodye of theſe, make one rounde thing muche lyke vnto the hoode of a fawkon: hauynge foure feete commyng owt of the one ſyde and as many owt of the other. They haue alſo two mouthes like vnto a paire of ſmaule pinſers, the one bygger then the other, wherwith they byte, but do no great hurte bycauſe they are not venemous. Their ſkyn and bodye is ſmoothe and thynne as is the ſkynne of a man, ſauynge that it is ſumwhat harder. Their colour is ruſſette or white, or blewe, and walke ſydelonge. They are very good to bee eaten: In ſo muche that the Chriſtians trauayling by the ſyrme lande, haue byn greatly nuryſſhed by them bycauſe they are founde in maner euery where. In ſhape and forme, they are muche lyke vnto the crabbe which we paynte for the ſygne Cancer, and like vnto thoſe which are found in Spaine in *Andaluſia* in the ryuer *Guadalchiber* where it entereth into the ſea, and in the ſea coaſtes therabout, ſauynge that theſe are of the water and the other of the lande. They are ſumtymes hurtefull, ſo that they that eate of them dye. But this chaunceth onely when they haue eaten any venemous thyng, or of the venemous apples wherwith the Canibale archers poyſon their arrowes wherof I wyll ſpeake hereafter. And for this cauſe the Chriſtians take hede howe they eate of theſe crabbes if they ſynde them neare vnto the ſayd apple trees.

Serpentes cauled Iuanni.

Furthermore in theſe Indies, aſwell in the ſyrme lande as in the Ilandes, there is founde a kynde of ſerpentes, which they caule. V. V. *anas*, which ſumme caule *Iuannas*. Theſe are terrible and fearefull to ſyght, and yet not hurtefull. They are very delicate to bee eaten, and it is not yet knowen whether they be beaſtes of the lande or fyſhes, bycauſe they lyue in the water, and wander in the woddes and on the lande. They haue foure feete, and are commonly bigger then connies and in ſumme places bygger then otters, with tayles lyke liſartes or eutes. Their ſkynne is ſpotted, and of the ſame kynd of ſmothneſſe or bareneſſe, although of dyuers colours. Vpon the ridge of their backes, they haue many long prickes. Theyr teethe are very ſharpe, and eſpecially theyr fanges or dogge teeth. Their throtes are longe and large, reachynge from their beardes to their breaſtes, of the lyke ſkynne to the reſydewe of their bodyes. They are dumme, and haue no voyce or make any noyſe or crye although they bee kept tyde to the foote of a cheſte or any other thynge for the ſpace of. xx. or. xxv. dayes withowt any thyng to eate or drynke, excepte they gyue them nowe and then a lyttle of
188 the breade of *Cazabbi*, or ſumme ſuch other thyng. They haue foure feete, and their fore feete as longe as a mans fynger with clawes lyke the clawes of a byrde, but weaker, and ſuche as can not graſple or take holde of any thynge. They are muche better to bee eaten then to beholde. For fewe that ſee them, wyll haue deſyre to eate of them, by reaſon of their horrible ſhape excepte ſuche as haue byn accuſtomed to the beaſtes of theſe regyons, whiche are more horrible and fearefull, as this is not but onely in apparence. Their fleſhe is of much better taſte then the fleſhe of connyes and more holſome. For it hurteth none but onely ſuch as haue had the frenſhe poxe. In ſo much that if they haue onely byn touched of that infyrmitie, although they haue byn hole of longe tyme, neuertheleſſe they feele hurte and complayne of the eatynge of theſe *Iuannas*, as hath byn often tymes proued by experience.

Byrdes.

There are founde in the fyrme lande certeyne byrdes ſo lyttle that the hole body of one of theym is no bygger then the toppe of the byggeſt fynger of a mans hande: and yet is the bare body withowt the fethers not paſte halfe ſo bygge.

A very lyttle byrde.

This byrde, beſyde her lyttlenes, is of ſuch velocitie and ſwyftnes in flying that who ſo ſeeth her fleing in the ayer, can not ſe her flap or beate her winges after any other ſort then do the dorres or humble bees or betels: ſo that there is no man that ſeeth her flie, that wold think her to be any other then a dorre. They make their neſtes accordyng to the proportion of their bignes. And I haue ſeene that one of theſe byrdes with her neſt put in a paire of gold weights, altogether hath waid no more then. ii. *Tomini*, which are in poiſe. 24. grains, with the fethers with out the which ſhe ſhulde haue wayed ſumwhat leſſe. And doubt leſſe when I conſider the fyneneſſe of the clawes and feete of theſe birdes, I knowe not whervnto I may

better liken them then to the lyttle byrdes whiche the lymmers of bookes are accuſtomed to paynte on the margentes of churche bookes and other bookes of deuine ſeruice. Their fethers are of many faire colours as golden yelowe and greene beſide other variable colours. Their beake is verye longe for the proportion of theyr bodies: and as fyne and ſubtile as a ſowyng nedle. They are very hardye: ſo that when they ſee a man clyme the tree where they haue theyr neſtes, they flye at hys face and ſtryke hym in the eyes, commyng, goynge, and retournynge with ſuch ſwyftnes, that no man wolde lightly beleue it that hath not ſeene it. And certenly theſe byrdes are ſo lyttle, that I durſt not haue made mention hereof if it were not that diuers other which haue ſeene them as wel as I, can beare witnes of my ſaying. They make their neſtes of flockes and heare of cotten wherof there is great plentie in theſe regions, and ſerueth wel for theyr purpoſe. But as touchyng the byrdes, foules, and beaſtes of theſe Indies, bycauſe they are innumerable bothe lyttle and greate, I intende not to ſpeake muche heare, bycauſe I haue ſpoken more largely hereof in my generall hyſtorye of the Indyes.

Beastes.

There is an other kynde of beaſtes ſeene in the firme land which ſeemed very ſtraunge and marueilous to the Chryſtian men to beholde, and muche differynge from all other beaſtes which haue byn ſeene in other partes of the worlde. Theſe beaſtes are cauled *Bardati*: And are foure footed, hauing their taile and al the reſt of theyr bodies couered onely with a ſkyn lyke the coperture of a barbed horſe or the chekered ſkynne of a lyſarte or Crocodyle, of coloure betwene whyte and ruſſet, inclynynge ſumwhat more to whyte. This beaſt, is of forme and ſhape much lyke to a barbed horſe with his barbes and flankettes in all poyntes. And from vnder that which is the barbe and coperture, the tayle commeth foorth, and the feete in theyr place, the necke alſo and the eares in theyr partes, and in fyne all thynges in lyke ſorte as in a barbed courſer. They are of the bygnes of one of theſe common dogges. They are not hurtfull. They are fylthy, and haue theyr habitation in certen hillockes of earthe where digginge with there feete they make their dens very deepe and the holes therof in like maner as do connyes. They are verye excellent to be eaten, and are taken with nettes and ſum alſo killed with croſbowes. They are lykewiſe taken often tymes when the huſband men burne the ſtubble in ſowyng time, or to renewe the herbage for kyne and other beaſtes. I haue often times eaten of their fleſhe which ſemeth to me of better taſt then kyddes fleſhe, and holſome to be eaten. And if theſe beaſtes had euer byn ſeene in theſe partes of the woorlde where the firſt barbed horſes had their original, no man wold iudge but that the forme and faſſhion of the coperture of horſes furniſhed for the warres was fyrſte deuyſed by the ſyght of theſe beaſtes.

Bardati

There is alſo in the firme lande an other beaſte cauled *Orſo Formigaro*, that is, the Ante beare. This beaſte in heare and coloure, is much lyke to the beare of Spayne, and in maner of the ſame makynge ſaue that he hath a much longer ſnowt and is of euyll ſyght. They are often tymes taken only with ſtaues without any other weapon, and are not hurtful. They are alſo taken with dogges bycauſe they are not naturally armed althowgh they byte ſumwhat. They are founde for the moſte parte about and neare to the hyllockes where are great abundaunce of antes. For in theſe regions is engendered a certeyne kynde of antes very lyttle and blacke, in the fyeldes and playnes where as growe no trees, where by th[e]inſtinct of nature theſe antes ſeparate them ſelues to engender far from the wooddes for feare of theſe beares: The whiche bycauſe they are fearefull, vyle, and vnarmed (as I haue ſayde) they keepe euer in places full of trees vntyll very famen and neceſſitie, or the great deſire that they haue to fiede of theſe antes, cauſe them to coomme owt of the wooddes to hunte for them. Theſe antes make a hyllocke of earth to the heyght of a man, or ſumwhat more or leſſe, and as bygge as a great cheſt, and ſumtymes as bygge as a butte or a hogges head, and as hard as a ſtone: So that they ſeeme as thoughe they were ſtones ſet vp to lymytte th[e]endes and confines of certeyne landes. Within theſe hyllockes made of moſt harde earth, are innumerable and infinite lyttle antes, the which may bee gathered by buſhelles when the hyllocke is broken. The which when it is ſumtymes moyſted by rayne and then dryed ageyne by the heate of the ſoonne, it breaketh and hath certeyne ſmaul ryſtes as lyttle and ſubtyle as the edge of a knyfe. And it ſemeth that nature hath gyuen ſenſe to theſe Antes to fynde ſuch a matter of earth wherwith they may make the ſayde hillocke of ſuche hardenes that it may ſeeme a ſtronge pauement made of lyme and ſtone. And wheras I haue proued and cauſed ſum of them to bee broken, I haue founde theim of ſuche hardenes as if I had not ſeene I coulde not haue beleaued: In ſo muche that they coulde ſcarcely bee broken with pykes of Iren: So ſtronge fortreſſes doo theſe lyttle beaſtes make for theyr ſauegarde ageynſt theyr aduerſarie the beare, who is chiefely nuryſſhed by them, and gyuen them as an enemie, accordynge to the common prouerbe which ſayth, *Non e alcuna perſona ſi libera, a chimanchi il ſuo Bargello*: That is, there is no man ſo free that hath not his perſecutour or pryuie enemie. And here when I conſyder the maruelous prouidence which nature hath gyuen to theſe lyttle boddies, I caule to remembraunce the wittie ſentence of Plinie, where ſpeakyng of ſuch lyttle beaſtes, he ſayth thus. Why doo we maruayle at the towrebearynge ſhoulders of Elephantes, and not rather where nature hathe placed ſo many ſences and ſuche induſtry in ſuche lyttle boddies? where is hearynge, ſmellynge, ſeeinge, and feelynge, ye, where are the vaynes and arteries (without which no beaſte can lyue or moue) in theſe ſo lyttle boddies whereof ſume are ſo ſmaule that theyr hole boddies can ſcarſely be ſene of owr

189
Beares.

Antes.

eyes, what ſhall we then ſaye of the partes of the ſame? Yet euen amonge theſe are there many of ſuch ſagacitie and induſtrye as the lyke is not ſeene in beaſtes of greater quantitie, no nor yet in man, etc. But to returne to the hyſtorie. This enemie which nature hath gyuen to theſe lyttle beaſtes, vſeth this maner to aſſayle them. When he reſortethe to the hyllocke where the antes lye hid as in theyr fortreſſe, he putteth his toonge to one of the ryftes wherof we haue ſpoken being as ſubtyle as the edge of a ſwoorde, and there with continuall lyckynge, maketh the place moyſt, the ſome and froth of his mouth beinge of ſuch propertie that by continual lycking the place, it enlargeth the ryfte in ſuch ſort by lyttle and lyttle, that at the length he eaſely putteth in his toonge whiche he hath very longe and thynne, and much diſproportionate to his bodye. And when he hath thus made free paſſage for his toonge into the hyllocke to put it eaſely in and owt at his pleaſure, then he thruſteth it into the hole as farre as he can reache, and ſo letteth it reſte a good ſpace vntyl a great quantitie of the antes (whoſe nature reioyſeth in heate and moyſter) haue laden his tonge and as many as he can conteyne in the holowneſſe thereof: at which tyme he ſuddeynly draweth it into his mouth and eateth them, and returneth ageyne to the ſame practiſe immediatly vntyl he haue eaten as manye as hym lyſteth, or as longe as he can reache any with his tonge. The fleſſhe of this beaſte, is fylthy and vnſauery. But by reaſon of th[e]extreme ſhyftes and neceſſitie that the Chriſtian men were put to at theyr fyrſt commynge into theſe partes, they were inforced to proue al
190 thynges and ſo fel to th[e]eatyng of theſe beaſtes. But when they had founde more delycate meates, they fell into hatred with this. Theſe antes haue th[e]apperaunce of the place of their enteraunce into the hyllocke, vnder the grounde. And this at ſo lyttle a hole that it could hardely be founde yf certeyne of them were not ſeene to paſſe in and owt. But by this way the beares coulde haue no ſuch poure to hurte them as aboue at the ſayde ryftes as I haue ſayde. There is an other ſtrange beaſte whiche by a name of contrary effecte, the Spanyardes caule *Cagnuolo leggiero*, that is the lyght dogge, wheras it is one of the ſloweſte beaſtes in the worlde, and ſo heauy and dull in mouynge that it canne ſcarſely go fyftie paſes in a hole day. Theſe beaſtes are in the firme lande, and are very ſtraunge to beholde for the diſproportion that they haue to all other beaſtes. They are abowte two ſpannes in length when they are growne to theyr full byggeneſſe. But when they are very younge, they are ſumewhat more groſſe then longe. They haue foure ſubtyle fiete, and in euery of them foure clawes lyke vnto byrdes, and ioyned togyther. Yet are nother theyr clawes or theyr fiete able to ſuſteyne theyr bodyes from the grounde. By reaſon wherof and by the heauyneſſe of theyr boddies, they drawe theyr bellyes on the grounde. Theyr neckes are hygh and ſtreyght and all equall lyke the peſtle of a morter, which is altogyther equall euen vnto the toppe withowt makynge any proportion or ſimilitude of a headde, or any dyfference excepte in the noddle. And in the toppes of theyr neckes, they haue verye rounde faces much lyke vnto owles: And haue a marke of theyr owne heare after the maner of a cyrcle whiche makethe theyr faces ſeeme ſumwhat more longe then large. They haue ſmaule eyes and rounde: And noſtrylles lyke vnto munkeys. They haue lyttle mouthes, and moue theyr neckes frome one ſyde to an other as thoughe they were aſtonyſſhed. Theyr chiefe deſyre and delyte is to cleaue and ſtycke faſte vnto trees or ſume other thynge whereby they may clyme aloſte. And therfore for the moſte parte, theſe beaſtes are founde vppon trees whervnto cleauynge faſt, they mounte vp by lyttle and lyttle, ſteyinge them ſelues by theyr longe clawes. The coloure of theyr heare, is betwene ruſſet and whyte, and of the proper coloure of the heare of a weſell. They haue no tayles, and theyr voyce is much dyfferynge frome other beaſtes: for they ſynge onely in the nyght: And that continually frome tyme to tyme ſyngynge euer ſyxe notes one hygher then an other, ſo faulynge with the ſame that the fyrſte note is the hygheſt and the other in a baſer tewne as yf a man ſhuld ſay *La, ſol, fa, mi, re, vt.* So this beaſt ſayth, *Ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha.* And doubteleſſe, it ſeemeth vnto me, that as I haue ſayde in the chapiter of the beaſte cauled *Barlati*, that thoſe beaſtes might bee th[e]originall and document to imbarbe horſes, euen ſo the fyrſte inuenture of muſycke myght ſeeme by the hearynge of this beaſt to haue the fyrſt principles of that ſcyence rather then by any other thynge in the worlde. But nowe to returne to the hyſtorie: I ſay that in a ſhorte ſpace after this beaſte hath ſoonge and hath pauſed a whyle, ſhe returneth ageyne to the ſelfe ſame ſonge, and doth this only in the nyght and not in the day. By reaſon wherof and alſo bycauſe of her euyll ſyght, I thynke her to bee a nyght beaſte and the frende of darkeneſſe. Sumtymes the Chriſtian menne fynde theſe beaſtes and brynge theym home to theyr houſes, where alſo they creepe all abowte with theyr naturall ſloweneſſe, in ſo much that nother for threatenynge or pryckynge they wyll moue any faſter then theyr natural and accuſtomed paſe. And yf they fynde any trees, they creepe thyther immediatly, and mounte to the toppe of the hygheſt braunche thereof, where they remayne continually for the ſpace of eyght, or tenne, or twentie dayes without eatynge of any thinge as farre as any man can iudge. And wheras I my ſelfe haue kepte theym in my houſe, I coulde neuer perceaue other but that they lyue onely of ayer. And of the ſame opinion are in maner all men of thoſe regions, bycauſe they haue neuer ſeene them eate any thynge, but euer turne theyr heades and mouthes towarde that parte where the wynde bloweth moſt: whereby may bee conſydered that they take moſte pleaſure in the ayer. They byte not, nor yet can byte, hauyng very lyttle mouthes. They are not venemous or noyous any way: but altogyther brutiſhe and vtterly vnprofytable and without commoditie yet knowen to

A straunge beast whiche seemeth a kynd of Chameleon.

men, ſauynge onely to moue theyr myndes to contemplate th[e]infinite poure of god, who delyteth in the varietie of creatures, wherby appeareth the poure of his incomprehenſible wiſedome and maieſtie ſo farre to excede the capacitie of mans vnderſtandynge.

191
Foules, and byrdes. *Alcatraz.*

In theſe regions there are likewiſe found certeyne foules or byrdes which the Indians caule *Alcatraz.* Theſe are much bygger then geeſe. The greateſt parte of theyr fethers are of ruſſet coloure, and in ſume partes yelowe. Theyr bylles or beakes are of two ſpannes in length and verye large neare to the heade, and growynge ſmaule towarde the poynte. They haue greate and large throtes: And are much lyke to a foule which I ſawe in Flaunders in Bruſſelles in yowre maieſties pallaice which the Flemynges caule Haina. And I remember that when yowr maieſtie dyned one day in yowre great haule there was brought to yowre maieſties preſence a chauderne of water with certeyne fyſſhes alyue, which the ſayde foule did eate vp hole. And I thynke verely that that foule was a foule of the ſea bycauſe ſhee had fiete lyke foules of the water as haue alſo theſe *Alcatrazi,* which are likewyſe foules of the ſea: and of ſuch greatneſſe that I haue ſeene a hole cote of a man put into the throates of one of theym in *Panama* in the yeare 1521. And foraſmuch as in that coaſte of *Panama,* there paſſeth and flyeth a greate multitude of theſe *Alcatrazi* beinge a thynge very notable, I wyll declare the maner hereof as not onely I, but alſo dyuers other nowe preſente in yowre maieſties courte haue often tymes ſeene. Yowre maieſtie ſhall therfore vnderſtande that in this place (as I haue ſayde before) the ſea of *Sur* ryſeth and fauleth two leagues and more from ſyxe houres to ſyxe houres: ſo that when it increaſeth, the water of the ſea arryueth ſo neare to the houſes of *Panama* as doth owre ſea (cauled *Mare Mediteraneum*) in Barzalona or in Naples. And when the ſayd increaſyng of the ſea commeth, there commeth alſo therwith ſuch a multitude of the ſmaule fyſſhes cauled ſardynes, that it is ſo marueylous a thynge to beholde, that no man wolde beleue it that hath not ſeene it. In ſo much that the *Cacique,* (that is) the kynge of that land at ſuch tyme as I dwelt there, was bounde dayly as he was commaunded by yowre maieſties gouernour, to brynge ordynaryly three canoas or barkes full of the ſayde ſardynes and to vnlade the ſame in the markette place, whiche were afterwarde by the ruler of the citie diuyded amonge the Chriſtian men without any coſte or charge to any of them. In ſo much that yf the people had bin a much greater multitude then they were, and as many as are at this preſente in *Toledo* or more, and had none other thynge to lyue by, they myght haue byn ſufficiently ſuſteyned by theſe ſardynes, byſyde th[e]ouerplus which ſhulde haue remayned. But to returne to the foules wherof we haue ſpoken. As the ſea commeth, and the ſardynes with the ſame, euen ſo lykewyſe coome the ſayde *Alcatrazzi* therwith: and flye continually ouer it in ſuche a multytude, that they appeare to couer th[e]upper parte or floure of the water. And thus continue in mountynge and faulynge from the ayer to the water, and from the water to the ayer durynge all the tyme of theyr fyſſhynge. And as ſoone as they haue taken any of theſe ſardynes, they flye aboue the water and eate them incontinently, and ſuddeynly returne ageyne to the water for more, continuing thus courſe by courſe withowt ceaſynge. In lyke maner when the ſea fauleth, they folowe there fyſſhynge as I haue ſayde. There goethe alſo in the company of theſe foules, an other kynde of foules cauled *Coda inforcata,* (that is) the forked tayle, whereof I haue made mention before. And as ſoone as the *Alcatraz* mounteth from the water with her pray of the ſardynes, ſuddeynly this *Coda inforcata* gyueth her ſo many ſtrokes, and ſo perſecuteth her, that ſhee cauſeth her to let faule the ſardynes which ſhee hath in her mouth. The which as ſoone as they are faulne, and before they yet touch the water, the *Coda inforcata* catcheth them euen in the faule, in ſuche ſorte that it is a great pleaſure to beholde the combatte betwene them all the daye longe. The number of theſe *Alcatrazzi* is ſuch, that the Chryſtian menne are accuſtomed to ſend to certeyne Ilandes and rockes which are neare abowte *Panama,* with theyr boates or barkes to take theſe *Alcatrazzi* whyle they are yet younge and can not flye: and kyll as many of them with ſtaues as they wyll, vntyll they haue therwith laden theyr barkes or canoas. Theſe younge ones are ſo fatte and wel fedde that they can not bee eaten. And are taken for none other intent but only to make greaſe for candels to burne in the nyght, for the whiche purpoſe it ſerueth very well: and gyueth a cleare lyght, and burneth eaſely. After this maner and for this purpoſe, innumerable of them are kylde. And yet it ſeemeth that the number of them that fyſſhe for ſardynes doo dayly increaſe

Panama.

Passere sempie.

There are other foules cauled *Paſſere ſempie*: that is, ſimple ſparowes. Theſe are ſumwhat leſſe then ſemewes: and haue theyr fiete lyke vnto great malardes: And ſtande in the water ſumtymes. And when the ſhyppes ſayle fyftie or a hundreth leaques abowte the Ilandes, theſe foules beholdynge the ſhyppes commyng towarde them, breake theyr flyght and faule downe vpon the ſayle yardes, maſtes, and cables therof. And are ſo ſimple and folyſhe that they tary vntyll they maye eaſely be taken with mens handes, and were therefore cauled of the maryners ſimple ſparowes. They are blacke, and vppon their blacke, haue theyr heade and ſhoulders of fethers of a darke ruſſet coloure. They are not good to bee eaten, althowgh the mariners haue ſumtimes bin enforced to eate them.

192

Picuti.

There is an other kynde of byrdes in the fyrme lande, which the Chriſtians caule *Picuti,* bycauſe they haue very great beakes in reſpecte of the lyttleneſſe of theyr boddies: For theyr beakes are very heauy and waye

more then theyr hole boddyes byſyde. Theſe byrdes are no bygger then quayles, but haue a much greater buſhement of fethers, in ſo much that theyr fethers are more then theyr boddies. Theyr fethers are very fayre and of many variable coloures. Theyr beakes are a quarter of a yarde in length or more, and bendynge downe towarde the earthe, and three fyngers brode neare vnto the heade. Theyr tonges are very quilles, wherwith they make a great hyſſynge. They make holes in trees with theyr beakes, in the which they make theyr neſtes. And ſurely theſe byrdes are maruelous to beholde for the great difference whiche they haue from all other byrdes that I haue ſeene, aſwel for theyr toonges (which are quylles as I haue ſayde) as alſo for the ſtrangeneſſe of theyr ſyght and diſproportion of their greate beakes in reſpect of the reſt of theyr boddies. There are no byrdes founde that prouyde better for the ſafegarde of theyr younge in the tyme of theyr breedynge to bee withowte daunger of wylde cattes that they enter not into theyr neſtes to deſtroye theyr egges or younge. And this aſwell by the ſtraunge maner of buyldyng theyr neſtes, as alſo by theyr owne defence. And therfore when they perceaue that the cattes approche towarde them, they enter into theyr neſtes: and holdynge theyr beakes towarde th[e]enteraunce of the ſame, ſtande at theyr defence, and ſo vexe the cattes that they cauſe them to leaue theyr enterpryſe.

Folysshe sparowes.

There are alſo other byrdes or ſparowes, whiche the Chriſtians by contrary effect caule *Matti*, that is fooles. Wheras neuertheleſſe there is no byrde that ſheweth more wyt and crafte in defendynge her younge from perell. Theſe byrdes are lyttle and in maner blacke, and ſumewhat bygger then owre thruſſhes. They haue certeyne whyte fethers in theyr neckes, and the lyke ſagacitie or ſharpenes of ſenſe as haue the byrdes or pyes cauled *Gazzuole*. They ſeldome tymes light vppon the earth. They make theyr neſtes in trees ſeparated from other, bycauſe the wylde cattes (cauled *Mammoni*) are accuſtomed to leape frome tree to tree, not deſcendynge to the grounde for feare of other beaſtes, excepte when they are enforced by thyrſte to coome downe to drynke at ſuche tymes as they are ſure not to bee moleſted. And for this cauſe doo not theſe byrdes make theyr neſtes but in trees farre diuyded from other. They make them of a cubette in length or more, after the maner of bagges or lyttle ſackes, large at the bottome, and growynge narower and narower towarde the mouth whereby they are faſtened: hauynge the hole whereat they enter into the ſacke, of ſuch byggenes as may onely ſuffice to receaue them. And to th[e]ende that the cattes maye not deuoure theyr younge yf they chaunce to mounte vppon the trees where they haue theyr neſtes, they vſe an other crafte, which is, to make theyr neſtes in thycke braunches of trees, and to defende the ſame with ſharpe and ſtronge thorns implycate and ſet in ſuch order that no man is able to make the lyke. So that the cattes can by no meanes put theyr legges into the hole of the neſte to take owte younge byrdes, aſwel for the ſharpenes of the thornes as alſo for the depth of the neſtes, in the bottome wherof, the younge birdes reſt withowt daunger of theyr enemie. For ſum of theyr neſtes beynge three or foure ſpannes in lengthe, the legge of the catte can not reache to the bottome therof. They vſe alſo an other pollicie: which is, to make many of theyr neſtes in one tree The which they doo for one of theſe two cauſes: that is, that eyther of theyr owne naturall diſpoſition they are accuſtomed to go in great multitudes, and reioyſe in the company of theyr owne generation as do the byrdes which we caule ſtares, or elles to th[e]intent that yf it ſhoulde ſo chaunce that the cattes ſhulde clyme the trees where they make theyr neſtes, they might
193 bee a greater company to reſyſte and moleſt the cattes, at whoſe approch they make a feareful and terrible cry, wherby the cattes are put to flyght.

Gazzuole. Furthermore, in the firme land, and in the Ilandes, there are certeyne byrdes cauled *Piche* or *Gazzuole*, ſumewhat lyke vnto thoſe which we caule woodwaules, or woodpeckes, beinge leſſe then owrs of Spayne. Theſe are altogither blacke, and go hoppynge and leapyng. Theyr beakes are alſo blacke and of the ſame faſſhyon as are the popingiays beakes. They haue longe tayles, and are ſumwhat bygger then ſtares.

Pintadelli There are other byrdes cauled *Pintadelli*, whiche are lyke vnto certeyne greene byrdes whiche the Italyans caule *Fringuelli*: and are of ſeuen coloures. Theſe byrdes for feare of the cattes, are euer woonte to make theyr neſtes ouer the bankes of ryuers or the ſea, where the braunches of trees ſo reache ouer the water that with a lyttle weyght they maye bowe downe to the water. Theyr neſtes are made ſo neare the toppes of the braunches that when the cattes coome theron, the braunches bende towarde the water, and the cattes turne backe ageyne for feare of faulynge. For althoughe no beaſte in the worlde bee more malicious then this, yet whereas the moſte parte of beaſtes are naturally inclyned to ſwymme, this catte hath no maner of apteneſſe thereunto, and is therefore ſoone drowned or ſtrangeled in the water, and by a pryuie ſenſe of nature feareth the daunger which he can not eſcape. Theſe byrdes make theyr neſtes in ſuche ſorte, that althowgh they bee weete and fylled with water, yet doo they ſo ſuddenly ryſe vp ageyne, that the younge byrdes are not thereby hurte or drowned.

There are alſo many nyghtyngales and other byrdes whiche ſynge maruelouſly with great melodie and dyfference in ſyngynge. Theſe byrdes are of maruelous dyuers coloures the one from the other. Sum are altogither yelowe. and ſum other of ſo excellente, delectable, and hyghe a coloure as it weare a rubye. Other are alſo of dyuers and variable coloures: ſum of fewe coloures, and other ſume all of one coloure: beinge all ſo

fayre and bewtifull, that in bryghtneſſe and ſhynynge they excell all that are ſeene in Spayne, or Italy or other prouinces of Europe. Many of theſe are taken with nettes, lyme twygges, and ſprynges of dyuers ſortes.

Great foules.

Dyuers other ſortes of greate foules lyke vnto Eagles, and ſuche other as lyue of pray, are founde in the firme lande of ſuche diuerſitie, that it is in maner impoſſible to deſcrybe them all particularly. And foraſmuche as I haue more largely intreated hereof in my generall hyſtorie of the Indies, I thynke it not requyſite to make any further mention of the ſame.

¶ *Of trees, fruites, and plantes.*

Cocus.

THere is bothe in the firme lande and the Ilandes a certeyne tree cauled *Cocus*, beinge a kynd of date trees and hauynge theyr leaues of the ſelf ſame greatneſſe as haue the date trees which beare dates, but dyffer much in their growynge. For the leaues of this *Cocus* grow owte of the trunkes of the tree as doo the fyngers owt of the hande, wreathynge them ſelues one within an other and ſo ſpreadynge abrode. Theſe trees are hygh: and are founde in great plentie in the coaſte of the ſea of *Sur*, in the prouince of *Cacique Chiman*. Theſe date trees brynge furth a frute after this ſorte. Beinge altogyther vnite as it groweth on the tree, it is of greater circumference then the heade of a man. And from the ſuperficiall parte to the myddeſt which is the frute, it is inuolued and couered with many webbes much lyke vnto thoſe hyrdes of towe whiche they vſe in *Andaluſia*. Of this towe or webbe, the Eaſt Indians make a certeyne kynde of clothe of three or foure ſortes, and cordes for the ſayles of ſhyppes. But in theſe Indies of yowr maieſtie, they paſſe not for theſe cordes or this clothe that may be made of the frute of *Cocus*, by reaſon of the great plentie that they haue of the bombage or cotton of the goſſampine trees. The frute which is in the myddeſt of the ſayde towe, is (as I haue ſayde) as bygge as a mans fyſte, and ſumtymes twyſe as bygge and more. It is in forme, lyke vnto a walnutte, or ſum other rounde thynge ſumwhat more longe then large, and very harde. The rynde or barke herof, is as thycke as the cyrcle of letters of a riale of plate. And within, there cleaueth faſte to the rynde of the nutte a carnoſitie or ſubſtaunce of coornel, of the thyckneſſe of halfe a fynger or of the leaſt fynger of the hande: And is verye whyte, lyke vnto a fayre Almonde, and of better taſte and more pleaſaunt. When this fruite is chewed, there remayne certeyne crummes as do the lyke of almondes. Yet if it bee ſwalowed downe, it is not vnpleaſaunt. For althowgh that after the iewſe or moyſture bee gonne downe the throte before the ſayde crummes bee ſwalowed, the reſte whiche is eaten ſeeme ſumwhat ſharpe or ſower, yet doth it not ſo greatly offende the taſte ſo as to bee caſte away. Whyle this *Cocus* is yet freſhe and newly taken from the tree, they vſe not to eate of the ſayde carnoſitie and frute: But fyrſte beatynge it very much, and then ſtraynynge it, they drawe a mylke thereof, much better and ſweeter then is the mylke of beaſtes, and of much ſubſtaunce: The which the Chriſtian men of theſe regions put in the tortes or cakes which they make of the grayne of *Maizium* wherof they make theyr breade, or in other breade as we put breade in porrage: So that by reaſon of the ſayde mylke of *Cocus*, the tortes are more excellent to be eaten withowt offence to the ſtomake. They are ſo pleaſaunte to the taſte, and leaue it aſwell ſatiſfyed as thowghe it had byn delyted with many delycate dyſſhes. But to proceade further, yowre maieſtie ſhall vnderſtand, that in the place of the ſtone or coornell, there is in the myddeſt of the ſayde carnoſitie, a voyde place, which neuertheleſſe is full of a moſte cleare and excellent water, in ſuch quantitie as maye fyll a greate egge ſhell, or more or leſſe accordynge to the byggeneſſe of the *Cocus*. The which water ſuerly, is the moſte ſubſtantial, excellent and precious to be droonke, that maye bee founde in the worlde. In ſo much that in the momente when it paſſeth the palate of the mouth and begynneth to goo downe the throte it ſeemeth that frome the ſole of the foote to the crowne of the headde, there is no parte of the boddye but that feelethe great comfort therby: as it is doutleſſe one of the moſt excellent thynges that may be taſted vppon the earth, and ſuche as I am not able by wrytynge or toonge to expreſſe. And to proceade yet further, I ſay that when the meate of this frute is taken from the veſſell therof, the veſſell remayneth as fayre and nette as though it were pullyſhed: and is without, of colour inclynynge towarde blacke, and ſhyneth or glyſtereth very fayre. And is within of no leſſe dilicateneſſe. Suche as haue accuſtomed to drynke in theſe veſſelles, and haue bynne trowbeled with the diſeaſe cauled the fretinge of the guttes, ſay that they haue by experience founde it a maruelous remedie ageynſt that diſeaſe: And that it breakethe the ſtone and prouoketh vrine. This frute was cauled *Cocus* for this cauſe, that when it is taken from the place where it cleaueth faſte to the tree, there are ſeene two holes, and aboue them two other naturall holes, which altogyther, doo repreſente the geſture and fygure of the cattes cauled *Mammone*, that is, munkeys, when they crye: whiche crye the Indians caule *Coca*: But in very deede, this tree is a kynd of date trees: and hath the ſame effecte to heale fretynge of the guttes, that Plinie deſcrybeth all kyndes of date trees to haue.

194

I haue seene one of these fruites opened, the whiche when it was hole, yf it were shaken the water was harde shogge therein as it were in a bottle; but in tyme it consumed and was partly congeled into a salte substaunce.

Great trees.

There are furthermore in the firme lande, trees of ſuche byggeneſſe that I dare not ſpeake therof but in place where I haue ſo many wytneſſes which haue ſeene the ſame as wel as I. I ſay therfore, that a leaque from *Dariena* or the citie of *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, there paſſeth a ryuer very large and diepe, which is cauled *Cuti*: ouer the which the Indians had layde a greate tree ſo trauerſinge the ſame that it was in the ſteade of a brydge, the which I my ſelfe with dyuers other that are at this preſent in yowre maieſties courte, haue often tymes paſſed ouer. And foraſmuch as the ſayde tree had lyne longe there, and by the great weight therof was ſo ſhronke downewarde and partely couered with water that none could paſſe ouer it but were weete to the knee, I being then in the yeare 1522. th[e]official of Iuſtice in that citie at yowre maieſties appoyntemente, cauſed an other greate tree to bee layde in that place whiche in lyke maner trauerſed the ryuer and reached more then fyftie foote ouer the further ſyde. This tree was exceadynge greate, and reſted aboue the water more then twoo cubytes. In the faule, it caſt downe all ſuche other trees as were within the reache therof: And diſcouered certeyne vynes whiche were ſo laden with blacke grapes of pleaſaunte taſte, that they ſatiſfyed more then fyftie perſons whiche eate theyr fylle therof. This tree in the thyckeſt parte therof, was more then ſyxtene ſpannes thicke: And was neuertheleſſe but lyttle in reſpect of many other trees which are founde in this prouince. For the Iſidians of the coaſte and prouince of *Cartagenia*, make barkes or boates therof (which they caule *Canoas*,) of ſuch byggeneſſe, beinge all of one hole tree, that ſume conteyne a hundreth men, ſume a hundreth and thirtie,
195 and ſume more, hauynge neuertheleſſe ſuche voyde ſpace within the ſame, that there is lefte ſufficiente roome to paſſe to and fro through owte all the *Canoa*. Sum of theſe are ſo large byſyde the length, that they conteyne more then tenne or twelue ſpannes in breadth, and ſayle with twoo ſayles as with the maſter ſayle and the trinkette which they make of verye good cotton. The greateſt trees that I haue ſeene in theſe partes or in anye other regions, was in the prouince of *Guaturo*, the kynge wherof rebellynge from th[e]obedience of yowre maieſtie, was perſued by me and taken pryſoner: At whiche tyme I with my company, paſſed ouer a very hygh
A maruelous tree. mountayne ful of great trees, in the toppe wherof we founde one tree whiche had three rootes or rather diuiſions of the roote aboue the earth in forme of a tryangle or triuette: ſo that betwene euery foote of this triangle or three feete, there was a ſpace of twentie foote betwene euery foote. And this of ſuch heyght aboue the earthe, that a laden carte of thoſe wherewith they are accuſtomed to brynge home corne in the tyme of harueſt in the kyngedome of *Toledo* in Spayne, myght eaſely haue paſſed throwgh euery of thoſe particions or wyndowes whiche were betwene the three feete of the ſayd tree. From the earth vpwarde to the trunke of the tree, the open places of the dyuiſions betwene theſe three feete, were of ſuche heyght from the grounde, that a footeman with a iauelyn was not able to reache to the place where the ſayde feete ioyned togyther in the trunke or body of the tree which grewe of great height in one piece and one hole body, or euer it ſpredde in braunches, which it did not before it exceaded in heyght the towre of ſaynt Romane in the citie of Toledo: from whiche heyght and vpwarde, it ſpreade very greate and ſtronge braunches. Amonge certeyne Spanyardes which clymed this tree, I my ſelfe was one. And when I was aſcended to the place where it begunne to ſpreade the branches, it was a maruelous thing to beholde a greate countrey of ſuche trees towarde the prouince of Abrayme. This tree was eaſy to clyme, by reaſon of certeyne *Beſuchi* (wherof I haue ſpoken before) which grewe wreathed aboute the tree in ſuche ſorte that they ſeemed to make a ſcalynge ladder. Euery of the foreſayde three feete which bore the boddie of the tree, was twentie ſpannes in thyckeneſſe. And where they ioyned al togyther aboue in the trunke or boddye of the tree, the principall trunke was more then fortie and fyue ſpannes in circuite. I named the mountayne where theſe trees grow, the mountayne of three footed trees. And this which I haue now declared, was ſeene of all the companye that was there with me when (as I haue ſayde before) I tooke kynge *Guaturo* pryſoner in the yeare 1522. Many thynges more myght here bee ſpoken as touchynge this matter, as alſo howe there are many other excellent trees founde of dyuers ſortes and dyfference, as ſweete Ceder trees, blacke date trees, and many other: of the which ſum are ſo heauy that they can not flote aboue the water but ſynke immediatly to the bottome. And other ageyne as light as a corke. As touchynge all whiche thynges I haue wrytten more largely in my generall hyſtorie of the Indies.

Kyndlynge of fyre withowt fyre.

And foraſmuch as at this preſent I haue entered to intreate of trees, before I paſſe any further to other thynges, I wyl declare the maner howe the Indians kyndle fyre, only with woodde, and without fyre, the maner wherof is this. They take a piece of woodde of two ſpannes in lengthe, as bygge as the leaſte fynger of a mans hande, or as an arrowe well pullyſſhed, and of a ſtronge kynde of woodde whiche they keepe onely for this purpoſe. And where they intende to kyndle any fyre, they take two other pieces of woodde of the dryeſt and lyghteſt that they can fynde, and bynde them faſt togyther one with an other as cloſe as two fyngers ioyned. In the myddeſt or betwene theſe, they put the poynt of the fyrſte lyttle ſtaffe made of harde and ſtronge wood which they hold in theyr handes by the toppe thereof, and turne or rubbe it rounde aboute continually in one place betwene the two pieces of woodde which lye bounde togyther vppon the earthe, which by that vnceſſant rubbynge and chafynge, are in ſhort ſpace kyndeled and take fyer.

I haue alſo thought good here to ſpeake ſumwhat of ſuch thynges as coomme to my rememberaunce of

certeyne trees which are founde in this lande, and ſumetyme alſo the lyke haue bynne ſeene in Spayne. Theſe are certeyne putrifyed troonkes which haue lyne ſo longe rottyng on the earth that they are verye whyte and ſhyne in the nyght lyke burnynge fyre brandes. And when the Spanyardes fynde any of this woodde, and intende priuily in the nyght to make warre and inuade any prouince when caſe ſo requyreth that it ſhalbe neceſſary to go in the nyght in ſuche places where they knowe not the way, the formoſt Chriſtian man whiche guydethe the waye, aſſociate with an Indian to directe hym therein, taketh a lyttle ſtarre of the ſayde woodde, which he putteth in his cappe hangynge behynde on his ſhoulders, by the lyght wherof he that foloweth nexte to him, directeth his iourney, who alſo in lyke maner beareth an other ſtarre behynde hym, by the ſhynynge whereof the thyrde foloweth the ſame waye, and in lyke maner do al the reſt, ſo that by this meanes none are loſte or ſtragle owte of the way. And foraſmuche as this lyght is not ſeene very farre, it is the better pollicie for the Chryſtians bycauſe they are not thereby diſcloſed before they inuade theyr enemies.

Putrified woodde shynyng in the nyght.

196

Furthermore as touchynge the natures of trees, one particular thynge ſeemeth woorthy to bee noted, wherof Plinie maketh mention in his natural hyſtorye where he ſaythe that there are certeyne trees which contynewe euer greene and neuer loſe theyr leaues, as the baye tree, the Ceder, the orange tree, and the olyue tree with ſuch other, of the whiche in all togyther he nameth not paſte fyue or ſyxe. To this purpoſe, I ſaye, that in the Ilandes of theſe Indies, and alſo in the firme lande, it is a thynge of muche difficultie to fynde twoo trees that loſe or caſt theyr leaues at any tyme. For althowgh I haue diligentely ſearched to knowe the trewthe hereof, yet haue I not ſeene any that loſe theyr leaues, eyther of theym which we haue browght owt of Spayne into theſe regions, as Orange trees, Limons, Ceders, Palmes, or date trees and Pomegranate trees, or of any other in theſe regions excepte onely *Caſſia*, which loſeth his leaues and hath a greater thynge appropriate to it ſelfe onely: which is, that whereas all other trees and plantes of India ſpreade theyr rootes no dieper in the earthe then the depth of a mans heyght or ſumewhat more, not deſcendyng any further into the ground by reaſon of the greate heate which is found beneth that depth, yet dooth *Caſſia* pearce further into the grounde vntyl it fynd water: whiche by the Phyloſophers opinion ſhoulde be the cauſe of a thynne and watery radycall moyſter to ſuche thynges as drawe theyr nuryſhement therof, as fat and vnctuous groundes with temperate heate, yelde a faſt and firme moyſture to ſuche thynges as growe in them, whiche is the cauſe that ſuche trees loſe not theyr leaues, as the ſayde thynne and wateryſſhe moyſture is cauſe of the contrarie, as appearethe by the ſayde effecte which is ſeene onely in *Caſſia*, and none other tree or plante in all theſe parties.

Plinie.

Trees which continue euer greene.

Caſſia.

A secreate thynge.

Radycall moysture.

¶ *Of Reedes or Canes.*

IHaue not thought it conuenient in the chapiture before to ſpeake of that whereof I intende nowe to entreate of, reedes or canes, to th[e]intente that I woolde not mengle theym with plantes or trees, beinge thynges of them ſelues woorthy to bee particularly obſerued. So it is therfore, that in the firme land there are many ſortes of reedes, ſo that in many places they make theyr howſes therof, couerynge them with the toppes of the ſame, and makynge their waules of them in lyke maner, as I haue ſayde before. And amonge theſe kyndes of reedes, there is one ſo greate, that the canes therof are as bygge as a mans legge in the knee, and three ſpannes in length frome ioynt to ioynt or more: in ſo much that euery of them is of capacitie to conteyne a lyttle bucket of water. In this kynde, there are founde ſum greater and ſum leſſe, of the which ſum they vſe to make quyuers for arrowes. There is founde an other kynde which ſuerly is marueylous, beynge lyttle bygger then a Iauelen, the canes whereof are longer then twoo ſpannes. Theſe reedes growe one farre from an other, as ſum tymes twentie or thirtie paſes, and ſumetymes alſo twoo or three leaques. They growe in maner in all prouynces in the Indies: And growe nere to very hygh trees wherunto they leane, and creepe vp to the toppes of theyr braunches, which they imbraſe and deſcende ageyne downe to the earth. Theyr canes are full of moſte cleare water without any maner of taſt or ſauoure eyther of the canes or of any other thynge: And ſuche as yf it were taken owte of the freſſheſte ſprynge in the worlde. Nor yet is it knowen that euer it hurte any that droonke therof. For it hath oftentymes ſo chaunced that as the Chryſten men haue trauayled in theſe regions in deſolate wayes where for lacke of water they haue byn in great daunger to dye for thyrſte, they haue eſcaped that perell by reaſon that they founde the ſayde reedes, of the water of whoſe canes they haue droonke a great quantitie withowt any hurte thereof enſewynge. Therefore when they fynde theſe in any place, they make water veſſelles of the canes therof, and cary as many of them ful of water as may ſuffice for one days iornay. And ſumtyme they cary ſo many, that they take for euery man two or three quartes of water which may ſerue them for many dayes bycauſe it doth not corrupte, but remaynethe ſtyll freſſhe and good.

197

Platani. There are alſo certeine plantes which the Chriſtians caul *Platani.* Theſe are as hygh as trees, and become as bygge in the trunke as the knee of a man or more. Frome the foote to the toppe, they beare certeyne longe and large leaues, beinge more then three ſpannes in largenes, and about ten or twelue in length: The whiche when they are broken of the wynde, the ſtalke remayneth hole in the myddeſt. In the myddeſte of this plant in the hygheſt parte thereof, there groweth a cluſter with fortie or fyftie Platans abowt it, euery of them beinge a ſpanne and a halfe in length, and as bygge as a mans arme in the ſmaule, or more or leſſe accordynge to the goodneſſe of the ſoyle where they growe. They haue a rynde not very thycke, and eaſy to bee broken: being within altogither full of a ſubſtaunce lyke vnto the marye of the bone of an oxe as it appeareth when the rynde or barke is taken frome the ſame. This cluſter owght to bee taken from the plant, when any one of the Platans begynne to appere yelowe. At which tyme they take it and hange it in theyr houſes where all the cluſter waxeth rype with his Platans. This cluſter is a very good frute: And when it is opened and the rynde taken of, there are founde within it many good drye fygges which beynge roſted or ſtewed in an ouen in a cloſe pot or ſum ſuche other thynge, are of pleaſaunte taſte muche lyke the conſerue of hony. They putrifie not on the ſea ſo ſoone as ſume other frutes do: but continue fyfteene dayes and more yf they bee gathered ſumwhat greene. They ſeeme more delycate on the ſea then on the lande, not for that they any thinge increaſe in goodneſſe on the ſea, but bycauſe that whereas on the ſea other thynges are lackyng wherof is plentie on the land, thoſe meates ſeeme of beſte taſte which ſatiſfie preſente neceſſitie. This troonke or ſprygge whiche bryngeth foorth the ſayde cluſter is a hole yeare in growyng and brynging foorth frute. In whiche tyme it hath put foorth rounde abowte it tenne or twelue ſprygges as bygge as the fyrſt or principall, and multiplieth no leſſe then the pryncipall in bryngynge foorthe of cluſters with frutes lykewyſe at theyr tyme, and alſo in bryngynge foorth other and many ſprygges as is ſayde beefore. From the which ſprygges or trunkes, as ſoone as the cluſter of the frute is taken away, the plante begynneth to drye and wyther, which then they take owt of the grounde bycauſe it doth none other then occupie it in vayne and without profyt. They are ſo many and doo ſo maruelouſly increaſe and multiplie, that it is a thynge in maner incredible. They are exceadynge moyſte. In ſo much that when they are plucked vp from the place wher they grow, there iſſheweth forth a great quantitie of water as well owte of the plante as owte of the place where it grewe: In ſuch ſorte that all the moyſture of the earth farre abowte, myght ſeeme to bee gathered togyther abowte the trunke or blocke of the ſayde plante: with the frutes whereof, the antes are ſo farre in loue, that they are ſeene in great multitudes in the branches of the plantes. So that for the multitude thereof it ſumetyme ſo chaunceth that men are inforced to take away the Platans frome theyr poſſeſſion. Theſe frutes are founde at all tymes of the yeare.

Figges.

Tunas. There is alſo an other kynd of wyld plantes that groweth in the fyeldes: which I haue not ſeene but in the Ilande of Hiſpaniola, althowgh they be founde in other Ilandes of the Indies. Theſe they caule *Tunas.* They growe of a thiſtle full of thornes, and brynge foorth a frute muche lyke vnto great fygges, which haue a crowne lyke medlers, and are within of a hyghe coloure, with graynes and the rynde lyke vnto a fygge. They are of good taſte: And growe abundantly in the fyeldes in many places. They woorke a ſtraunge effecte in ſuche as eate them. For if a manne eate two or three or more, they cauſe his vrine to bee of the verye coloure of bludde, which thynge chaunced once to my ſelfe. At whiche tyme as I made water and ſawe the colour of my vrine, I entered into a great ſuſpition of my lyfe, beinge ſo aſtonyſſhed for feare, that I thought the ſame had chaunced to me vpon ſum other cauſe. In ſo muche that ſurely my imagination myght haue doone me hurte, but that they whiche were with me dyd comforte me immediatly, declarynge the cauſe therof as they knewe by experience beinge auncient inhabitours in thoſe regions.

198

Bihaos. There groweth alſo an other plante whiche the people of the countrey caule *Bihaos.* This putteth forth certeyne ſtreight braunches and very brode leaues which the Indians vſe for dyuers purpoſes. For in ſum places they couer theyr houſes with the leaues therof cowched and layde after the maner of thetche, wherunto it ſerueth very well. Sumtymes alſo when it rayneth, they caſt theſe ouer theyr heades to defende theim from the water. They make alſo certeyne cheſtes whiche they caule *Hauas,* weaued after a ſtraunge ſorte and intermixt with the leaues of this *Bihaos.* Theſe cheſtes are wrought in ſuch ſort, that although it rayne vpon them, or they chaunce to faule into the water, yet are not ſuch thynges wette as are within them. They are made of the braunches of the ſayde *Bihaos* with the leaues weaued togyther therwith. In thefe they keepe ſalte and other ſubtyle thynges. They vſe theym alſo for an other purpoſe, which is this: That findyng them in the fieldes at ſuch tyme as they haue ſcarſeneſſe of vyttayles, they dygge vp the rootes of theſe plantes whyle they are yet younge, or eate the plante it ſelfe in that parte where it is moſte tender, which is from a foote vnder the grounde, where it is as tender and whyte as a reede or bulruſſhe.

Hauas.

Dying of cotton. And foraſmuch as wee are nowe coomme to th[e]end of this narration, it commeth to my rememberaunce to make mention of an other thynge which is not farre from my purpoſe. And this is howe the Indians do ſtayne or dye cloth of bombage cotton, or any other thynge which they intende to dye of dyuers colours: as blacke, tawny, greene, blewe, yelowe, and redde, whiche they doo with the barkes or ryndes, and leaues of certeyne trees,

whiche they knowe by experience to bee good for this practiſe. And by this arte they make colours in ſuch perfection and excellencie that no better can bee diuyſed. But this ſeemeth a ſtraunge thynge, that they doo all this in one ſelfe ſame veſſell: So that when they haue cauſed the ſayde ryndes and leaues to boyle togyther, they make in the ſame veſſell without any chaunge (as I haue ſayde) as many colours as them lyſteth. Whiche thynge I ſuppoſe to coomme to paſſe by the diſpoſition of the coloure whiche they haue fyrſte gyuen to the thynge that they intende to drye or colour, whether it bee threede, webbe, or clothe, or any thynge that they intende to coloure.

A straunge thynge.

¶ *Of venemous apples wherwith they poyſon theyr arrowes.*

THe apples wherewith the Indian Canibales inuenyme theyr arrowes, growe on certeyne trees couered with many braunches and leaues beinge very greene and growyng thicke. They are laden with abundaunce of theſe euyll frutes, and haue theyr leaues lyke the leaues of a peare tree, but that they are leſſe and rounder. The frute is much lyke the muſcadell peares of the Ilande of Sicilie or Naples in forme and byggeneſſe: And are in ſum partes ſteyned with redde ſpottes, and of very ſweete ſauoure. Theſe trees for the moſte parte, growe euer by the ſea coaſtes and neare vnto the water: And are ſo fayre and of pleaſaunte ſauour, that there is no man that ſeethe theym but wyll deſyre to eate therof.

In ſo much that if it may bee ſpoken of any frute yet growynge on the earth, I wolde ſaye that this was the vnhappy frute wherof owre fyrſte parentes Adam and Eue taſted, wherby they both loſt theyr felicitie and procured death to them and theyr poſteritie. Of theſe frutes, and of the greate antes whoſe bytynge cauſeth ſwellynge (whereof I haue ſpoken els where) and of the eutes or lyſartes, and vypers, and ſuch other venemous thynges, the Canibales which are the chyefe archers amonge the Indians, are accuſtomed to poyſon theyr arrowes wherwith they kyll all that they wounde.

Note.

Canibales archiers.

Theſe venemes they mengle togyther and make thereof a blacke maſſe or compoſition which appeareth lyke vnto very blacke pytche. Of this poyſon I cauſed a great quantitie to be burnt in *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in a place two leaques and more within the lande, with a greate multitude of theyr inuenemed arrowes and other munition, with alſo the houſe wherein they were reſerued. This was in the yeare. 1514. at ſuche tyme as th[e]army arriued there with capitayne *Pedrarias da villa* at the commaundemente of the Catholyke kynge *Don Ferdinando*. But to returne to the hyſtory. Theſe apples (as I haue ſaid) growe neare vnto the ſea. And wheras the Chriſtians which ſerue yowr maieſtie in theſe parties, ſuppoſe that there is no remedy ſo profytable for ſuche as are wounded with theſe arrowes, as is the water of the ſea if the wounde be much waſſhed therwith, by which means ſum haue eſcaped although but fewe, yet to ſaye the trewthe, albeit the water of the ſea haue a certeyne cauſtike qualitie ageynſt poyſon, it is not a ſufficient remedy in this caſe: nor yet to this day haue the Chriſtians perceaued that of fiftie that haue byn wounded, three haue recouered. But that yowr maieſtie may the better conſyder the force of the veneme of theſe trees, yowe ſhall further vnderſtande that yf a man doo but repoſe hym ſelfe to ſleepe a lyttle whyle vnder the ſhadow of the ſame, he hath his head and eyes ſo ſwolne when he ryſeth, that the eye lyddes are ioyned with the chekes. And if it chaunce one droppe or more of the dewe of the ſayde tree to faule into the eye, it vtterly deſtroyeth the ſyght. The peſtilent nature of this tree is ſuch that it can not bee declared in fewe woordes. Of theſe there groweth greate plentie in the goulfe of *Vraba* towarde the North coaſt on the Weſte and Eaſte ſyde. The wood of theſe trees when it burneth, maketh ſo greate a ſtynke that noo man is able to abyde it, by reaſon it cauſeth ſo great a peyne in the headde.

Wherwith they inuenym the[i]r arrowes

199 *Petrus Arias.*

The water of the sea.

The goulf of Vraba.

Amonge other trees which are in theſe Indies as well in the Ilandes as in the firme lande, there is an other kynde which they caule *Xagua*, wherof there is great plentie. They are very hygh and ſtreyght, and fayre to beholde. Of theſe they vſe to make pykes and iauelyns of dyuers lengthes and byggeneſſe. They are of a fayre colour betwene ruſſette and whyte. This tree bryngeth foorth a greate frute as bygge as Papauer or poppie and much lyke therunto. It is very good to be eaten when it is rype. Owte of this they gette a very cleare water wherwith they waſſhe theyr legges and ſumetymes all theyr boddyes when they feele theyr fleſſhe werye, faynt, or looſe. The which water, byſyde that it hath a byndynge qualitie, it hath alſo this propertie, that what ſo euer it toucheth, it ſteyneth it blacke by lyttle and lyttle vntyll it bee as blacke as giette, which coloure can not be taken away in leſſe ſpace then tenne or twelue dayes. And if the nayle bee but touched therwith, it is ſo ſteined that it can by no meanes bee taken away vntyll it eyther faule of, or growe owte and bee clypped away by lyttle and lyttle, as I my ſelfe haue oftentymes ſeene by experience.

Xagua.

There is another kynde of trees which they call *Hobi*. Theſe are very great and fayre, and cauſe holſome ayer where they growe and a pleaſaunt ſhadow, and are founde in great abundaunce. Theyr frute is very good,

Hobi.
Sum thynke these to be mirobalanes.

and of good taſt and ſauoure, and much lyke vnto certeyne damſons or prunes beinge lyttle and yelowe. But theyr ſtone is very great: by reaſon wherof they haue but lyttle meate. Theyr barke or rynde boyled in water, maketh a holſome bathe for the legges, bycauſe it bindeth and ſteyeth the looſeneſſe of the fleſſhe ſo ſencibly that it is a marueyle to conſyder. It is ſuerly a holſome and excellent bathe ageynſt ſuch fayntneſſe: And is the beſte tree that may bee founde in thoſe parties to ſleepe vnder. For it cauſeth no heauineſſe of the headde as doo dyuers other trees. Whiche thynge I ſpeake bycauſe the Chriſtians are muche accuſtomed in thoſe regions to lye in the fyeldes. It is therfore a common practiſe amonge them, that where ſo euer they fynd theſe trees, there they ſpreade theyr mattreſſes and beddes wherin they ſleepe.

Date trees.

There are alſo a kynde of hyghe date trees and full of thornes. The woodde of theſe is moſte excellent: beinge very blacke, and ſhynynge, and ſo heauy that no parte thereof can ſwymme aboue the water, but ſynketh immediatly to the bottome. Of this woodde they make theyr arrowes and dartes: Alſo iauelyns, ſpeares, and pykes. And I ſaye pykes, bycauſe that in the coaſtes of the ſea of *Sur*, beyonde *Eſquegua* and *Vracha*, the Indians vſe great and longe pykes made of the woodde of theſe date trees. Of the ſame lykewyſe they make clubbes and ſwoordes and dyuers other weapons. Alſo veſſelles and houſholde ſtuffe of dyuers ſortes very fayre and commodious. Furthermore of this woodde the Chriſtians vſe to make dyuers muſicall inſtrumentes, as clariſimbals, lutes, gyterns, and ſuche other, the whiche byſyde theyr fayre ſhynynge coloure lyke vnto giete, are alſo of a good ſounde and very durable by reaſon of the hardneſſe of the woodde.

Th[e]inhabitantes of the sea of Sur.

200

After that I haue ſayde thus much of trees and plantes, I haue thought good alſo to ſpeake ſumwhat of herbes. You ſhall therefore vnderſtande that in theſe Indies there is an herbe much lyke vnto a yelowe lyllie, abowte whoſe leaues there growe and creepe certeyne cordes or laces, as the lyke is partly ſeene in the herbe which we caule laſed ſauery. But theſe of the Indies are muche bygger, and longer: and ſo ſtronge that they tye theyr hangynge beddes thereby whiche they caule *Hamacas* wherof we haue ſpoken elſwhere. Theſe cordes, they caule *Cabuia* and *Henequen*, which are al one thing ſauynge that *Henequen* is leſſe and of a fyner ſubſtaunce as it were line: And the other is groſſer lyke the wycke or twyſte of hempe, and is imperfecte in compariſon to the other. They are of coloure betwene whyte and yelowe lyke vnto abarne, and ſum alſo whyte. With *Henequen* whiche is the moſte ſubtyle and fyne threede, the Indians ſawe in ſunder fetters, cheynes, or barres of Iren in this maner. They moue the threede of *Henequen* vppon the iren which they intende to ſaw or cutte, drawynge the one hande after the other as doo they that ſawe, puttynge euer nowe and then a portion of fyne ſande vppon the threede, or on the place or parte of the Iren where they continue rubbynge the ſayde threede. So that yf the threede be worne, they take an other, and continewe in theyr woorke as before vntyl they haue cutte in ſunder the iren although it bee neuer ſo bygge: and cut it as yf it were a tender thynge and eaſye to bee ſawne.

An herb that bearethe cordes.

Cabuia and *Henequen*.

A straung[e] thinge.

Leaues.

And for aſmuch as the leaues of trees may bee counted amonge herbes, I wyll here ſpeake ſumewhat of the qualitie of the leaues of certeyne trees which are founde in the Iland of *Hiſpaniola*. Theſe trees are ſo full of thornes, that there is no tree or plante that ſeemeth more wylde and deformed: ſo that I can not well determyne whether they bee trees or plantes. They haue certeyne braunches full of large and deformed leaues, which braunches were fyrſte leaues lyke vnto the other. As the braunches made of theſe leaues growe foorthe in length, there commeth other leaues of them. So that in fine it is a dyfficult thyng to deſcrybe the forme of theſe trees except the ſame ſhulde bee doone by a paynter wherby the eye myght conceaue that wherein the toonge fayleth in this behalfe. The leaues of this tree are of ſuch vertue, that beyng well beaten and ſpreadde vppon a cloth after the maner of a playſter, and ſo layde to a legge or arme that is broken in many pieces, it healeth it in fyftene dayes, and maketh it as hole as though it had neuer byn broken. Durynge the tyme of this operation, it cleaueth ſo faſt to the fleſſhe that it can not without much difficultie bee taken away. But as ſoone as it hath healed the ſore and wrought his operation, it looſeth it ſelfe from the place where it was layde, as I my ſelfe and dyuers other which haue proued it, knowe by experience.

A leafe of great vertue.

¶ *Of fyſſhes and of the maner of fyſſhynge.*

IN the ſea coaſtes of the firme lande, there are dyuers and ſundry kyndes of fyſſhes muche differynge in ſhape and forme. And althoughe it be impoſſible to ſpeake of all, yet wyll I make mention of ſum. And fyrſt to begynne at ſardynes, yowe ſhall vnderſtande that there is founde a kynde of theſe fyſſhes very large and with redde tayles, beinge a very delicate fyſſhe. The beſte kyndes of other fyſſhes are theſe: *Moxarre*, *Diahaa*, Brettes, *Dahaos*, Thornbackes, and Salmons. All theſe and dyuers other which I do not now remember, are taken in great quantitie in ryuers. There are lykewyſe taken very good creuyſſhes. There

are alſo founde in the ſea, certeyne other fyſſhes: as ſoles, mackerelles, turbuttes, *Palamite*, *Lizze*, *Polpi*, *Chieppe*, *Xaibas*, Locuſtes, Oyſters, exceadynge great Tortoyſes, and Tiburoni of maruelous byggeneſſe: Alſo Manates, and Murene, and manye other fyſſhes which haue no names in oure language. And theſe of ſuch diuerſitie and quantitie as can not bee expreſſed without large wrytynge and longe tyme. But to let paſſe to intreate particulerly of the multitude of fyſſhes, I intende to ſpeake chiefely and ſumwhat largely of three ſortes of moſte notable fyſſhes: wherof the fyrſt is, the great Tortoyſes, the ſeconde is cauled Tiburon, and the thyrde Manate. And to begynne at the fyrſte, I ſaye that in the Ilande of *Cuba*, are founde great Tortoyſes (which are certeyne ſhell fyſſhes) of ſuch byggeneſſe that tenne or fyfteene men are ſcarſely able to lyfte one of them owt of the water, as I haue byn informed of credible perſons dwellynge in the ſame Ilande. But of that which I my ſelfe haue ſeene, I can teſtifie that in the firme lande in the vyllage of Acla there are of this ſorte ſum taken and kylled of ſuche byggenes that ſixe men with much difficultie coulde ſcarſely drawe them owt of the water. And commonly the leaſt ſort of them are as much as two men may cary at a burden. That which I ſawe lifted vp by ſyxe men, had her ſhell a yarde and a quarter in length, and in breadth more then fyue yardes. The maner of takynge them, is this. It ſumtymes chaunceth that in theyr greate nettes (whiche they caule ſhoote nettes) there are founde certeyne Tortoyſes of the common ſorte in great quantities. And when they coome owt of the ſea and bringe foorth theyr egges and go togyther by coompanies from the ſea to feade on the lande, ſne Chriſtians or Indians folowe theyr ſteppes whiche they fynde in the ſande, and ſoone ouertake them bycauſe they are very heauy and ſlowe in goynge, although they make all the haſte they can to returne to the ſea as ſoone as they eſpie any boddie. When they that purſewe them haue ouertaken them, they put a ſtake or ſtaffe vnder theyr legges and ouerturne them on theyr backes as they are yét runnynge, ſo that they can go no further nor yet ryſe ageyne or turne. And thus they ſuffer them to lye ſtyll whyle they folowe after the reſte which they ouerturne in lyke maner: And by this meanes take very manye at ſuche tymes as they coome furth of the ſea as I haue ſayde. This fyſſhe is very excellent and holſome to be eaten, and of good taſte. The ſeconde of the three fyſſhes wherof I haue ſpoken, is the Tiburon. This is a very greate fyſſhe and very quicke and ſwifte in the water, and a cruell deuourer. Theſe are often tymes taken, aſwell when the ſhippes are vnder ſayle in the Ocean, as alſo when they lye at anker, or at any other time, and eſpecially the leaſte kynd of theſe fiſſhes. When the ſhippes are vnder ſayle, the biggeſt ſorte are taken after this maner. When the Tiburon ſeeth the ſhippe ſailinge he foloweth it ſwymmynge behynde. The which thinge the mariners ſeeinge, caſte furthe all the fylthe of the ſhippe into the ſea for the fyſſhe to eate, who neuertheleſſe foloweth them with equal paſe although they make neuer ſuch haſte wyth full wynd and ſailes, and waloweth on euery ſyde and about the ſhyppe: And thus foloweth it ſumetyme for the ſpace of a hundreth and fyftie leaques and more. And when the mariners are diſpoſed to take them, they caſt downe by the ſterne of the ſhippe, a hoke of yren as bigge as the biggeſt finger of a mans hande of three ſpannes in lengthe and crooked like a fyſſhehooke with beardes accordinge to the bigneſſe thereof, and faſtened to an iren chayne of fyue or ſyxe linkes neare vnto th[e]ende, and from thenſe tyed with a greate rope, faſtening alſo on the hooke for a bayte, a piece of ſum fiſſhe, or hogges fleſſh, or ſum other fleſſhe, or the bouwelles and intralles of an other Tiburon whiche they haue taken before, whiche may eaſely bee doone, for I haue ſeene nyne taken in one day. And if they wolde haue taken more, they myght alſo. Thus when the Tiburon hath pleaſauntly folowed the ſhip a longe viage, at the lengthe he ſwaloweth the baite with the hooke. And aſwell by his ſtryuinge to flye or eſcape, as alſo by the ſwifte paſſage of the ſhyppe, the hooke ouerthwarteth and catcheth hold of his chappes. The which fiſſhe when it is taken, it is of ſuche huge biggeneſſe that twelue or fyfeteene men are ſcarcely able to drawe it owt of the water and lifte it into the ſhyppe: Where one of the mariners gyueth it many knockes on the headde with a clubbe or beetle vntil he haue ſlaine it. They are ſumtymes founde of tenne or twelue foote long, and of fyue, ſyxe, or ſeuen ſpannes in breadth where they are brodeſt. They haue very greate and wyde mouthes to the proportion of the reſte of theyr boddies, and haue two rowes of teethe the one ſumewhat ſeparate from the other, of cruell ſhape and ſtanding very thicke. When they haue ſlayne this fyſſhe, they cutte the boddy therof in ſmaule pieſes, and put it to drye, hangynge it three or four dayes at the cordes of the ſayle clothes to drye in the wynde, and then eate it. It is doubtleſſe a good fyſſhe and of great commoditie to ſerue the ſhippes for vitalles for many dayes. The leaſte of theſe fyſſhes are moſte holſome and tender. It hath a ſkinne much like to the ſkynne of a ſole, whervnto the ſayde Tuberon is lyke in ſhape. Which I ſaye bycauſe Plinie hath made mention of none of theſe three fiſſhes among the number of them whereof he wryteth in his natural hyſtorie. Theſe Tiburons coomme furth of the ſea and enter into the ryuers, where they are no leſſe perelous then greate liſartes or Crocodiles wherof I haue ſpoken largely before. For they deuoure men, kine, and horſes, euen as doo the Crocodiles. They are very daungerous in certeyne waſſhynge places or pooles by the ryuers ſydes, and where they haue deuoured at other tymes. Dyuers other fyſſhes both greate and ſmaule, of ſundry ſortes and kyndes are accuſtomed to folowe the ſhyppes goynge vnder ſayle, of the which I wyl ſpeake ſumwhat when I haue wrytten of Manate which is the thyrde of the three whereof I haue promyſed to entreate. Manate therefore, is a fyſſhe of the ſea, of the byggeſt ſorte,

Tiburons. Manates

Great Tortoyses.

201

Tiburons.

Plinie.

Crocodyles.

202

Manates.

and muche greater then the Tiburon in length and breadth: And is very brutyſſhe and vyle, ſo that it appeareth in forme lyke vnto one of thoſe great veſſelles made of goates ſkynnes wherin they vſe to cary newe wyne in *Medina de Campo* or in *Areualo*. The headde of this beaſt is lyke the head of an oxe, with alſo lyke eyes. And hath in the place of armes, two great ſtumpes wherwith he ſwymmeth. It is a very gentle and tame beaſte: And commeth oftentymes owt of the water to the next ſhore: where if he find [a]ny herbes or graſſe, he feedeth theſof. Owre men are accuſtomed to kyl many of theſe and dyuers other good fyſſhes with theyr croſſebowes, purſuinge them in barkes or Canoas, bycauſe they ſwymme in maner aboue the water. The whiche thynge when they ſee, they drawe them with a hooke tyde at a ſmaule corde, but ſumwhat ſtronge. As the fyſſhe flyeth away, the archer letteth go and prolongeth the corde by lyttle and lyttle vntyll he haue lette it go many fathams. At the ende of the corde, there is tyde a corke or a piece of lyght woodde. And when the fyſſhe is goone a lyttle way, and hathe coloured the water with his bludde, and feeleth hym ſelfe to faynt and drawe towarde th[e]ende of his lyfe, he reſortethe to the ſhore, and the archer foloweth gatherynge vp his corde: wherof whyle there yet remaine ſixe or eyght fathams or ſum what more or leſſe, he draweth it towarde the lande, and draweth the fyſſhe therwith by little and lyttle as the waues of the ſea helpe hym to doo it the more eaſely. Then with the helpe of the reſte of his companie he lyftethe this greate beaſt owt of the water to the lande, beinge of ſuch bygneſſe that to conuey it from thenſe to the citie, it ſhalbe requiſite to haue a carte with a good yoke of oxen, and ſumtymes more, accordyng as theſe fyſſhes are of byggeneſſe, ſum being much greater then other ſum in the ſame kynde as is ſeene of other beaſtes. Sumtymes they lyft theſe fyſſhes into the Canoa or barke, withowt drawynge them to the lande as before. For as ſoone as they are ſlayne, they flote aboue the water. And I beleue verely that this fyſſhe is one of the beſt in the world to the taſte, and the lykeſt vnto fleſſhe. Eſpecially ſo lyke vnto biefe, that who ſo hath not ſeene it hole, can iudge it to bee none other when he ſeethe it in pieces then verye biefe or veale. And is certeynly ſo lyke vnto fleſhe, that all the men in the worlde may herin bee deceaued. The taſte lykewyſe, is lyke vnto the taſt of very good veale, and laſteth longe yf it bee poudered. So that in fine, the baſe of theſe parties, is by no meanes lyke vnto this.

The fysshe Manate.

A remedy ageynst the stone.

This Manate, hath a certeine ſtone or rather bone in his headde within the brayne, which is of qualitie greatly appropriate ageynſte the diſeaſe of the ſtone, if it bee burnte and grounde into ſmaule pouder, and taken faſtynge in the mornynge when the payne is felte, in ſuch quantitie as maye lye vppon a penye with a drawght of good whyte wyne. For beynge thus taken three or foure mornynges, it acquieteth the grefe as dyuers haue toulde me whiche haue proued it trewe. And I my ſelfe by teſtimonie of ſight, doo wytneſſe that I haue ſeene this ſtone fought of dyuers for this effecte.

The swoorde fysshe.

There are alſo dyuers other fyſſhes as bygge as this Manate: Emonge the which there is one cauled *Vihuella*. This fyſhe beareth in the toppe of his headde, a ſwoorde beinge on euery ſyde full of many ſharpe teeth. This ſwoorde is naturally very harde and ſtronge, of foure or fyue ſpannes in length and of proportion accordynge to the ſame byggenes. And for this cauſe is this fyſhe cauled *Spada*: that is the ſwoord fyſhe. Of this kynde ſum are found as lyttle as ſardines: and other ſo greate, that two yokes of oxen are ſcarſely able to drawe them on a carte.

Tunnye.

But whereas before, I haue promyſed to ſpeake of other fyſſhes which are taken in theſe ſeas whyle the ſhyppes are vnder ſayle, I wyl not forget to ſpeake of the Tunnye which is a great and good fyſſhe, and is oftentymes taken and kylde with troute ſpeares and hookes caſte in the water when they play and ſwymme aboute the ſhyppes.

Turbut.

In lyke maner alſo are taken many turbuts which are very good fyſſhes as are lyghtly in all the ſea.

203

Note.

And here is to bee noted, that in the greate Ocean ſea, there is a ſtraunge thynge to bee conſidered, whiche all that haue byn in the Indies affirme to bee trewe. And this is, that lyke as on the lande there are ſum prouinces fertile and frutfull, and ſum barren, euen ſo dooth the lyke chaunce in the ſea: So that at ſum wyndes the ſhyppes ſayle fiftie or a hundreth, or two hundreth leaques and more, withowt takyng or ſeinge of one fyſſhe. And ageyne in the ſelfe ſame Ocean, in ſum places, all the water is ſeene tremble by the mouynge of the fyſſhes, where they are taken abundauntly.

Flyinge fysshes.

It commeth further to my rememberaunce to ſpeak ſumwhat of the flyinge of fyſſhes, which is doubtleſſe a ſtraunge thynge to beholde, and is after this maner. When the ſhyppes ſayle by the greate Ocean folowynge theyr vyage, there ryſeth ſumtymes on the one ſyde or on the other, many coompanies of certeyne lyttle fyſſhes, of the which the byggeſt is no greater then a ſardyne: and ſoo diminiſſhe leſſe and leſſe from that quantitie that ſum of them are very lyttle. Theſe are cauled *Volatori*: that is, flyinge fyſſhes. They ryſe by great coompanies and flockes in ſuch multitudes that it is an aſtonyſihement to beholue them. Sumtymes they ryſe but lyttle from the water: and (as it chaunceth) continew one flyght for the ſpace of a hundreth paſes and ſumtymes more or leſſe before they faule ageyne into the ſea. Sumtymes alſo they faule into the ſhyppes. And I remember that on an euenyng when all the company in the ſhippe were on theyr knees ſyngynge *Salue regina* in the higheſt parte of the Caſtel of the poope, and ſayled with a full wynde, there paſſed by vs a flocke of theſe flyinge fyſſhes: and came ſo neare vs that many of them fell into the ſhyppe, amonge the which, two or three fell hard

by me which I tooke alyue in my hande: ſo that I myght well perceaue that they were as bigge as ſardynes and of the ſame quantitie, hauynge two wynges or quylles growyng owt of theyr ſynnes, lyke vnto thoſe wherwith all the fyſſhes ſwymme in ryuers. Theſe wynges are as longe as the fyſſhes theym ſelues. As longe as theyr wynges are moyſte, they beare them vp in the ayer. But as ſoone as they are drye, they can continewe theyr flyght no further then as I haue ſayde before, but faule immediatly into the ſea, and ſo ryſe ageyne, and flye as before from place to place.

In the yeare. A thouſand fyue hundreth fiftene. when I came fyrſt to informe your maieſtye of the ſtate of the thynges in Indya, and was the yeare folowynge in Flanders in the tyme of youre moſte fortunate ſucceſſe in theſe youre kyngedomes of Aragonie and Caſtyle, wheras at that vyage I ſayled aboue the Iland *Bermuda* otherwyſe cauled *Garza*, beynge the furtheſte of all the Ilandes that are founde at thys daye in the worlde, and arryuynge there at the deapthe of eight yeardes of water, and dyſtant from the land as farre as the ſhotte of a piece of ordynaunce, I determined to ſende ſume of the ſhyppe to lande as well to make ſearche of ſuche thynges as were there, as alſo to leaue in the Ilande certayne hogges for increaſe. But the tyme not ſeruyng my purpoſe by reaſon of contrarye wynde, I could bryng my ſhyppes no nearer the Ilande beinge twelue leaques in lengthe and ſyxe in breadth and about thyrty in circuite, lying in the thyrtie and thre degrē of the northe ſyde. Whyle I remayned here, I ſawe a ſtryfe and combatte betwene theſe flyinge fyſhes and the fyſhes named gylte heades, and the foules cauled ſeamewes and cormorauntes, whych ſuerlye ſeemed vnto me a thynge of as greate pleaſure and ſolace as coulde bee deuyſed, whyle the gylte heades ſwamme on the brymme of the water and ſumtymes lyfted theyr ſhulders aboue the ſame to rayſe the ſwymmynge fyſſhes owt of the water to dryue them to flyght, and folowe them ſwymming to the place where they faule to take and eate them ſodaynlye. Agayne on the other ſyde, the ſeamewes and cormorantes, take manye of theſe flying fyſſhes: ſo that by thys meanes theye are nother ſafe in the ayre nor in the water. In the ſelfe ſame perrell and daunger doo men lyue in thys mortall lyfe wherin is no certayne ſecurytye nether in hygh eſtate nor in lowe. Which thynge ſuerlye ought to put vs in rememberaunce of that bleſſed and ſafe reſtynge place whych god hath prepared for ſuch as loue hym, who ſhall acquyete and fynyſhe the trauayles of thys troubelous worlde wherin are ſo manye daungyours, and brynge them to that eternall lyfe where they ſhall fynde eternall ſecurytye and reſte. But to returne to the hyſtorye: theſe byrdes and foules whych I ſawe, were of the Ilande of *Bermuda* nere vnto the whych I ſawe theſe flyinge fyſſhes. For they coulde bee of no other lande, foraſmuche as they are not accuſtomed to wander farre frome the coaſtes where they are bredde.

The Iland of Bermuda.

Not to hie for the pye, nor to lowe for the crowe.

204

¶ *Of th[e]increaſe and decreaſe, (that is) ryſynge and faullynge of our Ocean ſea and Southe ſea caulled the ſea of* Sur.

I Wyll nowe ſpeake of certeayne thynges whiche are ſeene in the Prouynce, or at the leaſte in the citie of golden Caſtyle otherwyſe cauled *Beragua*, and in the coaſtes of the North ſea and of the South ſea caulled the ſea of *Sur*. Not omittyng to note one ſynguler and merueloūs thynge which I haue conſydered of the Ocean ſea, wherof hytherto no coſmographer, pylote or maryner or any other haue ſatiſfyed me.

Beragua.

I ſay therfore as it is well knowen to your maieſtye and all ſuch as haue knowlege of the Ocean ſea, that this greate Ocean caſteth from it ſelfe the ſea *Mediterraneum* by the mouthe of the ſtrayght of *Gibilterra*: in the which the water from th[e]end and furtheſte parte of that ſea, euen vnto the mouth of the ſayde ſtraight, eyther in the Eaſt towarde the coaſte commonlye cauled Leuante, or in any other parte of the ſayde ſea *Mediterraneum*, the ſea doothe not ſo faule nor increaſe as reaſon wolde iudge for ſo greate a ſea. But increſethe verye lyttle and a ſmaule ſpace. Neuertheleſſe, withoute the mouthe of the ſtraight in the mayne Ocean, it increaſeth and fauleth verye muche and a great ſpace of grounde from ſyxe houres to ſyxe houres, as in all the coaſtes of Spayne, Britannye, Flanders, Germanye, and England. The ſelfe ſame Ocean ſea in the fyrme lande newly founde, in the coaſtes of the ſame lyynge towarde the Northe, dothe neyther ryſe nor faule, nor lykewiſe in the Ilandes of *Hiſpaniola* and *Cuba* and all the other Ilandes of the ſame ſea lyinge towarde the northe, for the ſpace of thre thouſande leaques, but onelye in lyke maner as doothe the ſea *Mediterraneum* in Italye: whiche is in maner nothynge in reſpecte to that increaſe and decreaſe whiche the ſayde Ocean hath in the coaſtes of Spayne and Flaunders. But this is yet a greater thynge, that alſo the ſelfe ſame Ocean in the coaſtes of the ſayde fyrme lande lyinge towarde the Southe in the citie of *Panama*, and alſo in the coaſte of that lande whiche lyethe towarde the Eaſte and Weſte frome that citie, as in the Ilande of pearles or *Margaritea* whiche the Indians caule *Tarrarequi*, and alſo in *Taboga* and *Otoque*, and

The west Ocean

The sea Mediteraneum.

Hispaniola.
Cuba.

in all other Ilandes of the ſouthe ſea of *Sur*, the water ryſeth and fauleth ſo much, that when it fauleth it go[e]th in maner owt of ſyghte, which thynge I my ſelfe haue ſeene oftentymes.

The South sea.

And here youre maieſtie may note an other thynge, that from the northe ſea to the ſouthe ſea beynge of ſuche dyfference the one from the other in ryſynge and faulynge, yet is the lande that deuydeth theym not paſte eyghteene or twentye leaques in breadthe frome coaſte to coaſte. So that bothe the ſayde ſeas beynge all one Ocean this ſtraunge effecte is a thynge worthy greately to bee conſidered of al ſuche as haue inclination and deſyre to knowe the ſecreate woorkes of nature wherin the infinite powre and wyſedome of god is ſeene to bee ſuch as may allure all good natures to reuerence and loue ſo diuine a maieſtie. And wheras by the demonſtrations of lerned men I am not ſatiſfyed of the natural cauſe hereof, I content my ſelfe to knowe and beleue that he which hathe made theſe thynges, dooth knowe this and many other whiche he hath not granted to the reaſon of man to comprehend, much leſſe to ſo baſe a wyt as myne is. They therefore that are of greater vnderſtandynge, ſhall ſearche the cauſe hereof, for them and for me, foraſmuch as I haue onely put the matter in queſtion as a wytneſſe that haue ſeene th[e]experience of the thynge.

The power and wisdome of god is sene in his creatures.

¶ *Of the ſtrayght or narowe paſſage of the lande lyinge betwene the North and South ſea, by the whiche ſpyces may much ſooner and eaſyer be brought from the Ilandes of* Molucca *into Spayne by the Weſt Ocean then by that way wherby the Portugales ſayle into Eaſt India.*

205

IT hath byn an opinion amonge the Coſmographers and Pylottes of late tyme, and other which haue had practiſe in thynges touchynge the ſea, that there ſhulde bee a ſtrayght of water paſſynge from the North ſea of the firme, into the South ſea of *Sur*, whiche neuertheleſſe hath not byn ſeene nor founde to this daye. And ſuerlye yf there be any ſuche ſtrayght, we that inhabite thoſe partes do thynke the ſame ſhulde bee rather of lande then of water. For the fyrme lande in ſum partes therof is ſo ſtrayght and narrowe that the Indyans ſaye that frome the mountaynes of the prouynce of *Eſquegua* or *Vrraca*, (whych are betwene the one ſea and the other) If a man aſſend to the toppe of the mountaynes and looke towarde the Northe, he maye ſee the water of the North ſea of the Prouynce of *Beragua*. And ageyne lookynge the contrarye waye, may on the other ſyde towarde the Southe, ſee the ſea of *Sur* and the prouynces whyche confyne with it, as doo the territoryes of the twoo Lordes or kynges of the ſayde prouinces of *Vrraca* and *Eſquegua*. And I beleue that if it bee as the Indyans ſaye, of al that is hetherto knowen, this is the narroweſt ſtrayght of the fyrme lande, whiche ſume affyrme to bee full of rough mountaynes. Yet doo I not take it for a better waye, or ſo ſhorte as is that whyche is made from the porte cauled *Nomen dei* (whiche is in the Northe ſea) vnto the newe citye of *Panama* beynge in the coaſte and on the banke of the ſea of *Sur*. Whiche waye is likewyſe very rough ful of thicke wods, mountaines, ryuers, valleys, and verye diffyculte to paſſe through, and can not bee doone withowt greate laboure and trauayle. Sum meaſure this waye in this part, to bee from ſea to ſea. xviii. leaques, whych I ſuppoſe to bee rather. xx. not for that it is any more by meaſure, but bicauſe it is rough and dyffyculte as I haue ſayde, and as I haue founde it by experyence hauynge nowe twyſe paſſed that way by foote: countyng from the porte and vyllage of *Nomen Dei* vnto the dominion of the *Cacique* of *Iuanaga* otherwyſe cauled *Capira*. viii. leaques: And frome thenſe to the ryuer of *Chagre*, other. viii. leaques. So that at this ryuer beinge. xvi. leaques from the ſayde porte, endeth the roughneſſe of the way. Then from henſe to the maruelous brydge are two leaques: And beyonde that, other twoo vnto the port of *Panama*: So that all togyther in my iudgmente make xx. leaques. And if therfore this nauigation may bee founde in the South ſea for the trade of ſpices (as we truſt in God) to bee brought from thenſe to the ſayde porte of *Panama* (as is poſſible enough) they may afterwarde eaſly paſſe to the Northe ſea notwithſtandynge the difficultie of the waye of the. xx. leaques aforeſayde. Whiche thynge I affirme as a man well trauayled in theſe regions, hauynge twyſe on my feate paſſed ouer this ſtrayght in the yeare. 1521. as I haue ſayde. It is furthermore to bee vnderſtode, that it is a maruelous facilitie to bryng ſpices by this way which I wil now declare. From *Panama* to the ryuer of *Chagre*, are foure leaques of good and fayre way by the which cartes may paſſe at pleaſure by reaſon that the mountaynes are but fewe and lyttle, and that the greateſte parte of theſe foure leaques is a playne grounde voyde of trees. And when the cartes are coomme to the ſayde ryuer, the ſpices may be caryed in barkes and pinneſſes. For this ryuer entereth into the

Esquegua and Vrrace.

Nomen Dei. Panama.

The ryuer of Chagre.

North ſea fyue or. vi leaques lower then the port of *Nomen dei*, and emptieth it ſelfe in the ſea nere vnto an Ilande cauled *Baſtimento*, where is a very good and ſafe port. Yowr maieſtie may now therfore conſyder howe great a thynge and what commoditie it may bee to conuey ſpices this way, foraſmuch as the ryuer of *Chagre* hauyng his originall only two leaques from the South ſea, contineweth his courſe and emptieth it ſelfe into the other North ſea. This ryuer runneth faſt and is very greate, and ſo commodious for this purpoſe as may be thowght or deſyred. The marueilous bridge made by the worke of nature, being two leaques beyonde the ſayd ryuer, and other twoo leaques on this ſyde the porte of *Panama*, ſo lyinge in the mydde way betwene them both, is framed naturally in ſuch ſort that none which paſſe by this viage ſee any ſuch bridge or thynke that there is any ſuch buyldyng in that place vntyll they bee in the toppe therof in the way toward *Panama*. But as ſoone as they are on the brydge, lookynge towarde the ryght hande, they ſee a lyttle ryuer vnder them which hath his chanell diſtante from the feete of them that walke ouer it, the ſpace of twoo ſpeares length or more. The water of this ryuer is very ſhalowe, not paſſyng the depth of a mans legge to the knee: and is in breadth betwene thyrtie and fortie paſes: and faulethe into the ryuer of *Chagre*. Towarde the ryght hand ſtandyng on this brydge, there is nothyng ſeene but great trees. The largeneſſe of the brydge, conteyneth. xv. paſes: and the length thereof about threeſcore or foureſcore paſes. The arche is alſo made of moſte harde ſtone, that no man can beholde it without admiration, beinge made by the hyghe and omnipotent creatour of all thynges. But to returne to ſpeake ſumwhat more of the conueying of ſpices, I ſay that when it ſhal pleaſe almyghty god that this nauigation aforeſayde ſhal bee founde by the good fortune of yowre maieſtie, and that the ſpices of the Ilandes of the South ſea (which may alſo bee otherwyſe cauled the Ocean of the Eaſt India in the whiche are the Ilandes of *Molucca*) ſhalbe browght to the ſayd coaſte and the porte of *Panama*, and bee conueyed from thenſe (as we haue ſayde) by the firme lande with cartes vnto the ryuer of *Chagre*, and from thenſe into this owr other ſea of the North, from whenſe they may afterward bee browght into Spayne, I ſay that by this meanes the vyage ſhall bee ſhortened more then ſeuen thouſande leaques, with muche leſſe daunger then is by the viage nowe vſed by the way of Commendator of Ayſa capitayne vnder yowre maieſtie, who this preſent yeare attempted a vyage to the place of the ſayde ſpyces. And not only the way is thus much ſhortened, but alſo a thyrde parte of the tyme is abbreuiate. To conclude therfore, if any had hetherto attempted this vyage by the ſea of *Sur*, to ſeeke the Ilandes of ſpyces, I am of firme opinion that they ſhuld haue byn founde longe ſence, as doubteleſſe they maye bee by the reaſons of Coſmographie.

The Ilande Bastimento.

The maruelous bridge.

206

The Ilandes of Molucca.

The commoditie of this viage.

¶ *Howe thynges that are of one kynde, dyffer in forme and qualitie, accordynge to the nature of the place where they are engendred or growe. And of the beaſtes cauled Tygers.*

IN the firme lande are fownde many terryble beaſtes which ſum thinke to be Tigers. Which thynge neuertheleſſe, I dare not affirme, conſyderynge what auctoures doo wryte of the lyghtnes and agilitie of the Tyger, whereas this beaſt beynge other wyſe in ſhape very like vnto a Tyger, is notwithſtandynge very ſlowe. Yet trewe it is, that accordynge to the maruayles of the worlde and differences which naturall thynges haue in dyuers regions vnder heauen and dyuers conſtellations of the ſame vnder the whiche they are created, wee ſee that ſum ſuche plantes and herbes as are hurtfull in one countrey, are harmeleſſe and holſome in other regions. And byrdes which in one prouince are of good taſte, are in other ſo vnſauery that they may not bee eaten. Men likewyſe which in ſum countreys are blacke, are in other places whyte: and yet are both theſe and they men.

Tigers.

Plantes and herbes.

Birdes.

Men.

Euen ſo may it bee that Tygers are lyght in ſum region as they wryte, and maye neuertheleſſe bee ſlowe and heauy in theſe Indies of yowr maieſtie wherof we ſpeake. The ſheepe of Arabie drawe theyr tayles longe and bigge on the ground, and the bulles of Egypt haue theyr heare growynge towarde theyr headdes: yet are thoſe ſheepe and theſe bulles. Men in ſum countreys are hardy and of good courage, and in other naturally fearefull and brutyſhe. All theſe thynges and many more which may bee ſayde to this purpoſe, are eaſy to bee proued and woorthy to bee beleued of ſuche as haue redde of the lyke in autours or trauayled the worlde, whereby theyr owne ſyght may teache theym th[e]experience of theſe thynges wherof I ſpeake. It is alſo manifeſt, that *Iucca* wherof they make theyr breade in the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*, is deadely poyſon yf it bee eaten greene with the iuſe: And yet hathe it no ſuche propertie in the firme land where I haue eaten it many times and found it to bee a good frute. The bats of Spayne although they bite, yet are they not venemous.

Sheepe.

Bulles.

Iucca.

Battes.

Plinie.

The Tiger.

207

The huntyng of tigers.

A reward for kyllinge of tigers.

Colonus compared to Hercules.

The pillers of Hercules.

The straightes of Gibilterra.

Note.

PLVS VLTRA.

Howe farre Th[e]emperours maiestie excelleth Hercules.

A tiger made tame.

208

But in the firme lande many dye that are bytten of them. And in this fourme may ſo many thynges bee ſayde that tyme ſhall not ſuffice to wryte, wheras my intent is only to proue that this beaſt may be a Tiger or of the kind of Tigers although it be not of ſuch lyghtneſſe and ſwiftnes as are they wherof Plinie and other autours ſpeake, diſcrybynge it to bee one of the ſwyfteſte beaſtes of the lande, and that the ryuer of *Tigris* for the ſwift courſe therof was cauled by that name. The firſt Spaniardes which ſawe this Tyger in the firme lande, dyd ſo name it. Of the kynde of theſe was that which Don Diego Columbo the Admirall ſent yowre maieſtie owte of newe Spayne to Toledo. Theyr heades are lyke to the heades of Lyons or Lioneſſes, but greater. The reſte of all theyr boddies and theyr legges, are full of blacke ſpottes one nere vnto an other and diuided with a circumference or frynge of redde colour ſhewinge as it were a fayre woorke and correſpondent picture. Abowt theyr croopes or hynder partes, they haue theſe ſpots byggeſt: and leſſe and leſſe towarde theyr bellies, legges, and headdes. That which was brought to Toledo, was younge and but lyttle, and by my eſtimation, of th[e]age of three yeares. But in the firme lande there are many founde of greater quantitie. For I haue ſeene ſum of three ſpannes in heyght, and more then fyue in length. They are beaſtes of greate force, with ſtronge legges, and well armed with nayles and fanges which we caule dogge teeth. They are ſo fierce that in my iudgement no reall lyon of the byggeſt ſorte is ſo ſtronge or fierce. Of theſe, there are many founde in the firme land whiche deuour many of the Indians and do much hurte otherwyſe. But ſyns the comming of the Chriſtians, many haue byn kyld with Croſſebowes after this maner. As ſoone as the archer hath knowlege of the haunt of any of theſe Tygers, he goeth ſearchynge theyr traſe with his croſſebowe and with a lyttle hounde or bewgle and not with a greehounde, bycauſe this beaſt wolde ſoone kyll any dogge that wolde venter on hym. When the hounde hath founde the Tyger, he runneth about hym bayinge continually, and approcheth ſo neare hym ſnappynge and grynnynge with ſo quicke flyinge and returnyng, that he hereby ſo moleſteth this fierce beaſte that he dryuethe hym to take the next tree, at the foote whereof he remayneth ſtyl baying and the Tyger grynnyng and ſhewyng his teeth, whyle in the meane tyme the archer commeth neare, and. xii. or. xiiii. paſes of, ſtryketh hym with the querel of his croſſebowe in the breſte, and flyeth incontinent, leauynge the Tyger in his trauayle for lyfe and death, bytynge the tree and eatynge earth for fierceneſſe. Then within the ſpace of twoo or three houres or the day folowynge, the archer returneth thyther, and with his dogge fyndeth the place where he lyethe deade.

In the yeare. 1522. I with the other rulers and magiſtrates of the citie of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, toke order in owr counſayle, A rewarde of foure or fyue pieces of golde to bee giuen to euery man that kylde any of theſe Tygers: by reaſon wherof many were kylde in ſhorte ſpace both with croſſebowes and alſo with dyuers ſnares and ingens. But to conclude, I wyll not obſtynately ſtand in opinyon whether theſe beaſtes bee Tygers or Panthers, or of the number of any other ſuch beaſtes of ſpotted heare, or alſo peraduenture ſum other newe beaſte vnknowen to the owlde wryters as were many other wherof I haue ſpoken in this booke. Of which thynge, I doo not greately meruayle, For aſmuche as vnto owre tyme thys greate parte of the worlde was vnknowen to the antiquitie: In ſo muche that none of the wryters of that age, nor yet Ptolomie in his Coſmographie, or any other ſence hym, haue made any mention herof, vntill the fyrſt Admyrall Don Chryſtopher Colonus diſcouered the ſame. A thynge douteleſſe without comparyſon muche greater then that whyche is ſayd of Hercules, that he fyrſte gaue th[e]enterance of the ſea *Mediterraneum* into the Ocean, whiche the Grekes coulde neuer doo before hym. And herof ryſethe the fable that the mountaynes of Calpe and Abila (which are directly one agaynſt an other in the ſtrayght of *Gibilterra*, the one beyng in Spayne and the other in Affryke) were ioyned togither before they were opened by Hercules, who erected thoſe hys pyllers whiche your maieſtye gyue in token of prehemynence and lyke enterpryſes with lykewyſe theſe hys wordes PLVS VLTRA: wordes douteleſſe worthy for ſo greate an[d] vnyuerſall an Emperoure, and not conuenyent for any other Prynce. Foraſmuche as your holy Catholyke Maieſtye haue ſpredde them in ſo ſtraunge and remote regyons, ſo manye thouſande leaques further then euer dyd Hercules. And certeynlye ſyr, If there had byn an Image of golde made in the prayſe and fame of *Colonus*, He had as well deſerued it as any of thoſe men to whom for theyr noble enterpryſe the antiquytie gaue deuyne honoure, if he had byn in their tyme. But to returne to the matter whereof I began to ſpeake: I neede ſay no more of the forme of thys beaſte, for as muche as your Maieſtye haue ſeene that whych is yet alyue in Tolledo. And ſuerly the keper of your Maieſties lyons, who hath taken vppon hym the charge to tame this beaſte, myght better haue beſtowed his paynes in an other thynge that myght haue bynne more profitable for the ſafegarde of his lyfe bycauſe this Tyger beinge yet but younge, wyl dayly bee ſtronger and fiercer and increaſe in malice. The Indians (and eſpecially they of the firme lande in the prouince whiche the Catholyke Kynge Don Ferdinando commaunded to bee cauled golden Caſtyle) caule this beaſte *Ochi*. This thinge is ſtraunge that chaunced of late: that wheras the Tiger wherof we haue made mention before, wolde haue kylde his keeper that then kept hym in a cage, was in fewe dayes after made ſo tame that he ledde her tyed only with a ſmaule corde and playde with her ſo familyarly that I maruayled greatly to ſee it, yet not without certeyne belefe that this frendſhyp wyll not laſte longe without daunger of lyfe to the keeper, foraſmuch as ſuerly theſe beaſtes are not meete to bee amonge men for theyr fiercenes and cruell nature that can not bee tamed.

Of the maners and cuſtomes of the Indians of the firme lande, and of theyr women.

THe maners and cuſtomes of theſe Indians, are dyuers in diuers prouinces. Sum of them take as many wyues as them lyſte, and other lyue with one wyfe whome they forſake not without conſent of both parties, which chauncethe eſpecially when they haue no chyldren. The nobilitie aſwel men as women, repute it infamous to ioyne with any of baſe parentage or ſtrangers, except Chriſtians, whom they count noble men by reaſon of theyr valientnes, although they put a difference betwene the common ſorte and the other to whom they ſhewe obedience, countynge it for a great matter and an honorable thyng yf they bee beloued of any of them. In ſo much that yf they knowe any Chriſtian man carnally, they keepe theyr fayth to hym, ſo that he bee not longe abſent farre from them. For theyr intent is not to bee widowes or to lyue chaſt lyke religious women. Many of theym haue this cuſtome, that when they perceaue that they are with chylde, they take an herbe wherwith they deſtroy that is conceaued. For they ſay that only wel aged women ſhulde beare chyldren, and that they wyl not forbeare theyr pleaſures and deforme theyr boddies with bearynge of chyldren, wherby theyr teates becoome looſe and hangynge which thynge they greatly diſprayſe. When they are delyuered of theyr chyldren they go to the ryuer and waſhe them. Whiche doone, theyr bludde and purgation ceaſeth immediatly. And when after this they haue a few dayes abſteyned from the company of men, they becomme ſo ſtrayght as they ſay which haue had carnall familiaritie with them, that ſuch as vſe them, can not without much difficultie ſatiffie theyr appetite. They alſo whiche neuer had chyldren, are euer as vyrgins. In ſum partes they weare certeyne lyttle apernes rounde about them before and behynde as lowe as to theyr knees and hammes, wherwith they couer theyr priuie partes, and are naked all theyr boddie byſyde. The principal men beare theyr priuities in a holowe pype of golde: but the common ſorte haue theym incloſed in the ſhelles of certeyne great welkes, and are byſyde vtterly naked. For they thynke it no more ſhame to haue theyr coddes ſeene then any other parte of theyr boddies. And in many prouinces bothe the men and women go vtterly naked without any ſuch couerture at al. In the prouince of *Cueua* they caul a man *Chuy*, and a woman *Ira*: which name is not greately diſagreeable to many both of theyr women and of owres.

The Indian women.

The men of India.

Theſe Indians gyue great honour and reuerence to theyr *Cacique* (that is) theyr kynges and rulers. The principall *Cacique*, hath twelue of his moſt ſtronge Indians appoynted to beare hym when he remoueth to any place, or gothe abrod for his pleaſure. Two of them cary hym ſyttyng vppon a longe piece of woodde which is naturally as lyght as they can fynd The other tenne folowe nexte vnto hym as foote men. They keepe continually a trottynge paſe with hym on theyr ſhulders. When the twoo that cary hym are wery, other twoo coomme in theyr places without any diſturbance or ſtey. And thus if the way bee playne, they cary hym in this maner for the ſpace of. xv. or. xx. leaques in one day. The Indians that are aſſigned to this office, are for the moſte parte ſlaues or *Naboriti*, that is, ſuch as are bounde to continuall ſeruice.

The kynge is borne on mens backes.

I haue alſo noted that when the Indians perceaue them ſelues to bee troubled with to much bludde, they lette theym ſelues blud in the calfes of theyr legges and brawnes of theyr armes. This doo they with a very ſharpe ſtone, and ſumtymes with the ſmaule toothe of a vyper, or with a ſharpe reede or thorne.

Lettinge of bludde.

All the Indians are commonly without beardes: In ſo much that it is in maner a maruayle to ſee any of them eyther men or women to haue any downe or heare on theyr faces or other partes of theyr boddies. Albeit, I ſawe the *Cacique* of the prouince of *Catarapa* who had heare on his face and other partes of his boddie, as had alſo his wyfe in ſuche places as women are accuſtomed to haue. This *Cacique* had a great part of his body paynted with a blacke colour which neuer fadeth: And is much lyke vnto that wherwith the Mores paynt them ſelues in Barberie in token of nobilitie. But the Moores are paynted ſpecially on theyr vyſage and throte and certeyne other partes. Likewyſe the principall Indians vſe theſe payntynges on theyr armes and breſtes, but not on theyr vyſages, bycauſe amonge them the ſlaues are ſo marked. When the Indians of certeyne prouinces go to the battayle (eſpecially the Caniball archers) they cary certeyne ſhelles of greate welkes of the ſea which they blowe and make therwith great ſounde muche lyke the noyſe of hornes. They carye alſo certeyne tymbrels which they vſe in the ſteade of drummes. Alſo very fayre plumes of fethers, and certeyne armure of golde: eſpecially great and rounde pieces on theyr breſtes, and ſplintes on there armes. Lykewyſe other pieces whiche they put on theyr heades and other partes of theyr bodyes. For they eſteeme nothynge ſo much as to appeare galante in the war[re]s, and to go in moſt coomely order that they can deuyſe, glyſterynge with precious ſtones, iewelles, golde, and fethers. Of the leaſte of theſe welkes or perewincles, they make certeyne lyttle

They haue no beardes.

They paynte theyr bodies.

The Canibales.

Armure of golde.

Their galantnes in the warres.

Their Iuells

beades of diuers ſortes and colours. They make alſo little braſſelets whiche they mengle with gaudies of golde. Theſe they rowle about there armes frome the elbowe to the wreſte of the hande. The lyke alſo dòo they on theyr legges from the knee to the ſoles of theyr feete in token of nobilitie. Eſpecially theyr noble women in dyuers prouinces are accuſtomed to weare ſuch Iewelles, and haue theyr neckes in maner laden therwith. Theſe beades and Iewels and ſuch other trynkettes, they caule *Caquiras*. Biſyde theſe alſo, they weare certeyne rynges of golde at theyr eares and noſtrelles which they bore ful of holes on both ſides, ſo that the ringes hange vppon theyr lyppes. Sum of theſe Indians, are poulde and rounded. Albeit, commonly both the men and women take it for a decent thynge to weare longe heare, which the women weare to the myddeſt of theyr ſhulders and cut it equally, eſpecially aboue theyr browes. This doo they with certeyne harde ſtones which they keepe for the ſame purpoſe. The principall women when theyr teates faule or becoome looſe, beare them vp with barres of golde of the length of a ſpanne and a halfe, wel wrought, and of ſuch byggeneſſe that ſum of them way more then two hundreth Caſtilians or ducades of golde. Theſe barres haue holes at both th[e]endes, whereat they tye two ſmaul cordes made of coton at euery ende of the barres. One of theſe cordes go[e]th ouer the ſhulder, and the other vnder the arme holes where they tye togyther, ſo that by this meanes the barre beareth vp theyr teates. Sum of theſe chiefe women go to the battayle with theyr huſbandes, or when they them ſelues are regentes in any prouinces, in the which they haue all thynges at commaundement and execute th[e]office of generall capitaynes, and cauſe them ſelues to bee caryed on mens backes in lyke maner as doo the Caciques of whom I haue ſpoken before.

Howe the women beare vp their teates, wyth barres of golde.

The ſtature and coloure of the Indians.

The Indians cauled Coronati.

The Ilande of giantes.

Incatos.

Theſe Indians of the firme lande are muche of the ſame ſtature and coloure as are they of the Ilandes. They are for the moſt part of the colour of an olyue. If there bee any other difference, it is more in byggeneſſe then otherwyſe. And eſpecially they that are cauled *Coronati*, are ſtronger and bygger then any other that I haue ſeene in theſe parties, except thoſe of the Ilande of giantes whiche are on the ſouth ſyde of the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola* nere vnto the coaſtes of the firme lande: And lykewyſe certeyne other which they caule *Yucatos* which are on the north ſyde. All which chiefely, although they bee no giantes, yet are they doubteleſſe the byggeſte of the Indyans that are knowen to this day, and commonly bygger then the Flemynges: and eſpecially many of them aſwell women as men, are of very hyghe ſtature, and are all archiers bothe men and women. Theſe *Coronati* inhabite thirtie leaques in length by theſe coaſtes from the poynt of *Canoa* to the greate ryuer which they caule *Guadalchibir* nere vnto *Sancta Maria de gratia*. As I trauerſed by thoſe coaſtes, I fylled a butte of freſhe water of that ryuer ſyxe leaques in the ſea frome the mouthe therof where it fauleth into the ſea. They are cauled *Coronati* (that is crowned) bycauſe theyr heare is cutte round by theyr eares, and poulde lower a great compaſe abowte the crowne much lyke the fryers of ſaynt Auguſtines order. And bycauſe I haue ſpoken of theyr maner of wearynge theyr heare, here commeth to my rememberaunce a thynge which I haue oftentymes noted in theſe Indians. And this is, that they haue the bones of the ſculles of theyr heades foure tymes thycker and much ſtronger then owres. So that in commyng to hand ſtrokes with them, it ſhalbe requiſite not to ſtrike them on the heades with ſwoordes. For ſo haue many ſwoordes bynne broken on theyr heades with lyttle hurt doone. And to haue ſayde thus much of theyr cuſtomes and maners, it ſhal ſuffice for this tyme, bycauſe I haue more largely intreated herof in my generall hyſtorie of the Indies. Yet haue I nother there nor here ſpoken much of that parte of the firme lande whiche is cauled *Noua Hiſpania* (that is, newe Spayne wherof the Ilande of *Iucatana* is part) foraſmuche as Ferdinando Corteſe hath wrytten a large booke thereof.

The ſculles of the Indians heades.

210

New Spaine.

The houses of the Christians in India

Of the houſes of theſe Indians, I haue ſpoken ſufficiently elswhere. Yet haue I thought good to informe yowr maieſtie of the buyldynge and houſes which the Chriſtians haue made in dyuers places in the firme lande. They buylde them nowe therfore with two ſolars or loftes, and with loopes and wyndowes to open and ſhutte. Alſo with ſtronge tymber and very fayre bordes. In ſuche ſorte that any noble man maye wel and pleaſauntly bee lodged in ſum of them. And amonge other, I my ſelfe cauſed one to bee builded in the citie of *Sancta Maria Antigua* in *Dariena* whiche coſte me more then a thouſande and fyue hundreth Caſtelians: being of ſuch ſort that I may well interteyne and commodiouſly lodge any Lorde or noble man, reſeruynge alſo a parte for my ſelfe and my famelie. For in this may many houſeholdes bee kepte both aboue and benethe. It hath alſo a fayre garden with many orange trees bothe ſweete and ſowre: Ceders alſo, and Lemondes, of the which there is nowe great plentie in the houſes of the Chryſtians. On one ſyde of the gardeyne, there runneth a fayre ryuer. The ſituation is very pleaſaunte, with a good and holſome ayer, and a fayre proſpecte abowte the ryuer. In fine, owre truſte is that in fewe yeares al thynges in theſe regions ſhall growe to a better ſtate accordynge to the holy intention of yowre maieſtie.

Dariena.

Gardens.

Of the chiefe Ilandes Hiſpaniola *and* Cuba.

THe Indians which at this preſent inhabite the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*, are but fewe in number, and the Chryſtyans not ſo many as they ought to bee foraſmuche as many of them that were in this Ilande, are gonne to other Ilandes and to the fyrme lande. For beynge for the moſte parte younge men vnmaried, and deſirous dayly to ſee newe thyngs wherin mans nature deliteth, they were not willinge to continewe longe in on[e] place: eſpecially ſeeing dailie other newe landes diſcouered where they thowght theye might ſooner fylle there purſes by beinge preſent at the firſte ſpoyle. Wherin neuertheleſſe their hope deceaued many of them, and eſpecially ſuche as had houſes and habitations in thys Ilande. For I certeynly beleue, confyrmynge my ſelfe herein with the Iudgement of many other, that if any one Prynce had no more ſigniores then only this Ilande, it ſhuld in ſhorte tyme bee ſuche as not to giue place eyther to Sicile or Englande: whereas euen at this preſent there is nothynge wherefore it ſhulde malice their proſperitie not beinge inferioure to them in any filicite that in maner the heauens can graunte to any lande: beinge furthermore ſuche as maye inriche many prouinces and kyngedomes by reaſon of manye riche golde mynes that are in it of the beſte golde that is founde to this day in the worlde, and in greateſt quantitie. In this Ilande, nature of her ſelfe bringeth furthe ſuche aboundance of cotton that if it were wrought and maynteyned there ſhuld be more and better then in any parte of the world. There is ſo greate plentie of excellent *Caſſia* that a greate quantitie is brought from thenſe into Spayne: from whenſe it is caried to dyuers partes of the worlde. It increaſeth ſo muche that it is a meruelous thynge to conſider. In this are many ryche ſhoppes wher ſuger is wrought: and that of ſuch perfectenes and goodnes, and in ſuche quantitie that ſhippes come laden therwith yearly into Spayne. All ſuche ſedes, ſettes, or plantes, as are brought out of Spayne and planted in this Ilande, becoomme muche better, bygger, and of greater increaſe then they are in any parte of owre Europe. And if it chaunce otherwyſe that ſumetymes they proſper not ſo well, the cauſe is that they whiche ſhulde tyll and huſband the grounde, and ſowe and plant in dewe ſeaſons, haue no reſpect hereunto, being impacient whyle the wheate and vynes waxe rype, being gyuen to wanderynge and other affayres of preſent gaynes (as I haue ſayde) as ſearchynge the gold mines, fyſſhynge for pearles, and occupyinge marchaundies, with ſuch other trades, for the greedy folowyng wherof, they neglecte and contempne both ſowynge and plantynge. Suche frutes as are brought owt of Spayne, into this Ilande, proſper maruelouſly and waxe rype all tymes of the yeare: as herbes of all ſortes very good and pleaſaunt to bee eaten. Alſo many pomegranates of the beſt kynde, and oranges bothe ſweete and ſower. Lykewyſe many fayre Lymones and ceders: and a great quantitie of all ſuch as are of ſharpe, ſowre, and bytter taſte. There are alſo many fygge trees whiche brynge furth theyr frute all the hole yeare. Lykewyſe thoſe kynd of date trees that beare dates: and dyuers other trees and plantes which were brought owt of Spayne thyther.

Men are desirous of newe thinges.

The commodities of Hispaniola

Englande and Sicilie.

Golde mines.
Cotton.

Cassia.

Suger.

Plantes and herbes.

Greate thynges hindered by respecte of presente gaynes.

211
Orangies.
Pomegranates.
Figges al the yeare.
Dates.

Beaſtes doo alſo increaſe in lyke abundaunce: and eſpecially the heardes of kyne are ſo augmented both in quantitie and number, that there are nowe many patrones of cattayle that haue more then two thouſand heades of neate: and ſum three or foure thouſande, and ſum more. Byſyde theſe, there are very many that haue heardes of foure or fyue hundrethe. And trewth it is, that this Iland hath better paſture for ſuch cattayle then any other countrey in the worlde: alſo holſome and cleare water and temperate ayer, by reaſon whereof the heardes of ſuch beaſtes are much bygger, fatter, and alſo of better taſte then owres in Spayne bycauſe of the ranke paſture whoſe moyſture is better digeſted in the herbe or graſſe by the continuall and temperate heate of the ſoonne, wherby being made more fatte and vnctuous, it is of better and more ſtedfaſt nuryſhement. For continuall and temperate heate, dooth not only drawe muche moyſture owt of the earth to the nuryſhement of ſuch thynges as growe and are engendered in that clyme, but dooth alſo by moderation preſerue the ſame from reſolution and putrefaction, digeſtynge alſo and condenſatynge or thyckenynge the ſayde moyſte nuryſhemente into a gummie and vnctuous ſubſtaunce as is ſeene in all ſuche thinges as growe in thoſe regions. And this is the only naturall cauſe aſwell that certeyne great beaſtes and of longe lyfe (as the Elephante and Rhinoceros with ſuch other) are engendered only in regions nere vnto the Equinoctiall, as alſo that the leaues of ſuch trees as growe there, do not wyther or faule, vntyll they bee thruſte owt by other, accordynge to the verſe of the poete which ſayth: *Et nata pira piris, et ficus in ficubus extant.* That is in effecte: peares growynge vppon peares, and fygges vppon fygges. Plinie alſo wryteth, that ſuche trees are neuer infected with the diſeaſe of trees that the Latines caule *Caries*, which we may caule the worme or canker, being but a certeyne putrifaction by reaſon of a wateryſhe nuryſhement not well conſolidate. The ſame thynge hath bynne the cauſe that certeyne Phyloſophers conſiderynge aſwell that man is the hotteſt and moyſteſt beaſt that is (which is the beſt complexion) as alſo that men lyue longeſte in certeyne partes of India nere the Equinoctiall (where

Beastes.

Greate heardes of cattail.

Good pasture.

The effecte of continual and moderate heate.

The cause of fatte nurisshemente.

Beastes of longe lyfe in regions abowte the Equinoctiall line

Trees whos leaues doo not wither

The cancar of the tree

Longe lyuide men in India.

Paradise neare the equinoctial line

yet to this daye ſumme liue to th[e]age of a hundreth and fiftie yeares) were of opinion that yf mankynde had any begynnynge on the earthe, that place owght by good reaſon to be vnder or not farre from the Equinoctiall lyne for the cauſes aforeſayde. Sum of the diuines alſo vppon lyke conſideration haue thought it agreable that theyr Paradyſe ſhulde bee about the ſame within the precincte of thoſe ryuers which are named in the booke of Geneſis. But to lette paſſe theſe thynges and to returne to the hyſtorie.

Shepe and hogges

Dogges and cattes becom[e] wylde.

In this Ilande furthermore, are many ſheepe and a great number of hogges: of the which (as alſo of the kyne) manye are becoome wyld: And lykewyſe many dogges and cattes of thoſe which were brought owt of Spayne. Theſe (and eſpecially the dogges) doo much hurte amonge the cattayle by reaſon of the negligence of the hearde men.

There are alſo many horſes, mares, and mules, and ſuche other beaſtes as ſerue th[e]uſe of men in Spayne, and are much greater then they of the fyrſte brode brought thether owt of Spayne. Sum places of the Ilande are inhabyted, although not ſo many as were requiſite: Of the whiche I wyll ſaye no more but that all the regions of the Ilande are ſo well ſituate that in the courſe of tyme all thynges ſhall coomme to greater perfection by reaſon of the rychneſſe and pleaſauntneſſe of the countrey and fertilitie of the ſoile.

The situation of Hispaniola.

The citie of san Domenico

But nowe to ſpeake ſum[m]what of the principall and chiefe place of the Ilande, which is the citie of *San Domenico*: I ſaye that as touchynge the buildynges, there is no citie in Spaine ſo muche for ſo muche (no not *Barſalona* whiche I haue oftentymes ſeene) that is to bee preferred before this generallye. For the houſes of *San Domenico*, are for the moſte parte of ſtone as are they of Barſalona: or of ſo ſtronge and well wrought earth that it maketh a ſinguler and ſtronge byndyng. The ſituation is muche better then that of Barſalona by

212

reaſon that the ſtreates are much larger and playner, and without comparyſon more directe and ſtreyght furth. For beinge buylded nowe in owr tyme, byſyde the commoditie of the place of the foundation, the ſtreates were alſo directed with corde, compaſe and meaſure, wherin it excelleth al the cities that I haue ſene. It hath the ſea ſo nere, that of one ſyde there is no more ſpace betwen the ſea and the citie then the waules. And this is about fyftie paſes where it is furtheſt of. On this ſyde, the waters of the ſea beate vppon the naturall ſtones and fayre coaſte. On the other parte, harde by the ſyde and at the foote of the houſes, paſſeth the ryuer *Ozama* whiche is a marueylous porte wherin laden ſhyppes ryſe very nere to the lande and in maner vnder the houſe wyndowes, and no further from the mouth of the ryuer where it entereth into the ſea, then is frome the foote of the hyll of *Monyuye* to the monaſtery of ſaynt Frances or to the lodge of Barſalona. In the myddeſt of this ſpace in the citie, is the fortreſſe and caſtle, vnder the which and twentie paſes diſtant from the ſame, paſſe the ſhippes to aryſe ſumwhat further in the ſame ryuer. From the enteraunce of the ſhyppes vntyll they caſt anker, they ſayle no further from the houſes of the citie then thyrtie or fortie paſes, bicauſe of this ſyde of the citie the habitacion is nere to the ryuer. The port or hauen alſo, is ſo fayre and commodious to defraight or vnlade ſhyppes, as the lyke is founde but in fewe places of the worlde. The chymineis that are in this citie, are abowt ſyxe hundreth in number, and ſuch houſes as I haue ſpoken of before: Of the which ſum are ſo fayre and large that they maye well receaue and lodge any lorde or noble manne of Spayne with his trayne and famelie. And eſpecially that which Don Diego Colon viceroy vnder your maieſtie hath in this citie, is ſuche that I knowe no man in Spayne that hath the lyke by a quarter in goodneſſe conſyderynge all the commodities of the ſame. Lykewyſe the ſituation thereof, as beinge aboue the ſayde porte and altogyther of ſtone and hauynge many faire and large roomes with as goodly a proſpect of the lande and ſea as may be deuyſed, ſeemeth vnto me ſo magnificall and princelyke that yowr maieſtie maye bee as well lodged therin as in any of the mooſte exquiſite builded houſes of Spayne. There is alſo a Cathedrall churche buylded of late where aſwell the byſhop accordyng to his dignitie, as alſo the canones are wel indued. This church is wel buylded of ſtone and lyme, and of good woorkemanſhyppe. There are furthermore three monaſteries bearyng the name of ſaynt Dominike, ſaynt Frances, and ſaynt Marie of Mercedes: The whiche are all well buylded althoughe not ſo curiouſlye as they of Spayne. But ſpeakynge without preiudice of any other religious monaſterie, yowre maieſtie may bee well aſſured that in theſe three monaſteries, god is as well ſerued as in any other religious houſe with men of holy lyuynge and vertuous exemple. There is alſo a very good hoſpitall for the ayde and ſuccour of pore people, whiche was founde by Michaell Paſſament threaſurer to yowr maieſtie. To conclude, this citie from day to day increaſeth in welth and good order, aſwel for that the ſayde Admyrall and viceroy with the lorde Chaunceloure and counſayle appoynted there by yowr maieſtie, haue theyr continuall abydynge here, as alſo that the rycheſt men of the Ilande reſort hyther for theyr moſte commodious habitation and trade of ſuch marchaundies as are eyther brought owt of Spayne or ſent thyther from this Iland which nowe ſo abundeth in many thynges that it ſerueth Spayne with many commodities, as it were with vſury reqûityng ſuch benefites as it fyrſt receaued from thenſe.

A cathedrall churche and monasteris in Hispaniola.

An hospitale.

The hauen

The people

The people of this Ilande are commonlye of ſumewhat leſſe ſtature then are the Spanyardes, and of a ſhynynge or cleare browne coloure. They haue wyues of theyr owne, and abſteyne from theyr dowghters, ſyſters, and mothers. They haue large forheades, longe blacke heare, and no beardes or heare in any other

parts of theyr bodies aſwel men as women, excepte very fewe as perhaps ſcarſely one amonge a thouſand. They go as naked as they were borne, excepte that on the partes which may not with honeſtie bee ſeene, they weare a certeyne leafe as brode as a mans hande, which neuertheleſſe is not kepte cloſe with ſuche diligence but that ſumtymes a man may ſee that they thynke ſufficiently hydde.

In this Iland are certeyne glo woormes that ſhyne in the nyght as doo owres. But are muche bygger and gyue a greater lyght: In ſo much that when the men of the Ilande goo any iorneys in the nyght, they beare ſumme of theſe woormes made faſt abowt theyr frete and beade, in ſuche ſorte that he that ſhulde ſee them a farre and ignorant of the thinge, wolde bee greatly aſtonyſhed therat. By the lyght of theſe alſo, the women woorke in theyr houſes in the night. Theſe woormes they caule *Cicuas*. Theyr lyght laſteth for the ſpace of three dayes, and diminiſſheth as they begynne to drye vp.

Glo wormes

213

There is alſo a kynd of crowes whoſe breath ſtynketh in the mornynge and is ſweete at after noone. The excremente which they auoyde, is a lyuynge worme.

Crowes stynkynge and sweete.

As touchynge other thynges of this Ilande whereof Peter Martyr hath more largely intreated in his Decades, I haue thought it ſuperfluous to repeate the ſame ageyne owte of this hyſtorie of *Gonzalus Ferdinandus*: but haue here gathered only ſuche thynges as eyther are not touched of Peter Martyr or not ſo largely declared: as I haue doone the lyke in all other notable thynges which I haue collected owt of this Summarie of *Gonzalus*.

¶ *Of the Ilande of Cuba and other.*

OF the Ilande of Cuba and the other, as the Ilandes of *Sancti Iohannis* and *Iamaica*, the ſame maye be ſayde in maner in all thynges as before of *Hiſpaniola* although not ſo largely. Yet in leſſe quantitie doo they brynge foorth the lyke thynges: as gold, copper, cattayle, trees, plantes, fyſſhes, and ſuch other of the which wee haue ſpoken there.

Saynt Iohn his Ilande. *Iamaica.*

In Cuba, is a certeyne kynde of Partyches beinge verye little, with theyr fethers much of the colour of turtle dooues: but are of muche better taſte to bee eaten. They are taken in great number. And beinge brought wylde into the houſes, they becoome as tame within the ſpace of three or foure dayes as though they had byn hatched there. They becoomme exceadynge fatte in ſhort ſpace, and are doubteleſſe the moſt delicate and pleaſaunt meate that euer I haue eaten. But to let paſſe many other thynges that myght here bee ſayde, and to ſpeake of two maruelous thynges which are in this Iland of Cuba: wherof the one is, that a valley conteynynge twoo or three leaques in length betwene two mountaynes, is full of a kynde of very harde ſtones of ſuche perfecte roundeneſſe and lyke vnto pellettes of gunnes that no arte can make better or more exactly polyſſhed. Of theſe, ſum are as ſmaule as pellettes for handegunnes: and other ſo increaſynge bygger and bygger from that quantitie, that they may ſerue for all ſortes of artillerie althoughe they bee of byggeneſſe to receaue one or two or more quintales of pouder, euery quintale conteynynge one hundreth weyght: or of what other quantitie ſo euer they bee. Theſe pelletes are founde through owte al the valley within the earth as in a myne, which they digge and take owte ſuch as they neede of all ſortes.

Partriches.

Pellettes for gunnes wrought by nature.

The other marueylous thinge of this Iland is this: That farre from the ſea, there iſſheweth owt of a mountayne a certeyne lycour much lyke the cley of Babilon cauled *Bitumen* or lyke vnto pytche in great quantitie and ſuch as is very commodious for the calkynge of ſhyppes. This fauleth continually from the rocke and runneth into the ſea in ſuche abundaunce that it is ſeene flotynge aboue the water on euery ſide of the ſea there abowt as it is dryuen frome place to place by the wynde or courſe of the water.

A fountayne of the pytche of Bitumen.

Quintus Curſius wryteth in his hyſtorie, that great Alexander came to the citie of *Memi* where is a great caue or denne in the which is a ſprynge or fountayne that continually auoydethe a great quantitie of *Bitumen* in ſuch ſort that it is an eaſy thing to beleue that the ſtones of the walles of Babilon myght bee layde therwith accordynge as the ſayde auctoure wryteth. I haue ſeene this myne of *Bitumen*, not only in the Iland of Cuba, but alſo ſuch an other in newe Spayne, which was found of late in the prouince of *Panuco* where it is much better then the other of Cuba, as I haue ſeene by experience in calkynge of ſhyppes.

Quintus Curtius

Bitumen of Babilon.

Panuco

¶ *Of the lande of* Bacoaleos *cauled* Terra Baccalearum, *ſituate on the North ſyde of the firme lande.*

Baccaleos.

214

Indians.

SHortly after that yowr Maieſtie came to the citie of Toledo, there arryued in the moneth of Nouember, Steuen Gomes the pylot who the yeare before of 1524. by the commaundement of yowre maieſtie ſayled to the Northe partes and founde a greate parte of lande continuate from that which is cauled *Baccaleos* diſcourſynge towarde the Weſt to the. xl. and. xli. degree, from whenſe he brought certeyne Indians (for ſo caule wee all the nations of the new founde landes) of the whiche he brought ſum with hym from thenſe who are yet in Toledo at this preſent, and of greater ſtature then other of the firme lande as they are commonlye. Theyr colour is much lyke th[e]other of the firme lande. They are great archers, and go couered with the ſkinnes of dyuers beaſtes both wylde and tame. In this lande are many excellent furres, as marterns, ſables, and ſuch other rych furres of the which the ſayde pilote brought ſumme with hym into Spayne. They haue ſyluer and copper, and certeyne other metalles. They are Idolaters and honoure the ſoonne and moone, and are ſeduced with ſuche ſuperſtitions and errours as are they of the firme.

Ryche furres and syluer.

Idolaters.

And to haue wrytten thus muche, it maye ſuffice of ſuche thinges as haue ſemed to me moſt woorthy to be noted in the Summarie of *Gonzalus Ferdinandus* wrytten to Th[e]emperours maieſtie

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde-or west India, etc.

SECTION III.

Antonio Pigafetta.

The first Circumnavigation of the Globe, by Fernam de Magalhaens's Expedition, in 1519-22.

First printed in 1526.]

¶ OF OTHER NOTABLE THYNGES GATHERED OWTE OF DYUERS AUTOURS:

AND FYRSTE OF THE VNIVERSAL CARDE AND NEWE WORLDE.

THe hole globe or compaſe of the earth was dyuyded by the auncient wryters into three partes, as *Europa*, *Affrica*, and *Aſia*: whiche partes conteyne in longitude. 180. degrees, begynnynge the fyrſt degree at the Ilandes of Canarie. And conteyne in latitude towarde the North. 63. degrees, begynnynge the fyrſte degree frome the Equinoctiall: And. 10. degrees towarde the South. All the reſte of the longitude which conteyneth other. 180. degrees, is diſcouered of late tyme, as the Weſt India cauled the newe worlde, bycauſe none of the owlde autoures had any knowelege or made any mention therof. All that therfore is cauled newe which is Weſtwarde from the Ilandes of Canarie. And thus accomptynge theſe. 180. degrees towarde the Eaſt diſcouered in owlde tyme, with the other. 180. degrees diſcouered of late dayes, they make, 360. degrees, which is al the circle of the Equinoctiall in the ſphere. Alſo the part aboue the. 63. degrees of the North latitude, was founde by men of late tyme, as Norway and Grutlande with many other prouinces. Lykewiſe the part more ſouth then. 10. degrees of latitude, was diſcouered of late dayes, althoughe Ariane and Plinie ſay that it was knowen in owlde tyme: whiche yf it were, yet had they no ſuche particular deſcription thereof as we haue in theſe dayes.

West India the newe worlde.

The circumference of the Equinoctiall lyne.

The North regions.

The South regions.

A DISCOVRSE OF THE VYAGE MADE BY THE SPANYARDES ROVNDE ABOWTE THE WORLDE.

THe vyage made by the Spanyardes rownde abowt the worlde is one of the greateſt and moſte marueylous thynges that hath bynne knowen to owre tyme. And althoughe in many thynges we excell owre aunciente prediceſſours, in this eſpeciallye wee ſo farre exceade all theyr inuentions, that the lyke hath not heretofore byn knowen to this day. This viage was written particularly by Don Peter Martyr of Angleria being one of the counſayle of Th[e]emperours Indies, to whom alſo was commytted the wrytyng of the hyſtorie and examination of al ſuche as returned from thenſe into Spayne to the citie of Siuile, in the yeare. M. D. xxii. But ſendynge it to Rome to bee prynted in that miſerable tyme when the citie was ſacked it was loſte and not founde to this day or any memory remaynynge therof, ſauynge ſuche as ſum that redde the ſame haue borne in mynde. And amonge other notable thynges by hym wrytten as touchynge that vyage, this is one, that the Spanyardes hauynge ſayled abowt three yeares and one moneth, and the moſt of them notynge the dayes, day by day (as is the maner of all them that ſayle by the Ocean) they founde when they were returned to Spayne, that they had loſte one daye: So that at theyr arryuall at the porte of Siuile beinge the ſeuenth day of September, was by theyr accompt but the ſixth day. And where as Don Peter Martyr declared the ſtrange effecte of this thynge to a certeyne excellente man who for his ſinguler lernynge was greately aduaunced to honoure in his common welthe and made Th[e]emperours ambaſſadoure, this woorthy gentelman who was alſo a greate Philoſopher and Aſtronomer, anſwered that it coulde not otherwyſe chaunce vnto them hauynge ſayled three yeares continually, euer folowynge the ſoonne towarde the Weſt. And ſayde furthermore that they of owlde tyme obſerued that all ſuche as ſayled behinde the ſoonne towarde the West, dyd greatly lengthen the day. And albeit that the ſayde booke of Peter Martyr is peryſſhed, yet hath not fortune permitted that the memorie of ſo woorthy and marueylous an enterpryſe ſhulde vtterly bee extincte: foraſmuch as a certeyne noble gentleman of the cytie of Vincenza in Italie, cauled maſter Antonie Pigafetta (who beinge one of the coompanie of that vyage and after his returne into Spayne in the ſhyppe Victoria, was made knyght of the Rhodes) wrote a particular and large booke therof which he gaue to Th[e]emperours Maieſtie, and ſente a coppie of the ſame into Fraunce to the lady Regente moother vnto the frenche kynge, who committed it to an excellent philoſopher cauled maſter *Iacobus Faber*, hauyng longe ſtudyed in Italy, wyllynge him to tranſlate it

Don Peter Martyr.

Rome sacked

A day lost in three yeares and one moneth.

215

Antonie Pigafetta.

Iacobus Faber.

into the Frenche toonge. This booke therefore was printed fyrſt in the frenche toonge and then in the Italien, with alſo an epiſtle to the Cardinall of Salſepurge as touchynge the ſame viage, written by Maximiliane Tranſiluane ſecretarie to Th[e]emperours Maieſtie, in the yeare. 1522. And doubteleſſe amonge al the cities of Italie, the citie of Vicenza may herein much glorie, that beſide the ancient nobilitie and many excellent and rare wyttes whiche it hath browght furth aſwell in learnynge as diſcipline of warre, it hath alſo had ſo woorthy and valiaunt a gentleman as was the ſayde maſter Antonie Pigafetta, who hauing compaſed abowte the ball or globe of the worlde, hath lykewyſe deſcribed that vyage particularly. For the whiche his ſo noble and woonderfull an enterpriſe ſo happily atchiued, if the ſame had byn doone in the owlde tyme when th[e]empyre of the Grekes and Romans floryſſhed, he ſhulde doubteleſſe haue byn rewarded with an Image of marble or golde erected in a place of honoure in perpetuall memorie and for a ſingular exemple of his vertue to the poſteritie. In fine, this may we bouldly affirme, that the antiquitie had neuer ſuch knowlege of the worlde whiche the ſoonne coompaſeth abowte in. xxiiii. houres, as we haue at this preſente by th[e]induſtrye of men of this owre age. But before I ſpeake any thynge of the viage, I haue thought it good fyrſt to adde hereunto, the Epiſtle of Maximilian Tranſiluane which he wrote to the Cardinall of Salſepurge as a preface to his ſayde booke.

Maximilian Transiluane

The rewarde of noble enterpryses.

The antiquitie had no suche knowlege of the worlde as we haue.

THE EPISTLE OF MAXIMILIAN TRANSILVANE, SECRETARIE TO THE EMPEROVRS MAIESTIE: wrytten to the ryght honorable and reuerende lorde, the lorde Cardinall of Salſepurge, of the maruey-lous and woonderfull nauigation made by the Spanyardes rounde abowt the worlde in the yeare of Chriſt. M. D. xix.

IN theſe daies my moſt honorable and reuerend lorde, returned one of thoſe fiue ſhippes which the yeare before Th[e]emperours beinge at Saragoſa in Spayne, were at his maieſties commaundement ſent to the newe worlde heretofore vnknowen vnto vs, to ſeeke the Ilandes of ſpices. For albeit the Portugales brynge vs great quantitie of ſpyces from that parte of Eaſte India whiche in owlde tyme was cauled *Aurea Cherſoneſus* (where is nowe thought to bee the greate and ryche citie of *Malaccha*) yet in Eaſte India growe none of thoſe ſpices excepte pepper. For other ſpices, as Sinamome, cloues, nutmegges, and maſe, (whiche is the huſke that couereth the ſhell of the nutte) are brought frome other farre con-treys and from Ilandes ſcarſely knowen by theyr names. From the whiche Ilandes they are brought in ſhyps or barkes made withowt any iren tooles, and tyed togyther with

The Ilandes of Molucca.

Aurea Chersonesus.

Malaccha.

Spyces.

cordes of date trees: with rounde ſayles lykewiſe made of the ſmaule twigges of the branches of date trees weaued togyther. Theſe barkes they caule *Giunche*: with the whiche barkes and ſayles they make theyr vyages with onely one wynde in the ſtearne or contrarywyſe.

The Ilandes of Spyces vnknowen in owlde tyme.

Neyther yet is it a thynge greatly to bee marueyled at that theſe Ilandes where the ſpyces growe haue byn vnknowen ſo many worldes paſt vnto owre tyme, foraſmuch as all ſuch thynges as vnto this day haue byn wrytten of owld autours of the places where ſpices growe, are all fabulous and falſe: In ſo muche that the countreys where they affirme theym to growe, are nowe certeynely founde to bee further frome the place where they growe in deede, then we are from them. For lettynge paſſe many other thynges that are wrytten,

216 *Herodotus.* Sinamome. The Phenyx. Plinie

I wyll ſpeake only of this which *Herodotus* (otherwiſe a famous auctour) affirmeth that Sinamome, is founde in the toppes of the neſtes of certeyne byrdes and foules that brynge it frome farre countreys, and eſpecially the Phenyx, the which I knowe no man that euer hath ſeene. But Plinie who myght more certeynely affirme thynges by reaſon that before his tyme many thynges were knowen and diſcouered by the nauigations of great Alexander and other, ſayth that Sinamome groweth in that parte of Ethiope whiche the people inhabite cauled *Troglodití*. Neuertheleſſe it is nowe founde that Sinamome groweth very farre from all Ethiope and muche further frome the *Troglodití* whiche dwell in caues vnder the grounde. But to owre men which are nowe returned from thoſe partes and the Ilandes of ſpices, hauynge alſo good knowlege of Ethiope, it was neceſſarie to paſſe farre beyonde Ethiope beefore they coome to theſe Ilandes, and to coompaſſe abowte the whole worlde, and many tymes vnder the greateſt circumference of heauen. The which nauigation made by them, being the moſt marueylous thynge that euer was doone by man vppon the earth ſence the fyrſt creation of the worlde, and neuer founde before, or knowen, or attempted by any other, I haue deliberated faythfully to wryte to yowre honorable lordſhippe and to declare the hole ſucceſſe therof. As touchynge which matter, I haue with all diligence made inquiſition to knowe the trewth aſwell by relation of the Capitayne of that ſhyppe as alſo by conference with euery of the maryners that returned with hym. All which, gaue the ſelf ſame information both to Th[e]emperours maieſtie and dyuers other: And this with ſuch faythfulneſſe and ſinceritie, that not only they are iudged of all men to haue declared the trewth in all thynges, but haue thereby alſo gyuen vs certeyne knowlege that all that hath hytherto byn ſayde or written of owlde autours as touchynge theſe thynges, are falſe and fabulous. For who wyll beleue that men are found with only one legge. Or with ſuch fiete whoſe ſhadowe couereth theyr bodyes? Or men of a cubite heyght, and other ſuch lyke, beinge rather monſters then men? Of the which, neyther the Spanyardes who in owre tyme ſaylyng by the Ocean ſea, haue diſcouered al the coaſtes of the lande toward the Weſt both vnder and aboue the Equinoctiall, nor the Portugales who compaſſynge abowt al Affryke haue paſſed by all the Eaſte and lykewyſe diſcouered all thoſe coaſtes vnto the great goulfe cauled *Sinus Magnus*, nor yet the Spanyardes in this theyr laſte nauigation, in the which they compaſed abowt the hole earth, dyd neuer in any of their vyages wryte of ſuch monſters: which doubteleſſe they wold not haue omytted if they myght haue had certeyne knowelege therof. But nowe intendynge to ſpeake of the whole world, I wyll not bee longe in my preface, but begynne my narration as foloweth.

Herodotus. Sinamome. The Phenyx.

Plinie

The nauigations of greate Alexander. Ethiope.

Troglodití.

The nauigation abowte the worlde.

The owlde autours reproued.

Monsters.

The vyages of the Spanyardes and Portugales.

Sinus Magnus.

A BRIEFE DECLARATION OF THE VYAGE OR NAVIGATION MADE ABOWTE THE WORLDE.

GATHERED OWT OF A LARGE BOOKE WRYTTEN HEREOF BY

MASTER ANTONIE PYGAFETTA VINCENTINE, KNYGHT OF THE RHODES

and one of the coompanye of that vyage in the which,

Ferdinando Magalianes a Portugale (whom

ſum caule *Magellanus*) was generall

Capitayne of the nauie.

ALthowgh Sebaſtian Munſter in his vniuerſall Coſmographie in the fyfthe booke of the landes of the greater Aſia (which I tranſlated into Englyſhe abowte two yeares ſence) hath wrytten of the vyage of *Magellanus*, declarynge therein howe the Spanyardes by the Weſt, and the Portugales by the Eaſte, ſaylyng to the Ilandes of *Molucca*, compaſed the hole globe of the worlde betwene them, yet haue I here thought it good to make a breefe repeticion of thys vyage, addynge hereunto dyuers notable thynges which were not touched of Munſter, as I haue gathered them owt of the bookes of Antonie Pigafetta and Tranſiluanus wrytten of the ſame vyage. For albeit in deede it was a ſtraunge and woonderful thynge that the Spanyardes and Portugales compaſed the hole circumference of the worlde betwene them, yet is it more marueylous that the ſame was doone with one ſhippe and one coompanie of men as dyd the Spanyardes in this vyage, who keepynge theyr continuall courſe by the Weſte, returned into Spayne by the Eaſte. A thynge doubtleſſe ſo much more woonderfull and ſtrange then yf they had returned from the halfe circumference by the ſame way they went. In howe muche they were ignorante in the vyage neuer attempted beefore, beſyde the thouſande daungiours and perylles whiche they were daylye lyke to faule into, aſwell by wanderynge in vnknowen coaſtes as alſo by faulynge into the handes of the Portugales by whoſe dominions in the Eaſte, they ſhulde needes paſſe of neceſſitie, not truſtynge to theyr gentelneſſe for the controuerſie which had bym longe betwene them for the Ilandes of *Molucca*. I wyll therefore (as I haue ſayde) make a briefe rehearſall of thys vyage from the begynnynge to the endynge: Omyttynge neuertheleſſe many notable thynges whiche are more largely deſcribed in the bookes of *Maximilianus Tranſiluanus* and *Antonius Pigafetta*.

Sebastian Munster.

The Ilandes of Molucca.

217

Controuersie betwene the Spanyardes and Portugales.

Ferdinando Magalianes.

The tenthe day of Auguſt, in the yeare of owre lorde M. D. xix. Ferdinando Magalianes departed from the porte of Siuile in Spayne with a nauie of fyue ſhyppes and two hundreth thirtie and ſeuen men, wel furnyſſhed with all thynges neceſſarie. And ſaylynge fyrſte downe by the ryuer of *Guadalchiber* which runneth from the ſayde porte into the ſea, they came fyrſte to a place named *Giouan Dulfaraz* where are manye vyllages of the Moores: And from thenſe arryued at a caſtel of the Duke of *Medina Sidonia*, where is the porte from whiche they enter into the ſea and to the cape ſaynte Vincent beinge diſtant from the Equinoctiall. xxxvii. degrees, and frome the ſayde port. x. leaques, and is from thenſe to Siuile betwene xvii. and. xx. leaques. Here they remayned certeyne dayes to make newe prouiſion of ſuch thynges as they lacked.

The Cape of saynt Vincent

The Ilandes of Canarie.
Water engendered of a clowde.

Departynge from henſe the. xx. daye of September, they arryued the. xxvi. day of the ſame moneth at one of the Ilandes Canarie cauled *Tenerife*, beinge. xxv. degrees aboue the Equinoctiall. In one of theſe Ilandes is none other water but that is continually engendered of a clowde which appeareth dayly at noone tyde as though it deſcended from heauen and compaſeth abowt a certeyne great tree from whoſe branches diſtilleth greate abundaunce of water, and faulethe in ſtreames from the roote of the ſame into certeine trenches and ceſtarnes made and placed to receaue it. This water ſerueth ſufficiently all th[e]inhabitauntes and cattayle of the Ilande.

The Iland of saynt Thomas.

The lyke thynge is alſo ſeene in the Iland of ſaynt Thomas, lyinge directly vnder the Equinoctiall lyne.

Capo verde.

Guinea in Ethyope.
Serraliona.

Fysshes and monsters of the sea.

The fyers of saints Helene and S. Nicolas.
A tempest.

The thyrde day of October abowt mydnyght, the capytayne commaunded theym to lyght fyrebrandes and to hoyſe vp theyr ſayles directynge theyr courſe towarde the South, ſaylynge betwene *Capo Verde* of Affryke and the Ilandes lyinge abowt the ſame, beinge from the Equinoctiall. xiiii. degrees and a halfe. They ſayled thus, manye dayes in the ſyght of the coaſte of *Guinea*, of Ethiope, where is the mountayne cauled *Serra Liona* beinge. viii. degrees aboue the Equinoctiall. In this coaſt they had no maner of contrary wynds but a great calme and fayre wether for the ſpace of threeſcore and tenne dayes, in the which they came vnder the Equinoctiall lyne. In thys vyage they ſawe many ſtraunge fyſſhes and monſters of the ſea beſyde an other ſtraunge thynge whiche appeared vnto them. For there appeared in theyr ſhyppes certeyne flames of fyre burnynge verye cleare, which they caul ſaynt Helen and ſaynt Nicolas. Theſe appeared as thoughe they had byn vppon the maſt of the ſhyppes, in ſuch clearneſſe that they tooke away theyr ſyght for the ſpace of a quarter of an houre: by reaſon wherof, they ſo wandered owte of theyr courſe and were diſparſed in ſunder, that they in maner diſpayred to meete ageyne. But as God wolde, the ſea and tempeſt beinge quieted, they came ſafely to theyr determyned courſe.

The naturall cause of such fiers as faule in the shyps.

Cardanus.

And before I ſpeake any further of the vyage, I haue here thought good to ſaye ſumewhat of theſe ſtraunge fyers, which ſum ignorant folkes thynke to bee ſpirites or ſuche other phantaſies wheras they are but natural thynges proceadynge of natural cauſes and engendered of certeyne exhalations. Of theſe therefore, the greate Philoſopher of owre tyme *Hieronimus Cardanus* in his ſeconde booke *de Subtilitate*, wryteth in this maner.

Two kyndes of fyers engendered of exhalations.

Trewe fyer and false fyer.

There are two maner of fyers engendered of exhalations wherof the one is hurtfull and the other without hurte. That which is hurtful, is fyer in deede, engendered of malicious and venemous vapours which in ſucceſſe of time take fyer as apt matters to be kyndeled. The other kynd, is no trew fyer, but lyke the matter that is in ſuch owld putrified wod as giueth the ſhynynge of fyer without the ſubſtaunce or qualitie therof. Of the kynde of trewe fyer, is the fyer baule or ſtarre commonly cauled ſaynt Helen which is ſumtyme ſeene abowt the maſtes of ſhyppes, beinge of ſuche fyery nature that it ſumetyme melteth braſen veſſelles, and is a token of drownyng, foraſmuch as this chaunceth only in great tempeſtes. For the vapoure or exhalation whereof this fyre is engendered, can not bee dryuen togyther or compacte in forme of fyre, but of a groſe vapoure and by a great poure of wynde, and is therfore a token of imminent perell: As on the contrary parte, the lyke fyers cauled in owlde tyme *Caſtor* and *Pollux* and nowe named the two lyghtes of ſaynt Peter and ſaynt Nycolas whiche for the moſt parte faule on the cables of the ſhyppes, leapynge from one to an other with a certeyne flutterynge noyſe lyke byrdes, are a token of ſecuritie and of the tempeſte ouerpaſſed. For they are but vapoures cleauynge to the cables: which in ſucceſſe of tyme, the fyer paſſynge from one to an other, appere in the ſimilitude of a lyght candell. They are a token of ſecuritie bycauſe they are lyttle, nor ſlowe or groſſe, wherby they myght haue ioyned altogyther in one, and byn thereby more malicious and laſted longer, wheras beinge many and but lyttle, they are the ſooner conſumed.

Castor and Pollux.
The lyghtes of saynt Peter and saynte Nycolas.

Hetherto *Cardanus*. But let vs nowe returne to the vyage.

They lost the syght of the north starre.

When they had ſayled paſte the Equinoctiall lyne, they loſt the ſyght of the north ſtarre, and ſayled by ſouthweſte vntyll they came to a lande named the lande of *Breſſil* whiche ſum caule *Braſilia*, beinge. xxii. degrees and a halfe toward the ſouth pole or pole Antartyke. This lande is continuate and one firme lande with the cape of ſaynte Auguſtine whiche is. viii. degrees from the Equinoctiall. In this lande they were refreſſhed with many good frutes of innumerable kindes, and founde here alſo very good ſugar canes and diuers kyndes of beaſtes and other thynges which I omitte for breuitie. They entered into this hauen on ſaynt Lucies

The lande of Bresile.
The South pole.
Sugar.

day: where the ſonne beinge there *Zenith* (that is the poynt of heauen directly ouer theyr heades) they felte greater heate that daye then when they were vnder the Equinoctiall line. This lande of Braſile is very large and great: and bygger then all Spayne, Portugale, Fraunce, and Italie: and is moſte abundaunte in all thynges. The people of this countrey praye to noo maner of thinge: but liue by th[e]inſtincte of nature, and to th[e]age of. C. xx. [one hundred and twenty] and. C. xl. [one hundred and forty] yeares. Bothe the men and women go naked, and dwell in certeyne longe houſes. They are very docible, and ſoone allured to the Chryſtian fayth.

The greatenesse of the land of Brasile.

Therteene dayes after that they arryued at the ſayd port, they departed from this lande and ſayled to the. xxxiiii. degree and a halfe toward the pole Antartike where they found a great ryuer of freſſhe water and certeyne Canibales. Of theſe they ſawe one owt of theyr ſhyppes, of ſtature as bigge as a giante, hauynge a voyce lyke a bul. Owre men purſued them, but they were ſo ſwyfte of foote that they coulde not ouertake them. Abowt the mouth of this ryuer, are ſeuen Ilandes, in the byggeſt wherof, they founde certeyne precious ſtones, and cauled it the cape of ſaynt Marie. The Spanyardes thought that by this ryuer they might haue paſſed into the ſouth ſea. But they were deceaued in theyr opinion. For there was none other paſſage then by the ryuer which is. xvii. leaques large in the mouth.

Canibales.
Giantes.
Insulæ gemmarum.
Cap[e] S. Marie.

Thus folowynge this coaſte by the tracte of the lande towarde the pole Antartyke, they came to a place where were two Ilandes replenyſſhed with gieſe and woolues of the ſea which ſum thynke to bee thoſe fyſſhes that wee caule pikes. Theſe were in ſuch number that in an houre all the fyue ſhippes myght haue byn lade with gieſe beinge all of blacke coloure, and ſuch as can not flye. They lyue of fyſſhe and are ſo fatte that they coulde ſcarſely fle theym. They haue noo fethers but a certeyne downe: and theyr byls like rauens byls. Theſe woolues of the ſea are of dyuers coloures, and of the byggeneſſe of calues, with theyr heades of golden coloure. Here were they in great daungiour by tempeſt. But as ſoone as the three fyers cauled ſaynte Helen, ſaynte Nycolas, and ſaynt Clare, appered vppon the cabels of the ſhyppes, ſuddeynely the tempeſte and furye of the wyndes ceaſed.

The pole An[t]artike.
Geese.
Sea woolues

Departynge frome henſe, they ſayled to the. 49. degree and a halfe vnder the pole Antartyke: where beinge wyntered, they were inforced to remayne there for the ſpace of two monethes, all which tyme they ſawe no man except that one daye by chaunce they eſpyed a man of the ſtature of a giante, who came to the hauen daunſyng and ſyngynge, and ſhortly after ſeemed to caſt duſt ouer his heade. The capitayne ſente one of his men to the ſhore with the ſhyppe boate, who made the lyke ſigne of peace. The which thynge the giante ſeinge, was owt of feare and came with the capitaynes ſeruaunte to his preſence into a lyttle Ilande. When he ſawe the capitayne with certeyne of his coompany abowte hym, he was greatly amaſed and made ſignes holdynge vppe his hande to heauen, ſignifyinge therby that owre men came from thenſe. This giante was ſo bygge, that the heade of one of owr men of a meane ſtature, came but to his waſte. He was of good corporature and well made in all the partes of his bodie, with a large vyſage paynted with dyuers coloures, but for the moſt parte yelowe. Vppon his cheekes were paynted two hartes, and redde circles abowt his eyes. The heare of his headde was coloured whyte, and his apparell was the ſkynne of a beaſte ſowde togyther. This beaſte (as ſeemed vnto them) had a large heade and great eares lyke vnto a mule, with the body of a camel and tayle of a horſe. The feete of the giant were foulded in the ſkynne after the maner of ſhoos. He had in his hande, a bygge and ſhorte bowe, the ſtrynge whereof was made of a ſynewe of that beaſte. He had alſo a bundell of longe arrowes made of reedes fethered after the maner of owrs, typte with ſharpe ſtones in the ſteade of iren heades. The Capitayne cauſed him to eate and drynke, and gaue him many thynges, and amonge other a greate lookynge glaſſe: In the which as ſoone as he ſawe his owne likeneſſe, was ſuddeynely afrayde and ſtarted backe with ſuch violence that he ouerthrewe two that ſtoode neareſt abowte hym. When the Capitayne had thus gyuen hym certeyne haukes belles and other great belles, with alſo a lookynge glaſſe, a combe, and a payre of beades of glaſſe, he ſente hym to lande with foure of his owne men well armed.

The. xlix. degree of the south pole.
Giantes
219
The bygnes of the giants.

Shortely after, they ſawe an other giaunte of ſumewhat greater ſtature, with his bowe and arrowes in his hande, As he drewe neare vnto owre menne, he layde his hande on his heade and poynted vp towarde heauen, and owr men dyd the lyke. The Capitayne ſente his ſhyppe boate to brynge him to a lyttle Ilande beinge in the hauen. This giante was verye tractable and pleaſaunt. He ſoonge and daunſed: and in his daunſynge leſte the printe of his feete on the grownde. He remayned longe with owre men who named hym *Iohan.* He coulde wel ſpeake and playnely pronounce theſe wordes: *Ieſus: Aue Maria, Iohannes,* euen as we doo, but with a bygger voyce. The capitayne gaue hym a ſhert of lynnen clothe, and a coate of whyte woollen clothe: Alſo a cappe, a combe, a lookynge glaſſe, with dyuers ſuche other thynges, and ſo ſente hym to his coompany. The day folowyng, he reſorted ageyne to the ſhyppes, and brought with hym one of thoſe greate beaſtes, which he gaue the capitayne. But after that daye they neuer ſawe hym more, ſuppoſynge hym to bee ſlayne of his owne coompany for the cõuerſation he had with owre men.

An other giante.

After other. xv. dayes were paſte, there came foure other giantes without any weapons, but had hydde theyr bowes and arrowes in certeyne buſſhes. The capitayne reteyned two of theſe whiche were youngeſt and

Foure other giantes.

Two giantes are taken by a pollicie.

beſte made. He tooke them by a deceyte in this maner, that gyuynge them knyues, ſheares, lookynge glaſſes, belles, beades of cryſtall, and ſuche other tryfels, he ſo fylled theyr handes that they coulde hold no more. Then cauſed two payre of ſhackels of iren to bee put on theyr legges, makynge ſignes that he wold alſo gyue them thoſe chaynes: which they lyked very wel by cauſe they were made of bryght and ſhynynge metal. And wheras they could not cary them bycauſe theyr handes were full, the other gyantes wolde haue caryed them: but the Capitayne wolde not ſuffer them. When they felte the ſhakels faſte abowte theyr legges, they begunne to doubte: but the Capitayne dyd put them in comforte and badde them ſtande ſtyll. In fine when they ſawe how they were deceaued they rored lyke bulles and cryed vppon theyr greate deuyll *Setebos* to helpe them. Being thus taken, they were immediatly ſeperate and put in ſundry ſhyppes. They coulde neuer bynde the handes of the other two. Yet was one of them with much difficulte ouerthrowne by nyne of owre men, and his handes bownde: but he ſuddeynely looſed hym ſelfe and fledde, as dyd alſo the other that came with them. In theyr flying, they ſhot of theyr arrowes and ſlewe one of owre men. They ſay that when any of them dye, there appere. x. or. xii. deuyls leapynge and daunſynge about the bodye of the deade, and ſeeme to haue theyr boddyes paynted with dyuers colours. And that amonge other, there is one ſeene bygger then the reſidue, who maketh great mirth and reioyſynge. This greate deuyll they caule *Setebos*, and caule the leſſe *Cheleule*. One of theſe giantes which they toke, declared by ſignes that he had ſeene deuyls with two hornes aboue theyr heades, with longe heare downe to theyr feete: And that they caſt furth fyre at theyr throtes both before and behynde. The Capitayne named theſe people *Patagoni*. The moſt part of them weare the ſkynnes of ſuche beaſtes wherof I haue ſpoken before: And haue no houſes of continuaunce, but maketh certeyne cotages whiche they couer with the ſayde ſkynnes, and cary them from place to place. They lyue of raw fleſſhe and a certeyne ſweete roote whiche they caule *Capar*. One of theſe which they had in theyr ſhippes, dyd eate at one meale a baſket of byſkette, and drunke a bowle of water at a draughte.

The deuyll Setebos.

Deuyls appere to the gyantes when they dye.

Patagoni.

220

The gyantes feedynge.

They remayned fyue monethes in this porte of ſaint Iulian, where certeyne of the vnder capitaynes conſpirynge the death of theyr general, were hanged and quartered: Amonge whom the treaſurer Luigo of Mendozza was one. Certeyne of the other conſpiratours, he left in the ſayd land of *Patogoni*

They conspire ageynst theyr Capitayne.

Departyng from henſe to the. 52. degree toward the pole Antartike lackynge a thyrde parte, where they founde a ryuer of freſſhe water and good fyſſhe. Theyr ſhyppes were here in great daungiour. They remayned twoo monethes in this porte where they made newe prouiſion of freſſhe water, fuell, and fyſſhe. Here the Capitayne cauſed all his men to bee confeſſed.

Confession.

Approchynge to the. 52. degrees, they founde the ſtraight nowe cauled the ſtraight of Magellanus, beinge in ſum place. C. x. [one hundred and ten] leaques in length: and in breadth ſumwhere very large and in other places lyttle more then halfe a leaque in bredth. On both the ſydes of this ſtrayght, are great and hygh mountaynes couered with ſnowe, beyonde the whiche is the enteraunce into the ſea of *Sur*. This enteraunce the Capitayne named *Mare Pacificum*. Here one of the ſhyppes ſtole away priuilie and returned into Spaine. In this was one of the giantes who dyed as ſoone as he felt the heate that is abowte the Equinoctiall lyne.

The straight of Magellanus.

The South sea.

Mare pacificum.

The giantes died for heat.

When the Capitayne *Magalianes* was paſt the ſtraight and ſawe the way open to the other mayne ſea, he was ſo gladde therof that for ioy the teares fell from his eyes, and named the poynt of the lande from whenſe he fyrſt ſawe that ſea, *Capo Deſiderato*.

Capo Desiderato

Suppoſing that the ſhyp which ſtole away had byn loſte, they erected a croſſe vppon the top of a hyghe hyll to directe their courſe in the ſtraight yf it were theyr chaunce to coome that way. They founde that in this ſtrayght in the moneth of October the nyght was not paſt foure houres longe. They found in this ſtrayght at euery three myles, a ſafe hauen and excellent water to drynke: woodde alſo and fyſſhe, and greate plentie of good herbes. They thynke that there is not a fayrer ſtrayght in the worlde. Here alſo they ſawe certeyne flyinge fyſſhes.

Short nighte in the moneth of October.

Flying fyshes

The other giante which remayned with them in the ſhyp, named breade Capar: water, Oli: redde clothe, Cherecai: red colour, Cheiche: blacke colour, Amel: And ſpoke al his wordes in the throte. On a tyme, as one made a croſſe before him and kyſſed it, ſhewynge it vnto hym, he ſuddeynely cryed *Setebos*, and declared by ſignes that if they made any more croſſes, *Setebos* wold enter into his body and make him bruſt. But when in fine he ſawe no hurte coome thereof, he tooke the croſſe and imbraſed and kyſſed it oftentymes, deſyringe that he myght bee a Chryſtian before his death. He was therfore baptyſed and named Paule.

The gyantes language.

The gyant is baptised.

Departynge owt of this ſtrayght into the ſea cauled *Mare Pacificum* the. xxviii. day of Nouember in the yeare. 1520. they ſayled three moonethes and. xx. dayes before they ſawe any lande. And hauynge in this tyme conſumed all theyr byſket and other vyttayles, they fell into ſuche neceſſitie that they were inforced to eate the pouder that remayned therof beinge nowe full of woormes and ſtynkynge lyke pyſſe by reaſon of the ſalte water. Theyr freſſhe water was alſo putrifyed and become yelowe. They dyd eate ſkynnes and pieces of lether which were foulded abowt certeyne great ropes of the ſhyps. But theſe ſkynnes beinge made verye harde by reaſon of the ſoonne, rayne and wynde, they hunge them by a corde in the ſea for the ſpace of foure

Three monethes saylyng without the syght of lande.

Extreme famen.

or fiue dayes to mollifie them, and fodde them and eate them. By reaſon of this famen and vnclene feedynge, ſumme of theyr gummes grewe ſo ouer theyr teethe, that they dyed miſerably for hunger. And by this occaſion dyed. xix. men, and alſo the giante with an Indian of the lande of Braſile otherwyſe cauled *Terra de papagalli*, that is, the lande of popingiayes. Beſyde theſe that dyed. xxv. or. xxx. were ſo ſicke that they were not able to doo any ſeruice with theyr handes or armes for feebleneſſe: So that there was in maner none without ſum diſeaſe. In theſe three monethes and. xx. dayes, they ſayled foure thouſande leaques in one goulfe by the ſayde ſea cauled *Pacificum* (that is) peaceable, whiche may well bee ſo cauled foraſmuch as in all this tyme hauyng no ſyght of any lande, they had no miſſortune of wynde or any other tempeſt. Durynge this tyme alſo, they diſcouered only two little Ilandes vnhabited, where they ſawe nothing but birdes and trees, and therefore named theym infortunate Ilandes, beinge one from the other abowte two hundreth leaques diſtante. The firſte of theſe Ilandes is from the Equinoctial toward the pole Antartike. xv. degrees, and the other fyue. Theyr ſailinge was in ſuche ſorte that they ſailed daily betweene. l. [fifty] lx. [ſixty] to. lxx. [ſeuenty] leaques. So that in fine, if god of his mercy had not gyuen them good wether, it was neceſſary that in this ſoo greate a ſea they ſhuld all haue dyed for hunger. Whiche neuertheleſſe they eſcaped ſoo hardely, that it may bee doubted whether euer the like viage may be attempted with ſo good ſucceſſe.

Diſeases of famen.

221

Vnfortunate Ilandes.

What they ſayled dayly

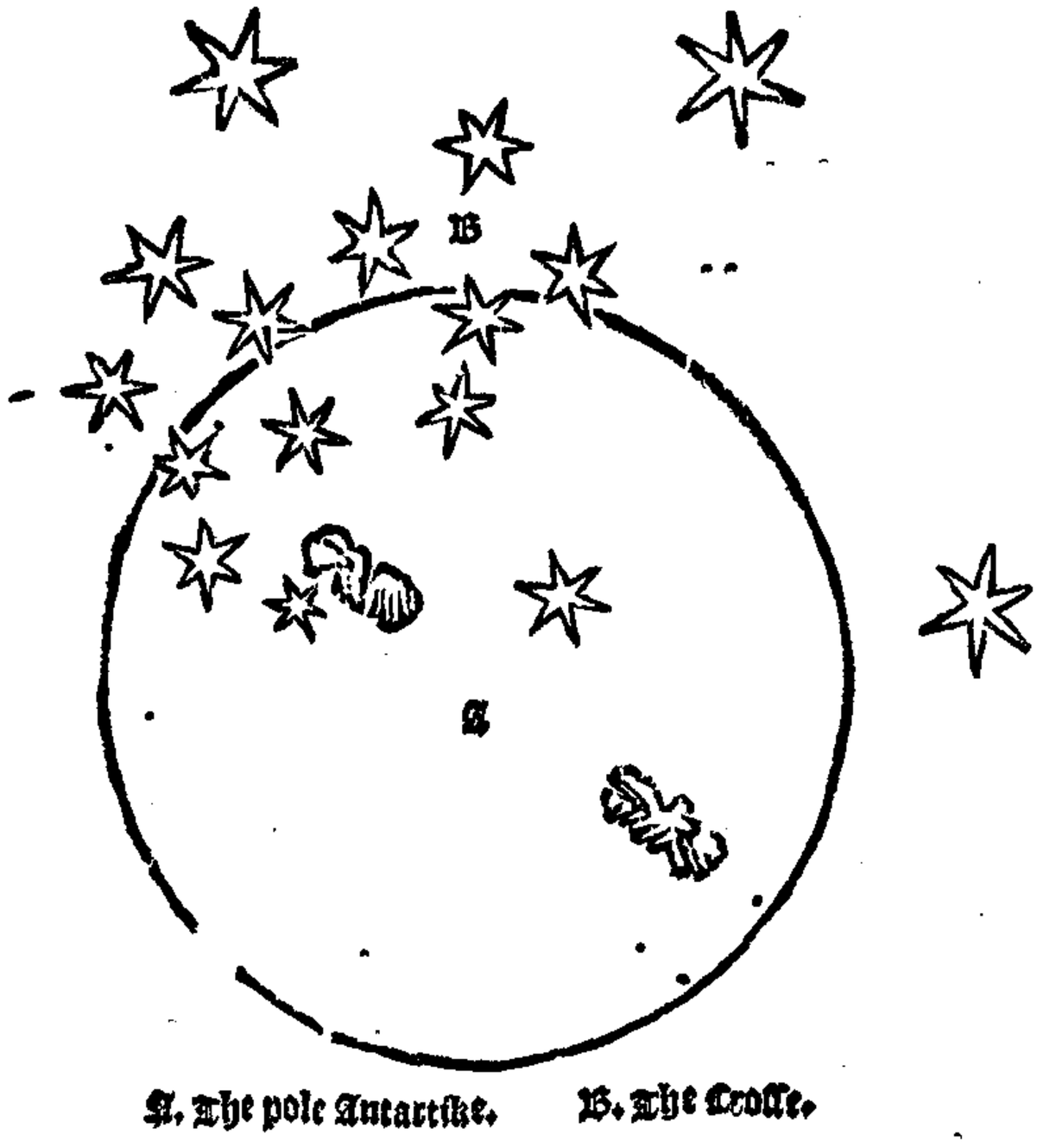
They conſydered in this nauigation that the pole Antartike hath no notable ſtarre after the ſorte of the pole Artike. But they ſawe many ſtarres gathered togyther, whyche are like two clowdes one ſeparate a little from an other, and ſum what darke in the myddeſt. Betweene theſe, are two ſtarres not very bigge, nor muche ſhynninge, whiche moue a little: And theſe two are the pole Antartike. The needell of theyr compaſſe varyed ſumwhat, and turned euer towarde the pole Artike. Neuertheleſſe, had no ſuche force as when it is in theſe partes of the pole Artike. In ſo muche that it was neceſſarie to helpe the needle with the lode ſtone (commonly cauled the adamant) before they could faile therwith, bycauſe it moued not as it doothe when it is in theſe owre partes. When they were in the myddeſt of the goulfe, they ſawe a croſſe of fiue cleare ſtarres directly toward the Weſte, and of equall diſtance the one from the other.

The starres abowt the south pole.

The needle of the coompase.

The lode stone.

The order of the ſtarres abowt the pole Antartike, ſumme haue figured in this maner:



A. The pole Antartike. B. The Croſſe.

222

In theſe dayes they ſayled betwene the Weſt and South ſo farre that they approched to the Equinoctiall line, and were in longitude from the place from whenſe they fyrſt departed, a hundreth and twentie degrees. In this courſe they ſayled by two Ilandes of exceadynge height, wherof the one named *Cipanghu*, is. xx. degrees from the pole Antartike: And the other named *Sumbdit*. xv. degrees. When they were paſt the Equinoctiall line, they ſayled betwene the Weſt and Southweſt at the quarter of the Weſt towarde the Southweſt more then a hundreth leaques, changinge theyr ſayles to the quarter of the Southweſt vntyll they came to the. xiii. degrees aboue the Equinoctial towarde the pole Artyke, intendyng as much as were poſſible, to approche to the cape cauled of the owlde wryters *Cattigara*: The whiche is not founde as the owlde Coſmographers haue deſcribed it, but is towarde the north abowt. xii. degrees as they afterwarde vnderſtode.

The Equinoctial line.

The Ilandes of Cipanghu and Sumbdit

When they had thus ſayled. lxx. [ſeuenty] leaques of this

vyage in the. xii. degree aboue the Equinoctial, and. C.xlvi. [one hundred and forty-ſix] degrees of longitude (as I haue ſayde) the ſyxte day of March they diſcouered a lyttle Ilande towarde the northweſte, and two other towarde the ſouthweſte: but the one was hygher and bygger then the two other. In the byggeſt of theſe, the generall capitayne wolde haue reſted hym ſelfe a whyle: but he coulde not by reaſon the people of theſe Ilands reſorted continually to the ſhippes with theyr canoas, and ſtole nowe one thynge and nowe an other, in ſuch ſorte that owr men could take no reſte, and therfore demaunded of the capitayne that they myght ſtryke theyr ſayles to brynge the ſhyppes to land. But the Capitayne beinge prouoked to anger, wente alande with fortie armed men, and burnte about fiftie of theyr houſes with many of theyr Canoas: And ſlewe alſo abowt ſeuen men, and recouered a ſhyppe boate whiche the Barbarians had ſtolne, and ſo departed folowynge his vyage. The Capitayne named theſe Ilands *Inſulæ Latronum*, that is, the Ilands of theeues. When owr men had ſo wounded ſumme of theym with arrowes that they were ſtryken throughe bothe ſydes, they pulled furth the arrowes not ceaſyng to marueyle at them tyll they fell downe deade: And yet coulde not the other ſo depart, but ſtyll folowed the ſhyppes with more then two hundreth of theyr boates, approchynge as nere to the ſhyppes as they coulde, and proferynge owre men certeyne fyſſhes. As the ſhyppes paſſed with full ſayle in the myddeſte of theyr boates, they ſawe in ſum of them certeyne women lamenting and tearynge theyr heare, which owre men thought they did for the death of theyr huſbandes. As farre as they could perceaue, theſe people lyue at theyr owne libertie without anye ruler or gouernour. They go naked and haue blacke beardes and blacke heare on theyr heades whiche they weare longe downe to theyr waſtes. They are of the ſame ſtature that we are, and well made, of coloure lyke vnto an olyue. Theyr women are well fauored with blacke and thicke heare on theyr heades reachynge to the grownde. The menne coloure theyr teeth redde and blacke, which they eſteeme a coomely thynge. They annoynt theyr bodies and heare with the oyle of *Cocus*. Theyr boates are ſum all blacke, ſum whyte, and ſum redde, and haue ſayles made of the broade leaues of date trees ſowd togyther. In the ſteade of a rudder, they vſe a certeyne brode boorde with a ſtaffe in the toppe, and maye when they wyll, make the ſterne the forecaſtell, or the forecaſtell the ſterne. They ſayle ſo ſwyftely that they ſeeme a farre of, lyke Delphyns ſwymmynge aboue the water.

Insulæ Latronum

The tenth day of March, in the yeare. 1521. they wente alande vppon a lyttle Ilande named *Zamal.* xxx. leaques dyſtant from the Ilande of theeues. Bycauſe this Ilande was not inhabyted, they reſted here a whyle, where the capitayne cauſed a pauilion to bee pytched for the ſicke and craſed men, and a hogge to bee kylde.

People with longe heare

They coloure theyr teethe.

The Ilande of Zamall.

The. xviii. day of Marche, they ſawe a boate with nyne men commynge towarde them ſhewynge theim ſelues ioyfull and reioyſynge of theyr commynge. They brought many preſentes with them, and ſeemed to bee people of much humanitie. They gaue the capitayne a great fyſhe, and a great veſſel of the wyne of thoſe date trees whiche beare the frute *Cocus*. They made alſo ſignes that within the ſpace of foure dayes, they wolde bryng ryſſe and dyuers foules and beaſts as they dyd in deede.

Wyne of date trees.

The maruelous frute Cocus.

This *Cocus* is a frute of certeyne date trees whereof they make breade, wyne, oyle, and vineger. They make wyne in this maner. They cutte a bygge braunche of the tree, and hange therat a reede as bigge as a mans legge, into the which droppeth a ſweete licour from the tree lyke vnto newe whyte wine ſumwhat tart, and let the reede continewe there from mornynge tyll euenynge, and from euenynge to mornynge. The frute of this tree cauled *Cocus*, is as bygge as the head of a man or more. The fyrſte rynde of this, is greene and of the thyckeneſſe of two fyngers, hauynge in it certeyne threedes wherof they make cordes with the which they tye theyr boates. Vnder this rynde, there is a thicke ſhell whiche they burne and make pouder therof and vſe it as a remedie for certeyne diſeaſes. Vnder this ſhell, is a whyte ſubſtaunce lyke the carnell of a nutte lying a fynger in thickeneſſe, which they eate with fleſſhe and fyſſhe as wee doo breade. It hath the taſte of an almonde, and is vſed in the ſteade of breade when it is dryed. In the myddeſt of this carnell, is a cleare and ſweete water, beinge very holſome and cordiale. This water ſumtyme congeleth and lyeth within the ſhell lyke an egge. When they intende to make oyle hereof, they ley it to putrifie in water, and boyle it vntyll it bee lyke oyle or liquide butter. When they intende to make vineger, they ſuffer only the water to putrifie and then ſet it to the ſoonne where it becommeth vineger lyke vnto that which is made of whyte wyne. And when they mengle the carnell with the water which is in the myddeſt of the frute, and ſtrayne it thorowe a cloth, they make a mylke therof lyke vnto goates mylke. Theſe date trees are lyke vnto them that beare dates, but are not ſo full of knottes. With the iuiſe of two of theſe date trees, a hole famelie of tenne perſons may bee maynteyned with wyne vſynge one. viii. dayes, and the other, other. viii. dayes: for they ſhulde els bee dryed and wythered. Theſe trees continue for the ſpace of a hundreth yeares. This Ilande where they founde this humane and gentell people, is cauled *Zuluan*, and is not verye bygge. Abowt this Ilande they founde manye other Ilandes, and therefore named this ſea *Archipelago di San Lazaro*, that is, the great ſea of ſaynte Lazarus, beinge tenne degrees aboue the Equinoctiall towarde owre pole, and. C. lxi. [one hundred and ſixty-one] frome the place from whenſe they departed. The people of this Ilande are *Caphranita* that is gentyles. They go naked ſauynge that they couer theyr priuie partes with a clothe made of the rynde of a certeyne tree. The

223

The Ilande of Zuluan.

The ſea cauled Archipelago di san Lazaro.

Gentyles.

chiefeſt men, haue abowte theyr heades a ſylken cloth of needle woorke. They are groſſe and brode ſet and of the coloure of an oliue. They annoynte theyr bodies with the oyle of *Cocus* to defend them ageynſt the heate of the ſoonne and dryneſſe of the wynde. The. xxv. day of Marche, they departed from henſe and directed theyr courſe betwene the Weſte and ſouthweſt, and ſayled betwene foure Ilandes named *Cenalo*, *Huinanghan*, *Hibuſſon*, and *Abarien.* etc.

Foure Ilands

The. xxviii. daye of Marche, they came to the Ilande of *Buthuan* where they were honorably interteyned of the Kynge and the Prince his ſoonne who gaue theim muche golde and ſpices. The capitayne gaue the kynge a veſture of red clothe and an other of yelowe made after the Turkyſſhe faſſhyon, and alſo a red cappe. And gaue likewiſe to other that came with hym, certeyne knyues, glaſſes, and beades of criſtalle: After that, the capitayne had ſhewed the Kynge the ſecreates of his ſhippe and ſuche marchaundies as he had therin, he cauſed a piece of ordinaunce ſuddenly to bee ſhote of, whereat the kyng was greately amaſed vntil the capitayne comforted hym. Then the Capitaine commaunded one of his men to be armed from the heade to the foote, and cauſed three other to ſtrike hym with theyr ſwoordes, whereat the Kynge maruayled greately, and ſayde to th[e]interpretoure (who was a ſlaue borne in Malacha) that one of thoſe armed men was able to encounter with a hundreth of his men. But he maruayled muche more when the capitaine tould hym by th[e]interpretoure howe he founde the ſtraight by the compaſſe and lode ſtone, and howe many dayes they were without ſight of any lande. Then aſkynge licence to departe, the capitayne ſente two of his men with him, of the whiche Antonie Pigafetta was one. When the kynge ſawe Antonie Pigafetta write the names of many thinges, and afterwarde rehearſe them ageyne, he maruayled yet more, makynge ſygnes that ſuche men deſcended from heauen. The Kynge brought them firſte to his pallaice where he interteyned them honorably and gaue them manye gyftes, as dyd alſo the Prince in his pallaice beynge in an other Ilande named *Caleghan.*

The Iland of Buthuan.

The Iland of Caleghan.

As they ſyfted a certeyne myne of earthe in the Kynges Ilande, they founde pieces of golde, ſum as bigge as nuttes and other as bigge as egges. All the kynges veſſelles were of golde, and his houſe well furnyſſhed. In all the hole nation there was no man of coomlier perſonage then the kinge. He had his heare long downe to his ſhulders, and very blake, with a vaile of ſilke rowled abowte his head, and two greate ringes of golde hanginge at his eares. He had abowte hys myddle, a clothe wroughte of cotton and ſilke impaled wyth golde, and reacheinge downe to his knees. On his one ſyde, he had a long dager with a hafte of golde, and the ſhethe of a fayre kynde of carued woodde. He had on euery finger, three ringes of golde, and had his bodie annoynted with oyle of ſtorax and Beniamin. The natural coloure of his face was like vnto the coloure of an oliue: And all his bodye byſyde paynted with diuers colours. The kynges name was Raia Colambu, and the Prince was cauled Raia Siagu.

Plentie of golde.

224

The kynge of Buthuan.

The laſte day of Marche neare vnto Eaſter, the capitaine cauſed his preeſte to ſay maſſe, and ſente to the kinge by th[e]interpretoure, that his commyng a lande at that tyme was not to dyne with hym, but only to heare maſſe. The Capitayne came alande with fyftie of his men in theyr beſt apparel withowte weapons or harneſſe, and all the reſydue well armed. Before the boates came to lande, he cauſed ſixe pieces of ordinaunce to be ſhotte of in token of peace, and ſo came aland, where the two kinges embraſed hym, and accompanyed hym to the place appoynted for maſſe to be ſayde not farre frome the ſea ſyde. Sumwhat before the beginnynge of maſſe, the Capitayne ſprinkeled the Kynges with damaſke water. When the preeſte was at mid maſſe at the offitorie, the kings profered them ſelues to go to kyſſe the croſſe with the capytayne, but offered nothynge. At the tyme of facringe when the preeſte lifted vppe the bodie of Chriſt, and the Chriſtians kneeled downe and helde vppe their handes ioyned togither, the kynges dyd the like alſo wyth greate reuerence. In the meane tyme, whyle certeyne of the Chriſtians were at the communion, a handegunne was ſhotte of to ſignifie vnto theym that were in the ſhyppes, to diſcharge all theyr ordinaunce. When maſſe was fynyſſhed, the Capitaine cauſed certeyne of his men to put on theyr harneſſe and to make a combat with theyr naked ſwoordes, wherat the kynges tooke great pleaſure. This doone, the Capitaine cauſed a croſſe to be brought furth, with nayles and a crowne of thornes, gyuynge commaundement to all his men to gyue reuerence therunto, and ſignifyinge to the kynges by th[e]interpretour that that banner was gyuen hym by Th[e]emperoure his lorde and maſter, with commaundement to leaue the ſame in al places where he came to the great commoditie and profite of all ſuch as wolde reuerendly receaue it as an aſſured token of frendſhip: And that he wold therfore leaue it there aſwel to accomplyſhe his lords commaundement, as alſo that if at any tyme any ſhyppes of Chriſtians ſhulde chaunce to coome that way, ſhulde by ſeing that croſſe perceaue that owre men had byn well enterteyned there, and wolde therfore not onely abſteyne from doing them any hurte or diſpleaſure, but alſo helpe to ayde them ageynſte theyr enemies. And that therfore it ſhulde bee requiſite to erecte that croſſe vppon the toppe of the hygheſte mountayne that myght bee ſeene from the ſea on euery ſyde. Alſo to pray vnto it reuerently. And that in ſo doinge, they ſhulde not bee hurte with thunder, lyghtnynge, or tempeſtes. When the kynges harde theſe woordes, they gaue the Capitayne great thankes, promyſinge gladly to obſerue and fulfyll all ſuche thynges as he required. Then the Capitayne demaunded whether they were Moores or gentyles. They anſwered that

Masse.

A combatte.

The Crosse and crowne of thornes

Moores and gentyles.

they had none other kynde of religion, but that lyftynge vppe theyr handes ioyned togyther and theyr faces toward heauen, they cauled vppon theyr god *Abba*, whiche anſwere lyked the Capitayne very well, bycauſe the gentyles are ſooner perſuaded to owre fayth then the Moores. etc.

Many Ilands

Departynge from henſe, they came to the Ilandes of *Zeilon*, *Zubuth*, *Meſſana*, and *Calaghan*, by the conducte of certeyne pylottes of the ſayde kynges. Of theſe, *Zubuth* is the beſte, and hath the trade of beſte trafique.

The Iland of Messana.

In the Ilande of *Meſſana*, they founde dogges, cattes, hogges, hennes, goates, ryſe, ginger, Cocus, mylle, panyke, barlye, fygges, oranges, waxe, and golde in greate quantitie. This Ilande is aboue the Equinoctiall towarde owre pole. ix. degrees twoo thyrde partes: and. 162. degrees frome the place frome whenſe they departed. They remayned in this Iland for the ſpace of. viii. dayes, and then directed theyr vyage towarde the northweſt, and paſſed betwene theſe fyue Ilandes, *Zeilon*, *Bohol*, *Canghu*, *Barbai*, and *Catighan*. In this Ilande of *Catighan*, are certeyne great battes as bygge as Eagles, of the which they toke one. They are good to bee eaten, and of taſte muche lyke a henne. There are alſo ſtocke dooues, turtle dooues, popingiayes, and certeyne foules as bygge as hennes. Theſe foules haue lyttle hornes, and lay great egges, which they couer a cubet depthe in the ſande, by the heate whereof and vertue of the ſoonne, they are hatched, and the younge byrdes creepe owte of the ſande by them ſelues. From the Ilande of *Meſſana* to *Catighan* are. xx. leaques ſaylynge towarde the Weſt. And bycauſe the kynge of Meſſana coulde not folowe the ſhyppes, they taryed for him about the Ilandes of *Polo*, *Ticobon*, and *Pozon*, where the Capitayne tooke hym into his ſhippe with certeyne of his principall men, and ſo folowed theyr vyage towarde the Ilande of *Zubut*, whiche is abowte fiftie leaques diſtante from *Catighan*.

Battes as bygge as Eagles.
Fowles with hornes.
225
Egges hatched in sand.
The Ilande of Zubut.

The. vii. day of Apryll abowte noone, they entered into the porte of *Zubut*: And paſſynge by many vyllages and habitacions in trees, they came to the citie, where the Capitayne gaue commaundement to the maryners to ſtryke theyr ſayles and to ſet them ſelues in order in maner of battayle ray, cauſing all the ordinaunce to bee ſhotte of, wherewith all the people were put in greate feare. After this, the Capitayne ſent an ambaſſadoure with th[e]interpretoure to the kynge of *Zubut*. When they approched nere to the citie, they founde the kyng with a great company of men ſore aſtonyſhed at the noyſe of the gunnes. But th[e]interpretour aduertiſed them that it was the cuſtome of owre men in al ſuche places where they coome, to diſcharge theyr ordinaunce in token of frendeſhyppe and to honour the lorde of the citie. With which woordes the kyng and his coompany were well quieted. After this, th[e]interpretour declared that his maſter was the Capitayne of the ſhips of the greateſt Prince in the worlde, and that they wente to diſcouer the Ilandes of Molucca: And further, that hearyng of his good name and fame by the reporte of the kyng of Meſſana, they determyned to viſite hym and to haue vyttayles for exchaunge of theyr marchaundies. The kynge anſwered that he was well contented therwith, and that they were hartely welcoome. Neuertheleſſe, that it was a cuſtome in that place, that all ſuch ſhyppes as entered into that hauen, ſhuld pay tribute: And that there were not many dayes paſte, ſence a ſhyppe laden with golde and ſlaues dyd ſo paye. In token wherof, he cauſed to coome before hym certeyne marchauntes of that coompany whiche yet remayned with hym. To this th[e]interpretour anſwered, that foraſmuch as his lorde was the Capitayne of ſo myghtie a Prince, he neuer payde tribute to any kynge in the worlde, and wolde not nowe begynne. Wyllynge hym to take this for a reſolute anſwere, that if he wolde accepte the peace that was profered hym, he ſhulde enioy it, And if he rather deſyred warre, he ſhoulde haue his handes full. When th[e]interpretour had ſayde theſe woordes, one of the ſayde marchauntes (who was a Moore) ſpake to the kynge in this maner. CATACAIA *Chita*: that is. Take hede fyr. For theſe men are they that haue conquered Calicut, Malaca, and all the greater India: and are of ſuche poure that yf yowe intreate them otherwyſe then well, yowe may to late knowe what they are able to doo more then they haue doone at Calicut and Malaca. When th[e]interpretoure harde theſe woordes, he ſayde that the kynge his lorde was of much greater puiſſaunce and more dominions, and lorde of more ſhyppes then was the kynge of Portugale: declarynge further that he was kynge of Spayne and Emperour of all Chriſtendome Addynge hereunto that yf he wolde not bee his frende, he wolde hereafter ſende thyther ſuche a poure of armed men as ſhulde deſtroy his contrey. The Moore conferred all theſe woordes with the kynge, who ſayde that he wolde further deliberate with his counſayle, and gyue theym a full anſwere the daye folowynge. In the meane tyme he ſente theym certeyne vyttayles and wyne. When all theſe thynges were declared to the kynge of Meſſana who was the chiefeſt there abowt nexte vnto hym, and lorde of many Ilandes, he wente alande and repayred to the kynge of *Zubut* and declared vnto hym the great humanitie and curteſie of the generall Capitayne. Shortely after, the Capitayne ſente certeyne of his men with th[e]interpretour to the kynge of *Zubut* to knowe his pleaſure and what aunſwere he wolde make them. As they wente towarde the courte, they mette the kynge commyng in the ſtreete accompanied with many of his chiefe men. He cauſed owr men to ſit downe by him, and demaunded of them if there were any more then one Capitayne in theyr coompanie: And whether it were theyr requeſte that he ſhulde pay tribute to Th[e]emperour. They anſwered that they deſyred none other thynge but that they myght exerciſe marchaundies with them, and to barter ware for ware. The kynge

A shyp laden with gold and slaues.

Calicut.
Malacha.

made anſwere that he was well content therwith: wyllynge the Capitayne in token of frendſhippe to ſende him a little of the blud of his ryght arme, affirmyng that he wold do the lyke. etc.

Sheadyng of bludde is a token of frendshyppe 226

After this the kynge of Meſſana with the kynge of *Zubut* his neuie (who was the prince) and certeyne other of his gentylmen, came to the ſhyppes and brought the Capitayne many goodly preſentes. They entered into greate amitie, and had large communication of many thynges. The Capitayne perſuaded them to the Chriſtian fayth, which they gladly embraſed, and tooke ſuche pleaſure in hearynge the articles of owre beliefe, that the teares fell from theyr eyes for ioye. They were baptiſed, and ſhortely after all the people of the Ilande. They eſteeme nothyng more precious then drynkyng glaſſes of Venice woorke.

The kynge of Zubut is baptised

When they came to the citie, they founde the kyng in his pallaice ſittynge vppon a floure or ſtuorié made of the leaues of date trees wrought after a curious diuiſe lyke a certeyne kynde of mattes. He had vppon his body, none other apparell but only a cloth of bombaſine cotton hangyng before his priuie partes. On his heade, he had a vayle of needle worke: and abowte his necke a chaine of greate price. At his eares, hunge two rynges of golde wherein were incloſed many precious ſtones. He was but of ſmaule ſtature, but ſumewhat groſſe, and had the reſidue of his body paynted with dyuers coloures wherof ſum were lyke vnto flamynge fyre. Before hym, he had two veſſelles made of the fine earth cauled *Porcellana*, with ſodden egges. Alſo four veſſels of *Porcellana* full of wyne made of date trees, and couered with many odoriferous herbes. The prince brought them to his houſe, where he had foure doughters verye well fauoured and whyte lyke owres. He cauſed them to daunce all naked, and therwith to ſynge, and play on certeyne tymbrelles made of metall.

The kynge of Zubut his apparell

Well fauoured women.

At this tyme it ſo chaunced that one of the Spanyardes dyed in one of the ſhyppes. And when certeyne of theyr coompanye deſyred the kynge to gyue them leaue to burie hym on the land, he anſwered that foraſmuch as he and all his, were at the commaundement of theyr kynge and maſter, how much more ought the grounde ſo to be.

They greatly marueyled at the cerimonies perteynyng to the maner of owre funeralles, and honoured the croſſes whiche were ſet at bothe th[e]endes [of] the graue.

They lyue with iuſtice, and vſe waightes and meaſures. Theyr houſes are made of Timber and ſawne boordes: and are ſo buylded aboue the grownde vppon proppes and pyles, that they aſcende to the ſame by certeyne ſtayers. Vnder theyr houſes, they keepe theyr hogges and hennes.

When they came to barterynge, they gaue golde, ryſſe, hogges, hennes, and dyuers other thynges for ſume of owre tryfels of ſmaule value. They gaue tenne *Peſos* of golde for. xvi. poundes weyght of iren. One *peſus* is in value a ducate and a halfe. The ſunday folowynge, the kynge was baptyſed with great ſolemnitie. At which tyme, the Capitayne admonyſſhed him before not to bee afrayde at the ſhootyng of of the ordinaunce, bycauſe it was theyr cuſtome ſo to doo at ſuch ſolemne feaſtes. After this, the Capitayne cauſed theym to breake all theyr Idoles, and to ſet vppe the croſſe in dyuers placcs, prayinge to the ſame bothe mornynge and euenynge kneelynge on theyr knees and holdynge vp theyr handes ioyned togyther. The kinge in his baptiſme, was named Charles after the Emperours name, and the Prince, Ferdinando after the name of his maieſties brother. The kynge of Meſſana was named Iohn, and the Moore Chriſtopher. To all other they gaue ſuch names as are commonly vſed in Chriſtendome. And thus beefore maſſe was begunne, were fiue hundreth men baptiſed. When maſſe was fynyſſhed, the Capitayne inuited the kynge to dyne with him in his ſhyppe, and at his commynge, cauſed the ordinaunce to bee diſcharged.

Barterynge

Pesus what.

They breake theyr Idoles and erecte the crosse.

Fyue hundreth men baptised.

The queene was alſo baptiſed with fortie of her gentlewomen, and her doughter the Princes wife. The queene was very younge and fayre, hauynge her body couered with a white cloth. Her lyppes were redde, and ſhe had on her head a hat, on the toppe wherof was a triple crowne much lyke the popes This crowne and the hat, were made of the leues of dates trees.

The queene of Zubut.

Within the ſpace of. viii. dayes, th[e]inhabitauntes of the Ilande were baptiſed excepte one vyllage of Idolaters who wolde not herein obey the kynges commaundement. Whervppon the Capitayne ſent certeyne of his menne thyther, who burnt the towne and erected a croſſe in that place bycauſe the people of the vyllage were gentyles (that is) Idolaters. But if they had byn Moores (that is Machumetiſtes) they wold haue erected a pyller of ſtone, bycauſe the Moores are more ſtooberne and harder to bee conuerted then are the gentyles.

When the queene came to the place where ſhee ſhuld heare maſſe, ſhee came furth with great pompe and ſolemnitie, hauynge goinge before her three younge damoſelles and three men with theyr cappes in theyr handes, whom ſhee folowed apparelled in whyte and blacke, with a great vayle of ſylke vppon her heade fringed abowte with golde, whiche couered her hatte and hunge downe to her ſhoulders. Shee had alſo a great trayne of women folowynge her, beinge all barefooted and naked, excepte that vppon theyr heades and priuie partes, they wore certeyne vayles of ſilke, and hadde theyr heare ſpredde.

227

The queenes apparell.

Before the kynge of *Zubut* was baptiſed, he was named Raia Humabuon. When the Capitayne demaunded of hym why all the Idoles in the Ilande were not burnt accordynge to his promeſſe, he anſwered that they eſteemed them no more as goddes, but only made ſacrifice to theym for the Princes brother who was very ſycke.

and as noble and wyttie a man as was in the Ilande. The Capitayne anſwered that if he wolde burne al his Idoles and beleue faythfully in Chriſt, and bee baptiſed, he ſhulde be immediatly reſtored to health, and that he wolde els gyue them leaue to ſtryke of his heade. By theſe woordes and perſuaſions of the Capitayne, he conceaued ſuch hope of health, that after he was baptiſed he felt no more greefe of his diſeaſe. And this was a manifeſt myracle wrought in owre tymē wherby dyuers infidels were conuerted to owr fayth, and theyr Idoles deſtroyed, and alſo theyr altares ouerthrowen on the whiche they were accuſtomed to eate the ſacrifyced fleſſhe. The people of the Ilande pay the kynge a portion of vittayles for theyr tribute by all theyr cities and vyllages.

A miracle.

The Iland of Mathan.

Not farre from this Ilande of *Zubut*, is the Iland of *Mathan*, whoſe inhabitauntes vſe maruelous cerimonies in theyr ſacrifices to the ſoonne and burying the deade. They were rynges of golde abowt theyr priuie members. The Ilande is gouerned by two Princes wherof the one is named *Zula*, and the other *Cilapulapu*. And wheras this *Cilapulapu* refuſed to pay tribute to the kynge of Spayne, the Capitayne went ageynſt hym in his owne perſon with. lx. of his menne armed with coates of mayle and helmettes. Cilapulapu diuided his army into three battayles, hauynge in euery battaile two thouſand and fiftie men armed with bowes, arrowes, dartes and iauelins hardened at the poyntes with fyer. This continued longe and ſharpe. But the Capitayne beinge a valient man and preſynge hym ſelfe in the brunte of the battayle, was ſore wounded and ſlayne, foraſmuch as the moſte of the Barbarians directed all theyr force ageynſt hym. Beſyde the Capitayne, were ſlayne of owre men abowt. viii. or. ix. Of the Barbarians, were. xv. ſlayne and many ſore wounded. After the death of the Capitayne, they choſe two other in his place, of the which one was Odoardo Barbeſſa a Portugale, and the other Iohn Serrano who was ſhortely after betrayde by th[e]interpretour and taken priſoner with dyuers other.

The capitaine Magellanus is slayne.

Certeyne dayes before the Capitaynes death, they hadde knowleage of the Ilandes of Molucca, whiche they chiefely ſought. Departynge therfore from the Ilande of Mathan, they ſayled farre and came to the cape of an other Iland named *Bohol*. In the myddeſt of this mayne ſea (whiche they named *Archipelagus*) they conſulted to burne the ſhyppe named Conception, bycauſe they were nowe fewe in number, and to furnyſhe the other two ſhyppes with th[e]artillerie therof. Thus directynge theyr courſe towarde Southeweſt, they came to an other Ilande named *Pauiloghon*, where they founde blacke men lyke vnto the Saraſins. Shortly after, they arriued at an other great Iland, whoſe kyng named Raia Calauar, intreated them very frendely in all thynges as dyd the kyng of Meſſana. This Ilande is ryche in golde, and hath plentie of ryſſe, gynger, hogges, goates, hennes, and dyuers other thynges. It is named *Chippit*, and is. viii. degrees aboue the Equinoctiall line towarde owr pole: And in longitude from the place from whenſe they firſt departed. 170. degrees: And abowt. 50. leaques from *Zubut*.

The Iland of Bohol.

They burnte one of theyr shyppes.

Blacke men.

The Iland of Chippit.

Departinge frome henſe they came to an other Iland named *Caghaian* being. 40. leaques from Chippit as they ſayled betwene the weſte and Southe weſte. This Ilande is very greate, and in maner vnhabited. The people are moores, and were banyſſhed owt of the Ilande of *Burnei* whiche ſum caule *Porne*.

The Iland of Caghaian.

Frome this Ilande aboute. xxv. leaques betwene the weſt and northeweſte, they founde a maruelous frutefull Ilande named *Pulaoan*, beinge towarde owr pole aboue the Equinoctiall. ix. degrees and a thirde parte: And C.lxxix. [one hundred and ſeventy-nine] degrees and a third parte in longitude frome the place of theyr departing.

The Iland of Pulaoan.

228

Frome this Ilande. x. leaques towarde the South weſte, they ſawe an other Ilande whiche ſeemed to them ſumtymes to mounte as they ſayled by the coaſtes therof. As they were enteringe into the porte, there aroſe a boyſtious and darke tempeſte which ceaſed as ſoone as the fiers of the three ſayntes (wherof we haue ſpoken before) appeared vppon the cabells. Frome the beginninge of this Ilande to the porte, are fyue leaques. This Ilande is greate and riche: and the chiefe citie therof conteyneth. xxv. thouſande houſes. The kynge interteyned owre men very frendlye, and ſent them byſyde many other preſentes, two elephantes trapped with ſilke to bring them to his pallaice that brought the preſentes which the Capytaynes ſent hym. He hath a magnyfycalle courte and a greate garde. Alſo a multitude of concubynes. He is a moore, and is named Raia Siripada. He is a kynge of greate poure, and hath vnder hym many other kynges, Ilandes, and cities. This Ilande of *Burnei* is aboue the Equinoctiall towarde owre pole fyue degrees and a quarter. And in longitude frome the place of theyr departyng. C. lxxvi. [one hundred and ſeventy-ſix] degrees and two thirde partes.

The Iland of Burnei or Porne.

A great citie.

Elephantes

Departinge frome *Burnei*, they came to an Ilande cauled *Cimbubon*, beinge. viii. degrees aboue the Equinoctiall lyne Here they remayned. xl. days to calke theyr ſhyppes and furnyſſhe them with freſſhe water and fuell whiche was to them great payne and trauayle becauſe they were in maner all bare footed, theyr ſhooes and in maner theyr other apparell being worne by reaſon of the longe vyage. In the wooddes of this Ilande, they founde a tree whoſe leaues as ſoone as they faule on the grounde, doo ſturre and remoue frome place to place as though they were alyue. They are muche lyke the leaues of a mulbery tree: And haue on euery ſyde as it were two ſhort and blunt fiete. When they are cut or broken, there is no bludde ſeene come furth of them. Yet when any of them are touched, they ſuddeynely moue and ſtarte away. Antonie Pigafetta kepte one of them in a platter for the ſpace of. viii. dayes. And euer when he touched it, it ranne rounde abowt the platter. He ſuppoſeth that they liue only by ayer.

The Iland of Cimbulon.

Leaues of trees which seeme to liue.

Departynge from henſe, they directed theyr courſe by the Weſte quarter towarde the Southeaſte, to ſynde the Ilandes of Molucca, and ſayled not farre from certeyne mountaynes where they founde the ſea full of great weedes and herbes.

A sea full of weedes.

From henſe, they came to the Ilandes of *Zolo* and *Taghima*, in the which are founde perles of exceadyng biggeneſſe.

Perles.

Folowyng theyr courſe toward the north Eaſt, they came to a great citie named *Mangdando*, lyinge aboue the Ilandes of *Buthuan* and *Calaghan*, where thĕy tooke a canoa of certeyne of th[e]inhabitaunts: by whome being informed of the Ilandes of *Molucca*, they lefte theyr courſe towarde the north Eaſte, and folowed the South eaſte nere vnto a cape of the Iland of *Buthuan*, they were aduertiſed for certentie that on the bankes of a certeyne ryuer, there dwelte men ouergrowen with heare, and of hĩgh ſtaturẽ.

Men ouergrowen with heare.

Folowyng ſtill theyr courſe by the ſouth eaſte, and paſſyng by many ſmaule Ilandes, they came to the Ilandes of *Molucca* the ſyxte daye of Nouember and the. xxvii. monethe after theyr departure owt of Spayne. Beinge therfore ioyfull and gyuyng thankes vnto god, they diſcharged all theyr ordynaunce. In the coaſte of all theſe Ilandes, euen vnto the Ilandes of Molucca, ſoundyng with theyr plummet, they founde the deapthe of the ſea to bee no leſſe then a hundreth and two yardes, which is contrary to the ſaying of the Portugales who affyrme that no ſhyppe can paſſe that way without great daungioure by reaſon of the ſhalownes and rockes or ſhelues: and for the darkeneſſe which the clowdes cauſe in the heauen. All which thyngs they fayned to th[e]intent that none other ſhulde haue knoweleage of theyr vyagies.

The Ilandes of Molucca.

The Portugales are reproued.

The. viii. day of Nouember in the yeare. 1521. before the ryſinge of the ſoonne, they entered into the porte of the Ilande of *Tidore*, being one of the chiefe Ilandes of Molucca, where they were honorably interteyned of the kynge who declared that he had longe before ſeene a ſygne in heauen that certeyne ſhyppes ſhuld comme from a farre contrey to the Ilandes of Molucca: And that wheras for the better certificat therof he conſydered the ſtations of the moone, he ſawe therin the commyng of owre ſhyppes, and that we were the men whome he ſeemed to ſee in the ſame. Wherupon he profered hym ſelfe to enter into leaque of frendſhyppe with the kynge of Spayne, and to accepte owre men as his brotherne and chyldren: wyllyng them to come alande as into theyr owne houſes. Alſo that for theyr commyng, that Ilande ſhulde no more bee cauled *Tidore*, but Caſtile for the greate loue whiche he bore to theyr kynge whom he reputed as his lorde and maſter. This kynge is a Moore, and is named Raia Sultan Mauzor.

Tidore one of the Ilandes of Molucca.

A vision in the planettes

229

The Ilandes of Molucca are fiue in number, and are thus named: *Tarenate*, *Tidore*, *Mutir*, *Macchian*, and *Bacchian*. Of theſe, *Tarenate* is the chiefeſt.

The fyue Ilandes of molucca.

Tarenate.

Directly ageynſte the Ilande of *Tidore*, there is an other great Ilande named *Gilolo*, inhabited of Moores and Gentyles. The Moores haue two kynges, of the which one hath ſyxe hundreth chyldren, and the other ſixe hundreth and fiftie. The Gentyles kepe not ſo many women as doo the Moores nor yet lyue in ſuche ſuperſtitions. They praye to the fyrſte thynge that they meete in the mornynge when they go furth of theyr houſes, and honoure that as theyr god for that day. The kynge of the gentyles is very ryche in golde. In the ſayde Ilande of *Gilolo*, are reedes as bygge as a mans legge, and full of cleare water holſome to bee drunke.

The Iland of *Gilolo.*

Moores and gentyles.

Golde.

Water in reedes.

The. xii. daye of Nouember, the kynge of Tidore appoynted owre men a ware houſe in the citie where they might ſell theyr marchaundies. Theyr maner of exchange was in this ſort. For tenne yardes of good redde cloth, they had one Bahar of cloues, whiche amounteth to foure Cantari and ſyxe pounde weight: And one Cantar is a hundreth pounde weight. For. xv. yardes of cloth ſumwhat woorſe then the other, they receaued in Cambie, one Bahar. For. xxxv. drynkynge cuppes of glaſſe, they had one Bahar. For. xvii. Cathyls of quicke ſyluer, one Bahar. They came dayly to the ſhyppes with many of theyr barkes full of goates, hennes, fygges of a ſpanne longe, alſo the frute cauled *Cocus*, with dyuers other kynĩdes of vyttayles in ſuch quantitie that it was a marueylous thynge to beholde. They furnyſſhed alſo theyr ſhyppes with freſſhe water which is hotte as it iſſheweth owt of the ſprynge, but is very coulde when it hath ſtoode a while in an other place. It ſpryngeth from the mountaynes on the which the cloue trees growe. They ſawe a cloude ryſe in maner dayly, which compaſeth about the ſayde mountaynes.

Theyr maner of barteringe.

Water of a straunge qualitie

The kynge of the Ilande of *Bacchian*, ſente the kynge of Spayne two deade byrdes of ſtraunge forme. They were of the byggenes of turtle dooues, with lyttle heades and longe bylles: alſo longe and ſmaule legges and no wynges, but in the ſteade therof certeyne longe fethers of diuers colours, and tayles lyke turtle dooues. All the other fethers are of one coloure much lyke vnto tawny, except thoſe of the wynges. They flye not but when the wynde bloweth. Theſe Moores are of opinion that theſe byrdes comme from the heauenlye Paradyſe, and therfore caule them *Manuccodiata*, that is the byrdes of god.

Byrdes of a straunge ferme

When they were determyned to depart from the Ilandes of Molucca, certeyne kynges of the Ilandes accompanied them with theyr canoas, and conducted them to an Ilande cauled *Mare* where they refreſſhed theyr ſhyppes with freſhe water and fuell. The kynges ſent Th[e]emperours maieſtie many preſentes: and embraſynge owre menne, departed with the teares in theyr eyes: And owre men for theyr laſte farewell, ſhotte

They leaue one of theyr shyppes behynd them.

of all theyr ordinaunce. When in the Ilande of *Mare*, they perceaued that one of theyr ſhyppes leaked and toke water very ſore: wherby they were inforced to tary there three dayes. But ſeinge that they coulde fynde no remedie for the ſame but in longe tyme, they determined to leaue it, gyuynge order that if afterwarde it coulde bee repayred, they ſhuld returne into Spayne as well as they coulde.

The Ilandes of Molucca. Hony of flyes.

In all the Ilandes of Molucca is founde cloues, ginger, breade of the roote of Sagu, ryſe, goates, ſheepe, hennes, fygges, almondes, ſweete pomegranates and ſowre, oranges, lemondes, and hony which is made of certeyne flyes leſſe then antes: Alſo canes of ſuger, oyle of Cocus, mellons, gourdes, and a marueilous coulde frute which they name Camulicai and dyuers other frutes. Furthermore whyte and redde popingiayes, and other of variable coloures. It is not paſte fiftie yeares ſence the moores fyrſte inhabited anye of theſe Ilands, which were before inhabited only with gentyles.

Popingiayes.

The Iland of Tidore.

The Ilande of Tidore, is aboue the Equinoctiall line towarde owre pole, abowt. 27. minutes: And in longitude from the place from whenſe they departed. 171. degrees. And from the *Archipelagus* in the which is the Ilaſid of *Zamal* which our men named the Iland of theeues. ix. degrees and a halfe, and runneth to the quarter of ſouth ſouthweſt, and north northeaſt. *Terenate*, is vnder the Equinoctial line ſoure minutes vnder the poſe Antartike. *Mutir*, is directly vnder the Equinoctiall line. *Macchian* is. xv. minutes toward the pole Antartike, and *Bacchian* one degree. Theſe Ilandes are lyke foure ſharpe mountaynes, except *Macchian* which is not ſharpe. The byggeſt of all theſe, is *Bacchian*.

Terenate.
Mutir.
Macchian.
230
Bacchian.

Many Ilands

Departynge from the Iland of *Mare* and directyng their courſe towarde the ſouthweſt, with onely. xlvi. men in theyr ſhyppe and. xiii. Indians, they paſſed by the Ilandes of Chacouan, Lagoma, Sico, Gioghi, Caphi, Sulacho, Lumatola, Tenetum, Buru, Ambon, Budia, Celaruri, Benaia, Ambalao, Bandan, Zorobua, Zolot, Noceuamor, Galian, and Mallua, with dyuers other Ilandes both great and ſmaule, of Moores, Gentyles, and Canibales. Owre men remayned xv. dayes in the Ilande of Mallua to repayre theyr ſhyppe in certeyne places where it tooke water. All the fieldes of this Ilande is full of longe and rounde pepper, and is ſituate towarde the pole Antartike vnder the Equinoctiall line. viii. degrees and a halfe, and is in the longitude of. 169. degrees and. 40. minutes.

The Iland of Mallua. Pepper.

Lyttle men with longe eares.

The pilote which owre men brought owt of the Ilandes of Molucca, toulde them that not farre from thenſe, was an Iland named Arucetto in the which are men and women not paſt a cubite in height, hauynge eares of ſuch byggeneſſe that they lye vppon one and couer them with the other. But owr men wolde not ſayle thyther, bothe bycauſe the wynde and courſe of the ſea was ageynſte theym, and alſo for that they gaue no credite to his reporte.

The Iland of Timor. Whyte sanders and ginger.

The. xxv. day of Ianuary in the yeare. 1522. they departed from Mallua, and the day folowyng, arryued at a greate Iland named *Timor*, beinge fiue leaques diſtante from Mallua betwene the ſouth and ſouthweſt. In this Ilande is founde the woodde of whyte ſanders and ginger, and dyuers kindes of frutes. Alſo ſundry kyndes of beaſtes, and plentie of vyttayle and golde. They of the Ilandes of *Giaua*, *Molucca*, and *Lozon*, reſort to this Ilande for ſanders. Th[e]inhabitauntes are gentyles. They ſay that when they go to cut the woodde of ſaunders, the deuyll appeareth to them in dyuers formes and aſketh theym what they haue neede of: And that after this viſion, many of them are longe ſicke. In al the Ilandes of this Archipelagus, rayneth the diſeaſe of ſaynt Iob (whiche wee caule the frenche poxe) more then in any other place in the worlde.

The deuyll appeareth. Saynt Iob his disease.

Farre from this Ilande betwene the weſt and northweſt they came to an Ilande named *Eude*, in the whiche growethe great plentie of Sinamome. In this tracte are founde manye Ilandes lying in order as it were one directly behynde an other, euen vnto the Ilande of the greater *Giaua*, named *Giaua maior*, and vnto the cape of *Malaccha*, beinge in Eaſt India. *Giaua* the leſſe, is as bygge as the Ilande of *Madera*, and is but halfe a leaque diſtante from *Giaua maior*. Here they were informed that aboue *Giaua maior* toward the north, is a great goulfe cauled the goulfe of *China*, in the which are trees of exceadyng byggeneſſe, inhabyted with foules of ſuche greatenes that they cary great beaſtes in the ayer. The frutes of theſe trees are as bygge as cucummers.

Cinamome
The Ilandes of Giaua.
Malaccha.

The greate goulfe of China.

The cape of Malaccha.

The cape of *Malaccha* is one degree and a halfe aboue the Equinoctiall line towarde the pole Artike. On the Eaſt ſide of this cape, runneth a very longe coaſte in the which are many regions and cities wherof ſum are cauled by theſe names, *Cingaporla* which is the cape. Alſo *Pahan*, *Calantan*, *Patani*, *Braalin*, *Beneu*, *Longon*, and *Odia* wherin is the citie in the which dwelleth the kynge of *Sian* named *Zacabedera*. Theyr cities are builded as owres are, and ſubiecte to the kynge of *Sian*. After the realme of *Sian*, are the regions of *Iamgoma* and *Campaa* where Reubarbe groweth, of the which are dyuers opinions, ſume ſuppoſynge it to bee a roote, and other a putrifyed tree, affirmyng that yf it were not putrified, it ſhulde not haue ſo great a ſauour. They caule it *Calama*. Next vnto this, is found the great *China*, whoſe kyng is thought to bee the greateſt prince in the worlde, and is named Santoa Raia. Furthermore, al that is written hereafter of this kyng and theſe regions, they lerned by th[e]information of a Moore that was in the Ilande of *Timor*. He affirmed that the ſayde kynge hathe threeſcore and tenne crowned kynges vnder his empyre, and hathe a porte in the ſea named *Canthan*: And two principal cities named *Nadchin* and *Connulaha* where he remayneth hym ſelfe, and hath euer foure of

The names of many regions.

Reubarbe.

The greate kynge of China.

his chiefe princes lying abowt his pallaice on euery ſyde, towarde the Eaſte, Weſte, Northe, and South giuinge dylygente attendaunce what is doone in euerye of theyr quarters. All the prynces of the greater India (cauled *India Maior*,) and of that wherof I haue ſpoken before, are obedient to this kynge. And in token that they are trewe ſubiectes, they keepe in theyr pallaices which are in the middeſt of theyr cities, the beſte cauled *Linx*, being fayrer then a lyon, And is the great kynges ſignette, whiche all ſuche as intende to go to *China*, beare with them fealed in waxe or on a piece of Iuerye for theyr ſafe conducte, withowt the which they may not enter into the hauen.

The greater India

231

The beast cauled linx.

When any of his kyngs rebell or are diſobedient, he cauſeth them to be flene, and ſalted and dryed at the ſoone: Then to bee ſtuffed with chaffe, and ſette vppe on ſum hygh thyng in the myddeſt of the chiefe ſtreate of the citie where al the people may ſee it. He neuer ſuffereth his owne perſon to bee openly ſeene to any man. But when his noble men of the courte are deſyrous to ſee hym, he commeth downe frome hys pallaice into a ryche pauyſyon accompanyed with ſyxe of hys principall concubynes appareyled with lyke veſtures as is he hym ſelfe. All thys way he is not ſeene by reaſon of the pauylyon. When he hath paſſed through the pauylyon, he entereth into a ſerpent named *Nagha*, being the moſt marueylous and ryche woorke of the worlde, and placed in the greateſt courte of the pallaice. When the kynge entereth into this with the women, to th[e]intent that he may not be knowen among them, he cauſeth the ſayd noble men only to looke in at a glaſſe which is in the breſte of the ſerpente, where they ſee the kynge amonge the women, but can not dicerne which is he. He ioyneth in mariage with hys ſyſter that the blud royall bee not myxt with any other. His pallaice is enuironed with ſeuen large walles, the one being farre dyſtante from the other. And hath in euery ſuch circuite tenne thowſande men for the garryſon of hys pallaice, who haue theyr waytinge dayes appoynted them courſe by courſe with freſſhe men in theyr places, and thus keepe theyr watch continually both daye and nyght. In this pallaice are lxxix. haules, in the which is an infinite number of women that ſerue the kynge hauyng euer lyght torches in theyr handes for the greater magnyfycence. He that wolde ſee all the pallaice, ſhulde ſpend a hole day therin. Amonge other, there are foure principal haules where ſumtymes the kynge gyueth audience to hys noble men. Of theſe, one is couered both aboue and beneth with metall, an other all ouer with ſyluer, the thyrde with gold, and the fourth with pearles and precious ſtones. Theſe people of *China*, are whyte menne, appareled as we are, and eate theyr meate on tables as wee doo. They haue the croſſe in ſum eſtimation, but knowe not the cauſe whye. Beyonde the coaſte of *China*, are dyuers other nations and people as *Chenchii* where pearles and cynamon are founde. Alſo the people named *Lichii*, where reyneth the great kynge of Mien, hauyng vnder hym. xxii. kynges, and is ſubiecte to the kyng of *China*. Here is alſo founde the great citie of CATHAY in the Eaſt, and dyuers other nations in the ſayd firme land, of the which ſum are brutyſſhe and beſtiall which vſe to kyll and eate theyr parentes when they are owld, thinking therby that they ſhall reuyue in them. All theſe people are gentyles.

The kynge is not seene but at a glasse.

A thyng of strange workmanshyppe.

The kynge maryeth his syster

His pallaice.

A marueilous garde.

Women serue the kynge.

Foure maruelous haules

The people of China.

The Crosse.

The greate kyng of mien

CATHAY.

The. xi. day of February in the yeare. 1522. they departed from the Iland of *Timor* and were ingulfed by chance in the great ſea cauled *Lantchidol*, and tooke theyr courſe betwene the weſte and ſouth weſte, leauynge the northe coaſtes on theyr ryght hand, fearyng leaſt if they ſhuld ſayle toward the firm land, they myght bee ſeene of the portugales who are of great power in *Malaccha*: and therfore dyrected theyr cours withowt the Iland of *Sumatra* cauled in owld tyme *Taprobana*: Leauyng alſo on theyr ryght hand vpon the fyrm land, the prouinces and regions of *Pegu*, *Bengala*, *Calicut*, *Canonor*, *Goa*, *Cambaia*, the goulfe of the Ilande of *Ormus*, and all the coaſtes of the greater India. And more ſafely to paſſe the cape of *Buona Speranza* being aboue Affrike, they ſayled about. xlii. degrees toward the pole Antartike, and remayned ſeuen weekes abowte that cape with many fetches compaſſyng the wynd with theyr ſayles contynually alofte, becauſe they had a weſt and north weſte wynd in the proos of theyr ſhyppe which wolde not ſuffer them to paſſe. The cape of *Buona Speranza*, is toward the pole Antartik beneth the Equinoctiall line. xxxiiii. degrees and a halfe: and. 1600. leaques from the cape of *Malaccha*: And is the greateſte and moſte daungyerous cape that is founde at thys day in al the worlde.

The sea of Lantchidol.

Malaccha.

The Iland of Sumetra.

Pegu.

Bengala.

Calicut.

Canonor.

Goa.

Cambaia.

Ormus.

East India.

Cap[e] de Buona Speranza.

When they had by theſe perels ouerpaſſed thys cape, certeyne of them aſwell for lacke of vytayles as alſo by reaſon of ſyckeneſſe, were mynded to ſayle to a hauen of the Portugales named *Mouzambique* aboue Affryke. But the other anſwered that they wold rather dye then go to any other place then directly to Spayne. They folowed theyr courſe therfore ſaylynge towarde the Southweſt two monethes continually without touchynge at any porte: In whiche tyme there dyed aboute. xxi. of theyr coompany, whom they caſt into the ſea. And ſuerly if god of his infinite mercie had not preſerued the reſidue in tyme, they hadde all dyed of famen.

The port of Mouzambique.

232

Famen.

In fine, beinge inforced of neceſſitie, and halfe of theyr companye deade, they ſayled to one of the Ilandes of *Capo verde* cauled *Inſula Sancti Iacobi*, that is, ſaynte Iames Ilande, parteyning to the kyng of Portugale. Where, as ſoone as they arryued, they ſent certeyne alande in the ſhippe boate for vyttayles, declarynge to the Portugales with all loue and fauour what neceſſitie they were dryuen to and what miſeries and trauayles they had ſuſteyned, informynge them further of theyr maruey'ous viage and ſuche thynges as they

Capo Verde.

S. Iames Ilande.

hadde ſeene in both the Eaſt and Weſt India, with ſuch other gentel woordes wherby they obteyned certeyne meaſures of riſe. But when afterwarde. xiii. of theym returned for more ryſe, they were deteyned: Whereuppon the reſte whiche remayned in the ſhippe, fearynge the lyke chaunce, departed with full ſayles, and the. vii. day of September with the helpe of god entered into the hauen of *San Lucar* nere vnto Siuile, where diſchargynge all theyr ordinaunce for ioy, they wente immediatly to the greate churche in theyr ſhertes and barefooted with a torche before them to gyue thankes to almyghtie god who had brought them ſafe to theyr owne countrey, and reſtored them to theyr wyues and chyldren.

The ingrati[t]ude of the Portugales.

The port of saynt Lucar nere vnto Siuile.

As touchynge th[e]ende of this viage, Tranſiluanus wryteth ſumwhat more largely as foloweth.

What became of the other shyppe.

Dariena

The cape of Cattigara.

Ptolome.

The vyage hardly performed.

They bye slaues for lacke of helpe

Maryners woorthy immortal fame.

Argonauti.

The viage of Iason to wyn the golden fleese.

The shyppe more woorthy fame then owlde Argo of Grecia.

The vyage

The other ſhyppe which they leſte behynde them to bee repayred, returned afterwarde by the Archipelagus aforeſayde and by the great ſea to the coaſtes of the firme of the weſt India, and arryued at a region of the ſame being ageynſt *Dariena*, where the South ſea of *Sur* is ſeparate but by a lyttle ſpace of lande from the Weſte Ocean in the which are the Ilandes of *Hiſpaniola* and *Cuba*, and other Ilandes of the Spanyardes. The other ſhyppe which returned into Spayne by compaſing abowt the whole bowle of the worlde by the coaſtes of Eaſt India and Affrike, departynge from the Iland of *Tidore*, and ſaylynge euer on this ſyde the Equinoctiall, dyd not ſynde the cape of *Cattigara* beinge aboue Aſia, and (by the deſcription of Ptolome) rechynge many degrees beyonde the Equinoctial. But hauynge ſayled many dayes by the mayne ſea, they came to the cape of *Buona Speranza* and frome thenſe to the Ilandes of *Capo verde*, where their ſhyppe beinge ſoore brooſed by reaſon of the longe viage, leaked and tooke water, in ſuche ſorte that the mariners being nowe but fewe in number, and thoſe alſo weake and feeble by reaſon of longe ſickeneſſe and hunger, were not able both to drye the poompe continually and otherwyſe gouerne the ſhippe: and were therfore of neceſſitie inforced to goo alande at the Ilande of ſaynte Iames to bye theym certeyne ſlaues to helpe theim. But beinge deſtitute of mony, according to the cuſtome of the mariners, they profered them cloues for theyr ſlaues. The which thyng when it came to the eares of the Portugale that was Capitayne of that Ilande, he caſt. xiii. of them in priſon. Wherby the reſidue that remayned in the ſhippe (beinge nowe but. xviii. in number) were put in ſuch feare that they departed immediatly without reſcuing theyr felowes, and ſayled continually both by daye and by nyght by the coaſtes of Affrike, and came in fine to Spayne the. vi. day of September in the yeare. 1522. and arryued at the porte nere vnto Siuile the. xvi. moneth after they departed from the Ilande of *Tidore*. Mariners doubtleſſe more woorthy to bee celebrate with eternal memorie then they whiche in owlde tyme were cauled *Argonauti* that ſayled with Iaſon to win the golden fleeſe in the region of *Cholchis* and the riuer of Phaſis in the greate ſea of *Pontus*. And the ſhyppe it ſelfe, more woorthye to bee placed amonge the ſtarres then that owlde Argo which departynge owt of Grecia, ſayled to th[e]ende of that great ſea. For this owre marueylous ſhyppe, takynge her vyage from the ſtraightes of Gibilterra and ſaylynge by the greate Ocean towarde the South and pole Antartike, and turnynge from thenſe to the Weſte, folowed that courſe ſo farre that paſſynge vnder the great circumference of the worlde, ſhee came into the Eaſte, and frome thenſe ageyne into the Weſte, not by returnynge backewarde, but ſtyll ſaylynge forwarde, ſo compaſynge abowt the baule of the world vnder the hole circumference of heauen vntyll ſhee were myraculouſly reſtored to her natiue region of Spayne and houſe of Siuile.

OF THE PRICES OF PRECIOVS STONES AND SPICES, WITH THEYR WEIGHTES AND MEASVRES

as they are accuſtomed to bee ſoulde bothe of the Moores and the gentyles: And of the places where they growe.

233

Oraſmuch as in dyuers places of this hiſtorie, mention is made of precious ſtones, I haue thought good to declare ſumewhat aſwell of theyr prices as of the places of theyr generation, that wee may not vtterly bee ignorant of the thinges which we ſo grately eſteeme and bye ſo deare.

Of the Rubie.

THe Rubies growe in India: and are founde for the moſt parte in a ryuer named Pegu. Theſe are of the beſte kind and fineſte, whiche they of the lande of Malabor caule Nunpuclo, and are well ſoulde if they bee fayre and cleane without ſpottes. The Indians to knowe theyr fineneſſe, put them vppon theyr toonges, coumptynge that to bee beſt that is couldeſt and moſt harde. And to ſee theyr fineneſſe, they take them vp with a piece of waxe by the ſharpeſt poynt: and lookynge ageynſt the lyght, eſpie in theim euery ſmaule ſpot or flake. They are alſo founde in certeyne diepe foſſes or pittes which are made in mountaynes that are beyonde the ſaid ryuer. They are ſcoured and made cleane in the countrey of Pegu. Yet can they not ſquare and polyſhe them. But for this purpoſe ſende them to dyuers other contreys, and eſpecially to Paleacate, Narſinga, Calicut, and the region of Malabar, where are many cunnynge Lapidaries.

And to gyue yow intelligence of the value of theſe ſtones, ye ſhall vnderſtande that this woorde Fanan, ſignifiethe a weight ſumwhat more then two of owre carattes: And. xi. Fanans and a quarter, is one Mitigal: And. vi. Mitigales and a halfe, make one vnce. This Fanan, is alſo a kynde of money which is in value, one ryale of ſyluer. And therefore after this accompte I ſay that

One caratte is iiii graines

Eight fine rubies of the weyght of one Fanan (which are in all, abowt two carattes) are in value.	Fanan	*x.
Foure Rubies that wey one fanan, are worth	Fanan	xx.
Two that wey one fanan	Fanan	xl.
One that weyth three quarters of one fanan	Fanan	xxx.
One that weyth one fanan	Fanan	l.
One that weyth one fanan and a quarter.	Fanan	lxv.
One that weyth one fanan and a halfe	Fanan	C.
One that weyth one fanan and three quarters	Fanan	C l.
One that weyth two fanans.	Fanan	CC.
One that weyth two fanans and a quarter	Fanan	CC l.
One that weyth two fanans and a halfe	Fanan.	ccc.
One that weyth two fanans and thre quarters	Fanan	cccl.
Of three fanans	Fanan	cccc.
Of three and a quarter	Fanan	D.
Of three and a halfe	Fanan	D l.
Of three and three quarters	Fanan	D c.
Of three and three quarters and a halfe	Fanan	D cxxx.
Of foure fanans	Fanan	D clx.
Of foure and a quarter	Fanan	D cc.
Of foure and a halfe	Fanan	D cccc.
Of fyue fanans	Fanan	M.
Of fyue and a halfe	Fanan	M cc.
Of ſyxe fanans, which are about. xii. carattes. Fanan M D. which make. 150. crownes of golde.		

*Which is one crown of golde

And theſe are commonly the prices of perfecte Rubies. But ſuche as are not perfecte, and haue any ſpottes in them, or are not of good coloure, are of leſſe priſe accordynge to the arbitriment and eſtimation of the byer.

¶ *Of the Rubies which growe in the Ilande of Zeilam.*

IN the Ilande of Zeilam, beinge in the ſeconde India, are founde many Rubies which the Indians name *Manecas*, the greateſt parte wherof do not arriue to the perfection of the other aforeſayde in coloure, bycauſe they are redde as though they were waſſhed, and of a fleſhye colour. Yet are they very coulde and harde. The perfecteſte of theym are greatly eſteemed amonge the people of the Ilande, and reſerued only for the kynge hym ſelfe if they bee of any great quantitie. When his iewelers fynde any bygge piece of this rocke of the beſte kynde, they put it in fyer for the ſpace of certeyne houres. Which if it coomme owt of the fyer vncorrupte, it becommeth of the coloure of a burnynge cole, and was therfore
234 cauled of the Greekes, Anthrax, which ſignifieth a burnyng cole. The ſame that the Greekes caule Anthrax, the Latines caule *Carbunculus*. Theſe they greatly eſteeme. When the kyng of Narſinga can get any of theym, he cauſeth a fine hole to bee boored in the vndermoſt part of them to the myddeſt: And ſuffereth none of them to paſſe owt of his realme: eſpecially if they haue byn tryed by the fayde profe. Theſe are of greater value then the other of Pegu, if they bee in theyr naturall perfection and cleaneneſſe.

Of theſe, one that weith a carratte (whiche is halfe a fanan) is woorthe in Calecut. *Which are iii. crow[n]es of golde	Fanan	*xxx.
One of two carattes	Fanan	lxv.
Of three carattes.	Fanan	cl.
Of three carattes and a halfe	Fanan	cc.
Of foure carattes	Fanan	ccc.
Of foure carattes and a halfe	Fanan	cccl.
Of fyue carattes	Fanan	cccc.
Of fyue carattes and a halfe	Fanan	ccccl.
Of fyxe carattes	Fanan	Dxxx.
Of fixe carattes and a halfe	Fanan	Dlx.
Of ſeuen carattes	Fanan	Dcxxx.
Of ſeuen carattes and a halfe	Fanan	Dclx.
One of. viii. carattes that hath bynne wel proued in the fier, is woorthe	Fanan	Dccc.
Of. viiii. carattes and a halfe	Fanan	Dcccc.
One ſuch of tenne carattes	Fanan	Mccc.
One of. x. carattes and a halfe	Fanan	MDc
Of. xii. carattes	Fanan	MM
Of. xiiii. carattes	Fanan	MMM
Of. xvi. carattes	Fanan	6000.

¶ *Of the kynde of Rubies cauled Spinelle.*

THere is alſo founde an other kynde of Rubies which wee caule Spinelle and the Indians, Caropus. They growe in the ſelfe ſame countrey of Pegu where as are the fine Rubies: And are found in the mountaynes in the vpper cruſt or floure of the earth. Theſe are not ſo fine nor of ſo good colour as are the trewe Rubies: But haue ſumwhat the colour of a granate which we commonly caule a garnet. Yet of theſe ſuche as are parfecte in theyr coloure, are of value halfe leſſe then trewe Rubies.

¶ *Of the Rubies cauled Balaſſi.*

BAlaſſi, are of the kyndes of Rubies, but are not ſo harde. Theyr colour is ſumwhat lyke a roſe, and ſum are in maner whyte. They growe in Balaſſia, whiche is a region within the firme lande aboue Pegu and Bengala: And are browght from thenſe by marchauntes of the Moores to Calecut where they are wrought and polyſſhed: And are ſould of the ſame price that are Spinelle.

¶ *Of the Diamundes of the owlde myne.*

THeſe Diamundes are founde in the fyrſte India in a kyngdome of the Moores named Decan, from whēnſe they are brought to other regions. There are alſo founde other Diamundes whiche are not ſo good, but ſumewhat whyte, and are cauled Diamundes of the newe myne which is in the kyngedome of Narſinga. They of the owlde myne, are not polyſhed in India, but in other places. There are made lykewyſe in India, other falſe Diamundes of Rubies, Topaſes, and whyte Saphires, whiche appere to bee fine: and are alſo founde in the Ilande of Zeilam. Thefe ſtones differ in none other, ſauynge that they haue loſte theyr

naturall colour. Of theſe, ſumme are founde that haue halfe the coloure of Rubies, and other of Saphires: other alſo of the coloure of a Topaſe. Other haue all theſe coloures mengled togyther. They bore a fine hole in theſe throughe the myddeſt, wherby they appere lyke the eyes of a catte. Of the whyteſt, they make many ſmaule diamundes whiche can not bee knowen from the trewe, ſauynge by touchinge of ſuch as are ſkylfull in that practiſe. They are ſoulde by a poyſe or weight which they caule Mangiar, which wayeth two Tarre, and two thyrdes, which amount to two thyrdes or thirde partes of one caratte. For foure Tarres, wey one fanan whiche is abowt two carattes.

Viii. Diamundes that wey one mangiar (which is two third partes of a caratte) are in value.	Fanan	xxx.
which are three crownes of golde.		
235 vi. Diamundes that wey one mangiar	Fanan	xl.
Foure that wey one mangiar	Fanan	lx.
Two that wey one mangiar	Fanan	lxxx.
One that weith one mangiar	Fanan	C.
One of one mangiar and a quarter	Fanan	clxv.
One of one mangiar and a halfe	Fanan	clxxx.
Of one mangiar and three quarters	Fanan	ccxx.
Of two mangiars	Fanan	cccxx.
Of two mangiars and a quarter	Fanan	ccclx.
Of two mangiars and a halfe	Fanan	ccclxxx
Of two mangiars and three quarters ful perfect	Fanan	420
Of three mangiars of lyke perfection	Fanan	ccccl.
Of three mangiars and a halfe	Fanan	cccclxxx.
Of foure mangiars	Fanan	Dl.
Of fyue mangiars	Fanan	Dccl.
Of fyxe mangiars	Fanan	Dccc.
Of feuen mangiars.	Fanan	Mcc.
Of eyght mangiars	Fanan	Mcccc.

And thus they proceade, increaſynge the price as they increaſe in weight.

¶ *Of Saphires.*

IN the Ilande of Zeilam are founde the beſte and moſte trewe Saphires, beinge very harde and fine, and of the coloure of azure. They are of price as foloweth.

One that weith one caratte is of value Fanan ii. which are abowt two marcels of fyluer.

A marcell, is a ſyluer coine of Venice, of xi. vnces. iii. d. with fine, wherof ten make an vn[c]e

One of the weight of two carattes	Fanan	v.
Of three carattes	Fanan	x.
Of foure carattes	Fanan	xv.
Of fyue carattes	Fanan	xviii.
Of fyxe carattes	Fanan	xxviii.
Of ſeuen carattes	Fanan	xxxv.
Of eyght carattes	Fanan	l.
Of nine carattes	Fanan	lxv.
Of tenne carattes	Fanan	l.
Of xi. carattes	Fanan	lxv.
Of. xii. carattes	Fanan	lxxv.
Of. xiii. carattes in all perfection of coloure	Fanan	Cxv.
Of. xiiii. carattes	Fanan	Clx.
Of. xv. carattes	Fanan	Clxxx.
Of. xvi. carattes	Fanan	CC.
Of. xviii. carattes	Fanan	CCl.
One that weith a mitigal, which is. vi. fanans and a quarter that is abowt xxiii. carattes	Fanan	CCCl.

Lykewyſe in the Ilande of Zeilam, is founde an other ſorte of Saphires which they caule *Quinigelinam.* Theſe are not ſo ſtronge, of darker colour and of much leſſe value then are the other of the beſt kynde, wherof one is woorth. xiii. of theſe of equall poiſe. Alſo in the kyngedome of Narſinga, in a mountayne aboue Bacanor and Mangalor, is founde an other ſort of Saphires more tender and of woorſe colour, whiche they caule Cinganolam. Theſe are ſumwhat whyte and of ſmaule value: So that the moſt perfect of this kynde, weyinge. xx. carattes, is not woorth one ducate. Theyr colour is inclynynge ſumwhat to yelowe. There is lykewyſe found an other kynde of Saphires vppon the ſea coaſtes of the kyngedome of Calicut, in a place named Capucar. Theſe the Indians caule *Carahatonilam.* They are of a darke aſure coloure not ſhynynge but in the cleare ayer. They are alſo tender and brickle, and of ſmaule eſtimation amonge the Indians. They ſeeme on the one ſyde lyke glaſſe.

¶ *Of Topaſies.*

THe natural Topaſies, growe in the Ilande of Zeilam, and are named of the Indians *Purceragua.* It is a harde and fine ſtone: and of equall eſtimation with the Rubie and the Saphire, bycauſe all theſe three are of one kynd. The perfecte colour of this, is yelowe lyke vnto fine beaten golde. And if it bee perfect and cleane, whether it bee greate or lyttle, it is woorth in Calicut as much fine gold as it weyeth. But if it bee not perfect, it is woorth the weight of gold the fanan, which is leſſe by the halfe. And if it bee in maner whyte, it is woorth much leſſe. And of theſe, are ſmaule diamundes counterfecte.

¶ *Of Turqueſſes.*

236 TVrqueſſes are founde in Exer a place of Siech Iſmael. Theyr mine is a drye earth that is founde vpon a black ſtone, which the Moores take of in ſmaule pieces, and carye them to the Iland of Ormus, from whenſe they are brought to dyuers partes of the worlde by ſea and by lande. The Indians caule them *Peroſe.* They are ſoft ſtones, of ſmaule weight and not much coulde. And to knowe that they are good and trewe, in the day they ſhall appere of the verye colour of the Turqueſſe: and in the nyght by the lyght, they ſhall appere greene. They that are not ſo perfect, do not ſo change their colour to the ſight. If theſe ſtones bee cleane and of fine colour, they haue vnderneth in the bottome, a blacke ſtone, vppon the which they growe. And if any lyttle vayne ryſe vppon the ſayde ſtone, it ſhalbe the better. And to knowe more certeynely that they are trewe Turqueſſes, they put on the toppes of them a lyttle quicke lime tempered with water after the maner of an oyntment. So that if the quicke lime appere coloured, they are iudged perfecte, and are of value as foloweth.

One that weith one caratte, is worth in Malabar.	Fanan. xv.	Of. viii. carattes	Fanan CC.
One of two carattes	Fanan xl.	Of x. carattes	Fanan CCC.
Of foure carattes	Fanan xc.	Of. xii. carattes	Fanan CCCCl.
Of. vi. carattes	Fanan Cl.	Of. xiiii. carattes	Fanan Dl.

Of greater then theſe they make none accompte bycauſe they are lyghter pieces and of greater circuite. Theſe of the byggeſt ſorte the Moores carie into the kyngedome of Guzerath.

¶ *Of Iacinthes.*

IAcinthes growe in the Ilande of Zeilam. They are tender ſtones and yelowe. They are beſt that are of diepeſte colour. The greateſt part of theſe, haue in them certeine pimples or burbuls, whiche diminiſhe theyr fayreneſſe. And they that are in theyr perfection cleane from this deformitie, are neuertheleſſe of ſmaule value. For in Calicut where they are polyſſhed, they that wey one fanan are woorth no more then halfe a fanan. And they of. xviii. fanans, are not worth.xvi. fanans.

There are alſo founde other ſtones lyke vnto cattes eyes, as Chriſolites, and Amethiſtes, whiche they doo not muche eſteeme bycauſe they are of ſmaule value, as alſo the ſtones cauled *Giagonze.*

¶ *Of Smaragdes or Emeraldes.*

SMaragdes growe in the countrey of Babilon, where the Indians caule the ſea *Dieguan.* They grow alſo in other partes of India. They are ſtones of fayre greene colour, and are lyght and tender. Of theſe ſtones, many are conterfecte. But lookyng on them curiouſly towarde the lyght, the conterfectes ſhewe certeyne burbuls, as dooth glaſſe. But in the trewe, there is no ſuch ſeene. But rather there appeareth to the eye a certeyne verdour ſhynynge lyke the beames of the ſoonne. And beinge rubbed vppon the touche ſtone, they leaue the coloure of copper. And the Smaragde of this ſorte is the beſt and moſt trewe: And is in value in Calicut, as muche as a diamunde and ſumwhat more: And this not by weyght, but by greateneſſe, bycauſe the diamunde quantitie for quantitie, is of greater weyght then the Smaragde. Ther is lykewyſe founde an other kynde of Smaragdes, whiche are greene ſtones, but not ſo much eſteemed. Neuertheleſſe, the Indians reſerue theſe to ſet them foorth with other precious ſtones. They leaue not any greene coloure vppon the touche.

¶ Of dyvers kyndes of Spices, where they grow, what they are woorth in Calicut, and whither they are caried from thense.

¶ *Of Pepper.*

THyrſte in all the kyngedome of Malabor and Calicut pepper groweth: and is ſould in Calicut by euery. CC. [two hundred] Bahars, fine, for. CCxxx. [two hundred and thirty] fanans, euery fanan (as I haue ſayde) beinge in value, one ryall of plate of Spayne: which is as muche as one marcell of ſyluer in Venice. Bahar, weith foure cantares of the owld weight of Portu- 237
gale, by the whiche they ſell all ſpices in Liſbona. Cantar, is in Venece. Cxii. [one hundred and twelue] pounde weyght of the groſe pounde (beinge. xviii. vnces) and of the ſubtyle pounde. C. lxxviii. [one hundred and ſeuenty-eight] So that the ſayde. 712. poundes of Venece ſubtile, wyl coſt abowt. xx. frenche crownes of golde: which amount to abowt two *Marchetti* (whiche make one peny) the pounde. They pay alſo to the kyng of Calicut for cuſtome. xii. fanans euery Bahar by the lode. They that bye them, are accuſtomed to brynge them to Cambaia, Perſia, Aden, and Mecha, and from thenſe to Alcayre and Alexandria. Nowe they pay cuſtome to the kynge of Portugale after the rate of. 6562. Maruedies the Bahar, which are. 193. fanans. Maruedies are Spanyſhe coynes wherof. vi. go to a peny. This doo they partly bycauſe there arryueth no more ſo greate diuerſitie of marchantes to bye them, and partly by the agreement which the ſayde kynge of Portugale made with thoſe kynges, and the Moores, and marchauntes of the countrey of Malabar.

Much pepper groweth lykewyſe in the Ilande of Sumatra nere vnto Malaca, which is fayrer and bygger then that of Malabar, but not ſo good and ſtronge. This is brought from Bengala to China, and ſumme parte to Mecha, priuilie and by ſtelth, vnwares to the Portugales which wolde not otherwyſe ſuffer them to paſſe. It is woorth in Sumatra, from. iiii. C. [four hundred] vnto. vii. C. [ſeuen hundred] marauedis the cantar of Portugale, of the newe weight. And frome the newe to the owlde weight in Portugale, the difference is, twoo vnces in the pounde weight. For the owlde pounde conſiſteth of. xiiii. vnces, and the newe pounde of. xvi. vnces.

¶ *Of Cloues.*

CLoues growe in the Ilandes of Molucca, from whenſe they are brought to Malacha, and then to Calicut and the countrey of Malabar. They are woorth in Calicut euery bahar (which is. 712. poundes of the ſubtyle pound of Venece) from. 500. to. 600. fanans (which are abowte fyſtie frenche crownes,) which are in value abowte. xii. marchetti the pounde weight. And beinge cleane from ſtalkes and huſkes are in value 700 fanans. To cary theym frome thenſe into other regions, they paye for paſporte. xviii. fanans the bahar, which is woorth in Malacca from. x. to. xiiii. ducades accordynge to the rate and cuſtome of the marchauntes.

¶ *Of Cinamome.*

CInamome of the beſt ſort, groweth in the Ilande of Zeilam: and in the countrey of Malabar, growethe the woorſt. That of the beſte kynde, is of ſmaule price in Zeilam. But in Calicut (if it bee choiſe and freſhe), it is woorth CCC. [three hundred] fanans the bahar, whiche are abowte fiue marchetti the pounde.

¶ *Of Ginger cauled Beledi.*

GInger Beledi, groweth on euery ſyde abowte Calicut from ſyxe to nine myles: And is woorth the bahar. xl. fanans, and ſumtymes fiftie, whiche is leſſe then one marchetto the pounde.

They brynge it from the mountaynes and owt of the contrey to the citie, where they ſell it by retayle to the Indian marchauntes, who gather it togither in greate quantitie and kepe it to ſuch tyme as the Moores ſhyppes arryue there, to whom they ſell it, by the price of. xc. [ninety] fanans, to Cx. [one hundred and ten] whiche is leſſe then two marchetti the pound, bycauſe the weight is greater.

¶ *Of Ginger Mechino.*

GInger Mechino groweth, begynnynge from the mountayne of Deli, vnto Canonor. It is ſmaule, and not ſo whyte nor ſo good as the other. It is woorthe the bahar in Cananor, abowt. lv. fanans whiche is abowte one marchetto the pounde. They pay for the bahar ſyxe fanans in money for the cuſtome. It is ſould vnclenſed or vnpurged.

¶ *Of greene Ginger in conſerues.*

239 IN Bengala is founde greate plentie of Ginger Beledi, of the whiche they make muche Ginger in conſerues with ſuger, and carie it in ſtone pots from Martabani to bee ſould in the countrey of Malabar. And is woorth the farazuola (which is. xxii. poundes and ſyxe vnces) after the rate of. xiiii. xv. or. xvi. fanans.

That that is freſhe and made in conſerues, is woorth in Calicut. xxv. fanans the farazuola, bycauſe ſuger is dere there. Greene ginger to put in conſerues, is woorth in Calicut three quarters of one fanan the farazuola, which is abowte twoo poundes for one marchetto.

¶ *Of the Apothecaries drugges: And of what price they are in Calicut and Malabar.*

LAcca of Martabani, if it bee of the beſte, is woorth the farazuola, which is. xxii. pounde weyght and ſyxe vnces of Portugale after. xvi. vnces the pounde (whiche is abowte. xl. pounde weyght of the ſubtyle pounde of Venece) And is in value. xviii. fanans: whiche are. xviii. marcels of ſiluer. For one fanan, is in value abowte one marcell of ſyluer.

Lacca of the contrey, is woorth the farazuola	Fanan	xii.
Borace that is good and in great pieces is woorthe the farazuola.	Fanan.	xxx. to. xl. and l.
Camphire that is groſſe in cakes, is woorth the farazuola	Fanan.	lxx. to. lxxx
	* * *	
Camphire to annoynt Idoles,		
Camphire for theyr chyldren to eate, is woorth the mytigal.	Fanan	iii.
Aguila is woorth the farazuola	Fanan.	ccc. to. cccc.
Lignum aloe, blacke, heauy, and fine, is woorth	Fanan.	M.
Muſke of the beſt is woorth the vnce	Fanan	xxxvi.
Beniamin of the beſte, is woorth the farazuola	Fanan	lxv.
Tamarindi being newe, are woorth the farazuola	Fanan.	iiii.
Calamus aromaticus, the farazuola	Fanan	xii.
Endego to dye ſilke, trewe and good, the farazuola	Fanan.	xxx
Mirre, the farazuola.	Fanan	xviii. to. xx.
Frankenſence good and in graynes, is woorth the farazuola	Fanan	xv.
Frankenſence in paſte of the baſeſt ſorte, the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	iii.
Ambracan or amber greeſe that is good. is woorthe the metical	Fanan	ii. to. iii.

Mirabolanes in conſerue of ſuger, the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	xvi. to. xxv	
Caſſia, freſhe and good, the farazuola.	Fanan	one and a halfe	
Redde Sanders, the farazuola	Fanan.	v. to. vi.	
Whyte Sanders and citrine, whiche growe in the Ilande of *Timor*, the farazuola	Fanan.	xl. to. lx	
Spikenarde, freſhe and good, the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	xxx. to. xl.	
Nutte megges, whiche coome frome the Ilande of Bandan where the bahar is woorth from. viii. to. x. fanans, (which importe. vi. poundes weight to the marchetto) are woorthe in Calicut, the faraz[uola].	Fanan	x. to. xii.	
Mace which is brought from the Ilande of Bandan where the Bahar is woorth fiftie fanans (which import abowt one marchetto the pounde) are woorth in Calicut the farazuola.	Fanan	xxv. to. xxx.	
Turbithes, are woorth the farazuola	Fanan	xiii.	
Woorme ſeede of the beſt kynde, cauled *Semenzina*, is woorthe the farazuola.	Fanan	xv.	Seedes that kyll lyse.
Zerumba, the farazuola	Fanan	ii.	
Zedoaria, the farazuola	Fanan	i.	
Gumme Serapine, the farazuola	Fanan	xx.	
Aloe cicotrine, the farazuola	Fanan	xviii	
Cardamome in graynes, the farazuola	Fanan	xx.	
Reubarbe groweth abundantly in the countrey of Malabar: And that which commeth from China by Malacha, is worth the farazuola	Fanan	xl. to. l.	
Mirabolani emblici, the farazuola	Fanan	ii.	
Mirabolani belirici, the farazuola	Fanan	one and a halfe.	
Mirabolani citrini and chebuli, which are al of one ſort.	Fa[nan]	ii.	
Mirabolani Indi, which are of the ſame citrine trees	Fa[nan]	iii.	
Tutia, the farazuola	Fanan	xxx.	
Cububes which growe in the Ilande of Iaua or Giaua, are there of ſmaule price, and ſould by meaſure withowt weight.			
Opium which is browght from the citie of Aden, where it is made, is woorth in Calicut the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	cclxxx. to. cccxx	
Opium of an other ſort which is made in Cambaia is woorth the farazuola,	Fanan	cc. to. ccl.	

¶ *Of the weyghtes of Portugale and India: And howe they agree.*

THe pound of the owld weight, conteyneth. xiiii. vnces. The pound of the newe weight conteyneth. xvi. vnces. viii. cantares of the owlde weyght, make. vii. of the newe. And euery newe cantare, is of. C. xxviii. [one hundred and twenty-eight] poundes after. xvi. vnces to the pounde 238

Euery owlde cantare, conteyneth three quarters and a halfe of the newe cantar: And is of. C. xxviii. [one hundred and twenty-eight] poundes, after. xiiii. vnces the pounde.

One farazuola, is. xxii. poundes of. xiiii. vnces, and vi. vnces more, with two fifte partes.

Twentie farazuoles, are one Bahar.

One bahar is. iiii. cantares of the owld weight of Portugale. All the Spices and drugges, and all ſuche other thinges as coome from India, are ſould in Portugale by the owld weight and all the reſte by the newe weyght.

¶ Hereby may we well conſider that as we owght to reioyſe and gyue god thankes for the abundaunce of al theſe thynges which he cauſeth the earth ſo plentifully to brynge foorth to owre vſe, ſo may we lament th[e]abuſe of men whoſe couetouſneſſe cauſeth great dearth and ſcarſeneſſe in the myddeſt of abundance: herein no leſſe offendyng the lawe of nature then doo ſuch as by wychcrafte intermingle poyſon with thynges created for the health of man, or by inchauntment corrupt the ſeedes in the ground: ye rather as the vnnatural mother who deſtroyeth the chylde whom ſhe hath longe nuryſhed.

[Two Notes added by Eden, apparently to fill up the Leaf.]

Of the Dooues of the Ilande of Madera.

Adamuſtus wryteth, that before the Portugales came to this Ilande, it was ouergrowen with trees and vnhabited. Yet were there many beaſtes, and great plentie of dooues which were vtterly without feare of men bycauſe they had neuer ſeene any men before, nor yet were accuſtomed to bee put in feare. In ſo much that they ſtode ſtyl whyle ſnares were put abowte theyr neckes with longe rods and poles. The which thynge he ſayth he hath alſo ſeene in other Ilandes. There are many ryche men in this Ilande, and great abundaunce of fleſhe, bycauſe the hole Ilande is in maner one gardeyne.

¶ *Of the Ilande of ſaynt Thomas vnder the Equinoctiall line*

The chiefeſt occupacion and liuynge of th[e]inhabitauntes of this Ilande, is the makynge of ſuger, which they ſell yearely to the ſhyppes that coomme for it owt of Spayne and Portugale laden with buttes of meale and floure, alſo wyne, oyle, cheeſe, lether, ſwoordes, cuppes of glaſſe, beades, certeyne ſcaruels of the fine whyte earthe cauled Porcellana, of the which are made the earthen dyſſhes of the woorke of Maiolica. And if it were not that ſuch vyttayles and prouiſions were brought them owt of Spaine and Portugale, the whyte marchauntes which dwell in that Ilande (perteynynge to the dominion of the kinge of Portugale) ſhulde not bee able to lyue there, foraſmuch as they are not accuſtomed to eate ſuch meates as doo the Ethiopians or Negros. And therfore the Portugales whiche inhabite this Ilande, haue certeyne blacke ſlaues of Guinea, Benin, and Manicongo, which they ſet to tyll and laboure the grounde and make ſuger. Amonge theſe whyte inhabitauntes, there are many ryche men which haue. 150. or. 200. and ſum. 300. blacke ſlaues of men and women to tyll the grounde and doo other laborious woorkes. This Ilande was diſcouered foure ſcore yeares ſence by the nauigations of the Portugales and was vnknowen to the owlde wryters. It lyeth in the greate goulfe of Affrike in the. 30. degree of longitude from the Weſt to the Eaſt, and is in maner rounde. It is of largeneſſe from ſide to ſyde. lx. Italian myles, (that is to ſay) one degree. The horizontal line of the Iland, paſſeth by the two poles, Artike and Antartyke: and hath euer the day equall with the nyght without any ſenſible difference, whether the ſon bee in Cancer or in Capricorne. The ſtarre of the pole Artike, is there inuiſible: But the wardens are ſeene ſumwhat to moue about: And the ſtarres cauled the Croſſe, are ſeene very hyghe. Of this Ilande with the other landes and Ilandes lyinge betwene Portugale and the ſame, a certeyne pylotte of Portugale hath wrytten a goodly vyage to Conte Rimondo.

¶ THE DEBATE AND STRYFE BETWENE THE SPANYARDES AND PORTUGALES,

for the diuiſion of the Indies and the trade of Spices: and alſo for the Ilands of Molucca, which ſum caule Malucas. Wrytten in the Spanyſhe toonge by

FRANCISCO LOPEZ DE GOMARA.

240

HE[e]mperours maieſtie was verye gladde that the Malucas and Ilands of the ſpicery were diſcouered: and that he myght paſſe vnto them through his owne countreys withowt any preiudice or hurte to the Portugales: And bycauſe alſo that Almanzor, Luztu, and Corala which were the lordes of the ſpicerie, ſhewed them ſelues to bee his frendes and became tributaries to hym. He alſo gaue certeyne gyftes and rewardes to Iohn Sebaſtian for his great paynes and good ſeruice, foraſmuch as he craued a rewarde for the good newes that the Ilandes of the Malucas and other Ilandes rycher and greater then they, were found to bee in his part of thoſe countreys which perteyned vnto hym accordynge to the popes bull. And hereby it came to paſſe that there was great contention and ſtrife betwene the Spanyardes and the Portugales abowte the ſpicerie and the diuiſion of the Indies by reaſon of the returne of Iohn Sebaſtian and th[e]information whiche he gaue therof. Who alſo affirmed that the Portugales had neuer any enteraunce before that tyme into thoſe Ilandes. Here vppon, the counſayle for the Indies, aduertiſed Th[e]emperoure to maynteine his fleete for thoſe partes, and to take the trade of ſpices into his owne hand, foraſmuch as it was his owne of dewtie, aſwell for that thoſe Ilandes fell on his parte, as alſo that he had nowe founde paſſage and waye through his weſt Indies into thoſe regions. And finally to conſyder that he ſhulde thereby obteyne and gette to him ſelfe greate reuenues beſyde th[e]inrychynge of his ſubiectes and realmes, and that with ſmaule coaſte and charge. The[e]emperoure beinge thus aduertiſed of the truth, tooke it for good counſayle, and commaunded all thynges hereunto apperteynynge to bee furnyſſhed accordyngely. In this meane tyme, when kynge Iohn of Portugale had knowleage what th[e]emperour determyned to doo, and the ſpeedy haſt his counſayle made for the performance herof, and of the commynge home of Iohn Sebaſtian of Cane, with th[e]information he made, what of ſtoutneſſe of mynde and what for greefe, was puffed vp with anger as were alſo the reſte of the Portugales, ſtormynge as thowgh they wolde haue plucked downe the ſkye with their handes, not a lyttle fearynge leaſte they ſhulde loſe the trade of ſpices, if the Spanyardes ſhulde once put in theyr foote. Whervppon the kynge immediatly made ſupplication to Th[e]emperoure, not to ſet forwarde any ſhyppes vntyll it were determyned to whether of theym thoſe Ilandes ſhulde belonge: And that he wolde not ſo muche endomage hym as to cauſe him to lieſe the trade of ſpices which was ſo commodious and profitable to hym. And finally to auoyde th[e]occaſion of murther and bludſhed whiche were lyke to enſue thereof, yf the Spanyardes and Portugales ſhyppes ſhulde meete togyther. Th[e]emperoure althowghe he knewe that all this was but to make delays and prolongynge of tyme, yet was he gladde to haue it tryed by iuſtice for the better iuſtification of his cauſe and ryght. In fine, both parties were agreed to appoynt lerned men, Coſmographers and Pylots which ſhulde determine the controuerſie betwene them: promyſynge on bothe parties to abyde and ſtande to the ſentence and determination made by thoſe perſons appoynted and ſworne to iudge indifferentely.

Iohn Sebastian.

The cause of contencion.

The trade of spice perteyneth to Th[e]emperoure.

Iohn kyng of Portugale.

The trade of Spices.

The controuersie determined by Cosmographers and Pylots.

¶ *The reparticion and diuiſion of the Indies and newe worlde betwene the Spanyardes and the Portugales.*

THis matter concernyng the trade of ſpices and the newe worlde of the Indies, by reaſon of the greate ryches therof was of greate importaunce and very difficultie to bee limitted and and drawen foorth by lines. By reaſon wherof, it was neceſſarie and conuenient to ſeeke wyſe and woorthypful men expert in nauigations, in Coſmographie, and the mathematicall ſciences. Th[e]emp[e]roure for his ſyde, choſe and named for iudges of the poſſeſſion, the licentiate Acuna, one of the kynges conſayle. Alſo the licentiate Barrientos of the counſayle of the orders: The licentiate Petro Manuel auditour of the courte of the Chauncerie in Valladolith. For iudges of the propertie, he choſe Don Fernando Colono the ſoonne of Chriſtopher Colonus: Alſo doctor Sancho Salaya, Peter Ruiz of Villegas, fryre Thomas Duran, Simon of Alcazaua, and Iohn Sebaſtian of Cano. His aduocate and atturney, he made the licentiate Iohn Rodriguez of Piſa: and for his fyſcal doctor Ribera, and his ſecretarie, Barthalome Ruiz of Caſtaneda. He alſo apoynted that Sebaſtian Cabote, Steuen Gomes, Nunnio Garcia, Diego Riuero, being al expert pilots and cunning in making cardes for the ſea, ſhuld be preſent, and brynge foorth theyr globes and mappes with other inſtrumentes neceſſarie to declare the ſituation of the Ilandes of the Malucas abowt the which was al the contention and ſtryfe. But order was taken that they ſhulde ſhewe theyr myndes on neyther ſyde, nor enter into the coompany of the other but when they were cauled. Al theſe and diuers other, wente togyther to a towne cauled Badaioz: and as many Portugales came to Elbes, or rather more. For they browght with them two fiſcals and two aduocates. The principall of theym, was the licentiate Antonie de Aſſeuedo, Diego Lopes of Sequeyra the clarke of the weightes and receptes, who had before byn gouernour in India. Alſo Peralfonſo of Melo, clerke: Simon of Tauira, with dyuers other whoſe names I knowe not. Before they mette togyther, the one parte remaynynge at Badaioz and the other in Elbes, there was much a doo amonge them beefore they coulde agree vppon the place where they ſhulde mete and who ſhuld ſpeke fyrſte. For the Portugales doo greatly weighe ſuche circumſtances. At the laſt, they concluded to meete togyther at Caya a lyttle ryuer which diuideth Caſtile from Portugale, ſtandynge in the mydde way betwene Badaioz and Elbes. And when they were aſſembled togyther one day at Badaioz and an other daye at Elbes and ſaluted the one the other, bothe parties were ſworne that they ſhulde proceade and ſpeake accordynge to truth, iuſtice, and equitie. The Portugales refuſed Simon de Alcazaua becauſe he was a Portugale: and fryer Thomas Duran bycauſe he had ſumetyme byn preacher to theyr kynge: So that Simon was by conſent put owte of the coompany, in whoſe roome was placed maſter Antonie of Alcaraz. Yet fell they not to reaſonynge the matter vntyll the fryer was put owt. They were manye dayes in beholdynge globes, mappes, and cardes of the ſea, and hearynge what myght bee ſayde, both ſydes alleagynge for the right which they pretended. But the Portugales ſtandynge in vayne contention, ſayde very angerly the Ilandes of Maluca whereuppon theyr meetynge and reſonynge was at that preſente, fell of theyr parte and was of theyr conqueſt. And that they both had byn there, and had them in theyr poſſeſſion before Iohn Sebaſtian had euer ſeene them. Lykewyſe that the line ſhulde bee drawen from the Ilande of Bonauiſta, or the Iland cauled de la Sal, which are the moſt Eaſterly Ilandes from Cabouerde, and not from the Ilande of Santanton or ſaynt Antonie, which lyeth towarde the Weſt, and are. lxxxx. leaques the one from the other. Al this was no more but to contend: and the other of the Malucas, is vntrewe. But they that haue a nawghtie matter muſt ſet it foorth with woordes and brabelynge. Here they founde howe greatly they were deceaued in that they demaunded that the line ſhulde bee drawen three hundreth. lxx. leaques more to the Weſt from the Ilandes of Cabouerde (as appeareth hereafter) and not one hundreth accordyng to th[e]aſſignement of the popes bul. The Spanyardes on the contrary parte affirmed and made demonſtration, that not only the Ilandes of Burney, Gilolo, Zubut, and Tidore, with the other Ilandes of the Malucas. But aſwell Samatra, Malacha, and a great parte of China, ſhuld belonge to the Caſtilians: and that thoſe countreys fell on theyr ſyde and on the parte of theyr conqueſt: Alſo that Magallanes and Iohn Sebaſtian were the fyrſte Chriſtian men that founde them and obteyned them for Th[e]emperour, as the letters and prefentes of Almanzor doo teſtifie. And although the Portugales had byn there fyrſte, yet wente they thyther after the donation of the pope: neyther got they any ryght or iuſte tytle thereby. For althowgh they ſhulde drawe the line by Buena Viſta, what inconuenience ſhulde folowe thereof, ſith aſwell by the one way as the other, the Ilandes of the Malucas muſt perteyne to the Caſtilians: yea and moreouer, the Ilandes of Cabo verde ſhulde alſo perteine to the Caſtilians, forſomuch as drawynge the line by Buena Viſta, the Ilandes of the Malucas doo remayne within the line on the Emperours ſyde. They continued in theſe controuerſies for the ſpace of two moonethes without anye reſolution or ende

The arbytrers on the Emp[e]rours syde.

241

Sebastian Cabote.

Instruments of Cosmographie.

The Ilandes of Maluca.

The arbitrers on the Portugales syde.

The place where they mette.

Th[e]order of theyr proces.

The Portugales. Contention for drawynge the line of the diuision.

Howe the Portugales were deceaued.

The Spanyardes allegations.

Samatra.

Malacha.

China.

Magallanes.

Buena Vista.

The Ilandes of Cabo Verde.

242

made. For the Portugales prolonged and put of the matter, flying from the ſentence with cauillations and could reaſons to th[e]ende that they myght diſſolue that aſſemble without any concluſion or determination: for ſo it ſtoode them vppon. The Caſtilians which were the Iudges of the propertie, drewe a line in the great globe three hundreth and. lxx. [ſeuenty] leaques from ſaynt Antonies Ilande, lyinge by Weſte Cabo Verde accordynge to the intreatie and determination whiche was agreed vppon betwene the Catholike princes and the kynge of Portugale. Theſe iudges gaue ſentence vppon this matter, caulynge the contrary parte before them vpon the bridge of Caya in the yeare. 1524. The Portugales coulde neyther diſturbe or deferre the ſentence, nor yet wolde they alowe it to bee iuſt and accordynge to ryght: Sayinge that there was not ſufficient proceſſe made that they ſhulde paſſe to the gyuynge of ſentence. And ſo departed threatenyng to ſley the Caſtilians as many as they ſhulde fynde in the Ilandes of the Malucas. For they knewe ryght well that heyr contreymen the Portugales had alredy taken the ſhyppe cauled the Trinitie and had alſo taken the Caſtilians in Tidore. Then alſo departed owre men, takynge theyr iorney to the courte gyuynge vp to Th[e]emperour all theyr wrytynges and declaration what they had doone. And accordynge to this declaration muſt bee ſigned and marked all globes and mappes which good Coſmographers and maſters doo make. The line alſo of the reparticion and laſt diuiſion of the newe world of the Indies, ought to paſſe (lyttle more or leſſe) by the poyntes of Humos and Buen Abrigo, as I haue ſayde in an other place. And thus ſhall it appeare euidently that the Ilandes of Spices, and alſo the greate Ilande of Zamotra, do perteyne to Caſtile. But the lande of Braſile perteyneth to the kynge of Portugale where the cape of ſaynt Auguſtine is, beinge. viii. degrees beneth the Equinoctiall. This lande reacheth from the poynte of Humos to the poynte of Buen Abrigo: and is in lengthe North and South. viii. hundreth leaques. Beinge alſo ſum way two hundreth leaques Eaſt and Weſt.

The Portugales cauillations.

The line of diuision.

The sentence.

The great Iland of Samotra.

The lande of Brasile, perteineth to the Portugales.

And hereafter theſe ſerious matters, wee wyll rehearſe one mery thynge, which was this. It ſo chaunced that as Frances de Melo, Diego Lopes of Sequieyra, and other of thoſe Portugales of this aſſemble, walked by the ryuer ſyde of Guadiana, a lyttle boy who ſtoode keepynge his mothers clothes which ſhe had waſhed, demaunded of theym whether they were thoſe men that parted the world with Th[e]emperour And as they anſwered, yea: he tooke vp his ſhert and ſhewed them his bare arſe, ſayinge: Coomme and drawe yowre line here throughe the myddeſt. Which ſayinge was afterwarde in euery mans mouth and laughed at in the towne of Badaioz: yea euen amonge the commiſſioners them ſelues, of whom ſum were angry, and ſumme maruayled at the ſayinge of the chylde.

A mery tale.

¶ *The cauſe and autoritie wherby they diuided the Indies.*

THe Caſtilians and Portugales had longe debated and reaſoned abowt the golde myne of Guinea which was found in the yeare of owre lorde 1471, in the tyme of the reigne of Don Alonſo Kynge of Portugale the firſte of that name. This was a matter of greate importaunce. For the negros or blacke Moores, for thynges of no value, gaue golde by hole handefuls whyche was at that tyme when the ſayde Kynge of Portugale pretended title and clayme to the kingedome of Caſtile in the right of his wyfe Queene Iohn (cauled the excellent) ageynſte the Catholike princes Iſabel and Don Fernando whoſe it was in deede. But that ſtryfe was ended as ſone as Don Fernando had vanquiſſhed Don Alonſo at a place cauled Temulos not farre from Toro, which place* Don Fernando choſe rather to make warre ageinſt the Moores of Granada, then to bye and fell with the blacke Moores of Guinea. And thus the Portugales remained with the conqueſt of Affryke from the ſtreightes forwarde: whiche began where the infante of Portugale Don Henrique (ſonne to kynge Iohn the baſtarde and maſter of Auis) dyd begynne to enlarge it. When pope Alexander the. vi. (beinge a valentinian borne) had knowleage hereof, he mynded to gyue the Indies to the kinges of Caſtile withowt any preiudice to the Portugales who had conquered the ſea coaſtes of Affryke. Theſe Indies, the pope gaue of his owne mynde withowte the motion of anye other, with this burden and charge that they ſhulde conuert the Idolatours to the faythe of Chryſte: And commaunded a line or meridian to bee drawen Northe and ſouth from one hundreth leaques Weſtwarde beyond one of the Ilandes of Cabo Verde towarde the Weſte, bycauſe the Spanyardes ſhulde not meddle in Affryke perteynynge to the conqueſt of the Portugales, to th[e]auoydynge of all ſtryfe betwene them. Kynge Iohn of Portugale, the ſeconde of that name, was greatly offended when he redde the bull and donation of the pope, althowgh his owne ambaſſadours had made the ſelfe ſame requeſt vnto his holyneſſe. He alſo found hym ſelfe agreeued with the Catholyke princes Iſabell and Fernando, that they had ſhortened the courſe of the landes he had diſcouered, depriuynge hym of the rycheſſe which belonged to hym. And therfore refuſed to ſtande to the popes bull in this caſe: deſyrynge the Catholyke princes Iſabell and Fernando to graunt him three hundreth leaques more to the Weſte, beſyde the one hundreth which they had graunted before: and therwith ſent his ſhyppes to kepe the coaſtes of Affryke. The princes Catholyke were content to ſatiſfie his

The golde myne of Guinea.

Alonso kynge of Portugale.

Gold for thynges of smaul value.

Contention for the kyngdome of Castile.

Warre agenst the Moores of Granada.

The conquestes of the Portugales in Affrike.

Pope Alexander.

243

The Pope maketh the diuision.

The kynge of Portugale refuseth to stand to the Popes bull.

The agreement of the last diuision

mynde and to pleaſe hym accordynge to theyr gentle nature and for the aliance that was betwene theym: And in fine, with the conſent and agreement of the pope, graunted twoo hundreth. lxx. [ſeuenty] leaques more then the bull made mention of: At Tordeſillas the. vii. day of Iune, in the yeare of owr lord 1494. And wheras owr kynges thought that they ſhulde haue loſt grounde in grauntynge ſo many leaques that way, they woonne by that meanes the Ilandes of the Malucas with many other ryche Ilandes. The kynge of Portugale alſo, herein deceaued him ſelfe or was deceaued of his whom he put in truſt, hauynge no certeyne knowleage of the ſituation of the Ilandes of the riche Spicery in demaundyng that which the kynge dyd demaunde. For it hadde byn better for hym to haue requeſted the three hundreth and. lxx. leaques rather Eaſtwarde from the Ilandes of Cabo Verde then towarde the weſt. And yet for all that, I doubte whether the Malucas ſhulde haue faulen within his conqueſt accordynge to the ordinarie accoumpte and dimenſion which the pylotes and Coſmographers doo make. And after this maner they diuided the Indies betwene them by th[e]autoritie of the pope for the auoydynge of further ſtryfe and contention.

Wherein the Portugales were deceaued.

Howe and by what occaſion Th[e]emperoure layde the Ilandes of the Malucas to pledge to the kynge of Portugale.

Sebastian Cabote.

WHen the kynge of Portugale Don Iuan the thyrde of that name, had knowleage that the Coſmographers and pylottes of Caſtile hadde drawen the line from the place before named, and that he could not denye the truth, fearing alſo therby to lieſe the trade of Spices, made ſute and requeſt to Th[e]emperoure that he ſhulde not ſend furth Loaiſa nor Sebaſtian Cabote to the Malucas, and that the Caſtilians ſhulde not attempte the trade of ſpices nor ſee ſuch euyls and miſeries as his capitaynes had ſhewed in thoſe Ilandes to them that aduentured that viage with Magalanes. Which thynge he greatly couered, although he payde all the charges of thoſe two fleetes, and made other great bargens. In the meane tyme, Th[e]emperoure maryed the Lady Iſabell ſyſter to kynge Iohn: and kynge Iohn maryed the lady Catharine ſyſter to Th[e]emperour: whereby this matter waxed coulde althoughe the kynge ceaſed not to ſpeake hereof, euer mouynge the particion. Th[e]emperour by the meanes of a certeine Biſcaine that was with Magallanes in the gouernours ſhyppe, had knowleage what the Portugales had doone to the Caſtilians in the Iland of Tidore, wherof he took great diſpleaſure, and brought the ſayde maryner face to face before th[e]ambaſſadours of Portugale, who denyed all that he ſayde, one of them beinge the chiefe capitayne and gouernour of India when the Portugales tooke the Caſtilians in Tidore and robbed them of theyr Cloues and Cinamome and ſuch other thynges as they had in the ſhyppe named the Trinitie. But as the kynge of Portugales trade was greate, and owre neceſſitie greater, in the meane tyme Th[e]-emperoure (who was nowe goinge into Italie to bee crowned in the yeare. 1529) gagied the Malucas and the ſpicerie to the kynge of Portugale for three hundreth and fiftie thouſande ducades withowt any tyme determyned otherwyſe then the controuerſie was defined vppon the brydge of the ryuer of Caya: for the which thynge, kynge Iohn punyſhed the licentiate Azeuedo bycauſe he payde the money withowt declaration of the time. The couenaunt of the pledge was blyndely made and greatly ageynſt the myndes of the Caſtilians, as men that wel vnderſtode the profite, commoditie, and rycheſſe of that trade: Affirmynge that the trade of ſpices myght haue byn rented for one yeare or for two, for ſyxe tymes as much as the kinge gaue for it. Peter Ruiz of Villegas who was twyſe cauled to the bargeyne, as office at Granada and an other tyme at Madrid, ſayde that it had byn muche better to haue pledged Eſtremadura or Serena, or other greater landes and cities, rather then the Malucas, Zamatra, or Malaca, or other riche landes and ryuers in the Eaſte not yet well knowen: foraſmuche as it maye ſo chaunce, that eyther by continuaunce of tyme, or aliance, the pledge myght bee forgotten as thowgh it perteyned to the ryght of Portugale. In fine, Th[e]emperour conſidered not the iewel that he pledged, nor the kyng what he receaued. Th[e]emperour was often tymes counſayled to releaſe the pledge of thoſe Ilandes in conſideration of the great vantage he myght haue therby in fewe yeares. Furthermore, in the yeare. 1548. the procuratoures of Cortes being in Valladolid, made peticion to Th[e]emperour to ſurrender the ſpicerie to the kyngedoome of Caſtile for. vi. yeares, and that they wold repay to the kyng of Portugale his. 350. thouſand crownes, and after thoſe yeares, reſtore the trade to the crowne, that his maieſtie myght inioye the ſame as was agreed at the begynnynge. But Th[e]emperour beinge then in Flaunders, ſente woorde to the counſayle that they ſhulde not aſſent to Cortes his requeſt, nor ſpeake any more hereof. Wherat, ſum marueyled, other were ſory, and all held theyr peace.

Th[e]emperour and the kinge of Portugale ioyned in aliance by mariage.

The Portugales robbe the Castilians

The coronation of Th[e]emperour.

244

The gageing of the Ilands of Malucas. zamatra and Malaca.

[Amerigo Vespucci,

and

Andreas de Corsali.

Of the Pole Antarctic, and the stars about the same.]

¶ OF THE POLE ANTARTIKE AND THE STARRES ABOWT THE SAME AND OF THE QUALITIE OF THE REGIONS AND DISPOSITION OF the Elementes abowt the Equinoctiall line. Alſo certeyne ſecreates touchyng the arte of ſaylynge.

AMericus Veſputius in the Summarie of his vyages, wryteth in this maner as foloweth.

Departynge from Liſbona (commonlye cauled Luſheburne) the. viii. day of May, in the yeare. 1501. we ſayled fyrſt to the Ilandes of Canarie and from thenſe to Capouerde which the Ethiopians or blacke Moores caule *Biſineghe*, beinge. xiiii. degrees on this ſyde the Equinoctiall line. From whenſe directynge owre courſe towarde the South pole by the South-weſt, we ſawe no more land for the ſpace of three moonethes and three dayes. Of whiche tyme durynge. xl. [forty] dayes, we had cruell fortune: In ſo muche that for that ſpace, the heauen in maner neuer ceaſed thunderyng, rorynge, and lyghtenynge with terrible noyſe, and fearefull ſyghtes of fyery exhalations flyinge abowt in the ayer, and in maner continuall ſhowers of rayne with darke clowdes couerynge the heauen in ſuch ſorte that aſwell in the day as in the nyght we coulde ſee none otherwyſe but as when the moone giueth no lyght by reaſon of thicke and darke clowds The ſea was in lyke caſe vnquieted with ſurgies and monſters. After theſe greuous and cruel days, it pleſed god to haue compaſſion on owr liues. For wee ſuddenly eſpied land wherby we recouered owr ſpirites and ſtrength. This land which wee founde, is from Capo Verde. 700. leaques, although I ſuppoſe that we ſayled more then. 800. by reaſon of the cruel tempeſt and ignoraunce of the Pylottes and mariners whereby wee were lyke to haue byn caſt away. For wee were in ſuche daungerous places wanderynge in vnknowen coaſtes, that if I had not byn ſkylfull in the ſcience of Coſmographie we had ſuerly peryſhed, foraſmuch as there was not one pylot that kr[illegible] where wee were by the ſpace of fiftie leaques. In ſo much that if I had not in tyme prouyded for the ſafegarde of myne owne lyfe and them that were with me, with my quadrant and Aſtrolabie inſtrumentes of Aſtronomie, wee had ſtyl wandered lyke blynde men. But when in fine I had perſuaded the pylots by demonſtrations perteynynge to that arte, they gaue me great honour and confeſſed that the ordinarie pilottes and mariners ignorant in Coſmographi, are not to bee compared to men of ſpeculatiue knowleage. etc.

Cabouerde. *Beseneghe.*

A tempest.

The ignorance of Pylots and mariners.

The vse of Cosmographie.

The vse of the quadrant and Astrolabie.

245

Wee ſayled by the coaſte of the ſayde lande. 600. leaques And went oftentymes alande where wee were frendely and honorably interteyned of th[e]inhabitauntes: In ſo much that conſiderynge theyr innocent nature, we ſumtymes remayned with them. xv. or. xx. dayes. This firme lande begynneth beyonde the Equinoctiall line. viii. degrees towarde the pole Antartike. Wee ſayled ſo farre by the ſayde coaſte that wee paſſed the wynter Tropyke towarde the pole Antartike by xvii. degrees and a halfe, where we had the Horizontal line eleuate fiftie degrees. Such thynges as I ſawe there, are not yet knowen to men of owre tyme: as the people, theyr cuſtomes and maners, the fertilitie of the lande, the goodnes of the ayer, the fauourable influence of heauen and the planettes, and eſpecially the order of the ſtarres of the eyght ſphere in the inferioure hemiſpherie or lower halfe circle of heauen towarde and abowt the South pole, wherof neyther the owlde or newe wryters haue made any mention to this daye.

The pole Antartike.

The starres abowt the south pole.

Most pleasant and frutful regions.

To wryte particularly of the commodities and felicities of theſe regions, it wolde requyre rather a hole volume then a booke: And that ſuch, as if Plinie had had knowleage of theſe thynges, he myght greatly haue increaſed his bookes of naturall hiſtories. The trees gyue from them continually ſuch ſweete ſauours as can ſcarſely bee imagined: And on euery part put furth ſuch gummes, liquours, and iuſes, that yf we knewe theyr vertues, I ſuppoſe we myght fynde in them marueylous medicins ageinſt diſeaſes and to mainteyne health. And ſuerly in my opinion, yf there bee any earthely Paradyſe in the worlde, it can not bee farre from theſe regions of the ſouth, where the heauen is ſo beneficiall and the elementes ſo temperate that they are neyther bytten with coulde in wynter, nor moleſted with heate in ſummer. The ayer alſo and the heauen is ſeldome darkened with clowdes, ſo that the dayes and nyghtes are euer cleare. Yet haue they ſumtymes moyſt dewes in the mornynge and euenyng for the ſpace of three houres, whereby the grounde is marueylouſly refreſſhed. Lyke wyſe the firmament is marueylouſly adourned with certeyne ſtarres which are not knowen to vs, wherof I noted abowt. xx. to bee of ſuche cleareneſſe as are the ſtarres of Venus and Iupiter when they are ſiere vnto vs. And wheras hauynge the knowleage of Geometrie, I conſidered theyr circuite and dyuers motions, and alſo meaſured theyr circumference and diameter, I am weſi aſſured that they are much greater then men thynke them to bee. Amonge other, I ſawe three ſtarres cauled Canopi, wherof two were exceadynge cleare, and the thyrde ſumwhat darke. The pole Antartike hath nother the greate beare nor the lyttle as is ſeene abowte owre pole. But hath foure ſtarres whiche compaſſe it abowt in forme of a quadrangle.

The earthlye Paradyse.

Continual temperatnesse

Moyst dewes

Starres vnknowen to vs

The vse of Geometri.

Notable stars in the inferiour hemispherie.

* *

* *

¶ When theſe are hydden, there is ſeene on the lefte ſyde a bryght Canopus of three ſtarres of notable greatneſſe, whiche beinge in the myddeſt of heauen, repreſenteth this figure.

*

* *

* *

Most bright and shynynge starres.

After theſe, ſucceade three other ſhynynge ſtarres, whereof that which is in the myddeſt, is of meaſure. xii. degrees and a halfe in circumference. And in the myddeſt of theſe, is ſeene an other bryght Canopus. After this, folowe. vi. other ſhynynge ſtarres which in bryghtneſſe paſſe al other that are in the eyght ſphere. Of theſe, that that is in the middeſt in the ſuperficiall part of the ſayde ſphere, hath the meaſure of his circumference. xxxii. degrees. After theſe foloweth an other great Canopus, but ſumwhat darke. All theſe are ſeene in the parte of heauen cauled *Via Lactea*, that is the mylke waye: And beinge ioyned to the meridiane line, ſhewe this fygure here folowynge.

Lactea via.

* * * *

*

*

The inferiour hemispherie.

The raynebowe.

Aristotle his opinion of the raynebowe.

A strange opinion.

I ſawe alſo there manye other ſtarres, the dyuers motions wherof diligently obſerued, I made a particular boke of the ſame, wherin I made mention of al ſuch notable thyngs as I ſawe and had knoweleage of, in this nauigation. The whiche booke I deliuered to the kynges maieſtie, truſtynge that he wyll ſhortly reſtore it me ageyne. In this hemiſpherie or halfe coompaſſe of the heauen, I diligently conſidered many thinges which are contrarie to th[e]oppinions of philoſophers. And amonge other thynges, I ſawe a whyte raynebowe abowt mydnyght, wheras other affirme that it hath foure colours of the foure elementes, as redde of the fyer, greene of the earth, whyte of the ayer, and blewe of the water. But Ariſtotle in his booke intiteled *Meteora*, is of an other opinion For he ſayth that the raynebowe is a reflection of the beames of the ſoonne in the vapoure of a clowde directly ageynſte the ſoonne, as the ſhynyng of the ſame on the water, is reflected on a waule: And that the ſayde clowde or vapoure tempereth the heate of the ſoonne: and beinge reſolued into rayne, maketh the grounde fertyle, and pourgeth the ayer. Alſo that is a token of abundaunt moyſture. By reaſon wherof, ſum are of opinion that it ſhall not appeare. xl. [forty] yeares before th[e]ende of the worlde, which ſhalbe a token of the dryneſſe of the elementes approchynge to the tyme of theyr conflagration or conſumyng by fyer. It is a pledge of peace betwene god and men, and is euer directly ouer ageynſt the ſoonne. It is therfore neuer ſeene in the South, bycauſe the ſoonne is neuer [ſeene?] in the North. Neuertheleſſe, Plinie ſayth,

that after the Equinoctial in Autumne, it is ſeene at al houres. And thus much haue I gathered owte of the commentaries of Landinus vppon the fourth boke of Virgyl his Eneades, bycauſe I wold defraude no man of his trauayle. I ſawe the ſayd raynebowe twoo or three tymes. And not I onely, but alſo many other which were in my coompany. Lykewyſe wee ſawe the newe moone the ſelfe ſame day that ſhee ioyned with the ſoonne. Wee ſawe furthermore vapours and burnynge flames flyinge abowt heauen euery nyght. A lyttle before, I cauled this countrey by the name of Hemiſpherium (that is) the halfe ſphere. Which neuertheleſſe can not bee ſo named but by ſpekynge improperlie in comparyſon of owres. Yet foraſmuche as it ſeemeth to repreſent ſuche a forme, I haue improperlye ſo named it.

The newe mone.

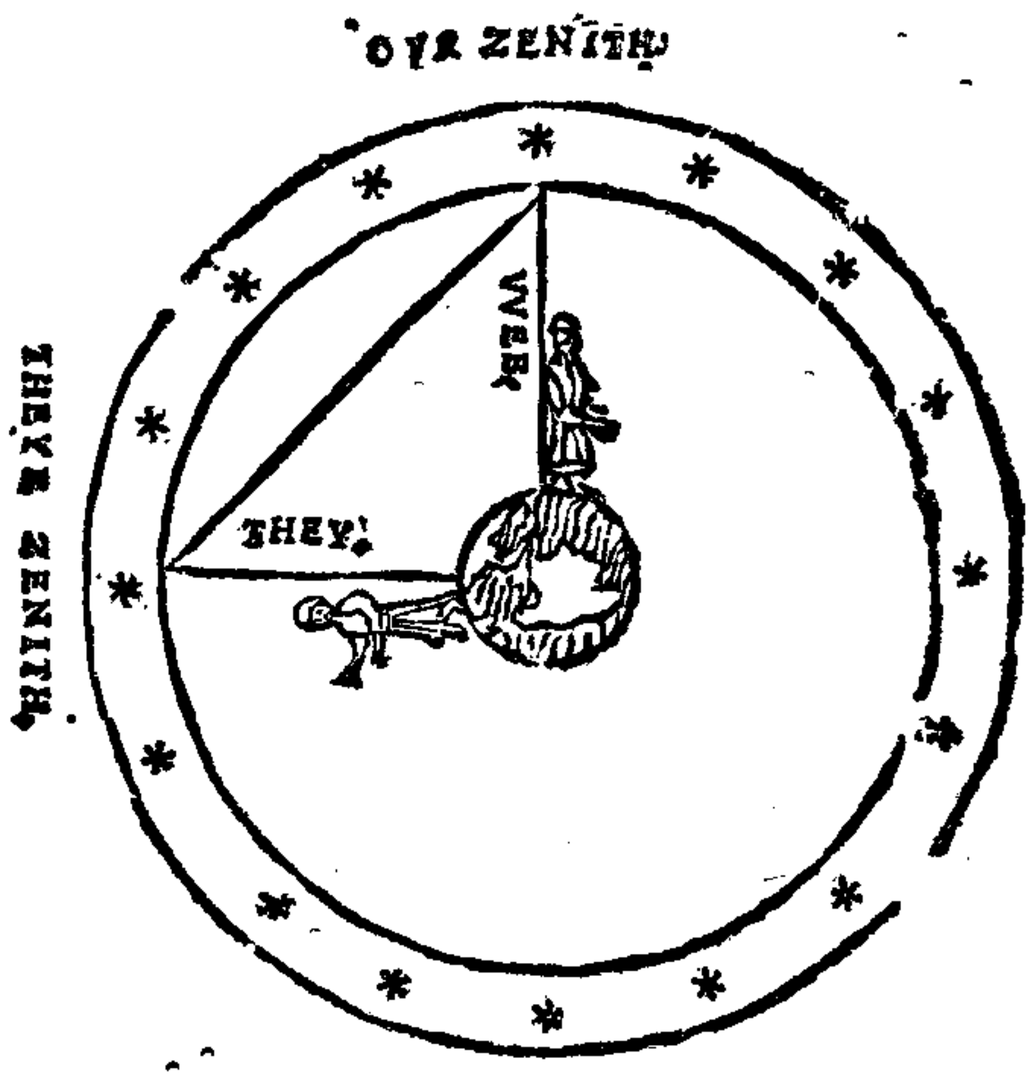
Fyery exhalations.

Hemispherium.

Departynge therfore from Liſbona (as I haue ſayde) beinge from the Equinoctiall line towarde the North abowt. xl. [forty] degrees, wee ſayled to this countrey whiche is beyonde the Equinoctiall. l. [fifty] degrees: All which ſumme, maketh the number of. lxxxx. [ninety] beinge the fourth part of the greateſt circle accordynge to the trewe reaſon of the number tawght by the owlde autours. And by this demonſtration it is manifeſt that wee meaſured the fourth parte of the worlde: Foraſmuch as we that dwell in Liſona on this ſyde the Equinoctial line abowt. xl. [forty] degrees towarde the Northe, ſayled from thenſe. lxxxx. [ninety] degrees in lengthe meridionale angularly by an ouerthwart line, to th[e]inhabitantes. l. [fifty] degrees beyond the Equinoctiall. And that the thynge may bee more playnely vnderſtode, imagine a parpendicular line to faule from the poyntes of heauen which are Zenith (that is the pricke ouer the head) to vs both ſtandynge vpryght in the places of owre owne habitacions: and another ryght line to bee drawne frome owre Zenith to theyrs: Then grauntynge vs to bee in the ryght line in comparyſon to them, it muſt of neceſſitie folowe that they are in the ouerthwart line as halfe Antipodes in comparyſon to vs: In ſuche ſorte that the figure of the ſayde lines make a triangle which is the quarter or fourth parte of the hole circle, as appeareth more playnely by the fygure here folowynge.

Lisbona.

The fowrth part of the worlde.



247

Zenith.

AS touchyng the ſtarres and reaſons of Coſmographie, I haue gathered thus much owt of the vyage of Americus Veſputius. And haue thought good to ioyne hereunto that whiche Andreas de Corſali writeth in his vyage to Eaſt India as concernynge the ſame matter.

The vyage of Andreas de Corsali.

After that we departed from Liſbona, wee ſayled euer with proſperous wynde, not paſſynge owt of the Southeaſt and Southweſt. And paſſyng beyonde the Equinoctial line, we were in the heyght of. 37. degrees of the other halfe circle of the earth. And trauerſynge the cape of Bona Speranza a coulde and wyndy clime bycauſe at that tyme the ſoonne was in the north ſignes, wee founde the nyght of. xiiii. houres. Here we ſawe a marueylous order of ſtarres, ſo that in the parte of heauen contrary to owre northe pole, to knowe in what place and degree the ſouth pole was, we tooke the day with the ſoonne, and obſerued the nyght with the Aſtrolabie, and ſawe manifeſtly twoo clowdes of reaſonable bygneſſe mouynge abowt the place of the pole continually nowe ryſynge and nowe faulynge, ſo keepynge theyr continuall courſe in circular mouynge, with a ſtarre euer in the myddeſt which is turned abowt with them abowte. xi. degrees frome the pole. Aboue theſe appeareth a marueylous croſſe in the myddeſt of fyue notable ſtarres which compaſſe it abowt (as doth charles wayne the northe pole) with other ſtarres whiche moue with them abowt. xxx. [thirty] degrees diſtant from the pole, and make their courſe in. xxiiii. [twenty-four] houres. This croſſe is ſo fayre and bewtiful, that none other heuenly gne may be compared to it as may appeare by this fygure.

Cap. de Speranza.

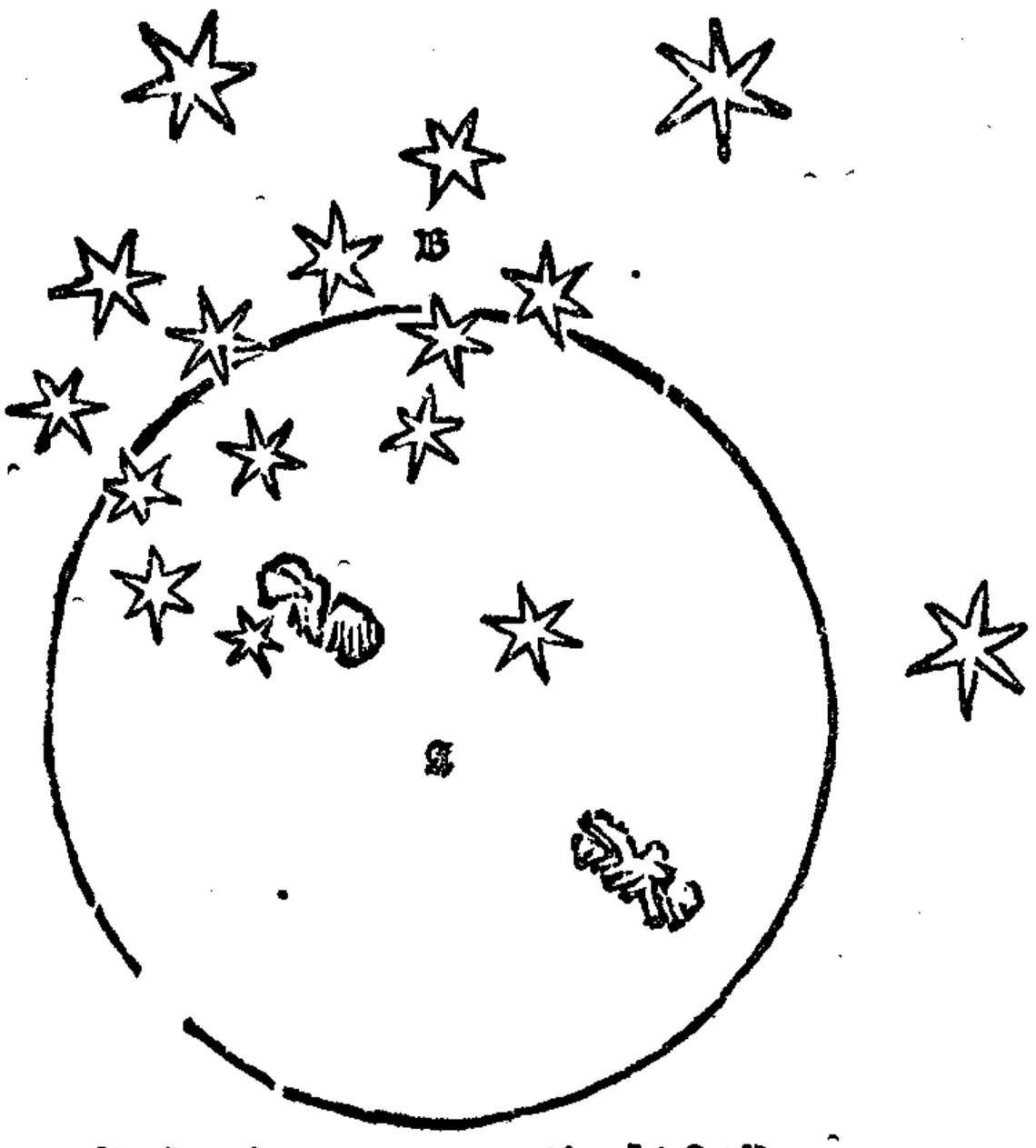
The Equinoctial line.

The starres of the vnder hemispherie.

Cloudes abowt the south pole.

A crosse of fyue starres.

248



A. The pole Antartike. B. The Croſſe.

Hetherto Andreas de Coſtali.

The coaſtes of Ethiope.

Golde in Ethiope.

The vyage of Aloisius Cadamustus.

The chariote of the south pole.

OF the lyke matters, and of the ſtraunge ryſynge of the ſoonne in the mornynge, and of the dyuers ſeaſons of the yeare and motions of the Elementes in the coaſte of Ethiope abowt the ryuer of Senega, and the riche region of Gambra where plentie of golde is founde, ſumewhat beyonde Capo Verde, Aloiſius Cadamuſtus wryteth in this effecte.

Durynge the tyme that wee remayned vppon the mouth of the ryuer, we ſawe the north ſtarre but once: which appered very lowe aboue the ſea the height of a iauelen. We ſaw alſo ſyxe cleare, bryght, and great ſtarres verye lowe aboue the ſea. And conſiderynge theyr ſtations with owre coompaſſe, we founde them to ſtande ryght ſouth, fygured in this maner.

*
* * * *
*

The wynter abowt the Equinoctiall.

Raine and clowdes.

Thunder and lyghtnynge.

Hot showres of rayne.

The day, and rysynge of the soonne.

WE iudged them to bee the chariotte or wayne of the ſouth: But we ſawe not the principall ſtarre, as we coulde not by good reaſon, except we ſhuld firſt loſe the ſyght of the north pole. In this place wee founde the nyght of the length of a. xi. houres and a halfe: And the day of. xii. houres and a halfe at the begynnynge of Iuly. This countrey is euer hotte al times of the yeare. Yet is there a certeyne varietie which they caule wynter. For from the moneth of Iuly to October, it rayneth continually in maner dayly abowt none after this ſorte. There ryſe continually certeyne clowdes aboue the lande betwene the northeaſt and the ſouth eaſt, or from the eaſt and ſoutheaſt with greate thunderynge and lyghtnynge and exceadynge great ſhowers of raine At this tyme the Ethiopians begynne to ſowe theyr ſeedes. They lyue commonly with hony, herbes, rootes, fleſſhe, and mylke. I had alſo intelligence that in this region by reaſon of the great heate of the ayer, the water that raineth is hotte: And that the ſoonne ryſynge in the mornynge, makethe no cleare daylyght as it dooth with vs: But that halfe an houre after the ryſynge, it appeareth troubeled, dymme and ſmoky. The whiche thynge, I knowe not to proceade of any other cauſe then of the loweneſſe of the grounde in this contrey beinge without mountaynes.

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION IV.

Of Moscovy, Cathay, and the North Regions.

1500-1555.]

¶ A DISCOVRSE OF DYVERS VYAGES AND WAYES BY THE WHICHE SPICES, PRECIOUS STONES, AND GOLDE WERE BROUGHT IN OWLDE tyme from India into Europe and other partes of the world.

ALSO OF THE VYAGE TO CATHAY AND EAST INDIA by the north ſea: And of certeyne ſecreates touchynge the ſame vyage, declared by the duke of Moſcouie his ambaſſadoure to an excellent lerned gentelman of Italie, named Galeatius Butrigarius. Lykewyſe of the vyages of that woorthy owlde man Sebaſtian Cabote, yet liuynge in Englande, and at this preſent the gouernour of the coompany of the marchantes of Cathay in the citie of London.

249

IT is doubtleſſe a marueylous thynge to conſyder what chaunges and alterations were cauſed in all the Romane Empire by the commynge of the Gothes and Vandales, and other Barbarians into Italy. For by theyr inuaſions were extinguyſhed all artes and ſciences, and all trades of Marchaundies that were vſed in dyuers partes of the worlde. The deſolation and ignoraunce which inſued hereof, continued as it were a clowde of perpetuall darkeneſſe amonge men for the ſpace of foure hundreth yeares and more, in ſo much that none durſt aduenture to go any whyther owt of theyr owne natiue countreys: whereas before th[e]incurſions of the ſayde Barbarians when the Romane Empire floryſſhed, they might ſafly paſſe the ſeas to al partes of Eaſt India which was at that time as wel knowen and frequented as it is nowe by the nauigations of the Portugales. And that this is trewe, it is manifeſt by that which Strabo wryteth, who was in the tyme of Auguſtus and Tiberius. For ſpeakynge of the greatneſſe and ryches of the citie of Alexandria in Egypte (gouerned then as a prouince of the Romanes) he wryteth thus. This only place of Egypte, is apte to receaue all thynges that coome by ſea, by reaſon of the commoditie of the hauen: And lykewyſe all ſuch thynges as are brought by lande, by reaſon of the ryuer of Nilus wherby they may bee eaſely conueyde to Alexandria, beinge by theſe commodities the rycheſt citie of marchauntes that is in the worlde.

The romaine empyre.

iiii. hundreth yeares of ignoraunce.

Easte India well knowen in owld time.

Strabo.

The great rychesse of Egipte.

The citie of Alexandria.

The reuenues of Egypt are ſo great, that Marcus Tullius ſayth in one of his orations, that kynge Tolomeus ſurnamed Auleta, the father of qũeene Cleopatra, had of reuenues twelue thouſande and fyue hundreth talentes, which are ſeuen millions and a halfe in golde. If therfore this kyng had ſo great reuenues when Egypt was gouerned of ſo ſewe and ſo negligently, what myght it then bee woorth to the Romanes by whom it was gouerned with great diligence, and theyr trade of marchandies greatly increaſed by the traffike of Trogloditica and India? wheras in tyme paſte there could hardly bee founde. xx. ſhyppes togyther that durſte enter into the goulfe of

Marueylous rychesse.

The gouernaunce and reuenues of the Romans.

Trogloditica and India.

The goulfe of Arabie.

Ethiope.

Kich customs

The rychesse which were brought in owlde tyme from India. and the red sea.

The commission of The[e]mperours Marcus and Commodus.

Arabie, or ſhewe theyr proos withowt the mouth of the ſame. But at this preſent, great nauies ſayle togyther in to India and to the furtheſt partes of Ethiope from whenſe are brought many rych and precious marchandies into Egipt and are caryed from thenſe into other countreys. And by this meanes are the cuſtomes redoubeled aſwell by ſuche thynges as are brought thyther, as alſo by ſuche as are caryed frome thenſe, foraſmuche as greate cuſtomes arryſe of thynges of great value. And that by this vyage, infinite and precious marchaundies were brought from the redde ſea and India, and thoſe of dyuers other ſortes then are knowen in owre tyme, it appeareth by the fourthe volume of the ciuile lawe wherin is deſcribed the commiſſion of Th[e]emperours Marcus and Commodus, with the rehearſall of all ſuche ſtuffe and marchandies wherof cuſtome ſhuld bee payde in the redde ſea by ſuch as had the ſame in fee ferme, as were payde the cuſtomes of all other prouinces perteynynge to the Romane Empyre: and they are theſe folowynge.

Cinamome.	Mir.	Xilocinamome.	Iewels of Sardonica.	Dyed cloth and ſylke
Longe pepper.	Amome.	Carpeſio.	Ceraunia.	Carbaſei.
Whyte pepper.	Ginger.	Sylkes of dyuers ſortes.	Calamus Aromaticus.	Sylke threede.
Cloues.	Malabatrum.	Linnen cloth.	Berille.	Gelded men.
250 Coſtus.	Ammoniac.	Skynnes and furres of	Cilindro.	Popingiayes.
Cancamo.	Galbane.	Parthia and Babilon.	Slaues.	Lions of India.
Spikenarde.	Laſſer.	Iuery.	Cloth of Sarmatia.	Leopardes.
Caſſia.	Agarike.	Wodde of Heben.	The ſylke cauled	Panthers.
Sweete perfumes.	Gumme of Arabie.	Precious ſtones.	Metaxa.	Purple.
Xilocaſſia.	Cardamome.	Perles.	Veſtures of ſylke.	

Alſo that iuiſe or liquour which is gathered of wolle and of the heare of the Indians.

The great riches the kynges of Egipte had by customes.

The noble enterprises of the kinges of Egypte.

Arsinoe.

Damiata.

Pelusio.

By theſe woordes it dooth appeare that in owld tyme the ſayde nauigation by the way of the redde ſea, was wel knowen and muche frequented, and perhappes more then it is at this preſent. In ſo much that the auncient kynges of Egypt conſideryng the great profyte of the cuſtomes they had by the viages of the red ſea, and wyllyng to make the ſame more eaſy and commodious, attempted to make a foſſe or chanel which ſhulde begynne in the laſte parte of the ſayde ſea, where was a citie named Arſinoe (which perhappes is that that is nowe cauled Sues) and ſhulde haue reached to a branche of the ryuer of Nilus named Peluſio, which emptieth it ſelfe in owre ſea towarde the Eaſt abowt the citie of Damiata. They determyned alſo to make three cauſeis or hyghe wayes by lande, which ſhulde paſſe from the ſayde braunche to the citie of Arſinoe: but they founde this to difficulte to brynge to paſſe. In fine, kynge Tolomeus ſurnamed Philadelphus, ordeyned an other way: as to ſayle vppon Nilus ageynſt the courſe of the ryuer vnto the citie of Copto, and from thenſe to paſſe by a deſerte countrey vntyll they coome aboue the redde ſea to a citie named Berenice or Mioſormo, where they imbarked all theyr marchaundies and wares for India, Ethiope, and Arabie, as appeareth by the wrytynge fyrſt of Strabo (who wryteth that he was in Egypte) and then by Plinie who was in the tyme of Domitian. Strabo alſo ſpeaking of the ſayd foſſe or trench which was made toward the red ſea, wryteth thus.

Nilus.
Copto.
Berenice.

A nauigable trensh made from Egypte to the red sea

Lacus Amari.

Kynge Sesostre

Kynge Psammiticus.

Kyng Darius

Kynge Ptolomeus.

The citie Heroum.

What Plynye writeth of the nauigable trenche

The largenesse and lengthe of the trenche.

There is a trenche that goth towarde the red ſea and the goulfe of Arabie, and to the citie of Arſinoe, which ſum caul Cleopatrida: and paſſeth by the lakes named Amari (that is) bitter, bicauſe in deede they were fyrſt bytter. But after that this trenche was made and the ryuer entered in, they became ſweete, and are at this preſent full of foules of the water by reaſon of theyr pleaſauntneſſe. This trenche was fyrſt begun by kynge Seſoſtre, before the battayle of Troy. Sum ſaye that it was begunne by kynge Pſammiticus whyle he was a chylde: And that by reaſon of his death, it was lefte imperfect: Alſo that afterwarde, kynge Darius ſucceded in the ſame enterpryſe, who wold haue finiſſhed it, but yet brought it not to th[e]ende bycauſe he was informed that the redde ſea was hygher then Egypt: And that if this lande diuydynge bothe the ſeas, were opened, all Egypte ſhulde bee drowned thereby. Kynge Tolomeus wold in deede haue finyſhed it: but yet left it ſhut at the hed that he myght when he wolde, ſayle to the other ſea and returne withowt perell. Here is the citie of Arſinoe: And nere vnto that, the citie cauled Heroum in the vttermoſt part of the goulfe of Arabie toward Egipt with many portes and habitacions. Plinie likewyſe ſpeakynge of this trench, ſayth. In the furtheſt part of the goulfe of Arabie, is a porte cauled Daneo, from whenſe they determyned to brynge a nauigable trench vnto the ryuer of Nilus, where as is the fyrſt Delta. Betwene the ſayde ſea and Nilus there is a ſtreight of lande of the length of. lxii. [ſixty-two] myles. The firſt that attempted this thynge, was Seſoſtre kynge of Egypte: and after hym Darius kynge of the Perſians, whome Tolomeus folowed, who made a trenche a hundreth foote large, and. xxx. [thirty] foote diepe, beinge three hundreth myles in lengthe vnto the lakes named Amari, and durſte proceade no further for feare of inundation, hauynge knoweleage that the redde ſea was hygher by three cubites then al the countrey of Egypt. Other ſay that this was not the cauſe: but that he doubted that yf he ſhulde haue let the ſea coome any further, all the water of Nilus ſhulde haue byn therby corrupted, which onely mynyſtreth drynke to all Egypte. But notwithſtandynge all theſe thynges aforeſayde, all this vyage is frequented by lande

251 from Egypte to the redde ſea, in which paſſage are three cauſeis or hyghe wayes. The fyrſt begynneth at the

mouth of Nilus named Peluſio. All which way is by the ſandes: In ſo much that if there were not certeyne hyghe reedes fyxt in the earth to ſhewe the ryght way, the cauſei coulde not be founde by reaſon the wynde euer coueꝛeth it with ſande. The ſecond cauſei is two myles from the mountayne Caſſius. And this alſo in th[e]-ende of. lx. [ſixty] myles, commeth vppon the way or cauſey of Peluſius, inhabited with certeyne Arabians cauled Antei. The thyrde begynneth at Gerro, named Adipſon: and paſſeth by the ſame Arabians, for the ſpace of. lx. [ſixty] myles ſumwhat ſhorter, but full of rowgh mountaynes and great ſcarſeneſſe of water. All theſe cauſeis, leade the way to the citie of Arſinoe, buylded by Tolomeus Philadelphus in the goulfe Carandra by the red ſea. This Ptolomeus was the fyrſt that ſearched al that parte of the red ſea which is cauled Trogloditica. Of this trenche deſcribed of Strabo and Plinie, there are ſeene certeyne tokens remaynynge at this preſent as they affirme which haue byn at Sues beyonde the citie of Alcayr otherwyſe cauled Babylon in Egypte. But the marchauntes that of later dayes trauayle this viage by lande, ryde through the dry and baren deſertes on camels both by day and by nyght: directynge theyr way by the ſtarres and compaſe as do maryners on the ſea, and caryinge with them water ſufficient for many dayes iorneys. The places of Arabie and India named of Strabo and Plinie, are the ſelſe ſame where the Portugales practiſe theyr trade at this daye, as the maners and cuſtomes of the Indians doo yet declare. For euen at this preſente theyr women vſe to burne theym ſelues alyue with the deade bodies of theyr huſbandes. Which thynge (as wryteth Strabo in his. xv. booke) they dyd in owlde tyme by a lawe, for this conſideration that ſumtyme being in loue with other they forſooke or poyſoned theyr huſbandes. And foraſmuch as accordynge to this cuſtome, the owlde poete Propertius (who lyued abowt a hundreth yeares before th[e]incarnation of Chryſt) hath in his boke made mention of the contention that was amonge the Indian women which of them ſhuld bee burned aliue with theyr huſbandes, I haue thought good to ſubſcribe his verſes, which are theſe.

Fœlix Fois lex funeris vna maritis,
Quos aurora ſuis rubra colorat equis.
Mamque vbi mortifero iacta eſt fax vltima lecto,
Vxorum ſuis ſtat pia turba comis,
Et certamen habent lethi, quæ viua ſequatur
Coniugium, pudor eſt non licuiſſe mori.
Ardent victrices, et flammæ pectora præbent,
Imponuntque ſuis ora peruſta viris.

The viage bi lande from Egypte to the red sea.

What kynge Ptolomeus discouered.

Alcayre.

The viage to Easte Indya frequented in owlde tyme.

The customes and maners of the Indyans.

As touchynge theſe vyages both by ſea and by lande to Eaſt India and Cathay, many thynges are wrytten very largely by dyuers autours which I omytte bycauſe they perteyne not ſo much vnto vs as doth the viage attempted to CATHAY by the north ſeas and the coaſtes of Moſcouia diſcouered in owre tyme by the viage of that excellent yonge man Rychard Chaunceler no leſſe lerned in all mathematicall ſciences then an expert pylotte, in the yeare of owre lorde. 1554.

The vyage to Cathay.

Rycharde Chaunceler.

As concernynge this vyage, I haue thought good to declare the communication which was betwene the ſayde learned man Galeatius Butrigarius, and that great philoſopher and noble gentelman of Italie named Hieronimus Fracaſtor as I fynde wrytten in the Italian hyſtories of nauigations. As they were therfore conferrynge in matters of learnynge, and reaſonynge of the ſcience of Coſmographi, the ſayde lerned man hauynge in his hande an inſtrument of Aſtronomie, declared with a large oration howe muche the worlde was bounde to the kynges of Portugale, rehearſynge the noble factes doone by them in India, and what landes and Ilandes they had diſcouered, and how by theyr nauigations they made the whole worlde hange in the ayer. He further declared what parts of the baul of the earth remained yet vndiſcouered. And ſayde that of the landes of the inferior hemiſpherie or halfe compaſe of the baule towarde the pole Antartike, there was nothynge knowen but that lyttle of the coaſte of Braſilia vnto the ſtreight of Magellanus. Alſo a part of Peru: And a lyttle aboue Affrike towarde the cape of Bona Speranza. Alſo that he marueyled withowte meaſure that this thynge was no better conſidered of Chriſtian Princes to whom god had deputed this charge, hauyng euer on theyr counſail men of great lernynge which may informe them of this thing beinge ſo marueylous and noble whereby they maye obteyne glorie and fame by vertue, and bee imputed amonge men as goddes, by better demerites then euer were Hercules and great Alexander who trauayled only into India: and that by makynge the men of this owre hemiſpherie knowen to theym of the other halfe compaſe of the baule beneth vs, they might by the tytle of this enterpryſe, withowt comparyſon farre excell all the noble factes that euer were doone by Iulius Ceſar or any other of the Romane Emperours. Which thynge they myght eaſely brynge to paſſe by aſſignynge colonies to inhabite dyuers places of that hemiſpherie, in lyke maner as dyd the Romanes in prouinces newely ſubdued. Whereby they myght not only obteyne great ryches, but alſo inlarge the Chriſtian fayth and Empire to the glory of god and confuſion of infidels. After this, he ſpake of the Ilande of ſaynt Laurence, cauled in owlde

A lerned discourse of dyuers vyages

The vigages of the Portugales.

The worlde hangynge on the ayer.

What is knowen of the lower hemispherie.

The lande of Brasile.

Peru.

The charge and dewtie of Christian princes.

Note.

252

Hercules and Alexander.

The colonies of the Romans in regions subdued.

The great Iland of saynt Laurence or Madagascar.

The Ilandes of Taprobana or Giaua.

Plinie.

The hystorie of Cornelius Nepos.

Shyps of India driuen into the sea of Germanie.

An enterprise wherby Princes may obteyne trewe fame and glory.

Cathay discouered bi Marcus Paulus.

The citie of Lubyke.

The kyng of Polonie.

The duke of Moscouia.

An ambassadour from the duke of Moscouia.

253

The woordes of th[e]ambassadour of Moscouia.

The way from Moscouia to the north Ocean and Cathay.

Volochda.

Vstiug.

Succana.

Duina.

Colmogor.

The north Ocean.

Greate wooddes.

Gothlande.

The Moscouites haue knowleage of the greate cane Cathay.

Permia.

Plescora.

Catena mundi.

tyme Madagaſcar, which is greater then the realme of Caſtile and Portugale, and reachethe from the. xii. degree towarde the pole Antartike, vnto the. xxvi. degree and a halfe, lyinge Northeaſte frome the cape of Bona Speranza and partly vnder the line of Tropïcus Capricorni: beinge well inhabited and of temperate ayer, with abundaunce of all thynges neceſſarie for the lyfe of man, and one of the moſt excellent Ilandes that is founde this daye in the worlde: And that neuertheleſſe there is nothynge knowen therof, except only a fewe ſmaule hauens by the ſea ſide, as the lyke ignorance remayneth of the greateſt part of the Ilandes of Taprobana, Giaua the more and the leſſe, and infinite other. Then begynninge to ſpeake of the partes of owre pole, he cauſed the bookes of plinie to bee brought him where diligentely ponderynge the. lxvii. chapiture of the ſeconde booke, he founde where he reherſeth the hiſtorie of Cornelius Nepos, by theſe woordes: That in his tyme, one Eudoxus eſcapynge the handes of kynge Lathyro, departed from the goulfe of Arabie and came by ſea to the Ilande of Caleſe. Declarynge further, that whereas this narration was many yeares reputed for a fable, was nowe in owre tyme by the vertue of the Portugales, knowen to bee trewe: And that lykewyſe the ſame Cornelius Nepos recitethe that at the tyme when Quintus Metellus Celer was proconſul or lieuetenant for the Romans in Fraunce, the kynge of Sueuia gaue hym certeyne Indians which ſaylinge owt of India for marchandies, were by tempeſt dryuen to the coaſtes of Germanie. When he had redde theſe woordes, he proceaded, ſayinge that the ſame thynge myght bee verified nowe in owr tyme if the princes which confine vppon that ſea wolde endeuoure theyr induſtry and diligence to brynge it to paſſe. And that there coulde not any nauigation bee imagined ſo commodious and profitable to all Chriſtendoome as this myght bee yf by this way the vyage ſhulde bee founde open to India to come to the rych contrey of CATHAY which was diſcouered now two hundreth yeares ſence by Marcus Paulus. Then taking the globe in his hande, he made demonſtration that this vyage ſhulde bee very ſhorte in reſpect of that which the Portugales nowe folowe, and alſo of that which the Spanyardes may attempte to the Ilandes of Moluca. He declared furthermore that the citie of Lubyke beinge rych and of great poure, and ſituate vppon the ſea of Germanie, and alſo accuſtomed with continuall nauigations to trauayle the ſea of Norwaye and Gothlande, and lykewyſe the ryght noble kynge of Polonie whoſe dominions with his realme of Lituania, extende to the ſayde ſea, ſhulde be apte to diſcouer this ſecreate: But that aboue all other, the duke of Moſcouia, ſhulde performe the ſame with greater commoditie and more facilitie then any other Prince. And here ſteyinge a whyle, he began to ſpeake ageyne and ſayde. Nowe foraſmuch as we are coome to this paſſe, mee thynke it ſhulde ſeeme a great diſcurteſie if I ſhuld not ſhewe yowe all that I knowe as touchynge this vyage, wherof I greatly muſed with my ſelfe many yeares by occaſion of the woordes of Plinie. Whereas therefore beinge a younge man, I was in Germanie in the citie of Auguſta, it ſo chaunſed that in thoſe dayes there came thyther an ambaſadour of the duke of Moſcouia, a man ſingularly learned both in the Greeke toonge and the Latine, and of good experience in worldely thynges, hauying byn ſent to dyuers places by the ſayde Prince, and one of his counſayle. Of whoſe learnyng beinge aduertiſed, I ſought his acquayntaunce. And talkynge with hym one day of theſe Indians dryuen by fortune to the coaſtes of Germanie, and of the vyage that myght bee diſcouered by the North ſea to the Ilandes of ſpices, I perceaued that at the fyrſte he marueyled exceadyngely, as at a thynge that he coulde neuer haue imagined. But reſtynge a whyle in maner aſtonyſſhed in his ſecreate phantaſie, he toke great pleaſure therin, and ſayde. Foraſmuch as the Portugales haue nowe compaſed abowt all the ſouth partes ſuppoſed in owlde tyme to bee inacceſſable by reaſon of great heate, why ſhulde wee not certeinely thynke that the lyke maye bee done abowt this parte of the north withowt feare of coulde, eſpecially to men borne and brought vp in that clime? Yet procedyng further, he ſaid, that if his Prince and maſter, had men that wolde animate hym to diſcouer this vyage, there was no Prince in Chriſtendome that myght do it with more facilitie. Then caulynge for a mappe in which was the deſcription of Moſcouia and the prouinces ſubiecte to the ſame, he declared that from the citie of Moſcouia or Moſca going towarde the northeaſt for the ſpace of. lx. [ſixty] myles, they come to the ryuer of Volochda and afterwarde by that, and folowyng the courſe therof, to the citie of Vſtiug, ſo cauled bycauſe the ryuer of Iug fauleth into the ryuer of Succana, where they loſe theyr owne names and make the great ryuer Duina: And by that, leauyng on the ryght hande the citie of Colmogor, they ſayle vnto the north Ocean. The which waye, althoughe it bee a longe tracte, as more then. 800. myles, neuertheleſſe he ſayde that in ſommer it myght commodiouſly bee ſayled: And that wheras it fauleth into the ſea, there are infinite woods of goodly trees apte to make ſhyppes. And the place ſo conuenient for this purpoſe, that ſhipwryghtes and other ſkylful workemen for all thynges hereunto apperteynynge, may eaſely coome owt of Germanie. Alſo that the men which are vſed to trauayle the ſea of Germanie abowte the coaſtes of Gothlande, ſhulde bee beſt and moſt apte to attempte this enterpryſe, bycauſe they are indurate to abyde coulde, hunger, and laboure. He ſayde furthermore, that in the court of his Prince, they haue much knowleage of the great cane of Cathay, by reaſon of the continuall warres they haue with the Tartars, of whom the greateſt part gyue obedience to the ſaid great Cane as to theyr chiefe Emperoure. He made alſo demonſtration in the ſayde carde by the northeaſte, that beinge paſte the prouince of Permia and the ryuer Peſcora (whiche fauleth into the north ſea) and certeyne mountaynes named *Catena Mundi*, there is

th[e]enteraunce into the prouince of obdora, whereas is Vecchiadoro and the ryuer Obo, whiche alſo ſauleth into the ſayd ſea, and is the furtheſt borther of Th[e]empire of the Prince of Moſcouia. The ſayde ryuer hath his originall in a great lake cauled Chethai, which is the fyrſte habitacion of the Tartars that paye tribute to the greate Cane. And from this lake for the ſpace of two monethes vyage (as they were credably informed by certeine Tartares taken in the warres) is the moſt noble citie of Cambalu, beinge one of the chiefeſt in the dominion of the greate Cane, whom ſum caule the great Cham. He alſo affirmed, that if ſhippes ſhulde bee made on the coaſtes of the ſayde ſea, and ſayle on the backe halfe of the coaſt therof (which he knewe by many relations made to his Prince, to reach infinitely toward the northeaſt) they ſhulde doubteleſſe in folowynge the ſame, eaſely diſcouer that countrey. Vnto theſe woordes he added, that although there were greate difficultie in Moſcouia, by reaſon that the waye to the ſayde ſea is full of thicke wooddes and waters which in the ſommer make great maryſſhes and impoſſible to bee trauayled, aſwell for lacke of vyttayles whiche can not there bee founde, not for certeyne dayes, but for the ſpace of certeyne monethes, the place beinge deſolate withowt inhabitauntes, neuertheleſſe he ſayde that yf there were with his Prince, only two Spanyardes or Portugales to whome the charge of this vyage ſhulde bee commytted, he no wayes doubted but that they wolde folowe it and ſynde it, foraſmuch as with great ingeniouſneſſe and ineſtimable pacience, theſe nations haue ouercome much greater difficulties then are theſe which are but lyttle in compariſon to thoſe that they haue ouerpaſſed and doo ouerpaſſe in all theyr viages to India. He proceaded declarynge that not many yeares ſence, there came to the courte of his Prince, an ambaſſadour frome pope Leo, named maſter Paulo Centurione a Genueſe vnder dyuers pretenſes. But the principall occaſion of his commynge, was, bycauſe he hadde conceaued greate indignation and hatred ageynſt the Portugales: And therfore intended to proue yf he coulde open anye vyage by lande whereby ſpices myght bee brought from India by the lande of Tartaria, or by the ſea Caſpium (otherwyſe cauled Hircanum) to Moſcouia: And from thenſe to bee brought in ſhippes by the ryuer Riga, whiche runnynge by the countrey of Liuonia, ſauleth into the ſea of Germanie. And that his Prince gaue eare vnto hym: and cauſed the ſayde viage to bee attempted by certeine noble men of Lordo, of the Tartars confininge nexte vnto hym. But the warres whiche were then betwene them, and the greate deſertes which they ſhulde of neceſſitie ouerpaſſe, made them leaue of theyr enterpryſe: which if it had bin purpoſed by the coaſtes of this owre north ſea, it myght haue byn eaſely ſynyſhed. The ſayde Ambaſſadour continued his narration, ſayinge that no man ought to doubte of that ſea but that it may bee ſayled ſyxe monethes in the yeare, foraſmuch as the days are then very longe in that clime, and hot by reaſon of contynuall reuerberation of the beames of the ſoonne and ſhorte nyghtes. And that this thynge were as well woorthy to bee proued, as any other nauigation wherby many partes of the worlde heretofore vnknowen, haue byn diſcouered and brought to ciuilitie. And here makynge an ende of this talke, he ſaid: Let vs nowe omytte this parte of Moſcouia with his coulde, and ſpeake ſumwhat of that parte of the newe worlde in whiche is the lande of Brytons cauled *Terra Britonum*, and Baccaleos or *Terra Baccalearum*, where in the yeare. 1534. and. 1535. Iaques Cartiar in two vyages made with three great French gallies, founde the great and large countreys named Canada, Ochelaga, and Sanguenai: which reach from the. xlv. [forty-fifth] to the. li. [fifty-firſt] degree, beinge well inhabited and pleaſaunte countreys, and named by hym Noua Francia. And here ſteyinge a while and lyftynge vppe his handes, he ſayde: Oh what doo the Chriſtian Princes meane that in ſuch landes diſcouered they do not aſſigne certeine colonies to inhabite the ſame to bringe thoſe people (whom god hath ſo bleſſed with natural gyftes) to better ciuilitie and to embraſe owre religion, then the whiche, nothynge can bee more acceptable to god? The ſayd regions alſo, beinge ſo fayre and frutefull, with plentie of all ſortes of corne, herbes, frutes, woodde, fyſſhes, beaſtes, metals, and ryuers of ſuche greatneſſe that ſhyppes maye ſayle more then. 180. myles vppon one of theym, beinge on bothe ſydes infinitely inhabited: And to cauſe the gouernoures of the ſayde colonies to ſearche whether that lande toward the northe named *Terra de Laborador*, doo ioyne as one firme lande with Norwaye: Or whether there bee any ſtreight or open place of ſea as is moſte lyke there ſhulde bee, foraſmuch as it is to bee thought that the ſayde Indians dryuen by fortune abowte the coaſtes of Norway, came by that ſtreyght or ſea, to the coaſtes of Germanie: And by the ſayde ſtreight to ſaile northweſt to diſcouer the landes and countreys of CATHAY, and from thenſe to ſayle to the Ilandes of Moluçca. And theſe ſurely ſhulde be enterpriſes able to make men immortal. The whiche thynge, that ryght woorthy gentleman maſter Antony di Mendoza conſiderynge by the ſingular vertue and magnanimitie that is in hym, attempted to put this thynge in practiſe. For beinge viceroy of the countrey of Mexico (ſo named of the great citie Mexico otherwiſe cauled Temiſtitan, nowe cauled newe Spayne, being in the. xx. [twentieth] degree aboue the Equinoctiall, and parte of the ſayde firme lande), he ſent certeyne of his capitaynes by lande, and alſo a nauie of ſhyppes by ſea, to ſearch this ſecreate. And I remember that when I was in Flaunders in Th[e]emperours courte, I ſawe his letter wrytten in the yeare. 1541. and dated from Mexico: wherin was declared howe towarde the northweſt, he had fownd the kyngedome of *Sette Citta* (that is) Seuen Cities, whereas is that cauled Ciuola by the reuerend father Marco da Niza: and howe beyonde the ſayde kyngedome yet further towarde the Northweſt, Capitayne Franceſco Vaſques of Coronado, hauynge ouerpaſſed great deſertes, came to the ſea ſyde where

Obdora.
Vechiadoro.
Obo.
The lake Chethay.
The Tartars.
The citie of Cambalu.
Note this secreate.

Difficult trauaylynge in Moscouia.

Commendation of the Spaniardes and Portugales.

The hystorie of Paulus Centurio.
Of this reade more at large in the booke of Paulus Iouius.
Malice may do more with sum then vertue.
The Caspian sea.
Riga.
Liuonia.

254
The Tartars of Lordo.
Desertes.
The viage by the north sea.

The woorthynesse of this vyage.

The viages of the Frenchmen to the land of Baccalaos.

Pleasaunt countreys.
New Fraunce.
Apostrophe to the Christian princes.

Great ryuers.
A thyng woorthy to be searched.

The way to Cathay and the Ilandes of Maluca by the northwest
A notable enterpryse.

The noble enterprise of Antoni di Mendoza, Viceroy of Mexico.

The discouerynge of the northwest partes.

Shyps saylynge from Cathay by the north hyperborean sea to the coastes of the northwest part of the lande of Baccaleos. Cathay.

he found certeyne ſhyppes which ſayled by that ſea with marchaundies, and had in theyr baner vppon the proos of theyr ſhyppes, certeyne foules made of golde and ſyluer which they of Mexico caule Alcatrazzi: And that theyr mariners ſhewed by ſignes that they were. xxx. [thirty] dayes ſaylynge in commynge to that hauen: wherby he vnderſtode that theſe ſhippes could bee of none other countrey then of Cathay, foraſmuch as it is ſituate on the contrary parte of the ſayde lande diſcouered. The ſayde maſter Antonie wrote furthermore, that by the opinion of men well practiſed, there was diſcouered ſo greate a ſpace of that countrey vnto the ſayd ſea, that it paſſed. 950. leaques, which make. 2850. myles. And doubtleſſe yf the Frenche men in this theyr newe Fraunce, wolde haue paſſed by lande towarde the ſayd northweſt and by north, they ſhuld alſo haue founde the ſea wherby they myght haue ſayled to Cathay. But aboue all thynges, this ſeemed vnto me moſte woorthy of commendation, that the ſayde maſter Antonie wrote in his letter that he had made a booke of al the natural and marueylous thynges whiche they founde in ſearchynge thoſe countreys, with alſo the meaſures of landes and altytudes of degrees: A worke doubtleſſe which ſheweth a princely and magnificall mynde, wherby wee may conceaue that yf god had gyuen hym the charge of the other hemiſpherie, he wolde or nowe haue made it better knowen to vs. The which thynge, I ſuppoſe no man doth greatly eſteeme at this time: beinge neuertheleſſe the greateſt and moſt glorious enterpriſe that may bee imagined.

A notable booke. 255

A great and glorious enterprise.

Sebastian Cabote the grand pylot of the west Indies.

Commendation of Sebastian Cabote.

Sebastian Cabote tould me that he was borne in Brystowe, and that at. iiii. yeare owld he was caried with his father to Venice and so returned ageyne into England with his father after certeyne yeares: wherby he was thought to haue bin born in Venice.

And here makynge a certeyne pauſe, and turnynge hym ſelfe towarde vs, he ſayde: Doo yow not vnderſtande to this purpoſe howe to paſſe to India toward the northweſt wind, as dyd of late a citizen of Veneſe, ſo valiente a man, and ſo well practyſed in all thynges perteynynge to nauigations and the ſcience of Coſmographie, that at this preſent he hath not his lyke in Spayne, in ſo much that for his vertues he is preferred aboue all other pylottes that ſayle to the weſt Indies, who may not paſſe thyther withowt his licence, and is therfore cauled *Piloto Maggiore* (that is) the graunde pylote. And when wee ſayde that wee knewe him not, he proceaded, ſayinge, that beinge certeyne yeares in the citie of Siuile, and deſyrous to haue ſum knowleage of the nauigations of the Spanyardes, it was toulde hym that there was in the citie a valient man, a Venecian borne, named Sebaſtian Cabote, who had the charge of thoſe thynges, being an expert man in that ſcience, and one that coulde make cardes for the ſea with his owne hande. And that by this reporte, ſeekynge his acquaintaunce, he founde hym a very gentell perſon, who enterteyned hym frendly and ſhewed him many thynges, and amonge other a large mappe of the worlde with certeine particular nauigations aſwell of the Portugales as of the Spanyardes. And that he ſpake further vnto hym, in this effecte. When my father departed from Veneſe many yeares ſence to dwell in Englande to folowe the trade of marchaundies, he tooke me with him to the citie of London whyle I was very yonge, yet hauynge neuertheleſſe ſum knowleage of letters of humanitie and of the ſphere. And when my father dyed in that tyme when newes were browght that Don Chriſtopher Colonus Genueſe, had diſcouered the coaſtes of India, whereof was great talke in all the courte of kynge Henry the ſeuenth who then reigned: In ſo much that all men with great admiration affirmed it to bee a thynge more diuine then humane, to ſayle by the Weſte into the Eaſt where ſpices growe, by a way that was neuer knowen before. By which fame and reporte, there increaſed in my harte a greate flame of deſyre to attempte ſum notable thynge. And vnderſtandyng by reaſon of the ſphere, that if I ſhulde ſayle by the way of the northweſt wynde, I ſhulde by a ſhorter tracte coomme to India, I thereuppon cauſed the kynge to bee aduertiſed of my diuiſe, who immediatly commaunded two carauels to bee furnyſſhed with all thynges apperteynynge to the vyage, which was as farre as I remember, in the yeare. 1496. in the begynnynge of ſommer. Begynnyng therfore to ſaile towarde Northweſt, not thynkyng to fynde any other lande then that of CATHAY, and from thenſe to turne towarde India. But after certeine dayes, I founde that the lande ranne towarde the Northe, which was to me a great diſpleaſure. Neuertheleſſe, ſayling alonge by the coaſt to ſee if I could fynde any goulfe that turned, I founde the lande ſtyll continent to the. 56. degree vnder owre pole. And ſeinge that there the coaſt turned toward the Eaſt, diſpayringe to fynd the paſſage, I turned backe ageyne, and ſayled downe by the coaſt of that lande towarde the Equinoctiall (euer with intent to fynde the ſayde paſſage to India) and came to that parte of this firme lande whiche is nowe cauled FLORIDA. Where, my vyttayles fayling, I departed from thenſe and returned into England, where I founde great tumultes amonge the people, and preparaunce for warres in Scotlande: by reaſon whereof, there was no more conſideration had to this vyage Wheruppon I wente into Spayne to the Catholyke kynge, and quene Elizabeth: who beinge aduertiſed what I had doone, interteyned me, and at theyr charges furnyſſhed certeyne ſhyppes wherwith they cauſed me to ſayle to diſcouer the coaſtes of Braſile, where I founde an exceadynge great and large ryuer, named at this preſent *Rio della Plata* (that is) the ryuer of ſyluer, into the which I ſayled, and folowed it into the firme lande more then ſyxe hundrethe leaques, fyndynge it euery where verye fayre and inhabited with infinite people, which with admyration came runnynge dayly to owre ſhyppes. Into this ryuer, runne ſo many other riuers, that it is in maner incredible. After this, I made many other vyages, which I now pretermitte. And wexynge owlde, I gyue my ſelfe to reſt from ſuch trauayles bycauſe there are nowe many younge and luſty pylotes and mariners of good experience, by whoſe forwardeneſſe I doo reioyſe in the fruſes of my labours, and reſt with the charge of this office as yowe ſee.

The fyrst vyage of Sebastian Cabote.

The lande of Florida.

The seconde vyage of Cabote to the land of Brasile, and Rio della Plata.

Cabote tould me that in a region within this ryuer he sowed l. [fifty] graynes of weate in September, and gathered therof. L 256 [fifty] thousand in December as wryteth also Francisco Lopes.

And this is as much as I haue vnderſtoode of maſter Sebaſtian Cabote, as I haue gathered owte of dyuers nauigations wrytten in the Italian toonge.

The vyage to Moscouia.

And whereas I haue before made mention howe Moſcouia was in owr tyme diſcouered by Richard Chanceler in his viage toward Cathai by the direction and information of the ſayde maſter Sebaſtian who longe before had this ſecreate in his mynde, I ſhall not neede here to deſcribe that viage, foraſmuche as the ſame is largely and faythfully written in the Laten tonge by that lerned young man Clement Adams ſcole mayſter to the Queens henſhemen, as he receaued it at the mouthe of the ſayde Richard Chanceler. Neuertheleſſe I haue thought good here to ſpeake ſumwhat of Moſcouia as I haue redde in the booke of Iohn Faber written in the Latin toonge to the ryght noble Prynce Ferdinando Archeduke of Auſtria and Infant of Spaine, of the maners and religion of the Moſcouites, as he was partely inſtructed by the ambaſadours of the duke of Moſcouie ſent into Spayne to Th[e]emperours maieſtie in the yeare. M.D.XX.V. He wryteth therfore as foloweth.

The hystorye of Moscouia.

The dyuers names of Moscouia.

I thynke it fyrſte conueniente to ſpeake ſumewhat of the name of this region wherby it is cauled at this day, and how it was cauled in owlde tyme. Conferrynge therfore the moſte ancient of the Greeke and latine monumentes with the hiſtories of later tyme, I perceaue it to bee a thynge which requireth no ſmaule iudgement of wytte and lernynge. For we ſee in howe ſhorte tyme the names of thynges are chaunged, as are alſo the maners of men. I fynde therfore that thoſe people whom at this day wee commonly caule Moſcouites, were in tyme paſt (as wytneſſeth Plinie) cauled *Roxolani*, whom neuertheleſſe by chaungynge one letter, Ptolomie in his eyght table of Europe, cauleth *Roſolanos* as dooth alſo Strabo. They were alſo many yeares cauled *Rutheni*: And are that people which ſumtyme fought manfully ageynſt the Capitaynes of Methridates as Strabo wryteth. They were cauled Moſcouites of the chiefe citie of al the prouince named Moſcouia or Moſca: or (as Volaterane ſaith) of the riuer Moſco. They were ſumtyme gouerned by duke Iohan, whoſe wyfe was Helena of the lynage of Th[e]emperours of Conſtanſtinople of the noble famelie of the Paleologi. Beyonde theſe Roxolanos, Strabo ſayth there is no lande inhabited. Theſe Ruthenians therfore or Moſcouites, are people of the northeaſte parte of the worlde from vs: And are determined with the limettes of the great ryuer Boriſthenes of Scithia, on the one ſyde with the Lituanians and Polonians, and on the other ſyde with the Tartars who ceaſe not to vexe them with continuall warres and incurſions. Eſpecially the great Emperour Cham of Cathay the chiefe Prince of the Tartars, reſidente by the ſea ſyde in Taurico Cherſoneſo, moleſteth theim with ſore warres. They are towarde the north ſyde incloſed with the froſen ſea, the lande of whoſe coaſtes beinge verye large, perteyneth in maner all to the dominion of the duke of Moſcouie. This ſea is it which the owlde wryters caule *Lacus Cronicus*, ſo named of the Greeke word *Cronos*, which the Latines caule *Saturnus* whom they fayne to bee an owlde man, of complexion coulde and ſlowe, and thereby name all ſuch thynges as are coulde and ſlowe, *Cronica*, as by lyke reaſon they dyd this northe ſea which beinge in maner euer froſen, is ſlowe and coulde and in maner immouable. And for lyke conſideration (as ſaythe Plinie) Hethens nameth it in the Scythian toonge, Amaltheum, whiche woorde ſignifieth as muche as congeled or froſen. But that I wander not farre frome my purpoſe: Th[e]empire and dominion of the duke of Moſcouie recheth ſo farre that it comprehendeth certeyne partes of Aſia and alſo of Europe. The citie of Moſcouia or Moſca, is counted twyſe as bygge as Colonia Agrippina as they faythfully reporte which knowe bothe. Vnto this they haue alſo an other not vnequall in byggeneſſe cauled Fladimer. Alſo Bleſcouia, Nouogradia, Smolne, and Otifer, al which, theyr ambaſſadours affirme to bee of princely and magnificall buyldynges, and ſtrongely defended with waules bothe of brycke and ſquare ſtone. Of theſe, Bleſcouia is ſtrongeſt and enuironed with three waules. Other which they haue innumerable are not ſo famous as are theſe wherof this duke of Moſcouie and Emperoure of Ruſſia taketh th[e]inſcription of his title. For euen at this preſent, when ſo euer eyther by his ambaſſadours or his letters, he dooth ſignifie hym ſelfe to bee Emperoure of Moſcouie, he is accuſtomed to vſe this title. Baſilius by the grace of God Emperoure of all Ruſſia and greate Duke of Fladamer, Moſcouie, Nouigrade, Bleſcouia, Smolne, and Otifer. etc. And this is the tytle whereby the ſayde ambaſſadours ſaluted yowre maieſtie in the name of great Baſilius when they began theyr oration. This prince of Moſcouie hath vnder hym princes of many prouinces and thoſe of great poure: Of the which, that owlde whyte bearded man whom this Emperour of the Ruthians ſente for his ambaſſadoure to Th[e]emperours maieſtie into Spayne, is not one of the leaſt. For euen he when neceſſitie of warre requyreth, is accuſtomed to make for his Emperour a bande of. xxx. [thirty] thouſande horſemen. But this is to theyr ſingular commendation that they are ſo obedient to theyr prince in al thynges, that beinge ſommoned by hym by neuer ſo meane an hearald, they obey incontinent as if it were to god,

Roxolani.
Rosolani.
Rutheni.

The ryuer Mosco.

The ryuer Boristhenes.

Th[e]emperour of Cathay.

The frosen sea.

Lacus Cronicus.

Saturnus.

Amaltheum.

The dominion of the duke of Moscouia.

The citie of Moscouia.

The chiefe cities of Moscouia.

257

The duke of Moscouia and Emperour of Russia.

The duke of Moscouia his tytle.

Duke Basilius.

Their poure.

Theyr obedience to theyr prince.

Theyr wars and conquestes.

thynkynge nothyng more glorious then to dye in the quarell of theyr prince. By reaſon of which obedience, they are able in ſhort tyme, to aſſemble an army of two or three hundreth thouſande men ageynſt theyr enemies eyther the Tartars or the greate Cham: And haue hereby obteyned great victories and triumphes aſwell ageynſt the Turkes as the Tartars by the exceadyng multitude of theyr horſemen and continual experience in warres. At ſuch time as Th[e]emperour Maximilian made a league with them, they kept warre ageynſt the kynge of Polonie. They vſe not only bowes and dartes after the maner of the Parthians, but haue alſo the vſe of gunnes as we haue. And to bee briefe, onely the Moſcouites maye ſeeme that nation whiche hath not felte the commodities of peace: In ſo muche that yf theyr region were not ſtrongely defended by the nature of the place beinge impreignable, it had or nowe byn often tymes conquered. Theyr language agreeth much with the toonge of the Bohemians, Croatians, and Sclauons: ſo that the Sclauon dooth playnly vnderſtande the Moſcouite, although the Moſcouian toonge be a more rude and harde phraſe of ſpeach. The hiſtoriographers wryte that the Sclauons toonge the name of the confuſion whiche was in Babell in the tyme of that ſtowt hunter Nemroth of whome mention is made in the Geneſis. But I can not enowgh marueyle at this thing, that wheras betwene Dalmatia (now cauled Sclauonia) and Moſcouia, both the Pannonies are ſituate, yet this notwithſtandynge, the Hungarians toonge nothynge agreeth with the Moſcouites. Wherby wee may coniecture that theſe nations were ſumtymes diuided by legions, and that they came owt of Dalmatia thyther: whiche thynge alſo Volateranus affirmeth, ſayinge that the language of the Ruthenians (whiche are the Moſcouites) is *Semidalmatica* (that is) halfe Sclauone. Howe ſo euer it bee, this is certeyne that the Bohemians, Croatians, Sclauons, and Moſcouites, agree in language as wee perceaued by th[e]interpretours which yowre maieſtie had then in yowre courte. For whereas the ſayde interpretours were borne amonge the Croatians and Sclauons and none of them had euer byn in Moſcouia, or beefore that tyme had any conuerſation with them, yet dyd they well vnderſtande the ambaſſadours woordes.

Gunnes.

Only the moscouites haue not felt the commodities of peace.

Theyr language.

Dalmatia.
Pannonia.
Hungarie.

Theyr original.

The Sclauon toonge reacheth farre.

There are in Moſcouia, wooddes of exceadynge byggeneſſe, in the which blacke woolues and whyte beares are hunted. The cauſe wherof may bee th[e]extreme could of the north, which dooth greatly alter the complexions of beaſtes, and is the mother of whyteneſſe as the Philoſophers affirme. They haue alſo great plentie of bees, wherby they haue ſuch abundaunce of hony and waxe that it is with them of ſmaul price. When the commoditie of theyr countrey is neglected by reaſon of longe warres, theyr chiefe aduauntage whereby they haue all thynges neceſſarie towarde theyr lyuynge, is the gaines which they haue by theyr rych furres, as Sables, Marternes, Luzernes, moſt whyte armyns, and ſuch other which they ſell to marchauntes of dyuers countreys. They bye and ſell with ſimple faythe of woordes exchaungynge ware for ware withowt any curious bondes or cautels. And albeit they haue the vſe of both golde and ſyluer monyes, yet doo they for the moſt part exchaunge theyr furres for frutes and other thynges neceſſarie to mainteine theyr lyfe. There are alſo ſum people vnder the dominion of this Emperour, which haue neither wyne nor wheate, but lyue only by fleſſhe and mylke as doo the wylde Tartars theyr bortherers which dwel in wods by the coaſtes of the froſen ſea. Theſe people are brutyſſhe, and lyue in maner lyke wylde beaſtes. But they of the citie of Moſca and Nouigrade, and other cities, are ciuile people: and agree with vs in eatynge of fyſſhe and fleſſhe althowgh theyr maner of coquerie is in manye thynges differynge frome owres. Volaterane wryteth that the Ruthenians vſe money vncoyned. And inquirynge further, I was informed that the money of Hungary is much currant with them. But this is chiefely to bee conſydered, that they imbraſe the Chriſtian fayth which they affirme to haue byn preached to them fyrſte by ſaynt Andrewe th[e]apoſtle and broother to Simon Peter. Such doctrine alſo as vnder Conſtanſtine the greate, in the yeare. CCC. xviii. [three hundred and eighteen] was concluded in the fyrſt generall counſayle holden in the citie of Nicene in Bithynia, and there determyned by. CCC. xviii. [three hundred and eighteen] byſſhoppes, and alſo ſuch as hath byn wrytten and tawght by the Greeke doctoures Baſilius Magnus and Chriſoſtomus, they beleue to bee ſo holy, firme and ſyncere, that they thinke it no more lawfull one heare to tranſgreſſe or go backe from the ſame, then from the goſpell of Chriſt. For theyr conſtancie and modeſtie is ſuch, that no man dare caule thoſe thynges into queſtion which haue once byn deciſed by holy fathers in theyr general counſailes. They doo therfore with a more conſtante mynde perſeuer in theyr fyrſt fayth which they receaued of ſaynt Andrewe th[e]appoſtle and his ſucceſſours and holy fathers, than doo manye of vs beinge diuided into ſciſmes and ſectes whiche thynge neuer chaunceth amonge them. But if any difficultie chaunce to riſe as touchynge the fayth or cuſtome of religion, all is referred to the archbyſhoppe and other byſhoppes as to bee defined by theyr ſpirite: not permyttinge any iudgemente to the inconſtant and ignorant people. Theyr archebyſhoppe is reſidente in the citie of Moſca, where alſo Th[e]emperoure keepethe his courte. They haue lykewyſe dyuers other byſhops: as one in Nouigradia, where alſo Iſodorus was byſſhop vnder pope Eugenius. They haue an other in Roſciuia, an other in Suſtali, an other in Otiſeri: alſo in Smolne, in Reſan, in Colmum, and in Volut, all which haue theyr dioces. They acknowlege theyr Archebyſhop as the chiefe. Before the patriarche of Conſtantinople was oppreſſed by the Tiranni of the Turkes, this Archebyſſhoppe recogniſed hym as his ſuperioure. In ſo much that this duke of Moſcouia and Emperour of Ruſſia, not vnmyndefull hereof but a diligente obſeruer of his accuſtomed religion, dooth at this daye yearely

Great woods white beares and blacke woolues.

Abundance of hony and waxe.

Rych furres.

Theyr maner of bargenyng

Rude and wylde people.
Tartares.

258

Ciuile people in cities.

Theyr money

They embrase the Christian fayth whiche thei receaued of the Apostles.

The counsaile of Nicene.

Basilius Magnus.
Chrisostomus

Theyr constancie in theyr religion.

The bysshoppes define controuersies in religion.

Theyr byssh.ops.

The Archebysshoppe.

The patriarke of Constantinople.

A notable exemple of a Christian prynce.

ſende a certeyne ſtypende in maner of almes to the patriarche of Conſtantinople, that he may with more quiete mynd looke for th[e]ende of this his Egiptian ſeruitude vntyll it ſhal pleaſe almyghty god to reſtore hym to his former churche and autoritie. For he iudgeth it much impietie, if he ſhulde nowe forſake hym whoſe predi-ceſſoures haue ruled and gouerned ſo many churches, and of whom the fayth and religion of ſo many regions and prouinces haue depended.

But to ſpeake briefely of theyr religion, they agree in many thynges with vs, and in ſum thynges folow the Greekes. They haue munkes and religious men. Not farre from the citie of Moſca, they haue a great monaſterie in the whiche are three hundreth munkes lyuynge vnder the rule of Baſilius Magnus in the which is alſo the ſepulcher of S. Sergius the abbot. They obſerue theyr vowe of chaſtitie which none may breake that haue once profeſſed. Yet ſuch as haue maried virgins of good fame, may bee admitted to th[e]order of preſthod, but may neuer bee a munke. The preſtes and byſſhops whiche are admitted to orders vnmaried, may neuer after bee maried: nor yet ſuch as haue wiues, mary ageine when they are dead, but liue in perpetual chaſtitie. Such as committe adulterie or fornication, are greeuouſly punyſſhed by the byſſhoppes and depriued of the benefices. They celebrate maſſe after the maner of the Greekes which differeth from owres in dyuers thinges, as in fermented breade after the maner of the Greekes. They put in the chaleſſe as much water as redde wine, which water they vſe to heate, bycauſe (not withowt a great myſterie) there iſſhewed furth of the ſyde of owre lorde, both blud and water, which wee ought by good reaſon to thynke was not withowt heate: for els ſhulde it ſcarſely haue byn iudged for a miracle. In fine, they affirme that all theyr cuſtomes and rytes are accordynge to th[e]inſtitutions of the primatyue church and the doctrine of Baſilius Magnus, and Chriſoſtomus. In this thynge they dyffer greately from vs, that they miniſter the communion to younge children of three yeares of age, which they doo with fermented breade dipte in a ſponefull of wyne, and gyue it them for the bodye and bludde of Chryſte.

Theyr religion.

A monasterie of. ccc. [three hundred] monkes

Preestes.

Masse.

A mysterie.

The primatiue church.

A straunge custome.

¶ *A briefe deſcription of Moſcouia after the later wryters, as Sebaſtian Munſter and Iacobus Gaſtaldus.* 259

THe prouince of Moſcouia, is ſo named by the ryuer Moſco which paſſeth by the metrapolitane citie of Moſcouia cauled Moſca by the name of the ryuer Moſco. This prouince was cauled of the owlde wryters, Sarmatia Aſiatica. The bortherers or confines to the Moſcouians on the one ſyde towarde the Eaſt, are the Tartars cauled Nogai, and the Scianbanians, with the Zagatians. Towarde the Weſt, the prouinces of Liuonia and Lituania. Towarde the South, the ryuer of Tanais and the people confinyng with the ryuer Volga, cauled of the owld writers Rha. And towarde the North, the Ocean ſea cauled the Scythian ſea, and the region of Lapponia. Moſcouia is in maner all playne and full of maryſſhes, wooddes, and many very great ryuers wherof the ryuer of Volga is the principal. Sum caul this Ledyl, as the owld autours named it Rha. It beginneth at the great lake cauled Lacus Albus (that is) the white lake and runneth into the ſea of Bachau, named of the aunciente wryters, the ſea Caſpium or Hircanum. Vnder the dominion of Moſcouia, are certeyne regions and dukedoomes: as Alba Ruſſia (that is) whyte Ruſſia. Alſo Colmogora, Pleſcouia, Baſrida, Nouogardia, with alſo manye places of the Tartars which are ſubiecte to the duke of Moſcouia. The chiefe cities of Moſcouia, are Moſca, Pleſcouia, Nouogardia, Colmogora, Otogeria, Viatra, Smolenſer, Percaſlauia, Cologna, Volodemaria, Roſtauia, and Caſſam. The people of Moſcouia are Chriſtians, and haue greate abundaunce of hony and waxe: alſo ryche furres, as Sabels, Marternes, Foynes, Calaber, and dyuers other. All the Tartars which inhabite towarde the Eaſt beyonde the ryuer of Volga, haue no dwellynge places, nor yet cities or caſtels. But cary abowt with theym certeyne cartes or wagens couered with beaſtes hydes, vnder the whiche they reſte, as wee do in owre houſes.

Sarmatia asiatica.

The Scythian Ocean.

The ryuer of Volga.

Lacus albus.

The Caspian sea.

Theyr chiefe cities.

The wylde Tartars.

They remoue togyther in great companies whiche they caule Hordas. They are warlike people and good horſemen, and are all Macometiſtes.

Hordas.

Sebaſtian Munſter in his booke of Vniuerſall Coſmographie, wryteth that the citie of Moſca or Moſcouia conteineth in circuite. xiiii. [fourteen] myles, and that it is twyſe as bygge as the citie of Praga in Bohemie. Of the countrey of Moſcouia, biſyde other prouinces ſubiecte to the ſame, he wryteth thus. It extendeth in largeneſſe foure hundreth myles, and is rich in ſyluer. It is lawfull for no man to go owt of the realme or coome in withowt the dukes letters. It is playne without mountaynes, and ful of wooddes and maryſſhes. The beaſtes there by reaſon of the coulde, are leſſe then in other countreis more ſouthwarde. In the myddeſt of the citie

The bygnes of the citie of Moscouia.

Syluer.

The region of Moscouia.

Beastes.

A fayre and stronge castel in the citie of Mosca.

of Moſca beinge ſituate in a playne, there is a caſtell with. xvii. towres and three bulwarkes ſo ſtronge and fayre, that the lyke are ſcarſely ſeene in any other place. There are alſo in the caſtell xvi. churches, and three very large courtes in the which the noble men of the courte haue theyr lodgynges.

The dukes pallaice.

The dukes pallaice is buylded after the maner of the Italian buyldyng, and very fayre, but not great.

Theyr drynke.

They drynke is mede and beere as is the maner of the moſte parte of the people that inhabite the North partes of the woorlde.

They are gyuen to drunkennesse.

They are exceadyngely gyuen to droonkenneſſe. Yet (as ſume ſaye) the princes of the lande are prohibite in peine of death to abſteine from ſuch ſtronge drinkes as are of force to inebriate, except at certeyne tymes when licence is graunted theym, as twyſe or thryſe in the yeare.

Corne and grayne.

They plowe the grownde with horſes and plowes of woodde. Theyr corne and other grayne by reaſon of longe coulde, doo ſeldome waxe rype on the ground by reaſon wherof they are ſumtimes inforced to rype and dry them in theyr ſtooues and hottes houſes, and then grynd them.

Stoues.

They lacke wyne and oyle.

The famous ryuer of Tanais.

Moſcouia is extended vnto Iurham and Corelia which are in Scythia. The famous ryuer of Tanais, the Moſcouites caule Don, hauyng his ſprynges and originall in Moſcouia in the dukedome of Rezenſe. It ryſeth owt of a grownde that is playne, baren, muddy, full of maryſſhes and wooddes. And where it proceadeth toward the Eaſt to the mountaynes of Scithia and Tartarie, it bendeth to the ſouth: and commyng to the maryſſhes of Meotis it fauleth into them.

260

The marysshes of Meotis.

Volga.

Ocha.

The sea Euxinum.

The forest of hircania.

Vri.

Alces.

The ryuer of Volga (ſumetyme cauled Rha, and nowe cauled of the Tartars Edel) runneth toward the north certeyne myles, to whom is ioyned the ryuer Occa or Ocha, flowynge owt of Moſcouia, and then bendyng into the South and increaſed with many other ryuers, fauleth into the ſea Euxinum, which diuideth Europe and Aſia. The woodde or foreſt cauled Hircania ſylua, occupieth a ſmal portion of Moſcouia. Yet is it ſumwhere inhabited, and by the longe labour of men made thinner and barer of trees. In that parte that lyeth towarde Pruſſia, is a kynde of greate and fierce bulles cauled Vri or Biſomes, as wryteth Paulus Iouius. There are alſo Alces muche lyke vnto hartes, with longe ſnoutes of fleſſhe and longe legges withowt any bowinge of theyr houx or paſternes. Theſe beaſtes, the Moſcouites caule Lozzi, and the Almaynes Helenes.

They trauayl in wynter on sleades.

The iornaye that is betwene Vlna of Lituania by Smolenſe to Moſca, is trauayled in wynter on ſleades by the ſnowe congeled by longe froſte, and made very ſlypperye and compacte lyke Iſe by reaſon of much wearynge and treadynge, by meanes wherof this vyage is performed with incredible celeritie. But in the ſommer, the playne countreys can not bee ouercome withowt difficulte labour.

Causeys of tymber.

For when the ſnowe begynneth to bee diſſolued by continuall heate, it cauſeth maryſſhes and quamyres inextricable and daungerous both for horſe and man, were it not for certeyne cauſeyes made of tymber with in maner infinite labour.

Trees and frutes.

The region of Moſcouia (as I haue ſaid) beareth neyther vynes nor olyue trees, nor yet any other trees that bere any apples or frutes of very pleſant or ſwete ſauour or taſte except chery trees, for as much as al tender frutes and trees are burnte of the coulde blaſtes of the North wynde.

Corne and grayne.

Yet doo the fieldes beare all kyndes of corne, as wheate and the grayne cauled Siligo, wherof the fyneſt kynde of breade is made: alſo mylle and panyke, whiche the Italians caule Melica: Likewyſe all kyndes of pulſe, as beanes, peaſon, tares, and ſuche other.

Hony in wode and trees.

But theyr chife harueſt conſiſteth of hony and waxe, foraſmuch as the hole region is replenyſſhed with frutefull bees which make moſt ſweete hony, not in the huſbande mens hyues, but euen in holowe trees. And hereby commeth it to paſſe that both in the wooddes and ſhalowed launes, are ſeene many ſwarmes of bees hangynge on the bowes of trees, ſo that it ſhall not bee neceſſarie to caule them togyther or charme theym with the ſounde of baſens. There are oftentymes founde greate maſſes of hony combes, conſerued in trees of the owlde hony forſaken of bees, foraſmuch as the huſband men can not ſeeke euery tree in ſo great and large wooddes: In ſo much that in the ſtockes or bodies of exceadynge great and holowe trees, are ſumtymes founde great pooles or lakes of hony.

Lakes or pooles of hony.

A man almost drowned in hony.

Demetrius th[e]ambaſſadour of the duke of Moſcouia whom he ſent to the byſſhop of Rome not many yeares ſence, made relation that a huſbande man of the contrey not farre from the place where he remayned, ſeekynge in the wooddes for hony, deſcended into a greate holowe tree full of hony into the which he ſlypte vp to the breſt, and lyued there only with hony for the ſpace of two dayes, caulynge in vayne for helpe in that deſerte of wooddes.

A marueilous chaunce.

And that in fine diſpayrynge of helpe, he eſcaped by a marueilous chaunce, beinge drawen owt by a great beare that deſcended into the tree, with her loynes downewarde after the maner of men. For when the man (as preſent neceſſitie and oportunitie ſerued) perceaued the beare to bee within his reache, he ſuddeinly claſped her abowt the loynes with his armes, and with a terrible crye prouoked the beaſt to inforce her ſtrength to leape owt of the tree, and therwith to drawe hym owt, as it chaunced in deede.

Beares feede of hony and bees.

Theſe regions abounde with beares whiche euery where ſeeke both hony and bees, not only herewith to fyl theyr bellies, but alſo to helpe theyr ſyght. For theyr eyes are oftentymes dulled, and theyr mouthes wounded of the bees: both which greefes are eaſed by eatynge of hony.

Beares inuade bulles.

They haue weakeſt heades, as lions haue ſtrongeſt. In ſo muche that when (beinge therto inforced) they caſte theim ſelues downe headelonge from any rockes, they couer theyr heades with theyr fiete, and lye for a tyme aſtoonyſſhed and halfe deade with knockes.

The beares byrth.

They walke ſumtyme on two fiete, and ſpoyle trees backewarde. Sumtyme alſo they inuade bulles, and ſo hange on them with al theyr fiete, that they wery them with weight. The beare (as ſayth Plinie)

bryngeth furth her byrth the. xxx. [thirtieth] day and oftentymes two. Theyr byrth is a certeyne whyte maſſe of fleſſhe withowt forme and little bigger then a mouſe withowt eyes, and withowt heare, with onely the nayles or clawes commynge foorthe. But the damme with continuall lyckynge, by lyttle and lyttle figurethe the informe byrthe. When ſhee entereth into the denne whiche ſhee hath choſen, ſhee creepeth thyther with her belly vpwarde leſte the place ſhulde bee founde by the ſteppes of her fiete. And being there deliuered of her byrthe, remaynethe in the ſame place for the ſpace of. xiiii. dayes immoueable as wryteth Ariſtoteles. They lyue withowt meate fortie dayes, and for that tyme-ſuſteyne them ſelues only by lyckynge and ſuckyng theyr ryght foote. At the lengthe chaunſynge to fynde meate, they fyll theym ſelues ſo full, that they remedy that ſurfecte by vomyte whiche they prouoke by eatynge of antes. Theyr byrthe is oppreſſed with ſo heauy a ſleape for the ſpace of. xiiii. dayes, that it can not bee rayſed eyther with prickinge or woundes, and in the meane tyme growe exceadynge fat. After. xiiii. dayes they wake from ſleepe, and begyn to licke and ſucke the ſoles of theyr fore fiete and lyue thereby for a ſpace: Nor yet is it apparent that they liue by any other meate vntyll the ſprynge tyme of the yeare. At whiche tyme begynnynge to runne abrode, they feede of the tender buds and younge ſprigges or braunches of trees, and other herbes correſpondent to theyr lyppes.

261
The beares denne.

Beares lyue withowt meate. xl. [forty] dayes.

The sleape of beares.

Before fiue hundreth yeares, the Moſcouites honoured the goddes of the gentyles: And then fyrſte receaued the Chriſtian faith when the byſſhoppes of Grecia began to diſcent from the churche of the Latines: and therfore receaued the rites of the Greekes. They miniſter the ſacrament with fermented breade vnder both kyndes: And thinke that the ſoules of deade menne are not helped with the ſuffragies of preeſtes, nor yet by the deuotion of theyr frendes or kinſſolkes: Alſo that the place of Purgatorie is a fable. In the tyme of the diuine ſeruice, the hyſtorie of the miracles of Chriſte and the Epiſtels of ſaynt Paule are rehearſed owt of the pulpitte. Beyonde Moſcouia, are manye people whiche they caule Scythians, and are partely ſubiecte to the Prince of Moſcouia. Theſe are they which duke Iuan ſubdued, as are the people of Permī, Baſkird, Czriremiſſa, Iuhra, Corela, and Permſkā. Theſe people were Idolatours before the duke compelled theym to baptiſme, and appoynted a byſſhop ouer them named Steuen, whom the Barbarians after the departure of the duke, fleyde alyue and ſlewe. But the duke returnyng ſhortly after, afflicted them ſore and aſſigned them a newe byſſhoppe.

The religion of the Moscouites.

The Scythians subiecte to the duke of Moscouia.

It is here alſo to bee noted that the owlde Coſmographers fayned that in theſe regions towarde the Northe pole, there ſhuld bee certeyne great mountaynes which they cauled Ripheos and Hyperboreos, which neuertheleſſe are not founde in nature. It is alſo a fable that the ryuers of Tanais and Volham doo ſprynge owt of hygh mountaynes, wheras it is apparent that both theſe ryuers and many other, haue theyr originall in the playnes.

It was then an opinion that al riuers sprange owte of montaines

Nexte to Moſcouia, is the frutefull region of Colmogora throwgh the whiche runneth the ryuer of Diuidna beinge the greateſt that is knowen in the north partes of the world. This ryuer increaſeth at certeyne tymes of the yeare as dooth the ryuer of Nilus in Egypte, ouerfloweth the fyeldes round abowt, and with abundaunce of fatte moyſture, reſiſteth the couldeneſſe of the ayer. Wheate ſowne in the grounde, groweth abundauntly withowt plowynge: and fearynge the newe iniurie of the proude ryuer, ſpryngeth, groweth, and rypeth with woonderfull celeritie of haſtynge nature.

The fruteful region of Colmogora.

The great riuer Diuidna.

Wheate withowt plowing

Into the ryuer of Diuidna runnethe the ryuer of Iuga: And in the very angle or corner where they meete, is a famous marte towne named Vſtiuga, beinge a hundreth and fyftie myles diſtant from the chiefe citie of Moſca. To this mart towne from the hygher countreys, are ſent the precious furres of marternes, ſables, woolues and ſuch other whiche are exchaunged for dyuers other kyndes of wares and marchaundies.

The ryuer of Iuga.

Vstiuga.

Furres.

Hytherto Munſterus.

And foraſmuche as many doo maruaile that ſuche plentie of hony ſhuld bee in ſo coole a contrey, I haue thought good to declare the reaſon and naturall cauſe hereof. It is therefore to be conſidered that lyke as ſpices, gums, and odoriferous frutes are engendered in hot regions by continuall heate duryng al the hole yeare withowt impreſſion of the mortifying qualitie of could wherby al thynges are conſtrayned as they are dilated by heate, euen ſo in could and moyſt regions (whoſe moyſture is thinner and more wateryſſhe then in hot regions) are flowres engendered more abundantly as cauſed by impreſſion of leſſe and faynter heate woorkynge in thynne matter of wateryſſhe moiſture leſſe concocte then the matter of gummes and ſpices and other vnctuous frutes and trees growing in hotte regions. For althoughe (as Munſter ſaithe here before) the region of Moſcouia beareth nother vines or oliues, or any other frutes of ſweete ſauoure by reaſon of the couldeneſſe therof, neuertheleſſe foraſmuch as floures (wherof hony is chiefely gathered) may in ſommer ſeaſon growe abundantly in the playnes, maryſſhes, and wooddes, not onely on the grownde but alſo on trees in coulde regions, it is agreeable to good reaſon that great plentie of honye ſhulde bee in ſuche regions as abounde with floures, which are brought furthe with the fyrſt degree of heate and fyrſt approch of the ſonne, as appeareth in the ſprynge tyme not onely by the ſpringinge of floures in fyeldes and gardeynes, but alſo of bloſſomes of trees ſpryngynge before the leaues or frute, as the lyghter and thynner matter fyrſte drawne owte with the loweſte and leaſte degree of heate, as the

The naturall cause of much hony in could regions.

Gummes and spices in hot countreys.

Floures in coulde regions
262

Floures of trees.

Blossoomes of trees.

An exemple of the degrees of heate.

lyke is ſeene in the arte of ſtyllynge wherby all thinne and lyght moyſtures are lyfted vp by the fyrſte degree of the fyre: and the heuyeſt and thickeſt moyſtures are drawne owt with more vehement fyre. As we may therfore in this caſe compare the generation of floures to the heate of May, the generation of gummes to the heate of Iune and ſpices to the heate of Iuly. Euen ſo in ſuche coulde regions whoſe ſoommer agreeth rather with the temperate heate and moyſture of May then with th[e]extreeme heate of the other monethes, that heate is more apt to brynge foorth abundance of floures as thynges cauſed by moderate heate, as playnely appeareth by theyr taſt and ſauoure in which is no ſharpe qualitie of heate eyther bytynge the toonge or offendyng the head as is in ſpices, gummes, and frutes of hotte regions. And as in could and playne regions, moderate heate with abundance of moiſture, are cauſes of the generation of floures (as I haue ſayde) ſo lykewyſe the length of the dayes and ſhortneſſe and warmeneſſe of the nyghtes in ſommer ſeaſon in ſuche coulde regions, is a greate helpe herunto. Cardanus wryteth in his booke *De Plantis*, that bramble and fearne growe not but in could regions, as dooth wheate in temperate regions. And that ſpices and hotte ſeedes, can not growe in coulde regions, foraſmuch as beinge of thinne ſubſtaunce, they ſhulde ſoone be mortified and extinct by exceſſiue could. For (as he ſayth) nothing can concocte, rype, and attenuate the ſubſtance of frutes withowt the helpe of ayer agreable to the natures of ſuch thynges as are brought foorth in the ſame, althowgh it may doo this in rootes. But in maner all floures are of ſweete ſauour, foraſmuch as the moyſture that is in them, being thinne and but lyttle, is by meane heate ſoone and eaſely concocte or made rype. Such alſo as are ſoone rype, are ſoone rotten according to the prouerbe.

The generation of floures by moderate heate.

Longe dayes and shorte nyghtes.

Bramble and ferne.

Spices.

The sauoure of floures.

What Plinie wryteth of hony.

Plinie, althowgh in the. xi. booke of his naturall hyſtorie, Cap. viii. he wryteth that hony is gathered of the floures of all trees and ſets of plantes, except forell and the herbe cauled *Chenopode* (which ſume caule gooſe foote) yet he affirmeth that it deſcendeth from the ayer: for in the. xii. chapyture of the ſame booke, he wryteth thus.

Serius is otherwyse cauled Canicula, this is the dogge, of whom the canicular dayes haue theyr name.

What is hony

Howe hony is corrupted.

This coommeth from the ayer at the ryſynge of certeyne ſtarres, and eſpecially at the ryſynge of *Sirius*, and not before the ryſyng of *Vergiliæ* (which are the ſeuen ſtarres cauled *Pleiades*) in the ſprynge of the day. For then at the mornynge ſprynge, the leaues of trees are founde moiſt with a fat dewe: In ſo much that ſuch as haue bynne abrode vnder the firmamente at that tyme, haue theyr apparell annoynted with lyquoure and the heare of theyr headde clammy. And whether this bee the ſwette of heauen, or as it were a certeyne ſpettyl of the ſtarres, eyther the iuiſe of the ayer pourgynge it ſelfe, I wolde it were pure, liquide, and ſimple of his owne nature as it fyrſte ſauleth from aboue. But nowe deſcendyng ſo far, and infected not only with ſuch vncleane vapoures and exhalations, as it meteth with by the way, but afterward alſo corrupted by the leaues of trees, herbes, and floures of ſundrye taſtes and qualities, and lykewyſe aſwel in ſtomackes of the bees (for they vomite it at theyr mouthes) as alſo by longe reſeruynge the ſame in hiues, it neuertheleſſe reteyneth a great parte of the heauenly nature. &c. Ageyne in the. xiiii. chapiture of the ſame booke, he wrytethe that in certeyne regions toward the north, as in ſum places of Germanie, hony is found in ſuch quantitie that there haue bynne ſeene hony combes of eyght foote longe, and blacke in the holowe parte. By the whiche woordes of Plinie, and by the principles of naturall philoſophie, it dooth appere that abundaunce of hony ſhulde chiefely bee engendered in ſuch regions where the heate of ſoommer is temperate and continuall aſwell by nyght as by day as it is not in hotte regions where the nyghtes be longe and coulde as is declared in the Decades. For lyke as ſuche thynges as are fyned by continuall heate, mouynge, and circulation, are hyndered by refrigeration or coulde (as appereth in the art of ſtyllynge and hatchynge of egges) euen ſo by the action of temperate and continuall heate withowt interpoſition of contrarie and mortifyinge qualitie, crude thynges are in ſhorte tyme made rype, ſower made ſweete, thicke made thinne, heauie made lyght, groſſe made ſubtyle, harde made ſofte, deade made lyuynge, and in fine bodies made ſpirites, as manifeſtly appeareth in the marueylous woorke of dygeſtion of lyuyng beaſtes, wherby the fineſt part of theyr nuriſſhement is turned into bludde, and the fineſt of that bludde conuerted into ſpirites, as the like is alſo ſeene in the nuryſſhement of trees, plantes, and herbes, and all other thynges that growe on the grounde, all whiche are moued, digeſted, ſubtiliate, attenuate, ryped, and made ſweete by the action of this continuall heate wherof I haue ſpoken. To conclude therfore, if hony bee eyther the ſwette of the ſtarres, or the iuiſe of the ayer pourginge it ſelfe (as plinie writeth) or other wyſe engendered of ſubtyle and fine vapoures ryſinge frome the earth, and concocte or digeſted in the ayer by the ſayd continuall and moderate heate, it may ſeeme by good reaſon that the ſame ſhulde bee engendered in ſoommer ſeaſon more abundantly in coulde regions then in hot, for the cauſes aforeſayde. And that it may by autoritie and reaſon more manifeſtlye appeare bothe that the heate of ſoommer in could regions is continual (as I haue ſayd) and alſo that the coulde in wynter is not there ſo intollerable to th[e]inhabitauntes of thoſe regions as other doo thynke, I haue thought good for the better declaration hereof to adde hereunto what I haue gathered owt of the booke of Ziglerus wrytten of the north regions.

Hony of great quantitie in North regions

263

Hot nyghtes in coulde regions.

A similitude.

Natural heat dooth subtyle and digest all thynges.

Subtyle vapours digested by heate.

Could regions

Ziglerus.

¶ OF THE NORTH REGIONS
AND OF THE MODERATE AND CONTINVALL HEATE
in coulde regions alwell in the nyght as in the day in foommer ſeaſon: Alſo howe thoſe regions are habitable to th[e]inhabitauntes of the ſame, contrary to th[e]ôppinion of the owlde wryters.



FOr this matter, Ziglerus in his booke of the Northe regions in the deſcription of Scondia wryteth as foloweth. Ziglerus.

Wee wyll intreate of this matter, not as puttynge the ſame in queſtion as dyd the owld wryters, nor gatherynge iudgement deducted of reaſons in way of argument, foraſmuch as wee are alredy more certeyne by hyſtorie that theſe coulde regions are inhabited. Wee wyll fyrſt therfore ſhewe by naturall reaſon and by conſideration of the ſphere, declare how by the helpe of man and arte, coulde regions are inhabited withowt domage or deſtruction of lyuynge beaſtes: And wyll fyrſte ſpeake of the qualitie of ſommer, declarynge howe it is there augmented. Yet intende I not to comprehende all that maye bee ſayde in this matter, but only rehearſe ſuch reaſons and ſimilitudes as are moſt apparent and eaſy to bee vnderſtoode. The qualitie of ſoomer in could regions.

In ſuch regions therfore, as are extended from the burnte line or Equinoctiall towarde the north, as much as the ſonne ryſethe hygher ouer theim, ſo muche are they the more burnte with heate, as Affrica, bycauſe it ryſeth hygheſt ouer them as they are neareſt to the Equinoctiall: and taryinge with theim ſo mnch the ſhorter time cauſeth ſhorter days, with longer and coulder nyghtes to reſtore the domage of the day paſt by reaſon of the moiſture conſumed by vapour. But in ſuch regions ouer the which the ſonne ryſeth lower (as in Sarmatia) it remayneth there the longer in the day, and cauſeth ſo much the ſhorter and warmer nyghtes, as reteynynge warme vapoures of the day paſt, which vapours helpe the woorke of the day. I ſpeake as I haue founde by experience, ſaythe Vpſalienſis. For I haue felt the ſommer nyghtes ſcarſely tollerable for heate in Gothlande, wheras I felte them coulde in Rome. This benefite of th[e]-increaſe of the day, doth augment ſo much the more in coulde regions as they are nearer the poles: and ceaceth not vntyll it coome directly ouer the center or poynte of the axes or axeltree of the worlde, where the ſonne beinge at the hygheſt in ſommer, is eleuate about. xxiiii. degrees: In which regions, one continual day conſiſteth of. vi. monethes from the ſprynge tyme by the ſtandynge of the ſoonne (cauled Solſtitium) in the ſigne of Cancer to Autumne. The ſoonne therfore, withowt any offence of the night, gyueth his influence vppon thoſe landes with heate that neuer ceaſethe durynge that tyme which maketh to the great increaſe of ſoommer by reaſon of continuance. We haue now therfore thought good to gather by a certeyne coniecture howe greately wee thinke the ſoommer to bee increaſed hereby. The course of the sonne. Vapours. Short and Warme nyghtes. Gothlande 264 One day of. vi monethes. Howe the sommer is increased in could regions.

Wee haue before declared how hyghe the ſoonne is eleuate ouer the regions that are vnder the poles at the ſtaye of the ſoonne: And ſo manye partes is it eleuate in Rome at the ſtay of the ſoonne in wynter (that is) at the ſhorteſt day in the yeare. But here, in the mydde wynter, the ſoonne at noone tyde is beneficiall, and bryngeth foorth floures, roſes, and ielefloures. I haue gathered ſum in wynter in the moneth of December, not procured at home by humane arte, but growinge in open gardenes in maner in euery bedde vnder the bare heauen, browght foorth only by the ſoonne. But this benignitie of the ſoonne, continueth not paſt fiue houres Rome.

Could nights in hot regions.

in the naturall day, foraſmuch as th[e]operation therof is extinct by the couldeneſſe of the nyght folowynge. But if this benefite myght bee receaued withowt hinderaunce of the nyght, as it is vnder the poles, and ſo continue many monethes in hot regions vnto wynter, it ſhulde ſuerlye brynge foorthe manye woonderfull thynges, if moyſture fayled not. And by this condition thus propounded, wee may well conceaue that the Romane wynter, althowgh it be not hotte, yet to be equal in heate to the full ſprynge tyme in the ſame citie durynge the tyme of the ſayde fiue houres. And thus by a ſimilitude of the height of the ſoonne vnder bothe places, and of the knowen qualitie of the Romane heauen, and by th[e]acceſſe of the ſoonne to ſuch places where the longeſt day continueth certeyne monethes, wee maye gather that ſoommer in places vnder the pole, is lyke vnto and equall with the full Romane ſprynge.

The Romane wynter.

One nyght of vi. monethes

But the more difficulte queſtiõ, is of the tyme of the. vi. moonethes in the whiche the ſoonne leaueth thoſe regions, and go[e]th by the contrarye or ouerthwarte circle towarde the ſouth in wynter. For they ſay that at that tyme, thoſe regions are deformed with horrible darkeneſſe and nyghtes not increaſed, which may bee the cauſe that beaſtes can not ſeke theyr foode. And that alſo the coulde ſhulde then bee intollerable: by which double euyls all thynges conſtrayned ſhulde dye, ſo that no beaſte were able to abyde th[e]iniuries of wynter and famẽ inſuinge therof: but that all beaſtes ſhulde peryſſhe before the ſommer folowynge, when they ſhulde bringe furth theyr broode or ſucceſſion: And that for theſe cauſes, the ſayde coulde clime ſhulde bee perpetually deſolate and vnhabitable. To al which obiections, we anſwere in this maner

Obiections.

As touchynge the nyghtes not increaſed, I ſaye, that it was not conuenient to aſſume that for any reaſon. For not as the ſoonne fauleth, ſo ſuddeynly commeth the darke night but that the euenynge dooth ſubſtitute and prolonge the day longe after, as alſo the day ſprynge or dawnynge of the daye gyueth a certeyne lyght before the ryſinge of the ſoonne: After the whiche, the reſidue of the nyght that receaueth no light by the ſayde euenynge and mornynge twilightes, is accomplyſſhed by the lyght of the moone, ſo that the nyghtes are ſeldome vnaugmented. Let this bee an exemple proued by owre temperate regions, wherby we may vnderſtande the condition of the nyght vnder the pole. Therfore euen there alſo the twilightes helpe the nyght a longe tyme, as we wyl more preſently demonſtrate. It is approued by the Aſtronomers, that the ſoonne deſcendynge from the higheſt halfe ſphere by. xviii. paralels of the vnder horizon, makethe an ende of the twylight, ſo that at the lengthe the darke nyght ſuccedeth: And that the ſoonne approchynge, and ryſynge aboue the the hygheſt halfe ſphere by as many paralels, dooth diminyſſhe the nyght and increaſe the twylyght. Ageyne, by the poſition or placeinge of the ſphere vnder the pole, the ſame is the horizontall that is the Equinoctiall. Thoſe paralelles therefore that are paralels to the horizontal line, are alſo paralels to the Equinoctiall. So that the ſoonne deſcendynge there vnder the horizon, dooth not brynge darke nyghtes to thoſe regions vntyll it coomme to the paralele diſtant. xviii. partes from the Equinoctiall.

The twylyghtes.

The lyght of the mone.

The nyght vnder the pole.

A demonstration.

265

Other demonſtrations hereof are made by certeyne fygures of Aſtronomie, whiche I wolde haue added hereunto but that I coulde not gette the ſame grauen or cutte.

Durynge the tyme of theſe fayde ſyxe moonethes of darkeneſſe vnder the pole, the nyght is deſtitute of the benefite of the ſoonne and the ſayde twylyghtes, onely for the ſpace of three moonethes, in the whiche the ſoonne goeth and returneth by the portion of the ouerthwart circle. But yet neyther this tyme of three moonethes is withowt remedy frome heauen. For the moone with her full globe increaſed in lyghte, hath acceſſe at that tyme, and illuminateth the moonethes lackynge lyght, euery one by them ſelues, halfe the courſe of the moonethe: by whoſe benefite it coommeth to paſſe that the night, named as vnaugmented, poſſeſſeth thoſe regions no longer then one mooneth and a halfe, neyther that continually or al at one tyme: but this alſo diuided into three ſorts of ſhorter nyghtes, of the whiche euery one endureth for the ſpace of twoo weekes, and are illuminate of the moone accordyngly. And this is the reaſon conceaued of the poure of the ſphere wherby we teſtifie that the ſommers and nyghtes vnder the pole, are tollerable to lyuynge beaſtes.

The Moone.

Remedies of nature and art.

But wee wyll nowe declare by other remedies of nature and arte, that this coulde ſo greatly feared, is more remiſſe and tollerable then owre opinion: ſo that compared to the nature of ſuch beaſtes as liue there, it may bee abydden. And there is no doubt but there are autours of more antiquitie then that age in the which any thynge was exactly knowen or diſcouered of the north regions. The owlde wryters therfore perſuaded onely by naked coniecture, dydde gather what they myght determine of thoſe places: Or rather by the eſtimation of heauen, the which, bycauſe they felte it to bee hardely tollerable to them ſelues, and leſſe to men borne in the clyme of Egypte and Grecia, tooke therby an argument of the hole habitable earth. The hyſtorie of Strabo is knowen, that a potte of braſſe which was broken in ſunder with froſen water, was brought from Pontus and ſhewed in Delphis in token of a greuous wynter. Here therfore, they that ſo greatly feared the winter (ſuch as chaunceth to the earth vnder the. xlviii. [forty-eighth] paralele) and therefore conſecrated that broken pot to the temple of Apollo, what coulde ſuch men trewly define vppon regions ſo farre withowt that paralele, whether they were inhabited or not? But ſuch as folowed theſe, being contented with th[e]inuentions of the owlde autours,

The owlde wryters persuaded by coniecture.

A brasen pot broken with frost.

and borne in maner vnder the ſame qualitie of heauen, perſiſted wyllyngly in the ſame opinion, with more confidence then conſideration of the thynges whereof wee nowe intreate: ſo lyghtly was that opinion receaued as touching the vnhabitable clime vnder the poles. But we with better confidence and faithe (forafmuch as we are not inſtructed with coniectures) intend to ſtande ageynſt the ſentence of the owld autours: Affirming the north regions within the coulde clime to bee inhabyted with hearynges, coddes, haddockes, and brettes, tunnyes, and other great fyſſhes, with th[e]infinite number wherof, tables are furnyſſhed through a great parte of Europe: Al whiche are taken in the north ſea extended beyonde owr knoweleage. This ſea at certeyne tymes of the yeare, poureth furth his plentifulneſſe, or rather dryueth furth his increaſe to ſeke newe manſions, and are here taken in theyr paſſage. Furthermore alſo, euen the mouthes of the riuer of Tyber receaue a fyſſhe as a newe geſt ſent from the north ſea. This ſwamme twyſe through Fraunce and twiſe throughe Spayne: Ouerpaſſed the Ligurian and Tuſcan ſea to communicate her ſelfe to the citie of Rome. The lakes alſo and ryuers of thoſe regions are replenyſſhed with fyſſhe: In ſo much that no poure of coulde is able to extinguyſſhe th[e]increaſe of the yeare folowinge, and the ſucceſſion reparable ſo many hundreth yeares. And I playnely thinke, that yf it ſhulde of neceſſitie folowe, that one of theſe two elementes, the earthe and the water, ſhulde be deſtructiue to lyuynge creatures, the water ſhulde chiefely haue wrought this effecte. But this is founde ſo tractable, that in the diepe wynter, both that increaſe is brought furth, and fyſſhynge is alſo exerciſed. The lande is lykewiſe inhabited with lyke plentifulneſſe. But that we wander not to farre: Let the fayth hereof reſt in th[e]expoſition folowynge, wherin we intend to declare howe by the poure of nature and induſtry of man, this commoditie may coomme to paſſe. Therfore as touchynge nature, wee ſuppoſe that the diuine prouidence hath made nothynge vncommunicable, but to haue gyuen ſuch order to all thynges wherby euery thynge maye bee tollerable to the nexte. The extremeties of the elementes conſent with theyr next. The ayer is groſſe abowt the earth and water: But thinne and hotte abowt the fyre. By this prouidence of nature, the vttermoſt ſea is very ſalte. And ſalte (as wytneſſeth Plinie) yeldeth the fatneſſe of oyle. But oyle, by a certeyne natiue heate, is of propertie agreable to fyre. The ſea then, beinge all of ſuch qualitie, poureth furth it ſelfe far vppon th[e]extreme landes, whereby by reaſon of the ſalteneſſe therof, it moueth and ſtereth vp generatiue heate, as by fatneſſe it noryſſheth the fecunditie of thynges generate. It gyueth this frutfulnes to the earth at certeyne fluds, although the earth alſo it ſelfe, haue in his inner bowels the ſame liuely and nuryſſhynge heate, wherby not only the dennes, caues and holowe places, but alſo ſprynges of water are made warme: And this ſo much the more, in howe muche the wynter is more vehement. This thyng dooth more appere by this exemple, that the mountaynes of Norway and Suethlande are fruteful of metals, in the which, ſyluer and copper are concocte and molten into veynes, which can ſcarſely bee doonne in fornaces. By this reaſon alſo, the vapours and hotte exhalations perceinge the earthe and the waters, and throwghe both thoſe natures breathynge furth into the ayer, tempereth the qualitie of heauen and maketh it tollerable to beaſtes, as wytneſſeth the huge byggeneſſe of the whales in thoſe ſeas, with the ſtrength of bodye and longe lyfe of ſuche beaſtes as liue on the lande: whiche thynge coulde not bee, excepte all thynges were there commodiouſly nuryſſhed by the benefite of the heauen and the ayer. For nothyng that in the tyme of increaſe is hyndered by any iniurie, or that is euyll fedde all the tyme it lyueth, can proſper well. Neyther are ſuch thynges as lyue there, offended with theyr naturall wynter as thowgh an Egiptian or Ethiopian were ſuddeynly conueyed into thoſe coulde regions. For they were in longe tyme by lyttle and lyttle browght fyrſt acquaynted with the nature of that heauen, as may be proued both by the lyfe of man and by the hiſtorie of holy ſcripture. They that were led from Meſopotania, and that famous towre of Babilon towarde the north partes of the worlde in the fyrſt diſpertion of nations, dyd not immediatly paſſe to th[e]extreme boundes, but planted theyr habitations fyrſt vnder a myddle heauen betwene both, as in Thracia and Pontus, where theyr poſteritie was accuſtomed the better to ſuſteyne the rygoure of Scythia and Tanais, as he that commeth from winter to ſoommer, maye the better after abyde Iſe and ſnowe beinge fyrſt hardened therto by the froſtes of Autumne. In lyke maner mortall men, accuſtomed to beare the hardeneſſe of places nexte vnto theym, were therby at the length more confirmed to ſuſteyne the extremes. And here alſo, if any ſharpeneſſe remayne that maye ſeeme intollerable, nature hathe prouyded for the ſame with other remedies. For the lande and ſea, hathe gyuen vnto beaſtes, diepe and large caues, dennes, and other holowe places and ſecreate corners in mountaynes and rockes, bothe on the lande and by the ſea bankes, in the which are euer conteyned warme vapoures ſo much the more intent and vehement, in howe much they are the more conſtrayned by extreme could Nature hath alſo gyuen valleys diuerted and defended frome the north wyndes. Shee hath lykewiſe couered beaſtes with heare ſo much the thicker in howe muche the vehemencie of could is greater: by reaſon wherof the beſt and rycheſt furres are browght from thoſe regions, as Sables whoſe price is growne to great exceſſe nexte vnto gold and precious ſtones, and are eſtemed princely ornamentes. The beaſtes that beare theſe furres, are hunted chiefely in wynter (which thynge is more ſtraunge) bycauſe theyr heare is thenne thicker and cleaueth faſter to the ſkyn. Howe greauous then ſhall we thinke the winter to bee there where this lyttle beaſt lyueth ſo well, and where the hunters may ſearch

Fysshes of the North seas.

The North sea.

The qualitie of water.

The lande

The diuine prouidence in moderatynge the elements

266

The nature of the sea.

Salte.

Generatiue heate.

Owtwarde could is cause of inwarde heate.

Metals.

Vapours and exhalations.

Whales.

Beastes.

Hereby maye bee considered the cause of the deathe of owr men that sayle directly to Guinea.

No passage from one extremitie to another but by a meane.

Caues and dennes.

Valleys.

The best furres.

Sables.

Beastes that lye hyd in wynter.

the dennes and hauntes of ſuch beaſtes throwghe the wooddes and ſnowe? But ſuche beaſtes the condition of whoſe bodies is ſo tender that they are not able to abyde th[e]iniurie of coulde, eyther lye hydde in wynter, or chaunge theyr habitation, as do certeyne beaſtes alſo in owre clime. Nature hath furthermore gyuen remedie to man bothe by arte and induſtry to defende him ſelfe both abrode and at home. Abrode, with a thicke veſture, and the ſame well dowbeled. At home, with large fyers on harthes, chymyneys, and in ſtooues for the day, with cloſe chambers, and couches, ſofte and warme beddes for the nyght: by whiche remedies they mitigate the winters which ſeeme rigorous to ſtraungers, althowghe they are to th[e]inhabitauntes more tollerable then owre opinion, as in deede by the fyrſt natural mixture or compoſition of theyr bodies, ſuch thinges are agreable to them as ſeeme very harde to other. The lion in Affrike and the beare in Sarmatia, are fierce as in theyr preſente ſtrength and vigoure: but tranſlated into a contrary heauen, are of leſſe ſtrength and courage. The foule cauled *Ciconia* (which ſum thinke to bee the ſtorke) dooth not tary the winter: yet doo the cranes coomme at that tyme. The Scythian wyll accuſe the Romane heauen as induceinge feuers, wheras neuertheleſſe there is none more holſoome. Such as haue byn tenderly browght vp, if they coomme ſuddeynly in tc the campe, can not away with hunger, watchynge, heate, paſſages throwgh ryuers, battayles, ſieges, and aſſaultes. But the owld ſouldier exerciſed in the warres, vſeth theſe as meditations of the fielde, as hardened therto by longe experience. He that hath byn accuſtomed to the ſhadowe of the citie, and wyll attempte the ſayinge of the poet Virgil, *Nudus ara, fere nudus*, that is, naked and bare withowt houſe and home, ſhall to his perell make an ende of the verſe, *Habebis frigora febrem* (that is) he ſhall haue the coulde ague. Suche thynges therfore as ſeeme harde vnto vs, beinge accuſtomed by lyttle and lyttle, becomme more tollerable: In ſo much that this exerciſe of ſufferaunce by ſuch degrees, dooth oftentymes grow to prodigious effectes farre beyonde owre expectation. And thus wee ſeeme to haue made ſufficient demonſtration, by heauen, nature, and arte, wherby it may appere that no part of the lande or ſea is denyed to lyuynge creatures. The reader may alſo perceaue how large matter of reaſons and exemples may bee opened for the declarynge of owre opinion wherein wee reſt. Let therfore th[e]autoritie of the ancient autours gyue place, and the conſent of the newe wryters agree to this hyſtory, not as nowe at the length comprehended (whereas before many hundreth yeares Germanie and Scondia had entercourſe of marchaundies not ſeuered by the large goulfe of Gothia) but as nowe by owr commentaries brought to light. And hauyng ſayde thus much in maner of a preface, we wyll nowe procede to wryte of the north regions.

267

What exercise may doo.

Vse maketh masteries.

Scondia.

¶ Schondia.

Scone. is fayre in the duch toonge.

The fertilitie of Scondia.

Schondia, Schondania, or Schondenmarchia, is as much to ſay as fayre Dania or fayre Denmarke. Plinie in one place, nameth it Scandia, and in an other, Scandinauia if there bee no faute in th[e]exemplers. It was named Schondia, by reaſon of the fayreneſſe and frutfulneſſe therof. And this aſwell for that in beneficiall heauen, fertilitie of grounde, commoditie of hauens and marte townes, abundaunce of ryuers of fyſſhe, plentie of beaſtes, great quantitie of metall, as golde, ſyluer, copper, and leade, diligent culturynge the grounde, with townes and cities wel inhabited and gouerned by ciuile lawes, it gyuethe place to none other fortunate region. This was in maner vnknowen to the owlde Greekes and Latins as may appeare by this argumente that with one conſente they affirmed that in theſe north regions the could zone or clime, was condemned to perpetuall ſnowe intollerable to all lyuynge creatures. For few of them haue made mention hereof as to be inhabited. Amonge whom Plinie as one of the chiefe, ſayth in his fourth booke, that Schondania is of vnknowen byggeneſſe: and only that portion therof to be knowen which is inhabited with the nation of the Hilleuiones in fiftie vyllages. Neyther yet is Eningia leſſe in opinion. Other more auncient then Plinie, haue placed moſt fortunate regions, with men of longe lyfe (whiche the Greekes caule *Macrobios*) and of moſte innocente behauour vnder the tracte of thoſe landes: and that there came from thence to Delphos, certeyne religious virginnes with vowes and gyftes conſecrated to Apollo: And furthermore that that nation obſerued this inſtitution vntyll the ſayde virgins were violated of them of whome they were receaued as ſtraungers. Theſe are moſt cleare teſtimonies of Antiquitie, both of the greatneſſe of Schondia, and the people that inhabite the ſame, althowgh they were ſence vnknowen, as lykewyſe the Gothes departynge from theſe north landes althowgh they obteyned th[e]empire of the regions abowte the mariſſhes of Meotis and the coaſtes of the ſea Euxinus, with the realme of Denmarke (wherof that is thought to bee a portion which is nowe cauled Tranſiluania) and the bankes of the ryuer of Danubius, and in fine inuaded the Romane Empire, yet were not the regions wel knowen from whenſe they tooke theyr originall. Therefore lyke as parte of the owlde wryters are vnſufficient wytneſſes to teſtifie of owre narrations as touchynge theſe landes vnknowen to them, Euen ſo the other parte which excluded the ſame as vnhabitable, are to bee conuinced leaſte theyr autoritie beinge admitted, ſhuld engender opinions not agreeable or conuenient to the nature of places. Sigiſmundus Liberus, in his commentaries of Moſcouia, wryteth thus. Scandia or

He meaneth Diodorus Siculus.

Th[e]inuasions of the Gothes

Transiluania

268

Scondia, is no Iland (as ſume haue thought) but parte of the continente or firme lande of Suetia, which by a longe tracte reacheth to Gothlande: And that nowe the kynge of Denmarke poſſeſſeth a great parte therof. But wheras the wryters of theſe thinges haue made Scondia greater then Suetia, and that the Gothes and Lumbardes came frome thenſe, they ſeeme in my opinion to comprehende theſe three kyngedomes as it were in one body, only vnder the name of Scondia, foraſmuch as then, that parte of lande that lyeth betwene the ſea Baltheum (whiche floweth by the coaſtes of Finlandia) and the froſen ſea, was vnknowen: And that by reaſon of ſo many mariſſhes, innumerable ryuers, and intemperatneſſe of heauen, it is yet rude vncultured, and lyttle knowen. Which thynge hath byn the cauſe that ſumme iudged all that was cauled by the name of Scondia, to bee one great Ilande.

The Gothes and Lumbardes.

¶ Gronlande.

Gronlande is interpreted greene lande: ſo cauled for the great increaſe and frutefulneſſe of paſture. By reaſon wherof, what great plentie of cattayle there is, it may hereby appere that at ſuch tyme as ſhyppes may paſſe thyther they ſet furth great heapes of cheeſe and butter to bee ſould, wherby wee coniecture that the lande is not rowgh with barren mountaynes. It hath two Cathedrall Churches vnder th[e]ordination of Nidroſia. To one of theſe, was of late yeares a byſſhop appoynted onely by the tytle of a ſuffragane in conſideration that while the metropolitane dooth neglect the direction of religion for the diſtance of the place and difficult nauigation, the people is in maner faulne to gentilitie, beinge of them ſelfe of mouable wyttes and gyuen to magical artes. For it is ſayde that they (as alſo the people of Laponia) doo rayſe tempeſtes on the ſea with magical inchauntmentes, and brynge ſuch ſhippes into daungeour as they intende to ſpoile. They vſe lyttle ſhyppes made of lether, and ſafe ageynſte the bruſynge of the ſea and rockes, and with them aſſayle other ſhippes. Peter Martyr of Angleria, writeth in his Decades of the Spaniſſhe nauigations, that Sebaſtian Cabote ſayling from Englande continually towarde the north, folowed that courſe ſo farre that he chaunſed vppon greate flakes of Iſe in the mooneth of Iuly: and that diuertynge from thenſe, he folowed the coaſte by the ſhore bendynge towarde the South vntyl he came to the clime of the Ilande of Hiſpaniola aboue Cuba, an Iland of the Canibales. Which narration hath giuen me occaſion to extende Gronlande beyonde the promontory or cape of Huitſarch to the continente or firme lande of Lapponia aboue the caſtell of Wardhus: which thynge I did the rather for that the reuerende Archebyſſhoppe of Nidroſia, conſtantely affirmed that the ſea bendethe there into the forme of a crooked elbowe. It agreeth herewith alſo, that the Lapones conſent with them in the lyke magical practiſes and doo neyther imbraſe the Chriſtian religion nor refuſe it: wherby I haue thowght this lykeneſſe of cuſtomes to bee betwene them bycauſe they ioyne togyther in one continent. The diſtance lykewyſe, ſeemeth not to diſagree. For betwene both theſe people, the diſtance is not full twoo hundreth Schœni, euery one being a ſpace of grounde conteinyng. lx. [sixty] furlonges, which make. vii. [seven] myles and a halfe. It furthermore agreeth with this coniecture that Cabote chaunſed into ſuch Iſe. And albeit as touchynge the mooneth of Iuly, I wyll contend it is not well reherſed, no althowghe he had ſayled vnder the pole, for ſuch reaſons as wee haue declared before to the contrary, neuertheleſſe, that at ſum tyme he ſayled by Iſe, this teſtifieth in that he ſayled not by the mayne ſea, but in places nere vnto the lande comprehendyng and imbraſyng the ſea in forme of a goulfe, wheras for the ſame cauſe, the goulfe of Gothland is froſen bycauſe it is ſtreyght and narow, in the whiche alſo the lyttle quantitie of ſalt water is ouercoome by the abundance of freſſhe water of many and greate ryuers that faule into the goulfe. But betwene Norwaye and Iſlande, the ſea is not froſen for the contrary cauſe, foraſmuch as the poure of freſſhe water is there ouercomme of th[e]abundance of the ſalte water. There is a fame (but of vncerteyne autoritie) that the Spanyardes ſayle at this preſente to Gronlande, and to an other lande which they caule *Terra viridis*, that is, the greene lande, bringynge from thenſe ſuche wares as are founde in Gronlande. Towarde the north, it reacheth to the vnknowen lande vnder the pole, from whenſe alſo the theues and robbers of the Pigmei coomme into this lande. Whiche is an argument that the regions vnder the pole are inhabited, and almoſt enuironed with the ſea, as are they whiche the Coſmographers caule Cherſonneſi or Peninſulæ (that is) almoſt Ilandes:

Frutefull pasture.

Religion neglected.

Inchaunters

The vyage of Sebastian Cabote to the frosen sea.

Gronlande.

Wardhus.

Lapponia and Gronlande.

Schoeni.

Cabote tould me that this Ise is of fresshe water, and not of the sea.

A commixtion of salt water and fresshe.

The sea betwene Norway and Islande.

Terra Viridis.

269

Pigmei.

☞ *The deſcription of Gronlande.*

¶ *The deſcription of the Eaſt ſyde whiche lyeth towarde Norway.*

	[Longitude.]		[Latitude.]			[Longitude.]		[Latitude.]	
*Wardhus caſtell.	54	[degrees] [0′]	70.	30′	The ſeconde extention.	28.	[0′]	72.	[0′]
Towarde the North.	53.	30′	71.	30′.	Huitſarch. promont.	22.	[0′]	67.	[0′]
The fyrſt extention.	40.	[0′]	71.	40′	The extention.	5.	[0′]	61.	45′
It is continued from thenſe by the coaſtes of the lande of Baccallaos.						*356.	[0′]	60.	[0′]

Baccalaos.

Towarde the weſt and north, it is termined with an vnknowen ende of landes and ſeas.

[* Wardoehuus is the chief village of Wardoe, an island on the N.E. coast of Norway, beyond the North Cape and near Waranger-Fiord. Its true N. Lat. is 70° 23′, and E. Long. 31° 7′. Therefore Ziegler's meridian in all the following dates (being 54 degrees west of Wardoehuus) is really 23 degrees W. Long., and that therefore he places Baccallos 4 degrees still further west—fixes it in 27° W. Long., which is, in high latitudes, the longitude of a part of Greenland.—E. A.]

ISLANDE.

Island caũled Thyle.

ISlande is interpreted the land of Iſe, and is cauled of the ȯwlde wryters Thyle. It is extended betwene the ſouth and the north almoſt two hundreth ſchoenes in longitude. It is for the moſt part full of mountaynes and vncultured. But in the playnes it hath ſuche frutefull paſtures, that they are fayne ſumetymes to dryue the beaſtes from their feedynge leaſt they ſhulde bee ſuffocate with to much fatnes. This Iland is famous by the ſtrange miracles of nature, of the which Saxo Grammaticus in his hyſtorie of Denmarke, and Olanus Gothus in his deſcription of the north landes, doo make mention. There are in it three mountaynes of marueylous height, the toppes whereof are couered with perpetuall ſnowe. But the nether partes of them, are of lyke nature to the mountayne Etna in the Ilande of Sicilie boyling with continuall flames of fyre and caſtynge furth brymſtone. One of theſe is named Helga, and the other *Mons Crucis* (that is) the mounte of the croſſe. The thyrde is named Hecla: whoſe flames neyther conſume flaxe or towe, mãtters moſte apte to tãke fyre, nor yet are quenched with water. And with lyke force as the ſhotte of great artillerie is driuen furth by violence of fyre, euen ſo by the commixtion and repugnaunce of fyre, coulde, and brymſtome, greate ſtones are here throwne into the ayer. Nere vnto theſe mountaynes are three chynkes or open places in the earthe of houge byggeneſſe and ſuche depth (eſpecially at the mounte Hecla) that no ſyght can attayne therto. But to ſuch as looke into them, there fyrſt appeare men as thowgh they were drowned and yet breathyng furth theyr ſowles: who beinge exhorted by theyr frendes to reſorte to theyr owne, they aunſwere with moornynge voyce and greuous ſyghes, that they muſt depãrte frome thenſe to the mount Hecla, and therwith ſuddeynly vanyſſhe owte of ſyght. Iſe floweth abowt the Ilande for the ſpace of ſeuen or eyght moonethes, makynge by ſunnynge togyther a certeyne miſerable waylinge and gronynge noyſe not vnlyke the voyce of man. Th[e]inhabitauntes thynke, that in this Iſe and the mounte Hecla, are the places where the euyll ſoules of theyr people are tormented. If any man take a greate portion of this Iſe, and kepe it as diligently as may bee in a cloſe veſſell or cofer, the ſame dooth ſo vanyſſhe at the tyme when the other Iſe abowt the Ilande diſſolueth, that not ſo much as one droppe of water or Iſe can therof bee founde.

Schoeni is lx. [sixty] furlonges.

Miracles of nature in Islande.

Three maruelous mountaynes.

Helgate.

Hecla.

Straunge visions.

Ise.

Purgatory.

A straunge thynge.

Not farre from theſe mountaynes reachynge toward the ſea coaſtes, are foure ſprynges of water of moſte diuers and contrary nature. The fyrſte, by reaſon of his perpetuall and feruente heate, ſuddeynely turneth all bodies that are caſte therin, into ſtones, reſeruynge neuertheleſſe theyr fyrſt forme and ſhape. The ſeconde, is of intollerable couldeneſſe. The thyrde is ſweeter then hony, and moſt pleaſaunte to quenche thyrſt. The fourth is playne poyſon, peſtilent, and deadely. There is furthermore in theſe ſprynges ſuche abundaunce of brymſtone, that a thouſande pounde weight therof is bought for lyttle, as for the tenth parte of a ducate. Theyr chiefe wares, are dryed fyſſhe, as ſoles, maydens, playces, ſalpas, ſtockefyſſhes, and ſuch other which they exchange for wheat and ſuch other thynges as are browght thyther from Lubeck, Hamborowe, and Amſterdam. For they haue oftentymes ſuch ſcarſeneſſe of corne, that they vſe dryed fyſſhe in the ſteade of breade, althowgh in ſoommer the Ilande ſo floryſſheth with greene and frutefull medowes, that they are fayne ſumtimes to dryue theyr beaſtes from paſture leaſte they ſhulde ſuffocate for to much fatteneſſe, as I haue ſayde before. They make very good butter, and apte to bee vſed in matters of phiſicke. There are founde dyuers kindes of good haukes, as faulcons, gerfalcons, lanners, and ſperhaukes. Alſo rauens, crowes, beares, hares, and foxes, both whyte and blacke. They haue moſt ſwyfte horſes: and ſuch as runne. xxx. [thirty] myles continually withowt reſt or bayte. They haue many churches: and houſes buylded of the bones of whales and other greate fyſſhes. The nauigation is not open to this Ilande but in ſommer ſeaſon: and that only for the ſpace of foure moonethes, by reaſon of the coulde and Iſe whereby the paſſage is ſtopped. If any ſtryfe or debate aryſe on the ſea amonge the mariners for the commoditie of the hauen, the gouernour of the place althowgh he haue knowleage therof, yet dooth he not punyſſhe them, foraſmuch as it appertayneth not to his office to decerne ſuch thynges as are doonne on the ſea, but only on the lande. Shippes are there often tymes in great perell by reaſon of whales and ſuch other monſters of the ſea, excepte the mariners take good heede and keepe them farre frome the ſhyppes with the noyſe of droommes, and emptie barrels caſt into the ſea. There are many mynſtrels and other that play on inſtrumentes, with the ſweete noyſe whereof, they vſe to allure foules and fiſſhes to theyr nettes and ſnares. Many alſo, lye lurkynge in caues and dennes to auoyde the ſharpeneſſe of coulde, as the Affricanes doo the lyke to defend them ſelues from the heate. On the toppe of a certeyne mountayne cauled Weyſzarch, (lyinge betwene Iſlande and Gruntland or Gronlande) is erected a ſhypmans quadrant of marueilous byggeneſſe, made by two pirates named Pinnigt and Pothorſt in fauour of ſuch as ſayle by thoſe coaſtes that they may therby auoyde the daungerous places lyinge towarde Gronland.

Abundaunce of brimstone.

Dryed fysshe.

Scarsenes of corne.

270

Haukes.

White rauens.

Houses of whales bones.

The nauigation to Island.

Whales.

One thynge seruyng for contrary vses.

A shipmans quadrant.

The myddeſt of the Ilande. 7 o′ [Long.]. 65 30.′ [Lat.] The citie Harſol. etc. 7 40′ [Long.] 60 42′ [Lat.]

LAPONIA.

THe region of Laponĩa, was ſo named of the people that inhabite it. For the Germayns, caule all ſuche Lapones, as are ſimple or vnapte to thynges. This people is of ſmaule ſtature, and of ſuch agilitie of bodie, that hauynge theyr quyuers of arrowes gerte to them and theyr bowes in theyr handes, they can with a leape, caſte theym ſelues throwgh a circle or hope of the diameter of a cubite. They feyght on foote, armed with bowes and arrowes after the maner of the Tartars. They are exerciſed in hurlynge the darte and ſhootynge from theyr youth: in ſo muche that they giue theyr chyldren no meate vntyll they hit the marke they ſhoote at, as dyd in owlde tyme th[e]inhabitauntes of the Ilandes cauled Baleares. They vſe to make theyr apparell ſtreight and cloſe to theyr boddies that it hynder not theyr woorke. Theyr winter veſtures are made of the hole ſkinnes of ſeales or beares artificially wrought and made ſupple. Theſe they tye with a knotte aboue theyr headés, leauynge onely two holes open to looke through, and haue all the reſidue of theyr bodies couered as thoughe they were ſowed in ſackes, but that this beinge adapted to all partes of theyr bodies, is ſo made for commoditie and not for a puniſſhement as the Romans were accuſtomed to ſowe paricides in ſackes of lether with a cocke, an ape, and a ſerpent, and ſo to hurle them alyue all togither into the ryuer of Tyber. And hereby I thinke it came to paſſe that in owlde tyme it was raſſhely beleued that in theſe regions there were men with rowgh and hery bodies, wilde beaſtes, as parte made relation throwghe ignoraunce, parte alſo takynge pleaſure in rehearſall of ſuche thynges as are ſtraunge to the hearers. The Lapones defended by this arte and induſtry, go abrode and withſtande the ſharpenes of wynter and the north wyndes, with all the iniuries of heauen. They haue no houſes, but certeyne tabernacles like tentes or hales wherwith they paſſe from place to place and change theyr manſions. Sum of them liue after the maner of the people of Sarmatia cauled in owlde tyme Amaxobii, which vſed waynes in the ſteade of houſes. They are much gyuen to huntynge: and haue ſuch plentie of wylde beaſtes that they kyll them in maner in euery place. It is not lawfull for a woman to go furth of the tente at that doore by the whiche her huſbande wente owte on huntynge the ſame daye: nor yet to touche with her hande any parte of the beaſte that is taken vntyll her huſbande reache her on the ſpitte ſuché a portion of fleſſhe as he thinketh good. They tyll not the grounde. The region nuryſſheth no kynde of ſerpentes: yet are there greate and noyſoome gnattes. They take fyſſhe in greate plentie: by the commoditie wherof, they lyue after the maner of the Ethiopians cauled Ichthiophagi. For as theſe drie theyr fiſſhe with feruent heate, ſo doo they drye them with coulde, and grynde or ſtampe them to pouder as ſmaule as meale or floure. They haue ſuch abundaunce of theſe fyſſhes, that they hourd great plentie therof in certeyne ſtore houſes to cary them vnto other landes nere abowt them, as Northbothnia and Whyte Ruſſia. Theyr ſhyppes are not made with nayles, but are tide togyther and made faſt with cordes and wythes. With theſe they ſayle by the ſwyft ryuers betwene the mountaines of Laponia, beinge naked in ſommer that they may the better ſwymme in the tyme of perell, and gather togethe ſuch wares as are in daunger to bee loſt by ſhipwracke. Part of them exerciſe handie craftes, as imbrotherynge and weauynge of cloth interlaced with golde and ſyluer. Suche as haue diuiſed any neceſſary arte, or doo increaſe and amende th[e]inuentions of other, are openlye honoured, and rewarded with a veſture, in the which is imbrothered an argument or token of the thynge they deuiſed. And this remayneth to the poſteritie of theyr famelie in token of theyr deſertes. They frame ſhippes, buylde houſes, and make diuers ſortes of houſholde ſtuffe artificially, and tranſporte them to other places neare abowte. They bye and ſell bothe for exchaunge of wares and for money. And this only by conſent of both parties withowt communicacion: yet not for lacke of wytte or for rudeneſſe of maners, but bycauſe they haue a peculiar language vnknowen to theyr bortherers. It is a valiant nation, and lyued longe free, and ſuſteyned the warres of Norwaye and Suecia vntyll at the length they ſubmitted them ſelues, and payde ryche furres for theyr tribute. They choſe them ſelues a gouernour whom they caule a kynge: But the kyng of Suetia gyueth hym autoritie and adminiſtration. Neuertheleſſe, the people in theyr ſutes and doubtfull cauſes, reſorte to Suecia to haue theyr matters deciſed.

In theyr iorneys, they go not to any inne, nor yet enter into any houſe, but lye all nyght vnder the firmament. They haue no horſes: but in the ſteade of them, they tame certeyne wyld beaſtes which they caule Reen, beinge of the iuſte byggeneſſe of a mule, with rowgh heare lyke an Aſſe, clouen feete, and braunched hornes lyke a harte, but lower and with fewer antlettes. They wyll not abyde to bee rydden. But when theyr peitrels or drawynge collers are put on them, and they ſo ioyned to the chariotte or ſleade, they runne in the ſpace of. xxiiii. [twenty-four] houres, a hundreth and fiftie myles, or. xxx. [thirty] ſchœnos: The whiche ſpace they affirme to chaunge the horizon thryſe: that is thryſe to coome to the furtheſt ſigne or marke that they ſee a farre of. Which doubtleſſe is a token both of the marueylous ſwiftneſſe and great ſtrength of theſe beaſtes beinge able to con-

People of great agilitie.

A straunge apparell.

The cause of an owlde erroure.

So doo the Tartars.

Plentie of wyld beastes.

271

No serpents.

Great gnats.

Abundaunce of fysshe.

Ships withowt nayles.

Science honoured.

Bargeinynge withowt woordes.

No horses.

A beast of marueylous strength and swyftnesse.

What Schoenus is.

Loke in Gronland.

The change of the horizon.

The owld autours cauled all the north people Scythians.

tinewe runnynge for ſo great a ſpace, in the meane whyle alſo ſpendynge ſumtyme in feedynge. I ſuppoſe that this thynge was ſumewhat knowen to thē owlde wryters, although receaued in manner by an obſcure and doubtful fame. For they alſo wryte that certeyne Scythians doo ryde on hartes.

Erasmus lamenteth this in his fyrste booke de ratine concionandi, where he speaketh of the people. cauled pilapii

They neyther folowe the Chriſtian religion, nor yet refuſe it or are offended therwith as are the Iuwes: but do ſumtymes receaue it fauorably to gratifie the princes to whome they obey. And that no more of theym imbraſe the Chriſtian fayth, the faute is ſumwhat to bee imputed to the byſſhoppes and prelates that haue eyther reiected this cure and charge of inſtructynge the nation, or ſuffered the faith of Chriſt to be ſuffocate euen in the fyrſt ſprynge. For vnder the pretenſe of religion, they woulde haue aduaunced theyr owne reuenues and ouerburthened the people by an intollerable exemple, none otherwyſe here then in all Chriſtendome, which thynge is doubtleſſe the cauſe of moſte greuous defections. I harde Iohn a byſſhoppe of Gothlande ſay thus: We that gouerne the churche of Vpſalia, and haue vnder owre dioceſſe a great parte of that nation, lyke as it is not conueniente to declare many thynges of owre vigilance and attendaunce ouer the flocke committed to owre charge, euen ſo abſteynynge frome myſcheuous couetouſneſſe wherby religion is abuſed for luker, we doo in all places owre diligent endeuour that we miniſter none occaſion whereby this nation as offended by owre ſinnes, māye bee the leſſe wyllynge to embraſe the Chriſtian fayth. This is the ſtate of the religion amonge the Lapones: Althowgh of theyr owne inſtitution and cuſtome receaued of theyr prediceſſours, they are Idolatours, honourynge that lyuynge thynge that they meete fyrſt in the mornynge, for the god of that daye, and diuinynge thereby theyr good lucke or euyll. They alſo erecte images of ſtones vpon the mountaines which they eſteeme as goddes, attributing to them diuine honour. They ſolemne marriages, and begynne the ſame with fyre and flynte, as with a myſterie ſo aptely applyed to the image of ſtone as if it had byn receaued frome the myddeſte of Grecia. For in that they adhibite a myſterie to fyre, as they doo not this alone (foraſmuche as the Romanes obſerued the ſame cuſtome) euen ſo are they herein partly to be commended in that they vſe the ceremonies of ſo noble a people. The myſterie of the flinte is no leſſe to bee prayſed, both foraſmuche as this is domeſticall philoſophie, and hath alſo a nere affinitie and ſignification to theſe ſolemnities. For as the flynt hath in it fyre lyinge hydde whiche appeareth not but by mouynge and force, ſo is there a ſecreate lyfe in both kyndes of man and woman whiche by mutuall coniunction coommethe furth to a lyuynge byrth. They are furthermore experte inchaunters. They tye three knottes on a ſtrynge hangynge at a whyppe. When they loſe one of theſe, they rayſe tollerable wyndes, When they loſe an other, the wynde is more vehement. But by loſyng the thyrde, they rayſe playne tempeſtes as in owlde tyme they were accuſtomed to rayſe thunder and lyghtnynge. This arte doo they vſe ageinſt ſuch as ſayle by theyr coaſtes, and ſtaye or moue the ryuers and ſeas more or leſſe as they lyſt to ſhewe fauoure or diſpleaſure. They make alſo of leade certeyne ſhorte magicall dartes of the quantitie and length of a fynger. Theſe they throwe ageynſte ſuche of whome they deſyre to bee reuenged, to places neuer ſo farre diſtant. They are ſumtimes ſo vexed with the canker on their armes or legges that in the ſpace of three dayes they dye throwgh the vehemencie of the payne. The ſonne fauleth very lowe in theſe regions: and prolongeth one continuall nyghte for the ſpace of thre moonethes in wynter, durynge whiche tyme they haue none other lyght but lyke vnto the twylyght of euenynges and mornynges. This is very cleare, but continueth but fewe houres, and is lyke the bryght ſhynynge of the moone. Therfore that day that the ſonne returneth to the hemiſpherie, they keepe holy day and make great myrth with ſolemne feſtiuitie. And theſe are the maners of this nation, not ſo brutyſſhe or ſaluage as woorthy therfore to bee cauled Lapones for theyr vnaptneſſe or ſimplicitie as when they lyued vnder theyr owne Empire and vſed no familiaritie or entercourſe with other nations and knewe not the commoditie of theyr owne thynges, neyther the pryce and eſtimation of theyr furres in owre regions, by reaſon whereof they ſoulde great plentie of them for ſum of owre wares of ſmaule value.

272 Idolatrie.

A misterie of mariage in fyre and flint.

Experte inchaunters.

Magical dartes.

The canker.

One nyght of three moonethes.

Rich furres.

The boundes or limittes of Laponia (beinge th[e]extreme lande of Scondia knowen towarde the north pole) are extended towarde this parte of the North, to the worlde yet vnknowen to vs: And furthermore towarde the ſame parte of the vttermoſt ſea, accordynge to this deſcription.

	[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]
The fyrſt coaſte,	70 [o′]	72. [o′]
The coaſte folowynge,	80 [o′]	7. [o′]
That that yet foloweth,	90 [o′]	70. [o′]

Plentie of sea fysshe.

Wardhus.

From̃e the fyſſhynge places and ſtore houſes of this ſea, they cary foorth to Nordbothnia and whyte Ruſſia, landes confinynge to them, great plentie of fyſſhe, Wherby we may coniecture that this ſea is extended on euery ſyde toward the North. Towarde the weſte, it is limitted with the moſte inwarde goulfe of at the Caſtell of Wardhus at the degree. 54° [o′] [Long.] 70 30.′ [Lat.]

Towarde the Southe, it is lymitted by a line drawen from thenſe vnto the degree. 90 [∾ Long.] 69. [o′ Lat.]

Norwegia or Norway.

NOrdway, is as muche to ſay as the Northwaye. This was ſumtyme a floryſſhynge kyngedome, whoſe dominion comprehended Denmarke, Friſelande and the Ilandes farre abowt, vntyll the domeſtical Empire was gouerned by the ſucceſſion of inheritaunce. In the meane tyme while this gouernaunce ceaſed for lacke of dewe iſſue, it was inſtituted by conſent of the nobilitie that the kynges ſhuld be admitted by election: ſuppoſinge that they wolde with more equitie execute that office foraſmuche as they were placed in the ſame by ſuch autoritie, and not by obteynynge the kyngedome by fortune and newe aduauncement. But it came ſo to paſſe, that as euery of them excelled in richeſſe, ambition and fauour by conſanginitie, ſo were they in greater hope to obteyne the kyngedome: And were by this meanes diuided into factions, attemtyng alſo occaſions t[o]inuade foraigne realmes wherby they might ſtrengthen theyr parties. It is therefore at this preſent vnder the dominion of the Danes: who doo not only exact intollerable tributes, but alſo brynge all theyr ryches and commodities into Denmarke, conſtitutynge the continuance of theyr gouernaunce in th[e]infirmitie and pouertie of the ſubiectes: which exemple, ſum other princes doo folowe at this day in the Chriſtian Empire. For after that the princes had forſaken ſuche vertues as ſhulde haue ſhyned in them, as to bee *Patres patriæ* (that is) the fathers of theyr countreys, and that in the place hereof, onely the proud countenaunce of dominion remayned, which opened licentiouſneſſe to th[e]iniurie of the ſubiectes, this folowed therof, that wheras the Danes by this occaſion had no further truſt or ayde in the loue of the people, they prouided for th[e]indempnitie of theyr owne eſtate by forcible extenuatinge the gooddes and poure of them whom they deſired to kepe in ſubiection. This is the fortune of Norway, whoſe edefi[c]es, townes, and cities can not defende theyr auncient amplitude and dignitie: neyther is there any hope of repayrynge theyr ſtate. For there are no conſultations admitted for the redreſſe of the commonwelth: No man dare ſhewe his aduice or attempte any thing, vncerteyne of the myndes and conſent of other. To this difficultie, is added the qualitie of the place. For the Danes haue in theyr poure all the nauigations of Norway, whereby it may exerciſe no trade by ſea, neyther cary furthe wares to other places. So that in fine it may ſeeme moſt vnfortunate, as lackynge the fauoure of heauen, the ſea, and the lande. From henſe is brought into all Europe a fyſſhe of the kindes of them whiche we caule haddockes or hakes indurate and dryed with coulde, and beaten with clubbes or ſtockes, by reaſon whereof the Germayns caule them ſtockefyſſhe. The takinge of theſe, is moſt commended in Ianuarie that they may bee ſufficiently dryed and hardened with coulde. For ſuch as are taken in the more temperate monethes, doo corrupte and putrifie: And are not meete to be caried furth.

273

Kyngdomes destroyd by factions.

The Danes.

The defaut of princes.

An exemple of tyranni.

The deſcription of the weſt coaſte, with the parte thereof lyinge moſt towarde the north.

	[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]
Wardhus (that is) the watche houſe, or watche towre,	54 [o′]	70 30.′
It is a ſtronge caſtell or fortreſſe appoynted to the Lapones.		
The coaſte ſolowynge,	48 50′	70. [o′]
Matthkur. etc.		
All the coaſt from henſe, and the places neare abowt vnto the degree,	45 [o′]	69. [o′]

being ſumtyme lefte deſolate by the ſeditions and deſtruction of Norway, the Lapones choſe for theyr habitations, as commynge to a more beneficiall heauen.

The Lapones

From the Caſtel of Wardhus, vnto the degree, 40 30′ [Long.] 64 :o′ [Lat.]

all the coaſte in the ſprynge tyme is daungerous to paſſe, by reaſon of whales of ſuch huge byggeneſſe that ſum of theym growe to a hundreth cubites. For theſe fyſſhes at that tyme of the yeare reſort togyther for generation. Such ſhyppes as chaunce to faule eyther vppon theyr bodies, or into ſuche whyrlepooles as they make by theyr vehement motions, are in great perell. The remedie to auoyde this daungiour, is to poure into the ſea Caſtoreum (that is) oyle made of the ſtones of the beaſte cauled the Beuer, mengeled with water. For with this, the hole hearde of whales vanyſſheth ſuddeynely to the bottome of the ſea: They make a terrible rorynge: and haue two breathynge places in the hygheſt parte of theyr forheades, ſtandynge furth right a cubite in length, and are as brode at the endes, beinge couered with a ſkynne, throughe the which they blow waters lyke ſhowers or ſtormes of raine. The prickes of theyr backes, are founde conteynynge three els in circuite, and euery knotte betwene theym, of one elle: They are at the leaſt of. lx. [ſixty] cubites in length: And are ſalted and kept in ſtore houſes. The greateſt are vnprofitable to bee eaten by reaſon of theyr ranke and vnſauery taſte which can not bee qualified.

Shippes in daungiour by reason of whales.

Castoreum.

The rorynge of whales.

Whales salted and reserued.

Nidroſia ſtanding vpon the ſouth ſyde of the ſea banke, was the chiefe and metropolitane churche throwgh owt all Norway, Iſelande, Gronlande, and the Ilandes thereabowt. This citie was noble at the fyrſt vnder the floryſſhing Empire of Norway, conteinynge in circuite. xxiiii. paryſſhes, but it is nowe browght in maner to a

The citie of Nidrosia.

274

A magnificall church.

village and is cauled in the Germayne toonge Trutham, as the houſeof the Dryides. There remayneth at this daye a Cathedrall churche in token of the ancient felicitie, beinge ſuche that in byggeneſſe and workemanſhip of wrought ſtone, the lyke is not in all Chriſtendome. The greeſes or compaſſe abowt the altare, was deſtroyde by fire, and was repared at the ſame tyme that wee write this hiſtorie. The charge of the reparaſion, was eſteemed to bee ſeuen thouſande crownes: by which ſmaule portion, an eſtimate maye bee made of the excellencie of the hole Churche.

Noysome beastes of vnknowen generation.

The tracte of all the ſea coaſtes Norwaye, is very quyete and meeke. The ſea is not froſen. The ſnowes indure not longe. This lande hath alſo a peculiar peſtilence which they caule Leem or Lemmer. This is a lyttle foure footed beaſte abowte the byggeneſſe of a ratte with a ſpotted ſkynne. Theſe faule vppon the grounde at certeyne tempeſtes and ſuddeyne ſhowers, not yet knowen from whenſe they comme, as whyther they are browght by the wyndes from remote Ilandes, or otherwiſe engendered of thicke and feculent clowdes. But this is well knowen, that as ſoone as they faule downe, greene graſſe and herbes are founde in theyr bowels not yet digeſted. They conſume all greene thynges as doo locuſtes: And ſuch as they only byte, wyther and dye. This peſtilence lyueth as longe as it dooth not taſte of the graſſe newelye ſproonge. They coome togyther by flockes as do ſwalowes: And at an ordinarie tyme, eyther dye by heapes with great infection of the lande (as by whoſe corruption the ayer is made peſtiferous and moleſteth the Noruegians with ſwymmynge in the headde and the iaundies) or are conſumed of other beaſtes named Lefrat. Towarde the Eaſt, it is included within the line that is drawen by the mountaynes whoſe endes or vttermoſt boundes they are that lye towarde the ſouth aboue the mouthes of the ryuer Trolhetta. But that parte that lyeth towarde the north, paſſeth by the caſtel of Wardhus, and is extended to the vnknowen lande of the Lapones. [Longitude.] [Latitude.]

Wardhus. The vnknowen lande of the Lapones.

The lake cauled Mos, and the Ilande of Hoffuen in the myddeſt therof, is in the degree. 45 30′ 61. [0′]

A serpent of houge biggenesse.

In this lake appeareth a ſtraunge monſter: which is, a ſerpent of houge byggeneſſe. And as to all other places of the worlde, blaſynge ſtarres doo portende th[e]alteration and chaunge of thynges, ſo dooth this to Norway. It was ſeene of late (in the yeare of Chriſt. M. D. xxii.) apperynge farre aboue the water rowlynge lyke a greate pyller: And was by coniecture farre of, eſteemed to bee of fiftie cubites in length. Shortely after folowed the reiectynge of Chriſtiernus kynge of Denmarke. Suche other monſtrous thynges are ſayde to bee ſeene in dyuers places of the worlde. And doubtleſſe excepte wee ſhulde thinke that the diuine prouidence hauynge mercie vpon mortall men, and hereby warnynge them of their offences, dooth ſende ſuche ſtraunge thynges (as alſo blaſing ſtarres and armies feyghtynge in the ayer, with ſuche other portentous monſters wherof no cauſes can bee founde by naturall thynges) we might els ſuſpecte that ſuch ſyghtes were but imaginations of the ſence of man deceaued.

God warneth vs by signes of thynges to coome.

On the Eaſt ſide, are exceading rowgh montaynes which admit no paſſage to Suecia. The ſea betwene Norway and the Ilandes, is cauled Tialleſlund, Euripus, or the ſtreightes.

	[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]
The Ilande of Lofoth. whoſe myddeſt.	42 [0′]	67 10′.
Langanas, whoſe myddeſt,	41 [0′]	67 [0′]
Vaſtral, whoſe myddeſt.	41 34′	67 30′.

The streightes or boyling sea.

The ſea betwene theſe three Ilandes, is cauled Muſcoſtrom (that is) boylynge. At the flowynge of the ſea, it is ſwalowed into the caues, and is blowne owt ageyne at the reflowynge, with no leſſe violence then the ſtreames of ryuers faule from mountaynes. This ſea is nauigable vntyll it bee lower then the mouthes of the rockes. Such as chaunce into it owt of dewe tyme, are caried headlonge into whyrlepooles. The fragmentes of the loſt ſhips, are ſeldome caſt vp ageyne. But when they are caſte vp, they are ſo bruſed and freted ageynſte the rockes, that they ſeeme to bee ouergrowne with hore. This is the poure of nature, paſſyng the fabulous Simplegades and the fearefull Malea, with the daungerous places of Silla and Caribdis, and all other miracles that nature hath wrought in any other ſea hytherto knowen to man.

Dangerous places in the sea.

Frutfull Ilandes about Norway.

The Ilandes abowt Norway, are of ſuch frutfull paſture, that they brynge not theyr beaſtes into the ſtables before the moneth of Nouember: And do many places winter them abrode.

Svecia, or Svethlande.

Svecia, is a kyngedome ryche in golde, ſyluer, copper, leade, Iren, fruyte, cattayle, and exceadynge increaſe of fyſſhe of the ryuers, lakes, and the ſea. And hath no leſſe plentie of ſuche wylde beaſtes as are taken with huntinge. Towarde the Weſt, it is ended with the mountaynes of Norway from the Caſtel of Wardhus vnto th[e]end, 51 [o′ Long.] 63 40′ [Lat.] Towarde the South, with the line from this ende vnto the degrees. 53. 30′. 61. [o′] And from thenſe vnto the degrees. 61. [o′] 60. 30′. Aboue the goulfe of Suecia, toward the north, with the ſouth ende of Lapponia from the Caſtel of Wardhus vnto th[e]ende. 62. [o′] 70. [o′] Towarde the Eaſte, it is ended with the line frome this ende vnto the degree. 63. [o′] 69. [o′] etc. Stockholme the chiefe citie. 64. [o′] 61. [o′] This is the chiefe mart towne of Suecia, and is ſtrongely defended by arte and nature. It is ſituate in mariſſhes after the maner of Venece: and was therefore cauled Stokholme, foraſmuche as beinge placed in the water, the fundation is fortified with ſtockes or piles. The ſea entereth into it with two armes or branches of ſuch largenes and depth that ſhips of great burden and with mayne ſayles may enter by the ſame with theyr full fraight. This ſuffered of late yeares greuous ſpoyle and deſtruction to the ſingular exemple of cruel hoſtilitie: And ſuch, as the like hath not bin lightly ſhewed to any other citie receaued by league and compoſition.

275 Golde and syluer.

Wardhus castell.

The goulfe of Suecia.

The citie of Stockholme.

In al the tract from Stokholme to the lake aboue the riuer of Dalekarle, which is in the degree. 56. 30′ 63. 50′ are mountaines frutful of good ſiluer, copper, and leade. They gette great ryches by the ſalmons and plentie of other fyſſhes whiche they take in certeyne greate lakes.

Gold in could regions.

Fysshe.

The dukedome of Agermannia, occupieth the north ſyde to the confines of Laponia. This tract is ful of wods in the whiche they hunt the beaſtes cauled Vros or Biſontes, which in theyr toonge they caule Elg, (that is) wilde aſſes. Theſe are of ſuch height, that the higheſt part of their backes are equal with the meaſure of a man holdynge vp his armes as hyghe as he may reach. etc. Vpſalia the chiefe citie. 62. 63′. 30. [o′] here is buried the body of ſaynt Hericus kynge and martyr.

The beaste cauled Vros or Elg.

Vpsalia.

Copperdalia (that is) the copper valley, is a dukedome ſouthwarde from the dukedome of Iemptia. Vnder this, is the valient nation of the people cauled Dalekarly.

Copperdalia.

Oplandia, is a dukedome and the nauil or middeſt of Scondia.

Oplandia.

The citie of Pircho, on the north ſyde of the lake of Meler, was once a great citie and able to arme. xiiii. thouſande men to the warres: but is nowe browght to a vyllage.

All the tracte of Oplandia, hath mynes of ſyluer, copper, and ſteele.

Of the Ilandes and rockes that lye abowte Suecia, the myddeſt is. 67 30′ [Long.] 61 30′. [Lat.] Theſe were cauled of the owlde wryters Oone, the reaſon of which name remayneth to this day. For there are in theſe innumerable multitudes of byrdes: In ſo muche that th[e]inhabitauntes of the nexte coaſte, ſayle thyther in the mooneth of May whyle the byrdes ſyt on theyr egges: which they ſteale and reſerue them in ſalte for a longe tyme.

Byrdes.

Egges reserued in salte.

Bothnia.

Precious furres.

Fysshe.

Bothnia is ſo named of the precious furres of all ſortes that are caried from thenſe into foraigne regions. For by theſe and theyr fyſſhynge, they haue greate commoditie. Salmons of the beſt ſort are taken in theſe ſeas and are great ryches amonge theſe nations. Bothnia is diuided into twoo partes, as Nordbothnia, and South Bothnia, cauled Oſtrobothnia. Nordbothnia, is termined with the ſouth ende of the Lapones vnto the ende. 78 30′ [Long.] 69. [o′] [Lat.] Towarde the Eaſt, it is termined with this end and vnto the degree. 78 30′ 68 20′. Towarde the Weſt, with the line terminynge the Eaſt ſyde of Suecia: And towarde the Southe, with the reſidue of the goulfe of Suecia from th[e]ende that hath degrees. 63 [o′] 69. [o′]

Oſtrobothnia, towarde the Eaſt is termined from the ſaid ende of the moſt Eaſt coaſte. And towarde the South, with a line extended by the mountaynes frome this ende vnto the degree. 71 [o′] 66 [o′]

Towarde the north and weſte, with part of the goulfe of Suecia. etc.

GOTHIA OR GOTHLANDE.

276 Th[e]inuasions of the Gothes.

GOTHIA, is by interpretacion good. For the holye name of God, is in the Germayne toonge Goth (that is) Good. At what tyme the Gothes vppon a general conſent, ſent furth theyr offpryng or ſucceſſion to ſeeke newe ſeates or countreys to inhabite, and when they poſſeſſed the coaſtes of Meotis and Aſia, none of the owlde wryters haue made mention as farre as I knowe. But they haue byn knowen ſence the tyme that the Romanes dilated theyr Empyre by Illirium (nowe cauled Slauonie) vnto the ryuer of Danubius. And were alſo famous from the tyme of Ceſar Dictator and Octauianus Auguſtus by reaſon of theyr greate warres at Danubius beinge th[e]vttermoſt bounde of Th[e]empire. Neuertheleſſe, in that renoume, what Gothia was, vnder what parte of heauen it was ſituate, or of whom the Gothes toke theyr original, it hath byn vnknowen almoſt to this age. This is termined towarde the north, with the ſouth ende of Suecia: And towarde the weſte, with the other mountaynes of Norway, which continewe from the boundes of Suecia to the mouthes of the ryuers of Trolheta. etc.

The warres of the gothes ageynst the Romans.

The boundes of Gothland.

The citie of Visba.

It hath many goodly townes, cities, caſtels, mines. etc. The citie of Viſba, being in the degree. 61 30′ 54 15.′ was an ancient and famous marte towne as is Genua in Italie at this day. But afterwarde beinge afflicted by th[e]incurſions of the pirates of the Danes and Muſcouites, it was left deſolate. There remayne to this day certeyne ruines whiche teſtifie the ancient nobilitie. In this place were the fyrſte ſtacions of the Gothes that poſſeſſed Meotis. It is at this daye of frutfull ſoyle, and famous by many goodly and ſtronge caſtels and monaſteries. There is amonge other, a monaſterie of th[e]order of ſaynt Benedicte, in the which is a librarie of abowt two thouſande bookes of owlde autours.

Danes and Moscouites.

A librarie of two thousand bookés.

Abowt the yeare of Chriſt fourſcore and. viii. the Gothes, vnto whom reſorted a great multitude of other people of theſe northe partes of the worlde, as from Liuonia, Pruſia, Ruſſia and Tartaria with diuers other contreys, makynge them dyuers Kynges and capitaynes, dyd depopulate and brynge in ſubiection the more parte of Europe, inuaded Italie, deſtroyd Rome, inhabited that part of Italia now cauled Lumbardie, and lykewyſe ſubdued the roialmes of Caſtile and Aragonie. Theyr warres contynewed aboue three hundreth yeares.

The Gothes inuaded Europe and destroyd Rome.

¶ FINLAND, AND ENINGIA.

FInlandia, is as much to ſay as a fayre lande or fine land, ſo named for the fertilitie of the grownde. Plinie ſemeth to cal̃e it Finnonia. For he ſaith that abowte the coaſtes of Finlande, are many Ilandes withowt names. Of the which there lyeth one before Scithia cauled Pannonia. The goulfe cauled *Sinus Finnonicus*, is ſo named at this day of the lande of Finnonia. Finnonia confineth with Scithia, and runneth withowt all Tanais (that is to ſay) withowte the limetes of Europe to the confines or Aſia. But that the name of Finlande ſeemeth not to agree hereunto, the cauſe is that this place of Plinie is corrupted as are many other in this autour: So that from the name of Finnonia, or Phinnonia, it was a likely erroure to caule it Pannonia foraſmuch as theſe woordes doo not greately differ in wrytynge and ſounde: ſo that the counterfecte name was ſoone put in the place of the trew name by hym that knewe Pannonia and redde that name before, beinge alſo ignorant of Phinnonia.

Pannonia falsely taken for Finnonia.

Eningia had in owlde tyme the tytle of a kingedome, it is of ſuch largeneſſe. But hath nowe only the tytle of an inferiour gouernoure, beinge vnder the dominion of the Slauons and vſyng the ſame tonge. In religion, it obſerued the rites of the Greekes of late yeares, when it was vnder the gouernaunce of the Moſcouites. But it is at this preſent vnder the kynge of Suecia and obſerueth th[e]inſtitucions of the Occidentall church. Spanyſſhe wynes are browght thyther in great plentie which the people vſe merely and cherefully. It is termined on the north ſyde, by the ſouthe line of Oſtobothnia, and is extended by the mountaynes. Towarde the weſt, it is termined with the ſea of Finnonia accordyng to this deſcription: and hath degrees. 71. [0′ Long.] 66. [0′ Lat.] etc.

Eningia.

Spanyshe wynes.

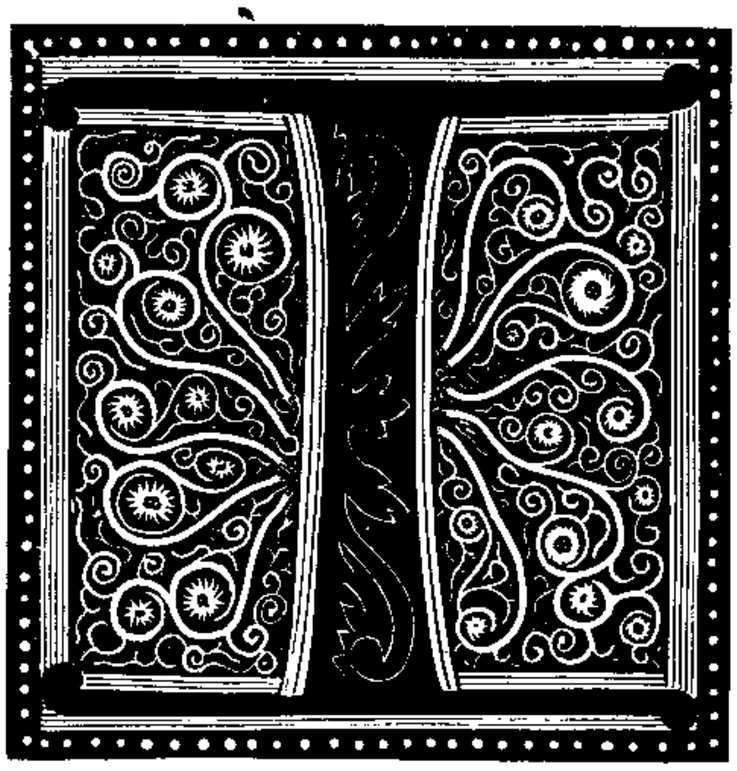
¶ OF THE DIFFERENCE OF REGIONS AND CAVSES OF GREATE CITIES, AFTER THE DESCRIPTION OF HIERONIMUS CARDANUS,

LIBER. XI. *de Subtilitate.*

Here is an other difference of regions cauſed of coulde and heate. For ſuche as are neare vnto the poles, are vexed with to much coulde: And ſuch as are vnder the line where the ſoonne is of greateſte force, are oppreſſed with heate. Such as are in the myddeſt betwene both, are neareſt vnto temperatneſſe. Vnder the pole, it is impoſſible that there ſhulde bee populous cities bycauſe the lande is baren, and 27
the cariage or conueyaunce of frutes, vyttayles, and other neceſſaries, is incommodious. By reaſon wherof, it is neceſſarie that th[e]inhabitauntes of ſuche regions lyue euer in continuall wanderynge from place to place, or els in ſmaule vyllages. Suche as inhabite temperate regions, haue meane cities, aſwell for that they haue more commodious conueyaunce for neceſſaries, as alſo that they may dwell better and more ſafely togyther then in vyllages by reaſon of fortifying theyr townes with walles, and exerciſynge of artes and occupations whereby the one maye the better helpe the other. Yet that owlde Rome (beinge in a temperate region) was of ſuch incredible byggeneſſe, the cauſe was that it obteyned Th[e]empire of the worlde, by reaſon wherof, all nations had confluence thyther, and not the greatneſſe of the walles. But it is neceſſarie that the greateſt cities bee in hotte regions: fyrſte, for that in ſuch regions, parte of the ſoile is eyther barren yf it lacke water, or els moſt frutefull if it abounde with water. And for this inequalitie, when they fynde any place meete to ſuſteyne a multitude, it foloweth of neceſſitie that greate cities bee buylded in ſuch places by reaſon of great concourſe of people reſortynge to the ſame. An other greate cauſe is, that wheras in such regions, marchauntes come very farre to ſuch commodious places, they paſſe through many deſerte and perelous regions: So that it ſhalbe neceſſary for theyr better ſecuritie, to coome in great companies as it were great armies. And therfore whereas ſuch a ſocietie is once knytte togyther in a commodious place, it ſhulde bee great hinderance aſwell to th[e]inhabitantes as to marchauntes if they ſhulde wander in incommodious places. And by this confluence, both of ſuche as dwell neare to ſuche places, and alſo of ſtraungers and ſuch as dwell farre of, it is neceſſarie that in continuance of tyme, ſmaule townes becoome great cities, as are theſe: Quinſai, Singui, Cambalu, Memphis, Cairus, or Alcair, otherwiſe cauled Babilon in Egipte. But if here any wyll obiecte Conſtantinople (in owlde tyme cauled Bizantium) being in a temperate region, althowgh it bee not to bee compared to ſuch cities as are more then. lx. [ſixty] myles in circuite, yet doo we aunſwere hereunto, that the Turkes Empire is the cauſe of the greatneſſe hereof, as wee ſayde before of Rome.

¶ THE HISTORIE WRITTEN IN THE LATIN TOONGE BY PAVLVS IOVIVS BYSSHOPPE OF NVCERIA IN ITALIE, OF THE LEGATION OR AMBASSADE OF GREATE Baſilius Prince of Moſcouia, to pope Clement the. vñ. of that name: In which is conteyned the deſcription of Moſcouia with the regions confininge abowte the fame euen vnto the great and ryche Empire of Cathay.

Demetrius the ambassadour of Moscouia.



Intende fyrſte briefely to deſcribe the ſituation of the region which we plainely ſee to haue bin little knowen to Strabo and Ptolome, and then to procede in rehearſinge the maners, cuſtomes and religion of the people. And this in maner in the lyke ſimple ſtyle and phraſe of ſpeache as the same was declared vnto vs by Demetrius the ambaſſadoure, a man not ignoraunt in the Latin toonge, as from his youth browght vp in Liuonia, where he learned the fyrſt rudimentes of letters. And beinge growne to mans age, executed th[e]office of an ambaſſadour into dyuers Chriſtian prouinces. For wheras by reaſon of his approued faithfulneſſe and induſtrie, he had before byn ſent as oratoure to the kynges of Suecia and Denmarke, and the great maſter of Pruſſia, he was at the laſt ſente to Th[e]emperoure Maximilian, in whoſe courte (beinge replenyſſhed with all ſortes of menne) whyle he was conuerſant, yf any thyng of barbarous maners yet remayned in ſo docible and quiet a nature, the ſame was put away by framynge hym ſelfe to better ciuilitie. The cauſe of his legacie or ambaſſade, was gyuen by Paulus Centurio a Genueſe, who when he had receaued letters commendatori of pope Leo the tenth, and came to Moſcouia for the trade of marchaundies, of his owne mynde conferred with the familiers of Duke Baſilius as touchynge the conformation of the rites of both churches. He furthermore of great magnanimitie and in maner owtragious deſire, ſowght howe by a newe and incredible viage, ſpices myght bee browght from India. For whyle before he had exerciſed the trade of marchaundies in Syria, Egypte, and Pontus, he knewe by fame that ſpices myght bee conueighed from the further India vp the riuer Indus ageynſt the courſe of the ſame, and from thence by a ſmal vyage by lande paſſinge ouer the mountaynes of Paropaniſus, to bee caried to the riuer Oxus in Bactria, which hauing his original almoſt from the ſame mountaynes frome whenſe Indus dooth ſpringe, and violently caryinge with it manye other ryuers, fauleth into the ſea Hircanum or Caſpium at the porte cauled Straua. And he erneſtly affirmed that frome Straua, is an eaſy and ſafe nauigation vnto the marte towne of Citrachan or Aſtrachan and the mouth of the ryuer Volga and from thenſe euer ageynſt the courſe of the ryuers, as Volga, Occha, and Moſcho, vnto the citie Moſcha, and frome thence by lande to Riga and into the ſea of Sarmatia and all the weſt regions. For he was vehemently and more then of equitie accenſed and prouoked by the iniuries of the Portugales, who hauynge by force of armes ſubdued a great parte of India, and poſſeſſed all the marte townes, takynge holy into theyr handes all the trade of ſpices to brynge the ſame into Spayne, and neuertheleſſe to ſell them at a more greuous and intollerable price to the people of Europe then euer was hard of before: And furthermore kepte the coaſtes of the Indian ſea ſo ſtraightly with continuall nauies, that thoſe trades are thereby leſte of, which were before exerciſed by the goulfe of Perſia and towarde the ryuer of Euphrates, and alſo by the

Paulus Centurio.

Spices browght from India to Moscouia.

The ryuer Indus.

278

Oxus or Horina a ryuer of Asia runneth through the desertes of Sythia.

The sea Hircanum, is now cauled mare Abacuk or mare de Sala.

Citrachan or Astracan.

Sarmatia is that greate countrey wherein is conteyned Russia Liuonia and Tartaria, and the north and East part of Polonia.

Ageynst the Portugales.

ſtreightes of the ſea of Arabia and the ryuer Nilus, and in fine by owre ſea: by which trade all Aſia and Europe was abundantly ſatiffied and better cheape then hathe byn ſence the Portugales had the trade in theyr handes with ſo manye incommodities of ſuch longe viages wherby the ſpices are ſo corrupted by th[e]infection of the poompe and other fylthyneſſe of the ſhippes, that theyr naturall ſauour, taſte, and qualitie aſwell hereby as by theyr longe reſeruyng in the ſhoppes, ſellers, and warehouſes in Luſſheburne, vanyſſheth and reſolueth, ſo that reſeruynge euer the freſſheſt and neweſte, they ſel only the woorſt and moſt corrupted. But Faulus, although in all places he erneſtly and vehemently argued of theſe thinges, and ſtyrred great malice and hatred ageynſt the Portugales, affirmynge that not only therby the cuſtomes and reuenewes of princes ſhulde bee much greater if that vyage might bee diſcouered, but alſo that ſpices myght bee better cheepe bowght at the handes of the Moſcouites, yet coulde he nothinge auayle in this ſute, foraſmuche as Duke Baſilius thowght it not good to make open or diſcloſe vnto a ſtraunger and vnknowne man, thoſe regions which giue enterance to the ſea Caſpium and the kyngedomes of Perſia. Paulus therfore excludynge all hope of further trauayle, and become nowe of a marchaunte an Ambaſſadoure, browght Baſilius letters (pope Leo beinge nowe departed) to Adriane his ſucceſſoure, in the whiche he declared with honorable and reuerende woordes his good wyll and fauorable mynde towarde the byſſhop of Rome. For a fewe years before, Baſilius (then keepynge warres ageynſte the Polones at ſuche tyme as the generall counſayle was celebrate at Laterane) requyred by Iohn, kynge of Denmarke (the father of Chriſtierne who was of late expulſed from his kyngedome) that ſafe paſſage myght bee graunted to th[e]ambaſſadours of Moſcouia to go to Rome. But wheras it ſo chaunced, that kynge Iohn and pope Iulius dyed both in one day, wherby he lacked a conuenient ſequeſter or ſolicitoure, he omitted his conſultation as touchynge that legacie. After this, the warre waxed hot betwene him and Sigiſmunde the kynge of Polonie: who obteinynge the victorie ageinſt the Moſcouites at Boriſthene, ſupplications were decreed in Rome for the ouerthrowe and vanquyſſynge the enemies of the Chriſtian faithe, whiche thinge greatly alienated both kynge Baſilius him ſelfe and all that nation from the byſſhop of Rome. But when Adriane the. vi. departed from this lyfe, and lefte Paulus nowe redie to his ſeconde vyage, his ſucceſſour Clemente the. vii. perceauynge that Paulus ſtyll furiouſly reuolued and toſſed in his vnquiet mynde that vyage towarde the Eaſte, ſente hym ageyne with letters to Moſcouia, by the which with propenſe and frendly perſuaſions, he exhorted Baſilius to acknowleage the maieſtie of the Romane churche, and to make a perpetuall leage and agreement in matters of religion, which thynge ſhuld be not only for the health of his ſoule, but alſo greatly to th[e]increaſe of his honour: And further promyſed, that by the holy autoritie of his office he wolde make hym a kynge and gyue hym kyngely ornamentes, if reiectyng the doctrine of the Greekes, he wolde conforme hym ſelfe to th[e]autoritie of the Romane churche. For Baſilius deſyred the name and tytle of a kynge by th[e]aſſignation of the byſſhoppe of Rome, foraſmuch as he iudged that to apperteyne to the catholyke right and the byſſhoppes maieſtie, of whome (as he knewe ryght well) euen Th[e]emperours them ſelues by an auncient cuſtome haue receaued there inſignes of honoure with the Diademe and ſcepter of the Romane Empire: althowghe it is ſayde that he required the ſame of Th[e]emperour Maximiliane by many ambaſſades. Paulus therfore who with more proſperous iorneys then great vantage, had from his youth trauayled a greate parte of the world, althowgh he were nowe aged and ſore vexed with the ſtrangurie, came with a proſperous and ſpedy iornay to Moſcouia, where he was gentely receaued of Baſilius, and remayned in his courte for the ſpace of twoo monethes. But in fine, miſtruſtynge his owne ſtrength, and deterred by the difficultie of ſo greate a iorneye, when he had vtterly put away all his imaginations and hope of this trade to India, returned to Rome with Demetrius th[e]ambaſſadour of Baſilius, before we yet thowght that he had byn in Moſcouia. The byſſhoppe commaunded that Demetrius ſhuld bee lodged in the moſt magnificent and princely part of the houſes of Vaticane, the rouffes of whoſe edifi[c]es are gylted and embowed, and the chambers rychly furnyſſhed with ſylken beddes and cloth of Arreſſe. Wyllynge furthermore that he ſhuld bee honorably receaued and veſtured with ſilke. He alſo aſſigned Franciscus Cheregatus the byſſhoppe of Aprutium (a man that had often tymes byn ambaſſadoure to diuers regyons) to accompanie hym and ſhewe hym th[e]order and rites of owre religion with the monumentes and maners of the citie. Furthermore, when Demetrius had certeyne dayes reſted and recreate him ſelfe, waſſhyng away the fylth he had gathered by reaſon of the longe vyage, then apparelled with a fayre veſture after the maner of his countrey, he was browght to the byſſhoppes preſence, whom he honoured kneelynge with great humilitie and reuerence (as is the maner) and therwith preſented vnto his holynes certeyne furres of Sables in his owne name and in the name of his prince, and alſo delyuered the letters of Baſilius, which they before, and then the Illyrian or Slauon interpretoure Nicolaus Siccenſis tranſlated into the Latine toonge in this effecte as foloweth.

To pope Clemente ſheparde and teacher of the Romane churche, greate Baſilius by the grace of God, lorde, Emperour and dominatour of al Ruſſia, and great duke of Volodemaria, Moſcouia, Nouogrodia, Pleſcouia, Smolenia, Ifferia, Iugoria, Permnia, Vetcha, Bolgaria etc. Dominator and great prince of Nouogrodia in the lower contrei: Alſo of Cernigouia, Razauia, Volotchia, Rezenia, Belchia, Roſtouia, Iaroſlauia, Belozeria,

The trade of spices in owld tyme.

Spices corrupted.

The Caspian sea.

Basilius wrot to Pope Adriane.

Warre betwene the Polones and Moscouites.

The seconde viage of Paulus to Moscouia.

The Pope persuadeth Basilius to acknowledge the Romane churche.

279

The Emperoures receaue there diademe of the bysshoppes of Rome.

Demetrius interteynement at Rome.

Demetrius is brought to the pôpes presence.

Basilius letters to Pope Clement.

Vdoria, Obdoria, and Condiuia. etc. Yow ſent vnto vs Paulus Centurio a citizen of Genua with letters wherby yowe do exhorte vs to ioine in poure and counſayle with yowe and other Princes of Chriſtendome ageynſt the enemies of the chriſtian faith: and that a free paſſage and redy way may bee opened for bothe yowre ambáſſadours and owres to coome and go to and fro, whereby by mutuall dewtie and indeuoure on both parties, we may haue knowleage of the ſtate of thinges perteynynge to the welth of vs both. Wee certes as we haue hetherto happely by the ayde and helpe of almyghty god conſtantly and erneſtly reſiſted the cruell and wycked enemies of the Chriſtian faithe, ſo are we determined to doo hereafter. And are likewiſe redy to conſente with other Chriſtian Princes, and to graunt free paſſage into owre dominions. In conſideration wherof, we haue ſente vnto yowe owre faithfull ſeruaunt Demetrius Eraſmus with theſe owre letters: and with hym haue remitted Paulus Centurio: deſyringe yowe alſo ſhortly to diſmiſſe Demetrius with ſafegarde and indemnitie vnto the borthers of owre dominions. And we wyl likewyſe doo the ſame if yowe ſende yowre ambaſſadoure with Demetrius, wherby both by communication and letters, wee may bee better certified of th[e]order and adminiſtration of ſuch thynges as yowe require: ſo that beinge aduertiſed of the mindes and intent of al other Chriſtian princes, we may alſo conſult what is beſt to be done herein. Thus fare ye wel. Giuen in owr dominion in owr citie of Moſcouia, in the yeare from the creation of the worlde, ſeuen thouſande and three hundreth, the thyrde day of Aprell.

But Demetrius, as he is experte in diuine and humane thynges, and eſpecially of holy ſcripture, ſeemed to haue ſecreate commaundement of greater matters whiche we thinke he wyll ſhortly declare to the ſenate in priuate conſultations. For he is nowe deliuered of the feuer into the whiche he fell by chaunge of ayer, and hath ſo recouered his ſtrengthe and natiue colour, that beinge a man of threeſcore yeares of age, he was not only preſente at the popes maſſe celebrated with great ſolemnitie in the honour of ſaynt Coſmus and Damian but came alſo into the Senate at ſuch tyme as Cardinal Campegius commynge fyrſt from the legacie of Pannonia, was receaued of the pope and all the nobilitie of the courte: And furthermore alſo vewed the temples of the holye citie with the ruines of the Romane magnificence, and with woonderynge eyes behelde the lamentable decay of the auncient buildinges So that we thinke that ſhortly after he hath declared his meſſage, he ſhall returne to Moſcouia with the byſſhop of Scarenſe the popes legate, not vnrecompenſed with iuſt rewards at the handes of his holyneſſe. 280

Cardinall Campegius.

The ruines of Rome.

The name of the Moſcouites is nowe newe, althowgh the poete Lucane maketh mention of the Moſchos confinynge with the Sarmatians, and Plinie alſo placeth the Moſchos at the ſprynges of the great ryuer of Phaſis in the region of Colchos aboue the ſea Euxinus towarde the Eaſt. Theyr region hath very large bounds, and is extended from the altars of great Alexander abowt the ſpringes of Tanais, to the extreme landes and north Ocean in maner vnder the Northe ſtarres cauled charles wayne or the greate beare, beinge for the moſt parte playne and of frutfull paſture, but in ſommer in many places full of mariſſhes. For whereas all that lande is replenyſſhed with many and great ryuers which are greatly increaſed by the winter ſnow and iſe reſolued by the heate of the ſoonne, the playnes and fyeldes are therby ouerflowen with mariſſhes, and all iorneys incumbered with continuall waters and myrie ſlabbyneſſe vntyl by the benefite of the new wynter the ryuers and mariſſhes bee froſen ageyne, and giue ſafe paſſage to the ſleades that are accuſtomed to iorney by the ſame. The woodde or foreſt of Hercynia (and not Hyrcania as is redde in ſum falſe copies) occupieth a great parte of Moſcouia, and is here and there inhabited, with houſes buylded therein and ſo made thinner by the longe labour of men that it dooth not nowe ſhewe that horrour of thicke and impenetrable woods and laundes as many thinke it to haue. But beinge replenyſſhed with many wylde beaſtes, is ſo farre extended through Moſcouia with a continual tracte betwene the Eaſt and the North towarde the Scythian Ocean, that by the infinite greatneſſe therof it hath deluded the hope of ſuch as haue curiouſly ſearched th[e]ende of the ſame. In that parte that reacheth towarde Pruſſia, are founde the greate and fierce beaſtes cauled Vri, or Biſontes, of the kynde of bulles: Alſo Alces lyke vnto hartes, whiche the Moſcouites caule Lozzi, and are cauled of the Germaynes Helenes. On the Eaſt ſyde of Moſcouia, are the Scythyans which are at this day cauled Tartars, a wanderinge nation, and at all ages famous in warres. In the ſtede of houſes they vſe wagons couered with beaſtes hydes, wherby they were in owlde tyme cauled Amaxouii. For cities and townes, they vſe greate tentes and pauilions, not defended with trenches or waules of tymber or ſtone, but incloſed with an innumerable multitude of archers on horſebacke. The Tartares are diuided by companies which they caule Hordas, which word in theyr toonge ſignifieth a conſentynge companye of people gathered togyther in forme of a citie. Euery Horda is gouerned by an Emperour whom eyther his parentage or warlyke prowes hath promoted to that dignitie. For they oftentimes keepe warre with theyr bortherers and contende ambicioufly and fiercely for dominion. It dooth hereby appeare that they conſiſte of innumerable Hordas, in that the Tartars poſſeſſe the moſt large defertes euen vnto the famous citie of Cathay in the furtheſt Ocean in the Eaſt They alſo that are neareſte to the Moſcouites, are knowen by theyr trade of marchaundies and often incurſions. In Europe nere vnto the place cauled Dremon Achillis in Taurica Cherſoneſo, are the Tartars cauled Precopites, the dowghter of whoſe prince,

The description of Moscouia.

The altares of great alexander.

Marisshes in sommer.

The forest of Hercynia.

Wyld beastes

The Scythian Ocean.

The beastes cauled Vri or Bisontes.

Helenes.

Of the Scythians and Tartars.

Amaxouii.

Horda.

The large dominion of the Tartars.

Cathay.

The Tartars of Europe.

Selymus Th[e]emperour of the Turkes tooke to wyfe. Theſe are moſt infeſt to the Polones, and waſt the regions on euery ſyde betwene the ryuers of Boriſthenes and Tanais. They that in the ſame Taurica poſſeſſe Caffam a colonie of the Ligurians (cauled in owlde tyme Theodoſia) doo bothe in religion and al other thynges agree with the Turkes. But the Tartars that inhabite regions of Aſia betwene Tanais and Volga, are ſubiecte to Baſilius the kynge of the Moſcouites, and chuſe them a gouernour at his aſſignement. Amonge theſe, the Cremii afflicted with ciuile ſeditions, where as heretofore they were riche and of great poure, haue of late yeares loſte theyr dominion and dignitie. The Tartars that are beyonde the ryuer of Volga, do religiouſly obſerue the frendſhip of the Moſcouites and profeſſe them ſelues to be their ſubiectes. Beyond the Caſſanites towarde the Northe, are the Sciambani, rich in heardes of cattaille and conſiſtyng of a great multitude of men. After theſe, are Nogai, whiche obteyne at this daye the chiefe fame of ryches and warlye affayres. Theyr Horda, althowgh it bee moſt ample, yet hath it no emperoure, but is gouerned by the wyſdome and vertue of the moſt ancient and valient men after the maner of the common wealthe of Venece. Beyonde the Nogais ſumwhat towarde the ſouth and the Caſpian ſea, the nobeleſt nation of the Tartars cauled Zagathai, inhabite townes buylded of ſtone, and haue an exceadynge greate and fayre citie cauled Samarcanda, which Iaxartes the greate ryuer of Sogdiana runneth through, and paſſinge from thenſe about a hundreth myles, falleth into the Caſpian ſea. With theſe people in owre dayes, Iſmael the Sophi and kynge of Perſia hathe often tymes kepte war with doubtfull ſucceſſe: In ſo muche that fearyng the greateneſſe of theyr poure which he reſyſted with all that he myght, he lefte Armenia and Tauriſium the chiefe citie of the kyngedome, for a pray to Selimus the vyctourer of one wynge of the battayle. From the citie of Samarcanda, deſcended Tamburlanes the myghty Emperoure of the Tartars whome ſum caule Tanberlanis. But Demetrius ſayth he ſhulde bee cauled Themircuthlu. Thys is he that abowte the yeare of Chryſte. M. CCC. lxxxxviiii. [1398, A.D.] ſubdued almoſt all the Eaſte partes of the worlde: And laſtly with an innumerable multytude of men inuaded the Turkes dominions, with whom Baiaſetes Ottomanus their kynge, (and father to the greate grandefather of this Solyman that nowe lyueth) metinge at Ancyra in the confines or marches of Galatia and Bythinia, gaue hym a ſore battaile, in the whiche felle on the Turkes parte. 20000. men, and Baiaſetes hym ſelfe was taken priſoner, whom Tamburlanes cauſed to bee locked in an iren cage and ſo caried hym abowte with hym throwgh all Aſia which he alſo conquered with a terrible army. He conquered al the landes betwene Tanais and Nilus, and in fine vanquiſſhed in battayle the great Soltane of Egypte, whom he chaſed beyonde Nilus, and tooke alſo the citie of Damaſcus.

Frome the region of theſe Tartars cauled Zagathei, is browght great plentie of ſilken apparel to the Moſcouites. But the Tartars that inhabite the midland or inner regions, bringe none other wares then truckes or droues of ſwyfte runnynge horſes and clokes made of whyte feltes: alſo hales or tentes to withſtonde th[e] iniuries of coulde and rayne. Theſe they make very artificially and apte for the purpoſe. They receaue agayne of the Moſcouites, coates of cloth, and ſyluer monye, conteynynge all other bodely ornamentes, and the furnyture of ſuperfluous houſolde ſtuffe. For beynge defended ageynſt the violence of wether and tempeſtes only with ſuche apparell and couerture whereof wee haue ſpoken, they truſt only to theyr arrowes which they ſhoote aſwell backwarde flyinge as when they aſſayle theyr enemies face to face: Albeit, when they determined to inuad Europ, theyr princes and capitaynes had helmetts, coates of fenſe, and hooked ſwoordes which they bought of the Perſians. Towarde the ſouthe, the boundes of Moſcouia are termined by the ſame Tartars which poſſeſſe the playn regyons nere vnto the Caſpian ſea aboue the maryſſhes of Meotis in Aſia, and aboute the ryuers of Boryſthenes and Tanais in parte of Europe. The people cauled Roxolani, Gete, and Baſtarne, inhabited theſe regions in oulde tyme, of whom I thynke the name of Ruſſia tooke originall. For they caule parte of Lituania, Ruſſia the lower, wheras Moſcouia it ſelfe, is cauled whyte Ruſſia. Lituania therfore, lyeth on the Northweſt ſyde of Moſcouia. But towarde the full weſt the mayne landes of Pruſſia and Liuonia are ioyned to the confines or marches of Moſcouia, where the Sarmatian ſea breakynge furth of the ſtreightes of Cimbrica Cherſoneſus (nowe cauled Denmarke) is bended with a crooked goulfe towarde the northe. But in the furtheſt bankes of that Ocean where the large kyngedomes of Norwaye and Suecia are ioyned to the continent and almoſte enuironed with the ſea, are the people cauled Lapones, A nation exceadynge rude, ſuſpicyous, and fearefull, flyinge and aſtonyſſhed at the ſyght of al ſtraungiers and ſhyppes. They knowe neyther frutes nor apples, nor yet any benignitie eyther of heauen or earth. They prouyde them meate onely with ſhootynge, and are appareled with the ſkynnes of wild beaſtes. They dwell in caues fylled with drye leaues, and in holow trees conſumed within eyther by fyre or rotten for age Suche as dwell neare the ſea ſyde, fyſſhe more luckyly then cunnyngly, and in the ſtead of frutes, reſerue in ſtore fyſſhes dryded with ſmoke. They are of ſmaule ſtature of body, with flatte viſagies, pale and wannye colcure, and very ſwyfte of foote. Their wittes or diſpoſitions, are not knowen to the Moſcouites theyr bortherers, who thynke it therfore a madneſſe to aſſayle them with a ſmaule poure, and iudge it neyther profitable nor glorious, with greate armies to inuade a poore and beggerly nation. They exchaunge the moſt whyte furres which wee caule Armelines for other wares of dyuers ſortes: Yet ſo, that they flie the ſyght and coompane of all marchauntes. For com-

The Tartars of Asia are subiecte to the Duke of Moscouia.

281

The Tartars beyonde the ryuer of Volga.

Nogai.

Sigismundus cauleth them Nagaysri.

The nobelest nation of the Tartars.

The ryuer of Iaxartes.

Ismael the Sophi, kynge of Persia.

The citie of Samarcanda.

Tamburlanes, the myghtie Emperour of the Tartars.

The conquestes of Tamburlanes.

Baiasetes.

This apparel they haue of the Persians.

The Tartars trafficke with the Moscouites.

The tartars of the South syde of Moscouia.

Geteand Roxolani.

Russia.

Moscouia cauled white Russia.

Lituania.

Prussia.

Liuonia.

Denmarke.

Norway.

Suecia.

The people of Laponia.

282

Armeline furres.

Bargeninge withowt wordes. The darke region by this darke region and the Pigmei, is the way to Cathay by the Northe sea.

parynge and layinge theyr wares together, and leauynge theyr furres in a mydde place, they bargeyne with ſimple fayth, with abſente and vnknowen men. Sum men of great credite and autoritie, doo teſtifie that in a region beyond the Lappones, betwene the weſt and the north oppreſſed with perpetuall darkenes, is the nation of the people cauled Pigmei, who beinge growen to theyr ful grought, doo ſcarſely excede the ſtature of owre chyldren of ten yeares of age. It is a ſearefull kynde of menne, and expreſſe theyr wordes in ſuch chatteryng ſort that they ſeeme to be ſo much the more lyke vnto apes, in howe muche they dyffer in ſence and ſtature from men of iuſt heyght.

The scythian Ocean.

Towarde the North, innumerable people are ſubiecte to th[e]empire of the Moſcouites. Theyr regions extende to the Scythian Ocean for the ſpace of almoſte three moonethes iorney.

The region of colmogora. The ryuer of diuidna.

Next vnto Moſcouia, is the region of Colmogora, aboundyng with frutes. Through this runneth the ryuer of Diuidna beinge one of the greateſte that is knowen in the Northe partes, and gaue the name to an other leſſe ryuer which breaketh furthe into the ſea Baltheum. This increaſynge at certeyne tymes of the yeare as dooth the ryuer Nilus, ouerfloweth the fyeldes and playnes, and with his fat and nuriſhinge moyſture, dooth maruelouſly reſiſt the iniuries of heauen and the ſharpe blaſtes of the North wynde. When it ryſeth by reaſon of molten ſnowe and greate ſhoures of rayne, it fauleth into the Ocean by vnknowen nations, and with ſo large a trenche lyke vnto a greate ſea, that it can not bee ſayled ouer in one day with a proſperous wynde. But when the waters are faulen, they leaue here and there large and frutful Ilandes. For corne there caſt on the grounde, groweth without any helpe of the plowe, and with maruelous celeritie of haſtynge nature fearynge the newe iniurie of the proude ryuer, dooth both ſprynge and rype in ſhort ſpace.

The ryuer of Iuga or Iug. Vstiuga.

Into the ryuer Diuidna, runneth the ryuer Iuga: And in the corner where they ioyne togyther, is the famous marte towne cauled Vſtiuga diſtant from the chiefe citie Moſca. vi. hundreth myles.

The ryuer of Diuidna or Dwina.

Note that wheras Paulus Iouius wryteth here that the ryuer of Diuidna, otherwyse cauled Dwina, runneth throughe the region of Colmogor, it is to bee vnderſtode that there are twoo ryuers of that name, the one on the Northeaſt ſyde of Moſcouia towarde the froſen ſea, and the other on the ſouthweſt ſyde faulyng into the ſea Baltheum, or the goulfe of Finnonia by the citie of Riga in Liuonia. And foraſmuch as the trewe knowleage of theſe and certeine other is very neceſſary for all ſuch as ſhall trade into Moſcouia or other regions in thoſe coaſtes by the northe ſea, I haue thought good to make further declaration hereof as I haue founde in the hyſtorie of Moſcouia, moſt faythfully and largely wrytten by Sigiſmundus Liberus who was twyſe ſent ambaſſadour into Moſcouia, as fyrſt by Maximilian Th[e]emperour, and then ageyne by Ferdinando kyng of Hungary and Boheme. This haue I doone the rather, for that in all the mappes that I haue ſeene of Moſcouia, there is no mention made of the ryuer of Dwina that runneth through the region of Colmogor and by the citie of the ſame name, although the prouynce of Dwina bee in all cardes placed Northewarde frome the ryuer of Vſtiug or Succana, whiche is the ſame Dwina whereof we nowe ſpeake, and wherof Paulus Iouius wryteth, although it bee not ſo named but from the angle or corner where ioynynge with the ryuer of Iug and Suchana, it runneth Northewarde towarde the citie of Colmogor, and from thence fauleth into the north or froſen ſea, as ſhall hereafter more playnly appeare by the woordes of Sigiſmundus, that the one of theſe bee not taken for the other being ſo farre diſtant that great errour myght enſue by miſtakynge the ſame, eſpecially bicauſe this wherof Paulus Iouius wryteth is uot by name expreſſed in the cardes, but only the other, wherby the errour myght bee the greater. Of that therfore that runneth by the confines of Liuonia and the citie of Riga, Sigiſmundus wryteth in this maner.

The lake of Dwina, is diſtante from the ſprynges of Boriſthenes, almoſt tenne myles, and as many from the maryſſhe of Fronowo. From it, a ryuer of the ſame name towarde the weſt, diſtante from Vuilna. xx. [twenty] myles, runneth from thence towarde the Northe, where by Riga the chiefe citie of Liuonia, it faulethe into the Germayne ſea which the Moſcouites caule Vuareczkote morie. It runneth by Vuitepſko, Polotzko, and Dunenburg, and not by Pleſcouia as one hath wrytten. This ryuer beinge for the moſte part nauigable, the Lyuons caule Duna.

283

Dwina and Suchana.

Of the other Dwina wherof Paulus Iouius ſpeaketh, he wryteth as foloweth.

Gronland or Engronland.

The prouince of Dwina and the ryuer of the ſame name, is ſo named from the place where the ryuers of Suchana and Iug meatynge togyther, make one ryuer ſo cauled. For Dwina in the Moſcouites tounge, ſignifieth two. This ryuer by the courſe of a hundred myles, entereth into the North Ocean on that part where the ſayde ſea runneth by the coaſtes of Swecia and Norwaye, and diuidethe Engronlande from the vnknowen lande. This prouince ſituate in the ful north, perteined in tyme paſt to the ſegniorie of Nouogorode. From Moſcouia to the mouthes of Dwina, are numbered. CCC. [three hundred] myles: Albeit as I haue ſayde, in the regions that are beyond Volga, the accompte of the iorney can not bee well obſerued by reaſon of many maryſſhes, ryuers, and very greate wooddes that lye in the way. Yet are we led by coniecture to thinke it to bee ſcarſely twoo hundreth myles: foraſmuch as from Moſcouia to Vuolochda, from Vuolochda to Vſtyug ſumwhat into the Eaſte: and laſte of all frome Vſtyug by the ryuer Dwina, is the ryght paſſage to the northe ſea. This region, beſyde the caſtel of Colmogor and citie of Dwina, ſituate almoſt in the mydde way betwene the ſpryngs and mouthes of the ryuer, and the caſtell of Pienega ſtandynge in the very mouthes of Dwina, is vtterly withowt townes and caſtels: yet hath it many vyllages whiche are farre in ſunder by reaſon of the barenneſſe of the ſoyle. etc.

Vnderstand myles of Germany, that is leaques.

In an other place he wryteth, that Suchana and Iug, after they are ioyned togyther in one, looſe theyr fyrſte names and make the ryuer Dwina. etc. But lette vs nowe returne to the hyſtorie of Paulus Iouius.

The ryuer Suchana.

The frosen sea.

Rych furres. Lupi Ceruarii.

Sables.

Vnto Vſtiuga, from the Permians, Pecerrians, Inugrians, Vgolicans, and Pinnegians, people inhabytynge the north and northeaſt prouinces, are brought the precious furres of Marterns and Sables: Alſo the caſes of woulfes and foxes both whyte and blacke: And lykewyſe the ſkynnes of the beaſtes cauled Ceruarii Lupi (that is) harte woolfes, beinge engendered eyther of a woolfe and a hynde, or a harte and a bytch woolfe. Theſe furres and ſkyns, they exchange for dyuers other wares. The beſt kynde of ſables and of the fineſt heare wherwith nowe the veſtures of princes are lyned, and the tender neckes of delicate dames are couered with the

expreſſe ſimilitude of the lyuynge beaſte, are brought by the Permians and Pecerrians, whiche they them ſelues alſo receaue at the handes of other that inhabite the regions neare vnto the north Ocean. The Permians and Pecerrians, a lyttle before owre tyme, dyd ſacrifice to Idols after the maner of the Gentyles: but doo nowe acknowleage Chryſte theyr God. The paſſage to the Inugrians, and Vgolicans, is by certeyne rowgh mountaynes, which perhappes are they that in owlde tyme were cauled Hyperborei. In the toppes of theſe, are founde the beſte kyndes of Falcons: whereof one kynde (cauled Herodium) is whyte with ſpotted fethers. There are alſo ierfalcons, ſakers, and peregrines, whiche were vnknowen to the ancient princes in theyr exceſſiue and niſe pleaſures.

The mountaines cauled Hiperborei

Haukes of diuers kyndes.

Beyonde thoſe people whom I laſt named (beinge all tributaries to the kinges of Moſcouia) are other nations the laſt of men, not knowen by any viages of the Moſcouites, foraſmuche as none of theym haue paſſed to the Ocean, and are therefore knowen onely by the fabulous narrations of marchauntes. Yet is it apparente that the ryuer of Diuidna or Dwina, drawynge with it innumerable other ryuers, runneth with a vehement courſe towarde the northe: and that the ſea is there exceadyng large: ſo that ſaylyng by the coaſt of the ryght hande, ſhippes may haue paſſage from thenſe to Cathay as is thought by moſt lykely coniecture, excepte there lye ſum lande in the waye. For the region of Cathay perteyneth to th[e]extreme and furtheſte partes of the Eaſte, ſituate almoſt in the paralell of Thracia, and knowen to the Portugales in India when they ſayled neare thereunto by the regions of Sinara and Malacha to Aurea Cherſoneſus, and brought from thenſe certeyne veſtures made of Sables ſkynnes, by which only argument it is apparente that the citie of Cathay is not farre from the coaſtes of Scythia.

The passage from Moscouia to cathay.

Cathay.

Master Eliot cauleth Cathay the region of sinarum.

But when Demetrius was demaunded whether eyther by the monumentes of letters or by fame lefte theym of theyr prediceſſours, they hadde any knowleage of the gothes who nowe more then a thouſand yeares ſence ſubuerted Th[e]empire of the Romane Emperours, and defaced the citie of Rome, he anſwered, that both the nation of the Gothes of the name of kynge Totilas theyr chiefe capitayne, was of famous memorie amonge them: And that dyuers nations of the north regions conſpired to that expedition, and eſpeciallye the Moſcouites: Alſo that that armie increaſed of the confluence of the Barbarous Liuons and wanderynge Tartars: But that they were all cauled Gothes foraſmuch as the Gothes that inhabited Scondania and Iſelande, were the auctoures of that inuaſion.

The Gothes subuerted the Romane Empire.

The north regions conspired ageinst the Romans.

Moscouia

And with theſe boundes are the Moſcouites incloſed on euery ſide, whom we thinke to be thoſe people that Ptolome cauled Modocas: but haue doubteleſſe at this day their name of the riuer Moſco whiche runneth through the chiefe citie Moſca named alſo after the ſame. This is the moſt famous citie in Moſcouia, aſwell for the ſituation thereof beinge in maner in the myddeſt of the region, as alſo for the commodious oportunitie of ryuers, multitude of houſes, and ſtronge fenſe of ſo fayre and goodly a caſtell. For the citie is extended with a longe tracte of buyldynges by the bankes of the ryuer for the ſpace of fyue myles. The houſes are made all of tymber, and are diuided into parlers, chambers, and kichins of large roomes: yet neyther of vnſeemely height or to lowe, but of decent meaſure and proportion. For they haue greate trees apte for the purpoſe browght from the foreſte of Hercinia? of the which, made perfectly rounde like the maſtes of ſhippes, and ſo layde one vppon an other that they ioyne at the endes in right angles, where being made very faſte and ſure, they frame theyr houſes thereof of maruelous ſtrength with ſmaule charges and in verye ſhort tyme. In maner all the houſes haue priuate gardens aſwell for pleaſure as commoditie of herbes, wherby the circuite of the diſperſed citie appeareth very greate. All the wardes or quarters of the citie, haue theire peculiar chappels. But in the chiefeſt and higheſt place therof, is the Church of owre ladi of ample and goodly workemanſhyppe, whiche Ariſtoteles of Bononie, a man of ſingular knowleadge and experience in architecture, buylded more then. lx. [ſixty] yeares ſence. At the very head of the citie, a little ryuer cauled Neglina which dryueth many corne mylles, entereth into the ryuer Moſcus, and maketh almoſt an Iland, in whoſe end is the caſtell with many ſtrong towrs and bullwarkes, buylded very fayre by the diuiſe of Italien architecturs that are the maſters of the kinges workes. In the fieldes abowt the citie, is an incredible multitud of hares and roe buckes, the which it is lawefull for no man to chaſe or perſue with dogges or nettes excepte only certeyne of the kinges familiars and ſtraunge ambaſſadours to whom he giueth licence by ſpeciall commaundement. Almoſt three partes of the citie is inuironed with two ryuers, and the reſydue with a large mote that receaueth plentie of water frome the ſayde ryuers. The citie is alſo defended on the other ſyde with an other ryuer named Iauſa, whiche fauleth alſo into Moſcus a little beneath the citie. Furthermore Moſcus runnyng towarde the South, fauleth into the ryuer Ocha or Occa muche greater then it ſelfe at the towne Columna, and not very farre from thenſe Ocha it ſelfe increaſed with other riuers, vnladeth his ſtreames in the famous riuer Volgo, wher at the place where they ioyne, is ſituate the citie of Nouogrodia the leſſe, ſo named in reſpecte of the greater citie of that name from whenſe was browght the firſte colonie of the leſſe citie. Volga cauled in owlde tyme Rha, hath his originall of the greate maryſſhes named the white lakes. Theſe are aboue Moſcouia betwene the Northe and the Weſt, and ſende furthe from them almoſt all the ryuers that are diſperſed

284

The citie of Mosca.

Richard chaunceler toulde me that these mastes are sumwhat holowe on the one syde, and that the hole syde of the next entereth into the same wherby they lye very close.

The castel of Mosca.

White hares and roe buckes.

The ryuer Ocha.

Volga.

Nouogrodia.

Rha.

The whyte lakes.

into dyuers regions on euery ſyde, as wee ſee of the Alpes from whoſe toppes and ſprynges deſcend the waters of whoſe concourſe the ryuers of Rhene, Po, and Rodanum, haue theyr increaſe. For theſe maryſſhes in the ſteade of mountaynes ful of ſprynges, miniſter abundant moyſture, foraſmuch as no mountaynes are yet founde in that region by the longe trauayles of men, in ſo much that manye that haue byn ſtudious of the owlde Coſmographie, ſuppoſe the Ryphean and Hyperborean mountaynes ſo often mentioned of the ancient writers, to bee fabulous. From theſe maryſſhes therfore, the ryuers of Dwina, Ocha, Moſchus, Volga, Tanais, and Boryſthenes, haue theyr originall. The Tartars caule Volga Edel: Tanais they caule Don: And Boryſthenes is at this day cauled Neper. This, a lyttle beneathe Taurica, runneth into the ſea Euxinus. Tanais is receaued of the maryſſhes of Meotis at the noble marte towne Azoum. But Volga leauynge the citie of Moſcha towarde the ſouth, and runnynge with a large circuite and greate wyndynges and creekes firſt towarde the Eaſte, then to the Weſt, and laſtly to the ſouth, fauleth with a full ſtreame into the Caſpian or Hyrcan ſea. Aboue the mouth of this, is a citie of the Tartars cauled Cytrachan, which ſum caule Aſtrachan, where martes are kepte by the marchauntes of Media, Armenia, and Perſia. On the further banke of Volga, there is a towne of the Tartars cauled Caſan, of the which the Horda of the Caſanite Tartars tooke theyr name. It is diſtante from the mouth of Volga and the Caſpian ſea fyue hundreth myles. Aboue Caſan. Cl. [one hundred and fifty] myles at the enteraunce of the ryuer Sura, Baſilius that now reigneth, buylded a towne cauled Surcium, to th[e]intente that in thoſe deſertes, the marchauntes and trauailers which certifie the gouernours of the marches of the doinges of the Tartars and the maners of that vnquiet nation, may have a ſafe manſion amonge theyr cuſtomers.

The Ryphean and hyperborean mountaynes.

Tanais and Boristhenes.

The sea Euxinus.

The Caspian sea.

Astrachan.

Media.

Armenia.

Persia.

Casan.

285

Sura.

Surcium.

Th[e]emperours of Moſcouia at dyuers tymes, eyther moued therto by occaſion of thynges preſente, or for the deſyre they had to nobilitate newe and obſcure places, haue kepte the ſeate of theyr courte and Empire in dyuers cities. For Nouogrodia whiche lyeth towarde the Weſte and the Lyuon ſea, not many yeares paſte, was the headde citie of Moſcouia, and obteyned euer the chiefe dignitie by reaſon of the incredible number of houſes and edifi[c]es, with the oportunitie of the large lake replenyſſhed with fyſſhe, and alſo for the fame of the moſte auncient and venerable temple whiche more then foure hundreth yeres ſence was dedicated to Sancta Sophia Chryſte the ſoonne of God, accordynge to the cuſtome of the Emprours of Bizantium nowe cauled Conſtantinople. Nouogrodia is oppreſſed in maner with continuall wynter and darkeneſſe of longe nyghtes. For it hath the pole Artike eleuate aboue the Horizon threeſcore and foure degrees: and is further from the Equinoctiall then Moſcouia by almoſte. vi. degrees. By whiche dyfference of heauen, it is ſayde that at the ſommer ſteye of the ſoonne, it is burnte with continuall heate by reaſon of the ſhorte nyghtes.

Nouogrodia.

The temple of Sancta Sophia.

The eleuation of the pole at Nouogrodia and Moscouia.

Heate by reason of short nyghtes.

The citie alſo of Volodemaria, beinge more then twoo hundreth myles diſtant from Moſca towarde the Eaſte, had the name of the chiefe citie and kynges towne, whyther the ſeate of Th[e]empire was tranſlated by the valiant Emperours for neceſſarie conſiderations, that ſuch ayde, furniture, and requiſites as apperteyne to the warres myght bee neare at hande at ſuche tyme as they kepte continuall warre ageynſte the Tartars theyr bortherers. For it is ſituate withowt Volga, on the bankes of the ryuer Cleſma, whiche fauleth into Volga. But Moſcha, aſwell for thoſe gyftes and commodities whereof we haue ſpoken, as alſo that it is ſituate in the myddeſt of the moſt frequented place of all the region and Empire, and defended with the ryuer and Caſtel, hath in comparyſon to other cities byn thowght moſte woorthy to bee eſteemed for the chiefe. Moſcha is diſtant from Nouogrodia fiue hundreth myles: and almoſt in the mydde way is the citie of Ottoferia (otherwyſe cauled Otwer or Tuwer) vppon the ryuer of Volga. This ryuer neare vnto the fountaynes and ſpringes of the ſame, not yet increaſed by receauyng ſo many other ryuers, runneth but ſlowely and gentelly: And paſſeth from thenſe to Nouogrodia through many wooddes and deſolate playnes. Furthermore frome Nouogrodia to Riga the nexte porte of the Sarmatian ſea, is the iornay of a thouſand myles lyttle more or leſſe. This tracte is thought to bee more commodious then the other, bycauſe it hath manye townes and the citie of Pleſcouia in the waye, beinge imbraſed with two ryuers. From Riga (perteynynge to the dominion of the greate maſter of the warres of the Liuons) to the citie of Lubecke a porte of Germanie in the goulfe of Cymbrica Cherſoneſus (nowe cauled Denmarke) are numbered aboute a thouſande myles of daungerous ſaylynge.

The citie of Volodemaria.

The citie of Moscha.

Ottoferia.

Volga.

Riga.

The citie of Pleſcouia.

The citie of Lubeke.

From Rome to the citie of Moſcha, the diſtance is knowen to bee two thouſande and ſyxe hundreth miles by the neareſt way paſſynge by Rauenna, Taruiſium, the Alpes of Carnica: Alſo Villacum, Noricum, and Vienna of Pannonie: and from thenſe (paſſynge ouer the ryuer of Danubius) to Olmutium of the Marouians and to Cracouia the chiefe citie of Polonie, are coumpted. xi. hundreth myles. From Cracouia to Vilna the headde citie of Lithuania, are coumpted fiue hundreth myles: and as many from that citie to Smolenzko ſituate beyonde Boryſthenes, from whenſe to Moſcha are coumpted ſyxe hundreth myles. The iorney frome Vilna by Smolenzko to Moſcha, is trauayled in wynter with expedite ſleades and incredible celeritie vppon the ſnowes hardened with longe froſte and compacte lyke Iſe by reaſon of muche wearynge. But in ſoommer, the playnes can not bee ouerpaſſed but by difficulte and laborious trauayle. For when the ſnowes by the continuall heate of the ſoonne begyn to melte and diſſolue, they cauſe great maryſſhes and quamyres able to intangle bothe horſe

From Rome to the citie of Moscouia.

Wynter trauayle by ise and snowe.

Marysshes in sommer.

and man, were it not that wayes are made throwgh the ſame with brydges and cauſeys of wood, and almoſt infinite laboure.

In all the region of Moſcouia, there is no vayne or mine of golde or ſyluer, or any other common metall excepte iren: neyther yet is there any token of precious ſtones. And therefore they bye all thoſe thynges of ſtraungers. Neuertheleſſe, this iniurie of nature is recompenſed with abundaunce of rich furres, whoſe price by the wanton niceneſſe of men is growne to ſuch exceſſe that the furres perteynynge to one ſorte of apparell, are nowe ſoulde for a thouſande crownes. But the tyme hath byn that theſe haue byn bought better chepe when the furtheſt nations of the north beinge ignorant of owr nyſe fineneſſe and breathyng deſyre toward effeminate and ſuperfluous pleaſures, exchanged the ſame with muche ſimplicitie oſten tymes for tryfles and thynges of ſmaule value: In ſo muche that commonly the Permians and Pecerrians, were accuſtomed to gyue ſo many ſkynnes of Sables for an Iren axe or hatchet as beinge tyed harde togyther, the marchauntes of Moſcouia coulde drawe through the hole where the haſte or handyll entereth into the ſame. But the Moſcouites ſende into all partes of Europe the beſt kynde of flaxe to make lynnen clothe, and hempe for ropes: Alſo many oxe hydes, and exceadynge great maſſes of waxe.

Other wryters deny this.

286

Riche furres.

The price of furres.

How many sables skynnes for an axe.

Flax.
Oxe hydes.
Waxe.

They proudely denye that the Romane churche obteyneth the principate and preeminent autoſitie of all other.

They ſo abhorre the nation of the Iewes, that they deteſt the memorie of them, and wyll in no condition admitte them to dwell within theyr dominions: eſteemyng them as wycked and miſcheuous people that haue of late tawght the Turkes to make gunnes. Beſyde the bookes that they haue of the ancient Greeke doctours, they haue alſo the commentaries and homelies of ſaynt Ambroſe, Auguſtine, Ierome, and Gregorie, tranſlated into the Illirian or Slauon tounge which agreeth with theyrs. For they vſe bothe the Slauon tounge and letters, as doo alſo the Sclauons, Dalmates, Bohemes, Pollones, and Lithuanes. This tounge is ſpredde further then any other at this day. For it is familyar at Conſtantinople in the courte of the Emperours of the Turkes: and was of late harde in Egypte amonge the Mamalukes in the courte of the Soltane of Alcayre otherwyſe cauled Memphis or Babilon in Egipte. A greate number of bookes of holy ſcripture are tranſlated into this tounge by th[e]induſtrie of ſaynte Ierome and Cyrillus. Furthermore, beſyde the hyſtories of theyr owne countreys, they haue alſo bookes conteynyng the factes of great Alexander and the Romane Emperours, and lykewyſe of Marcus Antonius and Cleopatra. They haue no maner of knowleage of philoſophie, Aſtronomie, or ſpeculatiue phiſicke with other liberall ſciences: But ſuch are taken for phiſitians as profeſſe that they haue often times obſerued the vertue and qualitie of ſum vnknowen herbe.

Thei abhorre the Iewes.

Their bokes and religion.

The Sclauon tounge spred further then any other.

Saynte Ierome was borne in Dalmatia nowe cauled Sclauonia.

They number the yeares, not from the byrth of Chryſte, but from the begynnynge of the worlde. And this they begin to accoumpte, not frome the monethe of Ianuary, but from September.

They haue fewe and ſimple lawes throwghe owte all the kyngedome, made by the equite and conſcience of theyr princes, and approued by the conſent of wyſe and good men: and are therfore greatly for the welthe and quyetneſſe of the people foraſmuch as it is not lawfull to peruerte them with any interpretations or cauillations of lawyers or atturneys. They punyſhe theues, rouers, priuie pyckers, and murtherers. When they examine malefactours, they poure a great quantitie of coulde water vppon ſuche as they ſuſpecte, whiche they ſay to bee an intollerable kynde of tormente. But ſumtymes they manacle ſuche as are ſtoborne, and wyll not confeſſe apparent crymes.

Howe they number the yeares.

Fewe and simple lawes

Theyr youth is exerciſed in dyuers kyndes of games and plays reſembelyng the warres, wherby they both practiſe pollicie and increaſe theyr ſtrength. They vſe runnynge both on horſebacke and afoote. Alſo runnynge at the tylte, wreſtelynge, and eſpecially ſhootynge. For they gyue rewardes to ſuche as excell therin.

The exercise of youth.

Shootynge.

The Moſcouites are vniuerſally of meane ſtature, yet very ſquare ſet and myghtyly brawned. They haue al grey eyes, longe beardes, ſhorte legges, and bygge bellyes. They ryde very ſhorte, and ſhoote backewarde very cunnyngely euen as they flye. At home in theyr houſes, theyr fare is rather plentifull then deyntie. For theyr tables are furnyſſhed for a ſmaule price with all ſuche kyndes of meates as may bee deſyred of ſuch as are gyuen to moſt exceſſiue gluttony. Hennes and duckes are bought for lyttle ſyluer penſe the piece. There is incredible plentie of beaſtes and cattayle bothe greate and ſmaule. The fleſſhe of biefe that is kylled in the myydeſt of wynter, is ſo congeled and froſen, that it putrifiethe not for the ſpace of two moonethes. Theyr beſte and moſte delicate dyſſhes, are gotten by huntynge and haukynge as with vs. For they take all ſortes of wylde beaſtes with houndes and dyuers kyndes of nettes. And with falcons and erens or eagles of a marueylous kynde whiche the region of Pecerra bryngeth furth vnto them, they take not onely feſantes and wylde duckes, but alſo cranes and wylde ſwannes. They take alſo a foule of darke coloure abowte the byggenes of a gooſe with redde ouerbrowes, whoſe fleſſhe in taſte paſſeth the pleaſauntneſſe of Pheaſauntes. Theſe in the Moſcouites tounge are cauled *Tetrao*, whiche I ſuppoſe to bee the ſame that Plinie cauleth *Erythratao*, knowen to the people of the Alpes, and eſpecially to the Rhetians whiche inhabite the laundes abowte the ſprynges of the ryuer Abdua. The ryuer of Volga miniſtreth vnto them great fyſſhes and of pleaſaunte taſte: eſpecially Surgions or

The fleſſhe preserued longe by reason of coulde.

287

Haukyng and huntynge.

Plentie of fysshe.

Fysshe longe reserued in Ise.

rather a kynde of fyſſhe lyke vnto ſturgions: whiche in the wynter ſeaſon beinge incloſed in Iſe, are longe reſerued freſſhe and vncorrupte. Of other kindes of fyſſhes, they take in maner an incredible multitude in the whyte lakes whereof wee haue ſpoken before. And wheras they vtterly lacke natiue wynes, they vſe ſuche as are browght from other places. And this only in certeine feaſtes and holy miſteries. Eſpecially the pleaſaunte Maluaſies of the Iland of Creta nowe cauled Candy, are had in moſte honoure: and vſed eyther as medicens or for a ſhewe of exceſſiue aboundaunce, foraſmuche as it is in maner a miracle that wynes browght frome Candy by the ſtreyghtes of Hercules pillers and the Ilandes of Gades, and toſſed with ſuch fluddes of the incloſed Ocean, ſhulde be droonke amonge the Scythyan ſnowes in theyr natiue puritie and pleaſauntneſſe.

Wyne.

Maluasie.

All the north parte of the firme lande was cauled Scythia and the people Scythyans.

Drynke cooled with Ise.

The common people drinke mede made of hony and hoppes ſodden together, whiche they keepe longe in pytched barrels where the goodnes increaſeth with age. They vſe alſo beere and ale as doo the Germanes and Polones. They are accuſtomed for delycatenes in ſommer to coole theyr beere and mede with puttynge Iſe therin, whiche the noble men reſerue in theyr ſellars in great quantitie for the ſame purpoſe. Summe there are that delyte greately in the iuſe that is preſſed owte of cherries before they bee full rype: whiche they affyrme to haue the coloure of cleare and ruddy wyne with a verye pleaſaunte taſte.

Wyne of cherryes.

Their women.

Theyr wyues and women, are not with them in ſuche honoure as they are in other nations. For they vſe them in maner in the place of ſeruantes. The noble men and gentelmen, doo diligently obſerue theyr walkes and haue an eye to their chaſtitie. They are ſeldom bydden furth to any feaſtes: nether are permytted to reſorte to churches farre of, or to walke abrode withowt ſum greate conſyderation. But the common ſorte of women, are eaſely and for a ſmaule price allured to lecherye euen of ſtraungers: by reaſon wherof, the gentelmen doo lyttle or nothynge eſteme them.

Thomas Paleologus.

The conquest of the turkes in Grecia.

Iohn the father of kynge Baſilius dyed more then. xx. [twenty] yeares ſence. He maryed Sophia the doughter of Thomas Paleologus who reigned farre in Peloponneſus (now cauled Morea) and was brother to Th[e]emperoure of conſtantinople. Shee was then at Rome when Thomas her father was dryuen owte of Grecia by the Turckes. Of her were fyue chyldren borne, as Baſilius hym ſelfe, George, Demetrius, Symeon, and Andreas. Baſilius tooke to wyfe Salomonia the doughter of George Soborouius a man of ſynguler fidelitie and wyſdome and one of hys counſayle. The excellent vertues of which woman, only barenneſſe obſcured.

How the princes chuse theyr wyues.

When the prynces of Moſcouia delyberat to marie, theyr cuſtome is to haue choyſe of all the vyrgynes in the realme, and to cauſe ſuche as are of moſt fayre and bewtyfull vyſage and perſonage with maners and vertues accordyng, to bee browght before them. Which afterwarde they committe to certayne faythful men and graue matrones to bee furder vewed, in ſo muche that they leaue no parte of them vnſerched. Of theſe, ſhee whome the prynce moſt lyketh, is pronounced woorthy to bee hys wyfe, not withowt greate and carefull expectation of theyr parentes, lyuynge for that tyme betwene hope and feare. The other vyrgyns alſo which ſtoode in election and contended in bewty and integritie of maners, are often times the ſame day to gratyfye the prynce, maryed to hys noble men, gentellmen, and capytaynes: wherby it ſumtymes commeth to paſſe that whyle the princes contemne the lynage of roiall deſcente, ſuche as are borne of humble parentage, are exalted to the degree of princely eſtate. In lyke maner as Th[e]emperours of the turckes were accuſtomed to bee choſen by cumlyneſſe of perſonage and warly prowes.

288

Duke Basilius.

Baſilius was vnder th[e]age of forty and ſeuen yeares, of cumly perſonage, ſinguler vertue, and princely qualities, by all meanes ſtudyous for the proſperitie and commodities of hys ſubiectes. Furthermore in beneuolence, lyberalytie and good ſucceſſe in hys doynges, to bee preferred before his progenitours. For when he hadde. vi. yeares kepte warre with the Lyuons that moued. lxxii. [ſeuenty-two] confetherate cities to the cauſe of that warre, he obteyned the victorie and departed with fewe conditions of peace rather gyuen then accepted.

War betwene the Polones and Moschouites.

Alſo at the begynnynge of his reigne, he put the Polones to flight and took priſoner Conſtantine the capitayne of the Ruthens whom he brought to Moſcouia tyed in chaynes. But ſhortly after at the ryuer Boriſthenes aboue the citie of Orſa, he hym ſelfe was ouercomne in a great battayle by the ſame Conſtantine whom he hadde diſmiſſed: Yet ſo, that the towne of Smolenzko whiche the Moſcouites poſſeſſed before and was now woonne by the Polons, ſhulde ſtyll perteyne to the dominions of Baſilius. But ageynſte the Tartars, and eſpecially the Tartars of Europe cauled the Precopites, the Moſcouites haue often tymes kepte warre with good ſucceſſe, in reuenge of th[e]iniuries doone to them by theyr incurſions.

War betwen the Moschouites and Tartars.

The Moscouite army.

Their banner.

Baſilius is accuſtomed to brynge to the fielde more then a hundreth and fiftie thouſande horſemen deuided into three bandes and folowynge the banners or enſeignes of theyr capitaynes in order of battayle. On the banner of the kynges wynge is figured the image of Ioſue the capitaine of the Hebrewes at whoſe prayer the ſoone prolonged the daye and ſteyde his courſe as wytneſſe the hyſtories of holye ſcripture. Armies of footemen are in maner to no vſe in thoſe great wylderneſſes, aſwel for theyr apparel beinge looſe and longe, as alſo for the cuſtome of theyr enemies, who in theyr warres truſte rather to the ſwyfteneſſe of theyr lyght horſes then to trye the matter in a pyght fyelde.

Their horses and hors[e]men.

They horſes are of leſſe then meane ſtature: but verye ſtronge and ſwyfte. Theyr horſemen are armed

with pykes, ryuettes, maſes of Iren and arrowes. Fewe haue hooked ſwoordes. Theyr bodies are defended with rounde Targets after the maner of the Turkes of Aſia: or with bendyng and cornarde targettes after the maner of the Greekes: Alſo with coates of mayle, brygantynes, and ſharpe helmettes. Baſilius dyd furthermore inſtytute a band of hargabuſiers on horſbacke: and cauſed many greate braſen pieces to bee made by the woorkemañſhype of certeyne Italyañs: and the ſame with theyr ſtockes and wheeles to bee placed in the caſtell of Moſca.

Theire armure.

Hargabusiers. Gunnes.

The kynge hym ſelfe with pryncely magnyfycence and ſinguler familiaritie (wherwith neuertheleſſe no parte of the maieſtie of a kyng is vyolate) is accuſtomed to dyne openly with hys noble men and ſtraunge ambaſſadours in hys owne chamber of preſence where is ſeene A meruelous quantitye of ſyluer and gylte plate ſtandynge vppon two great and high cubbardes in the ſame chamber. He hath not abowte hym any other garde for the cuſtody of hys perſon ſauynge only hys accuſtomed famylye. For watche and warde is dylygently kepte of the faythfull multytude of the citiſens: In ſo muche that euery warde or quarter of the citie is incloſed with gates rayles, and barres: neyther is it lawfull for any man raſſhely to walke in the citie in the nyght, or withowt lyght. All the courte conſyſteth of noble men, gentelmen, and choyſe ſouldyers which are cauled owte of euery regyon by theyre townes and vyllagies, and commaunded to wayte courſe by courſe at certeyne moonethes appoynted. Furthermore when warre is proclaymed, all the armye is collected bothe of the owlde ſouldiers and by muſterynge of newe in all prouynces. For the lieuetenauntes and capytaynes of the armye, are accuſtomed in all cities to muſter the youth, and to admytte to th[e]order of ſouldyers ſuch as they thynke able to ſerue the turne. Theyre wages is payde them of the common treaſurye of euery prouynce which is gathered and partely payde alſo in the tyme of peace although it bee but lyttle. But ſuch as are aſſigned to the warres, are free frome all tributes, and inioye certein other priuilegies wherby they may the more gladly and cherfully ſerue theyr kynge and defend theyr contrey. For in the tyme of warre, occacyon is mynyſtred to ſhewe trewe vertue and manhodde, where in ſo greate and neceſſarie an inſtitution, euery man accordynge to hys approued actiuitie and ingenyous forwardneſſe, may obteyne the fortune eyther of perpetuall honoure or ignominie.

The dyneth openly.

Sigismundus sayth that much of this is golde.

The custodie of the citie.

The dukes courte.

Souldyers wages of the common treasury.

289

Vix olim vlla fides referentibus horrida regna
Moſchorum, et Ponti, res glacialis erat.
Nunc Iouio autore, illa oculis luſtramus, et vrbet.
Et nemora, et montes cernimus et fluuios.
Moſchouiam, monumenta Ioui, tua culta reuoluens.
Cæpi alios mundos credere Democriti.

¶ OTHER NOTABLE THYNGES
AS CONCERNYNGE MOSCOVIA: GATHERED OWT OF
THE BOOKES OF SIGISMVNDVS LIBERVS.

Note that when he sayth myles, he meaneth leaques.

Russia.

The browne colour of the Russes.

Rosseia.

The Slauon tounge spreadeth farre.

Rom whense Russia had the name, there are dyuers opinions. Sume thynke that it was so named of one Russus the soonne or neuie of Lech the kynge of the Polons. Other affirme that it was so cauled of a certeyne owlde towne named Russus not farre frome Nouogoroda or Nouogardia the more. Sum also thynke that it was so cauled of the browne coloure of the nation. But the Moscouians confute al these opinions as vntrewe: Affirmynge that this nation was in owld tyme cauled Rosseia as a nation dispersed, as the name it selfe dooth declare. For Rosseia in the Ruthens tounge, doothe signifie dispersed or scattered. The which thynge to be trew, dyuers other people commyxt with th[e]inhabitauntes, and dyuers prouinces lyinge here and there betwene dyuers partes of Russia doo playnely declare. But whense so euer they tooke theyr name, doubtlesse all the people that vse the Slauon tounge, and profesſe the fayth of Chryſt after the maner of the Greekes, (cauled in theyr common language Russi, and in the Latin tounge Rutheni) are increased to suche a multytude that they haue eyther expulsed all the nations that lye betwene them, or drawne them to theyr maner of lyuynge, insomuche that they are nowe cauled all Rutheni by one common name.

Furthermore the Slauon tounge (whiche at this daye is sumwhat corruptly cauled Sclauon) runneth exceadyng far, as vsed of the Dalmates, Bossuenser, Croatians, Istrians, and by a longe tracte of the sea Adriatike vnto Forum Iulii: Of the Caruians also whome the Venetians caule Charsos: and lykewyse of the Carniolans and Carinthians vnto the ryuer Drauus: Furthermore of the Stirians within Gretzium and by Muera vnto Danubius and from thense of the Mysians, Seruians, Bulgarians, and other inhabitynge euen vnto Constantinople: Furthermore of the Bohemians, Lusacians, Silesians, Morauians, and th[e]inhabitauntes neare vnto the ryuer Vagus in the kyngedome of Hungarie: The Polons also and the Ruthenians whose Empire reacheth very farre: lykewyse the Circasians and Quinquemontanians vnto Pontus: and is from thense vsed in the north partes of Germanie amonge the remanent of the Vandales inhabityng here and there. All whiche nations althowgh they acknowleage them selues to bee Sclauons, yet the Germayns taking the denomination only of the Vandales, caule al them that vse the Slauon tounge, Vuenden, Vuinden, or Vuindysh.

Vandales.

The Princes of Russia.

Of the Princes that nowe reigne in Russia, the chiefe is the great Duke of Moscouia who possesseth the greatest part therof. The seconde is the great duke of Lithuania: and the thyrde the kynge of Polonie, who nowe obteyneth the dominion of Polonie and Lithuania.

The duke of Moscouia.

In autoritie and dominion ouer his subiectes, the prince of Moscouie passeth all the monarkes of the worlde. For he depriueth all his noble men and gentelmen of al theyr holdes and munitions at his pleasure. He trusteth not his owne brotherne, but oppresseth all with lyke seruitude. In so muche that whome so euer he commaundeth eyther to remayne with hym in the courte, or to goo to the warres, or sendeth on an ambassage, they are compelled to bee at theyr owne charges, except the younge gentelmen the soonnes of the Boiarons, that is, the noble men of the lowest degree. He vsurpeth this autoritie aswell ouer the spiritualtie as the temporaltie: constitutynge what him lysteth of the goods and lyse of al men. Of his counsilers there is not one that dare dissente from hym in any thynge. They openly confesse that the wyl of the prince is the wyll of god: and therfore caule hym the key beare and chamberlen of god, and beleue him to bee the executor of gods wyll.

By reaſon wherof, the prince hym ſelfe when any peticion is made to hym for the deliuerie of any captiue, is accuſtomed to aunſwere: When god commaundeth he ſhalbe deliuered. Lykewyſe when any aſketh a queſtion of an vncerteyne or doubtefull thynge, theyr cuſtome is to anſwere thus: God knoweth and the greate prince. It is vncerteyne whether the crueltie and fiercenes of the nation doo requyre ſo tyrannous a prince, or whether by the tyrãnny of the prince, the nation is made ſo fierce and cruell. 290

Baſilius the ſoonne of Iohn, was the fyrſt that tooke vppon hym the name and title of a kynge in this maner: The great lorde Baſilius, by the grace of god kynge and lorde of all Ruſſia and the greate duke of Vuolodimaria, Moſcouia, Nouogardia, etc.

Furthermore, wheras nowe this prince is cauled an Emperour, I haue thought good to ſhewe the tytle and cauſe of this errour. Note therfore that Czar in the Ruthens tounge ſignifieth a kynge, wheras in the language of the Slauons, Pollons, Bohemes, and other, the ſame woorde Czar, ſignifieth Ceſar by whiche name Th[e]emperours haue byn commonly cauled. For bothe they and the Slauons that are vnder the kyngdome of Hungarie, caule a kynge by an other name: as ſum Crall, other Kyrall, and ſum Koroll: but thinke that only an Emperoure is cauled Czar. Whereby it came to paſſe that the Ruthene or Moſcouite interpretours hearynge theyr prince to bee ſo cauled of ſtraunge nations, began them ſelues alſo to name hym an Emperour, and thinke the name of Czar to bee more worthy then the name of a kynge, althowgh they ſignifie all one thynge. But who ſo wyl reade all theyr hyſtories and bookes of holy ſcripture, ſhall fynde that a kynge is cauled Czar, and an Emperour Keſſar. By the lyke erroure Th[e]emperour of the Turkes is cauled Czar, who neuertheleſſe of antiquitie vſed no hygher tytle then the name of a kynge, expreſſed by this woorde Czar. And hereof the Turkes of Europe that vſe the Slauon tounge, caule the citie of Conſtantinople Czargrad, (that is) the kynges citie.

Why the duke of Moscouia was cauled an Emperour

The greate Turke.

Sum caule the prince of Moſcouie the whyte kynge, whiche I thinke to proceade of the whyte cappes, or other tyrementes they weare on theyr heades, lyke as they caule the kynge of Percia Kiſilpaſſa (that is) redde headde. He vſeth the tytle of a kynge when he writeth or ſendeth to Rome, the Emperour, the pope, the kynge of Suetia and Denmarke, the greate maſter of Pruſſia and Liuonia, and alſo to the greate Turke as I haue byn credably informed: but he is not cauled kynge of any of them, excepte perhappes of the Liuons. Yet by reaſon of his later conqueſtes, ſum haue thought hym worthy the name of a kynge or rather of an Emperour bycauſe he hath kynges vnder his Empire.

The whyte kynge.

The duke of Moscouia his tytle.

To the kynge of Polone he vſeth this tytle: The great lorde Baſilius by the grace of god, lorde of all Ruſſia, and greate duke of Vuolodimeria, Moſcouia, Nouogardia. etc. leauynge owt the tytle of a kyng. For none of them vouchefafeth to receaue the letters of the other augmented with any newe tytle, as I knewe by experience at my being in Moſcouia, at which tyme Sigiſmundus the kynge of Polone ſente hym his letters augmented with the tytle of the Duke of Maſouia, wherwith he was not a lyttle offended.

They glorie in theyr hyſtories that before Vuolodimeria and Olha, the lande of Ruſſia was baptiſed and bleſſed of ſaynt Andrewe th[e]apoſtle of Chryſt, affirmynge that he came from Grecia to the mouthes of the ryuer Boryſthenes: and that he ſayled vppe the ryuer to the mountaynes where as is nowe Chiouia: and that there he bleſſed all the lande and placed his croſſe, propheſyinge alſo that the grace of god ſhulde bee greate there, and that there ſhulde bee many churches of Chryſtian men: Lykewyſe that he afterwarde came to the ſprynges of Boryſthenes vnto the great lake Vuolok, and by the ryuer Louat deſcended into the lake Ilmer: from whenſe by the riuer Vuolcon whiche runneth owte of the ſame lake, he came to Nouogardia: and paſſed frome thenſe by the ſame ryuer to the lake Ladoga and the ryuer Heua, and ſo vnto the ſea whiche they caule Vuaretzkoia, beinge the ſame that we caule the Germayne ſea, betwene Vuinlandia or Finlandia and Liuonia, by the whiche he ſayled to Rome, and was at the laſte crucified for Chryſte his goſpell in Peloponneſus by the tyranny of Agus Antipater, as theyr crownacles make mention.

Russia baptysed by saynte Andrewe the Apostle.

The prynce euery ſeconde or thyrde yeare, cauſeth a muſter to bee taken of the ſoonnes of the Boiarons, and takethe an accoumpte bothe of theyr number and howe many horſes and men euery of them is able to make: and then appoynteth a certeyne ſtypende to ſuche as are able further to beare theyr owne charges in the warres. They haue ſeldome any reſt or quyetneſſe. For they eyther keepe warre with the Lithuanians, Liuonians, Suetians, or Tartars of Caſan. Or yf it ſo chaunce that the prynce keepe no warre, yet dooth he yearely appoynte garryſons of. xx. [twenty] thouſande menne in places abowt Tanais and Occa to repreſſe the incurſions and robberyes of the European Tartars cauled Precopites.

The Moscouites warres.

291

As in other matters, euen ſo in th[e]order of warrefare ther is great diuerſitie amonge men. For the Moſcouian as ſoone as he begynneth to flye, thinketh of none other ſuccoure but putteth all his confidence therein. Beinge purſued or taken of his enemie, he neyther defendeth himſelfe nor deſirethe perdon.

Dyuers maners of dyuers people in the wars.

The Tartar caſt of from his horſe, ſpoyled of al his armure and weapons, and alſo ſore wounded, defendeth hym ſelfe with handes, feete, and teethe, and by all meanes he may, vntyll his ſtrength and ſpirite fayle hym.

The Turke, when he ſeeth hym ſelfe deſtitute of all helpe and hope to eſcape, doth humbly deſyre pardon,

caſting away his weapons and armure, and reching furth to the victourer his hands ioyned together to be bounde, hopynge by captiuitie to ſaue his lyfe.

The Moſcouytes army.

The Moſcouites in placeinge theyr armye chuſe them a large playne where the beſt of them pytch theyr tentes and the other make them certen arbours of bouwes fyxt in the grounde, bendyng together the toppes therof, whiche they couer with theyr clokes to defende themſelues, theyr bowes, arrowes, ſaddyles, and other theyr neceſſaries from rayne. They put furth theyr horſes to paſture, and for that cauſe haue theyr tentes ſo farre in ſunder, which they fortifye neyther with cartes or trenches or any other impedyment, excepte perhappes the place bee defended by nature as with wooddes, ryuers and maryſſhes.

Howe he maynteyneth his army.

It may perhappes ſeeme ſtraunge howe he maynteyneth hym and hys ſo longe with ſo ſmaule an army as I haue ſayde. I wyll nowe therfore brefely declare theyre ſparynge and frugalitie. He that hath fyxe or ſumtymes more horſes, vſeth one of them as A packe horſe to beare all theyr neceſſaryes. He hath alſo in a bagge of two or three ſpanes longe, the floure or meale of the grayne cauled mylle: and. viii. or x. poundes weyghte of ſwynes fleſſhe poudered. He hathe lykewyſe A bagge of ſalte, myxte with pepper if he bee ryche. Furthermore euery man caryeth with hym A hatchet, A fyre boxe, and a braſen potte: ſo that if they chaunce to coomme to any place where they can fynde no frutes, garlyke, onyons or fleſſhe, they kyndle a fyre and fylle theyr pottes with water wherunto they put a ſpoonefull of meale with a quantitie of ſalte, and make pottage therof, wherwith the maſter and all hys ſeruauntes lyue contented. But if the maſter bee very hungary he eateth all alone, and the ſeruantes are ſumtymes inforſed to faſte for the ſpace of two or three dayes. And yf the maſter intende to fare ſumwhat more delycately, then he addeth therto a lyttle portion of ſwynes fleſſhe. I ſpeake not thys of the beſt of them, but of ſuche as are of the meane ſorte. The gouernours and capytaynes of th[e]armye, doo ſum tymes bydde the poorer ſorte to theyre tables: where theye feede them ſelues ſo wel, that they faſte two or three dayes after. When they haue frutes, garlyke, and onyons, theye can well forbeare all other meates. Procedynge forwarde to the battayle, they put more confydence in theyr multitude, and with what great armyes they aſſayle theyr enemyes, then eyther in the ſtrengthe and valyanteneſſe of theyr ſouldyers, or in well inſtructynge theyr armye: and fyght better afarre of, then at hande: and therfore ſtudy howe to circumuent or incloſe theyr enemyes and to aſſayle them on the backe halfe.

Instruments of warre.

They haue many trumpiters: The which whyle they blow all at once after theyr maner, make A meruelous ſtraunge noyſe. They haue alſo an other kynde of inſtrumentes which they caule Szurna. Theſe they blowe withowte ſeaſynge for the ſpace of an houre togither, ſo temperyng the ſame and holdyng in the wynd whyle they drawe more, that the noyſe ſeemeth continuall withoute intermyſſion.

The Moſcouites and Tartars apparell.

292

They vſe all one maner of appareyle: as longe coates withowte pleyghtes and with narrowe ſleaues after the maner of the Hungaryans. Theſe the Chriſtians vſe to butten on the right ſyde: and the Tartars (vſinge the lyke) butten them on the lefte ſyde. They weare redde and ſhorte buſkyns that reache not to theyr knees: and haue the ſoules therof defended with plates of Iren. In maner all theyr ſhyrtes are wroughte with dyuers colours aboute the necke: and haue the collars and ruffes byſette with lyttle rounde baules lyke beades, of ſyluer or gylted copper, and ſumtyme perles alſo. They gyrde them ſelues beneth the bellye euen as lowe as theyr priuy members, that they may ſeme more boorely which they greately eſteme, as doo at thys day the Spanyardes, Italyans, and Almayñes.

The prouince of Moſcouia. Extreme coulde.

The prouince of Moſcouia is neyther very large nor frutfull, foraſmuche as the fertylytye is hyndered with ſandye grounde which eyther with to muche dryneſſe or moyſter kylleth the corne. Furthermore the immoderate and ſharpe vntemperateneſſe of the ayre while the coulde of the wynter ouercommethe the heate of the ſoonne, ſumtymes dothe not ſuffer the corne to rype. For the coulde is there ſumtyme ſo extreame, that lyke as with vs in ſommer by reaſon of heate, euen ſo there by extreame coulde the yearth hath many great chynkes or breaches. Water alſo caſt into the ayre, and ſpettle faulyng from on[e]s mouthe, are froſen before they touche the grounde. I my ſelfe, when I came thether in the yeare 1526. ſawe the braunches of frutefull trees wythyred by the coulde of the wynter before, which was ſo extreame that many of theyr wagoners or caries (whom they caule Gonecz) were founde froſen to deathe in theyr ſleades. There were ſum that at the ſame tyme leadyng and dryuyng theyr cattayle from the nexte villagies to Moſcouia, dyed by the way with theyr beaſtes through th[e]extremytie of the coulde. Furthermore, the ſame yeare many players that were accuſtomed to wander aboute the contrey with daunſyng beares, were founde dead in the high wayes. Wylde beares alſo inforced thereto by famyn, lefte the wooddes and ranne here and there into dyuers villagies and houſes: At whoſe commyng while the men of the countrey forſooke theyr houſes and fledd into the fieldes, manye of them peryſſhed throughe the vehemencie of the coulde. Agayne, it ſumtymes ſo chaunceth that in ſommer the heate is as extreame: as in the yeare. 1525. in the which almoſt all kynds of pulſe and grayne were ſcorched and burnte: and ſuch a derth of corne folowed that drought, that that which before was bowght for three dengas, was afterwarde ſoulde for. xx. [twenty] or. xxx. [thirty.] Furthermore alſo, manye villagies, wooddes, and ſtackes of corne, were ſette on fyre by th[e]extreame heate: The ſmoke wherof ſo fylled the regyon, that the eyes of many were ſore hurte therby.

Extreme heate in cold regions.

There aroſe alſo as it were a darke and thycke myſt without ſmoke which ſo moleſted the ey[e]s, that many loſte theyr ſight therby.

They ſowe and naryſſhe the ſeades of melons with greate diligence in certeyne rayſed beddes myxte with doonge: wherby they fynde a remedy both ageynſt extreame could and heat. For if the heate exceade, they make certeyne ryftes in the beddes as it were breathyng places leaſt the ſeades ſhulde be ſuffocate with to muche heate. And if the coulde bee extreme it is tempered with the heate of the mucke or dunge.

Theyr beaſtes are muche leſſe then owres: yet not all withowt hornes as one hath written. For I haue there ſene oxen, kyne, goates, and rammes all with hornes. — Lyttle beastes.

Not farre from the citie of Moſcha, are certeyne monaſteries which a farre of, ſeeme lyke vnto a citie. They ſaye that in thys citie is an incredible number of houſes: And that the ſyxte yeare before my commynge thyther, the prince cauſed them to bee numbered, and founde them to bee more then one and fortye thouſande and fyue hundreth houſes. The citie is very large and wyde: and alſo very ſlabby and myrie. By reaſon wherof it hath many brydges and cauſeys. — The citie of Moscouia or Mosca.

The ayre of the regyon is ſo holſome, that beyond the ſprynges of Tanais, eſpecially towarde the north and a great parte alſo towarde the Eaſte, the peſtylence hath not byne harde of ſence the memorye of man. Yet haue they ſumtimes a diſeaſe in theyr bowells and headdes not much vnlyke the peſtylence. This diſeaſe they caule a heate: wherwith ſuche as are taken, dye within fewe dayes. — Holsome ayer.

Sum wryte that Iohn the duke of Moſcouia and ſonne of Baſilius, vnder the pretence of religion ſacked and ſpoyled, the citie of Nouogardia: and caried with hym from thenſe to Moſcouia three hundreth ſleades laden with golde, ſyluer, and precious ſtones of the gooddes of the Archebyſſhoppe, the marchauntes, citiſins, and ſtraungiers. — A ryche spoyle.

Solowki is an Ilande ſituate in the north ſea. viii. leaques from the continent betwene Dwina and the prouince of Corela. Howe farre it is dyſtant from Moſcouia, can not bee well knowne by reaſon of manye fennes, maryſſhes, wooddes, and deſolate places lyinge in the way. Albeit, ſum ſay that it is not three hundreth leaques from Moſcouia, and two hundreth frome Bieloieſero. In thys Ilande is made greate plenty of ſalte: and it hath in it a monaſterie into the which it is not lawfull for any woman or virgyn to enter. There is alſo great ſyſſhyng for hearyng. They ſay that here the ſoonne at the ſommer Equinoctiall, ſhyneth continually excepte two houres. — The Iland of Solowki.

293 — Bieloiesero.

The lengthe of the day.

Demetriowe, is a citie with a caſtel, diſtante from Moſcouia xii. leaques declining from the weſt ſumwhat toward the north. By this runneth the ryuer Lachroma that runneth in to the ryuer of Seſt. Seſt alſo receaueth the ryuer Dubna whiche vnladeth it ſelfe in Volga. And by the commoditie of thus many ryuers, many riche marchaundies are browght without great laboure or difficultie from the caſpian ſea by the ryuer Volga to Moſcouia and dyuers other prouynces and cities abowte the ſame. — The trade from Moscouia to the Caspian sea.

Bieloieſero, a citie with a caſtell, is ſituat at a lake of the ſame name. For Bieloieſero in the Moſcouites toung, ſignifieth a white lake. The citie ſtandeth not in the lake as ſum haue ſayd. Yet is it ſo enuironed with maryſſhes that it may ſeeme to bee inexpugnable: In conſideration wherof, the princes of Moſcouia are accuſtomed to keepe theyr treaſure there. Bieloieſero is from Moſcouia, a hundreth leaques, and as muche from Nouogardia the great. The lake it ſelfe, is. xii. leaques in length and as much in breadth: aud hath (as they ſay) three hundreth ryuers faulynge into it. Th[e]inhabitauntes of this place, haue a peculyar language, although nowe in maner all ſpeake the Moſcouites tounge. The longeſt day here in the ſoommer Equinoctial, is ſayde to conſyſte of. xix. [nineteen] houres. A man of greate name and credite toulde me, that at the begynnyng of the ſprynge when the trees began nowe to bee greene, he went in poſte from Moſcouia to Bieloieſero: And paſſynge ouer the ryuer Volga, founde the region there ſo couered with Iſe and ſnow, that he was fayne to diſpatch the reſidue of his iorney on ſleades. And although the wynter bee longer there, yet doo the frutes waxe rype and are gathered euen at the ſame tyme that they are in Moſcouia. Bieloiesero or the whyte lakes. Diuersitie of temperament in smaul dystance. Within an arrowe ſhotte of the lake, there is an other lake that bryngeth furth brymſtone: which a certen ryuer runnyng owt of the ſame, caryeth with it in great quantitie flotyng aboue the water lyke a ſcoomme. Yet through the ignorance of the people, they haue no commoditie therby. — A lake of brymstone.

The people that inhabite the regions lyinge farre northe and eaſt from Moſcouia, exchaunge theyr furres for apparel, knyues, needles, ſpoones, hatchets, and ſuche other neceſſarye wares. For they haue not the vſe of golde and ſyluer. — Exchange of furres for other wa.

¶ *The deſcription of the regions, people, and ryuers, lyinge North and Eaſte from Moſcouia: As the way from Moſcouia to the ryuer Petzora, and the prouince of Iugaria, or Iuhra: And frome thenſe to the ryuer Obi. Lykewyſe the diſcription of other countreys and regions, euen vnto Th[e]empire of the greate Cham of Cathay.*

The dominion of the duke of Moscouia.

THe dominion of the Prince of Moſcouia reacheth farre towarde the Eaſte and north vnto the places which we wyll nowe deſcrybe. As concernynge whiche thynge, I tranſlated a booke that was preſented vnto me in the Moſcouites tounge, and haue heare made a bryefe rehearſall of the ſame. I wyll fyrſt therfore deſcribe the iorney from Moſcouia to Petzora, and ſo to Iugaria and Obi.

Vuolochda. Werste. Vstiug.

From Moſcouia to the citie of Vuolochda, are numbered fyftie Werſtes, one Werſt conteynynge almoſte the ſpace of an Italyan myle. From Vuolochda to Vſtiug towarde the right hande deſcendinge with the courſe of the ryuer of Vuolochda and Suchana with whom it ioyneth, are coumpted fyue hundreth Werſtes: where within two Werſtes of the towne cauled Strelze and hard by the citie of Vſtiug Suchana ioyneth. Iug which runneth from the ſouth: from whoſe mouth vnto the ſprynges of the ſame, are numbered fyue hundrethe Werſtes.

Note that wheras here before the autour numbereth but fyftie werſtes from Moſcouia to Vuolochda, it ſemeth that the place is corrupted by the Printers myſtakynge one worde for an other, as Quinquaginta, which is fyftie, for Quingenta, whiche is fyue hundreth. For the diſtance is no leſſe from Moſcouia to Vuolochda, then is from Vuolochda to Vſtiug, which is fyue hundreth werſtes.

294

Suchana. Iug. Colmogor. Dwina.

But Suchana and Iug after they ioyne togyther, loſe theyr fyrſt names and make bothe one ryuer named Dwina, by the whiche the paſſage to the citie of Colmogor conteyneth fyue hundreth Werſtes: from whenſe in the ſpace of ſyxe dayes iorney, Dwina entereth into the north Ocean at. vi. mouthes, And the greateſte parte of this iorney conſyſteth by nauigation. For by lande, from Vuolochda vnto Colmogor, paſſing ouer the ryuer Vuaga, are a thouſande Werſtes. Not farre from Colmogor, the ryuer Pienega runnynge frome the Eaſte on the ryght hande for the ſpace of ſeuen hundreth Werſtes fauleth into Dwina. From Dwina by the ryuer Pienega by the ſpace of two hundreth Werſtes, they coome to a place cauled Nicolai: from whenſe within halfe a werſt, ſhyppes haue paſſage into the ryuer Kuluio, which hath his original from a lake of the ſame name towarde the north, from whoſe ſpringes is. viii. dayes vyage to the mouth of the ſame where it entereth into the Ocean.

Pienega. Nicolai. Kuluio.

The regions by the North sea.

Saylynge by the coaſtes of the ryght hande the ſea, they paſſe by the regions of Stanuwiſche, Calunczſcho, and Apnu. And ſaylynge abowt the promontorie or cape of Chorogoſki Noſz, Stanuwiſche, Camenckh, and Tolſtickh, they come at the length into the ryuer Mezen, and frome thenſe in the ſpace of ſyxe dayes to a vyllage of the ſame name, ſtandyng in the mouth of the ryuer Pieza: by the which ageine aſcendyng towarde the lefte hande and ſoommer Eaſt, they come to the ryuer Pieſcoya. From whenſe ſaylynge for the ſpace of fyue Werſtes, they coomme into two lakes in the whiche are ſeene two wayes: wherof one on the ryght ſyde, goeth to the ryuer Rubicho, by the whiche they paſſe to the ryuer Czircho. Other by an other and ſhorter way, brynge theyr ſhyppes frome the lake directly into Czircho: From whenſe, except they be hyndered by tempeſt, they coomme in the ſpace of three weekes to the ryuer and mouth of Czilma, flowynge into the great ryuer Petzora, which in that place is two Werſtes in breadthe. Saylyng from henſe, they coomme in the ſpace of ſyxe dayes to the towne and caſtell of Puſtooſero, neare vnto the which, Petzora entereth into the north Ocean at ſyxe mouthes. The inhabitauntes of this place, are men of ſimple wytte. They receaued the fayth of Chryſte, and were baptiſed in the yeare M. D. xviii.

Pieza. Piescoia. Rubicho. Czircho. Czilma. Petzora. Pustoosero.

From the mouth of Czilma vnto the mouthe of the ryuer Vſſa, goinge by Petzora, is one monethes vyage. Vſſa hath his ſprynges in the mountayne Poyas Semnoi, being on the lefte hande towarde the ſoommer Eaſt, and ſpringeth owte of a greate ſtone of the ſame mountayne, cauled Camen Bolſchoi. From the ſprynges of Vſſa to the mouthes of the ſame, are numbered more then a thouſande Werſtes. Furthermore Petzora runneth from this ſouth wynter parte, from whenſe aſcendynge from the mouthes of Vſſa vnto the mouthes of the ryuer

Vssa. Cingulus mundi.

Stzuchogora, is three weekes vyage. They that deſcribed this vyage, ſayde that they reſted betwene the mouthes of the ryuers of Stzuchogora and Potzſcheriema: and leſte theyr vyttayles there whiche they browght with theym from Ruſſia. Beyonde the ryuers of Petzora and Stzuchogora towarde the mountayne Camenipoias and the ſea with the Ilandes there abowte and the caſtell of Puſtooſero, are dyuers and innumerable nations whiche by one common name are cauled Samoged (that is) ſuch as eate them ſelues. They haue great increaſe of foules, byrdes, and dyuers kyndes of beaſtes: as Sables, Marternes, Beuers, Otters, Hermielines, Squyrels: and in the Ocean the beaſte cauled Mors: Alſo Veſs, whyte beares, woolfes, hares, Equiwoduani, great whales, and a fyſſhe cauled Semfi, with dyuers other. The people of theſe nations, come not to Moſcouia. For they are wylde, and flye the company and ſocietie of other men.

Stzuchogora.
Potzscheriema.
Camenipoias.
Samoged.
Foules and beastes.
Wyld people.

From the mouthes of Stzuchogora ſaylynge vp the ryuer vnto Poiaſſa, Artawiſche, Cameni, and Poiaſſa the greater, is three weekes vyage. Furthermore the aſcendynge to the mounte Camen, is three dayes iorney: from the whiche, deſcendyng, they come to the ryuer Artawiſcha, and from thenſe to the ryuer Sibut, from whenſe they paſſe to the caſtell of Lepin, and from Lepin to the ryuer Soſſa. The people that inhabite the region by this ryuer, are cauled Vuogolici. Leauynge Soſſa on the ryght hande, they come to the greate ryuer Oby, that ſpryngeth owt of the lake Kitaiſko, the whiche with all the haſte they coulde make, they coulde ſcarſely paſſe ouer in one day, the ryuer beinge of ſuch breadth that it reacheth foureſcore Werſtes. The people alſo that dwell abowt this ryuer, are cauled Vuogolici and Vgritzſchi. From the caſtell of Obea aſcendynge by the ryuer of Oby, vnto the ryuer Irtiſche into the which Soſſa entereth, is three moonethes iorney. In theſe places are two caſtels named Ierom and Tumen, kepte by certeyne lordes cauled Kneſi Iuhorſki. beinge tributaries to the greate duke of Moſcouia as they ſay. Here are dyuers kyndes of beaſtes and furres.

Artawischa.
Sibut.
Lepin.
Sossa.
Obi.
Kitaisko.
Vuogolici
295
Irtische.
Ieron.
Tumem.

Frome the mouth of the ryuer Irtiſche to the Caſtell of Gruſtina, is two monethes iorney: from whenſe to the lake Kitai by the ryuer Oby (whiche I ſayde to haue his ſprynges in this lake) is more then three monethes iorney. From this lake come many blacke men, lackynge th[e]uſe of common ſpech. They brynge with them dyuers wares, and eſpecially pearles and precious ſtones, whiche they ſell to the people cauled Gruſtintzi and Serponowtzi. Theſe haue theyr name of the caſtell Serponow, ſituate in the mountaynes of Lucomorya beyonde the ryuer Obi. They ſay that to the men of Lucomorya, chaunceth a marueylous thynge and incredible. For they affirme, that they dye yearely at the. xxvii. [twenty-ſeuenth] daye of Nouember, beinge the feaſt of ſaynt George amonge the Moſcouytes: and that at the nexte ſprynge abowte the. xxiiii. [twenty-fourth] daye of Apryll, theye reuyue ageyne as doo frogges.

Grustina.
Kitai.
Blacke men withowt speache.
Serpenowe.
Lucomoria.
Men that yearely dye and reuyue.

With theſe alſo, the people of Gruſtintzi and Serponowtzi, exerciſe a newe and ſtraunge kynde of trade. For when the accuſtomed tyme of theyr dyinge, or rather of ſleapynge, aprocheth, they leaue theyr wares in certeyne places appoynted, which the Gruſtintzi and Serponowtzi carye away leauynge other wares of equall valewe in theyr places: whiche if the deade men at the tyme of theyr reuyuyn[g]e perceaue to bee of vnequall pryce, they requyre theyr owne ageyne: by reaſon wherof mũche ſtryſe and fighting is betwene them.

A straunge trade of marchaundies.

From the ryuer of Obi deſcending toward the left hand, are the people cauled Calami, which came thether from Obiowa and Pogoſa. Beneth Obi, abowte Aurea Anus (that is the golden owlde wyſe) are the ryuers Soſſa, Beres, Vua, and Danadim, al which ſprynge owt of the montayne Camen, Bolſchega, Potaſſa, and the rockes ioynynge to the ſame. All the nations that inhabite from theſe ryuers to Aurea Anus, are ſubiecte to the prynce of Moſcouia.

Obi.
Calami.
Ryuers.

Aurea Anus cauled in the Moſcouites toonge Slata Baba, is an Idole at the mouthes of Obi in the prouince of Obdora, ſtandynge on the furtheſt banke towarde the ſea. Alonge by the bankes of Obi and the ryuers neare there about, are here and there many caſtells and fortreſſes, all the lordes whereof are ſubiecte to the prince of Moſcouia, as they ſay. They ſay alſo, or rather fable, that the Idole cauled Aurea Anus, is an Image lyke vnto an owlde wyſe hauyng a chyld in her lappe: and that there is nowe ſeene an other infante which they ſay to bee her neuie: Alſo that there are certeyne inſtrumentes that make a continuall ſounde lyke the noyſe of trumpettes. The which if it ſo bee, I thynke it to bee by reaſon of the wynde blowynge continually into the holowe places of thoſe inſtrumentes.

Aurea Anus.
Obdora.

The ryuer Coſſin, fauleth owt of the mountaynes into Lucomoria. In the mouth of thys, is a caſtell. Whyther from the ſprynges of the great ryuer Coſſin, is two moonethes vyage. Furthermore from the ſprynges of the ſame ryuer, the ryuer Caſſima hath hys original: which runnynge throwgh Lucomoria, fauleth into the great ryuer Tachnin, beyonde the which (as is ſayde) dwell men of prodigious ſhape, of whom ſum arẽ ouergrowne with heare lyke wylde beaſtes: other haue heades lyke dogges, and other theyr faces in theyr breſtes withowt neckes, and with longe hãdes alſo and withowte feete. There is lykewyſe in the ryuer Tachnin, a certeyne fyſſhe with headde, eys, noſe, mouthe, handes, fiete, and other members vtterly of humane ſhape, and yet withowt any voyce, and pleaſante to bee eaten as are other fyſſhes.

Cossiu.
Cassima.
Tachnin.
People of monstrous shape.
A fysshe lyke a man.
Plinie wryteth of the lyke fyssshe.

All that I haue hetherto rehearſed, I haue tranſlated out of the ſayde iorney whiche was delyuered me in the Moſcouites tounge. In the which perhappes ſum thynges maye ſeeme fabulous and in maner incredible, as

of the doomme men and the deade reuyuynge, the Aurea Anus alſo, and the monſtrous ſhapes of men, with the tyſſhe of human forme: wherof althowgh I haue made dylygent inquiſicion, yet could I knowe nothynge certeyne of any that had ſeene the ſame with theyr eys, neuertheleſſe to gyue further occaſion to other to ſearche the truth of theſe thynges, I haue thowght good to make mention hereof.

296 Noſſ in the Moſcouites tounge ſignifieth a noſe: and therfore they cauſe all capes or poyntes of lande that reache into the ſea, by the ſame name.

Mountaynes. The mountaynes about the ryuer of Petzora, are cauled Semnoi Poyas, or Cingulus mundi: (that is) the gyrdle of the worlde, or of the yearth.

The greate Chan of Cathay. Kithay, is a lake of whome the greate Chan of CATHAY whom the Moſcouians caule Czar Kythaiſki, hath hys name. For Chan in the Tartars language ſignifieth a kyng.

Lucomoria. The places of Lucomorya nere vnto the ſea, are ſaluage, full of wooddes, and inhabited withowt any houſes. And albeit that the autour of thys iorney, ſayd that many nations of Lucomorya are ſubiecte to the prynce of Moſcouia, yet foraſmuch as the kyngdome of Tumen is neare therunto, whoſe prince is a Tartar and named in theyr toung Tumenſki Czar (that is) a kynge in Tumen, and hath of late doone great domage to the prynce of Moſcouia, it is moſte lyke that theſe nations ſhulde rather bee ſubiecte vnto hym.

Tumen. Petzora. Papin. Neare vnto the ryuer Petzora, (wherof mention is made in thys iorney) is the citie and caſtell of Papin or Papinowgorod, whoſe inhabytauntes are named Papini, and haue a priuate language differyng from the Moſcouites. Beyond thys ryuer, are exceadynge hygh mountaynes, reachyng euen vnto the bankes: whoſe ridgies or toppes by reaſon of continuall wyndes, are in maner vtterly barrayne without graſſ or frutes. And although in dyuers places they haue dyuers names, yet are they commonly cauled Cingulus Mundi, that is the gerdle of the worlde, otherwyſe cauled Catena Mundi, (that is), the chayne of the worlde. In theſe mountaynes doo ierfalcons breede, wherof I haue ſpoken before. There grow alſo Cedar trees, amonge the which are founde the beſt and blackeſt kynde of ſables. And only theſe mountaynes are ſeene in all the domynyons of the prynce of Moſcouia, which perhappes are the ſame that the owlde writers caule Rhipheos or Hyperboreos, ſo named of the Greeke worde *Hiper*, (that is) vnder: and *Boreas* (that is) the north. For by reaſon they are couered with continuall ſnow and froſte, they can not withowt great difficultie bee trauayled: and reache ſo farre into the north, that they make the vnknowne land of Engroneland. The duke of Moſcouia Baſilius the ſoonne of Iohn, ſent on a tyme two of hys capitaynes named Simeon Pheodorowicz Kurbſki, and Knes Peter Vſchatoi, to ſearch the places beyonde theſe mountaynes and to ſubdewe the nations therabowte. Kurbſki was yet alyue at my being in Moſcouia: and declared vnto me that he ſpent. xvii. [ſeuenteen] days in aſcendyng the mountayn, and yet coulde not coome to the toppe therof, which in theyr tounge is cauled Stolp (that is) a pyller. Thys mountayne is extended into the Ocean vnto the mouthes of the ryuers of Dwina and Petzora. But nowe hauyng ſpoken thus muche of the ſayde iorney, I wyll returne to the domynyons of Moſcouia, with other regyons lyinge eaſtwarde and ſouthe frome the ſame towarde the myghtye Empyre of CATHAY. But I wyll fyrſt ſpeake ſumwhat brefely of the prouynce of Rezan and the famous ryuer of Tanais.

Engronland. Hygh mountaynes, ſupposed to bee Hyperborei, and Rhiphei. Stolp.

The frutfull prouince of Rezan. Iaroslaw. The prouynce of Rezan ſituate betwene the ryuers of Occa and Tanais, hath a citie buylded of woodd not farre from the banke of Occa. There was in it a caſtell named Iaroſlaw, wherof there now remayneth nothynge but tokens of the owld ruine. Not farre from that citie, the ryuer Occa maketh an Ilande named Strub: which was ſumtym a great dukedome, whoſe prince was ſubiect to none other. Thys prouince of Rezan is more frutfull then any other of the prouynces of Moſcouia: In ſo muche that in thys (as they ſaye) euery grayne of wheate bryngethe furthe two and ſumtymes more eares: whoſe ſtalkes or ſtrawes growe ſo thycke that horſes can ſcarſely go throwgh them, or quayles flye owt of them. There is greate plenty of honnye, fyſſhes, foules, byrdes, and wylde beaſtes. The frutes alſo do farre exceade the frutes of Moſcouia. The people are bould and warlyk men.

Honny.

¶ *Of the famous ryuer of Tanais.*

Donco. Asoph. Capha. Constantinople. 297 Tanais diuideth Europe from Asia. FRome Moſcouia vnto the caſtell of Iaroſlaw, and beyonde for the ſpace of almoſte. xxiiii. [twenty-four] leaques, runneth the ryuer of Tanais, at a place called Donco, where the marchauntes that trade to Aſoph, Capha, and Conſtantynople, fraight theyr ſhyppes: and thys for the moſte parte in autumne beynge a rayney tyme of the yeare. For Tanais here at other tymes of the yeare doth not ſo abounde with water as to beare ſhyppes of any burden. Thys famous ryuer of Tanais, dyuydeth Europe from Aſia: and hath hys orygynal or ſpringes almoſt. viii. leaques from the citie of Tulla toward the ſouth inclynyng ſumwhat towarde the Eaſte: and not owt of the Riphean mountaynes as ſome haue wrytten: But owte of a great lake

named Iwanowoſero (that is) the lake of Iohn: being in length and breadth abowt. 1500. Werſtes in a wood whiche ſum caule Okonitzkilies, and other name it Iepiphanowlies And owt of this lake, ſprynge the twoo greate ryuers of Schat and Tanais. Schat towarde the Weſte receauynge into it the ryuer of Vppa, runneth into the ryuer of Occa betwene the Weſt and the north. But Tanais at the fyrſte runneth directly Eaſt: and continueth his courſe betwene the kyngdomes of Caſan and Aſtrachan within ſyxe or ſeuen leaques of Volga: And frome thenſe bendynge towarde the ſouth, maketh the fennes or maryſſhes of Meotis. Furthermore, nexte vnto his ſprynges, is the citie of Tulla: and vppon the banke of the ryuer almoſte three leaques aboue the mouthes of the ſame, is the citie of Aſoph, which was fyrſte cauled Tanas. Foure dayes iorney aboue this, is a towne cauled Achas, ſituate harde by the ſame ryuer: whiche the Moſcouites caule Don. I can not ſufficiently prayſe this ryuer for the exceadynge abundaunce of good fyſſhes, and faireneſſe of the regions on bothe ſydes the bankes, with plentie of holſoome herbes and ſweete rootes, beſyde dyuers and many frutefull trees growynge in ſuche coomly order as though they had byn ſet of purpoſe in gardens or archardes. There is alſo in maner euery where ſuche plentie of wylde beaſtes, that they may eaſely be ſlaine with arrowes: In ſo much that ſuche as trauayle by thoſe regions, ſhal ſtand in neede of none other thynge to mayntayne theyr lyfe but only fyre and ſalte. Inſ theſe partes, is no obſeruation of myles, but of dayes iorneys. But as farre as I coulde coniecture, from the fountaynes or ſprynges of Tanais vnto the mouthes of the ſame iorneyinge by lande, are almoſt foureſcore leaques. And ſaylynge from Donco (from whenſe I ſayde that Tanais was fyrſte nauigable) in ſcarſely. xx. [twenty] dayes vyage, they come to the citie of Aſoph tributarie to the Turkes: which is (as they ſay) fyue dayes iorney frome the ſtreight of Taurica, otherwyſe cauled Precop. In this citie is a famous mart towne vnto the which reſort many marchauntes of dyuers nations, and from dyuers partes of the worlde. For, that all nations may the gladlyer haue recourſe thyther, free lybertie of bying and ſellynge is graunted vnto all: and that withowt the citie euery man may freely vſe his owne and accuſtomed maner of lyuynge withowt punyſſhement.

The ſpringes of Tanais.
A great lake.
The ryuer Schat.
Caſan.
Aſtrachan.
Meotis.
Tulla.
Achas.
Frutefull regions abowt Tanais.
Plentie of wylde beaſtes.
Fire and ſalt.
Where Tanais is fyrſte nauygable.
Aſoph.
The marte of Aſoph.
Libertie allureth ſtrangers

Of the altares of great Alexander and Iulius Ceſar whiche many wryters make mention of in this place, or of theyr ruines, I coulde haue no certeyne knowleage of th[e]inhabitauntes or any other that had oftentymes trauayled theſe places. Furthermore the ſouldyers whiche the prince of Moſcouia maynteyneth there yearely to oppreſſe th[e]incurſions of the Tartars, beinge of me demaunded hereof, anſwered that they neuer ſawe or harde of any ſuch thynge. Neuertheleſſe, they ſayde that abowt the mouthes of Tanais the leſſe, foure dayes iorney from Aſoph nere vnto a place cauled Scwerſki, by the holy mountaynes, they ſawe certeyne images of ſtone and marble. Tanais the leſſe, hath his ſprynges in the dukedome of Scwerſki: whereof it is cauled Donetz Scwerſki: and ſauleth into Tanais three dayes iorney aboue Aſoph. But ſuche as iorney from Moſcouia to Aſoph by lande, they, paſſynge ouer Tanais abowt the owlde and ruinate towne of Donco, doo ſumwhat turne from the ſouth to the Eaſte: In the which place, if a ryght line bee drawen from the mouthes of Tanais to the ſpringes of the ſame, Moſcouia ſhalbe found to bee in Aſia and not in Europe.

The altars of Alexander and Cesar.
The holy mountaynes.
Tanais the lesse.
From Moscouia to Asoph.
Moscouia in Asia and not in Europe.

¶ *More directly from Moſcouia to Cathay.*

THe great and large prouince of Permia, is dyſtante from Moſcouia two hundreth and fyftie or (as ſum ſay) three hundreth leaques directly betwene the Eaſt and North: And hath a citie of the ſame name by the ryuer Viſchora which runneth. x. leaques beneth Kamam. The iorney by lande can ſcarſely bee trauayled thyther but in wynter by reaſon of many ryuers, maryſſhes, and fennes. But in ſommer, this iorney is diſpatched with more facilitie in boates or ſmaule ſhippes by Vuolochda, Vſtiug, and the ryuer Vitzechda which runneth into Dwina. xii. leaques from Vſtiug. But they that go from Permia to Vſtiug, muſte ſayle vp the ryuer Viſchora againſt the courſe of the ſtreame: and paſſing ouer certeyne ryuers, ſumtymes alſo conueyinge theyr boates into other ryuers by lande, they come at the length to Vſtiug three hundreth leaques diſtant frome the citie of Permia. There is ſmaule vſe of breade in this prouince. For theyr yearely tribute, they pay to the prynce furres and horſes. They haue a priuate language, and letters of theyr owne, whiche one Steuen a byſſhop (who confirmed them yet waueryng in the fayth) dyd inuente. For before beinge yet infantes in the fayth of Chryſte, they ſlewe and fleyde an other byſſhop that was appoynted to inſtructe them. This Steuen afterwarde when Demetrius the ſonne of Iohn reigned, was taken for a faynte amonge the Ruthens. Of theſe people there yet remayne many Idolatours here and there in the woods, whom the moonkes and heremites that go thyther, doo not ceaſe to conuert from theyr vayne errour. In the wynter they iorney in Artachas they doo in many places of Ruſſia. Artach, are certeyne longe patentes of woodde of almoſt ſyxe handfuls in length,

The prouince of Permia.
Marysshes in sommer.
Dwina.
Vstiug.
Tribute.
Fur. s and horses.
Monkes and heremites.
Patentes.

Marcus Paulus wryteth that these dogges are almost as byg as Asses: and that they vse syxe to one sleade.

whiche they make faſte to theyr fiete with latchettes, and therwith performe theyr iorneys with great celeritie. They vſe for this purpoſe greate dogges in the ſteade of other beaſtes, with the which they cary theyr farthels on ſleades, as other doo with hartes in other places, as we wyll further declare hereafter. They ſay that that prouince toward the Eaſt confineth with the prouince cauled Tumen, perteynynge to the Tartars.

Iugaria.

The ſituation of the prouince of Iugaria, is apparente by that which we haue ſayde before. The Moſcouites caule it Iuhra with an aſpiration: and caule the people Iuhrici. This is that Iugaria from whenſe the Hungarians came in tyme paſte, poſſeſſed Pannonia, and vnder the conduct of Attila, ſubdued many prouinces of Europe: wherin the Moſcouites doo greatly glory, that a nation ſubiecte to them, inuaded and waſted a great parte of Europe. Georgius Paruus a greeke borne, and a man of reputation with the Prince of Moſcouia, wyllynge to aſcribe to the ryght of his prince the great dukedome of Lithuania, and the kyngedome of Polonie with certeyne other dominions, toulde me that the Iuharici or Iuhgary, beinge ſubiectes to the great duke of Moſcouia, came furth of theyr owne countrey, and fyrſte inhabited the regions abowt the fennes of Meotis, and then Pannonie which was afterwarde cauled Hungarie, by the ryuer of Danubius: Alſo that in fine they poſſeſſed the region of Morauia ſo named of the ryuer: and lykewyſe Pollonie, ſo cauled of Polle, which ſignifieth a playne. Furthermore that Buda was ſo cauled after the name of the brother of Attila. They ſay alſo that the Iuhgari vſe the ſame tounge that doo the Hungarians. The which whether it be trew or not, I do not knowe. For althowgh I haue made diligent inquiſition to knowe the truth hereof, yet coulde I fynde no man of that region with whom my ſeruaunt beinge expert in the Hungarian tounge myght ſpeake. They alſo pay furres for theyr tributes to the prince of Moſcouia. And albeit that pearles and precious ſtones are brought frome thenſe to Moſcouia, yet are they not gathered in theyr Ocean, but in other places: eſpecially about the coaſt of the Ocean nere vnto the mouthes of Dwina.

Hungaria.

Pannonia.

Attila.

The hygher or superyor Hungarye, is cauled Austria.

Polonie.

Buda.

Furres.

Pearles and precious stones.

Sibier.

The prouince of Sibier, confineth with Permia and Vuiathka: The whiche, whether it haue any caſtels or cities, I doo not yet certeynly knowe. In this the ryuer Iaick hathe his originall, and fauleth into the Caſpian ſea. They ſaye that this region is deſerte bycauſe it lyeth ſo neare the Tartars: Or that yf it bee in any parte inhabited, the ſame to be poſſeſſed of the Tartar Schichmamai. Th[e]inhabitantes haue a peculiar language: and haue theyr chiefe gaynes by the furres of marterns, which in fayrenes and greatnes, excell all the furres of that kynde that are founde in any other prouinces. Yet coulde I haue no great plentie of them in Moſcouia at my beinge there.

Aspreolos, I thynk to be marterns: yet sum think them to be squerels Gesnerus wryteth that the kyngs of the Tartars haue theyre tentes couered withowt wyth the skynnes of lyons: and within, with the skynnes of sables and Ermynes.

Note that longe after the writyng of this hyſtorie, at Rycharde Chaunceler his fyrſt being in Moſcouia, Duke Iohn Vaſilivich that nowe raygneth, ſubdued all the Tartars with theyr regions and prouinces euen vnto the great citie and mart towne of Aſtrachan and the Caſpian ſea. At the ſame tyme alſo, there was in the dukes court an ambaſſadour that came frome this prouince of Sibier: who declared that his father had byn ſent ambaſſadour to the great Chan of Cathay. And that the great citie of Cambalu where the great Chan kepeth his courte in winter, was in maner deſtroyed by Necromancie and magicall artes wherin the Cathaynes are very expert as wryteth Marcus Paulus Venetus. Ther was alſo at the ſame tyme th[e]ambaſſadour of the kynge of Perſia cauled the great Sophie. This ambaſſadour was appareled all in ſcarlet, and ſpake much to the duke in the behalfe of owre men, of whoſe kyngdome and trade he was not ignorant.

299

Czeremisse.

The people cauled Czeremiſſe, dwell in the wooddes beneth Nouogardia the lower. They haue a peculiar language and are of the ſecte of Machumet. They were ſumtyme ſubiecte to the kynge of Caſan: but the greater part of them are nowe ſubiecte to the prince of Moſcouia. Many of them at my beinge there, were brought to Moſcouia, as ſuſpected of rebellion. This nation doth inhabite a large region withowt houſes from Vuiathka and Vuolochda, to the ryuer of Kama All the nation aſwell women as men, are very ſwyft of foote, and expert archers: wherein they ſo delite, that theyr bowes are in maner neuer owt of theyr handes: and gyue theyr children no meate vntyl they hyt the marke they ſhoote at.

Habitacion without houses.

Two leaques diſtante from Nouogardia the lower, were many houſes to the ſimilitude of a citie or towne where they were accuſtomed to make ſalte. Theſe a fewe yeares ſence beinge burnt of the Tartars, were reſtored by the commaundement of the prince.

Salte.

Mordwa, are people inhabytynge by the ryuer of Volga on the ſouth banke beneth Nouogardia the lower: And are in al thynges like vnto the Czeremiſſes but that they haue more houſes. And here endeth Th[e]mpire of the Moſcouites.

Note here that Matthias of Michou, in his booke of Sarmatia Aſiatica, writeth that the dominion of the duke of Moſcouia recheth from the northweſt to the ſoutheaſt fyue hundreth myles of Germanie, which are more then leaques. For they affirme that a Germane myle is more then three Englyſſhe myles.

¶ *Of the Tartars.*

WEe wyll nowe adde hereunto ſumwhat of the people confinynge with the Moſcouites towarde the Eaſt: of the which the Tartars of Caſan are the firſt. But before wee ſpeake of them particularly, wee wyl fyrſt reherſe ſumwhat of theyr maners and cuſtomes in generall.

The Tartars of Casan.

The Tartars are diuided into companies which they caul Hordas, of the which the Horda of the Sawolhenſes is the chiefe in fame and multitude. For it is ſayde that the other Hordas had theyr offſprynge and original of this. And albeit that euery Horda hath his peculiar name, as the Sawolhenſes, Precropenſes, and Nahays with dyuers other being all Machumetans, yet doo they take it euyll and count it reproch to bee cauled Turkes: but wyll them ſelues to bee cauled Beſermani, by the which name alſo the Turkes deſyre to bee cauled.

Horda.

Besermani.

And as the Tartars inhabyte many prouynces reachynge far on euery ſyde, euen ſo in maners and order of lyuynge doo they not agree in all thynges. They are men of meane ſtature, with broade and fat faces, holowe eyde, with roughe and thyck beardes, and poulde heades. Onely the noble men haue longe heare, and that exceadyng black, which they wreath on both ſydes theyr eares. They are ſtronge of body and ſtoute of mynde: prone to leacherye, and that vnnaturall. They eate the fleaſſhe of horſes, camells, and otl er beaſtes excepte hogges, from which they abſteyne by a lawe. They can ſo abyde faſting and hunger, that they ſumtime forbeare meate and ſleepe for the ſpace of foure dayes, occupyed neuertheleſſe aboute theyr neceſſary affayres. Ageyne when they gette any thyng to deuoure, they ingorge them ſelues beyond meaſure: and with that ſurfecte in maner recompenſe theyr former abſtynence. And beynge thus oppreſſed with laboure and meate, they ſleepe contynually for the ſpace of three or foure days without doyng any maner of worke or labour: durynge which tyme the Lyuons and Moſcouites into whoſe domynyons they are accuſtomed to make theyr incurſions, aſſayle them vnwares thus oppreſſed with meate and ſleepe, lynge ſcatered here and there owt of order withowte watch or warde. Alſo if when they ryde, they bee moleſted with hunger and thyrſte, they vſe to lette theyr horſes blud, and with drynkyng the ſame, ſatyffye theyr preſent neceſſytie, and affyrme theyr horſes to bee the better therby. And bicauſe they all wander in vnknowen places, they vſe to dyrect theyr iorneys by th[e]-aſpecte of the ſtarres, and eſpecyally of the pole ſtarre, which in theyr tounge they caule Sele[n]ikoll, (that is) an iren nayle. They greatly delyte in mares mylke, and beleue that it maketh men ſtrong and fatte. They eate herbes very much: and eſpecially ſuch as growe abowt Tanais. Fewe of them vſe ſalte. When theyr kynges dyſtrybute any vytayles among them, they are accuſtomed to gyue one horſe or cowe to fortye men. Of the ſlayne beaſte, the bowells and trypes are reſerued for the chiefe men and cap[t]aynes. Theſe they heate at the fyre vntyll they may ſhake owt the doonge, and then deuoure them gredely. They ſucke and lycke, not only theyr fyngers imbrued with fatte, but alſo theyr knyues and ſtyckes wherwith they ſcrape the doong from the guttes. The heades of horſes are counted delycate diſſhes with them as are bores heades with vs: and are reſerued only for the chyefe men. Theyr horſes (wherof they haue great aboundaunce) are but ſmaule, and with ſhort neckes: but very ſtrong and ſuch as can wel away with labour and hunger. Theſe they fede with the branches and barkes or ryndes of trees and the rotes of hearbes and weedes, wherby they accuſtome them to hard feedynge, and exercyſe them to contynuall laboure: by reaſon wherof (as ſay the Moſcouytes) theyr horſes are ſwyfter and more durable then any other. Theſe kynde of horſes, they caule Pachmat. They haue none other ſaddells and ſteroppes then of woodd, except ſuche as they eyther bye of the Chryſtians, or take from them by vyolence. Leaſt theyr horſe backes ſhulde bee hurte with theyr ſaddells, they vnderlaye them with graſſe and leaues of trees. They alſo paſſe ouer ryuers on horſback. But if when they flye, they feare the purſuynge of theyr enemyes, then caſtynge away theyr ſaddells, apparelle, and all other impedymentes, reſeruyng only theyr armoure and weapons they flye amayne and with greate celeritie.

They absteine from hogges flesshe.

Abstinence.

Voracitie.

So doo the Turkes

Iorneying by the pole star.

Mares mylke

Horse flesshe eaten.

Clenly.

300

Hors[e] heades, deintie meate

The Tartars horses.

Saddells and styrrops of wodde.

Theyr women vſe the ſame kynde of apparell that doo the men withowt any dyfference except that they couer theyr heades with lynnen vayles, and vſe lynnen hoſe muche lyke vnto maryners ſloppes. When theyr queenes coome abrod, they are accuſtomed to couer theyr faces. The other multytude of the common ſorte that lyueth here and ther in the feeldes, haue theyr apparell made of ſheepes ſkynnes, which they chaung[e] not vntyll they bee worne and torne to fytters. They tarye not longe in one place, iudgyng it a great myſery ſo to doo: In ſo muche that when they are angrie with theyr chyldren, the greateſt curſe that they can gyue them, is that they maye remayne perpetually in one place, and drawe the ſtynſhe of theyr owne fylthyneſſe as doo the Chryſtyans. When they haue conſumed the paſture in one place, they go to an other with theyr droues of cattayle and theyr wyues and chyldren whom they euer cary about with them in Wagons: albeit the Tartars that dwell in cities and townes, vſe an other order of lyuynge. If they be incloſed with any daungerous warre,

The Tartars women.

The Tartars curse.

No iuſtice amonge the Tartars.

they place theyr wyues, chyldren, and owld folkes, in the ſaueſt places. There is no iuſtice amonge them. For if any man ſtande in neade of any thynge, he may withowt punnyſſhemente take it awaye from an other. If any complayſie to the Iudge of the vyolence and wronge doonne vnto hym, the offender denyeth not the cryme, but ſayth that he coulde not lacke that thyng. Then the Iudge is wonte to gyue thys ſentence: If thowe alſo ſhalte haue neede of any thynge doo the lyke to other. Sum ſay they do not ſteale: But whether they ſteale or not, lette other iudge. They are ſurely a theeuyſſhe kynd of men and very poore, lyuynge only by robbyng of other, and ſtealyng away other mens cattayle, and vyolently alſo caryynge awaye the men them ſelues whom eyther they ſelle to the Turkes or proffer them to bee redemed by ranſome, reſeruynge only the younge wenches. They ſeldome aſſaulte cities or caſtells, but burne and waſte townes and vyllagyes: In ſo muche that they ſo pleaſe them ſelues herin, that they thynke they haue ſo muche the more inlarged their empire, in howe muche they haue waſted and made deſolate manye prouynces. And althowgh they bee moſte impacyent of reſte and quyetneſſe, yet doo they not kyll or deſtroye one an other, excepte theyr kynges bee at deſſention betweene them ſelues. If any man bee ſlaine in any fraye or quarel, and the autours of the myſchefe bee taken, only theyr horſſe, harneſſe, weapons, and apparell, are taken from them, and they diſmiſſed. So that the murtherer by the loſſe of a vyle horſe or a bowe, is dyſcharged of the Iudge with theſe woordes: gette the henſe and goo abowte thy buſyneſſe. They haue no vſe of golde and ſyluer, excepte only a fewe marchauntes: But exerſyſe exchaunge of ware for ware. And if it ſo chaunce that by ſellyng of ſuch thynges as they haue ſtolne, they gette any monye of theyr bortherers, they bye therwith certeyne apparel and other neceſſaryes of the Moſcouites.

The feelde Tartars.

The regyons of theyr habytations (the feelde Tartars I meane) are not lymytted with any boundes or borthers.

A mery tale.

There was on a tyme a certeyne fatte Tartar taken pryſoner of the Moſcouites: to whom when the prynce ſayd, How art thow ſo fatte thowe dogge, ſythe thowe haſte not to eate, the Tartar anſwered, Why ſhulde not I haue to eate ſythe I poſſeſſe ſo large a land from the Eaſt to the weſt, wherby I may bee abundauntely nuryſſhed? But thowe mayſte rather ſeeme to lacke, ſyth thowe inhabyteſt ſo ſmaule a portion of the worlde, and duſte daylye ſtryue for the ſame.

301

Caſan.

Caſan, is a kyngedome, alſo a citie, and a caſtell of the ſame name, ſituate by the ryuer Volga on the further banke, almoſt threſcore and tenne leaques beneath Nouogardia the lower. Alonge by the courſe of Volga towarde the Eaſt and South, it is termined with deſerte fyeldes. Towarde the ſommer Eaſt, it confineth with the Tartars cauled Schibanſki, and Koſatzki. The kynge of this prouince, is able to make an army of. xxx. [thirty] thouſande men, eſpecially foote men, of the which the Czeremiſſe and Czubaſchi are moſt expert archers. The Czubaſchi are alſo cunnynge maryners. The citie of Caſan, is threſcore leaques diſtant from the principal caſtel Vuiathka. Furthermore, Caſan in the Tartars language, ſignifieth a braſen potte boylynge. Theſe Tartars are more ciuile then the other. For they dwell in houſes, tyll the grownde, and exerciſe the trade of marchaundies. They were of late ſubdued by Baſilius the greate duke of Moſcouia, and had theyr kynge aſſigned them at his arbitriment. But ſhortely after, they rebelled ageine: and aſſociate with other Tartars, inuaded the region of Moſcouia, ſpoyled and waſted many cities and townes, and ledde away innumerable captiues, euen from the citie Moſcouia which they poſſeſſed for a tyme, and had vtterly deſtroyed the ſame if it had not byn for the valyantneſſe of the Almayne gunners which kept the caſtell with great ordinaunce. They alſo putte duke Baſilius to flyght, and cauſed him to make a letter of his owne hande to Machmetgirei theyr kynge to acknowleage hym ſelfe for a perpetuall tributarie to them, wheruppon they diſſolued the ſiege, and gaue the Moſcouites free libertie to redeeme theyr captiues and gooddes, and ſo departed. But Baſilius not longe able to abyde this contumelie and diſhonour, after that he had putte to death ſuche as by flyinge at the fyrſt encounterynge were the cauſe of this ouerthrowe, aſſembled an armye of a hundreth and foureſcore thouſande men ſhortely after in the yeare. 1523. And ſent forwarde his army vnder the conducte of his Lieuetenaunte: and therewith an heralde at armes to bydde battayle to Machmetgirei the kynge of Caſan, with woordes in this effecte: The laſt yeare lyke a theeſe and robber withowt bydding of battayle, thou dyddeſte pryuilie oppreſſe me. Wherefore I nowe chalenge the, once ageyne to proue the fortune of warre if thou myſtruſte not thyne owne poure. To this the kynge anſwered, that there were manye wayes open for hym to inuade Moſcouia: And that the warres haue no leſſe reſpect to the commoditie of tyme and place then of armure or ſtrength: And that he wold take th[e]aduantage therof when and where it ſhulde ſeeme beſt to him and not to other. With which woordes Baſilius beinge greatly accenſed and burnyng with deſyre of reuenge, inuaded the kyngdome of Caſan: whoſe kynge beinge ſtryken with ſuddeyne feare at th[e]approche of ſo terrible an army, aſſigned the gouernance of his kyngdome to the younge kynge of Taurica his neuie, whyle he hym ſelfe went to requyre ayde of the Emperour of the Turkes. But in fine the kynge of Caſan ſubmytted hym ſelfe vppon certeyne conditions of peace whiche the Moſcouites dyd the gladlyer excepte for that time becauſe theyr vittayles fayled them to mayntеyne ſo great a multitude. But wheras duke Baſilius hym ſelfe was not preſent at this laſt expedition, he greatly ſuſpected Palitzki the Lieuetenaunte of th[e]army to bee corrupted with brybes to proceade no further. In this meane tyme, the kynge of Caſan ſent ambaſſadours to Baſilius to

The prince of Moscouia tributary to the Tartars.

Duke Basilius army ageynst the Tartars.

The towne Tartars.

Moscouia inuaded by the Tartars.

The kynge of Casan submitteth hym selfe.

The kynge of Casan.

Archers.

Maryners.

intreate of peace: whome I. ſawe in the dukes courte at my beynge there: but I coulde perceaue no hope of peace to bee betwene them. For euen then, Baſilius to endomage the Caſans, tranſlated the marte to Nouogardia, which before was accuſtomed to bee kepte in the Ilande of marchauntes nere vnto the citie of Caſan: Commaundyng alſo vnder peyne of greuous punyſſhemente that none of his ſubiectes ſhulde reſorte to the Ilande of marchauntes: thynkynge that this tranſlation of the marte ſhulde greately haue endomaged the Caſans: and that only by takyng away their trade of ſalte (which they were accuſtomed to bye of the Moſcouites at that marte) they ſhulde haue byn compelled to ſubmyſſion. But the Moſcouites them ſelues felte no leſſe inconuenience hereby then dyd the Caſans, by reaſon of the dearth and ſcarſeneſſe that folowed hereof of al ſuch thynges as the Tartars were accuſtomed to brynge thyther by the ryuer of Volga from the Caſpian ſea, the kyngedomes of Perſia and Armenia, and the marte towne of Aſtrachan: eſpecially the great number of moſt excellent fyſſhes that are taken in Volga both on the hyther and further ſyde of Caſan.

The Iland of marchauntes

The Caspian sea. Persia. Armenia. Astrachan.

But hauynge ſayde thus much of the warres betwene the Prince of Moſcouia and the Tartars of Caſan, we wyll now procede to ſpeake ſumwhat of the other Tartars inhabytyng the regions towarde the ſoutheaſt and the Caſpian ſea. 302

Next beyonde the Tartars of Caſan, are the Tartars cauled Nagai or Nogai, which inhabite the regions beyond Volga abowt the Caſpian ſea at the ryuer Iaick, runnyng owt of the prouince of Sibier. Theſe haue no kynges but dukes. In owre tyme, three bretherne diuydynge the prouinces equally betwene them, poſſeſſed theſe dukedomes. The fyrſt of them named Schidack, poſſeſſeth the citie of Scharaitzick, beyond the ryuer of Rha or Volga towarde the Eaſte, with the region confinynge with the ryuer Iaick. The ſeconde cauled Coſſum, enioyeth all the lande that lyethe betwene the ryuers of Kaman Iaick and Volga. The thyrde brother named Schichmamai, poſſeſſeth parte of the prouince of Sibier and all the region abowt the ſame. Schichmamai, is as much to ſay by interpretacion, as holy or myghty. And in maner al theſe regions are full of wooddes, excepte that that lyeth towarde Scharaitz, which conſyſteth of playnes and fyeldes.

The Tartars neare to the Caspian sea. Nogai. The possession of three brytherne.

Betwene the ryuers of Volga and Iaick, abowt the Caſpian ſea, there ſumtymes inhabyted the kynges cauled Sawolhenſes. Demetrius Danielis (a man among theſe barbarians, of ſinguler fayth and grauitie) toulde vs of a maruelous and in maner incredible thyng that is ſene among theſe Tartars. And that his father beinge ſente by the prynce of Moſcouia to the kynge of Sawolhenſe, ſawe whyle he was in that legacie, a certeyne ſeede in that Ilande ſumwhat leſſe and rounder then the ſeedes of Melones: Of the whiche beinge hydde in the grounde, there groweth a frute or plante very lyke a lambe, of the heyght of fyue ſpannes: And is therfore cauled in theyr tounge Boranetz, which ſignifyeth a lyttle lamb. For it hath the headde, eyes, eares, and all other partes like vnto a lambe newly eyned: with alſo a very thynne ſkynne wherwith dyuers of th[e]inhabitauntes of thoſe regions are accuſtomed to line theyr cappes and hattes and other tyrements for theyr heades. Many alſo confirmed in owre preſence that they had ſeene theſe ſkynnes. He ſayde furthermore that that plant (if it may bee cauled a plant) hath bludde, and no fleſſhe: but hath in the ſteade of fleſſhe a certeyne ſubſtance like vnto the fleſſhe of creuyſſhes. The hoofes alſo are not of horne as are the lambes, but couered with heare in the ſame forme. The roote cleaueth to the nauell or myddeſt of the belly. The plante or fruite lyueth vntyll all the graſſe and herbes growynge abowte it beinge eaten, the roote wythereth for lacke of nuryſſhement. They ſay that it is very ſweete to bee eaten, and is therefore greately deſyred and ſought for of the woolues and other rauenynge beaſtes. And albeit I exſteme all that is ſayde of this plant to be fabulous, yet foraſmuch as it hath byn toulde me of credible perſons, I haue thought good to make mention hereof.

The kynges cauled Sawolhenses.

A maruelous frute lyke a lambe.

Of this ſtraunge frute, Mandeuell maketh mention, where in the. lxxxiiii. [eighty-fourth] chapiture of his booke he wryteth thus: Nowe ſhall I ſay of ſum landes, countreys, and Iles that are beyonde the lande of Cathay. Therfore who ſo goeth from Cathay to India the hygh and the lowe, he ſhall go through a kyngedome that men caule Cadiſſen, and is a great lande. There groweth a maner of frute as it were gourdes. And when it is rype, men cut it a ſunder: and fynd therein a beaſt as it were of fleſſhe, bone, and bludde, as it were a lyttle lambe withowt wolle. And men eate that beaſt and the frute alſo, which is a great maruayle. Neuertheleſſe, I ſayde vnto them that I helde that for no maruayle. For I ſayde that in my countrey are tres that beare frute that become byrdes flying which are good to bee eaten. And that that fauleth into the water lyueth: And that that fauleth on the earth dyeth. And they had greate maruayle of this. etc.

Mandeuell.

Barnacles of the Orkeneys.

From the prince of Schidack, proceadyng. xx. [twenty] dayes iorney towarde the Eaſt. are the people which the Moſcouites caule Iurgenci, whoſe prince is Barack Soltan, brother to the greate Chan of Cathay. In tenne dayes iorney from Barack Soltan, they coomme to Bebeid Chan. And this is that great Chan of Cathay.

Barack Soltan. Cathay.

Names of dignities amonge the Tartars, are theſe, Chan, ſignifieth a kynge, Soltan, the ſoonne of a kynge. Bii, a Duke. Murſa, the ſoonne of a duke. Olboud, a noble man or counſiler. Olboadulu, the ſoonne of a noble man. Seid, the hygh preſte. Kſi, a priuate perſon.

Names of dignities amonge the Tartars.

The names of offices are theſe: Vlan, the ſeconde dignitie to the kynge. For the kynges of the Tartars haue foure principall men whoſe counſayle they vſe in al theyr weyghty affayres. Of theſe the fyrſte is cauled Schirni: the ſeconde Barni: the thyrde, Gargni: The fourth, Tziptzan. And to haue ſayde thus muche of the Tartars, it ſhall ſuffice.

Names of offices.

303
Chan Cublai.

Marcus Paulus wryteth that the greate Chan, is cauled Chan Cublai that is, the great kynge of kynges: as the greate turcke wryteth hym ſelfe in lyke maner, as I ſawe in a letter wrytten by hym of late to the citie of Raguſa, in the which he vſeth this ſubſcription: Soltan Soliman de ſelim Cham Signore de Signori in ſempiterno. As concernynge Moſcouia and Cathay, I was mynded to haue added hereunto dyuers other thynges, but that for certeyne conſiderations I was perſuaded to proceade no further. Vnto whoſe requeſte, herein ſatiſſyinge rather other then my ſelfe, wyllynge otherwyſe to haue accomplyſſhed this booke to further perfection, I was content to agree for two cauſes eſpecially mouynge me: wherof the one is, that as touchynge theſe trades and vyages, as in maner in all other ſciences, there are certeyne ſecreates not to bee publyſſhed and made common to all men. The other cauſe is, that the parteners at whoſe charge this booke is prynted, although the coppy wherof they haue wrought a longe ſpace haue coſt them nought doo not neuertheleſſe ceaſe dayly to caule vppon me to make an end and proceade no further: affirmynge that the booke wyll bee of to great a pryce and not euery mans money: fearyng rather theyr owne loſſe and hynderaunce, then carefull to bee beneficiall to other, as is nowe in maner the trade of all men, which ordinarie reſpecte of priuate commoditie hath at this tyme ſo lyttle moued me, I take god to wytneſſe, that for my paynes and trauayles taken herein ſuch as they bee, I may vppon iuſt occaſion thynke my ſelfe a looſer manye wayes, except ſuch men of good inclination as ſhall take pleaſure and feele ſum commoditie in the knowleage of theſe thynges, ſhall thynke me woorthy theyr good woorde, wherwith I ſhal repute my ſelfe and my trauayles ſo abundantly ſatiſfyed, that I ſhall repute other mens gaynes a recompenſe for my loſſes, as they may bee in deede, yf men bee not vnthankefull, which only vice of ingratitude hath hyndered the worlde of many benefites.

☞ *The nauigation by the froſen ſea.*

AT my beinge in Moſcouia when I was ſent thyther by kynge Ferdinando my lorde and maſter, it ſo chaunſed that Georgius Iſtoma the duke of Moſcouia his interpretour, a man of great experience who hadde before lerned the latin tounge in the court of Iohn kynge of Denmarke, was there preſent at the ſame tyme. He in the yeare of Chryſt. 1496. beinge ſente of his prince with maſter Dauid a ſcotte borne and then ambaſſadour for the kynge of Denmarke, (whom alſo I knewe there at my fyrſt legacie) made me a breefe information of all th[e]order of his iorney. The which, foraſmuch as it may ſeeme difficult and laborious aſwel for the diſtaunce as daungerous places, I haue thought good to deſcribe the ſame as I receaued it at his mouth.

Nouogardia.

Fyrſt he ſayde that beinge ſent of his prince with the ſayd Dauid, they came fyrſt to Nouogardia the great.

Suecia vnder the kynge of Denmarke.

And wher as at that tyme the kyngedome of Suecia reuolted frome the kynge of Denmarke, and alſo the duke of Moſcouia was at diſcention with the Suetians, by reaſon wherof they coulde not paſſe by the moſt accuſtomed way for the tumultes of war they attempted theyr iorney by an other way longer but ſafer And came fyrſt from Nouogardia to the mouthes of the ryuer of Dwina and Potiwlo, by a very difficult and paynefull iorney. For he ſayd that this iorney which can not bee to muche deteſted for ſuche laboures and trauayles, continueth for the ſpace of three hundreth leaques. In fine, takyng foure ſmaul ſhyppes or barkes at the mouthes of Dwina, they ſayled by the coaſte on the ryght hande of the Ocean, where they ſawe certeyne hyghe and rowgh mountaynes: and at the lengthe ſaylynge. xvi. [ſixteen] leaques, and paſſynge a great goulfe, folowed the coaſte on the lefte hande: And leauyng on the ryght hand the large ſea which the name of the ryuer Petzora (as haue alſo the mountaynes adiacent to the ſame) they came to the people of Finlappia: who, although they dwell here and there in lowe cottagies by the ſea ſyde, and leade in maner a beaſtly lyfe, yet are they more meeke and tractable then the wylde Lappians. He ſayde that theſe alſo are tributaries to the prince of Moſcouia. Then leauynge the lande of the Lappians, and ſaylynge foureſcore leaques, they came to the region of Nortpoden vnder the dominion of the kynge of Suecia. This the Moſcouites caule Kaienſka Semla, and the people Kayeni. Departynge from henſe, and ſaylynge alonge by the coaſte of a wyndynge and bendynge ſhore reachyng towarde the ryght hand, they came to a promontorie or cape cauled the Holy noſe, beinge a greate ſtone reachynge farre into the ſea to the ſimilitude of a noſe: vnder the whiche is ſeene a caue with a whyrlepoole which ſwalow[e]th the ſea euery ſyxe houres: and caſtynge furth the ſame ageyne with terryble rorynge and violence, cauſeth the ſayde whyrlepoole. Sum caule this the nauell of the ſea: and other name it Charybdis. He affirmeth that the violence of this ſwalowynge goulfe is ſuch, that it draweth into it, inuoluyth, and ſwalowyth vp ſhyppes and al other thynges that comme neare it: and that they were neuer in greater daungioure. For the whyrlepoole ſo ſuddeynly and violentely drewe vnto it the ſhyppe or barke wherin they were caryed, that with the helpe of ores and great labour they hardly eſcaped. When they had thus ouerpaſſed the holy noſe, they came to a certeyne ſtonye mountayne which they ſhulde needes compaſſe abowte. But beinge there ſtayed with contrary wyndes for the ſpace of certeyne dayes, the pylotte of the ſhippe ſpake vnto them in this effecte: This ſtone (ſayth he) that yowe ſee, is cauled Semes: The which excepte we pleaſe with ſumme gyfte, wee ſhall not paſſe by withowt great daungiour. But the pylot beinge reproued of Iſtoma for his vayne ſuperſtition, helde his peace. And when they had byn deteined ther by tempeſt for the ſpace of foure days, at the length

Hygh mountaynes neare the north Ocean.

Finlappia.

The wylde Lappians.

The region of Nortpoden

The cape cauled the holy nose.

A whyrlpoole or swalowing goulfe.

304
Such whyrlepooles, are cauled vipers

The stone cauled Semes.

Superstition.

the tempeſt ceaſed and they went forwarde on theyr vyage with a proſperous wynd. Then the pilotte ſpake vnto them ageyne, ſayinge: You deſpiſed my admonicion of pleaſynge the Semes, and ſcorned the ſame as vayne and ſuperſtitious. But if I had not priuilie in the nyght aſcended a rocke and pleaſed the Semes, wee ſhulde ſurely haue had no paſſage. Beinge demaunded what he offered to the Semes, he ſayde that he poured butter myxt with otemele vpon the ſtone which wee ſawe reache furth into the ſea. As they ſayled further, they came to an other cape named Motka, which was almoſt enuironed with the ſea lyke an Ilande: in whoſe extreme poynte, is ſituate the caſtell of Barthus, which ſum caule Wardhus, (that is) a houſe of defence or fortreſſe. For the kynges of Norway haue there a garryſon of men to defende theyr marches. He ſayde furthermore that that cape reacheth ſo farre into the ſea, that they coulde ſcarſely compaſſe it in eyght dayes. By which tarying leaſte they ſhulde bee hyndered, they caryed on theyr ſhulders with greate laboure, theyr barkes and ſardelles ouer a ſtreyght of lande conteynyng halfe a leaque in breadth. From henſe they ſayled to the region of the wyld Lappones, cauled Dikilappones to a place named Dront, beinge. CC. [two hundred] leaques diſtant from Dwina towarde the North. And thus farre as he ſayth, doth the prince of Moſcouia exacte tribute. Furthermore leauyng theyr barkes here, they fynyſſhed the reſidue of theyr iorney on ſleades. He further declared that there were heardes of hartes as are with vs of oxen, whiche in the Noruegians tounge are cauled Rhen, beinge ſumwhat bygger then owre hartes. Theſe the Lappones vſe in this maner. They ioyne them to ſleades made lyke fyſſher botes, as wee put horſes to the carte. The man in the ſleade, is tyed faſt by the feete leaſt he fall owte by the ſwyfte courſe of the hartes. In his lefte hande, he holdeth a collar or rayne wherwith he moderateth the courſe of the hartes: and in the ryght hand, a pyked ſtaffe wherwith he may ſuſteine the ſleade from faulyng if it chaunce to decline to much on any part. And he toulde me that by this meanes he trauayled twentie leaques in one daye, and then diſmyſſed the harte, who by hym ſelfe returned to his owne maſter and accuſtomed ſtable. This iorney thus fynyſſhed, they came to Berges a citie of Norduegia or Norway, ſituate directly towarde the northe betwene the mountaynes: and wente from thenſe to Denmarke on horſebacke. At Dront and Berges, the day is ſayde to bee. xxii. [twenty-two] houres longe in the ſommer Equinoctiall. Blaſius an other of the prynce of Moſcouia his interpretours, who a fewe yeares before, was ſent of his prince into Spayne to Th[e]emperour, declared vnto vs an other and ſhorter way of his iorney. For he ſayde that when he was ſent from Moſcouia to Iohn the kyng of Denmarke, he came fyrſte on foote vnto Roſtowe: And takynge ſhyppe there, came to Pereaſlaw: and from Pereaſlaw by the ryuer Volga to Caſtromow: and that frome thenſe goynge ſeuen Werſtes by lande, he came to a lyttle ryuer: ſaylynge by the which, when fyrſt he came to Vuolochda, then to Suchana, and Dwina, and in fine to the citie of Berges in Norway, ouerpaſſynge in this vyage all the perelles and laboures that Iſtoma rehearſed before, he came at the length to Hafnia the chiefe citie of Denmarke, whiche the Germaynes caule Koppenhagen. But in theyr returnynge home, they both confeſſe that they came to Moſcouia by Liuonia: and that they were a yeare in this vyage: Albeit Georgius Iſtoma, ſayde that halfe the parte of that tyme, he was hyndered by tempeſtes, and inforced to tary longe in many places by the waye. Yet they both lykewyſe conſtantely affirme that in this iorney eyther of them trauayled a thouſand threeſcore and ten Werſtes (that is) three hundreth and fortie leaques. Furthermore alſo Demetrius who of late was ſent ambaſſadour from the prynce of Moſcouia to the byſſhoppe of Rome, (by whoſe relation alſo Paulus Iouius wrote his deſcription of Moſcouia) confirmed all theſe thynges to bee trewe. All they being demaunded of me of the congeled or froſen ſea, made none other anſwere but that in places nere vnto that ſea, they ſaw many and great riuers by whoſe vehemente courſe and abundaunt flowynge, the ſeas are dryuen farre from the ſhore: and that the ſayde water of the ryuers is froſen with the ſea a good ſpace from the lande, as in Liuonia and other partes of Suecia. For althowgh by the vehemencie of the wyndes, the Iſe is broken in the ſea, yet dooth this chaunce ſeldome or neuer in ryuers, excepte by ſum inundation or flud the Iſe gathered togyther bee lyſted vp and broken. For the flakes or pieſes of Iſe caryed into the ſea by force of the ryuers, doo flote aboue the water in maner all the hole yeare, and are ageyne ſo vehemently froſen togyther, that a man maye there ſumtyſnes ſee great heapes of the Iſe of manye yeares, as dooth appere by ſuch pieſes as are dryuen to the ſhore by the wynde. I haue alſo byn credebly informed by faythfull men that the ſea Baltheum (otherwyſe cauled the goulfe of Liuonia) is often tymes froſen in many places. They ſay furthermore, that in that region whiche is inhabyted of the wylde Lappones, the ſoonne in the ſommer Equinoctiall dooth not faule for the ſpace of. xl. [forty] dayes: yet that that the body therof is ſo hydden with a darke myſte or cloude three houres, that the beames doo not appere: Neuertheleſſe to gyue ſuch lyght durynge that tyme, that the darkeneſſe hyndereth not theyr woorke. The Moſcouites make theyr boaſte that theſe wylde Lappones are tributaries to theyr prynce. Wherat I do not greatly maruayle, foraſmuch as they haue none other neare vnto them, that may demaunde tribute of them. Theyr trybute is onely furres and fyſſhe, hauynge in maner none other thynge greately commodious. And albeit they lacke breade, ſalte, and other intyſements of glutteny, and lyue onely with fyſſhe and wylde beaſtes, yet are they exceadyng prone to lechery. They are ſuch expert archers, that if in theyr huntynge they eſpye any beaſtes whoſe ſkynnes they deſyre to ſaue vnperyſſhed, they

Sacrifice to the stone Semes

The cape Motka.

The castel of Wardhus.

The region of the wylde Lappones.

Dront.

Iorneyinge on sleades.

Howe the hartes drawe sleades.

xx. [twenty] leaques in one day

The citie of Berges in Norway

A shorter iorney.

Rostow.
Pereaslaw.
Castromow.
Vuolochda.
Suchana.
Dwina.
Hafnia.
Koppenhagen
Liuonia.
Werste, is almost an Italian myle.

305

Paulus Ioulus.

Ryuers faulyng into the frosen sea.

Wynde.
Ise.

Ise of many yeares.

The sea Baltheum

Where the sun fauleth not in. xl. [forty] days

The wylde Lappones are tributaries to the Moscouites

Furres and fysshe

Experte archers

Good ſelowshyp.

wyll not lyghtly myſſe to hytte them in the noſethrylles. When they go furth on huntynge, they are accuſtomed to leaue at home with theyr wyues ſuche marchauntes or ſtraungers as they haue receaued into theyr houſes. So that if at theyr returne, they perceaue theyr wyues throwgh the company of the ſtrangers to be myrier and more iocunde then they were wonte to bee, they gyue the ſtraungers ſum preſent. But yf they fynd it otherwyſe, they thruſt them furth of the doores with woordes of reproche. But nowe by the company they haue with ſtraungers that reſorte thyther for gaynes, they begyn to leaue theyr natiue barbarouſneſſe. They gladly admitte marchauntes, bycauſe they brynge them apparel of groſe cloth: alſo hatchettes, needels, ſpones, knyues, drynkynge cuppes, earthen and braſen pottes, with ſuch other neceſſarie wares: So that they vſe now to eate ſodden and roſted meate, and doo embraſe more ciuile maners. Theyr owne apparel is made of the ſkynnes of dyuers beaſtes ſowed togyther. And in this apparell they ſumtymes comme to Moſcouia. Yet fewe of them haue cappes or hoſen, which they vſe to make of hartes ſkynnes. They haue not the vſe of golde or ſyluer money: but vſe only barteryng of ware for ware. And beinge ignorant of other languages beſyde theyr owne, they ſeeme amonge ſtraungers to bee in maner domme. Theyr cotages are couered onely with the barkes of trees. They haue no certeyne reſtynge habitacion. But when they haue conſumed the fyſſhe and wylde beaſtes in one place, they remoue tō an other. Furthermore alſo the ſayde ambaſſadours of the prince of Moſcouia, declared that in the ſame partes they ſawe certeyne hygh mountaynes continually caſtynge furth flames of fyre as doth the mountayne of Etna in the Ilande of Sicilia: and that euen in Norway, many mountaynes are faulen downe and burnte in maner to aſſhes with ſuch continuall flames. Which thynge ſum conſyderyng, ſayne the fyre of Purgatorie to bee there. And as concernynge theſe mountaynes of Norway, when I was ſent ambaſſadour to Chriſtierne kynge of Denmarke, I was informed the lyke by the gouernours of Norwaye who chaunced at that tyme to bee preſent there.

Necessary warres.

No vse of money.

Theyr cotages.

Mountaynes continually burnyng.

Purgatory.

The ryuer Petzora.

306

The beaste cauled Mors.

Abowt the mouthes of the ryuer Petzora that are toward the ryght hande from the mouthes of Dwina, are ſayd to bee dyuers and great beaſtes in the Ocean: and amonge other, a certeyne great beaſt as bygge as an oxe, which th[e]inhabitauntes caule Mors. This beaſt hath ſhorte feete lyke a beuer or an Otter, with a breſt ſumwhat hygh and brode for the proportion of the reſidue of his body: and two longe and greate teeth growynge owte of the vpper iawe. Theſe beaſtes for reſt and increaſe, doo ſumtymes leaue the Ocean, and by great heardes aſcende the mountaynes: where before they gyue themſelues to profounde ſleepe (wherunto they are naturally inclined) they appoynt one of theyr number as it were a watcheman as doo cranes for the ſecuritie of the reſte. Whiche if he chaunce to ſleepe, or to bee ſlayne of the hunters, the reſidue may eaſely bee taken. But if the watchman gyue warnynge with rorynge (as the maner is) immediately the hole hearde awakened thereby, ſuddeynly put theyr hynder feete to theyr teeth: And ſo faulynge from the mountayne with great celeritie as it were on a ſleade, they caſt them ſelues headlong into the Ocean: where alſo they reſt and ſleepe for a whyle vppon the heapes of Iſe. The hunters purſue theſe beaſtes only for theyr teethe: Of the which the Moſcouites, Tartars, and eſpecially the Turkes, make haftes for ſwoordes and dagge[r]s very artificially: And vſe theſe rather for ornamente, then to gyue the greater ſtroke for the weyght or heauineſſe thereof as ſumme fable. Alſo amonge the Turkes, Moſcouites, and Tartars, theſe teethe are ſoulde by weight, and are cauled the teethe of fyſſhes.

The ſroſen sea.

Engronland or Groneland

The ſroſen ſea reacheth farre and wyde beyonde Dwina to Petzcora and vnto the mouthes of the great riuer Obi: beyonde the which they ſay to bee the region of Engroneland, vnknowen and ſeperate from the trade and conuerſation of owre men, by reaſon of hygh mountaynes couered and coulde with perpetuall ſnowe, and the ſea no leſſe incumbered with contynually Iſe whiche hyndereth nauigations and maketh them daungerous, as they ſaye.

EXEMPLAR EPISTOLAE SEV LITERARVM MISSIVARVM QVAS ILLVSTRISSIMVS PRINCEPS Edvvardus eius nominis Sextus, Angliæ, Franciæ, et Hiberniæ Rex, misit ad Principes Septemtrionalem ac Orientalem mundi plagam inhabitantes iuxta mare glaciale, nec non Indiam Orientalem. Anno Domini. 1553. Regni sui Anno septimo et vltimo.

EDvvardus sextus, Angliæ, Franciæ, and Hiberniæ Rex. etc. Omnibus, Regibus et Principibus ac Dominis, et cunctis Iudicibus terræ, et Ducibus eius quibuscunque est excellens aliqua dignitas in ea cunctis in locis quæ sunt sub vniuerso cœlo: Pax, tranquillitas, et honor vobis, terris, et regionibus vestris quæ imperio vestro subiacent, cuique vestrum quemadmodum conuenit ei. Propterea quod indidit Deus Opt. Max. hominibus præ cunctis alijs viuentibus cor et desiderium tale, vt appetat quisque cum alijs societatem mire, amare, et vicissim amari, beneficijs afficere, et mutua accipere beneficia studeat, ideo cuique pro
307 facultate sua hoc desiderium in omnibus quidem hominibus beneficijs fouere et conseruare conuenit, in illis autem maxime, qui hoc desiderio adducti, a remotis etiam regionibus ad eos veniunt. Quo enim longius iter, eius rei gratia ingressi sunt, eo ardentius in eis hoc desiderium fuisse declararunt. Insuper etiam ad hoc, nos patrum maiorumque nostrorum exempla inuitant, qui semper humanissime susceperunt et benignissime tractauerunt illos qui tum a locis propinquis tum a remotis, eos amice adibant, eorum se protectioni commendantes. Quod si omnibus id præstare æquum est, certe mercatoribus imprimis præstari debet, qui per vniuersum orbem discurrunt, mare circumlustrantes et aridam, vt res bonas et vtiles quæ Dei beneficio in

THE COPY OF THE LETTERS MISSIVE WHICH THE RIGHT NOBLE PRINCE EDWARDE THE. VI. sent to the Kynges, Princes, and other potentates inhabytynge the Northeast partes of the worlde towarde the myghtye Empire of Cathay, at suche tyme as syr Hugh Willoby knyght and Rychard Chaunceler with theyr company attempted theyr vyage thyther in the yeare of Chryst. 1553. and the. vii. and laste yeare of his reigne.

EDwarde the syxte by the grace of God, kynge of Englande, Fraunce, and Ierlande. etc. To all Kynges, Princes, Rulers, Iudges, and gouernours of the earthe, and all other hauynge any excellent dignitie on the same in all places vnder the vniuersall heauen: Peace, tranquilitie, and honoure, bee vnto yowe, and your landes and regions which are vnder yowr dominions, and to euery of yowe as is conuenient.

Forasmuche as the greate and almyghty god hath gyuen vnto mankynd aboue al other liuing creatours, such a hart and desyre, that euery man desyreth to ioyne frendeshyppe with other, to loue and bee loued, also to gyue and receaue mutuall benefites, it is therfore the dewtie of all men, accordyng to theyr poure to maintayne and increase this desyre in euery man with well deseruynge to all men, and especially to shewe this good affection to such as beinge moued with this desire, coome vnto them from farre countreys. For in howe much the longer viage they haue attempted for this intent, so much the more doo they therby declare that this desyre hath byn ardent in them. Furthermore also th[e]exemples of owre fathers and predicessours doo inuite vs hereunto, forasmuch as they haue euer gentelly and louyngly intreated such as of frendely mynde came to them aswel from countreis nere hand as farre remote, commendynge them selues to theyr protection. And if it bee ryght and equitie to shewe such humanitie toward all men, doubtlesse the same owght chiefely to bee shewed to marchauntes, who wanderynge abowt the worlde, searche both the lande and sea to cary such good and profitable thinges as are founde in theyr countreys, to remote regions and kyngedomes: and ageyne to brynge from the same, suche thynges as

regione eorum inueniuntur, ad remotiſsimas regiones et regna adferant, atque inde viuiſsim referant quod ſuæ regioni vtiſe ibi repererint: vt et populi ad quos eunt, non deſtituantur commodis quæ non profert illis terra eorum, et ipſi ſint participes rerum quibus illi abundant. Nam Deus cœli et terræ, humano generi maxime conſulens, noluit vt omnia in quauis regione inuenirentur, quo regio ope alterius regionis indigeret, et gens ab alia gente commodum aliquod expectaret, ac ita ſtabiliretur amicitia inter omnes, ſingulique omnibus benefacere quærerent, Hoc itaque ineundæ ac ſtabiliendæ amicitiæ deſiderio moti viri quidam regni noſtri, itẽr in remotas maritimas regiones inſtituerunt, vt inter noſtros et illos populos viam mercibus inferendis et eferendis aperirent: Noſque rogauerunt vt id illis concederemus. Qui peticioni illorum annuentes, conceſſimus viro honorabili et forti Hugoni Wilibeo et alijs qui cum eo ſunt ſeruis noſtris fidis et charis, vt pro ſua voluntate, in regiones eis prius incognitas eant, quæſituri ea quibus nos caremus, et adducant illis ex noſtris terris, id quo illi carent. Atque ita illis et nobis commodum inde accedat, ſitque amicitia perpetua et fœdus indiſsolubile inter illos et nos, dum permittent illi nos accipere de rebus quibus ſuperabundant in regnis ſuis, et nos concedemus illis ex regnis noſtris res, quibus deſtituuntur. Rogamus itaque vos Reges et Principes et omnes quibus aliqua eſt poteſtas in terra, vt viris iſtis noſtris tranſitum permittatis per regiones veſtras. Non enim tangent quicquam ex rebus veſtris inuitis vobis. Cogitate quod homines et ipſi ſunt. Et ſi quare caruerint, oramus pro veſtra beneficentia, eam vos illis tribuatis, accipientes viciſsim ab eis quod poterunt rependere vobis. Ita vos gerite erga eos quemadmodum cuperetis vt nos et ſubditi noſtri nos gereremus erga ſeruos veſtros ſi quando tranſierint per regiones noſtras. Atque promittimus vobis per Deum
308 omnium quæ cœlo, terra et mari continentur, perque vitam noſtram et tranquillitatem regnorum noſtrorum, nos pari benignitate ſeruos veſtros accepturos ſi ad regna noſtra aliquando venerint. Atque a nobis et ſubditis noſtris, ac ſi nati fuiſſent in regnis noſtris, ita benigne tractabuntur vt rependamus vobis benignitatem quam noſtris exhibueritis. Poſtquam vos Reges, Principes, etc. rogauimus vt humanitate et beneficentia omni proſequamini ſeruos noſtros nobis charos, oramus omnipotentem Deum noſtrum, vt vobis diuturnam vitam largiatur, et pacem quæ nullam habeat finem. Scriptum Londini, quæ ciuitas eſt regni noſtri. Anno. 5515. a creato mundo, menſe Iiar. xiiii. die menſis, anno ſeptimo regni noſtri.

they fynde there commodious for theyr own countreys: Bothe, aſwell that the people to whom they go, may not bee deſtitute of ſuch commodities as theyr countreys brynge not furth to them, as that alſo they may bee partetakers of ſuche thynges wherof they abounde. For god of heauen and earth, greatly prouydynge for mankynde, wolde not that al thinges ſhulde bee founde in one region, to th[e]ende that one ſhuld haue neede of an other, that by this meanes frendſhippe myght bee eſtablyſſhed amonge all men, and euery one ſeeke to gratifie all. For th[e]eſtablyſſhynge and furtherance of which vniuerſall amitie, certeyne men of owre realme moued hereunto by the ſayde deſyre, haue inſtitute and 309
taken vppon theym a vyage by ſea into farre countreys to th[e]intent that betwene owre people and them, a way bee opened to brynge in and cary owt marchaundies, deſyryng vs to further theyr enterpryſe. Who aſſentynge to theyr peticion, haue licenced the ryght valiante and woorthy ſyr Hughe Wylloby knyght, and other owre truſty and faithful ſeruauntes which are with hym according to theyr deſyre to go to countreys to them heretofore vnknowen, aſwell to ſeeke ſuche thynges as we lacke, as alſo to cary vnto them from owre regions, ſuche thynges as they lacke. So that hereby not only commoditie may enſewe both to them and to vs, but alſo an indiſſoluble and perpetuall league of frendſhippe be eſtablyſſhed betwene vs bothe, whyle they permitte vs to take of theyr thynges ſuche whereof they haue abundaunce in theyr regions, and we ageine graunt them ſuche thynges of owrs wherof they are deſtitute. Wee therfore deſyre yow kynges and princes, and all other to whom there is any poure on the earth, to permitte vnto theſe owr ſeruantes, free paſſage by yowr regions and dominions. For they ſhall not touche any thynge of yowres vnwyllyng vnto yow. Conſyder yow that they alſo are men. If therfore they ſhal ſtand in neede of any thynge, we deſyre yowe of all humanitie, and for the nobilitie whiche is in yowe, to ayde and helpe theym with ſuch thynges as they lacke, receauynge ageyne of them ſuch thynges as they ſhalbe able to gyue yowe in recompenſe. Shewe yowre ſelues ſo towarde theym, as yowe wolde that wee and owr ſubiectes ſhulde ſhewe owr ſelues toward yowr ſeruauntes, if at any tyme they ſhall paſſe by owre regions. Thus doinge, wee promeſſe yowe by the God of all thynges that are conteyned in heauen, earth, and the ſea, and by the lyfe and tranquilitie of owre kyngedomes, that we wyl with lyke humanitie accepte yowre ſeruauntes if at any tyme they ſhal coomme to owre kyngdomes, where they ſhall as frendly and gentelly bee interteyned as if they were borne in owr dominions, that we may hereby recompenſe the fauour and benignitie which yow haue ſhewed to owr men. Thus after we haue deſyred yow kynges and princes, etc. With all humanitie and fauour to interteyne owr welbelõued ſeruantes, wee pray owre almyghty god to graunt yowe longe lyfe and peace which neuer ſhall haue ende. Wrytten in London whiche is the chiefe citie of owre kyngedome: In the yeare frome the creation of the worlde. 5515. in the moneth of Iiar, the. xiiii. day of the moneth, and ſeuenth yeare of owre reigne.

¶ *This letter was wrytten alſo in Greeke and dyuers other languages.*

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION V.

Other notable things as touching the Indies,

out of the Writings and Maps of

Francisco Lopez de Gómara,

and

Sebastian Cabot.

1552-1555.]

¶ OTHER NOTABLE THYNGES AS TOVCHYNGE THE INDIES:

AND FYRST OF THE FOREKNOWLEAGE THAT THE POET SENECA HAD of the fyndynge this newe worlde and other regions not then knowen.

FRANCISCO LOPES.

Diuination.

Coniecture.

Prophesie.

So do the Egiptians.

SO ſpeke of thynges that ſhalbe, longe before they are, is a kynde of diuination if the truth thereof folowe effectually. Neuertheleſſe althowgh ſuch thynges as are ſpoken eyther by coniecture, or by th[e]inſtincte of nature, or by naturall reaſon, doo oftentymes take place and ſuccede accordyngely, yet are not ſuch coniectures to bee accoumpted as certeyne as propheſies reueled by the ſpirite of god, which wee ought entierly to beleue: but not ſo the other gathered only by certeine apparences, ſimilitudes, reaſons, and demonſtrations: althowghe it bee greatly to bee maruailed to conſyder howe they hytte the truthe ſumtyme: which perhappes they doo accordyng to the prouerbe that ſayth: He that ſpeaketh much ſhall ſumtimes ſtumble on the truth. All this I ſpeake conſyderynge the ſayinge of the poet Seneca in his tragedie of Medea, where his woordes ſeeme in all poyntes to agree with the diſcouerynge of the Indies founde of late by Chriſtofer Colon and the Spanyardes. The woordes of Seneca, are theſe,

The wordes of Seneca.

Venient annis
Sæcula ſeris, quibus Oceanus
Vincula rerum laxet, et ingens
Pateat tellus, Tiphiſque nouos
Detegat orbes,
Nec ſit terris vltima Thyle.

Islande was in owlde time cauled Thyle as summe thinke.

That is to ſaye: There ſhall coomme worldes in late yeares, in the whiche the Ocean ſhall vnloſe the bondes of thynges, and a great lande ſhall appeare. Alſo Typhis (that is nauigation) ſhall diſcouer newe worldes: and Thyle ſhall not bee the furtheſt lande.

¶ *Of the great Ilande which Plato cauled Atlantica or Atlantide.*

Plato sayth that these kynges were the sonnes of Neptunus.

An earthquake.

THe Philoſopher Plato wrytethe in his Dialõges of Timeus and Cricia, that in the owlde time there was in the ſea Atlantike ouer agenſt Affrica, an Ilande cauled Atlantide greater then Affrica and Aſia: affirmynge that thoſe landes are from thenſe continent and greate: And that the kynges of that Ilande gouerned a greate parte of Affrica and Europe. But that in a certeyne greate earthequake and tempeſt of rayne, this Ilande ſoonke and the people were drowned: Alſo that there remayned ſo much mudde of the drownynge or ſynkynge of that Ilande, that that ſea Atlantike coulde not bee ſayled. Sum take this for a fable; and many for a trewe

Marcilius Ficinus. Proclus.

hyſtorie, as doothe Marcilius Ficinus inducinge Proclus alleagynge certeyne hyſtories of the Ethiopians wrytten by one Marcellus, who confirmeth the ſame to bee trewe. But there is nowe no cauſe why wee ſhulde any longer doubte or diſpute of the Iland Atlantide, foraſmuch as the diſcouerynge and conqueſt of the weſt Indies do plainly declare what Plato hath wrytten of the ſayde landes. In Mexico alſo at this day they caul that water Atl. by the halfe name of Atlant, as by a woorde remaynynge of the name of the Ilande that is not. Wee may lykewyſe ſay that the Indies are eyther the Ilande and firme lande of Plato or the remanent of the ſame: and not the Ilandes of Heſperides or Ophir, or Tharſis, as ſum haue thought of late dayes. For the Heſperides, are the Ilandes of Cabo Verde and the Gorgonas from whenſe Hanon browght apes: Albeit in conferrynge it with Solinus, there is ſum doubte by reaſon of the nauigation of fortie dayes wherof he ſpeaketh. Aſwell maye it bee, that Cuba or Hayti, or any other Ilande of the Indies, ſhulde bee thoſe which the Carthaginenſes founde and forbodde theyr citiſens to make any vyages thyther or to inhabite the ſame as Ariſtotle and Theophraſte doo rehearſe where they wryte of the marueylous and vnknowen workes of nature. As concernynge Ophir and Tharſis, it is not knowen what or where they bee, althowgh many lerned men as ſaynt Auguſtine and other haue ſearched what citie or lande Tharſis myght bee. Saynt Ierome who was experte in the Hebrewe tounge, ſayth in many places vppon the prophetes that Tharſis is as much to ſay as the ſea: and that whereas it is wrytten that Ionas fledde to Tharſis, he wente to the ſea by a longe iorney. Furthermore as concernynge the nauigations of Salomon, it is not to bee thowght that his nauies ſayled to the weſt Indies, foraſmuch as to paſſe thyther, it was requiſite for them to ſayle Weſtwarde departynge frome the ſea of Bermeio: and not Eaſtward as they ſayled. Ageine, the weſt Indies haue no vnicornes, elephantes, diamondes, and ſuch other thynges as they browght in the trade of their nauigations.

Mexico or new Spaine.

Hesperides.
Capo Verde
Ophir.
Tharsis.
Gorgonas.
Solinus.
Lands found by the Carthaginenses.
Aristotell.
Theophrast.

Ionas fledde to Tharsis.
The nauigations of Salomon.
Bermeio is the Arabian sea.

¶ *Of the colour of the Indians.*

How colours dyffer by degrees.

ONe of the marueylous thynges that god vſeth in the compoſition of man, is coloure: whiche doubtleſſe can not bee conſydered withowte great admiration in beholding one to be white and an other blacke, beinge coloures vtterlye contrary. Sum lykewyſe to be yelowe whiche is betwene blacke and white: and other of other colours as it were of dyuers liueres. And as theſe colours are to be marueyled at, euen ſo is it to be conſidered howe they dyffer one from an other as it were by degrees, foraſmuche as ſum men are whyte after dyuers ſortes of whyteneſſe: yelowe after dyuers maners of yelowe: and blacke after dyuers ſortes of blackeneſſe: and howe from whyte they go to yelowe by diſcolourynge to browne and redde: and to blacke by aſſhe colour, and murrey ſumwhat lyghter then blacke: and tawnye lyke vnto the weſt Indians which are all togyther in general eyther purple, or tawny lyke vnto ſodde quynſes, or of the colour of cheſtnuttes or olyues: which colour is to them natural and not by theyr goynge naked as many haue thought: albeit theyr nakedneſſe haue ſumwhat helped therunto. Therfore in lyke maner and with ſuche diuerſitie as men are commonly whyte in Europe and blacke in Affrike, euen with like varietie are they tawny in theſe Indies, with dyuers degrees diuerſly inclynynge more or leſſe to blacke or whyte. No leſſe maruayle is it to conſyder that men are whyte in Siuile and blacke at the cape of Buena Speranza, and of cheſtnutte colour at the ryuer of Plata, beinge all in equall degrees frome the Equinoctiall line. Lykewyſe that the men of Affryke and Aſia that lyue vnder the burnte line (cauled *Zona Torrida*) are blacke: and not they that lyue beneathe or on this ſyde the ſame line as in Mexico, Yucatan, Quauhtema, Lian, Nicaragua, Panama, Santo Domingo, Paria, Cape ſaynt Auguſtine, Lima, Quito, and other landes of Peru which touch in the ſame Equinoctiall. For in al the tracte of theſe coaſtes certeyne blacke men were found only in Quarequa when Vaſchus Nunnez of Balboa diſcouered the ſea of Sur. By reaſon wherof it may ſeeme that ſuche varietie of colours proceadeth of man, and not of the earth: whiche maye well bee althowgh wee bee all borne of Adam and Eue, and knowe not the cauſe why god hath ſo ordeyned it, otherwyſe then to conſyder that his diuine maieſtie hath doonne this as infinite other to declare his omnipotencie and wiſedome in ſuch diuerſities of colours as appere not only in the nature of man, but the lyke alſo in beaſtes, byrdes, and floures, where dyuers and contrary colours are ſeene in one lyttle fether, or the leaues grewynge owt of one lyttle ſtalke. An other thyng is alſo greatly to bee noted as touchynge theſe Indians. And this is, that theyr heare is not curlde as is the Moores and Ethiopians that inhabite the ſame clime: neyther are they balde excepte very ſeldome, and that but lyttle. All whiche thynges may giue further occaſion to phyloſophers to ſearch the ſecreates of nature and complexions of men with the nouelties of the newe worlde.

The coloure of the west Indians.

Dyue[r]s sortes of whyte and blacke.

311
Difference of coloure in the same clyme.
Rio de la Plata.

Peru.
Blacke men in the west Indies.

From whense proceadeth the varietie of colours.
Gods wysedome and poure is seene in his workes.

Curld heare and baldnes.

☜ *Why they were cauled Indians.*

SVm thynke that the people of the newe world were cauled Indians bycauſe they are of the colour of the Eaſte Indians. And althowghe (as it ſemeth to me) they dyffer much in colour and faſſhions, yet is it trewe that of India they were cauled Indians.

The colour of the East Indians.

India is properlie cauled that great prouince of Aſia in the which great Alexander kepte his warres: and was ſo named of the ryuer Indus: and is diuyded into many kyngedomes confynynge with the ſame. From this greate India (cauled the Eaſt India) came great companyes of men as wryteth Herodotus: and inhabited that parte of Ethiopia that lyeth betwene the ſea Bermeia (otherwyſe cauled the redde ſea or the goulfe of Arabia) and the ryuer of Nilus: al which regions that great Chriſtian prince Preſter Iohn dooth now poſſeſſe. The ſayde Indians preuayled ſo much, that they vtterly changed the cuſtomes and name of that lande, and cauled it India: by reaſon wherof, Ethiopia alſo hath of longe tyme byn cauled India. And hereuppon came it that Aryſtotell, Seneca, and certeyne other oulde autours ſayd that India was not farre from Spayne. After this alſo, of later dayes owre Weſt India was ſo cauled of the ſayde India of Preſter Iohn where the Portugales had theyr trade. For the pylot of the caruell that was fyrſte dryuen by forcyble wynde to an vnknowen lande in the Weſte Ocean, cauled the ſame India bycauſe the Portugales ſo cauled ſuch landes as they had lately diſcouered Eaſtwarde. Chryſtopher Colon alſo after the ſayde pylot, cauled the weſt landes by the ſame name. Albeit, ſum that take Colonus for an expert Coſmographer, thynke that he ſo named them of the Eaſt India, as to be the furtheſt and vnknowen ende therof reachynge into the Weſte vnder the other hemiſpherie or halfe globe of the earthe beneathe vs: affirmynge that when he fyrſt attempted to diſcouer the Indies, he went chiefely to ſeeke the ryche Iland of Cipango, which ſauleth on the parte of great China or Cathay as wryteth Marcus Paulus Venetus and other: And that he ſhulde ſooner come thyther by folowyng the courſe of the ſoonne Weſtwarde then ageynſt the ſame: Albeit manye thynke that there is no ſuche Ilande, or at the leaſte not yet knowen by that name: wheras alſo Marcus Paulus obſerued no exacte deſcription of the place eyther of this Ilande or of Cathay.

East India.

Prester Iohn came owt of India to Ethiope.

Ethyopia cauled India.

India not far from Spayne

Prester Iohn knowen to the Portugales.

At the furthest Easte, begynneth the west.

The Iland of Cipango.
China.
Cathay.
To the East by the west.
Marcus Paulus Venetus.

☜ *The fyrſte diſcouerynge of the Weſte Indies.*

A harde begynnyng.

312

ACerteyne caruell ſaylynge in the weſte Ocean abowt the coaſtes of Spayne, had a forcyble and continuall wynde from the Eaſt wherby it was dryuen to a land vnknowen and not deſcrybed in any mappe or carde of the ſea: and was dryuen ſtyl alonge by the coaſte of the ſame for the ſpace of many dayes vntyll it came to a hauen: where in a ſhorte tyme the moſt parte of the maryners beinge longe before verye weake and feeble by reaſon of hunger and trauayle, dyed: So that only the pylot with thre or foure other remayned alyue. And not only they that dyed dyd not inioy the Indies which they fyrſt diſcouered to theyr myſſortune, but the reſydue alſo that lyued had in maner as lyttle fruition of the ſame: not leauynge or at the leaſt not openly publyſhynge any memorie therof, neyther of the place, or what it was cauled, or in what yeare it was founde. Albeit, the faute was not theyrs, but rather the malice of other, or the enuie of that which wee caule fortune. I doo not therefore marueyle that the auncient hyſtories affirme that great thynges proceade and increaſe of ſmaul and obſcure begynnynges, ſyth wee haue ſeene the ſame verefyed in this fyndyng of the Indies being ſo notable and newe a thynge. Wee neede not bee curious to ſeeke the name of the pylot ſyth death made a ſhorte ende of his doinges. Sum wyl that he came from Andaluzia, and traded to the Ilands of Canaria and the Ilande of Madera when this large and mortal nauigation chaunced vnto hym. Other ſay that he was a Biſcayne, and traded into Englande and Fraunce. Other alſo, that he was a Portugale: and that eyther he wente or came from Mina or India: which agreeth well with the name of theſe newe landes as I haue ſayde before. Ageyne, ſum there bee that ſay that he browght the carauel to Portugale: or to the Ilande of Madera, or to ſum other of the Ilandes cauled *de los Azores*. Yet doo none of them affirme any thynge, althowgh they all affirme that the pylotte dyed in the houſe of Chryſtopher Colon, with whome remayned al ſuch wrytynges and annotacions as he hadde made of his vyage in the ſayde carauell, aſwell of ſuch thynges as he obſerued both by lande and ſea, as alſo of the eleuation of the pole in thoſe landes whiche he had diſcouered.

Great thinges proceadyng of smaule and obscure begynnynges.

The pylotte that fyrst founde the Indies.

Mina.

¶ *What maner of man Chryſtopher Colon was: and howe he Came fyrſt to the knowleage of the Indies.*

Thus also began Rychard chaunceler.

CHriſtopher Colon was borne in Cugureo, or (as ſum ſay) in Nerui, a vyllage in the territorie of Genua in Italie. He deſcended as ſum thynke, of the houſe of the Peleſtreles of Placentia in Lumbardie. He beganne of a chylde to bee a maryner: of whoſe arte they haue great exerciſe on the ryuer of Genua. He traded many yeares into Suria and other partes of the Eaſt. After this, he became a maſter in makynge cardes for the ſea, whereby he had great vantage. He came to Portugale to knowe the reaſon and deſcription of the ſouth coaſtes of Affrica and the nauigations of the Portugales, thereby to make his cardes more perfecte to bee ſolde. He maryed in Portugale as ſum ſay: or as many ſay, in the Ilande of Madera, where he dwelt at ſuche tyme as the ſayde caruell arryued there, whoſe pylot ſuiorned in his houſe, and dyed alſo there, bequethynge to Colon his carde of the deſcription of ſuche newe landes as he hadde founde, wherby Colon had the fyrſt knowleage of the Indyes. Sum haue thowght that Colon was well lerned in the Latine tounge and the ſcience of Coſmographie: and that he was therby fyrſt moued to ſeeke the landes of the Antipodes and the ryche Ilande of Cipango whereof Marcus Paulus wryteth. Alſo that he had redde what Plato in his dialoges of Timeus and Cricias, wryteth of the greate Ilande Atlantide, and of a great lande in the Weſt Ocean vndiſcouered beinge bygger then Aſia and Affrica. Furthermore that he had knowleage what Ariſtotell and Theophraſtus ſaye in theyr bookes of maruayles, where they wryte that certeyne marchauntes of Carthage ſaylyng from the ſtreyghtes of Gibraltar towarde the weſt and ſouth, founde after many dayes a greate Ilande not inhabited: yet replenyſhed with al thynges requiſite, and hauynge many nauigable ryuers. In deede Colon was not greately lerned: yet of good vnderſtandynge. And when he had knowleage of the ſayde newe landes by the information of the dead pylot, made relation thereof to certeyne lerned men with whom he conferred as touchynge the lyke thynges mentioned of owlde autours. He communicated this ſecreate and conferred chiefely with a fryer, named Iohn Perez of Marchena that dwelt in the monaſtery of Rabida. So that I verely beleue, that in maner all that he declared, and many thynges more that he lefte vnſpoken, were wrytten by the ſayde Spanyſhe pylot that dyed in his houſe. For I am perſuaded, that if Colon by ſcience atteyned to the knowleage of the Indies, he wolde longe before haue communicate this ſecreate to his owne contrey men the Genueſes, that trauayle all the worlde for gaynes, and not haue comme into Spayne for this purpoſe. But doubteleſſe he neuer thought of any ſuch thyng before he chaunced to bee acquainted with the ſayd pylot who founde thoſe landes by fortune, accordynge to the ſayinge of Plinie: *Quod ars docere non potuit, caſus inuenit.* That is: That arte coulde not teache, chaunce founde. Albeit, the more Chryſtian opinion is, to thinke that god of his ſinguler prouidence and infinite goodneſſe, at the length with eyes of compaſſion as it were lookynge downe from heauen vpon the ſonnes of Adam ſo longe kepte vnder Sathans captiuitie, intended euen then (for cauſes to hym only knowen) to rayſe thoſe wyndes of mercy whereby that caruell (herein moſt lyke vnto the ſhyppe of Noe whereby the remanent of the hole world was ſaued as by this caruel this newe worlde receaued the fyrſt hope of theyr ſaluation) was dryuen to theſe landes. But wee wyll nowe declare what great thynges folowed of this ſmaule begynnynge, and how Colon folowed this matter reueled vnto hym not withowte goddes prouidence.

Colon was not much lerned.

The Ilande Atlantide.

The lande found by the Carthaginenses.

313

Colon conferred with lerned men.

Chaunce and arte.

A Christian opinion.

The caruel compared to the ship of Noye.

¶ *What labour and trauayle Colon tooke in attemptyng his fyrst vyage to the Indies.*

AFter the death of the pilot and mariners of the Spanyſhe caruell that diſcouered the Indies, Chryſtopher Colon purpoſed to ſeke the ſame. But in howe muche more he deſyred this, the leſſe was his poure to accompliſhe his deſire. For, beſyde that of him ſelfe he was not able to furnyſſhe one ſhyppe, he lacked alſo the fauour of a kynge vnder whoſe protection he might ſo enioy the riches he hoped to fynde, that none other myght take the ſame from hym or deſeate hym therof. And ſeinge the kynge of Portugale occupied in the conqueſt of Africa and the nauigations of the Eaſt which were then fyrſt attempted, the kynge of Caſtyle lykewyſe no leſſe buſyed in the warres of Granada, he ſent to his brother Bartholomewe Colon (who was alſo priuie to this ſecreate) to practiſe with the kynge of Englande Henry the ſeuenth beinge very ryche

The kynge of Portugale.

The kyng of Castile.

Kynge Henry the seuenth.

and withowt warres: promyſynge to brynge hym great ryches in ſhort time if he wolde ſhew him fauour and furnyſſhe hym with ſhippes to diſcouer the newe Indies wherof he had certeyne knowleage. But neyther here beinge able to brynge his ſute to paſſe, he cauſed the matter to bee moued to the kynge of Portugale Don Alonſo the fyfte of that name: at whoſe handes he founde neither fauour nor money, foraſmuch as the licenciate Calzadilla the byſhop of Viſeo, and one maſter Rodrigo men of credit in the ſcience of Coſmographie, withſtoode him and contended that there neither was nor coulde any golde or other ryches bee founde in the weſt as Colon affirmed. By reaſon whereof he was very ſadde and penſiue: but yet was not diſcouraged or deſpaired of the hope of his good aduenture which he afterward found This done, he tooke ſhippinge at Liſburne, and came to Palos of Moguer where he communed with Martin Alonſo Pinzon an expert pylot, who offered hym ſelfe vnto hym. After this diſcloſynge the hole ſecreates of his mynde to Iohn Perez of Marchena (a fryer of th[e]order of ſaynt Frances in Rabida, and wel lerned in Coſmographie) and declaryng vnto hym how by folowyng the courſe of the ſon by a temperate vyage, rich and great landes myght be founde, the fryer greatly commended his enterpryſe, and gaue him counſayle to breake the matter to the duke of Medina Sidonia Don Eurique of Guzman a great lorde and very ryche: And alſo to Don Luys of Cerda the duke of Medina Celi, who at that tyme had great prouiſion of ſhippes well furnyſhed in his hauen of Santa Maria. But wheras both theſe dukes tooke the matter for a dreame and as a thynge diuiſed of an Italian deceauer who (as they thought) had before with lyke pretence deluded the kynges of Englande and Portugale, the fryer gaue hym courage to go to the courte of the Catholyke princes Don Ferdinando and lady Iſabell princes of Caſtile: affirmynge that they wolde bee ioyfull of ſuch newes. And for his better furtherance herin, wrote letters by hym to fryer Ferdinando of Talauera the queenes confeſſor. Chryſtopher Colon therfore, repayred to the court of the Catholike princes, in the yeare. M. CCCC. lxxxvi. [1486 A.D.] and delyuered vnto theyr handes the peticion of his requeſt as concerninge the diſcouerynge of the newe Indies. But they beinge more carefull, and applyinge all theyr mynde howe they myght dryue the Moores owt of the kyngdome of Granade, which great enterpryſe they had alredy taken in hande, dyd lyttle or nothynge eſteme the matter. But Colon not thus diſcouraged, found the meanes to declare his ſute to ſuch as had ſumtymes priuate communication with the kynge. Yet bicauſe he was a ſtranger and went but in ſimple apparell, nor otherwyſe credited then by the letter of a gray fryer, they beleued hym not, neyther gaue eare to his woordes: wherby he was greatly tormented in his imagination. Only Alonſo of Quintanilia the kynges chiefe auditour gaue hym meate and drynke at his owne charges, and hard gladly ſuch thynges as he declared of the landes not then founde: deſyryſige hym in the meane tyme to bee contente with that poore enterteynemente, and not to deſpayre of his enterpryſe: puttynge hym alſo in good conforte that he ſhulde at one tyme or other, coome to the ſpeache of the Catholyke princes. And thus ſhortly after by the meanes of Alonſo of Quintanilia, Colon was browght to the preſence and audience of the Cardinall Don Pero Gonzales of Mendoza, archbyſſhop of Toledo, a man of great reuenues and autoritie with the kynge and queene, who brought hym before them after that he well perceaued and examyned his intent. And by this meanes was his ſute harde of the Catholyke princes, who alſo redde the booke of his memorials which he preſented vnto them. And although at the fyrſt they tooke it for vayne and falſe that he promyſed, neuertheleſſe they put hym in good hope that he ſhulde bee well diſpatched when they had fynyſhed the warres of Granada which they had now in hand. With which anſwere, Colon beganne to reuyue his ſpirites, with hope to bee better eſtemed and more fauourably to bee h[e]ard amonge the gentelmen and noble men of the court, who before tooke hym only for a craftie felowe and deceauer: and was nothynge diſmayde or diſcouraged when ſo euer he debated the matter with them, althowghe many iudged hym phantaſticall, as is the maner of ignorant menne to caule all ſuch as attempte any thynge beyonde theyr reach and the compaſſe of theyr knowleage: thinkyng the worlde to bee no bigger then the cagies wherin they are brought vp and lyue. But to returne to Colon: So hotte and vrgente was the ſiege of Granada, that they preſentely graunted hym his demaunde to ſeeke the newe landes, and to brynge from thenſe golde, ſyluer, perles, precious ſtones, ſpices, and ſuche other rych thynges. They gaue hym alſo the tenth parte of all the reuenues and cuſtomes dewe vnto the kynge of al ſuch landes as he ſhulde diſcouer, not doynge preiudice in any thynge to the kynge of Portugale. The particulars of this agrement were made in the towne cauled Sancta Fe: and the priuilege of the rewarde, in Granada the. xxx. [thirtieth] daye of Aprell the ſame yeare that the citie was woonne. And wheras the ſayde Catholyke princes had not mony preſently to diſpatch Colon, Luys of S. Angell the kynges ſecretary of accomptes, lente theym ſyxe quentes of marauedes, whiche in a groſſe ſumme make. xvi. [sixteen] thouſande ducades. Two thynges are herein chiefely to be noted: wherof the one is, that for ſo ſmaule charges they haue increaſed the reuenues of the crowne of Caſtyle as much as the Indies are in value. The other is, that endynge the conqueſt of the Moores who poſſeſſed the kyngedome of Granada eyght hundreth yeares, they immediatly beganne the conqueſt of the Indies, as though the nation of the Spanyardes were euer appoynted to feyght ageynſt infidels and enemies of the fayth of Ieſu Chryſt.

Barnarde knewe not all thynges.

The duke of Medina Sidonia.

The duke of Medina Celi.

314

The conquest of Granada.

What men knowe not they count fantasticall.

Colon his interteinmente.

The archbysshop of Toledo.

Colon is brought to the kynges presence

The iudgement of ignorant folkes.

Colon is dispatched.

Colon his rewarde

One cent is. x [ten] hundreth thousande.

By this trauayle of Colonus in ſo noble an enterpryſe and ſo harde ſucceſſe, dooth the ſayinge of Plinie appere to be moſt trew, wher in the preface of his natural hyſtory wrytten to th[e]emprour Veſpaſian he writeth in this maner. *Res ardua vetuſtis nouitatem dare: Nouis, au[c]toritatem: abſoletis, nitorem; obſcuris, lucem: faſtiditis, gratiam: dubiis fidem: omnibus vero naturam, et naturæ ſua omnia. Itaque etiam non aſſecutis, voluiſſe abunde pulchrum atque magnificum eſt.* That is to ſay: It is a dyfficulte thynge to gyue newenes to owlde thynges, autoritie to newe thynges: bewtie to thynges owt of vſe: fame to the obſcure: fauoure to the hateſull: credite to the doubteſull: nature to all, and all to nature. To ſuch neuertheleſſe as can not attayne to all theſe, it is greately commendable and magnificall to haue attempted the ſame.

315 In the ſcu[t]chen of armes gyuen to Colon by Don Ferdinando and queene Elizabeth Catholike princes (ſo cauled for theyr warres ageynſt the infidels) theſe verſes were wrytten.

Por Caſtilla y por Leon,
Nueuo mundo hallo Colon.

That is: For Caſtile and for Leon,
The newe worlde founde Colon.

¶ *Of newe Spayne cauled Noua Hiſpania, or Mexico.*

The citie of Mexico or Temixtitan.

NEwe Spayne is that parte of the continent or firme lande that lyeth Weſt and South frome the lande of Floryda. This was ſubdued to th[e]empire of Caſtile by the ryght noble gentelman Ferdinando Corteſe the marqueſſe of the vale of Quaxaca. In this lande are many prouinces conteynyng in them in maner innumerable cities, amonge which that is the chiefe which the Indians caule Mexico or Temixtitan, conſyſtyng of more then fiue hundreth thouſand inhabitauntes. It ſtandeth in the myddeſt of a lake of ſalte water as doth Venece in the ſea. The lake conteyneth fortie Perſian myles cauled Paraſange, euery one conſyſtynge of. xxx. [thirty] furlon[g]s, and more as ſum ſay. In theſe regions is founde great plentie of golde, ſyluer, and precious ſtones, with innumerable other thynges both neceſſary for the lyfe of man and pleaſaunt: as ſylke, bombaſine cotton, alame, Safferne, Woade, with dyuers other thynges wherwith clothe and ſylke is dyed. There is alſo ſuch abundaunce of ſuger, that certeyne Spanyſſhe ſhippes are yearely fraighted therwith and brynge the ſame into Siuile from whenſe it is caryed in maner to all partes of Chryſtendome. Th[e]inhabitauntes of Mexico are ſubtyle people, and vſe much craft in theyr bargening. They haue not the vſe of golde and ſyluer monye: but vſe in the ſteade therof the halfe ſhelles of almonds, whiche kynde of Barbarous money they caule Cacao or Cacanguate. In maner al kyndes of corne are there very good [and] cheape: eſpecially barly and wheate. They haue great plentie of hartes, wylde bores, Lyons, Leopardes, and Tygers, which beaſtes wander in maner in euery place. The region is moſte commodious for haukynge and huntynge for the great abundaunce it hath of beaſtes and foules. But the people exerciſe all theyr cunnynge in makynge the images of theyr Idolatry, and in paintyng. Theyr woman are valiant: and ſumptuous in theyr apparell and other tyrementes. For they ſo rychely frynge and byſet the ſame with perles, precious ſtones, and golde, that nothynge can be more excellent. They haue a kynde of paper greatly differyng from owrs. In this they expreſſe theyr mindes by certeyn figures. For they haue not otherwiſe th[e]uſe of letters. The nation is deſyrous of warre: and dooth not longe keepe the condicions of peace vnuiolated: But delyteth rather in ciuile and moſt cruell battayle amonge them ſelues then to lyue in peace and quietneſſe. Suche as in the warres faule by any meanes into the handes of theyr enemies, eyther by ſubmiſſion or otherwyſe, are partely ſacrificed to the Idoles, and the reſydue gyuen to the ſouldiers to bee eaten, in lyke maner as wee rewarde dogges and haukes with parte of theyr pray. They haue innumerable Idoles which euery one maketh for his particular god after the phantaſie of his own brayne, and gyueth therto diuine honour. Albeit at this day they doo by lyttle and lyttle leaue of theyr barbarous fierceneſſe: and with owre religion embraſe better maners. For they nowe profeſſe the fayth of Chryſt, and in his name pray vnto God the father.

Golde and ſyluer.
Sylke.
Cotton.
Alam.
Woade.
Sugar.
Shelles for money.
Corne.
Beaſtes.
Haukyng and huntynge.
Paintynge.
Women ſumptuously appareled.
A warlike nation.
Captiues ſacrificed to Idoles.

Vnderſtande here that as touchynge theſe regions cauled new Spayne, yow may reade at large in the booke here before entiteled of the laſides and Ilandes lately founde. This booke foloweth immediatly after the Decades, althowgh the printer haue alſo wrytten the thyrde decade* ouer the head of that booke which intreateth principally of the regions nowe cauled newe Spayne. Of the conqueſt of this Mexico, Franciſco Lopez hath written a large booke in the Spanyſſhe tounge.

* See p. 187.—E. A.

¶ *Of Peru.*

THe prouince cauled Peru, was alſo named noua Caſtilia by them that fyrſte founde it. This region is the weſt parte of America: and is ſituate in the longitude of. 290. degrees, proceadynge from the Weſt to the Eaſt. And ſouthwarde begynneth fiue degrees beyonde the Equinoctial line, and is extended very farre into the ſouth. This is taken to bee the rycheſt lande in golde, ſyluer, perles, precious ſtones, and ſpyces, that euer was founde yet to this day. For golde is there in ſuch plentie that they make pyſpots therof, and other veſſels applyed to fylthy vſes. But this is more to bee marueyled at, that in a citie cauled Collao was founde a houſe all couered with maſſie plates of golde. In theyr warres alſo theyr harneſſe was of golde and ſyluer. Theyr weapons are bowes, arrowes, ſlynges, dartes, and pikes. Th[e]inhabitantes are warlyke people and of great agilitie. They haue cities defended with lawes and armes. The region is exceadyng frutefull, and yeldeth corne twyſe in the yeare. It is ſo floryſſhynge with many fayre wooddes, mountaynes, ryuers, and other both pleaſaunt and neceſſary commodities, that it ſeemeth in maner an earthly Paradyſe. It hath dyuers kyndes of beaſtes, and yet none hurtfull or of rauenynge kynde. There are ſheepe of ſuch heyght that they vſe them in the ſteade of horſes. Sume write that they are as bygge as the younge foles of camels: and that theyr woolle is very ſofte and fine. Alſo that the ewes brynge furth lambes twyſe a yeare. The people are wytty and of gentyl behauoure. Cunnynge alſo in artes, faythful of promes, and of maners not greatly to bee diſcommended, ſaue that they are ignorant of Chryſt: who neuertheleſſe is nowe knowen vnto them in many places, as our hope is he ſhalbe dayly more and more if all princes wyll herein putte theyr helpynge handes to the plowe of owre lorde, and ſende labourers into his vyneyarde.

316 Peru is the rychest lande that is knowen.

A house couered with gold.

Harnes of golde.

A frutful region.

Great sheepe.

The dewtie of Chrystian princes.

¶ *Of the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata (that is) the ryuer of ſyluer.*

THis ryuer reacheth very farre in length and bredth: and is cauled Vruai in the Indian tounge. Into this fauleth an other ryuer named Paraue. The fyrſte that ſayled into the ryuer of Plata, was Iohn Dias Solis, whom the ryght noble kynge of Spayne Ferdinandus made Admyral of theſe ſeas. In the ryuer lyeth an Ilande whiche Iohn Dias named Martinus Gratias bycauſe a pylot of his ſo cauled, was buryed there. This Ilande is ſituate in the myddeſt of the ryuer: and is dyſtant from the mouth of the ſame abowt fortie leaques. As the ſayde Admirall attempted to expugne the Iland, he was ſuddeynly oppreſſed and ſlayne of the Indians that priuilie aſſayled hym. Wherwith neuertheleſſe theyr barbarous crueltie was not ſatiſfyed vntyll they had torne him in pieſes and deuoured hym. But many yeares after, Th[e]emperoures maieſtie and kynge of Spayne Charles the fyfte, ſente foorth Sebaſtian Cabot (a man of great courage and ſkylfull in Coſmographie, and of no leſſe experience as concernynge the ſtarres and the ſea) with commaundement to diſcouer and ſubdue the Ilandes of Tharſis, Ophir, Cipango, and Coi Cathay. Receauynge therfore his commiſſion and proceadynge forwarde on his vyage, he arryued by chaunce at this Ilande: The cauſe wherof was that the principall veſſell was loſt by ſhipwracke, and the men that ſaued theyr lyues by ſwymmynge were receaued into other ſhyppes. Perceauynge therfore that by reaſon of this chaunce he could by no meanes performe his vyage attempted, he intended to expugne the ſayde Ilande, and thervppon to conueygh his vyttayles to land, to prepare his ſoldiers to th[e]inuaſion, to plant colonyes, and to erect fortreſſes by the ryuers ſyde wherby the Spanyardes myght bee defended from the violence of the barbarians. But before he attempted this, he was aduertiſed that the Ilande was riche in golde and ſyluer. Which thynge dyd ſo encorage him, that withowt reſpect of perel he thought beſt to expugne it by one meanes or other, wherein his bouldenes tooke good effecte as often tymes chaunceth in great affayres. Furthermore as touchynge the ryuer, Sebaſtian Cabote made relation that he neuer ſawe any comparable vnto this in bredth and depth. For whereas it fauleth into the ſea, it conteyneth. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques in breadth. From the mouth of the ryuer, Cabot ſayled vp the ſame into the lande for the ſpace of three hundreth and fiftie leaques as he wryteth in his owne carde. That it is of great depth, may hereby bee conſydered that manye greate ryuers faule into it: ſo that the chanell can not bee ſhalowe that conteyneth ſuch abundance of water, and ſuche plentie of good and great fyſſhes. For there is in maner no fyſſhe in the ſea, that is not founde in this ryuer. As ſoone as the Spanyards were ſet alande, they made a proofe if the ſoyle were frutfull to beare corne. Takynge therefore fiftie graynes of wheate and commyttynge the ſame to the earth in the moneth of September, they gathered therof

Paraue.

Iohn Dias Solis.

The Ilande Martinus Gratias.

The viage of Sebastian Cabote to the ryuer of Plata.

Tharsis.

Ophir.

Cipango.

Cathay.

The ryuer of Plata.

3

Maruelous frutfulnes.

Mountaynes conteynynge golde and syluer.

two thouſande and fiftie at December nexte folowynge: wherin ſume beinge deceaued and miſtakynge the thynge, haue wrytten in the ſteade of twoo thouſande and fiftie, fyftie thouſande and two. The like fertilitie is there of all other grayne and pulſe. Furthermore th[e]inhabitauntes declared that not farre from that place, ther are great and hygh mountaynes in the which is founde great plentie of golde. And no great diſtance from the ſame, to bee other mountaynes no leſſe frutefull of ſyluer, and many other thynges longe to rehearſe.

Great sheepe.

Th[e]inhabitauntes are paynefull men, and tyll the grounde diligently, wherin they take great pleaſure: and haue therfore great plentie of breade of Maizium. There are ſheepe of ſuche byggeneſſe that they compare them to younge camels or aſſes as ſum ſay.

Theyr colour.

Theyr woolle is very fine: and neareſt vnto the fyneneſſe of ſylke. There are alſo beaſtes of dyuers kyndes.

Men with deformed legs.

Amonge men there is this dyfference, that ſuch as lyue in the mountaynes, are whyte, and for the moſt parte lyke vnto the men of owre regions. But they that dwell abowt the ryuer (as though they tooke theyr coloure therof) are blackyſſhe or purple of the coloure of fine Iren or ſteele. This alſo chaunceth to many of them, that theyr fiete and legges are lyke the legs and fiete of the foule cauled the oyſtreche.

¶ *Of the hygher Eaſt India cauled India Tercera or Terciera.*

Malacha.

Tachola.

The Ilandes of Malucha.

The Iland of Samotra.

IN this India whiche the Portugales caule Tercera, are very great kyngedomes: as the kyngdomes of Bengala, Pegu, Berma, Erancangui, Dauſian, Capelam, and the greate kyngdome of Malacha, cauled of the owlde wryters Aurea Cherſoneſus: whoſe chiefe citie is alſo cauled Malacha, and was in owlde tyme named Tachola. Vnder this kyngedome are infinite Ilandes cauled Maluche, whereof the principall are theſe: Iaua the greater, Iaua the leſſe, Polagua, Mendana, Cubu, Cailon, Huban, Bur, Tenado, Anbon, and Gilolo, with infinite other. On the Southweſt parte from Malacha, is the great Ilande of Samotra cauled in owlde tyme Taprobana, in the which are the kyngedomes of Pedir, Biraen, Pazer, Ardagni, and Ham. This Iland and al the other cauled Maluche, brynge furth great quantitie of cloues, cinamome, nuttemegges, maces, and all other kyndes of ſpyces excepte pepper, which groweth in the prouince of Calecut and the Ilande of Ceilam. All theſe ſortes of ſpices are caryed to Malacha to bee ſoulde. But the greateſt parte of them is caryed to Cathay and China: and from thenſe to the north partes of Tartarie. This kyngdome of China, is very great: and was in owlde tyme cauled Sina. Here is founde great plentie of precious ſtones. The people are very ſubtyle and ryche. They are all appareled eyther in ſylke or cloth, or veſtures of other woorkemanſhippe: and are of good ciuilitie. They do not gladly permitte the Portugales or other ſtraungers to trafike in theyr kyngedome: whoſe moſte famous place vppon the ſea ſyde, is named Cautan, and the ſea Machiam, cauled of the owlde wryters the ſea of Sina.

Malacha.

Tachola.

The Ilandes of Malucha.

The Iland of Samotra.

Spyces.

Calocut.

Ceilam.

Cathay.

China.

Precious stones.

Sylke.

Cautan.

¶ *Of the landes of Laborador and Baccalaos, lyinge weſt and northweſt from Englande, and beinge parte of the firme lande of the Weſt Indies.*

The way to the Ilandes of Maluca by the north sea.

The Spanyardes.

Gasper Cortesreales.

318

Insulæ Cortesreales.

Snowe and Ise.

Furres.

MAny haue trauayled to ſearch the coaſt of the lande of Laborador, aſwell to th[e]intente to knowe howe farre or whyther it reachethe, as alſo whether there bee any paſſage by ſea through the ſame into the ſea of Sur and the Ilandes of Maluca which are vnder the Equinoctiall line: thinkynge that the waye thyther ſhulde greatly bee ſhortened by this vyage. The Spanyardes as to whoſe ryght the ſayde Ilandes of ſpices perteyne, dyd fyrſt ſeeke to fynde the ſame by this way. The Portugales alſo hauynge the trade of ſpices in theyr handes, dyd trauayle to fynde the ſame: although hetherto neyther anye ſuch paſſage is founde or the ende of that lande. In the yeare a thouſande and fiue hundreth, Gaſper Corteſreales, made a vyage thyther with two carauelles: but founde not the ſtreyght or paſſage he ſought. At his beinge there, he named the Ilandes that lye in the mouth of the goulfe Quadrado, after his name Corteſreales, lyinge in the. L. [fifty] degrees and more: and browght from that lande abowt three ſcore men for ſlaues. He greatly maruayled to beholde the houge quantitie of ſnowe and Iſe. For the ſea is there froſen excedyngly. Th[e]inhabitauntes are men of good corporature, although tawny lyke the Indies, and laborious. They paynte theyr bodyes, and weare braſelettes and hoopes of ſyluer and copper. Theyr apparel is made of the ſkynnes of marternes and

dyuers other beaſtes, whiche they weare with the heare inwarde in wynter, and owtwarde in ſoommer. This apparell they gyrde to theyr bodyes with gyrdels made of cotton or the ſynewes of fyſſhes and beaſtes. They eate fyſſhe more then any other thynge, and eſpecially ſalmons, althoughe they haue foules and frute. They make theyr houſes of timber wherof they haue great plentie: and in the ſteade of tyles, couer them with the ſkynnes of fyſſhes and beaſtes. It is ſayde alſo that there are grifes in this lande: and that the beares and many other beaſtes and foules are white. To this and the Ilandes abowt the ſame, the Britons are accuſtomed to reſorte: as men of nature agreable vnto them and borne vnder the ſame altitude and temperature. The Norwayes alſo ſayled thyther with the pylot cauled Iohn Scoluo: And the Englyſſhe men with Sebaſtian Cabot.

Fysshe.
Gryffes.
Beares.
The britons.
Sebastian Cabot.

The coaſte of the lande of Baccalaos, is a greate tracte: and the greateſt altitude therof, is. xlviii. [forty-eight] degrees and a halfe. Sebaſtian Cabot was the fyrſt that browght any knowleage of this lande. For beinge in Englande in the dayes of kyng Henry the ſeuenth, he furnyſſhed twoo ſhippes at his owne charges or (as ſum ſay) at the kynges, whome he perſuaded that a paſſage might bee founde to Cathay by the north ſeas, and that ſpices myght bee brought from thenſe ſoner by that way, then by the vyage the Portugales vſe by the ſea of Sur. He went alſo to knowe what maner of landes thoſe Indies were to inhabite. He had with hym three hundreth men, and directed his courſe by the tracte of Iſlande vppon the cape of Laborador at. lviii. [fifty-eight] degrees: affirmynge that in the monethe of Iuly there was ſuch could and heapes of Iſe that he durſt paſſe no further: alſo that the dayes were very longe and in maner withowt nyght, and the nyghtes very cleare. Certeyne it is, that at the. lx. [ſixty] degrees, the longeſt day is of. xviii. [eighteen] houres. But conſyderynge the coulde and the ſtraungenes of the vnknowen lande, he turned his courſe from thenſe to the Weſt, folowynge the coaſt of the lande of Baccalaos vnto the. xxxviii. [thirty-eight] degrees, from whenſe he returned to Englande. To conclude, the Brytons and Danes haue ſayled to the Baccalaos: and Iaques Cartier a frenche man was there twyſe with three galeons: as one in the yeare. xxxiiii. [thirty-four] and the other in the. xxxv. [thirty-five] and choſe the lande to inhabite frome the. xlv. [forty-fifth] degrees to the. li. [fifty-firſt] beinge as good a lande as Fraunce, and al thynges therein commune to ſuch as fyrſt poſſeſſe the ſame.

The land of Baccallaos.
The vyage of Cabot in the dayes of kyng Henry the seuenth.
Ise in Iuly.
Baccallaos.
Brytons.
Danes.
Iacques Cartyer.

Of theſe lands, Iacobus Gaſtaldus wryteth thus: The newe lande of Baccalaos, is a coulde region, whoſe inhabytauntes are Idolatours and praye to the ſoonne and moone and dyuers Idoles. They are whyte people and very ruſtical. For they eate fleſſhe and fyſſhe and all other thynges rawe. Sumtymes alſo they eate mans fleſſhe priuilye ſo that theyr Caciqui haue no knowleage therof. The apparell of both the men and woman, is made of beares ſkynnes, althowgh they haue ſables and marternes, not greatly eſtemed bycauſe they are lyttle. Sum of them go naked in ſoommer, and weare apparell only in wynter. The Brytons and Frenche men are accuſtomed to take fyſſhe in the coaſte of theſe landes where is founde great plentie of Tunnyes which th[e]inhabitauntes caul Baccalaos wherof the lande was ſo named. Northwarde from the region of Baccalaos, is the lande of Laborador, all full of mountaynes and great wooddes in whiche are manye beares and wylde bores. Th[e]inhabitauntes are Idolatoures and warlike people, appareled as are they of Baccallaos. In all this newe lande, is neyther citie or caſtell: but they lyue in companies lyke heardes of beaſtes.

The people of Baccallaos
Fysshyng for tunnyes.
Laborador.

¶ *The diſcouerynge of the lande of Floryda.*

THe gouernour of the Ilande of Boriquena Iohn Ponce of Leon beinge diſcharged of his office and very ryche, furnyſſhed and ſente foorth two caruels to ſeeke the Ilandes of Boyuca in the which the Indians affirmed to be a fontayne or ſpringe whoſe water is of vertue to make owlde men younge. Whyle he trauayled ſyxe monethes with owtragious deſyre amonge many Ilandes to fynde that he ſought, and coulde fynde no token of any ſuch fountayne, he entered into Bimini and diſcouered the lande of Florida in the yeare. 1512. on Eaſter day which the Spanyardes caule the floryſſhyng day of Paſcha, wherby they named that lande Florida. And ſuppoſyng that great ryches myght be browght from thenſe, he returned into Spayne, and couenaunted with kynge Ferdinando as touchynge the trade: and by the interceſſion of Nicolas de Quando and Peter Nunez de Guſman, the kynge dyd not onely make hym gouernoure of Bemini and Florida, but alſo ſente furthe with hym three ſhippes from Siuile toward his ſecond vyage in the yeare. 1515. He touched in the Ilande of Guacana otherwyſe cauled Guadalupe, and ſent to lande certeyne of his men with the landreſſes of the ſhyppes: whom the Canibales lyinge in ambuſſhe, aſſayled with theyr inuenemed arrowes: and ſlaying the moſt parte, caryed away the women. With this euyll begynnynge, Iohn Ponce departed frome henſe to Boriquen and from thenſe to Florida wher he went alande with his ſouldyers to eſpie a place moſte commodious to inhabite and plant a colonie. But the Indians commynge furth ageynſt hym to defende the enterance,

Iohn Ponce.
Water of great vertue, of this reade in the Decades.
319
Bemmini.
Guacana.
The Canibales.
Boriquena.

The death of Iohn Ponce.

assayled the Spanyardes fierecely and slewe and wounded many of them. At which conflicte also he hym selfe beinge wounded with an arrowe, dyed shortely after in the Ilande of Cuba: and so endynge his lyfe, consumed a great parte of the rycheſſe he had before begotten at saynt Iohannes of Boriquen. This Iohn Ponce had before sayled with Chrystopher Colon to the Ilande of Hispaniola in the yeare. 1493. He was a gentel souldier in the warres of this Ilande, and capitayne of the prouince of Higuel for Nycolas de Ouando that conquested the same.

The land of Floryda.

The region of Floryda is a poynt or cape of lande reachynge into the sea lyke vnto a tounge: beinge a famous and notorious place amonge the Indians by reason of many Spanyardes that haue bin slayne there.

Ferdinando de Soto.

But wheras by fame this Floryda was estemed a ryche lande, many valient and noble men desyred the conquest therof, amonge whom Ferdinando de Soto (who had before byn a capitayne in Peru and greatly inryched by th[e]imprisonment of kynge Atahaliba) attempted a vyage thyther with a good bande of men, and spente syue yeare in seekynge of golde mynes, supposynge that this lande hadde byn lyke vnto Peru.

In fine, he dyed there and was the destruction and vndoinge of all that went with hym withowt inhabitynge that lande, in the which the conquestours had hytherto neuer good succesſe, forasmuche as these Indians are valiante archers and stronge and hardy men.

The valient myndes of the Spanyardes.

But the valiant myndes of the Spanyardes not discouraged by these myshaduentures, after the death of Ferdinando Soto, many woorthy gentelmen desyred this conquest in the yeare. 1544. amonge whom was Iulyan Samano, and Peter de Ahumada beinge brotherne and men of sufficient abilitie for such an enterprise.

The thyrde attempte of the conqueste of Florida.

But neyther th[e]emprour beinge then in Germanie, neyther the prince Don Phylippe his sonne who gouerned all the kyngedomes of Castile and Aragonie, neyther yet the counsayle of the Indies wolde in any case agree to the conqueste.

Certeine fryers attempte the conquest onely with woordes, but with euyll successe.

Neuertheless not vtterly contemnynge the matter which they were partly persuaded myght otherwyse bee browght to passe, they sent thyther fryer Luys Cancell of Baluastro with other fryers of the order of saynt Dominike who offered them selues to conuerte the nations of that lande from theyr gentilitie to the fayth of Chryst and obedience to Th[e]emperoure, onely with woordes. The fryer therfore goinge forwarde on his vyage at the kynges charges in the yeare. 1549. went aland with foure other fryers which he tooke with hym and certeyne maryners withowt harneſſe or weapons: vnto whom as he began his preachynge, many of the Indians of the sayd Florida resorted to the sea syde, where withowt gyuynge audience to his woordes, they caryed hym away with three other of his companyons and dyd eate them, whereby they suffered martyrdome for the fayth of Chryst.

The fryers are slayne and eaten.

The resydue that escaped, made hast to the shyppe and kept them selues for confessours as sum say. Many that fauoure th[e]intente of the fryers, doo nowe consyder that by that meanes the Indians coulde not be brought to owre frendeshippe and religion. Neuertheless, that if it coulde so haue byn browght to passe, it had byn better.

A new kynde of disgrading

There came of late from thas shippe, one that had byn the page of Ferdinando de Soto, who declared that the Indians hanged vp the skynnes with the heades and crownes of the sayd fryers in one of theyr temples.

320

¶ *An opinion that Europa, Africa, and Asia, are Ilandes: and of certeyne nauigations abowt the same.*

THe anciente wryters diuided this owre worlde into Asia, Africa, and Europa, by the ryuer Tanais as Isocrates declareth in his Panegyrico. Afterwarde they diuided Asia and Africa by the turnynges and course of the ryuer Nilus, thowghe the same had byn better by the sea Bermeio (that is) the redde sea, which almoste trauerseth and passeth throwgh the lande from the Ocean to the sea Mediterraneum which diuideth Europa and Asia. But Berosus the Caldean, sayth that Noe gaue names to Africa, Asia, and Europa: and gaue them to his sonnes, Cham, Sem, and Iafet: also that he sayled by the sea Mediterraneum ten yeres.

Noe gaue names to Africa, Asia, and Europa.

In fine we nowe conclude that the three sayde prouinces occupy this mydlande of the worlde. All in generall say that Asia is greater then any of the other, and in maner as bygge as they both.

Asia.

Europe.

Albeit Herodotus in his Melpomeme, scorneth them that make Europe and Asia equall: affirmynge that Europe in longitude is equal to Asia and Afrike: and that it passeth them in latitude, wherin he speaketh not greatly owt of square. But to speake more of this elswhere, not perteynynge to the matter wee haue in hande, I say that Homerus one of the most ancient wryters, sayth that the world which is diuided into Asia, Africa, and Europa, is an Ilande as reherseth Pomponius Mela in his thyrde booke.

The hole earthe is an Ilande.

Strabo in the fyrst boke of his Geographie, sayth that the earth which is inhabited, is an Ilande enuironed with the Ocean. Higinius also, and Solinus, confirme this sentence, Althowghe Solinus doo erre in mistakinge the names of the seas, supposynge that the Caspian sea was parte of the Ocean, beinge rather lyke vnto the sea Mediterraneum so named bycause it is in the mydlande as is the Caspian sea withowt participacion of the great Ocean.

The Caspian sea. Caliz is a ryuer.

Strabo wryteth that in the tyme of Tolomeus Euergetes, one Eudoxus sayled three or foure tymes from Caliz to India: And that the guides of the redde

Nauigations from the red sea to East India.

ſea (cauled the goulfe of Arabie or Bermeio) preſented to the ſame kynge Tolomeus, an Indian whome he brought frome thenſe. Kynge Iuba alſo prooued this nauigation from Caliz to India as wryteth Solinus. Whereby it appeareth that the nauigation to India by the Ocean was then wel knowen and frequented, althowgh not ſo much as at this preſent, the ſame beinge neyther then or nowe a thynge of great difficultie or trauayle by the coaſtes of hotte regions. But to ſayle from India to Caliz by the other parte of the north by a clyme and regions of extreme coulde, ſhulde bee doubtleſſe a difficult and daungerous thynge, wherof is no memory amonge the owlde autours ſauynge onely of one ſhyppe as Plinie and Mela doo wryte, reherſynge the teſtimony of Cornelius Nepos who affirmed that the kynge of Sueuia preſented to Quintus Metellus Celer Lieuetenaunt of Fraunce, certeyne Indians dryuen by tempeſt into the ſea of Germanie: if the ſame were not of the lande of Laborador or Bacallaos, and they deceaued in theyr coloure. For ſum ſay that lykewyſe in the dayes of the Emperoure Fredericus Barbaroſſa, certeyne Indians were browght in a Canoa from the citie of Lubec in Germanie. Furthermore pope Eneas Syluius wryteth that the Sarmation ſea, is as certeyne as the Scythian, Germanian, or Indian ſea. Nowe alſo there is great knowleage and experience how the nauigations and paſſage may be attempted by Norwaye and other north regions vnder the ſame north, and to folow that coaſte to the ſouth ſea of Sur and keepe that courſe by the tracte of China. Olanus Gothus the archbyſſhop of Upſalia and borne in Gothlande, hath wrytten muche of theſe north regions and nauigations by the north ſea. In the tract of this vyage by the north ſea, are the Ilandes of Iſlande and Gruntlande, althowgh there is doubte whether Gruntlande be an Ilande or parte of the firme lande. It is. xl. [forty] leaques, from Lapponia, and ſumwhat more frome Finmarchia a lande of Scandinauia in Europe. The people of Gruntland are ſtronge men and of coomly ſtature. They ſayle with ſmaul ſhippes or barkes couered cloſe aboue with lether or beaſtes hydes for feare of the coulde and fyſſhes. Gruntlande as ſum ſay, is fyftie leaques from the north parte of the firme lande of the Weſt Indies by the lande of Laborador. But it is not yet knowen whether this land be continent or adherent with Gruntlande, or if there bee any ſtreyght of ſea betwene them. If all bee one firme lande adioynynge by any parte, then the two great partes of the world ſeeme to ioyne togyther abowt the north pole or vnder it, or beneth it, foraſmuch as it is not paſt fortie or fiftie leaques from Finmarche to Gruntland: wherby it may appere that althowgh there be any ſuch ſtraight diuidynge them, yet are they neyghbours and not farre in ſunder. Furthermore from the land of Laborador by th[e]accompt of the pilottes, is abowte foure hundreth leaques to Faial, one of the Ilandes of Azores, otherwyſe cauled the Ilandes of Soria lyinge in the Weſt Ocean ouer ageynſt Spayne. Alſo by their accompte the lande of Laborador is abowte fiue hundreth leaques from Irland, and ſixe hundreth from Spayne.

The vyage to India by the north seas.

The hystorye of Cornelius Nepos.

Note this.

Indians in Lubec

The Sarmatian sea.

Islande.
Gruntlande.
Lapponia.
Finmarchia.
Gruntlande.

The distance from Gruntlande to the lande of Laborador.

321

[Narrowness] of the streight if it be.

The Ilandes of Soria, or Azores.

From laborador to Irland.

That the Spanyardes haue ſayled to the Antipodes (that is) ſuche as go-ſiete to ſiete ageynſt vs, and inhabite the inferiour hemiſpherie or halfe globe of the earthe, contrarie to th[e]oppinion of the owlde writers.

ALL the ancient philoſophers of the gentiles do deny that there may be any paſſage from owre hemiſphere or halfe compaſſe of the earth to the Antipodes by reaſon of the burnt line (cauled *Zona Torrida*) and the Ocean ſea lyinge in the mydde way, wherby this vyage ſhulde be hyndered and impoſſible, as Macrobius wryteth at large in his commentaries vpon the dreame of Scipio. Of the Chryſtyan phyloſophers, Clemente wryteth that it is not poſſible for any man to paſſe the Ocean: and other wryters of later tyme, ſeeme to confirme the ſame. In deede I verely beleue that this way was neuer knowen to them, aſwell for that euer preſuppoſynge the thynge to bee impoſſible they neuer attempted it, as alſo that the Indians (whom we caule Antipodes) haue no ſhippes ſufficient for ſo longe and difficulte a nauigation to brynge them knowleage herof, as haue the Spaniardes to paſſe the Ocean vnto them: In ſo much that at this preſent this vyage is by dayly experience ſo well knowen vnto the Spanyardes and Portugales, that they can in maner go thyther blyndfielde, contrarye to th[e]oppinion of thoſe phyloſophers. I wyll here omytte to ſpeake of many ſhippes that haue ſayled ordynaryly frome Spayne to India, and ſpeake onely of the ſhyppe Victoria which compaſſed abowt the hole globe of the worlde and touched in the landes of two or three Antipodes, and in fine returned to Spayne by a contrary way, wherby is declared the ignorance of the ſage antiquitie. In this nauigation, they founde many ſecreates, amonge the which this is ſtrange and woorthy memorie, that al ſuch deade Chriſtians as were caſt into the ſea, lay on theyr backes and turned theyr faces vpwarde: but the gentyles lay all groueiyn

Macrobius.

Clement.

The Indians are Antipodes.

The shyppe Victoria.

A straunge thinge.

Shadowes towarde the south.

The sonne rysynge on the ryght hande.

The vyage of Magellanus.

on theyr bellyes. They alſo perceaued the ſoonne and moone to keepe a contrary courſe from that they doo here, and euer to caſt the ſhadowes of all thynges towarde the ſouth: whiche thynge alſo was knowen to ſum of the owlde wryters. For this is manifeſte that the ſonne ryſeth on the ryght hande to theym that lyue in the thyrtie degrees on th[e]other ſyde the Equinoctiall: ſo that lookynge towarde the ſonne, they turne theyr faces to the north: wherby it appeareth to bee trew that they affirme. They conſumed three yeares lackynge. xiiii. [fourteen] dayes in goynge and commynge, and loſte a daye in theyr accompte, whereby they dyd eate fleſſhe on frydayes, and celebrated the feaſte of Eaſter on Mundayes: ſo that they ouerleaped a day (not faylynge in the calender) and kept no iuſt rekenynge of the biſextile. The cauſe wherof whyle ſome haue ſearched by philoſophie, they haue erred more then the maryners. They ſayled. x. [ten] thouſande leaques and. xiiii. [fourteen] myles by theyr accompte, albeit they ſhulde haue gonne leſſe, if theyr way hadde line ryght forth. But as they were enforced partely of neceſſitie, and partely to fynde that they ſowght, they made many wyndynges and turnynges. They trauerſed the Equinoctiall line ſyxe tymes withowt burnynge, contrary to th[e]oppinion of the owlde autours. They remayned ſyue monethes in the Iland of Tidore, whoſe inhabitauntes are Antipodes to theym of Guinea, wherby it is apparente that wee maye communicate with them. And althowgh they loſt the ſyght of the northe ſtarre, yet dyd they euer dyrecte theyr courſe therby. For beinge in the. xl. [forty] degrees of the ſouth, they ſawe the nedle of the compaſſe ſtande as directly towarde the north as it dooth in the ſea Mediterraneum: althowgh ſum ſay that it looſeth his force ſumwhat. Abowt the poynt of the Southe or pole Antartike, they ſawe a lyttle whyte cloude and foure ſtarres lyke vnto a croſſe with three other ioynynge therunto, which reſemble owre Septentrion, and are iudged to bee the ſignes or tokens of the ſouth exeltre of heauen. Great was the nauigation of the fleete of Salamon, but greater was this of Th[e]emprours maieſtie Don Charles kynge of Spayne. The Argos of Iaſon whiche the antiquitie placed amonge the ſtarres, ſayled but a lyttle way and a ſhorte vyage in comparaſon of the ſhippe Victoria whiche owght woorthely to bee kepte in the Arſenall of Siuile in perpetuall memory of ſo famous an enterpryſe. The daungiours, paynes, trauayles and laboures of Vlyſſes were nothynge in reſpecte of ſuche as Iohn Sebaſtian ſuſteyned: whereby in the ſcu[t]chion of his armes in the ſtead of a monſtrous or inuincible beaſt, he woorthely gaue the woorlde with this circumſcription: PRIMVS CIRCVMDEDISTI ME. (that is) Thou art the fyrſt that hath compaſſed me abowt.

Antipodes.
Guinea.
The north starre.
The needle and compasse.

322

Septentriones, are the vii. starres.
that are sene by Charles wayne or the great beare.
Argo of Iason.

Vlysses.
Iohn Sebastian.

As touchynge the needle of the compaſſe, I haue redde in the Portugales nauigations that ſaylynge as farre ſouth as Cap. de Bona Speranza, the poynt of the needle ſtyll reſpected the northe as it dyd on this ſyde the Equinoctiall, ſauynge that it ſumwhat trembeled and declyned a lyttle, wherby the force ſeemed ſumwhat to be diminiſſhed, ſo that they were fayne to helpe it with the lode ſtone.

¶ *Who fyrſt founde the needle of the compaſſe, and the vſe therof.*

The chiefest partes of the shyppe.

SPeakynge much of nauigations. it myght ſeme a thynge vndecent to omyt to ſay ſumwhat of the needle of the compaſſe: withowt the which as all nauigations are but blynde and wanderynge coniectures, euen ſo ſhulde the Indies neuer haue bynne founde but by helpe of the ſame, foraſmuche as the ſhippes ſhulde haue byn loſt in the Ocean, were it not that theyr courſes were directed by the needle and compaſſe, which owght therfore to be compted the chiefe partes of the ſhyppe and principall inſtrumentes of ſaylynge. The fyrſt that founde the needle and the vſe therof (as Blondus and Mapheus Girardus doo wryte) was one Flauius of Malpha a citie in the kyngdome of Naples, of whome the Neopolitans glory to this day: and that by good reaſon, foraſmuch as a citiſen and neyghboures chylde of theyrs, was the fyrſt fynder of ſo commodious and profytable a thynge, to the ſecreate wherof ſo many excellente wyttes as were before hym coulde not attayne, althowgh they hadde both iren and the lode ſtone (cauled *Magnes*) whiche are the materials of the needle. Next vnto Flauius, the chiefe commendation is dew to the Spanyardes and Portugales by whoſe dayly experience, the ſame is browght to further perfection, and the vſe therof better knowen: althowghe hytherto no man knoweth the cauſe why the iren touched with the lode ſtone, turneth euer towarde the north ſtarre, as playnely appeareth in euery common dyall. In maner all wryters attribute this to a ſecreate and hyd propertie, ſum of the north, and other of the mixture or naturall temperature of elementes that is betwene iren and the ſayde ſtone. If it bee the propertie of the north or north ſtarre, then (as the pylots make theyr rekenynge) neyther ſhulde the needle make anye chaunge or dyffer in northeſtinge, (as in ſaylynge northeaſte withowt the Ilande of Tercera beinge one of the Ilandes of Azores or Soria and two hundreth leaques from Spayne towarde the Weſt Eaſtweſt) neyther yet ſhulde it loſe his office (as ſayth Olanus) in paſſynge from the Ilande of Magnete, that is, the Iland of the lode ſtone, which is vnder or neare abowte the northe pole. But howe ſo euer it bee, or what ſo euer bee the cauſe, trewth it is that the nedle turneth euer to the north although wee ſayle abowt the ſouth

Magnes.
The Spanyardes and Portugales.
Why the needle turneth to the north.

The Iland of Tercera.

The Iland of Magnete.

We owght therefore to vnderſtande that the lode ſtone (whiche wee falſely caule the adamant) hath heade, fiete, and alſo armes as ſum ſay. The iren that is rubbed with the heade, neuer ceaſeth to turne dyrectly towarde the north, as is to ſee in the dyals that are made to the ſoonne. The rubbynge of the fiete ſeruethe for the ſouth: as doo lykewyſe the other partes, for other quarters and poyntes of heauen.

Note the quarters of the lode stone.

Note here that yf a piece of this ſtone, of the byggeneſſe of an egge or a walnutte, or more or leſſe, bee broken into manye ſmaule pieces as bygge as dyce or leſſe, yet euery of thoſe ſmaule pieſes, hath headde, ſoote, and armes, as is ſayde here before.

¶ *The Situacion and byggenes of the earth.* 323

IT may to ſume ſeeme a vaine thyng to ſeke the ſituacion and byggenes of the earth, although it bee eaſy to knowe, foraſmuche as it is ſituate in the myddeſte of the worlde as the center of the ſame, beinge enuironed and as it were borne vp of the ſea which compaſſeth it abowt. Mela ſayth that the pyllers that ſuſteyne it, are Eaſte, Weſt, North, and South: which ſayinge Dauyd confirmeth in the C. vi. [106th] pſalme. Theſe foure are the moſt notable pyllers or ſuſtentacions that the earth hath in heauen, accordynge to the motions wherof, all vyages are ruled on the earthe, frome whenſe they haue theyr originall, as engendered of the dyuers qualities of vapoures and exhalations rayſed by the ſonne and otherwyſe. Eratoſthenes put none other ſuſtentacions then the north and ſouth poles, and parteth the earth by the courſe of the ſoonne: which particion Marcus Varro dooth greatly commende as agreeble to reaſon. The poles are firme and immouable as an exeltre abowt the which the heauen moueth and is therby ſuſteyned. They furthermore declare vnto vs vnder what parte of heauen wee bee, howe farre, and which way wee go, with alſo the largenes of heauen and commenſuration of the earth. As for exemple: the ſtreyght of Gibraltar, (accomptynge from Spayne) is from the north, or to ſpeake more playnely from the poynte of the earthe that is or may be directly vnder the north pole, abowt. liiii. [fifty-four] degrees which make. ix. hundreth and. lxxx. [980] leaques according to the common computacion of the Coſmographers and Aſtronomers: And is from the Equinoctiall line. xxxvi. [thirty-ſix] degrees: which added to the other. liiii. [fifty-four] make. [lx]xxx. [ninety] degrees, beinge the hole diſtance from the north poynte to the Equinoctiall line diuydynge the earthe by the myddeſte, and the quarter or fourthe parte of the hole circumference of the earth: the whiche how great it is in compaſſe and how many leaques or myles it conteynethe, is eaſy to perceaue accomptynge euery degree. lx. [ſixty] myles. But that yowe may the better perceaue what degrees are, I haue thowght good to ſpeake ſumwhat more hereof.

The sea.

The wyndes

The poles.

The measurynge the circumference of the earth

¶ *What degrees are.*

IN the owlde tyme theyr maner was to meaſure the earth and the woorlde by furlonges, pāſes, and fiete, as is to reade in Plinie, Strabo, and other wryters. But after that Ptolome founde degrees a hundreth and fiftie yeares after the death of Chryſt, that maner of accompte was receaued as the beſt. Ptolomie diuided all the hole body and face of the land and ſea into three hundreth and ſixtie degrees of length or longitude: and other as many degrees of bredth or latitude: ſo that the hole globe of the baule beinge rounde, conteyneth as much in latitude as longitude. He aſſigned lykewyſe to euery degree three ſcore myles, whiche make. xvii. [ſeuenteen] Spanyſſhe leaques and a halfe: In ſuch ſorte that the globe or baule of the earth meaſured directly by any of the foure partes of the ſame, conteyneth in circuite ſyxe thouſand and two hundreth leaques. This computacion and meaſurynge, is ſo certeyne, that as it is approued of all men and founde frewe by experience, ſo much the more is it to bee commended and had in admiration for that th[e]inuention hereof was iudged ſo dyfficult by Iob and the preacher, that no man had founde the meaſure of limites of the ſame. They name thoſe degrees of longitude, that they accompte from ſoonne to ſoonne by the Equinoctiall line which reacheth from the Eaſt to the Weſte by the myddle of the globe or baule of the earth. Theſe can not well be obſerued foraſmuch as in this tract of heauen, there is no fyxt or permanent ſigne whereunto the pylots maye directe theyr eyes or inſtrumentes. For the ſoonne, althowghe it be a moſte cleare ſigne, yet doothe it dayely chaunge the place of ryſynge and ſaulynge, and keepethe not the ſame courſe the day folowynge as the Aſtronomers affirme. And althowgh there is no number of them that in trauaylyng ſtrange landes and ſeas haue ſpent theyr gooddes and almoſte theyr wyttes to fynde the degrees of longitude without errour as are found the degrees of latitude and heyght, yet is there none that hytherto hath any trewe knowleage therof. The degrees of latitude or altitude, are they that are accompted from the north pointe to the ſouth, the commenſuration or meaſuring

Ptolome founde degrees.

Longitude and Latitude.

A degree.

Degrees of Longitude.

The degrees of Longitude are not knowen.

The degrees of latitude.

324 The north starre.

The circuite of the earth.

The inferior hemispherie.

Hyperborei. Hypernocii.

wherby, is moſt certeine by reaſon that the north ſtarre is permane[nt] and remayneth ſtyll in one place, or at leaſt moueth abowt the pole which is theyr firme and ſtedfaſt ſigne wherby they accompte theyr degrees and directe theyr vyages. By the degrees therfore accompted by theſe moſt certeine ſignes, is vnfaylably meaſured the hole circumference of the lande and ſea, diuydynge the ſame into foure equall partes in this maner. From the north poynte to the Equinoctiall, are. lxxxx. [ninety] degrees: and from the Equinoctiall to the ſouth poynt, other. lxxxx. [ninety.] Ageyne on the contrary ſide, from the ſouth poynt to the Equinoctiall, are other. lxxxx. [ninety] degrees: and from the Equinoctial ageyne to the north poynte, are as many. This may we coniecture by good reaſon aſwell of th[e]inferioure hemiſphery wherof a great parte is knowen vnto vs by the nauigations of ſuch as haue paſſed the ſtreyghets of Magellanus and the cape of Bona Speranza, althowgh we haue noo ſuch cleare and manifeſt relation as we ought to haue of the lande vnder the ſouthe pole beinge the other exeltree of the worlde whoſe ſyght we lacke. For (as Herodotus ſayth) yf there bee any lande of the Hyperboreans (that is ſuche as are vnder the north) ther is alſo of the hypernotios, that is ſuch as are vnder the ſouth: which perhappes are they that liue in the lande of the ſtreyghtes of Magellanus as nere vnto the other pole. But what theſe landes are, or of what greatnes we can haue no certeyne knowleage vntyl ſum man ſhal haue compaſſed abowt the lands vnder the ſouth pole as did Iohn Sebaſtian the circumference of the Equinoctiall line.

Theſe laſt annotacions of the Indies, haue I tranſlated owt of the bookes of Franciſcus Lopes, wrytten in the Spanyſſhe tounge to Th[e]emperours maieſtie: and partly alſo owt of the carde made by Sebaſtian Cabot.

¶ *A demonſtration of the roundeneſſe of the Earth.*

The eye is deceaued.

ANy ignorant men thynke that the earthe is not rounde onely by iudgemente of the eye which is deceaued in manye thynges not only of the woorkes of nature, but alſo of ſuche as are doonne by the ſlight and arte of man. For they ſay: Howe can it bee rounde foraſmuche as thowgh a man trauayle neuer ſo farre eyther by land or ſea, he ſeemeth euer to paſſe as it were by a ryght line without any ſuch circuite or compaſſynge, aſcendynge or diſcendynge, as perteyneth to all the partes of a rounde forme. The which obiection, as it is groſe and ſimple, proceadyng of the narowneſſe of the vnderſtandyng of ſuch as can not conceaue the large circumference of the lande and ſea, euen ſo may it be anſwered with this ſimple demonſtration. In a rynge that ſerueth for the fynger of a mans hande, the ſpace of halfe an ynche or lyttle more, is halfe a cyrcle. But in a rynge or cyrcle of bygger circumference, as in the hoope of a tubbe, halfe an ynche appeareth in maner a ryght line, althowghe it bee not ſo in deede, foraſmuch as it is not poſſible for any parte of a circle to conſiſt of a ryght line, neyther any parte of a line to conſyſt of a cyrcle, ſithe the partes muſt needes bee conformable to the hole, conſyſtynge of ſuch vniforme partes as are in mathematicals. But not to wander to farre in theſe ſubtylties, the greater that yow can imagen the circle to bee, ſo ſhall a greater parte therof ſeeme a ryght line or playne forme: As for exemple, imaginynge a circle whoſe diameter (that is meaſure from ſyde to ſyde) conſyſteth of a myle: in this circle a pole length or more, may ſeeme a ryght line, as yowe may otherwyſe multiply of the like infinitely: wherby it ſhal appere that the large circumference of the earth well conſydered, a muche greater parte of the circle therof then the eye of man conceaueth, may ſeeme to bee a ryght line, and he contynually to walke vppon a playne forme foraſmuch as euery part of a circle is lyke vnto other as I haue ſayde. This may ſuffice for a ſimple and briefe demonſtration and induction for ſuche as are deſyrous to ſeeke furth to knowe the truth herof.

A rynge.

A circle.

¶ *What credit owght to bee gyuen to wryters as touchynge the woorkes of nature.*

THe moſte auncient wryter Diodorus, Siculus, in the fourth booke of his Bibliotheca, wryteth in this maner. If any man for the maruelous ſtraungenes and noueltie of ſuche thinges as are deſcrybed in owre bookes, wyl not perhappes gyue credyt to owre hyſtorie, let hym with ryght iudgement conſider the difference that is betwene the ayer of the Scythians and the Troglodytes compared to owres, and he ſhall the eaſelyer perceaue the woorkes of nature and approue owre wrytynges. For owre ayer dyffereth ſo much from theyrs, that it myght ſeeme incredible if experience were not more certeyne then doubtfull reaſon. In ſume regions the coulde is ſo extreme that greate ryuers are ſo froſen, that laden cartes and armies of men paſſe ouer the immouable iſe. Wine alſo and other moiſt thynges are ſo conieled that they may bee cutte with knyues. But this is more marueylous, that th[e]extreeme partes of ſuche apparell as menne weare, are ſo bytten with coulde that they faule of. Mens eyes are alſo dymmed: the fyre gyueth not his natural bryghtneſſe: and braſen veſſelles and images are broken. Sumtime by reaſon of thicke cloudes, thunders and lyghtnynges are neyther ſeene or harde in ſuch regions. Many other thynges more marueylous then theſe hath nature wrought, which may ſeeme incredible to the ignorant: but eaſy to ſuch as haue experience. In the furtheſt partes of Egypt and Trogloditica, the heate of the ſoonne is ſo extreme abowt noone, that noo man can ſe hym that ſtandeth by hym, by reaſon of the thicke ayer cauſed by the vapoures and exhalations rayſed by the heate. None can go withowt ſhoos but haue theyr fiete ſuddeynly blyſtered and exulcerate. Such as are a thyrſt, dye immediatly except they haue drynke at hande, the heate ſo faſte conſumeth the moyſture of theyr bodyes. Meate put in braſen veſſelles, is ſodde in ſhort ſpace by the heate of the ſoonne withowt other fyre. Yet they that are borne and browght vp in ſuch regions, had rather wyllyngely ſuſteyne theſe incommodities then bee inforced to liue otherwyſe: ſuch a loue of theyr natiue countrey hath nature gyuen to all men: cuſtome of continuance from younge yeares being alſo of force to ouercomme the malicioufneſſe of the ayer. Neuertheleſſe, theſe places of ſuch contrary natures wherby ſuche ſtrange effectes are cauſed, are not farre in ſunder or diuided by any great diſtance. For, from the maryſſhes of Meotis or Meotides where certeyne Scythians dwell in extreme coulde, many haue ſayled with ſhyps of burden to Rodes in the ſpace of ten dayes: and from thenſe to Alexandria in foure dayes. From whenſe paſſynge throwgh Egypte by the ryuer of Nilus, they haue arryued in Ethiopia in other tenne dayes: So that the nauigation from the couldeſt partes of the worlde to the hotteſt regions, is no more then. xxiiii. [twenty-four] continuall dayes. Where as therefore the varietie of the ayer is ſuch in places of ſo ſmaule diſtance, it is no marueyle that the cuſtomes and maners of lyuynge of the people of thoſe regions, with the complexions of theyr bodyes and ſuch thynges as are engendered there, do greatly dyffer from owres.

325 The diuersitie of ayer in dyuers regions.

Extreme colde.

Extreme heate.

The force of education.

Extreme heate and colde in A smale distance.

From Scythia to Ethiopia.

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION. VI.

Vannuccio Biringuccio.

Pyrotechnia.

First printed in 1540.]

EDEN

¶ The preface to the booke of Metals.

TO this booke of the Indies and nauigations I haue thowght good to adde the booke of metals, for three cauſes eſpecially me mouynge: whereof the fyrſt is, that it ſeemeth to me a thynge vndecent to reade ſo much of golde and ſyluer, and to knowe lyttle or nothynge of the naturall generation thereof, beinge neuertheleſſe thynges not onely moſt deſyred, but alſo ſuch withowt the which at this age the lyfe of man can not bee paſſed ouer without many aduerſities, foraſmuch as pouertie is hatefull to all men, and vertue no further eſteemed then it is ſupported by ryches, ſyth nowe that lady that reigned in Saturns dayes, is becomme the ſlaue to hym that was then her bondeman in that golden worlde, ſo named, not for the deſyre that men had to golde, but for th[e]innocencie of lyuynge in thoſe dayes, when Mars was of no poure, and men thought it crueltie by breakynge the bones of owre mother the earth, to open a way to the courte of infernal Pluto from thence to get golde and ſyluer the ſeedes of al miſchiefes and angels of ſuch a god, whom the antiquitie (not without good conſyderation) paynted blynde, affirmynge alſo that of hym golde and ſyluer haue receaued the propertie to blynde the eyes of men. But ſyth it is nowe ſo that we ſhalbe inforced to ſeke ayde by that which was ſumtymes a myſchefe, it reſteth to vſe the matter as doo cunnynge phiſitians that can myniſter poyſon in proportion with other thynges in ſuch ſorte qualyfyinge the malicioufneſſe therof, that none ſhall therby bee intoxicate. Foraſmuch therfore as golde and ſyluer haue obteyned this prerogatiue that they are ſuche neceſſarie euyls which the lyfe of man can not lacke withowt detriment, not only they but other metals alſo perhappes more neceſſarie althowgh not ſo precious, are thynges woorthy to bee better knowen then only by name, ſyth they are th[e]inſtrumentes of all artes, the prices of all thynges, the ornamentes of al dignities, and not the leaſt portion of nature, wherby the contemplation of them is no leſſe pleaſaunte then neceſſary. But foraſmuch as it is not here my intent to intreate much of metals, I wyll ſpeake of the ſeconde cauſe: which is, that if in trauaylyng ſtrang[e] and vnknowen countreys any mans chaunce ſhalbe to arryue in ſuch regions where he may knowe by th[e]information of th[e]inhabitauntes or otherwyſe, that ſuche regions are frutefull of riche metals, he may not bee without ſum iudgement to make further ſearche for the ſame. The thyrde cauſe is, that althowgh this owre realme of Englande be ful of metals not to bee contemned and much rycher then men ſuppoſe, yet is there fewe or none in Englande that haue any greate ſkyll thereof, or any thynge wrytten in owr tounge, whereby men maye bee well inſtructed of the generation and fyndyng of the ſame: as the lyke ignorance hath byn amonge vs as touchynge Coſmographie and nauigations vntyll I attempted accordinge to the portion of my talent and ſimple lernynge to open the fyrſt dore to the enteraunce of this knoweleage into owre language, wherin I wolde wyſhe that other of greater lernynge wolde take ſume peynes to accomplyſſhe and bringe to further perfection that I haue rudely begunne, not as an autour but a tranſlatoure, leaſte I bee iniurious to any man in aſcrybyng to my ſelfe the trauayles of other. And wheras as concernynge the knowleage of metals, I was once mynded to haue tranſlated into Englyſhe the hole woorke of Pyrotechnia wherof I fynyſſhed. xxii. [twenty-two] chapitures nowe more then three yeares ſence, and lefte the copie therof in the handes of one of whome I coulde neuer get it ageyne (omyttynge to ſpeake of other ingratitudes) I was therby diſcouraged to proceade any further in that woorke. Neuertheleſſe, ſythe this hyſtory of the Indies hath miniſtred occaſion to intreate ſumwhat of metals, I haue ageyne tranſlated three of the fyrſt chapitures of that booke, which ſeeme moſt neceſſary to bee knowen in this caſe. And hereof to haue ſayde thus much in maner of a preface it may ſuffice.

326

OF THE GENERATION OF METALLES AND THEIR MYNES WITH THE MANER OF FYNDINGE THE SAME:

WRITTEN IN THE ITALIEN TOVNGE BY *VANNVCCIVS BIRINGVCZIVS* IN HIS BOOKE CAVLED *PYROTECHNIA.*

To his louynge frende Maſter Bernardino Moncelleſe, greeting.

The mineral tree.

WHereas I promyſed yow to wrytte of the natures of metalles in particular, I am nowe inforced to declare euery thinge in generale, and eſpecially of the places of their generation and their order, with the forme and maner of woorkynge in the ſame, and the inſtrumentes therto perteyninge. Yowe ſhall therefore vnderſtande, that mynes of metalles are founde in the moſte partes of the worlde, more or leſſe according to the diligence of witti ſearchers: and ſhew them ſelues ſtandinge in the grounde in maner in ſuche ſorte as the veynes of bludde are diſparſed in the bodies of lyuing beaſtes, or like vnto the braunches of trees ſpredde foorth diuers wayes. Wherfor, the diligent ſearchers of mines, willing by a certeyne ſimilitude declare howe the mynes are placed in the mountaynes, haue figured a greate tree full of branches planted in the myddeſte of the baſe of a mountayne, frome the whyche are diriued dyuers and many bouwes and branches, ſum greate and ſum ſmaule, muche like vnto verye trees that are in owlde woddes. They will alſo that in growynge, they euer ingroſe them ſelues and reache towarde the heauen, conuertynge into theyr nature the moſte diſpoſed and neare matter, vntil the toppes of theyr braunches extend to the higheſt parte of the mountayne, and there ſhewe furthe theyr ſelues with manifeſte apperaunce, puttinge furthe in the ſteade of bouwes and floures, certeyne ſumoſites of blewe or greene coloure, or marchaſites with ſmaule veynes of ponderous matter, or ſuche other compoſitions of tinctures. And when by this means they ſhewe them ſelues vnto us, we may make firme coniecture that ſuche mountaynes are minerall, and that accordinge to the demonſtrations they ſhewe more or leſſe, they are richer or porer of myne. Therefore the ſearchers, according to th[e]apperaunces which they fynde, take good courage vnto them: and with hope and ſecuritie of profecte, apply al their poſſible diligence with witte and expenſes to digge or gette owte ſuche thynges as the ſignes and owtewarde apperaunces declare vnto them. And by this maner of fyndinge of mynes, it hath often tymes chaunced that many haue byn exalted to the higheſt degree of riches. Wheras therfore by this meanes men enter into the mountaynes with the ey[e]s of conſideration and right Iudgemente, and ſee the places where the mineralles are ingendered and comprehende in maner theire quantitie, they adapte theyr caues or foſſes accordynge therevnto, wheras they ſhulde otherwyſe wander by chaunce, becauſe no man can by any other meanes knowe where the mines are in the mountaynes, although he were of neuer ſo good iudgement, and ſhulde make ſearche for the ſame neuer ſo curyouſly by litle and litle. It ſhal therfore in this caſe be neceſſary to folow the certificat and aperaunces of ſignes, and to encounter the ſame as nere as may be, with ey[e]s and eares euer attentiue where they maye hope to fynde any tokens of metalles, eſpecially by enquyringe of ſhepardes and other anciente inhabitauntes of ſuch regions in the which mineralls are engendered. And this I ſpeake the rather for that I am perſwaded that at

The mynes doo growe.

Marchasites.

Signes of metals.

327

Signes and tokens of metals.

the firſt ſight of a mountaine, by reaſon of the greate barrenneſſe and roughnes therof, and alſo by reaſon of the great aboundance of waters that are engendered in the ſame, a right good iudgemente ſhall not ſuffice to coomme to certayne knoweleage that metall is contayned in ſuch mountaynes, vntill the ſearchers haue with charge and trauail cauſed miners in ſundry places to diſcouer the ſame. And therfore I alſo beleue that one man although be bee neuer ſo ſtronge, wyttie, and farre caſtinge, ſhall not be able in a newe and ſtraunge contreye, to ſearche by ſmaule portions not onlye all the mountaynes of one or moo prouinces which may bringe furth minerals, but ſhall with muche difficultie ſcarſely ſuffice to ſearche the ſecreates of only one mountayne: In ſo muche that ſum conſyderinge the difficultie hereof, are of opinion that in this effecte, it ſhuld be requyſite to worke by the arte of Negromancie, which I thynke to be a fable withowt further knoweleage. But I wolde that theſe necromancers ſhulde tell me why this theire arte helpeth theym no further in the woorke after that they haue once founde the myne, if it be trewe that they ſay. Why (I ſay) doth it not helpe them furthe as at the begynnynge to fynde the myne, ſo conſequently in the myddeſt and the ende to brynge the ſame to further perfection, as to gette it owte, to brynge it to fuſion or meltynge, and to purifie or pourge it from droſſe, which doubtleſſe it ſhulde haue poure to doo if it may bee beleaued that it can doo the other. But foraſmuch as ſuch effectes are ſo fearefull and terrible, that they owght not or can not be practiſed of al men, and alſo perhappes bycauſe ſuch maner of woorkynge is not knowen, I thinke it not good to be vſed: but thinke rather by good reaſon that this arte is ſo much the more to be omytted and contemned, in howe much we are accuſtomed in the begynnynge of dyggynge of mynes, eſpecially to caule for the grace of god that it may pleaſe hym to be preſente with his ayde to owre doubtfull and traualious woorke. Lettynge paſſe therefore this deuyliſſhe diuiſe of ſuch beaſtly and fearefull men, I exhorte yowe to folowe the practiſe by the foreſayde ſignes minyſtred vnto yowe by the benignitie of nature, bothe grounded vppon the foundation of truth and approued by th[e]experience of many practicionars, not conſyſtynge in woordes or promyſſes of thynges vayne and incomprehenſible. With theſe ſignes therfore ſhall yow ſearche the bankes and ſides of the valleys, with the clyffes and ryftes of the ſtones, and the backes, toppes, or ridges of the Montaynes: Alſo the beddes, chanels, and courſes of ryuers, lookynge diligently amonge theyr ſandes, and the ruines of theyr foſſes, amonge the whiche yow ſhall often tymes eſpie marchaſites or ſmaule ſparkes of mynes, or other dyuers tinctures of metals, whereby yow may be certified that certeyne mynes are in ſuch places, which yowe ſhall exactly fynd by diligent and curious ſearchyng the clyffes of theyr ryftes and dry places. After theſe aduertiſementes, take this for a generall ſigne, that all ſuche places and mountaynes are mineral, owt of the which many ſpringes and great abundaunce of crude water dooth iſſhewe, hauyng with theyr clearenes a certeyne minerall taſte, and ſuch as at variable ſeaſons of the yeare chaunge theyr qualitie, beinge warme in the ſprynge tyme and coulde in ſommer. And this thynge owght yow to beleue the more when yow ſhall ſee the aſpecte of ſuch mountaynes to be rough, ſharpe, and ſaluage withowt earth or trees. Or ſo that yf there bee a lyttle earth found vpon the ſame with a ſmaule veyne of herbes or graſſe yowe ſhall perceaue the grenenes therof to be faynt and in maner wythered and dryed. And albeit that ſumtymes alſo, mines are founde in mountaynes hauynge earth and frutefull trees in the toppes therof, yet are they for the moſt part found in ſuch wherof we haue ſpoken. Of theſe other, there maye fewe ſignes be gyuen, except to go by lyttle and lyttle to ſeke the bankes of theyr ſydes. But amonge all theſe, the beſt and moſt certeyne ſigne that may bee gyuen, is wheras on the ſuperficiall parte of the earth eyther on hyghe or belowe, the myne dooth ſhewe it ſelfe apparente to ſyght. Sum there are that for a good ſigne do greately commende the reſidences which certeyne waters make wher they haue reſted for a time and beinge dryed vp of the heate of the ſonne, do often times ſhewe in certeyne partes of theyr reſidencies dyuers tinctures of mynerall ſubſtaunce. Summe other are accuſtomed to take ſuch waters, and in a veſſell of earth or glaſſe or other matter, cauſe them to boyle and vapoure away vntyll the dregs or reſidence remayne in the bottome well dryed in the likenes of a groſe earth, of the which they make an aſſaye eyther by the ordinarie tryall of fyer, or after ſume other maner as lyketh them beſt. And by this meanes (althowgh they attayne not to th[e]exacte knowleage of the truth) yet do they approche to a certeyne knowleage of the thyng wherby they haue ſum intelligence of what ſufficiencie and goodneſſe the myne is which they ſeeke, before they be at any great charges in folowynge the ſame: Prouydynge alway that with all diligent aduertiſement the places neare vnto the rootes of the confine mountaynes be curiouſly ſearched, with alſo the bankes and ſydes of the ſelfe ſame mountayne, and all ſuch ſuperficiall partes therof, where any ſtones are founde diſcouered eyther of theyr owne proper nature or by the courſe of water: preſuppoſynge euer that it is in maner impoſſible but that yf ſuche mountaynes contayne any mynes, they muſte needes ſhewe furth ſum floures, tinctures, or colours of theyr exhalations. Yet yf it ſhulde ſo chaunce that they do not this, the goodnes of the mine may be the cauſe hereof foraſmuche as eyther it is not of vaporable nature, or to be of ſmaule quantitie, or els perhappes bycauſe the mountayne is greate and the myne very low or ſo farre with in, that it is not ſufficient to put furth any ſignes of fumoſities. The cauſe alſo hereof maye bee that ſum ſtone lyke vnto that cauled *Albaſano* (which I thynke to be of that kynde which we caule the greete ſtone) or blacke and whyte marble of

Mountaynes in the which metals are engendered.

Ageynst seekynge metals with the rod which they caule Virgula diuina.

Negromancie.

The maner of searchynge for mynes.

A generall signe.

Rowgh and barren mountaynes.

328

The best signe.

The residence of waters.

Marchasites are the tinctures of myneral exhalations.

Metals in frutful mountaynes.

thycke and reſyſtynge nature, may be found to lye betwene and ſo to ſtoppe the paſſages, that the ſayde fumoſities may therby be hyndered to arryue to the vppermoſte parte of the earth: by reaſon wherof, it is poſſible that ſuche mountaynes may brynge furth trees and herbes foraſmuche as the earth therof dooth reteyne his vertue and may nuryſhe theyr rootes not beinge incinerate or burnte with hotte and venemous vapours of the mynes: ſo that the ſhoures of rayne or fluds with their courſes can not cary away the earth as in ſuch places wher the ſame is found ſore dryed. And therfore vppon ſuch mountaynes I haue ſeene great wooddes of cheſſnutte trees, beeches alſo aud okes, with well cultured and frutfull fieldes. So that to conclude, by the ſignes of the rowghneſſe or barenneſſe of the mountayne, is not taken away but that other places may alſo haue plentie of mines whiche ought to be ſearched and folowed. But foraſmuch as theſe ſignes are of the natures of minerals, I wyll ſpeake more determinately of theym in the places where I entreate of theyr proper mynes: Not intendynge here to ſaye muche of theſe thynges in generall, but only to induce yow to ſum clearneſſe of the fyrſt lyght. And therfore that yow may gyue the more diligent aduertiſment, I ſaye vnto yowe that all the mynes which yow ſhall fynde by ſuch ſignes, by what meanes ſo euer they ſhall coome to yowre handes, whether they be found in ſtones, earthe, or ſande, after that at the fyrſte fyght they haue ſhewed them ſelues to bee mynes of metals, yow owght to conſyder of what ponderoſitie of weyght they are: The which the greater that it is, ſo much the more dooth it ſhewe both the perfection and goodneſſe of the ſubſtaunce, and alſo the more quantitie of the mine. And thus preſuppoſyng that by the ſignes or other meanes yow haue founde the mine, not yet fully perceauynge of what kynde of metall it myght be, to certifie yowe hereof and alſo of what quantitie it is, or howe it is accompanyed or myxt with other, or lykewyſe of what puritie it is of it ſelfe, or of what euyll diſpoſition or malice it is founde to bee, it ſhall herein be neceſſary before yow be at any further charges therwith, to proue the ſame by twoo or three aſſayes or mo, as I wyll further declare in the particular place of aſſayes. Beinge therfore certifyed of the myne, and of what metall it is, and alſo what quantitie it conteyneth, fyndynge it by accompte to bee ſo profitable as to beare the charges, I exhorte yowe bouldely to gyue the fyrſte attempte to faule to mynynge, and with all poſſible diligence to folowe yowr enterpryſe: aſſurynge yowre ſelfe, that of what ſo euer mynerall matter yow ſhall take aſſay accordyng to the proportion of that pi[e]ce which yow tooke of the vppermoſt or owtmoſt parte of the mine for that purpoſe, yow ſhall fynde that to bee muche better and rycher whiche is further within the mountayne. And thus being certified by the aſſay of what quantitie the thynge is that appered by the ſignes, and of all other reaſonable conſyderations apperteynyng to the worke, yow ſhall with all celeritie diſpoſe yowr ſelfe to faule to dyggynge, to th[e]intent that yowe may ſhortely eyther here enioye the frute of yowre trauell, or els where with better ſucceſſe proue yowre good fortune.

Howe the signes are to bee consydered.

The assay of the mines.

329

The richer myne further within the montayne.

Consyderacions how the caue ought to bee made.

But in th[e]attempte of this enterpryſe, yow owght principally to haue reſpecte to the ſituation of the place where yowe intende to make the begynnynge of yowr caue or foſſe: Takynge good aduertiſement that it be commodious for the labourers that ſhal worke therein: prouydynge aboue all thynges that it haue an eaſye enteraunce into the mountayne, with leſſe charges and in ſhorter tyme to arryue vnder the ſignes which yowe haue taken: encounterynge the ſame as muche as is poſſible as it were by a ryght line, fyrſt with iudgemente and then with workemanſhyppe, vntyll yow ſtryke on the groſe maſſe or bodye of the myne, breakynge in the courſe of the caue al matters of hard compoſitions, as quarreys and ſtones ouerthwartynge the ſame: hauynge euer reſpecte to the owtwarde ſignes whiche yow folowe, forecaſtynge in yowre mynde how yowe may directly arryue to the ſame, euen as the maryners directe theyr courſe by theyr compaſſe and ſyght of the north ſtarre.

The bodie of the myne.

Howses of office for the myners.

Alſo byſyde that place where yow haue determined to make the enteraunce and begynnynge of the caue, yow muſte take choyſe of an other place, eyther on the front of the mountayne or on the ſyde that it may bee neare and commodious to make one or two or mo cotages for the commoditie and neceſſitie of the woorkemen. One of theſe muſt bee appoynted for theyr dormitorie where ſum may reſt and ſleepe whyle other woorke, and that yow may the more commodiouſly be preſent and aſſyſtaunte to theyr doynges, diligently to beholde all thynges and to conforte theim in theyr laboures: alſo to diſpence and beſtowe theyr vyttayles as ſhall bee nedefull, and to reſerue the ſame in ſafe cuſtodie, with dayly prouiſion of al thynges apperteynynge. The other muſt bee as it were a ſmythes forge wherin theyr worne and broken tooles muſt bee renewed, and other newe made, to th[e]intent that the woorke be not hyndered for lacke of ſtore of neceſſarie inſtrumentes. When theſe thynges are thus fynyſſhed, with good prouiſion of vyttayles and a ſufficient number of expert myners, then in the name of God and good aduenture, cauſynge a preſte to bleſſe the mountayne with all the ſhoppes, and to baptiſe the caue, dedicatynge it (as the maner is) to the holy Trinitie or to owr Lady or to the name of ſum other ſaynt which yowe haue in deuotion, with inuocation to theym to proſper yowre attemptes, yow ſhall with good courage and hope begynne to dygge the caue, with intente to folowe the ſame withowte ceaſynge as farre as yowre abilitie ſhall reache, or vntyll yowe haue paſſed ouer the lymettes ſignified by the ſignes before named: Takynge euer diligent heade that yowe begyn yowre caue as lowe as yow may at the foote of the mountayne, in ſuch order that yowr myners ſo continue and folow the ſame by a right line, that they encounter the veyne of the myne by the ſhorteſt and ſafeſt way that may bee deuiſed. For it often times chaunceth, that althowgh

Baptiſynge and dedication of the caue.

The makinge of the caue.

the caue haue byn wel begunne, yet hath it not byn well folowed, for that the myners beinge withdrawen from the ryght courſe by the hope of ſuche braunches of mynes as haue appered vnto them in the waye, doo often times decline from theyr attempted courſe, and from the ſignes which they owght to haue folowed. And byſyde other preceptes, ſee that yow beare in memory to procure that in dyggynge, yow eſchewe as muche as yowe maye, the cuttynge of ſotte or brykell ſtones, aſwell for that it may bee daungerous for ruine of the caue, as alſo that it ſeldome chaunceth that any mynes are founde in ſuch ſtones. But yf yow ſhal chaunce ſo to fynde them that yow can by no meanes auoyde them, I confort yow that where ſuche cauſe of feare ſheweth it ſelfe, both that yow loſe not the charges of the caue and for the better ſafegarde of yowre woorkemen, it ſhalbe neceſſary that yowe vſe all poſſible diligence in well vpholdynge and fortyfyinge the caue with arches of waules trauerſed with ſtronge poſtes of tymber after the maner of framed beames, ſuſteyned with groſe and ſtronge pyles made of goode and ſtronge tymber of oke or other great trees. And in this maner owght yow to proceade in dyggyng yowre myne that yow may with more ſecuritie enioy the frute of yowr trauayle. But in the owlde tyme they that dygged mynes (as is yet to ſee in the caues leſte of them) folowed an other maner: ſo that in the ſteade of begynnynge the caue belowe at the foote of the mountayne (as doo the later myners) they begunne to dygge theyr caue in the vpper or hygheſt parte where the daye diſcouered the myne, dyggynge downewarde after the maner of a pytte or a well, folowynge the ſame ſumtyme on the one ſyde, and ſumtyme on the other euen vnto the depth, as the veyne ſhewed it ſelfe to theyr ſyght: whereof I haue thought good to make mention, for that in th[e]oppinion of many men, this way dooth ſeeme much better and of more ſecuritie to fynde that they ſeeke, then to dygge by the ſydes: bycauſe that by this meanes they haue euer the mine before theyr eyes eyther more or leſſe as a line to leade them to the groſſe maſſe. Yet who ſo conſydereth the thynge well, ſhall vnderſtande that the later myners haue better conceaued the reaſon of this woorke, in reſpecte (as is to ſee) of many more commodities and ſecurities which inſue rather of this maner of woorkynge then of the other: as the difficultie to deſcende and aſcende the caue, and the daungiour leſt it bee ſtopped vp by many ruines, byſyde the trauaylous labour to draw owt the mine with the rockes and fragmentes of ſtones: And aboue al thynges, that they ſhal not bee able to drawe owt the waters whiche are often tymes ſo abundaunt that they greatly increaſe the charges and trauayles of the patrones of the mynes by reaſon of the greate ayde and helpe which ſhalbe requiſite to haue in that caſe and alſo for the makynge of wheeles, troughes, pypes, and pumpes, with ſuch other inſtrumentes ſeruynge for the purpoſe to drawe owt the waters. And yet with all this, it often tymes chaunceth that although they labour hereat continually, yet ſhal they be inforced to forſake their profitable and laudable enterpryſe So that to conclude, I ſaye (as yowe maye well vnder ſtand) that it is a much better way and of more ſecuritie to begynne the diggyng of the caue rather at the roote or fote of the mountayne and to enter into the ſame by litle and lytle a ſlope vpwarde, then to begynne at the toppe or the higheſt backe therof. And this both for the more commodious paſſinge furthe of the water, and alſo for the eaſier trauaile of the labourers. Obſeruynge euer diligently the chaunge of the ſignes whiche appere vnto yow owtwardly, vſynge the rudder and compaſſe as do they that ſayle on the ſea. For hereby the myners ſhalbe inſtructed euer to folowe the right way in the caue vntill by the conductinge of wytte and arte, they bee brought to the place of the groſe maſſe or bodie of the tree, whyche is the cauſe, fontayne, and original from whenſe the ſayd tinctures, fumoſites, and mineral ſignes, are diriued and ſente furth to the ſuperficiall partes. And as concernynge this purpoſe, I thincke it good to declare vnto yow howe in the Dukedome of *Auſtria*, betweene *I[n]ſpruc* and *Alla* where I contynued manye yeares, I ſawe a large vale enuironed with a greate number of mountaynes, by the myddeſt wherof a ryuer paſſed through of greate aboundaunce of water: and in maner in all the montaynes that are there abowt, is digged great plentie of mine, wherof the moſte parte are of copper or leade, althoughe alſo in maner euery of them is founde to holde ſum portion of ſiluer. Amonge theſe mountaynes, I ſawe one in the whyche th[e]inhabitauntes of the countrey dwellyng there abowt allured by the ſight of many ſignes, beganne to digge a caue after the maner wherof we haue ſpoken: In ſo muche that (as it appered vnto me) from the place where they begane the caue, they had digged little leſſe then two myles before they ſawe any ſparke or ſhadowe of any myne And beinge arryued with the caue in maner perpendicularly vnder the ſignes they folowed, they were encountered with a veyne of the harde ſtone cauled *Albazano*, of a yarde and a halfe thicke, which they paſſed through with greate trauayle and longe tyme, and with the helpe of commodious inſtrumentes of iren hardened to woorke in ſuche ſtones. And when they had thus paſſed through this quarrey of ſtone, they chaunced vppon a verye great veyne of the myne of copper of ſuch ſorte that when I was there, lookinge betweene the one and the other, I ſawe on euery ſyde as it were a waule of the hard ſtone of *Albazano*, and therin a voyde place of ſuche largenes from the one ſyde to the other that more then two hundreth men al at one time, had ſufficiente roome to ſtande labouringe frome the hygheſte parte to the loweſt, hauynge non other lyght then of candells, and makinge certeyne markes in euery place where they ſaw the vre or myne ſhewe it ſelfe: and thus ceaſed not to woorke continually both day and nyght, courſe by courſe, a thynge ſuerly maruelous to be hoide. Without the mouth of the caue, I ſawe great abundaunce of mine partely

Causes of hinderaunce.

Soft stones.

330

The fortefiing of the caue.

Howe the caues were made in olde tyme.

Abundaunc[e] of water in the mynes.

The beste maner of makinge the caue.

The change of the signes.

The rudder and compasse.

Austria.

Mynes of copper and leade holding syluer.

A caue of two myles.

A large caue of the myne of copper holdinge siluer.

331

Candle light

A greate masse of pure myne.

mixt with the ſtone of the vre, and partely choſen and ſeperated. Amonge theſe pieces; there was one conſiſtynge of a hole maſſe of pure mine of ſuch biggnes and weyght, that two good horſes with a light carre coulde ſcarſely drawe it away. This myne was of copper as I haue ſayde. But to magnifie it they cauled it ſyluer, bycauſe it helde ſuche plentie thereof that it ſurmounted the charges, whereas they had alſo the copper for aduantage. Yowe ſhall further vnderſtond that in the myddeſt of the caue, there was a chanell or gutter whyche gathered togyther the waters that fell into it continually on euery ſyde from the ruptures or broken places and cliffes. Theſe waters ranne through the chanel with ſo vehemente a ſtreme, that I ſuerly beleue that it might well ſuffice to dryue any greate mylle. In ſo muche that in goynge in and comming owt of the caue, I remember that by the contynual faule and ſprinkeling of the waters from aboue and beneth, I was as wet as though I had paſſed through a greate ſhoure of rayne. Wherat I maruel the leſſe when I conſyder that water is the fyrſt and neareſt principle of the whiche the ſubſtaunce of minerals is engendered. By reaſon wherof, ſuch men of vnderſtandynge as haue ſearched the natures of theſe thynges, argue hereby and take it for a generall rule, that all thoſe mountaynes owt of the whiche ſpryngeth great abundaunce of water, doo alſo abounde with myne. The which thynge well conſyderynge, and weyinge the greatnes hereof, I faule into this accompte with my ſelfe, that if to the patrones of the ſayde caue, the charges of the ſame hadde byn a hynderaunce or greefe, eyther for the length therof, or for deſpayre that they ſhuld not haue found that they ſought, they wolde ſurely haue forſaken it. And beinge nowe comme to this harde ſtone after they had ſuſteyned ſo great charges byſyde the trauayle both of mynde and body, if they ſhulde then haue lefte of theyr enterpryſe, they ſhulde not haue come to ſuch ryches whereby they haue obteyned many commodities aſwell profitable for them ſelues as alſo for theyr lordes and princes, theyr countrey, theyr kinſfolkes and famelie. Neyther yet ſhulde they haue byn ſo wel able to helpe theyr poore neyghbours as they haue doone by the meanes of the valientneſſe of theyr conſtant myndes and perſiſtynge in ſo good and commendable an enterpriſe. Wherfore to conclude, yow that wyll begynne to attempt any ſuch thynge, muſt be of good courage and much pacience to folowe that yow haue begunne, at the leaſt vntill yow knowe by the ſignes what the thynge is: hopinge euer that in goynge forwarde, the day folowynge (as it is poſſible) ſhal diſcouer the thynge that yowe ſeeke and content your deſyre: Wherof yow may bee the better aſſured, if yow well conſyder that the moothers and matrices of moſt eſtemed ryches, and the myntes of al treaſures, are the mountaynes: To the whiche (with the helpe of fortune and yowr ingenious indeuoure) yow ſhall open the way, not only to fynde the myne and arryue to the belly of the mountaynes where ſuche thynges lye hyd, but ſhall alſo bee exalted by ryches to hyghe honoure and dignitie as they of whome we haue made mention before: foraſmuch as moſt beningne and liberall nature, doothe open her lappe and promeſſe good ſucceſſe to ſuche as ſeeke ryches by ſuch honeſt meanes. The whiche way ſurely is muche rather to be folowed, then eyther the warre full of trowbles and miſerie, or the carefull trade of marchaundies with wanderynge abowt the worlde, or ſuche other faſtidious cares perhappes vnlawfull for a good man. And albeit (as ſume men vſe to ſpeake) the fyndynge of mynes bee an eſpecial grace of God, neuertheleſſe, foraſmuch as we are borne to laboure, it ſhalbe neceſſary that we ſeeke the ſame in ſuche places where they are brought furth by the woorke of nature, and by ſearchynge to fynde them, and beinge founde to dygge for them, and by this meanes to receaue the grace of God with applyinge owre owne diligence therto, with helpe of the diſpoſition of fortune and naturall iudgemente. And yet ſhal not this only ſuffice withowt ſufficiencie of money able to ſuſteyne the charges and continue the woorke: to th[e]ende that if yow can not fynyſſhe it with yowr owne expenſes, yow maye ſupplye the ſame by the ayde of other, eyther patrones or parteners. But let vs nowe ceaſe to reaſon any further of theſe thinges. Preſuppoſyng therfore that yow haue alredy paſſed the charges, and haue not only founde the myne yow ſought, but alſo haue brought furth to lyght a great quantitie therof, it ſhal then bee needeful (as a thyng chiefely to be conſydered before yow begin to dygge) wel to ponder and examen both the commodities of ſuch thynges as ſhall occurre, and alſo of ſuch wherof yow ſhall haue neede: as tymber and woodde of all ſortes, with water and vyttayles: of all the whiche, yow muſte haue great plentie: and eſpecially of woodde, whereof yowe muſte haue great quantitie, aſwell to ſerue to the proportion of the myne, as alſo to make coles to the vſe of meltynge, fynynge, dryinge, garboylyng, and ſuch other broylynges, byſyde that which muſt ſerue to fortifie the caue and to buyld ſhoppes and cotages with ſuch other edifi[c]es. Diligent conſideration muſt lykewyſe be had to the ſituacion of the place where the buyldynges ſhalbe erected: as that the plotte therof bee commodious with abundaunce of water hauynge a good faule. Alſo not onely of plentie of woodde and cole nere vnto the myne, but of ſuch as may ſerue the turne. And of all other incommodities, yowe muſte chiefely auoyde the lacke of water, as a thynge of greateſt importaunce and moſt neceſſarie in this effecte. For by the force and weyght of the courſe herof, wheeles and dyuers other ingenious inſtrumentes are adapted with eaſe to lyfte vppe greate bellowes to make fyers of great poure, to beat with hammers of great weyght, and to turne myghtie and ſtronge engens, by the force whereof the trauayles of men are ſo much furthered, that withowt ſuch helpe, it were in maner impoſſible to ouercome ſuche tedious trauayles or to arryue to the ende of the woorke, foraſmuch as the force of one wheele may lyfte more, and that more ſafely then the

Abundaunce of water in the mynes.

Water is the nearest principle of minerales.

A general rule.

Great riches obtayned by searchinge of mynes.

Magnanimitie and pacience.

The mountaynes are the matrices of riches.

The grace of god is receaved by owre endeuoure.

Monye begetteth ryches.

332

Necessarie aduertismentes.

Plentye of woode.

Cotages and edifi[c]es.

The situacion of the place.

The vse of water.

paynefull labour of a hundreth men. It ſhal therfore be needefull to haue great conſyderation hereof, not only to make theſe edifi[c]es or houſes of office, but alſo to make them commodious for the purpoſe, as for the cariage of myne and cole with other neceſſaries. For if any of theſe effectes ſhulde be wantynge, the coſte, tyme and trauayle, ſhulde bee caſt away: foraſmuch as theſe thynges doo ſo much the more relieue the one the other as they are ioyned togyther, and hinder the woorke not a lyttle yf any be ſeparate. But bycauſe theſe commodities can not euer be hadde all togyther, yowe owght to wey with yowr ſelfe which of the twoo ſerueth for mo neceſſarie vſes, as eyther to haue the cole or the mine moſt commodious to the houſes, and accordinge there vnto to place the houſes nere vnto the ſame if the commoditie of water wyll ſo permytte. Albeit, if it were poſſible, it ſhulde be much better if al theſe neceſſarie commodities were ioyned togyther, whereas otherwyſe yowe muſte contente yowre ſelfe as occaſion ſerueth.

Necessarye considerations.

Nowe therefore to conclude, byſyde that whiche I haue declared vnto yow of the findinge of the myne and the digging thereof with other conſiderations, I exhorte yowe further to ſaule to practyſe with ſum myne of your owne, that yow may therby take occaſion to ryſe to the degree of ryches whyche yow deſire. And therfore I aduertiſe yow that after yow haue founde the mountyane and begun to digge, yow ſhal euer go forwarde with a boulde mynde and ſtoute corage, woorkyng with witte and Iudgement, foraſmuche as in this effecte the one ſerueth the other in the ſteede of ey[e]s to enter where they can not. Gyue no credit to that whiche many ignorante folkes doo ſay and beleue, affirminge that in digging for metals, they are founde rather by chaunce then by arte. The which although it were trewe, yet owght we to truſt more to art and practyſe then to chaunce. And when yow are nowe entered into the mountayne, beare well in memory that yow haue preſently with yow the tallie or ruler of the caue, wherby yowe may trauerſe the veyne of the myne when yow are comme to it. For if yow ſhulde folowe it by the courſe as it lyeth, it is poſſible that yowe might folowe it a greate way not paſte the biggneſſe of a mans finger and perhappes leſſe: By reaſon wherof, it might happen that yow ſhuld loſe it and neuer find it ageyne. The like ſhuld chaunce vnto yow if after that yow haue begun to digge a caue, it ſhulde repent yow of the charges, and that for the baſnes therof yowe ſhulde forſake it, as many haue doone who bycauſe they coulde not fynde the mine at the firſt ſtroke, deſpayringe that they ſhulde neuer fynde it, haue forſaken it as a thyng vnprofitable, thynking that they haue woonne enough in that they were not at further charges with that which they accompt loſſe and domage: And thus furiouſly leaue of their enterpriſe, not regardinge that they may leaue the frute of theyr expenſes and trauaile to an other that may folowe their begynninges, and perhappes fynde the myne within the diſtance of a cubet, a ſpanne, or a finger. We may ſay therfore that ſuche men doo willinglye forſake their good fortune as many haue doone. He therfore that hath begune to digge a caue, let hym determine to folowe it, puttinge away th[e]eſtimation of the baſenes therof, and not to feare the ſtreyghtneſſe of the way, but rather to applye all his poſſible diligence withowt remorſe, hopynge thereby no leſſe to obteyne honour and ryches, then to auoyde ſhame and infamie for omyttynge ſo profitable an enterpriſe. And that yow may the more circumſpectly behaue yowr ſelfe in all thynges, beſyde the former inſtructions, I further aduertiſe yowe to ſet euer freſſhe men a woorke by courſe in ſuch order, that in euery ſixte or eyght houres (accordynge to the number of the myners) yow appoynt ſuch to the woorke as haue repoſed or taken theyr reſt, that yow may by this meanes the ſooner come to th[e]ende yow deſyre, whereunto (after yowe haue layde ſo ſure a fundation) I exhorte yow to runne withowt a brydle. And wheras to theſe effectes it ſhalbe neceſſarie to haue many inſtrumentes adapted for the purpoſe, I can none otherwyſe ſpeake of them then in generall, conſyderynge that according to the nature of the place and the myne, it ſhalbe neceſſary to vſe inſtrumentes and iren tooles of dyuers formes, as there ought to be difference in ſuch wherwith yow ſhall dygge in mynes engendered in marble, greete ſtone, and harde freeſe ſtone, or ſuch other. For the dyggynge of ſuch as are found in deade and tender ſtones, as Alabaſter and marle, it is requiſite to haue apte and ſtronge inſtrumentes, as great beetels, mattockes and ſpades of iren, alſo great and longe crowes of iren to lyfte great burdens: lykewyſe greate and ſmaule picke axes ſum of iren and ſum of ſteele: furthermore greate maules with handels and withowt handels, and ſuch other bothe of iren and fine ſteele hardened, if the hardenes of ſtone ſhall ſo requyre. But as for ſuch as ſhall ſerue to dygge the mynes which are engendered in tender and ſofte ſtones, I neede make no mention of them, foraſmuch as the tooles of the common ſorte may ſuffice, and neceſſitie ſhall dayly furthe[r] inſtructe yow to diuiſe ſuch as ſhal ſerue for yowre purpoſe. Albeit, for the moſte parte they are beetels, maules, mattockes, pikes, ſhouels, ſpades, and ſuch lyke. But as well for the ſofte ſtones as for the harde, it ſhalbe neceſſarye to haue great plentie of al ſortes, to th[e]ende that the myners may loſe no tyme, and that the woorke may go the better forwarde to the comfort of the patrones of the mine. Byſyde theſe before named, it ſhall alſo be requiſite to haue plentie of greate baſkettes, ſpades, ſhouels, ſleades, and handbarrowes, bothe with wheeles and without wheeles: alſo ſackes made of raw or vntande hydes to carye the fragmentes owt of the caue. It ſhall furthermore be requiſite to haue greate quantitie of vnctuous liquours to maintayne fire: as are the oiles of oliues, of nuttes, of line ſeede and hempe ſeede: Lykewiſe the roots of putrified trees, or talowe of beaſtes, or fatte and oyles of fyſſhes. For withowt the lyght of fyre, it is not poſſible for the labourers

A false opinion

The trauersinge of the veyne.

Continuaunce in the worke.

333

Fresshe men.

Instrumentes.

Fyre in the caue.

The conueyance of eyer.

to woorke: Nor yet can any fyre be mayntayned in the caue except it receaue the ayer by ſum reſpiracle or breathynge place by the meanes of a funell or trunke of woodde or ſuch other open inſtrument wherby the ayer maye be conueyed into the caue.

¶ *Of the myne of golde and the qualitie therof in particular.*

The excellencie of golde.

FOraſmuche as golde is a compounde mynerall which of the phyloſophers and all men of vnderſtandynge, is founde to be of greateſt perfection amonge all other myxt minerals, it is iudged by the vniuerſal opinion of ſuch men, that for the bewtie and excellent qualitie thereof, it ſhulde be of exceſſiue vertue to helpe and confort men. And therfore amonge all thynges that are in this worlde (excepte lyuynge creatures) it is chiefely eſteemed. By reaſon wherof, I alſo the more to honour it, wyll fyrſt ſpeake of this before I entreate of any other metall, and declare in particular the conception with the moſt apparent qualities therof. The which although it be a metal moſt knowen, deſyred alſo and ſought for of all kyndes of men, yet are t ere not many that do care to knowe of what ſubſtaunce or natural mixtion it conſiſteth. But that yow ſhulde not be one of theim that knowe it onely by name or ſuperficiall app[e]arence, I certifie yow that the originall and proper matter therof, is none other then elementall ſubſtaunces with equall quantitie and qualitie proportionate the one with the other, moſt perfectly purified by the ſubtyle woorke of nature. For of theſe beinge thus ioyned togy her (and of equall force) is engendered an amiable and moſt perfect mixtion by the helpe of fermentacion and decoction of the minerall heate, wherby is cauſed ſuch a permanent vnion betwene the ſayde elementes, that they are in maner inſeperable: So that by the vertue of heauenly influence or of tyme, or by th[e]order of moſt prudent nature, or by all theſe cauſes concurrant, ſuch ſubſtaunce is conuerted into this metalline body that we caule golde. The which (as I haue ſayd) by his much temperatenes, purenes, and perfect mixtion, is condenſate and made thicke, in ſuch ſorte that the elementes therof can not be vnbounde or looſed, ſo that it remayn :th in maner incorruptible: The cauſe wherof is, that it eyther conteyneth in it no maner of ſuperfluitie, or the ſame to be but very lytle. And hereof commeth it, that althoughe it lye many yeares in the earth or in the water, it is not infected with ruſt or canker for that neyther of them are able to corrupte it, nor yet the fyer whoſe for e dooth incinerate or brynge to aſſhes and reſolue in maner all creatures: And yet is the poure hereof ſo farre vnable to deſtroy or corrupte this metall, that it is thereby the more purified and made better. Lykewyſe the ſayde perfecte vnion or mixtion, cauſeth it to be a body withowt fleame, and withowt vnctuous or fat ſuperfluitie: which is the cauſe that it euer remayneth in the natiue bryghtnes and fayrenes of coloure, in ſo much that when it is rubbed vppon any thynge, it leaueth not behynde it the tincture of any blacke or yelowe colour, as doo in maner all other metals: Nor yet hath it any taſte or ſauour that may be perceaued to the ſence. Furthermore, if it be eaten eyther wyllyngly or by chaunce, it is not venemous to the lyfe of man, as are ſum of the oth r metals: but is rather a medicine aurynge dyuers diſeaſes. In ſo much that nature hath gyuen vnto it of peculiar propertie, a vertue and priuileage to conforte the weakenes of the harte, and to gyue ioyfulnes and myrth to the ſpirites, diſpoſynge thereby the mynde to magnanimitie and attemptes of great enterpryſes. Which ſingular qualities, ſum wyſe men affirme that it hath receaued by th[e]influence of the ſonne, and that it is therfore of ſuch grace and poure to helpe men: eſpecially ſuch as haue many great bagges and cheſtes full therof. To conclude therfore, this metall is a body tractable and bryght of coloure lyke vnto the ſoonne: And hath in it inwardely ſuch a naturall attractiue or allurynge vertue, that beinge ſeene, it greatly diſpoſeth the myndes of men to deſyre it and eſteme it as a thyng moſt precious: although many there are whiche crye owt ageynſt it and accuſe it as the roote and ſede of moſt peſtiferous and monſtrous couetouſneſſe, and the cauſe of many other myſcheues. But whether it bee the cauſe of more good or euyll, we entende to lette paſſe this diſputation as a thynge vnprofitable. To proceade therfore as I haue begun I ſay (as before) that the woorthyneſſe which is founde in it, hath cauſed me to intreate of it before any other metall. And this the rather for that th[e]orde of this preſente worke [ſee]meth ſo to requyre, that I may the better deſcende to the degrees of other metals, to th[e]ende that in theſe owre partes of Italy, yow may haue ſum inſtruction of practiſe, whiche may redounde from yow to other, whereby the myndes of all men may receaue ſum lyght: beinge well aſſured that newe informations, wilbe the ſeedes of other newe wittie diuiſes in the vnderſtandynges of ſuche men as with theſe keys ſhall open theyr wyttes to arryue to ſuche places whyther they can not els coomme or by any meanes approche. And nowe therfore, byſyde that which I haue ſayde vnto yowe in generall, I wyl further in particular declare the nature hereof and the generation of the ſame, with alſo the ſignes whiche it ſheweth furth, that I do not omytte any thynge. Laſt of all, I wyll ſhewe yowe howe it owght to bee pourged from ſuperfluou

The originall and substaunce of golde.

334

Mineral heate.

The temperature and purenesse of golde.

Golde is incorruptible.

The bewtie of golde.

Golde is medicinable.

Golde is confortable.

The attractiue qualitie of golde.

earthynes of the mine, after that I ſhal haue expreſſed the maner howe it is founde. But foraſmuch as I haue not with mine eyes ſeene the mountaines which conteyne the mynes of golde, or the places where this thynge is put in practiſe, I wyll only ſhewe yow (hauynge made diligente inquiſition for the ſame) what hathe byn toulde me of credible perſons, or what I haue gathered in readynge of dyuers autoures, by whom I am certified for a truth that the greateſt plentie of this metall, is founde in *Scithia*, in thoſe prouinces which we commonly caule the Eaſt partes, where the ſoonne extendeth his chiefe force and vigour. Of theſe places India is thought to be the chiefe, and eſpecially thoſe Ilandes which the ſhips of Th[e]emperours maieſtie and the kynge of Portugale haue founde of late: as the Ilandes about *Peru* and *Paria* with the firme lande of the ſame which extendeth it ſelues very farre on both ſydes the Equinoctiall. In Europe alſo, golde is founde in many places: as in *Aſteſia*, and in many places in Boheme. Alſo in Hungarie, in Rhene, and in Apſa. Plinie ſayth that it is lykewyſe founde in *Auſtria* and in Portugale: and that the Romans had from thenſe yearely. xxiiii. [twenty-four] pounds weyght. And thus ſpeakynge of this precious metall, I beleue certeynly, that it is and may be engendered in all ſuche places wher the influence of the heuens diſpoſeth the elementall cauſes to brynge furth an apte ſubſtaunce for this purpoſe. But nowe intendynge more particularly to ſpeake of the places of the conception hereof, yowe ſhall vnderſtande that it is engendered in dyuers kyndes of ſtones in great and rowgh mountaynes, and ſuche as are vtterly bare of earth, trees, graſſe, or herbes. And amonge all the ſtones of this myne, that is beſt which is of a blewe or aſurine coloure lyke vnto a ſaphire, and is commonly cauled *Lapis Lazuli*. But it is not bryght and harde as is the ſaphire. It is alſo founde in orpemente cauled *Auripigmentum*: but more often in the mynes of other metals. It is lykewyſe founde in many prouinces in the ſandes of ryuers. That which is founde in the mountaines lyeth in order of veynes betwene quarrey and quarrey ioyned with the ſayde Azurine ſtone and myxte therwith. They ſaye that this myne is ſo much the better in howe much it is the heuyer and of hyghe colour, ſhewyng in it many ſparkes of gold. They ſay furthermore that it is engendered in an other ſtone lyke vnto ſalte marble: but it is of a deade colour. And alſo in an other whoſe colour is yelowe with certeyne redde ſpots within it. They affirme lykewyſe that it is founde in certeine blacke ſtones, whoſe veynes ſprede dyuers wayes much like the courſes of ryuers. They further declare that it is founde in a certeyne bituminous earth, of coloure lyke vnto cley and very heauy, hauynge in it a great ſauour of brymſtone: And that the golde which is founde in this, is very good, and in maner all togyther fyne, yet very harde to bee gotten owte, bycauſe it conſyſteth of ſo ſmaule ſparkes lyke vnto inuiſible atomes of ſuch lytelneſſe that they can hardely bee perceaued with the eye. And herein may yow not do as in *Lapis Lazuli*, or other ſtones, or as the maner is to do with that which is found in the ſands of ryuers: the which the more it is waſſhed, the more it fauleth to the bottome: and in meltynge with the mother of his earthines, doth incorporat it ſelfe therwith in a brickle ſubſtance. But in fine, with much pacience and by one meanes or an other, or by the helpe of quicke-ſyluer, it is drawen owt. Ageyne (as I haue ſayde before) it is found in the ſandes of dyuers ryuers, as in Spayne in the ryuer *Tago*: in *Tracia*, in *Ebro*: In *Aſia*, in *Patolo* and *Ganges*. In Hungarie and Boheme, it is founde in *Laſieſia* in dyuers ryuers: And in Italie, in the ſands of *Teſino*, *Adda*, and *Po*. But not euery where in the beddes of theyr chanels, but in certeyne particular places where in certeyne cloddes the ſande is diſcouered in the tyme of the ouerflowynge of the ryuers when the water leaueth behynde it a fine ſande wherwith the ſayde golde is myxte in the forme of certeyne ſmaule ſcales, and ſhynynge graynes. Then in the ſommer ſeaſon, with pacience and ingenious practiſe, the ſearchers to pourge it from the groſe earthineſſe of the myne, and waſſhe it diligently: preparynge for that effecte, certeyne tables made eyther of the tymber of plane trees, or elme, or whyte nuttes, or ſuch other woodde apte to be ſawen, hauing theyr playnes made ful of hackes, and notches, with the helpe of the ſawe or ſuch other inſtrumentes of iren. Vpon theſe tables ſtandynge ſumwhat a ſlope or declynynge, with a holowe ſhouel they caſt a great quantitie of water myxt with the ſayde ſande, which they caſt ſo, that the water runne downe directly alonge with the tables. And by this meanes the gold, as a matter moſt heuy, fauleth to the bottome of the ſawne hackes, and there reſtynge and cleauynge faſt, is ſo diuided from the ſande. When therfore they perceaue a ſufficient quantitie of golde thus remaynynge on the tables, they gather it with diligence and put it in a trey or great ſhallowe dyſſhe of wod lyke vnto thoſe which the golde finers vſe: And in theſe they waſſhe it more exactly ageyne and ageyne from al fylth or vnclenlyneſſe. This doone, they beate or mixte (or amalgame it as they caule it) with Mercurie or quickſyluer, whiche afterward they ſeperate ageyne from the ſame eyther by ſtraynynge and preſſynge it through a bagge of lether, or by ſtyllynge or euaporatynge the quickeſyluer from it in a ſtyllatory of glaſſe and ſo fynde they the golde remaynynge in the bottome of the veſſell in the lykenes of fine ſande, which they brynge into a metalline body by meltynge it with a lyttle borage, or ſalt petre or blacke ſope, and ſo caſt it eyther in the forme of a wedge or a rodde, or otherwyſe as lyketh them beſt. And this is the exacte maner of drawynge golde owt of the ſandes of riuers, which many haue vſed to theyr great commoditie: And that the rather bycauſe that in folowyng this order of woorke in the pourgynge and diuydynge of golde, it ſhall not bee requiſite as in other maner of practiſes, to bee at greate charges by reaſon of many men which ſhall be needefull, with manye murals, fornaces, fiers, and dyuers artificers:

Where moste plentie of golde is found.
Cathay.
335
Golde in the Ilande[s] of the weste indies.
Golde in Europe.
The influenc[e] of heauen.
The mountaynes and stones in the whiche golde is engendered.
Lapis Lazuli.
Orpemente.
Golde in other metals.
Golde in the sandes of ryuers.
Gold in earth.
Golden duste.
Ryuers in the which gold is founde.
The wasshing and pourgeinge of golde.
Howe golde is deuided frome sande.
The Spanyardes make these disshes with handels.
The draweinge out of golde with quicke siluer.
336

From whense golde is deriued into the sandes of ryuers.

wheras in woorkyng after this ſorte, one man may ſuffice with one table and one holowe ſhoouell, with a lyttle quickeſyluer and ſufficient abundaunce of water. But lettyng paſſe to ſpeake any further of theſe thynges: perhappes ſumme man wolde here demaunde from whenſe this golde is deryued into the ſandes of the ſayde ryuers, and whether it be browght thyther by the water, or engendered there. As touchynge which queſtion, I haue often tymes deliberated with my ſelfe not withowt great marueyle: and eſpecially of that which is founde in the ſandes of the ryuers of *Teſino*, *Adda*, and *Po*, bicauſe (wheras I haue ſayde before that it is browght thyther by the courſe of the water) I can not perceaue from whenſe it ſhuld be browght, foraſmuch as there is no myne of golde, or of any other metal that is knowen, nere to any of thoſe places. By reaſon wherof, my iudgemente is in maner confounded, ſeinge alſo that it is th[e]oppinion of certeyne wryters, that it is engendered euen where it is founde: The which, if it ſo be, it is not trewe that it is browght thyther by the water. Ageyne, if it be engendered there, it ſeemeth to me a dyfficult thyng to comprehend whether it be brought furthe there by the vertue of the water or the earth, or the heauen. If furthermore any of theſe ſhuld be the cauſe of the generation hereof, it ſeemethe agreable to reaſon that it ſhulde bee both founde and engendered throughowt all the beddes of ſuch riuers, and at al tymes. And if the influence of heauen be the moſt prepotent cauſe of this effecte, then it ſeemeth to me that it ſhuld woorke immediatly, bicauſe it can not otherwyſe obſerue th[e]order whiche nature vſeth in the generation of metals: fyrſt brynginge it furth to the open ſhewe, in the place where aboundeth the continuall iſſhewe of water, which owght alſo to be of ſuch force as to remoue the earthy ſubſtaunce thereof from place to place, and not to intermixte ſuch great inequalitie of couldeneſſe and moiſtnes. And albeit that this compoſition begunne in this order, ſhuld not be diſſeuered or broken by the waters of the ryuers, yet it appeareth to me that the ſhowers of rayne and increaſe of fluddes, ſhulde be of ſufficient poure to diſtemper, breake, and vtterly deſtroy all ſuch compoſitions as ſhulde be engendered in ſuch places, foraſmuch al thynges are conceaued by reſt and quietneſſe after the commixtion of the fyrſte elementes. And therfore if this golde of the ryuers, bee there engendered where it is founde, I wolde it were declared vnto me why it is engendered only in theſe places and not in other: and why in lyke maner, ſyluer, copper, leade, or any other metals are not alſo engendered there as well as golde, beinge matters of an eaſyer compoſition of nature then it is, by reaſon of the perfecte vnitie and concordaunce with puritie of ſubſtaunce and perfecte concoction which is in golde aboue all other metals: whereas alſo in many places in the territories of Rome, there are founde many ſparkes of the mine of iren of blacke colour amonge the ſandes of certeyne ſmaule ryuers: And yet theſe only in certeyne particular places of the ſayde riuers: wherby it appeareth that theſe alſo, ſhulde not bee engendered where they are founde. By all which reaſons and apparent effectes, it ſeemeth moſt agreable to truth that the golde which is found in ſuch ſandes, is rather brought thyther by the water, then engendered there. And therefore to declare my mynde more playnely herein, I ſuppoſe that this chaunceth only in great ryuers which receaue abundaunce of waters of dyuers ſpringes, foſſes, and other ryuers, engendered partly of the meltynge of ſnowe and partly of great ſhowers of rayne, whiche faulyng in certeyne chanels from the toppes and ſydes of [the] minerall mountaynes, waſſhe away parte of the earth of theyr bankes and the ouerhanginge and holowe rockes which may conteyne the ſubſtaunce of golde: Or otherwyſe, that in ſuch places, there are ordinarie mines in the hyghe mountaynes or other ſuperficiall owt places, perhappes inceſſable and eyther ſuch whyther men can not come for extreme heate or cold or other hynderaunces, or els ſuch as they haue contemned to ſearche: And yet the ſame to bee ſo conſumed by the force of water as we haue ſayde, and by the courſe therof to bee caried into the ryuers. It may alſo chaunce that ſuche mynerall earthes bee farre within the mountaynes neare vnto ſuch ryuers: And that in the ſpace of many yeares, the ſprynges iſſhewynge owt of the ſame, may eyther bee dryed vp (whiche thyng hath byn ſeene) or els turne theyr courſe an other way So that it is no maruayle if in ſuch a multitude of yeres, the trewe originall of theſe thynges bee vnknowen euen vnto them that dwell nere ſuch places. But in fine, howe ſo euer it bee, trewe it is that golde is founde in the ſandes of many riuers: And particularly (as I haue noted) in the forenamed ryuers. And if therefore I haue maruayled at this thynge, I owght worthely to bee excuſed, foraſmuch as where iudgement can not bee certified by reaſon or effectuall app[e]arence, there ariſe many doubtfull coniectures and newe cauſes of admiration. But yet do I maruel much more of an other thyng the which I am informed to bee moſt trewe by the report of many credible perſons: That is, that in ſum places of Hungarie at certeyne tymes of the yeare, pure golde ſpryngeth owte of the earthe in the lykeneſſe of ſmaule herbes, wrethed and twyned lyke ſmaule ſtalkes of hoppes, about the byggeneſſe of a pack threade, and foure fyngers in length or ſume a handfull. As concernynge which thynge, Plinie alſo in the. xxxiii. [thirty-third] bôke of his naturall hyſtorie, wryteth the lyke to haue chaunced in *Dalmatia* in his tyme. The which (if it bee trewe) ſuerly the huſbande men of theſe fieldes ſhall reape heauenly and not earthly frutes, ſent them of god from heauen, and browght furth of nature withowt theyr trauayle or arte. A grace doubtleſſe moſt eſpecial, ſyth that in ſo great a quantitie of earth graunted to the poſſeſſion of men, in maner onely this is thought woorthy ſo hygh a priuileage. But what ſhall I ſay of that whereof *Albertus Magnus* wryteth in his booke of minerals, affirmynge that he hath ſeene golde engendered in a

That golde is not engendered in the sandes of riuers.

This mater is apparent in the golde founde in the ryuers in the Indies.

The faule of waters from montaynes.

337

Springes of water in mountaynes.

Vegetable golde growinge owt of the earthe.

Of this, reade Alexander ab Alexandro. lib. 4 Genialium dierum. Cap. 9.

Golde founde in A deade mans heade.

deade mans heade: And that the ſame beinge founde by chaunce in dyggynge, and perceaued by the weyght and coloure to conteyne ſum minerall ſubſtaunce, was proued by experience to holde a portion of fine golde mixte with ſmaule ſande. And in deede his woordes ſeeme to ſound to none other ſence but only that this precious metall was engender[e]d there by the great diſpoſition of the place and ſtronge influence of heauen: The which ſuerlie is a thynge hardely to be beleued. Yet conſyderynge th[e]autoritie of ſo greate a clerke, with the force of the ſuperiour cauſes and the maruelous poure of nature, I had rather gyue fayth hereto then raſſhely to contemne the iudgement of ſo greate a clarke. And foraſmuche as I haue begun to tell yow of theſe effectes, I wyll not omytte to ſhewe yowe of a ſtraunge thynge which chaunced alſo in a part of Hungarie, where a myne of gold was ſo found by chaunce and vnſought for, that it may neuertheleſſe be an aduertiſement to other to ſearche diligently. So it is therefore, that a woman of the contrey beinge accuſtomed to reſorte with her bucke of clothes to waſſhe them in a certeyne foſſe or dike where ranne a lyttle water, and vſynge to beate and rubbe them vppon a ſtone which ſeemed commodious for her purpoſe, chaunced at the length by her good fortune to eſpie on the ſtone, a veyne of golde trauerſyng or ouertwhartinge the ſame abowte the byggeneſſe of a groſe packe threede, ſhewynge fayre and bright by reaſon of her much rubbynge. Wherat marueylynge dayly more and more, at the length opened the matter to her familiers: who conferrynge with ſuch as hadde better ſkyll of the thynge, founde it in fine to bee a veyne of pure golde: And that the quarrie of that ſtone, trauerſed the courſe of the water of the foſſe. Remouynge therfore the water, and turning the courſe thereof an other waye, they beganne to dygge and folow the mine which hath now continued certeine. C. [hundred] yeares ſence it was fyrſt found: And hath not only greatly enriched that contrey, But alſo all Chriſtendome hath had great commoditie by the ſame. This haue I rehearſed vnto yow the rather that yow ſhulde not bee negligent in any poynt or omitte any ſigne or token wherebye yowe may bee certified of greate thynges: not contemnynge the ſhadowe of any ſmaule tokens: but aſwel to gyue attentyue eare and eye vnto them, as to feare and foreſee all ſuch thynges as may hynder. For (as yow may hereby well perceaue) if credit had not fyrſt byn gyuen to the woordes of the ſimple wooman, and the thynge afterwarde well folowed, perhappes they ſhulde neyther nor euer hereafter haue enioyed the frute of ſo great a commoditie. Men therfore of good courage folowynge ſuche ryche ſignes, dyd nother feare the ſmauleneſſe of the veyne or hardneſſe of the ſtone: preſuppoſynge by good reaſon that golde and ſyluer can not lyghtly bee founde in ſo ſmaule quantitie, but that the ſame ſhal be able to ſurmounte the charges. And this the more, in howe much the further yowe ſhall enter into the ſtone, as chaunceth commonly in all other mynes. Albeit, the practiſed ſearchers, ſaye that the myne of golde is not founde in ſuch great quantitie as are the mines of other metals. Wherin although perhappes they ſay trewly, yet dooth it not folowe but that golde also maye bee founde in greate quantitie. And ſuerly it ſeemeth to me, that the benignitie of nature hath graunted large quantities thereof to the worlde, and that much hath euer byn and is founde amonge men, conſyderynge in how many places it is dayly gathered aſwel in mountaynes as in ſandes of ryuers, byſyde that whiche is founde accompanied and ioyned with other metals. A further proſe hereof may that bee, which is conſumed and hydde by the dyuers inuentions of men: As that whiche the paynters beſtowe in adournynge theyr woorkes: And goldeſmythes both in gyltynge other metals and alſo in malynge dyuers woorkes of maſſie golde: byſyde that which the woorker of clothe of golde and arras doo conſume: with ſuch as imbrotherers and ſylke woomen ſpende abowt the vanities of men and womens apparell and tyrementes. Alſo ſuch as is conſumed vppon trappers and furnimentes for horſes, with gylted harneſſe and ſuch other ſumptuouſneſſe as perteyneth to the warres and magnifical buyldinges of noble mens houſes and temples: Byſyde that alſo whiche the couetouſneſſe of men hath hydde in ſtronge waules, and buryed in the grounde, incloſed in chayned cofers locked with triple keyes: And that which ſerueth to the dayly vſes of men and wandereth about the worlde through the handes of marchauntes. The whiche thynges well conſydered, who ſo thinketh that nature bringeth furth but lyttle golde, ſhall perceaue that there is greate quantitie therof in the worlde, although there bee but fewe that haue ſo much as may ſatiſfie the thirſt of theyr couetouſneſſe. And to ſpeake particularly of Italie, althoughe there bee no myne of golde knowen in it, yet by the vertue and diligence of good wyttes, it hath euer and at all ages byn more ryche then many other prouinces: Notwithſtandynge it hath often tymes byn ſpoyled and ouerrunne of dyuers nations, as nowe of late in owre tyme by the cruell handes of the Barbarians which entered into it abowt. xl. [forty] yeares paſte. But who knoweth (as hath chaunced in the dayes of owre valient predeceſſors) whether Godde wyll ageyne gyue vs occaſion to chaſtiſe them and ſo to inuade theyr regions that wee maye woonne owre owne ageyne with increaſe of dowble vſurie. Or if he wyll not permitte this, perhappes he wyll graunte vs to fynde ſum ryche myne of golde. For, conſyderynge and ſeynge that this owre region of Italie is replenyſſhed with as many excellent thynges as in maner heauen can gyue to any habitable place, it is not to bee thought that this benefite of golde ſhulde bee wantynge, wheras it bryngeth furth ſuch plentie of al other mines except this of golde and tynne. And yet doo I verely beleue that it is not withowt the mynes of theſe alſo, although they be not yet diſcouered to the knowleage of men: As I am perſuaded bothe by the golde that is founde in the ſayd ryuers, and alſo by the dyuers and ſundry

A myne of golde founde by chaunce.

A vayne of golde in a stone.

No signes to be omitted.

338

Golde is not founde in like quantitie as are other metals.

Argumentes of plentye of golde.

Howe diuers wayes golde is consumed.

Many haue to muche, but fewe haue enowgh.

Italie wasted by the barbarians.

Commendacion of Italie

Golde and tynne

Meane minerals.

meane minerals which are founde in many places and adiudged of the practicionars to bee certeyne cleare tokens of theyr proper and natural agentes. But for that they are not found, felte, or feene, we owght not therby to affirme that they are not. To conclude therfore, I thinke that in owr partes of Italie, pure golde is none other wayes founde (excepte that which is currant amonge the marchauntes) then after twoo fortes, wherof the one is that which is founde in the fandes of ryuers: And the other, that whiche is gotten by the induſtrious and ſubtyle art of partyng gold from new ſyluer, or from giltyng ſyluer, or other metals which hold gold, as there are in maner but fewe which hold not ſum ſmaul portion therof, more or leſſe according to the mixtion and permanencie of theyr ſubſtances, or accordynge to the qualitie and force of the planettes which expreſſe theyr influence in the generation of them. And in fine, this is the golde that which is founde in owre partes of Italie. Nowe therfore to returne to the matter whereof is owre chiefe intente to intreate, hauynge before ſpoken ſufficiently of the generation and inuention of the myne of golde, I wyll further declare vnto yowe howe it owght to be pourged from earthly ſuperfluitie, and eſpecially that whiche is founde lyinge in the forme of veynes, and although I haue not ſeene the edifi[c]es and engens wherwith the myners are accuſtomed to get it owt, yet wyll I ſhewe yow howe by other practiſes I haue learned to pourge it, that yow may not bee without ſum knowleage yf your fortune ſhalbe ſo good as to fynde any in Italy. When yow haue therfore dygged owt the myne and placed it in order, yow owght to conſider in what kynde of ſtone it is engendered. And if it bee in that which is cauled *Lapis Lazuli*, then muſte yow ſo drawe owte the golde that yowe alſo ſaue the ſtone, bycauſe perfecte Aſure is made therof, and ſuch as the paynters caule *Azurro Oltramarino*, that is, Aſure of beyonde the ſea, which they greatly eſteme and bye it deare. And to do this, it is neceſſary that yowe fyrſt beate it into fine pouder, and then put it in a trey or brode treene dyſſhe, and waſſhe it fayre and cleane with water. This done amalgame or rubbe it well with quickeſyluer vntyll it haue lycked vppe and drawne al the golde into it and left the ſtone pure of it ſelfe. Then ſtrayne the quickeſyluer from the golde through a bagge of lether, or vapour it away in a ſtyllatorie of glaſſe: And thus ſhal yowe fynde the golde in the bottome of the veſſell in maner pure without quickeſyluer, as I haue ſayde before. And if yow haue no reſpecte to ſaue the ſtone, it ſhall ſuffice to vſe the common experience, meltynge it in a fornace in a bayne or teſte of leade. But in my opinion, the beſt maner to brynge it to pureneſſe, is fyrſt to burne the mine with a gentell fyre in an open fornace, and to ſuffer it to euaporate well if it bee not in ſuch ſtone as yowe deſyre to ſaue. Then grynde it in a mylle or beate it with peſtel'es adapted with a wheele vntyll it be browght to fine pouder. And when yow haue wel waſſhed it and ſo much waſted the ſuperfluous earthyneſſe therof, then put it in a teſte made accordynge to the quantitie of the ſame, and melt it therin with leade whiche yowe ſhall conſume partely by vapoure and partely with drawynge it owt by the ſyde of the teſte (as is the maner) vntyll yowe come to the pure golde whiche yowe ſhall in fine brynge to perfecte pureneſſe in vtterly conſumynge the remanent of the leade with vehement fire increaſed by the helpe of ſtronge bellowes. And this is the vniuerſal maner which yow may vſe not only in pourgynge the myne of golde, but alſo the mynes of all other metals.

The golde of Italie.

Golde contayned in other metals.

The maner of pourginge of golde.

339

Lapis lazuli.

Aſure.

Howe golde is drawen frome *Lapis lazuli* with quickesyluer.

The baine or test of leade.

The maner of pourginge golde with leade.

☞ *Of the myne of ſiluer and the qualitie therof.*

Whether syluer haue A mine by hit selfe or no.

THere are (as I vnderſtande) diuers opinions emonge the practitionars of the mynes, whether ſyluer haue a proper myne by it ſelfe or no. The reaſons of ſuche as writte of the natures of mineralles, and th[e]autoritie of the moſt, perſuade me to aſſent to the affirmatiue: Not only to ſee the naturall matter diſtincte, as is to perceaue in the mynes of golde, copper, leade and other metals whiche in theyr mynes are found pure by them ſelues without mixtion, but alſo that I vnderſtand that there hath bin found likewyſe certeyne pieces aſwell of this mettall of ſiluer, as of gold and copper, browght to his laſte fyneſſe by th[e]only worke of nature. And this dooth *Georgius Agricola* a lerned man of Germany confirme in his booke of minerals where he writteth that in Saxonie there was found in a caue a piece of mineral ſiluer of ſuch bignes, that the duke the prince and patrone of that place, cauſed a chayre and ſquare dyninge table after the maner of Almanye to be made therof withowte any further woorke of mans hande: Gloryinge often tymes that in this thynge he ſurmounted the greatneſſe and magnificence of the Emperoure. But in deede (excepte copper) I haue ſeene no metall taken owte of the caue pure withowt his vre. Yet doo I beleeue it a thynge poſſible, conſyderinge the greate force and poure of nature, th[e]ende of whoſe woorkynge euer intendeth to bringe all thynges to perfection as farre as it is not otherwyſe hyndered. Yet (as I haue ſayde) of the moſte parte of thoſe mynes whiche I haue ſeene, none of theym haue byn withowt mixture, not only of the earthe of their owne proper myne, but haue byn alſo myxte with other metals: And eſpecially this of ſyluer more then any other, excepte onlye that which was digged in *Schio*, in *Vicentina*. And therefore not withowt ſum ſhadow of apparent reaſon, haue ſuche doubtes riſin

Georgius Agricola.

A table of mineral syluer.

The workes of nature.

Mixte metales.

amonge the practitionars of the mynes. And yet (as I haue ſayd) I beleue that ſiluer may haue and hath his proper mine, foraſmuche as euery ſubſtaunce that maye be conuerted into metall, may aſwell ſtande by it ſelfe pure in his owne kynde, as eyther ſeperate or mixte with other, as is often times ſeene in one maſſe in the whiche diuers metals are conteyned and engendered by nature. And by this meanes it often chaunceth that he that ſpeaketh of the mine of ſiluer, may with the ſame brethe and withowt diſtinction, ſpeake alſo of all other metales, foraſmuche as there are but fewe mynes which are not mixte with other. But bycauſe the moſte noble and ryche metals haue obteyned the prerogatiue to be eſtemed aboue other, therfore the name of the myne is gyuen to them wher they are mixte with other: as the mynes which holde copper, leade, or iren, (as doo the moſte parte) yet if they holde alſo golde or ſyluer, they are cauled gold mynes or ſyluer mynes, according vnto that which is founde in them to bee of moſt value. But to lette paſſe this matter, yowe ſhall further vnderſtande that when ſuche mynes are mixte of dyuers metals, they ſhew furth ſo much the more diuers and variable ſumoſites of tinctures and marchaſites, as ſignes where they bee and of what pureneſſe: foraſmuch as euery of them according to theyr natures, exalte theyr colours which they ſhewe furthe to the eye, ſum in the ſimilitude of aſurine or blewe ſtones, ſum greene, ſum yelowe, and ſum of vndiſtinct colours accordynge to the compoſitions and mixtures of the fyrſt matters of metals, which is alſo the cauſe that they are founde more or leſſe in quantitie. Nowe to ſpeake more particularly of this metall of ſyluer, the philoſophers ſpeculatours of naturall thynges, ſaye that it is engendered of ſubſtaunce more watery then fyerie, of complexion feminine and flegmatike in compariſon to gold: receauynge more of th[e]influence of the moone then of the ſon, and therfore engendered more in coulde regions nerer vnto the moone, then in hotte regions vnder the ſoonne: conſiſting alſo of pure elementes, although ſumwhat crude and vndygeſted in reſpecte of the elementes of golde as may bee plainely perceaued by theyr colours, weyght, and fixation. The practicionars affirme that it is engendered in a ſtone lyke vnto *Albazano*, and alſo in an other ſtone of a ruſſet, deade, and darke colour: And is often tymes founde in an other ſtone lyke vnto *Treuertino* or in *Treuertino* it ſelfe. The myne hereof, is very ponderous, and hathe in it often tymes certeyne ſhynynge graynes: The which howe much the leſſe they are like to the poynte of a needle ſo muche is the myne founde to bee the perfecter, bycauſe this is a token of pureneſſe and fixion. And when it is founde in a whyte ſtone, or leade ſtone, it is ſo muche the better, bycauſe it maye be the eaſyer pourged from the ſtone and earthyneſſe. When alſo it is founde lyinge as it were looſe amonge certeine ſcales or cloddes of earth, they ſaye that it is perfecte, although it haue not to the eye ſuche reſplendence as other are wonte to haue. They ſay alſo that it is engendered in an earth of darke ruſſet colour: And that when it is founde in this, it is of great quantitie and perfection, and that there is great plentie therof within the mountayne: This alſo to be ſo much the better in howe much more it is ſhynynge of the coloure of iren or redde. And that yowe may the better comprehend the ſignes of the myne of the foreſayde metall, yowe ſhall vnderſtand that euen togyther with the myne, eyther where it is fyrſte founde, or nere vnto the ſame, yowe ſhall ſee certeyne marchaſites of yelowe coloure lyke vnto golde. The which, the more they holde of ſuche hyghe colour, ſo much the more do they ſhewe aduſt or burnt matter and heate, as thynges cóntrary to the nature of theyr metals. And therfore accordynge to the degrees of ſuche colours, yow may in maner iudge of what fatnes or leaneneſſe the myne is lyke to bee. Such marchaſites therfore as ſhewe the beſt ſignes of the goodneſſe of theyr mynes, owght in coloure to approche to whyteneſſe as much as may bee, and to conſyſt of ſmaule graynes, and not in greate quantitie. And this is a generall rule of all marchaſites, that howe much the narower and leſſe they are, the more do they ſhewe the goodneſſe of theyr myne. This myne of ſyluer is alſo often times founde in a veyne of great quantitie, and yet ſo leane in qualitie that it wyll not beare the charge of the dyggyng, bicauſe it is founde in a harde ſtone lyke vnto *Albazano*, beinge verye harde to bee dygged or broken. Sum tymes alſo, it is found in the company of copper or leade: The which lykewyſe if it do not ſurmount the value of the charges, it is not to bee folowed. Otherwhyles alſo, it ſo chaunceth that theſe thre metals are founde accompanyed togyther in one myne: In whiche caſe it ſhalbe neceſſarie to vſe aduertiſement of arte. And preſuppoſynge that yowe deſyre to ſeparate the ſyluer frome the other metall, it is neceſſarie that yowe increaſe the leade. But if yow paſſe not to ſaue neyther the ſyluer nor the leade, but only the copper, it ſhalbe requiſite to proceade with longe and great fyers vntyl the weakeſt matters bee conſumed. But this owght to be doone eſpecially in ſuch mines as hold iren. Yet neyther for this or thoſe, can there any general rule be gyuen, but that accordynge vnto theyr qualitie and nature, ſo owght they to be diuided: And this ſo much the more in that they are often tymes mixte with ſum drye earthe, or with a quantitie of antimonie or arſenike, which are matters altogyther euaporable and burnte, or of harde ſubſtaunce to bee reduced to fuſion or meltynge: In ſo much that the artificers ſumtymes beinge ouercumme of them, leaue them as thynges vnprofitable. Wherof there can none other cauſe often times be gyuen, then theyr owne ignoraunce by reaſon of extraordinarie and long fyers whiche they gyue them. And therefore they woorke inordinately in ſuch kynd of mynes, except they accompanie them in the fuſion or meltynge with ſuch thinges as may defende them from the fyer. For wheras is ſuche abun-

340 Diuers metals in one masse.

In the Indies golde founde in greate quantitie, pure and vnmixte.

The coulours of mineral fumosites.

The generacion and qualitie of siluer.

The influences of the mone.

Stones in the which syluer is engendered.

The myne of syluer.

The mountayne.

Marchasites of syluer.

What marchasites are the beste signes.

Syluer myn[e]s in harde stones.

Syluer with copper or leade.

The deuyding of siluer from other metals.

341 Iren.

Metals mixte with Antimonie or Arsnike

Howe metals are preserued in fusion.

Sulphur and mercurye.

daunce eyther of burnte matter, or of ſuperfluous wateryneſſe, wherof the one is cauled *Sulphur* or brymſtone, and the other Mercurie or quickſyluer not fixed, or arſenike, it is neceſſarie that the one burne the ſyluer, and the other cary it a way, ſo that of the myne there reſteth none other then an earthye ſubſtaunce infuſible and not able to bee molten. To ſaue the ſayde myne therefore it ſhalbe requiſite to vſe diſcretion with much pacience and conueniente meanes, fyrſte after the common maner of woorkynge to euaporate the myne (as wee haue ſayde) or withowt euaporation to grinde it ſmaule: then to waſſhe it often, and in fine, if not by great fyers, at the leaſte by great baynes or teſtes of leade to pourge it. And to brynge this effect the more eaſely to paſſe as much as may be, after that it is grounde yow owght to proue in the ſame grindynge or in an other, if it may be amalgamed with Mercurie which is the beſt maner of profe, if the myne bee of a drye nature: And I knowe that it hath bynne vſed of many to theyr greate profyte: And eſpecially in thoſe ſorte of mynes which I ſayde before to bee dygged in *Vigentina* in *Schio*, beinge very ryche and good. Proue it therfore. For all kyndes of mines do not receaue it. And of this wherof I haue ſpoken, I haue intelligence that there hath bynne pieces founde holdynge a fourth part of ſyluer, and ſum more then halfe. And this was founde lyinge in maner in the ſuperficiall parte of the earth: and ſum tymes in pathes and high wayes. It hath alſo bin founde vnder the rootes of ſuche trees as haue byn ouerthrowen by tempeſte: and this very perfecte. So that emonge all the mynes whiche I haue ſeene in the dominions of Venice, as in Carnia and in many other places, I can not ſaye that I haue ſeene any better: Although there bee many caues wherof the moſt parte are of copper holdinge ſyluer: and emonge other, that in the mountayne of *Auanzo*, where I in the company of certeyne other gentlemen cauſed a caue to bee digged. And bycauſe the hole charge was committed to mee, I wente by occaſion twyſe into high Almanye to ſee the mynes of that countrey, wherby I might haue the better experience to faule to practyſe at my returne. In ſo much that I founde the mine which we had taken in hande to folowe, to bee very good and ryche: holdynge more then three vnces and a halfe of ſyluer in euery hundreth of the myne. And doubtleſſe we ſhuld haue obteyned great commoditie hereby if fortune at that tyme had not rayſed warre betwene Maximilian Th[e]emperoure and the ſignorie of Venece: which was the cauſe that thoſe places of *Frioli* and *Carnia*, coulde not be quietly inhabited: whereby we were enforced to forſake owre enterpryſe, and to raſe and deſtroy th[e]order which we had begunne. And by reaſon that the warres continued longe, we were conſtrayned to diuide owr company, where I alſo departed an other way, hauyng euer in mynde to folowe owre attempted enterpryſe when better oportunitie ſhulde ſerue. In the meane tyme returnyng ageine into hyghe Almanie, I made more diligent ſearche to knowe the mynes then before: and went to *Sbozzo*, *Plaiper*, *I*[*n*]*ſpruch*, *Alla*, and *Arottinbergh*: frome whenſe I wente into dyuers places of Italy. So that to conclude, the moſt and beſt mynes whiche I haue ſene to holde moſt of ſyluer, are thoſe that are founde in *Vicentina* in certeyne ſtones of a dark grey, or ruſſet colour, as I haue ſayde before. And nowe for a generall aduertiſement, I wyll not omyt to tell yow, that when yow haue attempted to dygge any mynes, and haue founde the marchaſite and the myne myxt togyther, yowe ſhall leaue of yowre woorke, bycauſe it ſignifieth that the myne is neare to the ſuperficiall part of the earth, and that it is of but lyttle quantitie. And thus as touchyng this myne of ſyluer, I can ſay no more ſauynge that I haue not yet ſhewed yowe the maner of pourgynge it from earthely groſenes and to brynge it to perfect metall. But bycauſe I haue determyned to ſpeake largely hereof in the proper place of the fuſion or meltynge of all metals, I haue thowght good to ſpeake no further of this matter at this preſente.

Grinding and wasshinge of mynes.

The amalgamynge of mines with Mercury.

Mines holdynge the fourthe part of siluer.

Copper holdinge syluer.

Thre vnces vi. of siluer in euery hundreth of mine

War betwene Maximilian Th[e]emperour and the Venecians.

The mynes of Almanye.

The marchasite mixte with the myne.

342

THE MANER OF WORKYNGE IN GOLDE MYNES IN EGIPTE IN OWLD TYME, AFTER THE DESCRIPTION OF DIODORVS SICVLVS, WHO WROTTE HIS HISTORIE cauled Bibliotheca, ſumwhat before the dayes of th[e]emperoure Octauianus Auguſtus, and before th[e]incarnation of Chriſt abowt. xl. [forty] yeares.

He wryteth therefore in his fourthe booke as foloweth.

WE haue not thowght good to pretermit howe golde is founde, digged, and wrought amonge the Egiptians. In the confines therefore of Egipte where it borthereth with Ethiopia and Arabia, there are certeyne places frutefull of metalles, owt of the whiche, golde is digged with great laboure and expenſes. For a blacke earthe of minerale nature, hath certeyne vaynes of moſte white marble exceadinge bright and ſhyninge. The ſurueyours of this woorke, haue aſſigned them a great company of men to woorke and coyne golde. For the kinges of Egipte are accuſtomed to appoynte to theſe paynefull trauailes, all ſuche as haue byn conuicte for certeyne crimes and condemned by lawes, or taken priſoners in the warres, or ſuche as haue byn committed to priſon through the indignation of princes who by this meanes haue bothe great vantage by theyr laboure, and punyſhe them ſufficiently for theyr offenſes. For barbarous and ſtrange ſouldiers of diuers languagies, bare rule ouer them and keepe them to theyr worke, in ſuche ſorte that th[e]uſe of ſpeache beinge taken from theym, they can not bee corrupted by loue or intreatie. They drawe golde owt of the hardeſt earth decocte with much fyer. The ſofteſt ſtone which is broken with meane labour, is digged with inſtrumentes of iren by the trauayle of many thouſands of men. The ſcrier which decerneth the veines of the myne, go[e]th before the workemen, appoynting them the places where they ſhall digge. The marble ſtone whiche he ſheweth theim, they breake and cleaue with wedgies of iren by the mere ſtrength of theyr bodies withowte arte. They make theyr foſſe or caue, not right furthe, but as the bright nature of the golden marble leadeth them, beinge otherwyſe darke and obſcure by reaſon of theyr ſundry turnes and bendinges diuers wayes. The labourers caryinge lyght before theyr for[e]-heades, digge great ſtones owt of the myne, whyche they let faule on the ground. From this labour they neuer reſt, inforced to contynual woorke with ſtrokes and contumelious woordes. Children of th[e]age of. xii. [twelue] or. xiii. [thirteen] yeares or vppewarde, are diuided into two companyes, whereof the one breake the ſtones into ſmaule pieces, and the other cary furth that which is broken. They that are paſt th[e]age of. xxx. [thirty] yeares, receaue the ſayd broken ſtones at theyr hands and beate them in veſſels of ſtone with maules of iren, to the quantitie of tares or fytches: which afterward they caſt into many milles, whereby the laboure of two or three women or owlde men to euery mylle, they are grounde as ſmaule as meale. The fylthineſſe of the bodies of theſe labourers, is apparent to all men. For not ſo muche as their priuie members are couered with any thinge: And theyr bodies byſyde ſo fylthy, that no man can beholde them withowt compaſſion of theyr miſerie. But no pitie, no reſte, no remiſſion is graunted them, whether they bee men or women, younge or owlde, ſycke or feeble: But are all with ſtrokes inforced to continuall labour vntyl the poore wretches faynt and often tymes dye for extreme debilitie: In ſo much that many of them for feare of theyr lyfe to coomme (which they thynke woorſe then the preſent payne) preferre death before lyfe. When they haue thus grounde the ſtones very ſmaule, they caſt that ſubſtaunce vppon brode tables inclynynge ſumwhat ſtiepe or ſtandynge a ſlope, and caſt water thereon, ſterynge continually the ſayde pouder of ſmarble: by the meanes wherof the earth and vre of the myne is waſſhed away, and the golde as the heauier matter remayneth on the tables. When they haue doone thus often tymes, they ouerturne the golde continually with theyr handes and rub it with thynne ſpoonges, owt of the which they preſſe a ſofte earth, and thus continewe vntyll the pure metall remayne lyke vnto golden ſande. After that this preparation is fynyſſhed, other woorkemen receauynge it at theyr handes by meaſure and weyght, caſt it into earthen pottes, puttynge thereto a certeyne portion of leade, with branne of barly, and weedes of the ſea cauled reites or ouſe. Theſe thynges proportioned accordingly, they cloſe the pottes diligently with cley, and ſo let them ſtaſid in a furneſſe with fyer for the ſpace of fyue continuall dayes and nyghtes. In which ſpace, al other thinges of contrary mixture beinge conſumed, only the golde is found in the veſſels, ſumwhat diminyſſhed of the fyrſt weyght. And by this labour and diligence is golde poſſeſſed in the furtheſt parte of Egypt. Wherby, euen nature her ſelfe teacheth vs howe laborious it is in fyndynge, tedious in purſuinge, daungerous in keepynge, and in vſe conſtitute betwene pleaſure and ſorowe.

Gold in a black earthe, and white marble

Then damned to the metales as nowe to the gallies.

The ſcrier of the vayne.

Golden marble.

The woorke of chyldren.

Mylles.

The misery of the miners

The pourginge of the metall frome the vre.

The melting of golde.

343

Algæ.

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION VII.

The first two Voyages out of England into Guinea.

1553-1554 A.D.]

¶ THE DISCRIPTION OF THE TWO VIAGES MADE OWT OF ENGLAND INTO GVINEA IN AFFRIKE AT THE CHARGES OF CERTEYNE MARCHAVNTES ADVENTVRERS of the citie of London, in the yeare of owre Lorde. M. D. LIII.

THat theſe vyages to Guinea are placed after the booke of Metals as ſeparate frome other vyages, the cauſe hereof is, that after I had delyuered the ſayde booke of metalles to the handes of the printers, I was deſyred by certeyne my frendes to make ſumme mention of theſe viages, that ſum memorie myght thereof remayne to owr poſteritie if eyther iniquitie of tyme conſumynge all thinges, or ignoraunce creepynge in by barbarouſneſſe and contempte of knoweleage, ſhulde hereafter bury in obliuion ſo woorthy attemptes, ſo much the greatlyer to bee eſtemed as before neuer enterpryſed by Englyſſhe men, or at the leaſte ſo frequented as at this preſent they are and may bee to the greate commoditie of owre marchauntes, if the ſame be not hyndered by th[e]ambiſion of ſuch as for the conqueſtynge of fortie or fyftie myles here and there, and erectynge of certeyne fortreſſes or rather blockhouſes amonge naked people, thinke them ſelues woorthy to bee lordes of ha fe the worlde, enuying that other ſhulde enioy the commodities which they them ſelues can not holy poſſeſſe. And although ſuch as haue byn at charges in the diſcouerynge and conqueſtynge of ſuch landes, owght by good reaſon to haue certeyne priuilegies, preeminencies, and tributes for the ſame, yet (to ſpeake vnder correction) it may ſeeme ſumwhat rigorous and ageynſt good reaſon and conſcience, or rather ageynſt the charitie that owght to bee amonge Chryſten men, that ſuch as violentely inuade the dominions of other, ſhuld not permit other frendely to vſe the trade of marchandies in places neuer or ſeldome frequented of them, wherby theyr trade is not hindered in ſuch places where they them ſelues haue at theyr owne election appoynted the martes of theyr trafike. But foraſmuche as at this preſente it is not my intent to accuſe or defend, approue or improue, I wil ceaſe to ſpeake any further hereof, and proceade to the deſcription of the fyrſt viage as briefely and faythfully as I was aduertiſed of the ſame by th[e]information of ſuch credible perſons as made diligent inquiſition to knowe the truth hereof as much as ſhalbe requiſite, omyttynge to ſpeake of many particular thynges not greatly neceſſarie to be knowen: whiche neuertheleſſe with alſo th[e]exact courſe of the nauigation, ſhal be more fully declared in the ſecond vyage. And if herein fauoure or frendſhyppe ſhall perhappes cauſe ſum to thinke that ſum haue byn ſharpely touched, let them laye a parte fauoure and frendſhippe and gyue place to truth, that honeſt men may receaue prayſe for well doinge, and lewde perſons reproche as the iuſt ſtipende of theyr euyll deſertes, whereby other may bee deterred to do the lyke, and vertuous men encouraged to proceade in honeſt attemptes.

Ambition.

But that theſe vyages may bee more playnely vnderſtode of al men, I haue thowght good for this purpoſe before I intreate hereof, to make a breefe deſcription of Affrica beinge that greate parte of the worlde, on whoſe Weſte ſyde begynneth the coaſt of Guinea, at Cabo Verde abowt the. xii. [twelve] degrees in latitude ôn this ſyde the Equinoctiall line, and two degrees in lôngitude from the meaſurynge line, ſo runnynge from the north to the ſouth and by eaſt in ſum places within v. iiii. and. iii. degrees and a halfe within the Equinoctiall, and ſo furth in maner directly eaſt and by north for the ſpace of. xxxvi. [thirty-six] degrees or there abowt in longitude from the Weſt to the Eaſt, as ſhall more playnely appere in the deſcryption of the ſeconde vyage.

Africa.

The coaſt of Guinea.

344

A BREEFE DESCRIPTION OF AFFRIKE.

Tunnes.
Bugia.
Tripoli.
Numidia.

IN Affrica the leſſe are theſe kyngedomes: The kyngedome of Tunes, and Conſtantina which is at this day vnder Tunes, and alſo the region of Bugia, Tripoli, and Ezzab. This part of Afrike is very baren by reaſon of the greate deſertes, as the deſertes of Numidia and Barcha. The principall pertes of the kyngedome of Tunes are theſe: Goletta, Bizerta, Portofarnia, Boua, and Stora. The chiefe cities of Tunes, are Conſtantia and Boua with dyuers other. Vnder this kyngedome are many Ilandes, as Zerbi, Lampadola, Pantalarea, Limoſo, Beit, Gamelaro, and Malta where at this preſente is the greate maſter of the Rodes. Vnder the ſouthe of this kyngedome, are the great deſertes of Libia. Al the nations [of] this Africa the less, are of the ſecte of Machomet and a ruſticall people lyuynge ſcattered in vyllages. The beſte of this parte of Afrike, is Barbaria lyinge on the coaſte of the ſea Mediterraneum.

Ilandes of Tunnes.
Malta.
The disertes of Libia.

Barbarie.
Mauritania.
The kingdoms of Fes and marrock.
Tremesin.
Oram.
Nassaquiber
Salla.
Azamor.

Mauritania (nowe cauled Barbaria) is diuided in two partes, as Mauritania Tingitania, and Ceſarienſis. Mauritania Tingitania, is nowe cauled the kyngdome of Fes and the kyngedome of Marrocko. The principall citie of Fes, is cauled Feſſa: and the chiefe citie of Marrocko, is named Marrocko. Mauritania Ceſarienſis is at this day cauled the kyngedome of Tremiſen, with alſo the citie cauled Temiſen or Trelenſin. This region is full of deſertes, and reacheth to the ſea Mediterraneum to the citie of Oram with the porte of Maſſaquiber. The kyngedome of Fes reachethe vnto the Ocean ſea from the Weſt to the citie of Argilla: and the porte of the ſayde kyngedome is cauled Salla.

The kyngedome of Marrocko is alſo extended aboue the Ocean ſea vnto the citie of Azamor and Azafi whiche are aboue the Ocean ſea towarde the Weſt of the ſayde kyngdome. In Mauritania Tingitanea (that is to ſay in the two kyngedomes of Fes and Marrocko) are in the ſea, the Ilandes of Canarie cauled in owlde time the fortunate Ilandes. Toward the ſouth of this region, is the kyngedome of Guinea, with Senega, Iaiofo, Gambra, and manye other regions of the blacke Moores cauled Ethiopians or Negros, all whiche are watered with the ryuer Negro cauled in owlde tyme Niger. In the ſayde regions are no cities: but only certeyne lowe cotages made of bouwes of trees plaſtered with chauke and couered with ſtrawe: In theſe regions are alſo very great deſertes.

The Ilandes of Canarie.
Guinea.
Ethiopians.

Marrocko.
Fes.
Tremesin.
Guinea.

The kyngedome of Marrocko hath vnder it theſe ſeuen kyngedomes: Hea, Sus, Guzula, the territorie of Marrocko, Duchala, Hazchora, and Telde. The kyngedome of Fes hath as many: as Fes, Temeſne, Azgar, Elabath, Errifi, Garet, and Elcauz. The kyngedome of Tremiſen hath theſe regions: Tremiſen, Tenez, and Elgazaet, all which are Machometiſtes. But all the regions of Guinea are pure Gentyles and Idolatours withowt profeſſion of any religion or other knowleage of god then by the lawe of nature.

Africa the great.

Affrike the lesse.

Africa the great, is one of the three partes of the worlde knowen in owlde tyme and ſeuered from Aſia, on the Eaſt by the ryuer Nilus: On the Weſt, from Europe by the pillers of Hercules. The hyther part is nowe cauled Barbarie, and the people Moores. The inner parte is cauled Libia and Ethiopia. Afrike the leſſe is in this wyſe bounded: On the weſt it hath Numidia: On the eaſt Cyrenaica: On the north, the ſea cauled Mediterraneum. In this countrey was the noble citie of Carthage.

Carthage.

Prester Iohn.

In the Eaſt ſyde of Afrike beneth the redde ſea, dwelleth the greate and myghtye Emperour and Chryſtian kynge Preſter Iohan, well knowen to the Portugales in theyr vyages to Calicut. His dominions reache very farre on euery ſyde: and hath vnder hym many other kynges both Chryſtian and hethen that pay hym trybute. This myghty prynce is cauled Dauid Th[e]emperour of Ethiopia. Sum wryte that the kynge of Portugale ſendeth hym yearely. viii. [eight] ſhyppes laden with marchaundies. His kyngedome confineth with the redde ſea, and reacheth farre into Afrike towarde Egypte and Barbarie. Southwarde it confineth with the ſea towarde the cape *de Buona Speranzo*: and on the other ſyde with the ſea of ſande cauled *Mare de Sabione*, a very daungerous ſea, lyinge betwene the great citie of Alcaer or Cairo in Egypte and the countrey of Ethiopia: In the whiche way are many vnha[bita]ble deſertes continuinge for the ſpace of fyue dayes iorney. And they affirme that if the ſayde Chryſtian Emperour were not hyndered by thoſe deſertes (in the which is great lacke of vittayles and eſpecially of water) he wolde or nowe haue inuaded the kyngedome of Egypte and the citie of Alcayer. The chiefe citie of Ethiope where this great Emperour is reſydent, is cauled Amacaiz beinge a fayre citie, whoſe inhabitauntes are of the coloure of an olyue. There are alſo many other cities, as the citie of Saua vppon the ryuer of Nilus where Th[e]emperoure is accuſtomed to remayne in the ſoommer ſeaſon. There is lykewyſe a great citie named Barbaregaf: And Aſcon from whenſe it is ſayde that the queene of Saba came to Ieruſalem to heare the wyſdome of Salomon. This citie is but lyttle, yet very fayre and one of the chiefe cities in Ethiope. In the ſayde kyngdome is a prouince cauled Manicongni, whoſe kynge is a Moore and tributarie to Th[e]emperour of Ethiope. In this prouince are many excedynge hyghe mountaynes vppon the which is ſayde to be the earthly Paradyſe: And ſum ſay that there are the trees of the ſoonne and moone whereof the antiquitie maketh mention, yet that none can paſſe thyther by reaſon of greate deſertes of a hundreth dayes iorney. Alſo beyonde theſe mountaynes, is the cape of Buona Speranza. And to haue ſayde thus much of Afrike it may ſuffice.

Cape de Buona Speranza.
The sea of sande.
Alcair.

345

From whense the queene of Saba came.
Manicongni.
The earthly Paradyse.
The trees of the soonne and moone.

¶ THE FYRST VYAGE TO GVINEA.

IN the yeare of owre Lorde M. D. LIII. the. xii. [twelfth] day of Auguſt, ſayled from Porchemouth two goodly ſhyppes, the Primroſe and the Lion, with a pynneſſe cauled the moone: beinge all well furnyſſhed aſwell with men of the luſtieſt ſorte to the number of ſeuen ſcore, as alſo with ordinaunce and vyttayles requiſite to ſuch a vyage: Hauynge alſo two capitaynes, the one a ſtraunger cauled Antoniades Pinteado a Portugale, borne in a towne named the porte of Portugale, a wyſe, diſcrete, and ſober man, who for his cunnynge in ſaylynge beinge aſwell an expert pylot as polytyke capitayne, was ſumtyme in greate fauoure with the kynge of Portugale, and to whom the coaſtes of Braſile and Guinea were commytted to bee kepte from the Frenchemen to whom he was a terroure on the ſea in thoſe partes: and was furthermore a gentleman of the kinge his maſters houſe. But as fortune in maner neuer fauoureth but flattereth, neuer promiſeth but deceaueth, neuer rayſeth but caſteth downe ageyne, and as great wealth and fauour hath alwayes companions emulation and enuie, he was after many aduerſites and quarels made ageynſt hym, inforced to come into Englande: where in this golden vyage he was euyll matched with an vnequall coompanion and vnlyke matche of moſt ſundry qualities and conditions with vertues few or none adourned, with vices dyuers and many fowly ſpotted, knowen of many without profyte, and deſyred of fewe or none for his wyckednes: whoſe ſmaule acquayntaunce was profitable to all men, and his familiar conuerſation an vndoinge, that happye was the man or woman that knewe hym not, he for his gooddes and ſhe for her name. In fine, vnfortunate was the coompany that had owght to doo with hym: in ſo much that it was no maruayle that ſo goodly an enterpryſe with ſo noble a furniture of men, ſhyppes, and ordinaunce of all ſortes, with all kynde of vyttayles and that of ſo great abundaunce, had ſo ſmaul ſucceſſe: which could be none otherwyſe wher ſo foule a ſpotte dyd blemyſſhe, ye rather deface the reſt. Thus departed theſe noble ſhyppes vnder ſayle on theyr vyage. But firſt this capitayne Wyndam, puttyng furth of his ſhyp at Porchmouth, a kynſeman of one of the headde marchauntes, and ſhewynge herein a muſter of the tragical partes he had conceaued in his brayne, and with ſuch ſmaule begynninges nuryſſhed ſo monſtrous a byrth, that more happy, yea and bleſſed was that younge man beinge lefte behynde then if he had byn taken with them, as ſum doo wyſſhe he had doonne the lyke by theyrs. Thus ſayled they on theyr vyage vntyll they came to the Ilandes of Madera where they toke in certeyne wynes for the ſtore of theyr ſhyppes, and payde for them as they agreed of the price. At theſe Ilandes they met with a great galion of the kynge of Portugale full of men and ordinaunce: yet ſuche as coulde not haue preuayled if it had attempted to withſtande or reſyſt owre ſhyppes, for the which cauſe it was ſet furth, not only to lette and interrupte theſe owre ſhyppes of theyr purpoſed vyage, but all other that ſhulde attempte the lyke: Yet chiefely to fruſtrate owre vyage. For the kyng of Portugale was ſiniſterly informed that owre ſhyppes were armed to his caſtel of Mina in theſe parties, wheras nothing leſſe was ment.

After that owr ſhyppes departed from the Ilandes of Madera forwarde on theyr vyage, began this woorthy capitaine Pinteados ſorowe as a man tormented with the company of a terrible hydra who hytherto flattered with hym and made hym a fayre countenance and ſhewe of loue. Then dyd he take vppon hym to commaunde all alone, ſettynge nowght bothe by capitayne Pinteado with the reſte of the marchaunte factours: ſumtymes with opprobrious woordes and ſumtymes with threatenynges moſt ſhamefully abuſynge them, takinge from Pinteado the ſeruice of the boys and certeyne mariners that were aſſigned hym by th[e]order and direction of the woorſhypfull marchauntes, and leauynge hym as a common maryner, which is the greateſt deſpite and greefe that can be to a Portugale or Spanyarde to be diminyſſhte theyr honoure which they eſteeme aboue all rycheſſe. Thus ſaylyng forward on theyr vyage, they came to the Ilandes of Canarie, continuynge theyr courſe from thenſe vntyll they arryued at the Ilande of ſaynt Nicolas where they vyttayled them ſelues with freſſhe meate of the

The Prymrose
The Lyon.
The Moone
Pinteado.
Brasile.
Guinea.
The flatteryng of fortune.
The euel conditions of Wyndam.
The Ilandes of Madera.
A galeon of the kinge of Portugale.
The castel of Mina.
346
Howe Wyndam abused Pinteado.
The Ilandes of Canarie.
The Ilande of. S. Nicolas.

Guinea.

The ryuer of Sesto.
Graynes.

The thrist of golde.

The castel of mena.
The quantit[i]e of golde.

Benin.

Pepper.

Furie admitteth no counsayle.

The Rossia.
Rottinge heate.
Scorchinge heate.
Benin.

Francisco.
Nicolas Lambert.
The kyng of Benin his court.

347

Reuerence towarde the kynge.

The communication betwene the kynge of Benin and owr men.

Pepper.

The kynges gentlenesse towarde owr men.

fleſſhe of wylde goates whereof is great plentie in that Ilande and in maner of nothyng elſe. Fròm henſe folowynge on theyr courſe, and taryinge here and there at the deſerte Ilandes in the waye, bycauſe they wolde not coome to tymely to the countrey of Guinea for thè heate, and taryinge ſumwhat to longe (for what can bee wel mynyſtred in a common wealth where inequalitie with tyrannie wyll rule alone) they came at the length to the fyrſt lande of the countrey of Guinea where they fell with the great ryuer of Seſto where they myght fòr theyr marchaundies haue laden theyr ſhyppes with the graynes of that countrey, which is a very hotte frute, and much lyke vnto a fygge as it groweth on the tree. For as the fygges are full of ſmaule ſeedes, ſo is the ſayde frute ful of graynes which are loſe within the codde, hauynge in the myddeſt thereof a hole on euery ſyde. This kynde of ſpice is much vſed in coulde countreys, and may there be ſolde for great aduantage for th[e]exchaunge of other wares. But owr men by the perſuaſion or rather inforcement of this tragicall capitayne, not regardynge and ſettyng lyght by that commoditie in comparaſon to the fine gold they thriſted, ſayled an hundreth leaques further vntyl they came to the golden lande: where not attemptinge to come nere the caſtell perteynynge to the kynge of Portugale, whiche was within the ryuer of Mina, made ſale of theyr ware onely on this ſyde and beyonde it for the golde of that countrey to the quantitie of an hundreth and fiftie poundes weyght, there beinge in caſe that they myght haue diſpatched al theyr ware for golde, if the vntame brayne of Wyndam had or could haue gyuen eare to the counſayle and experience of Pinteado. For when that Wyndam not ſatiſfied with the golde whiche he had (and more myght haue had if he had taryed abowt the Mina) commaundynge the ſayde Pinteado (for ſo he toke vppon hym) to leade the ſhyppes to Benin beinge vnder the Equinoctial line and a hundreth and fiftie leaques beyonde the Mina where he loked to haue theyr ſhyppes laden with pepper: And beinge counſayled of the ſayde Pinteado conſyderynge the late tyme of the yere for that tyme to go no further but to make ſale of theyr wares ſuch as they had for golde wherby they myght haue byn great gayners. But Wyndam not aſſentynge hereunto, fell into a ſuddeyne rage, reuilynge the ſayde Pinteado, caulynge hym Iewe with other opprobrious woordes, ſayinge. This horſon Iewe hath promiſed to brynge vs to ſuch places as are not, or as he can not bring vs vnto. But if he doo not, I wyl cut of his eares and naile them to the maſt. Pinteado gaue the forſayde counſayle to goo no further for the ſafeguard of the men and theyr lyues, which they ſhulde put in daungioure if they came to late for the roſſia which is theyr wynter, not for coulde but for ſmotherynge heate with cloſe and cloudy ayer and ſtorminge wether of ſuche putrifyinge qualitie that it rotted the cotes of theyr backes: Or els for coommynge to ſoonne for the ſcorchynge heate of the ſonne which cauſed them to lynger in the way. But of force and not of wyll, browght he the ſhyppes before the ryuer of Benin: where rydynge at an anker, ſente theyr pinneſſe vp into the ryuer fiftie or threſcore leaques, from whenſe certeyne of the marchauntes with capitayne Pinteado, Franciſco a Portugale, Nicolas Lambert gentleman, and other marchauntes were conducted to the courte where the kyng remayned. x. [ten] leaques from the ryuer ſyde: whyther when they came, they were browght with a greate company to thè preſence of the kynge who beinge a blacke moore (althoughe not ſo blacke as the reſt) ſat in a great houge haule longe and wyde, the walles made of earthe withowte wyndowes, the roofe of thynne boordes open in ſundry places lyke vnto louers to lette in the ayer.

And here to ſpeke of the great reuerence they gyuè to their kynge, beinge ſuch that if wee wolde gyue as much to owr ſauiour Chryſt, we ſhuld remoue from owr heades many plages which wee dayly deſerue for owre contempte and impietie.

So it is therfore, that when his noble men are in his preſence, they neuer looke hym in the face, but ſyt courynge, as wee vppon owre knees ſo they vppon theyr buttockes with theyr elbowes vppon theyr knees and theyr handes beefore theyr faces, not lookynge vppe vntyll the kynge commaunde them. And when they are commynge towarde the kynge as farre as they do ſee hym, do they ſhewe ſuch reuerence ſytting on the grounde with theyr faces couered as before. Lykewiſe when they depart from hym they turne not theyr backes towarde hym, but go creepynge backewarde with lyke reuerence.

And nowe to ſpeake ſumwhat of the communication that was betwene the kynge and owre men, yowe ſhall fyrſt vnderſtande that he hym ſelfe coulde ſpeake the Portugale tounge which he had lerned of a chylde. Therfore after that he had commaunded owre men to ſtande vp, and demaunded of them the cauſe of theyr commynge into that countrey, they anſwered by Pinteado that they were marchauntes trauaylynge into thoſe parties for the commodities of his countrey for exchaunge of wares which they had browght from theyr countreys, beinge ſuch as ſhulde bee no leſſe commodious for him and his people. The kynge then hauynge of owlde lyinge in a certeyne ſtore houſe thirtie or fortie kyntals of pepper (euery kyntall beinge an hundreth weyght), wyllynge them to looke vppon the ſame, and ageyne to brynge hym a ſyght of ſuche marchaundies as they had browght with them. And thervppon ſent with the capitayne and the marchauntes certeyne of his men to conducte them to the waters ſyde, with other to brynge the ware from the pinneſſe to the courte. Who when they were returned and the wares ſeene, the kynge grewe to this ende with the marchauntes, to prouyde in thirtie dayes the ladynge of all theyr ſhyppes with pepper. And in caſe theyr marchaundies wolde not extende to the value of ſo muche pepper, he promyſed to credite them to theyr nexte returne: and therevppon ſente the countrey rounde abowt

to gather pepper, cauſynge the ſame to be browght to the courte: So that within the ſpace of. xxx. [thirty] days they had gathered foure ſcore toonne of pepper.

In the meane ſeaſon owre men partly hauynge no rule of them ſelues, but eatyng withowt meaſure of the frutes of the countrey, and drynkyng the wyne of the palme trees that droppeth in the nyght from the cutte branches of the ſame, and in ſuch extreeme heate runnynge continually into the water, not vſed before to ſuch ſuddeyne and vehement alterations (then the which nothynge is more daungerous) were therby browght into ſwellynges and agues. In ſo much that the later tyme of the yeare commyng on, cauſed them to dye ſumtymes. iii. [three] and ſumtymes. iiii. [four] or. v. [five] in a day. Then Wyndam perceauyng the tyme of the. xxx. [thirty] dayes to be expyred, and his men dying ſo faſt, ſente to the courte in poſte to capitayne Pinteado and the reſt to come away and to tary no longer. But Pinteado with the reſt, wrote backe to hym ageyne, certifynge hym of the greate quantitie of pepper they had alredy gathered and loked dayly for much more: Deſyrynge furthermore to remember the great prayſe and name they ſhulde wynne if they came home proſperouſly, and what ſhame of the contrary. With which anſwere Wyndam not ſatiffied, and many of theyr men dyinge dayly, wylled and commaunded them ageine eyther to coomme away furthwith, or els thretened to leaue them behynde. When Pinteado harde this anſwere, thynkynge to perſuade hym with reaſon, tooke his way from the court towarde the ſhyppes beinge conducted thyther with men by the kynges commaundement.

The disorder and death of owre men.

In the meane ſeaſon Windam all rageinge, brake vppe Pinteados Caben, broke open his cheſtes, ſpoyled ſuche prouiſyon of coulde ſtilled waters and ſuckettes as he hade prouided for his health, and lefte hym nothynge neyther of his inſtrumentes to ſayle by, nor yet of his apparell. And in the meane tyme faulinge ſycke hym ſelfe, dyed alſo. Whoſe death Pinteado comming aborde, lamented as muche as if he had byn the dereſt frend he had in the worlde. But certeyne of the maryners and other officers dyd ſpette in his face, ſum caulynge hym Iewe, ſaying that he had browght them thether to kylle them: And ſum drawynge theyr ſwordes at hym makynge A ſhewe to ſley hym. Then he perceauinge that they wolde nedes away, deſyred them to tary that he might fetch the reſte of the marchauntes that were lefte at the court. But they wolde not graunte his requeſt. Then deſyred he them to gyue hym the ſhippe boate with as muche of an owlde ſayle as myght ſerue for the ſame, promiſynge them therewith to bringe Nicolas Lamberte and the reſt into England: But all was in vayne. Then wrotte he a letter to the courte to the marchauntes informynge them of all the matter, and promyſynge them if god wolde lende hym life to returne with al haſt[e] to fetche them. And thus was Pinteado kepte a bordeſhippe ageynſte his wyll, thruſt amonge the boyes of the ſhippe, not vſed like a man, nor yet like an honeſt boy: But glad to find fauoure at the cokes hande. Then departed they, leauing one of theyr ſhippes behynde them, whiche they ſoonke for lake of men to cary her. After this within ſixe or ſeuen days ſaylinge, dyed alſo Pinteado for very penſiueneſſe and thowght that ſtrooke hym to the harte: A man worthy to ſerue any prince and moſt vilely vſed. And of ſeuen ſcore men came home to Plymmuowth ſcarſely fortye, and of them many dyed. And that no man ſhulde ſuſpecte theſe wordes which I haue ſayd in commendation of Pinteado, to be ſpoken vpon fauour otherwyſe then truth, I haue thought good to adde herevnto the coppie of the letters which the kyng of Portugale and the infant his brother wrote vnto hym to reconcyle hym at ſuche tyme as vppon the kynge his maſters diſpleaſure (and not for any other cryme or offence as may appere by the ſayde letters) he was onely for pouertie inforced to coomme into Englande where he fyrſt perſuaded owre marchauntes to attempte the ſayde vyages to Guinea. But as the kynge of Portugale to late repented hym that he had ſo punyſſhed Pinteado vppon malicious informations of ſuch as enuied the mans good fortune, euen ſo may it hereby appere, that in ſum caſes, euen Lyons them ſelues, may eyther bee hyndered by the contempt or ayded by the helpe of the pore myſe accordynge vnto the fable of Eſope.

The furie of Wyndam.

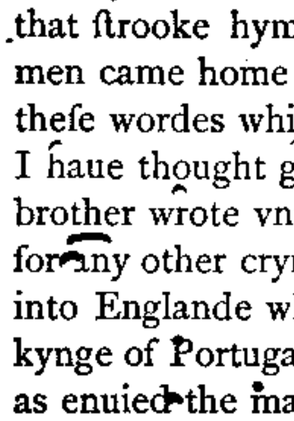
The death of Wyndam.

Pinteado euil vsed of the maryners.

348

The death of Pinteado.

¶ *The coppie of Antonianes Pinteado his letters patentes wherby the kynge of Portugale made hym knyght of his houſe after all his troubles and impriſonment, which by wronge information made to the kynge, he had ſuſteyned of longe tyme, beinge at the laſte deli[u]ered, his cauſe knowen and manifeſted to the kynge by a grey fryer the kynges confeſſoure.*



The kynge do gyue yow to vnderſtande lorde Francis Deſſeoſa one of my counſayle and ouerſeer of my houſe, that in conſideration of the good ſeruice which Antonie Anes Pinteado, the ſonne of Iohn Anes, dwellynge in the towne cauled the porte, hath doone vnto me, my wyll and pleaſure is, to make hym knyght of my houſe, alowynge to hym in penſion ſeuen hundreth reys monethly, and euery daye one alcayr of barly as longe as he kepeth a horſe, and to bee payde accordynge to the ordinaunce of my houſe. Prouydynge alwayes that he ſhal receaue but one mariage gyfte: And this alſo in ſuch condition that the tyme which is excepted in owre

Seuen hundreth reys are. x. s. [ten shillings].

Alcayr, is halfe a bushel.

ordinaunce forbyddynge ſuch men to mary for gettynge ſuch chyldren as myght ſucceade them in this alowance, which is ſyxe yeares after the makynge of this patente, ſhalbe fyrſte expired before he do mary. I therfore commaunde yowe to cauſe this to bee entered in the booke cauled the Matricola of owre houſholde vnder the tytle of knyghtes. And when it is ſo entered, let the clerke of the Matricola for the certentie therof, wryte on the backe ſyde of this Aluala or patente, the number of the leafe wherein this owre graunt is entered. Which doone, let hym returne this wrytynge vnto the ſayd Antonie Anes Pinteado for his warrant.

I Diego Henriques haue wrytten this in Almarin the xxii. [twenty-ſecond] day of September, in the yeare of owre lorde. 1551. And this beneuolence the kynge gaue vnto Antonie Anes Pinteado the. xxv. [twenty-fifth] day of Iuly this preſent yeare.

Rey.

349 ¶ *The ſecretaries declaration wrytten vnder the kynges graunt.*

YOwre maieſtie hath vouchſafed in reſpect and conſyderation of the good ſeruice of Antonie Anes Pinteado dwellynge in the porte, and ſoonne of Iohn Anes to make hym knyght of yowre houſe with ordinarie alowance of ſeuen hundreth reys penſion byt he moneth and one Alcayr of barley by the day as longe as he keepeth a horſe: And to bee payde accordyng to the ordinaunce of yowr houſe with condition that he ſhall haue but one mariage gyfte: And that not within the ſpace of. vi. [ſix] yeares after the makynge of theſe letters patentes.

The ſecretaries note. Entered in the booke of the Matricola. Fol. 683.

Franciſco de Siquera.

¶ *The coppie of the letter of Don Lewes th[e]infant and brother to the kynge of Portugale: ſent into Englande to Antonianes Pinteado.*

ANtonie Anes Pinteado, I the infant brother to the kynge, haue me hartely commended vnto yow. Peter Gonſalues is gone to ſeeke yow, deſyrynge to brynge yowe home ageyne into yowr countrey. And for that purpoſe, hath with hym a ſafe conduct for yow, graunted by the kynge, that thereby yowe may freely and withowt all feare come home. And although the wether be foule and ſtormy, yet fayle not to come. For in the tyme that his maieſtie hath gyuen yow, yow maye doo many thynges to yowre contentacion and gratifying the kynge, wherof I wolde bee ryght gladde: and to brynge the ſame to paſſe wyll doo all that lyeth in me for yowre profyte. But foraſmuch as Peter Gonſalues wyll make further declaration hereof vnto yow, I ſay no more at this preſent. Wryſten in Luxburne the. viii. [eighth] day of December. Anno. M. D. LII.

¶ *The Infant don Lew[e]s.*

ALl theſe forſayd wrytynges I ſawe vnder ſe[a]le in the houſe of my frende Nicolas Lyeſe with whom Pinteado left them at his vnfortunate departynge to Guinea. But notwithſtanding all theſe frendly letters and fayre promyſes, Pinteado durſte not attempte to go home, neyther to keepe company with the Portugales his countrey men withowt the preſence of other, foraſmuch as he had ſecreate admonition that they intended to ſley hym, if tyme and place myght haue ſerued theyr wycked intent.

☞ THE SECONDE VYAGE TO GVINEA.

AS in the fyrſt vyage I haue declared rather the order of the hyſtory then the courſe of the nauigation, whereof at that tyme I coulde haue no perfecte information, ſo in the diſcription of this ſeconde vyage my chiefe intent hath byn to ſhew the courſe of the ſame accordynge to the obſeruation and ordinarie cuſtome of the maryners, and as I receaued it at the handes of an experte pylot beinge one of the chiefe in this viage, who alſo with his owne handes wrote a briefe declaration of the ſame as he founde and tryed all thynges not by coniecture, but by the arte of ſaylynge and inſtrumentes perteynynge to the mariners facultie. Not therfore aſſuminge to my ſelfe the commendations dewe to other, neyther ſo boulde as in anye parte to chaunge or otherwiſe diſpoſe the order of this vyage ſo wel obſerued by arte and experience, I haue thowght good to ſet furth the ſame in ſuch ſorte and phraſe of ſpeache as is commonly vſed amonge them, and as I receaued it of the ſaid pylot as I haue ſayde. Take it therfore as foloweth.

In the yeare of owre lorde. M. D. LIIII. the. xi. [eleuenth] day of October, wee departed the ryuer of Temmes with three goodly ſhyppes, th[e]one cauled the Trinitie, a ſhyppe of the burden of ſeuen ſcore toonne: Th[e]other cauled the Barthelmewe a ſhyppe of the burden of. lxxxx. [ninety tons]. The thyrde was the Iohn Euangeliſt a ſhyppe of ſeuen ſcore toonne. With the ſayde ſhyppes and two pynneſſes (wherof the one was drowned in the coaſt of Englande) we went forward on owr vyage, and ſteyde at Douer. xiiii. [fourteen] dayes. We ſteyde alſo at Rye three or foure dayes. More ouer laſt of all we touched at Darthmouth. 350

The fyrſt day of Nouember at. ix. [nine] of the clocke at nyght departynge from the coaſte of Englande, we ſette of the ſtert bearynge ſouthweſt all that nyght in the ſea, and the nexte day all day, and the next nyght after vntyll the thyrde daye of the ſayde mooneth abowt noone, makynge owr way good, dyd runne. 60. leaques.

Item from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the thyrde daye tyll. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. iiii. [fourth] day of the ſayde mooneth, makynge owr way good ſoutheaſt, dyd runne euery three houres twoo leaques, which amounteth to. xvi. [ſixteen] leaques the hole.

Item from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. iiii. [fourth] day to. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. v. [fifth] day, runnynge ſouthweſt in the ſea, dydde runne. xii. [twelve] leaques.

Item runnynge from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. v. [fifth] day vntyll. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. vi. [ſixth] day runnyng ſoutheaſt, dyd runne. xviii. [eighteen] leaques.

And ſo from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the vi. [ſixth] daye vntyll. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. vii. [ſeventh] day, runnynge ſouthſouthweſt, dyd runne euery houre. ii. [two] leaques which amount to. xlviii. [forty-eight] leaques the hole.

Item from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. vii. [ſeventh] day tyl. iii. [three] of the clocke the. viii. [eighth] day, ſouthſouthweſt, runnyng in the ſea, dyd runne. xxx. [thirty] leaques.

Item from three of the clocke the. viii. [eighth] day, vntyll. iii. of the clocke the. ix. [ninth] day, runnyng ſouthſouthweſt, dyd runne. xxx. [thirty] leaques.

Item from. iii. [three] of the clocke the. ix. [ninth] day tyll. iii. [three] of the clocke the. x. [tenth] day, dyd ſouthſoutheaſt in runnynge in the ſea the ſum of. xxiiii. [twenty-four] leaques.

Alſo from. iii. [three] of the clocke the. x. [tenth] day vntyl. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. xi. [eleventh] day,

dyd run ſouthſouthweſt the ſum of. xii. [twelve] leaques, and from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke tyll. vi. [ſix] of the ſayde day, dyd run. vi. [ſix] leaques.

Runnynge ſouth and by weſt in the ſea from. vi. [ſix] of the clocke the. xi. [eleuenth] day tyll. vi. [ſix] of the clocke the. xii. [twelfth] day, dyd run. xxxvi. [thirty-ſix] leaques.

From. vi. [ſix] of the clocke at after none the. xii. [twelfth] daye tyll. vi. [ſix] of the clocke the xiii. [thirteenth] day at after none, dyd runne. xiii. [thirteen] leaques.

Item from. vi. [ſix] of the clocke the. xiii. [thirteenth] day, tyl. vi. [ſix] of the clocke the. xiiii. [fourteenth] day at after none that we were becalmed that wee coulde lye ſouthweſt with a ſayle. And the. xv. [fifteenth] daye in the mornynge, the wynde came to the Eaſt and eaſte northeaſt. The. xvii. [ſeventeenth] day in the mornynge, we had ſyght of the Ile of Madera which doth ryſe to hym that commeth in the north northeaſt parte vpryght lande in the weſt part of it, and very hyghe: and to the ſouth ſoutheaſte a lowe longe lande and a longe poynt with a ſaddle throwgh the myddeſte of it, ſtandeth in the xxxii. [thirty-two] degrees: and in the weſte parte, many ſpringes of water runnynge downe from the mountayne, and many whyte fyeldes lyke vnto corne fieldes, and ſum whyte houſes to the ſoutheaſt parte of it: and the toppe of the mountayne ſheweth very ragged if yow may ſe it, and in the northeaſt parte there is a byght or bay as thowgh it were a harborowe. Alſo in the ſayde part, there is a rocke a lyttle diſtance from the ſhore: and ouer the ſayde byght, yow ſhall ſe a great gappe in the mountayne.

The Ile of Madera.

The. xix. [nineteenth] day at. xii. [twelve] of the clocke, we had ſyght of the Ile of Palmes and Teneriffa and the Canaries. The Ile of Palme ryſeth rounde and lyeth ſoutheaſte and northweſte, and the northweſt parte is loweſt. In the ſouth, is a rounde hyll ouer the hedde lande, and an other rounde hyll aboue that in the lande.

The Ile of palmes. Teneriffa. The Canaries.

There is betwene the ſoutheaſt parte of the Ile of Madera and the northweſt parte of the Ile of Palme. lvii. [fifty-ſeven] leaques. This Ile of Palme lyeth in the. xxix. [twenty-nine] degrees. And owre courſe from Madera to the Ile of Palme was ſouth and ſouth and by weſt, ſo that we had ſyght of Teneriffa and of the Canaries. The ſoutheaſt parte of the Ile of Palme, and the north northeaſt of Teneriffa, lyeth ſoutheaſt and northweſte. And betwene them is. xx. [twenty] leaques. Teneriffa and the greate Canarie cauled Grancanaria, and the weſt part of Fortiſuentura ſtandeth in. xxvii. [twenty-ſeven] degrees and a halfe. Gomera is a fayre Ilande and very ragged and lyeth weſt ſouthweſt of Teneriffa. And who ſo euer wyll come betwene theym twoo Ilandes, muſt come ſouth and by eaſt, and in the ſouth parte of Gomera, is a towne and a good rode in the ſayde parte of the Ilande: and it ſtandeth in. xxvii. [twenty-ſeven] degrees and three terces. Teneriffa is a hygh lande and a greate hyghe picke lyke a ſuger lofe. And vppon the ſayde picke is ſnowe throughowt all the hole yeare. And by reaſon of that picke, it maye bee knowen aboue all other Ilandes, and there we were becalmed the. xx [twentieth] day of Nouember from. vi. [ſix] of the clocke in the mornynge vntyll foure of the clocke at after none.

Frome madera to the Ile of Palmes.

Grancanaria. Fortes Ventura. The Iland of Gomera.

351

Teneriffa. Snowe.

¶ *Betwene Gomera and Capo de las Barbas.*

THe. xxii. [twenty-ſecond] day of Nouember vnder the Tropike of Cancer, the ſoonne goeth downe weſt and by ſouth.

The coaſt of Barberye. Cape blanke.

Vpon the coaſt of Barberie. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques by north cape blanke at. iii. [three] leaques of the mayne, there is. xv. [fifteen] fadome and good ſhelly grounde and ſande amonge, and no ſtremes, and two ſmaule Ilandes ſtandyng in the. xxii. [twenty-two] degrees and a terce.

From Gomera to cape de las Barbas is a hundreth leaques and owr courſe was ſouth and by eaſt. The ſayde cape ſtandeth in. xxii. [twenty-two] and a halfe: and all that coaſt is flatte. xvi. [ſixteen] or. xvii. [ſeventeen] fadome deepe, vii. [ſeven] or. viii. [eight] leaques of frome the ryuer de Oro to cape de las Barbas, there vſe many Spanyardes and Portugales to trade for fyſſhynge durynge the mooneth of Nouember: and all that coaſt is verye lowe landes. Alſo wee went from cape de las Barbas ſouthſouthweſt and ſouthweſt and by ſouth: tyll we brought owre ſelues in. xx. [twenty] degrees and a halfe, rekenynge owr ſelues vii. [ſeven] leaques of: and that was the leaſt ſholes of cape Blanke.

The ryuer of de Oro.

Then we went ſouth vntyll we browght owre ſelues in. xiii. [thirteen] degrees, rekenynge owre ſelues. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques of. And in. xv. [fifteen] degrees, we dyde reere the croſſiers: and we myght haue rered them ſooner if we had loked for theym. They are not ryghte a croſſe in the moonethe of Nouember by reaſon the nyghtes are ſhorte there. Neuertheleſſe we had the ſyght of them the. xxix. [twenty-ninth] day of the ſayde mooneth at nyght.

The crosiers or crosse starres.

The fyrſt of December owte. xiii. [thirteen] degrees, we ſette owre courſe ſouth and by Eaſt vntyll the fourth daye of December at. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the ſame day. Then we were in. ix. [nine] degrees and a terce, rekenynge owr ſelues. xxx. [thirty] leaques of the ſholes of the ryuer cauled Rio Grande beinge weſt ſouthweſte of them: The which ſholes be. xxx. [thirty] leaques longe.

Rio Grande

The fourth of December, we beganne to ſette owr courſe ſoutheaſte, we beinge in. vi. [ſix] degrees and a halfe.

The ninth day of December we ſet owr courſe eaſt ſoutheaſt.

The. xiiii. [fourteenth] day of the ſayde mooneth, we ſette owre courſe eaſt, we beinge in. v. [five] degrees and a halfe, rekenynge owre ſelues. xxxvi. [thirty-ſix] leaques from the coaſt of Guinea.

The xix. [nineteenth] day of the ſayde mooneth, we ſette owre courſe eaſt and by north, rekenynge owr ſelues. xvii. [ſeventeen] leaques diſtant from cape Menſurado, the ſayde cape beinge eaſt northeaſt of vs, and the ryuer of Seſto beinge eaſt. Cape Mensurado. The riuer of Sesto.

The. xxi. [twenty-firſt] day of the ſayde mooneth we ſel with cape Me[n]ſurado to the ſoutheaſt abowt two leaques of. This cape may be eaſely knowen, by reaſon the ryſynge of it is lyke a porpoſe hedde. Alſo towarde the ſoutheaſt there are three trees, wherof the eaſtermoſt tree is the hygheſt, and the myddlemoſt is lyke a heye ſtacke, and the ſouthermoſt lyke vnto a iebet: and vppon the mayne, are foure or fyue hygh hylles ryſynge one after an other lyke round hoommockes or hyllockes. And the ſoutheaſt of the three trees, is thre trees lyke a brandierwyſe: and all the coaſte alonge is whyte ſande. The ſayde cape ſtandeth within a lyttle in. vi. [ſix] degrees.

The. xxii. [twenty-ſecond] of December, we came to the ryuer of Seſto, and remayned there vntyll the. xxix. [twenty-ninth] day of the ſayde moneth Here we thought it beſt to ſende before vs the pynneſſe to the ryuer of Dulce cauled Rio Dulce, that they myght haue the begynnynge of the market before the commynge of the Iohn.

At the ryuer of Seſto, we had a toonne of graynes. This ryuer ſtandeth in. vi. [six] degrees lackynge a terce. From the ryuer of Seſto to Rio Dulce, is. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques. Rio Dulce ſtandeth in. v. [five] degrees and a haife. The ryuer of Seſto is eaſy to bee knowen by reaſon there is a ledge of rockes on the ſoutheaſt parte of the rode. And at the enterynge into the hauen, are fyue or fyxe trees that beare no leaues. This is a good harborowe: but very narrowe at the enteraunce into the ryuer. There is alſo a rocke in the hauen mouth right as yow enter. And all that coaſt betwene cape de Monte and cape de las Palmas, lyeth ſoutheaſt and by eaſt, northweſt and by weſte, beinge three leaques of the ſhore. And yow ſhall haue in ſum places rockes two leaques of: and that betwene the ryuer of Seſto and cape de las Palmas. The riuer of Sesto. Rio Dulce. Cape de Monte. Cape de las Palmas.

Betwene the ryuer of Seſto and the riuer Dulce, is. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques. And the hygh lande that is betwene them bothe, is cauled Cakeado, beinge. viii. [eight] leaques from the ryuer of Seſto. And to the ſoutheaſtwarde of hym, is a place cauled Shawgro and an other cauled Shyawe or Shauo, where yow may get freſſhe water. Of this Shyawe, lyeth a ledge of rockes: and to the Southeaſtwarde, lyeth a hed lande cauled Croke. Betwene Cakeado and Croke, is. ix. [nine] or. x. [ten] leaques. To the Southeaſtwarde of, is a harborowe cauled ſaynte Vincent. Ryght ouer ageynſt ſaynt Vincent, is a rocke vnder the water, two leaques and a halfe of the ſhore. To the ſoutheaſtwarde of that rocke, yow ſhall ſee an Ilande abowt three or foure leaques of. This Ilande is not paſte a leaque of the ſhore. To the eaſt ſoutheaſt of the Ilande, is a rocke that lyeth aboue the water: and by that rocke goeth in the ryuer of Dulce, which yow ſhall knowe by the ſayde ryuer and rocke. The northweſt ſyde of the hauen, is flat ſande: and the ſoutheaſt ſyde therof, is lyke an Ilande and a bare plotte without any trees, and ſo is it not in any other place. 352 The lande of Cakeado. Shauo. Croke. Saint Vincentes harboroue. The riuer Dulce.

In the rode, yow ſhall ryde in. xiii. [thirteen] or. xiiii. [fourteen] fadomes, good owes and ſande, beinge the markes of the rode to bring the Ilande and the northweſt lande togyther. And here wee ankered the laſt of December.

The thyrde day of Ianuary, we came from the ryuer of Dulce.

Note that cape de las Palmas is a fayre high land. But ſumme lowe places therof by the water ſyde, looke like redde cliffes with white ſtrakes like wayes a cable length a piece. And this is to the Eaſt parte of the cape. This cape is the ſouthermoſt lande in all the coaſt of Guinea: And ſtandeth in foure degrees and a terce. Cape de las Palmas. The coast of Guinea.

The coaſt from cape de las Palmas to cape Trepoyntes or de tres Puntas, is fayre and cleare without rocke or other daungiour. Cape de tres puntas.

xxv. [twenty-five] leaques from cape de las Palmas, the lande is higher then in any place vntyll we came to cape Trepoyntes. And abowt. x. [ten] leaques before yow comme to cape Trepointes, the lande ryſeth ſtyll hygher and hygher vntyll yow come to cape Trepoyntes. Alſo before yowe coomme to the ſayde cape after other fiue leaques to the northweſt parte of it, there is certeyne broken grounds with twoo greate rockes: and within them in the byght of a bay, is a caſtel cauled Arra, perteyning to the kynge of Portugale. Yow ſhall knowe it by the ſayde rockes that lye of it: For there is noſie ſuch from cape de las Palmas to cape Trepoyntes. This coaſte lyeth eaſte and by north, weſt and by ſouth. From cape de las Palmas to the ſayde caſtell, is foure ſcore and. xv. [fifteen] leaques. And the coaſte lyeth from the ſayde caſtell to the Weſtermoſt poynte of the Trepoyntes, ſoutheaſt and by ſouth, northweſt and by north. Alſo the Weſtermoſt poyntes of the Trepointes, is a lowe lande lyinge halfe a myle owt in the ſea: and vppon the innermoſte necke to the landewarde, is a tufte of trees, and there we arryued the. xi. [eleventh] day of Ianuary. The castell of Arra.

The. xii [twelfth] day of Ianuary, we came to a towne cauled Samma or Samua, beinge. viii. [eight] leaques The towne of Samma.

The ple[d]ge was sir Iohn Yorke his nevie.

from cape Trepoyntes toward eaſt northeaſt. Betwene cape Trepointes and the towne of Samua, is a great ledge of rockes a great way owt in the ſea. Wee continued foure dayes at that towne: and the capitayne therof wolde needes haue a pledge a ſhore. But when they receaued the pledge, they kepte hym ſtyl and wolde traffike no more, but ſhot of theyr ordinaunce at vs. They haue two or three pieces of ordinaunce and no more.

Cape Corea.

The caſtel of mina perteyninge to the kynge of Portugale.

The. xvi. [ſixteenth] day of the ſayde mooneth, we made rekenynge to come to a place cauled cape Corea where capitayne Don Iohn dwelleth, whoſe men interteyned vs frendly. This cape Corea is foure leaques eaſtwarde of the caſtell of Mina, otherwyſe cauled *La Mina*, or *Caſtello de Mina*, where we arriued the. xviii. [eighteenth] day of the mooneth. Here we made ſale of al owr cloth ſauynge two or three packes.

The. xxvi. [twenty-ſixth] day of the ſame mooneth, we weyd anker and departed from thenſe to the Trinitie which was. vii. [ſeven] leaques eaſtwarde of vs where ſhe ſolde her wares. Then they of the Trinitie wylled vs to go eaſtwarde of that. viii. [eight] or. ix. [nine] leaques to ſel part of their wares in a place caled Perecow, and an other named Perecowe grande, beinge the eaſtermoſt place of both theſe, which yow ſhal knowe by a great rounde hyl-nere vnto it named Monte Rodondo lynge weſtwarde from it. And by the water ſyde are many hyghe palme trees. From henſe dyd we ſet furth homewarde the. xiii. [thirteenth] day of February and plyed vppe alongeſt tyll we came within. vii. [ſeven] or. viii. [eight] leaques to cape Trepointes. Abowt. viii. [eight] of the clocke the. xv. [fifteenth] day at after noone, we dyd caſt abowt to ſeawarde. And beware of the currantes, for they wyll deceaue yow ſore.

Perecowe.
Perecowe grande.
Monte Rodondo.

353

The currants

Who ſo euer ſhall coomme from the coaſt of Mina homewarde, let hym be ſuer to make his way good weſt vntyll he reken hym ſelfe as farre as cape de las Palmas where the currant ſetteth alwayes to the eaſtwarde. And within. xx. [twenty] leaques eaſtwarde of cape de las Palmas, is a ryuer cauled Rio de los Potos where yow may haue freſſhe water and balaſſe enowgh, and plentie of Iuery or Elephantes teethe. This ryuer ſtandeth in foure degrees and almoſt two terces.

Frome mina homewarde.

Rio de los Potos.

Iverye.

And when yow reken yowre ſelfe as farre ſhotte as cape de las Palmas, beinge in a degree or a degree and a halfe, yow may go weſt or weſt and by north vntyll yowe comme in three degrees: and then yowe maye go weſte northweſt, and northweſt and by weſt vntyll yow comme in fiue degrees and then northweſt. And in the. vi. [ſix] degrees, wee mette northerly wyndes and greate rooſtynge of tydes. And as wee coulde iudge, the currantes went to the north northweſt. Furthermore betwene cape de Monte and cape Verde, go great currantes which deceaue many men.

Cape de las Palmas.

Currantes.

The. xxii. [twenty-ſecond] daye of Apryll, wee were in. viii. [eight] degrees and two terces: and ſo we ranne to the northweſt, hauynge the wynde at northeaſt and eaſtnortheaſt, and ſumtymes at eaſte untyll we were at. xviii. [eighteen] degrees and a terce, which was on May day. And ſo from. xviii. [eighteen] and two terces, we hadde the wynde at eaſt and eaſt northeaſt, and ſumtymes at eaſt ſoutheaſt: and then wee rekoned the Ilandes of cape Verde eaſte ſoutheaſt of vs, wee iudgynge owre ſelues to be. xlviii. [forty-eight] leaques of. And in. xx. [twenty] and. xxi. [twenty-one] degrees, wee had the wynde more eaſterly to the ſouthwarde then before. And ſo we ran to the northweſt and northnorthweſt, and ſumetymes north and by weſt and north vntyll wee came into. xxxi. [thirty-one] degrees, where we rekened owre ſelues a hundreth and foure ſcore leaques ſouthweſt and by ſouth of the Ilande de Flore or de los Flores. And there we met with the wynde at ſouthſoutheaſt, and ſet owre courſe northeaſt.

The Ile de Flore.

In. xxxiii. [thirty-three] degrees, we had the wynde at the ſouth and ſouthweſt: and then we ſet owr courſe north northeaſt, and ſo we ranne to xl. [forty] degrees: and then we ſet our courſe northeaſt the wynde beinge at the ſouthweſt and hauynge the Ile de Flore eaſt of vs, and. xvii. [seventeen] leaques of.

In. xli. [forty-one] degrees, we met with the wynd at northeaſt, and ſo we ranne northweſtwarde. Then we met with the wynde at the weſt northweſt and at the weſt within. vi. [ſix] leaques runnynge towarde the northweſt: And then wee caſt abowt and ley northeaſt vntyll we came in. xlii. [forty-two] degrees, where we ſette owr courſe eaſt northeaſt, iudgynge the Ile of Coruo ſouth and by weſt of vs and. xxxvi. [thirty-ſix] leaques diſtant from vs.

The Ile of Corvo.

A rememberaunce that the. xxi. [twenty-firſt] day of Maye, we commened with Iohn Raſe, and he thought it beſt to go northeaſte, and iudged hym ſelfe. xxv. [twenty-fiue] leaques eaſtwarde to the Ile de Flore, and in. xxxix. [thirty-nine] degrees and a halfe.

Whete they lost the sight of the northe starre.

Note that in the fourth day of Septembe[r] [December?] vnder nine degrees, we loſt the ſyght of the north ſtarre.

Howe the compasse dooth varie.

Note alſo, that in the. xlv. [forty-five] degrees the compaſſe is varyed. viii. [eight] degrees to the weſt.

Item, in. xl. [forty] degrees, the compaſſe dyd vary. xv. [fifteen] degrees in the hole.

Item, in xxx. [thirty] degrees and a halfe, the compaſſe is varyed. v. [fiue] degrees to the weſt.

Be it alſo in memorie, that two or three dayes before we came to cape Trepointes, the pynneſſe went alongeſt the ſhore thinkynge to ſell ſum of owr wares. And ſo we came to anker three or foure leaques weſt and by ſouth of the cape Trepoyntes where we lefte the Trinitie.

The prymrose.

Then owre pynneſſe came a boorde with all owr men. The pynneſſe alſo tooke in more wares. They toulde me more ouer that they wolde go to a place where the Primroſe was and had receaued much golde at

the fyrſte vyage to theſe parties. And tolde me furthermore that it was a good place. But I fearynge a brigantine that was then vppon the coaſt, dydde wey and folowe theym, and lefte the Trinitie abowte foure leaques of from vs. And there we rode ageynſte that towne foure dayes: ſo that Martine by his owne deſyre and aſſente of ſum of the commiſſioners that were in the pinneſſe, wente a ſhore to the towne. And there Iohn Beryn went to trafike from vs beinge three myles of trafekynge at an other towne. The towne is cauled Samma or Samua. For Samma and Sammaterra, are the names of the two fyrſte townes where wee did trafficke for gold, to the northeaſt of cape Trepoints:

The towne of Samma.

354

Golde.

Hetherto continueth the courſe of the vyage as it was deſcribed by the ſayde pylot. Nowe therfore to ſpeake ſumwhat of the contrey and people, and of ſuche thynges as are browght from thenſe.

They browght from thenſe at the laſt vyage, foure hundreth pounde weyght and odde of golde of. xxii. [twenty-two] carrattes and one grayne in fineneſſe. Alſo. xxxvi. [thirty-ſix] buttes of graynes: and abowt two hundreth and fiftie elephantes teethe of all quantities. Of theſe, I ſawe and meaſured ſum of. ix. [nine] ſpannes in length as they were croked Sum of them were as bygge as a mans thygh aboue the knee: and weyed abowte foure ſcore and ten pounde weyght a piece. They ſay that ſum one hath byn ſeene of a hundreth and. xxv. [twenty-five] pounde weyght. Other there were which they caule the teeth of calues of one or two or three yeares, wherof ſum were a foote and a halfe, ſumme two foote, and ſum three or more accordynge to th[e]age of the beaſte. Theſe great teeth or tuſkes, growe in the vpper iaw downewarde, and not in the nether iawe vpwarde, wherein the paynters and arras woorkers are deceaued. At this laſte vyage was browght from Guinea the headde of an elephante of ſuch huge byggeneſſe, that only the bones or crauewe therof beſyde the nether iawe and greate tuſkes, wayed abowte two hundreth weyght, and was as muche as I coulde well lyfte from the grounde. In ſo muche that conſiderynge alſo herewith the weyght of. ii. [two] ſuch great teeth, the nether iawes with the leſſe teethe, the tounge, the greate hangynge eares, the bygge and longe ſnowte or troonke, with all the fleſſhe, braynes, and ſkynne, with all other partes belongynge to the hole headde, in my iudgemente it coulde wey lyttle leſſe then fyue hundreth weyght. This headde dyuers haue ſene in the houſe of the woorthy marchaunt ſyr Andrewe Iudde, where alſo I ſawe it, and behelde it not onely with my bodely eyes, but much more with the eyes of my mynde and ſpirite conſydered by the woorke, the cunnynge and wyſedome of the woorke maſter: withowt which conſyderation, the ſyght of ſuch ſtraunge and woonderfull thynges may rather ſeeme curioſities then profitable contemplations.

Golde foure hundreth weyght
Graynes.
Iuery.
Elephantes teethe.

The head of an Elephant.

The contemplations of gods workes

The elephante (which ſum caule an oliphant) is the biggeſt of all foure footed beaſtes. His forelegges are longer then his hynder. He hath ankles in the lower parte of his hynder legges, and fyue toes on his fiete vndiuided. His ſnowte or troonke is ſo longe and in ſuch forme that it is to hym in the ſteede of a hande. For he neyther eateth nor drinketh but by bryngynge his troonke to his mouth. Therwith he helpeth vp his maſter or keeper: therwith he ouerthroweth trees. Beſyde his two greate tuſkes, he hath on euery ſyde of his mouth foure teeth wherwith he eateth and gryndeth his meate. Eyther of theſe teeth, are almoſt a ſpan in length as they growe alonge in the iawe: and are abowte two inches in height and almoſt as much in thickeneſſe. The tuſkes of the male are greater then of the female. His tounge is verye lyttle, and ſo farre in his mouth that it can not bee ſeene. Of all beaſtes they are moſte gentyll and tractable. For by many ſundry ways they are taught and do vnderſtand: In ſo much that they learne to do due honour to a king, and are of quicke ſence and ſharpenes of wyt. When the male hath once ſeaſoned the female, he neuer after toucheth her. The male Elephante lyueth two hundreth yeares, or at the leaſte one hundreth and twentie. The female almoſt as longe: but the floure of theyr age, is but. lx. [ſixty] yeares as ſum wryte. They can not ſuffer wynter or coulde. They loue ryuers and wyll often go into them vp to the ſnowte wherwith they blowe and ſnuffe, and play in the water: but ſwymme they canne not for the weyght of theyr bodyes. Plinie and Soline wryte that they vſe none adulterie. If they happen to meete with a manne in wylderneſſe beinge owt of the way, gentylly they wyl go before hym and brynge hym into the playne waye. Ioyned in battayle, they haue no ſmaule reſpecte vnto them that be wounded. For they brynge thoſe that are hurt or wery into the middle of the army to be defended. They are made tame by drynkynge the iuſe of barley. They haue continuall warre ageynſt dragons which deſyre theyr bludde bycauſe it is very coulde. And therfore the dragon lyinge awayte as the Elephant paſſeth by, wyndeth his tayle (beinge of exceadynge length) abowt the hynder legges of the elephant: and ſo ſteying hym, thruſteth his heade into his tronke and exhauſteth his breth, or els byteth hym in the eare wherunto he can not reach with his troonke. And when the elephant waxeth faynt, he fauleth downe on the ſerpente beinge nowe full of bludde: and with the poyſe of his body breaketh hym: ſo that his owne bludde with the bludde of the elephant, runneth owt of hym mengeled togyther: whiche beinge coulde, is congeled into that ſubſtaunce which the apothecaries caule *Sanguis Draconis*, (that is) dragons blud, other-

The deſcription and properties of the Elephante.

Debate betwene the Elephant and the dragon.

355

Sanguis Draconis

Cinnabaris. wyſe cauled *Cinnabaris*, although there be an other kynde of *Cinnabaris*, commonly cauled cinoper or vermilion which the paynters vſe in certeyne coloures.

Thre kyndes of elephantes. They are alſo of three kyndes, as of the maryſſhes, the playnes, and the mountaynes, no leſſe differynge in condicions. Philoſtratus wryteth, that as much as the elephant of Lybia in byggeneſſe paſſeth the horſe of Nyſea, ſo much doth the elephantes of India excede them of Lybia. For of the elephantes of India, ſum haue byn ſeene of the heyght of. ix. [nine] cubites. The other do ſo greatly feare theſe that they dare not abyde the ſyght of them. Of the Indian elephantes, only the males haue tuſkes. But of them of Ethiopia and Lybia, both kyndes are tuſked. They are of dyuers heyghtes, as of. xii. [twelue] xiii. [thirteen] and. xiiii. [fourteen] dodrantes, euery dodrant beinge a meaſure of. ix. [nine] ynches. Sum wryte that an elephant is bygger then three wylde oxen or buffes. They of India are blacke or of the colour of a mouſe. But they of Ethiope or Guinea, are browne. The hyde or ſkynne of them all, is very harde and withowte heare or bryſtels. Theyr eares are two dodrantes brode, and theyr eyes very lyttle. Owr men ſawe one drynkyng at a ryuer in Guinea as they ſayled into the lande.

Of other properties and conditions of the elephant, as of theyr maruelous docilitie, of theyr feight and vſe in the warres, of theyr generation and chaſtitie, when they were fyrſte ſeene in the theatres and tryumphes of the Romans, howe they are taken and tamed, and when they caſt theyr tuſkes, with th[e]uſe of the ſame in medicine, who ſo deſyreth to know, let hym rede Plinie in the. viii. [eighth] booke of his natural hyſtorie. He

Workes of Iuery. alſo wryteth in his. xii. [twelfth] booke, that in owlde tyme they made many goodly woorkes of Iuery or elephantes teeth: as tables, treſſels, poſtes of houſes, rayles, latteſſes for wyndowes, Images of theyr goddes, and dyuers other thynges of Iuery both coloured and vncoloured and intermyxte with ſundry kyndes of precious wooddes, as at this day are made certeyne chayres, lutes, and virginalles.

They had ſuch plentie therof in owlde tyme, that (as farre as I remember) Ioſephus wryteth that one of the gates of Hieruſalem was cauled *Porta Eburnea*, (that is) the Iuery gate. The whyteneſſe thereof was ſo muche eſteemed that it was thought to repreſent the naturall fayreneſſe of mans ſkynne: In ſo much that ſuch as went abowt to ſet furth (or rather corrupte) naturall bewtie with colours and payntynge, were reproued by this prouerbe: *Ebur atramento candefacere.* That is: To make Iuery whyte with ynke. The poettes alſo deſcribynge the fayre neckes of bewtifull virgins, caule them *Eburnea colla*: That is: Iuery neckes.

And to haue ſayde thus much of elephantes and Iuery, it may ſuffice.

The people of Africa. Nowe therfore to ſpeke ſumwhat of the people and their maners and maner of lyuynge, with alſo an other briefe deſcription of Africa.

It is to vnderſtande that the people whiche nowe inhabite the regions of the coaſt of Guinea and the mydde partes of Affrica, as Lybia the inner, and Nubia with dyuers other great and large regions abowt the ſame, were in oulde tyme cauled Ethiopes and Nigrite, which we nowe caule Moores, Moorens, or Negros, a people of beaſtly lyuynge, without a god, lawe, religion, or common welth, and ſo ſcorched and vexed with the heate of the ſoonne, that in many places they curſe it when it ryſeth. Of the regions and people abowt the

Libia Interior. inner Libia (cauled *Libia Interior*) Gemma Phryſius wryteth thus.

Lybia Interior, is very large and deſolate, in the whiche are many horrible wylderneſſes and mountaynes repleniſſhed with dyuers kyndes of wylde and monſtrous beaſtes aud ſerpentes. Fyrſt from Mauritania or Barberie toward the ſouth is Getulia, a rowgh and ſaluage region whoſe inhabitantes are wylde and wanderynge

Getulia. people. After theſe folowe the people cauled Melanogetuli and Pharuſii whiche wander in the wylderneſſe caryinge with them greate gourdes of water. The Ethiopians cauled Nigrite, occupie a great parte of Aphrica,

Ethiopes. Nigrite. and are extended to the Weſt Ocean. Southwarde alſo they reache to the ryuer Nigritis whoſe nature agreeth

The ryuer Nigritis or Senega. with the ryuer of Nilus foraſmuch as it is increaſed and diminyſſhed at the ſame tyme, and bryngeth furth the like beaſtes as the Crocodile. By reaſon wherof, I thinke this to be the ſame ryuer which the Portugales caule Senega. For this ryuer is alſo of the ſame nature. It is furthermore maruelous and very ſtrange that is ſayde of this ryuer. And this is, that on the one ſyde therof, th[e]inhabitauntes are of hyghe ſtature and blacke: and on the other ſide of browne or tawny colour and lowe ſtature, which thynge alſo owre men confirme to be trewe.

356 A ſtrange thynge.

Garamantes. People of Lybia. There are alſo other people of Lybia cauled Garamantes, whoſe wemen are common. For they contracte no matrimonie, neyther haue reſpect to chaſtitie. After theſe are the nations of the people cauled Pyrei, Sathiodaphnite, Odrangi, Mimaces, Lynxamate, Dolopes, Agangiine, Leuce Ethiopes, Xilicei Ethiopes, Calcei Ethiopes, and Nubi. Theſe haue the ſame ſituation in Ptolomie that they nowe giue to the kyngdome of Nubia.

Prester Iohn. Here are certeyne Chriſtians vnder the dominion of the greate Emperoure of Ethiope cauled Preſter Iohn. From theſe towarde the weſt, is a great nation of people cauled Aphricerones: whoſe region (as farre as maye bee gathered by coniecture) is the ſame that is nowe cauled Regnum Orguene, confinynge vppon the eaſt partes

Regnum Orguen Gambra. of Guinea. From henſe weſtwarde and ſumwhat towarde the north, are the kyngedomes of Gambra and Budomel not farre from the ryuer of Senega. And from henſe towarde the inlande regions and alonge by the ſea coaſt,

are the regions of Ginoia or Guinea which wee commonly caule Gynne. On the weſt ſide of theſe regions towarde the Ocean, is the cape or poynt cauled *Cabouerde* or *Caput viride* (that is) the greene cape, to the whiche the Portugales fyrſt directe theyr courſe when they ſayle to America or the lande of Braſile. Then departynge frome hence, they turne to the ryght hande towarde the quarter of the wynde cauled Garbino which is betwene the weſt and the ſouth. But to ſpeake ſumwhat more of Ethiopia. Althowgh there are many nations of people ſo named, yet is Ethiopia chiefely diuyded into two partes: wherof the one is cauled Ethiopia vnder Egypte, a great and ryche region. To this perteyneth the Ilande of Meroe, imbraſed rounde abowte with the ſtremes of the ryuer Nilus. In this Ilande women reygned in oulde tyme. Ioſephus wryteth that it was ſumtyme cauled Saba: and that the queene of Saba came from thenſe to Hieruſalem to heare the wyſedome of Salomon. From henſe towarde the Eaſt, reigneth the ſayde Chriſtian Emperoure Preſter Iohn whom ſum caule Papa Iohannes, and other ſay that he is cauled Pean Iuan (that is) greate Iohn, whoſe empyre reacheth farre beyonde Nilus, and is extended to the coaſtes of the redde ſea and Indian ſea. The myddle of the region is almoſt in the. 66. degrees of longitude, and. xii. [twelue] degrees of latitude. Abowte this region inhabite the people cauled Clodii, Riſophagi, Babilonii, Axiunite, Moſyli, and Molybe. After theſe is the region cauled Troglodítica, whoſe inhabitauntes dwell in caues and dennes. For theſe are theyr houſes, and the fleſſhe of ſerpentes theyr meate, as wryteth Plinie and Diodorus Siculus. They haue no ſpeache, but rather a grynnynge and chatterynge. There are alſo people without heades cauled Blemines, hauynge theyr eyes and mouth in theyr breſte. Lykewyſe Strucophagi and naked Ganphaſantes. Satyrs alſo which haue nothynge of men but only ſhape. More ouer Oripei great hunters. Mennones alſo, and the region of Smyrnophora which bryngeth furth myrre. After theſe is the region of Azania in the whiche manye elephantes are founde. A great parte of the other regions of Afrike that are beyonde the Equinoctiall line, are nowe aſcrybed to the kingedome of Melinde, whoſe inhabitauntes are accuſtomed to traffike with the nations of Arabie, and theyr kynge is ioyned in frendſhip with the kyng of Portugale, and payeth tribute to Preſter Iohn.

Guinea or Ginoia.
Cap. Verde.
The Portugales nauigations to Brasile.
Ethiopia.
The Ilande of Meroe.
The queene of Saba.
Prester Iohn emperour of Ethiopia.
People of the east syde of Africa.
Ophiophagi.
People without heades.
Myrre.
Azania.
Regnum Melinde.

The other Ethiope cauled *Ethiopia Interior* (that is) the inner Ethiope, is not yet knowen for the greatneſſe therof but only by the ſea coaſtes. Yet is it deſcribed in this maner. Fyrſte from the Equinoctiall towarde the ſouth, is a greate region of Ethiopians which bryngeth furth whyte elephantes, tygers, and the beaſtes cauled Rhinocerontes. Alſo a region that bryngeth furth plentie of Cinamome, lyinge betwene the braunches of Nilus. Alſo the kingdome of Habech or Habaſſia, a region of Chriſtien men, lying both on this ſyde and beyonde Nilus. Here are alſo the Ethiopians cauled Ichthiophagi (that is) ſuch as lyue only by fiſſhe: and were ſumtime ſubdued by the warres of great Alexander. Furthermore the Ethiopians cauled Rhapſi, and Anthropophagi that are accuſtomed to eate mans fleſſhe, inhabite the regions nere vnto the mountaynes cauled *Montes Lunæ*, (that is) the mountaynes of the moone. Gazatia, is vnder the tropike of Capricorne. After this, foloweth the fronte of affrike, the cape of Buena Speranza or *Caput Bonæ Spei*, (that is) the cape of good hope, by the which they paſſe that ſayle from Spayne to Calicut. But by what names the capes and goulfes are cauled, foraſmuche as the ſame are in euery globe and carde, it were here ſuperfluous to rehearſe them.

Ethiopia Interior.
Whyte elephantes
Habassia.
Ichthiophagi
Anthropophagi.
Montes Luna.
Gazatia.
357
Cap. Bonæ Spei.

Sum wryte that Aphrica was ſo named by the Grecians bycauſe it is withowt coulde. For the Greeke lettre Alpha or, A, ſignifyeth pryuation, voyde, or withowt: and phrice, ſignifieth coulde. For in deede althowgh in the ſteede of wynter they haue a cloudye and tempeſtious ſeaſon, yet is it not coulde, but rather ſmoothering hot with alſo hot ſhoures of raine and ſumwhere ſuche ſcorchynge wyndes, that what by one meanes and other they ſeeme at certeyne tymes to liue as it were in fornaces, and in maner alredy halfe way in Purgatorie or hel. Gemma Phriſius writeth that in certeyne partes of Aphrica, (as in Atlas the greater) the ayer in the night ſeaſon is ſeene ſhyninge with many ſtraunge fyers and flames ryſinge in maner as high as the moone: And that in the element are ſumtime harde as it were the ſounde of pipes, trumpettes, and droommes. Whiche noyſes may perhappes be cauſed by the vehemente and ſundry motions of ſuch fyery exhalations in the ayer, as we ſe the lyke in many experiences wrought by fyre, ayer, and wynd. The holowneſſe alſo and diuers reflexions and breaking of the cloudes may be greate cauſes hereof, byſyde the vehement cold of the myddle region of the ayer wherby the ſayd fyery exhalations aſcending thether are ſuddenly ſtryken backe with greate force. For euen common and dayly experience teacheth vs by the whyſſinge of a burninge forge what noyſe fyer maketh in the ayer, and much more where it ſtriueth when it is incloſed with ayer as apereth in gonns, and as the lyke is ſene in only ayer incloſed, as in orgen pipes and ſuch other inſtrumentes that go by winde. For wynde as ſay the philoſophers is none other then ayer vehemently moued, as we ſee in a payer of belowes and ſuche other.

Aphrica withowt coulde.
The winter of Africa.
Flames of fire and noyse in the ayer.
The myddell region of the ayer is coulde.
The strife of elementes.
Wynde.

Sum of owre men of good credit that were in this laſt vyage to Guinea, affirme erneſtly that in the nyght ſeaſon they felt a ſenſible heate to coomme from the beames of the moone. The which thynge althowghe it be ſtraunge and inſenſible to vs that inhabite coulde regions, yet doothe it ſtande with good reaſon that it may ſo be, foraſmuch as the nature of the ſtarres and planets (as wryteth Plinie) conſyſteth of fyre, and conteyneth in it a ſpirite of lyfe, whiche can not be without heate.

The heate of the moone.
The nature of the stars.

And that the moone gyueth heate vpon the earth, the prophete Dauyd ſeemeth to confirme in his. Cxx.

[120th] Pſalme, where ſpeakynge of ſuch men as are defended from euyls by goddes protection, he ſayth thus: *Per diem ſol non exuret te, nec luna per noctem.* That is to ſay. In the day the ſoonne ſhall not burne the nor the moone by nyght.

Spoutes of water fauling out of the ayer.

They ſay furthermore that in certeyne places of the ſea, they ſawe certeyne ſtremes of water which they caule ſpoutes faulynge owt of the ayer into the ſea: And that ſum of theſe are as bygge as the greate pyllers of churches: In ſo muche that ſumtymes they faule into ſhyppes and put them in greate daungiour of drownynge. Sum phantaſie that theſe ſhulde bee the cat[a]ractes of heauen whiche were all opened at Noes fludde. But I thynke them rather to be ſuche fluxions and eruptions as Ariſtotle in his boke de Mundo, ſaith to chaunſe in the ſea. For ſpeakynge of ſuche thynges as are ſeene often tymes in the ſea, he wryteth thus: Often tymes alſo euen in the ſea are ſeene euaporations of fyre, and ſuche eruptions and breakyng furth of ſprynges, that the mouthes of ryuers are ôpened, whyrlepooles, and fluxions are cauſed of ſuch other vehement motions not only in the middeſt of the ſea, but alſo in creekes and ſtreyghtes. At certeyne tymes alſo, a great quantitie of water is ſuddeynly lyfted vp and caryed abowt with the moone. etc. By which woordes of Aryſtotle it dooth appere that ſuch waters maye bee lyfted vp in one place at one tyme, and ſuddeynly faule downe in an other place at an other tyme. And hereunto perhappes perteyneth it that Rycharde Chaunceler toulde me that he harde Sebaſtian Cabot reporte, that (as farre as I remember) eyther abowt the coaſtes of Braſile or Rio de Plata, his ſhyppe or pinnes was ſuddeinly lyfted from the ſea and caſt vpon the lande I wotte not howe farre. The which thynge and ſuche other lyke woonderfull and ſtraunge woorkes of nature whyle I conſyder and caule to remembraunce the narownes of mans vnderſtandynge and knowleage in comparyſon of her mighty poure, I can but ceaſe to maruayle and confeſſe with Plinie that nothynge is to her impoſſible, the leaſte parte of whoſe poure is not yet knowen to men.

Vehement motion of the sea.

A straunge thynge.

The poure of nature.

358

Many thynges more owre men ſawe and conſydered in this vyage worthy to bee noted, wherof I haue thought good to put ſum in memory that the reader maye aſwell take pleaſure in the varietie of thynges as knowleage of the hyſtorye.

Amonge other thynges therefore touchynge the maners and nature of the people, this may ſeeme ſtraunge that theyr princes and noble men vſe to pounſe and raſe theyr ſkynnes with prety knottes in diuers formes as it were branched damaſke, thynkynge that to be a decent ornament. And albeit they go in maner all naked, yet are many of them and eſpecially their women in maner lâden with collars, braſlettes, hoopes, and chaynes, eyther of golde, copper, or Iuery. I my ſelfe haue one of theyr braſelettes of Iuery wayinge twoo pounde and vi. [ſix] ounces of Troye weyght, whiche make. xxxviii. [thirty-eight] ounces. This, one of theyr women dyd weare vppon her arme. It is made of one hole piece of the byggeſt parte of the toothe turned and ſumwhat carued, with a hole in the myddeſt wherin they put theyr handes to weare it on theyr arme. Sum haue of euery arme one and as many on theyr legges, wherewith ſum of theym are ſo galded that althoughe they are in maner made lame therby, yet wyll they by no meanes leaue them of. Sum weare alſo on theyr legges great ſhackels of bryght copper which they thynke to bee no leſſe cumly. They weare alſo collars, braſlets, garlandes and gyrdels of certeyne blewe ſtones lyke beades. Lykewyſe ſum of theyr women weare on theyr bare armes certeyne foreſleeues made of the plates of beaten golde. On theyr fyngers alſo they weare rynges made of golden wyres with a knotte or wrethe lyke vnto that whiche chyldren make in a rynge of a ruſſhe. Amonge other thinges of golde that owr men bowght of them for exchaunge of theyr wares, were certeyne dogges chaynes and collers.

They rase their skinnes.

Fine iewells.

A braslet.

Shackelles.

Ringes.

Dogs chains of golde.

They are very ware people in theyr bargenynge, and wyl not loſe one ſparke of golde of any value. They vſe weyghtes and meaſures, and are very circumſpecte in occupyinge the ſame. They that ſhall haue to do with them muſt vſe them gentelly? for they wyl not trafike or brynge in any wares if they be euyll vſed. At the fyrſt viage that owr men had into theſe parties, it ſo chaunſed that at theyr departure from the fyrſte place where they dyd trafike, one of them eyther ſtole a muſke catte or tooke her a way by force, not myſtruſtynge that that ſhulde haue hyndered theyr bargenynge in an other place whyther they intended to go. But for al the haſt they could make with full ſayles, the fame of theyr myſuſage ſo preuented them that the people of that place alſo offended therby, wold bring in no wares: In ſo muche that they were inforced eyther to reſtore the catte or pay for her at theyr price before they could trafike there.

A muske cat.

Their houses

Theyr houſes are made of foure poſtes or trees, and couered with bouwes.

Their feding

Theyr common feedynge is of rootes and ſuch fyſſhes as they take, wherof they haue great plentie. There

Fleing fisher

are alſo ſuch flyinge fyſſhes as are ſeene in the ſea of the Weſte Indies. Owre men ſalted of theyr fyſſhes hopynge to prouyde ſtore therof. But they wolde take no ſalte: And muſte therefore be eaten furthwith as ſum ſay. Howe be it, other affirme that if they be ſalted immediately after they be taken, they wyl laſt vncorrupted. x. [ten] or. xii. [twelue] dayes. But this is more ſtraunge, that parte of ſuch fleſſhe as they caryed with them owte of Englande and putrifyed there, became ſweete ageyne at theyr returne to the clime of temperate regions.

A straunge thyng

They vſe alſo a ſtraunge makynge of breade in this maner. They grynde betwene two ſtones with theyr handes as much corne as they thynke maye ſuffice theyr famelie. And when they haue thus brought it to floure, they put thereto a certeyne quantitie of water and make therof very thin dowgh which they ſtycke vppon ſum poſt of theyr houſes, where it is baked by the heate of the ſonne: So that when the maſter of the houſe or any of his famely wyll eate thereof, they take it downe and eate it. Their bread.

They haue very fayre wheate, the ere whereof is twoo handfulles in length and as bygge as a great bulruſſhe, and almoſt foure ynches abowt where it is byggeſt. The ſteme or ſtrawe, ſemeth to be almoſt as bygge as the lyttle fynger of a mans hande, or lyttle leſſe. The graynes of this wheate are as bygge as owr peaſon: rounde alſo, and verye whyte and ſumwhat ſhynynge lyke perles that haue loſt theyr colour. Almoſt all the ſubſtaunce of theym turneth into floure, and maketh lyttle branne or none. I toulde in one ere twoo hundreth and three ſcore graynes. The ere is incloſed in thre blades longer then it ſelfe, and of two inches brode a piece. And by this frutefulneſſe the ſoonne ſeemeth partly to recompence ſuch greefes and moleſtations as they otherwyſe receaue by the feruent heate thereof. It is doubtleſſe a woorthy contemplation to conſider the contrary effectes of the ſoonne: or rather the contrary paſſions of ſuche thynges as receaue th[e]influence of his beames eyther to theyr hurte or benefite. Their wheate. 359 The ſoonne.

Theyr drynke is eyther water or the iuſe that droppeth from the cut braunches of the barren date trees cauled Palmites. For eyther they hange greate gourdes at the ſayde branches euery euenynge and let them ſo hange all nyght, or els they ſet them on the ground vnder the trees that the droppes may ſaule therin. They ſay that this kynde of drynke is in taſt much lyke vnto whey, but ſumwhat ſweeter and more pleaſaunt. They cutte the branches euery euenynge bycauſe they are ſered vp in the day by the heate of the ſoonne. They haue alſo great beanes as bygge as cheſtenuttes, and verye harde with a ſhell in the ſtede of a huſke. Their drinke.

Many thynges more myght be ſayd of the maners of the people and of the woonders and monſtrous thynges that are engendered in Afrike. But it ſhall ſuffice to haue ſayde thus muche of ſuch thynges as owre men partely ſawe and parrely browght with them.

And wheras before ſpeakynge of the frute of graynes, I deſcrybed the ſame to haue holes by the ſyde (as in deede it is as it is browght hether) yet was I afterwarde informed that thoſe holes were made to put ſtrynges or twygges throughe the frute therby to hange them vp to drye at the ſonne. They growe not paſte a foote and a halfe or twoo foote frome the grownde: and are as red as bludde when they are gathered. The graynes them ſelues, are cauled of the phyſitians, Grana Paradyſi. Graynes.

At theyr comminge home, the keles of theyr ſhyppes were marueloufly ouergrowen with certen ſhels of. ii. [two] ynches length and more as thycke as they coulde ſtonde, and of ſuch byggenes that a man may put his thom in the mouthes of them. They certeynly affirme that in theſe there groweth a certeyne ſlymy ſubſtaunce which at the length ſlypping owt of the ſhel and fauling in the ſea, becometh thoſe foules which we cal barnacles The lyke ſhelles haue byn ſeene in ſhyppes returning from Iſlande. But theſe ſhelles were not paſt halfe an inch in length. Of the other that came from Guinea, I ſawe the Prymroſe lyinge in the docke, and in maner couered with the ſayd ſhelles, which in my iudgemente ſhulde greately hynder her ſaylynge. Theyr ſhyppes were alſo in many places eaten with the woormes cauled Bromas or Biſſas whereof mention is made in the Decades. Theſe creepe betwene the plankes whiche they eate throwgh in many places. Shelles that cleaue to shyppes. Barnacles. Bromas.

Amonge other thynges that chaunced to them in this vyage, this is woorthy to be noted, that whereas they ſayled thether in ſeuen weekes, they coulde returne in no leſſe ſpace then. xx. [twenty] weekes. The cauſe wherof they ſay to be this: That abowt the coaſt of Cabo Verde, the wynde is euer at the Eaſt by reaſon whereof they were inforced to ſayle farre owte of theyr courſe into the mayne Ocean to fynde the wynde at the weſt to brynge them home. There dyed of owre men at this laſt vyage abowt. xxiiii. [twenty-four] whereof many dyed at theyr returne into the clime of the coulde regions, as betwene the Ilandes of Soria and Englande. They browght with them certeyne blacke ſlaues, wherof ſum were taule and ſtronge men, and coulde well agree with owr meates and drynkes. The coulde and moyſt ayer dooth ſumwhat offende them. Yet doubtleſſe men that are borne in hotte regions may better abyde coulde, then men that are borne in coulde regions may abyde heate, foraſmuch as vehement heate reſolueth the radicall moiſture of mens bodies, as could conſtreyneth and preſerueth the ſame A secreate. The death of owr men. Could may be better abiden then heate.

This is alſo to bee conſydered as a ſecreate woorke of nature, that throughout all Afryke vnder the Equinoctiall line and neare abowt the ſame on bothe ſydes, the regions are extreme hotte and the people very blacke. Whereas contraryly ſuch regions of the Weſt Indies as are vnder the ſame line, are very temperate and the people neyther blacke nor with curlde and ſhort woolle on theyr heades as haue they of Afryke, but of the The West Indies.

coloure of an olyue with longe and blacke heare on theyr heades: the cauſe of which varietie is declared in dyuers places in the Decades.

It is alſo woorthy to bee noted that ſumme of them that were at this vyage toulde me. That is,
360 that they ouertooke the courſe of the ſoonne, ſo that they had it north from them at noone the xiiii. [fourteenth] day of Marche.

And to haue ſayde thus much of theſe vyages it may ſuffice. For (as I haue ſayd before) Wheras the parteners at whoſe charges this booke is prynted, wolde longe ſence haue me proceaded no further, I had not thought to haue wrytten any thynge of theſe vyages but that the liberalitie of maſter Toy encoraged me to attempt the ſame. Whiche I ſpeake not to the reproche of other in whome I thynke there lacked no good wyll, but that they thought the booke wolde be to chargeable.

¶ THE MANER OF FYNDYNGE THE LONGITVDE OF REGIONS BY DYVERS WAYES AFTER THE DESCRIPTION OF GEMMA PHRYSIVS.

DErceauynge what contention is and longe hath byn not only amonge the pylottes that by trauaylynge the ſea haue obſerued the ſtarres, but alſo amonge ſum men that are ſkylfull in mathematicall ſciense, wherof many affirme that the longitude (that is to meane, the courſe from the Eaſt to the Weſte) can not be perfectely knowen, I haue thowght good for the better ſatiſfying of ſuch as deſire to haue ſum knowleage hereof, to interprete ſuch demonſtrations as I haue redde of the declarynge of the ſame in Gemma Phryſius, who as touchynge this matter hath added th[e]inuentions of other, a more certeyne way of his own diuiſe wherby (as he ſayth) he can fynde the longitude of regions although he were dryuen owt of the way a thouſande myles into places vnto hym vtterlye vnknowen and of vnknowen diſtance. He wryteth therfore as foloweth.

By the mone.

When yow haue founde the place of the mone, yow cught to conſyder the houre when ſhe occupyed that place. Then eyther by the Ephimerides or by the tables of Alphonſus yowe owght to knowe in what houre the moone entereth into the ſame ſigne of the Zodiake in an other region or towne whoſe longitude is well knowen. Then reducynge the houres to. xxiiii. [twenty-four] the leſſe number of houres is to be deducted out of the greater number. Then the remanent of the houres and mynutes is to be brought to degrees in this maner. Multiplie the hours by. xv. [fifteen] and diuide the minutes of the houres by foure: ſo ſhall appere the degrees of the Equinoctial conteyned betwene two meridians. And if after this diuiſion there remayne any minutes, multiplie them alſo by. xv. [fifteen] and therby ſhalbe knowen the minutes of degrees. Adde this difference of longitude founde to the longitude of the region knowen if the houres of that place bee more in number: or take awaye from the ſame longitude if they be leſſe: So ſhall yowe in fine gather the longitude of the place vnknowen from the Ilandes of Canarie. But the ſame is more eaſely and redely found geometrically by the globes by this meanes. Set directly vnder the meridian, the place whoſe longitude is knowen in the globe. Then directe the poynte or ſtyle that moueth abowt the pole, to the houre in the whiche the moone occupyeth the place aſſigned in that region. Then turne the globe vntyll the ſtyle that ſheweth the houre, be coomme to the houre in the whiche yowe ſowght the vnknowen place of the moone. And ſo ſhall the degrees of the Equinoctiall diſtaunte or diuyded frome the moueable meridian, declare the longitude of the region which yow ſeeke. Neuertheleſſe, the more certeine way wherby the differences of longitudes may bee founde, is by ſum one thynge that in one moment appeareth in all regions, as by the eclypſes of the moone. For the dyuers houres beinge knowen in the whiche the ſayd eclypſes chaunce in dyuers regions, the longitude maye thus aſwell be knowen by geometrie and arithmetike, as it is founde by the rule here before. But foraſmuch as this doth neyther appere at al tymes nor to all men, and the other way is ſumwhat difficult, neyther at al tymes redy by reaſon of the coniunctions of the mone and furthermore alſo ſumtymes vncerteyne and varying ſumwhat from the truth for the dyuers

The Ilandes of Canarie.

Howe to fynd the longitude by the globe

The Eclipses of the moone.

aſpectes and latitudes of the mone, it ſo chaunceth hereby that wee haue eyther no longitudes or the ſame very vncerteyne of many regions, and eſpecially of thoſe which the Spanyardes haue of late diſcouered. For no certentie doubtleſſe can be knowen by ſuch commenſurations as are made in the wanderynge turnynges and wyndynges of ſuch vyages, as Ptolome affirmeth in the firſt booke of his Coſmographie. I wyll therfore adde herevnto ſum thynge of myne owne inuention whereby by an eaſy way and at all tymes the longitudes of regions may be founde in all vyages and nauigations.

361

¶ *A newe maner of fyndynge the Longitudes of regions.*

Litle clockes

WEe ſee that in theſe owre dayes certeyne lyttle clockes are very artificially made the whiche for theyr ſmaule quantitie are not comberous to be caryed abowt in all vyages. Theſe often tymes moue continually for the ſpace. of. xxiiii [twenty-four] houres: and may with helpe continewe theyr mouynge in maner perpetually. By the helpe therfore of theſe the longitude may bee founde after this maner. Before wee enter into any vyage, wee muſte fyrſte foreſee that the ſayde clocke exactly obſerue the houres of the place from whenſe we departe: And ageyne that in the way it neuer ceaſe. Accomplyſſhynge therefore. xv. [fifteen] or. xx. [twenty] myles of the vyage, if wee deſyre to knowe howe much in longitude we are dyſtant frome the place of owre departure, we muſt tary vntyll the poynt or ſtyle of the clocke do exactly come to the poynt of ſum houre: and at the ſame moment by owr Aſtrolabie or globe, owght wee to ſeeke the houre of the place where we bee: The which yf it agree in minute with the houres which the Horoſcopium or aſcendent dooth ſhewe, then is it certeyne that wee are yet vnder the ſame Meridian or the ſame Longitude: and that owre courſe hath byn towarde the ſouth or north. But if it dyffer one hour or any mynute, then are the ſame to bee reduced to degrees or minutes as we haue tought in the chapiture here before. And ſo ſhall the longitude bee founde. And by this arte can I fynde the longitude of regions althowgh I were a thouſand myles owt of my attempted courſe and in an vnknowen diſtance, but the latitude muſt fyrſte bee perfectely knowen.

By the Astrolabie and globe.

Horoscopus or the aſcendent.

The latitude.

FINIS.

¶ *A bryefe reherſal of the contentes of the bookes of the fyrſt Decade, and ſo folowynge of all the other Decades.* Folio. i. [*p.* 65.]

IN the fyrſt booke is declared howe Chriſtophorus Colonus otherwyſe cauled Columbus, perſuaded Fernando and Elizabeth, prynces of Spayne, to foorther his attempte in ſearching newe and vnknowen landes in the Weſt Ocean. Alſo of the. vii. Ilandes of Canarie, by whom they were founde and conquered.

Howe Colonus founde the Ilandes of Hiſpaniola, and Cuba: And of the fierce people cauled Canibales or Caribes, which are accuſtomed to eate mans fleſſhe.

Of the rootes cauled Ages, Iucca, and the grayne Maizium, wherof the people of the Ilandes make theyr breade.

Of the golde found in the ſandes of ryuers, and of the ſerpentes which are without hurte. Alſo of turtle doues, duckes, and popyngiayes.

Of Maſtix, and Aloe, with dyuers frutes and trees vnknowen to vs: and of the frutefulnes of the Iland of Hiſpaniola which the Spanyardes caule Spagnuola.

Of the ſeconde vyage of Colonus into theſe regions, and howe he was furniſſhed with. xvii. ſhyppes and a thouſande and two hundreth ſouldyers, with all kynde of artiliarye, artificers, and grayne to ſowe. And of the tree frome the which water droppeth continually into a trenche made by mans hande.

☞ *The contentes of the ſeconde booke.* Fol. 4. [*p.* 68.]

¶ Howe Colonus departynge from the Ilandes of Canarie, ſayled. vii. hundreth and. xx. leaques in. xxi. dayes, and came to Dominica an Ilande of the Canibales: And of the fragrant ſauour of ſpices which proceded from the Ilandes.

Of the Ilandes of Galanta or Galana and Guadalupea, and of the trees which beare that kynde of cotton whiche the Italians caule Bombaſine, and the Spanyardes Algadon.

Of dyuers kyndes of popingiayes: And of the Iland of Matinino or Madinino, being inhabited only with women: Alſo of dyuers other frutefull Ilandes: And of a conflicte which the Spanyardes had with the Canibales.

Of certeyne Ilandes in the which are ſeene the mynes of metals and precious ſtones: and of the frutefull and peopulous Ilande cauled Burichena or Boriquen. or *Inſula S. Iohannis.*

Howe all the Admirals men whiche at his fyrſt vyage he lefte in Hiſpaniola, were ſlayne in his abſence by the rebellion of Guaccanarillus, kynge of the Region of Xamana: and of the free kynde of lyfe which they leade that haue not the vſe of money.

Of the. vii. maydens which ſwamme. iii. myles in the ſea: And of the maner of gatheryng of gold in the ſands of riuers.

¶ *The Contentes of the thyrde booke.* Fol. 10. [*p.* 73.]

¶ A particular deſcription of the Ilande of Hiſpaniola, whiche Colonus thynketh to be Ophir, from whenſe kynge Salomon had his great ryches of golde.

Of the marueelous frutefulnes of Hiſpaniola, and of the ſuger canes growynge there.

Of the golden regions of Cipanga or Cibaua, and of the ryuers in whoſe ſandes is founde great plentie of golde.

Of certeyne graines of gold of exceadyng great quantitie.

Of wylde vines of pleaſaunt taſte, and of graſſe which in foure dayes groweth as hygh as wheate.

Of the Ilande of Iohanna or Cuba, beinge the ende of the Eaſt and the Weſt: And of the frutefull and peopulous Ilande of Iamaica.

Howe the Admirall thought that he had ſayled abowte the loweſt hemiſpherie or halfe circle of the earth, and of a ſecreate of Aſtronomie touchynge the ſame matter.

Howe the Admirall gaue names to. vii. hundreth Ilandes, and paſſed by three thouſande vnnamed.

Of certeyne ſerpentes lyke vnto Crocodiles of. viii. foote longe, whoſe fleſſhe is delicate to be eaten: and of certeyne trees which beare gourdes.

Of the ryuer whoſe water is very hotte: and of the huntynge fyſſhe which taketh other fyſſhes.

Of great abundaunce of Tortoyſes as bygge as targets, and of a frutefull mountayne well inhabited.

Of dogges of deformed ſhape and dum: And of whyte and thicke water.

Of wooddes of date trees and pynepaple trees, and of certeyne people appareled like white friers.

Of certeyne trees whiche beare ſpices, and of cranes of exceadynge bignes.

Of ſtocke doues of more pleaſaunte taſte then partriches.

An oration of a barbarous gouernoure as touchinge the immortalitie of the ſowle: Alſo of the rewarde of vertue and punyſſhmente of vice.

A ſimilitude of the golden worlde, and of prouiſion withowte care.

Howe the admirall fell ſicke by reaſon of to much watchynge: And of a ſedition which roſe among the Spaniardes in the Ilande of Hiſpaniola.

¶ *The Contentes of the fourth booke.* Fol. 18. [*p.* 79.]

Howe the Kynges of the Ilande of Hiſpaniola, were by the Spaniardes myſbehauoure prouoked to Rebellion: And howe the admirall ſent for them.

Howe kinge Caunaboa the Lorde of the houſe of golde, that is, of the mountaynes of Cibaua, compired the Admirals death, and how he with his familie were taken priſoners.

Of a greate famine that chaunced in the Iland of Hiſpaniola: and howe the Admiral builded certeyne fortreſſes.

Of a piece of rude golde waigninge. xx. vnces: and of the myne of the riche metall cauled Electrum.

Of the mountayne in the whyche is founde greate plentye of Amber and orpemente: And of the wooddes of braſile trees.

Howe th[e]inhabitauntes are put to theyre tribute: And howe the nature of the Region diſpoſethe the maners of the people.

Howe the brother of kinge Caunaboa came ageynſte the Admiral with an army of fiue thowſand naked men: and how he was taken and his army put to flyght.

Of the frutfull vale Magona, in the ſandes of whoſe ryuers is founde great plentie of golde: and of certeyne whirlewyndes and tempeſtes.

Howe the Admirall ſente foorthe his brother Bartholomeus Colonus with an army of men to ſearch the gold mines and of the foſſes which he found to haue ben digged in old tyme

¶ *The Contentes of the. v. booke.* Fol. 22. [*p.* 82.]

Howe the Lieuetenaunt builded a fortreſſe in the golde mynes: And prepared inſtrumentes for the pourginge and fyninge of the golde.

Howe certeyne ſhyppes laden with vyttayles, came frome Spayne: And howe the Lieuetenaunt ſent the kynges which rebelled, with three hundreth captiues into Spayne.

Howe the Lieſetenaunte remoued his habytacion: And buylded a fortreſle which he cauled ſaynt Dominickes towre Alſo howe he paſſed ouer the ryuer Naiba, and entered into the wooddes of braſyle trees.

Howe the great kynge Beuchius Anacauchoa, frendely entertеyned the Lieuetenaunt, and browght hym to his pallayce, where the kynges wyues and concubines receaued him honorably with pompes and triumphes.

Of the fortreſſes which were erected in Hiſpaniola: And howe the Lieuetenaunt exacted tribute of the kynges whiche rebelled ageyne.

Howe the Lieuetenaunt ſetſe vppon the kynges vnwares in the nyght ſeaſon, and tooke. xiiii. of them pryſoners.

Howe kynge Guarionexius, capitayne of the conſpiracie was pardoned, and howe he perſuaded the people to obedience.

Howe kynge Beuchius Anacauchoa, ſente meſſingers to the Lieuetenaunt to repayre to his pallayce where he founde xxxii. kinges redy with theyr tributes: And howe the queene Anacaona entyſed hym to eate of the ſerpentes fleſſhe.

Howe the ſerpentes fleſſhe is prepared to be eaten: And how delicate meate theyr egges are yf they be ſodden.

Howe queene Anacaona, ſyſter to kynge Beuchius Anacauchoa, enterteyned the Liefetenaunt, and gaue hym muche houſholde ſtuffe and many veſſels of Hebene woodde artificially wrought and carued.

Howe kynge Anacauchoa and the queene his ſyſter went aboorde the Liefetenaunt his ſhyppe, and howe greately they were amaſed to beholde the furniture therof.

Howe Roldanus Xeminus a Spaniarde, rebelled in the Lieuetenauntes abſence: by whoſe myſdemeanour alſo kinge Guarionexius was prouoked to a newe conſpiracie, and with hym Maiobanexius the kynge of the mountaynes.

☞ *The contentes of the ſyxte boke.* Foli. 28. [*p.* 87.]

¶ The thyrde vyage of Colonus, and howe he diuerted from his accuſtomed raſe by the Ilandes of Canarie to the Ilande of Madera for feare of certayne frenche pirates and rouers.

Of the. xiii. Ilandes which in olde tyme were cauled Heſperides, and are nowe cauled the Ilandes of Caput Viride or Cabouerde. Alſo of the Tortoyſes of the Ilande of Bonauiſta, wherwith the leaper is healed.

Howe the Admirall founde contagious ayre and extreme heate nere the Equinoctial where the north pole was eleuate onely fyue degrees: And how ſailyng from thence weſtward, he founde the ſtarres placed in other order, and the ſea ryſynge as it were the backe of a mountayne.

Howe the Admyrall ſaylynge weſtwarde, and neuer paſſyng owte of the clyme or paraleles of Ethiope, founde a temperate Region and people of goodly corporature: And what difference is betwene the natures of Regions beyng vnder one paralele and one eleuation of the pole.

Of the Ilandes of Puta and Margarita; and of the ſwift courſe or faule of the Ocean from the Eaſt to the weſte.

Of the goulfes cauled Os Draconis: And of the conflicte betwene the freſhe water and the ſalte.

Of a ſea of freſhe water: And a mountayne inhabited onely with monkeys and marmaſettes.

Of the fayre, riche, and large region of Paria: And howe frendly th[e]inhabitantes entreated the Admyrall and his men. Alſo of pleaſaunte wyne made of dyuerſe fruites: And of greate abundaunce of perles and golde.

Of the regions of Cumana, Maiacapana, and Curiana, beynge regions of the large prouynce of Paria: And of the ſea of herbes or weedes.

A certeyn ſecreate as touchynge the pole ſtarre and the eleuation of the ſame: Alſo of the roundneſſe of the earthe.

Of the mountaynes of Paria in the toppes wherof Colonus erneſtly affirmeth the earthly Paradiſe to be ſituate: And whether Paria be part of the firme land or continent of India.

¶ *The contentes of the. vii. booke.* Fol. 33. [*p.* 90.]

¶ Howe Roldanus Xeminus with his confetherates, accuſed the Admirall to the kynge: And howe he pourged hym ſelfe and accuſed them

Howe kynge Guarionexius rebelled ageyne: And with him kyng Maiobanexius: Alſo howe they with other kinges came ageynſt the Lieuetenaunte with an armye of. viii. thouſande naked and paynted Ciguauians. Alſo twoo rare exemples of frendſhyppe and faythfulnes in barbarous princes.

Howe Colonus the Admirall and the Lieuetenaunte hys brother, were ſent bounde into Spayne: And newe officers appoynted in theyr places.

The contentes of the. viii. booke. Fol. 37. [*p.* 94.]

¶ The nauigation of *Petrus Alphonſus* frome Spayne to Paria, where in the region of Curiana, he had in ſhorte ſpace. xv. vnces of pearles and greate plenty of vytailes for haukes bellees, pynnes, lokinge glaſſes, and ſuche other tryfelles.

Of certeyn coniectures wherby Paria is thought to bee parte of the firme lande: And of the golden region of *Cauchieta*, where in the moneth of Nouember the ayre is temperate and not coulde.

Howe Alphonſus had a conflicte with the Canibals: and howe they are acuſtomed to inuade other contreys.

Of greate abundaunce of ſalte in the region of Haraia: and howe the dead bodyes of theyr prynces are dryed, reſerued, and relygiouſly honoured.

Howe Alphonſus at his returne to Spayne frome Curiana, brought with hym threeſcore and. xvi, pounde weight of pearles which he bought for owre tryfells amountinge only to the value of fiue ſhillyngs.

The contentes of the. ix. booke. Fol. 40. [*p.* 96.]

¶ The Nauigation of Vincentius Pinzonus and Aries Pinzonus, and howe they ſayled beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne, loſte the ſyght of the northe ſtarre, and founde the ſtarres in other order.

Howe Vincentius paſſynge the equinoctiall towarde the ſouthe pole, founde fierce and warlike people of great ſtature: And of the ſea of freſhe water.

Howe Vincentius directing his courſe towarde the north weſte from the equinoctiall, recouered the ſyght of the northe pole, and by the regions of Mariatamball, Camomorus, and Pericora, came to the fayre and ryche prouince of Paria, and to the regyons of Os Draconis, Cumana, Manacapana, Curiana. &c.

A coniecture that Paria (wherby is ment that mayne land now cauled America) ſhulde be parte of the fyrme lande or continent of India, beyonde the ryuer of Ganges and no ilande: And of the excedynge great riuer Maragnonus repleniſhed with Ilandes.

Of Borioſtomea and Spirioſtomea, the mouthes of the famous ryuer of Danubius, cauled in olde tyme Iſter: And of the commodities of the regions and Ilandes about Paria. Alſo of the woodes of braſile trees.

Of many frutfull Ilandes waſted and leſte deſolate by reſon of the Caniballes cruelte: And of the trees of Caſſia Fiſtula. Alſo of other trees of excedyng bygneſſe.

The deſcription of a certayne monſtruous beaſte, And how Vincentius loſte two of his ſhyppes by tempeſtes.

Howe Vincentius at his returne to Spayne, brought with hym cinamome, gynger, and certayne precious ſtoones cauled Topaſes. And of the nauigations of certayne other inhabitantes of the towne of Palos.

Of the precious medicine cauled Anime Album. And of the diuerſe ſuperſtitions of the inhabitauntes of Hiſpaniola. Alſo of their Idolatry, and howe they honour the ymages of deuylles, whiche they caule Zemes.

¶ *The Contentes of the. x. booke.* Fol. 48. [*p.* 103.]

Of great plentie of golde, perles, and frankenſence found in the regions of Paria. And of innumerable beaſtes in ſhape dyfferynge from owres.

Howe the Spaniardes profered them ſelues to conquere the newe founde landes, beynge in largeneſſe thryſe as great as Europe beſyde the ſouthe landes parteynynge to the Portugales. And howe the nature of the place altereth the formes and qualities of thynges.

Of the Ilande of Cuba, and of the golde mynes of the Iland of Sancti Iohannis, otherwiſe cauled Burichena, or Buchena. Alſo of the ryche golde mynes of Hiſpaniola, and of the order of workynge in the ſame.

Of the two chiefe golde mynes of Hiſpaniola. And of a pece of golde weyinge thre thouſande thre hundreth and tenne pounde weyght.

Howe the golde is fyned and diſtrybuted: And howe that only in the meltynge ſhops of the two golden mynes of Hiſpaniola, is molten yearely aboue three hundreth thouſande pounde weyght of golde.

Howe th[e]enterpryſes of the Spanyardes are not inferior to th[e]actes of Saturnus or Hercules: And howe the Admyrall diſcouered the lande ouer ageynſt the weſt corner of Cuba and the Ilande of Guanaſſa.

¶ *The Contentes of the bookes of the ſeconde Decade.*

¶ *The contentes of the fyrſt booke.* Fol. 51. [*p.* 106.]

¶ Howe after the death of Colonus the Admirall, the kynge gaue free lycence to all ſuche as wolde attempte any vyages: And of the nauigations of Diego Nicueſa, and Alphonſus Fogeda

Of the Ilande Codego and the region of Caramairi: And of certeyne ſweete apples whiche turne into woormes when they are eaten, whoſe trees are alſo contagious.

Howe Alfonſus Fogeda, the Lieuetenaunt of Vraba, encounterynge with the barbarians had the ouerthrowe. And howe in this conflicte, fyftie of his men were ſlayne with Iohannes de la Coſſa theyr capytayne.

Howe Fogeda, and Nicueſa the Lieuetenaunte of Beragua, reuenged the death of theyr coompanyons: And howe Fogeda came to the Ilande Fortis and the region of Caribana where he was repulſed from the golde mynes by the fierceneſſe of the barbarians vſyng arrowes infected with poyſon.

Howe Fogeda was wounded in the thygh with a venemous arrowe, and his men almoſt conſumed with famyn.

Howe a brigantine was drowned with the ſtroke of a fyſſhe: And of the nauigation of Anciſus from Hiſpaniola to Vraba.

Of the Lamentable ſhyppewracke of Anciſus: And of the date trees and wylde bores which he founde.

Of the frutes or apples of the trees cauled Ceders of Libane which beare owlde frutes and newe all the yeare.

Howe onely three of the Canibales with theyr bowes and inuenemed arrowes aſſayled Anciſus with a hundreth of his men: In which conflicte they wounded and ſlewe many. Alſo of theyr ſwyftneſſe of foote.

Of the great ryuer of Dariena: And how Anciſus encountered with fyue hundreth of th[e]inhabitauntes of the goulfe of Vraba and put them to flyght. Alſo howe he founde greate plentie of wrought golde and houſholde ſtuffe in a thycket of reedes.

¶ *The contentes of the ſeconde booke.* Fol. 58. [*p.* 111.]

¶ Howe Nicueſa loſte his felowes in the darke nyght and went paſt the mouth of the ryuer Beragua which he ſought: And howe the capitaynes of the other ſhyppes conſulted how to ſynde hym. Alſo of the ryuer Lagartos in the which great Lyſartes are founde much lyke vnto the Crocodiles of Nilus.

Howe the capitaynes forſooke theyr ſhyppes that the ſouldyers myght bee without hope of departure: And of the miſerable chaunce of Petrus de Vmbria and his felowes.

By what chaunce Nicueſa was founde, and of the calamities which he and his coompany ſuſteyned. Alſo of the region of Gracia Dei or Cerabaro, and of the ryuer of Sancti Matthei.

Howe Nicueſa cauſed them to remoue theyr habitacion from Beragua to poynte Marmor where he bylded a fortreſſe And howe his men by warre and famyn, were conſumed from ſeuen hundreth and odde, to ſcarſely one hundreth.

Howe one Vaſchus Nunnez vſurped th[e]autoritie of the Lieutenauntſhyppe of Vraba in th[e]abſence of Fogeda: And of the nauigation of Rodericus Colmenaris from Hiſpaniola to Vraba.

Of the ryuer Gaira deſcendynge from the toppe of a hygh mountayne couered with ſnowe: And howe Rodericus Colmenaris in a conflicte ageynſt the barbarians, loſte. xlvii. of his men by reaſon of theyr inuenemed arrowes.

Of the force of the poyſon wherewith the barbarians infecte theyr arrowes, and a remedie for the ſame. Alſo howe Colmenaris by gunneſhot and kyndelynge fyers on the hyghe toppes of the rockes, came to the Spanyardes leſte deſolate in Dariena.

¶ *The contentes of the thyrde booke.* Fol. 61. [*p.* 114.]

¶ Howe Nicueſa was ſought foorth to acquiete the contentions of Vraba: And howe he was ageyne reiected.

Howe Vaſchus Nunnez inuaded, tooke pryſoners, and ſpoyled the kynges borderynge abowt the region of Vraba: And howe Anciſus Lieuetenaunt for Fogeda was caſt in pryſon, and afterwarde ſet at libertie.

Howe Anciſus tooke his vyage from Vraba to Spayne to accuſe Vaſchus: who alſo at the ſame tyme ſent Valdiuia aſwell to ſpeake in his defence, as alſo to certifie the kynge of theyr doynges.

Howe kynge Careta conſpired with the Spanyardes ageynſt kynge Poncha whom they put to flyght and ſpoyled his vyllage.

Howe kynge Comogrus frendely enterteyned the Spanyardes and brought them to his pallaice where he ſhewed them the dryed Carkaſes of his aunceſtours reſerued and ſumptuouſly apparelled: And howe the kynges elder ſonne gaue Vaſchus and Colmenaris foure thouſand vnces of wrought gold and fiftie ſlaues. Alſo a wyttie oration which he made to the Spanyardes, wherein he certifyed theym of a countrey exceadynge ryche in golde, &c.

¶ *The contentes of the fourth booke.* Fol. 66. [*p.* 118.]

¶ Of horryble thunder and lyghtnynge in the mooneth of Nouember, and of grayne which waxeth rype thryſe a yeare Alſo how digeſtion is ſtrengthened by owtwarde coulde.

Howe Valdiuia is ſent ageyne into Hiſpaniola to moue the gouernour and counſayle there to ſende into Spayne to the kynge for a ſupplie of a thouſand ſouldyers to make way to the golden mountaynes: And howe

he caryed with hym the kynges portion, (that is) the fyfte parte of golde and other thynges.

Howe Vaſchus inuaded the kynges inhabytynge the regions about the goulfe of Vraba, and howe he put kyng Dabaiba to flyght, in whoſe vyllage he founde wrought golde amountynge to the weyght of ſeuen thouſande Caſtellans.

Of battes as bygge as turtle dooues which ſumtyme byte men in the nyght in their ſleepe, whoſe bytynge is alſo venemous: but is healed with water of the ſea or by cauterization as are alſo the woundes of venemous arrowes.

Of the Ilande of Cannafiſtula, and a towne of fyue hundreth houſes, whoſe kynge Abenamachei was taken and his arme cutte of in the fyght.

Of trees of exceadynge bygneſſe and heyght: And howe kynge Abibeiba had his pallaice in the toppe of a tree frome the which he was inforced to deſcende and entreate of peace.

¶ *The contentes of the fyfth booke.* Fol. 69. [*p.* 120.]

¶ Howe kynge Abraiba ſlewe a capitayne of the Spanyards and cauſed the kynges to rebell. Alſo howe they were put to flyght and many of theyr men ſlayne.

Of fyue kinges which attempted a newe conſpiracie with a hundreth great Canoas and fiue thouſand men: And howe theyr intent was bewrayed by a woman, and preuented. Alſo howe Rodericus Colmenaris facked the vyllage of Tichiri and honge the kynge therof with foure of his chiefe rulers, and commaunded them to be ſhotte through with arrowes.

¶ *The contentes of the fyxte booke.* Fol. 72. [*p.* 122.]

¶ Howe Vaſchus with his confetherates, ſente Iohannes Quicedus and Colmenaris from Dariena to Hiſpaniola and from thenſe to Spayne to the kyng for a thouſand men to paſſe ouer the mountaynes to the golden regions: And what miſeries they ſuſteyned in that vyage. Alſo of the death of Val[di]uia, Zamudius, and Fogeda.

Of the proſperous vyage of Anciſus. And howe godde wrought miracles by the ſimple fayth of a mariner. Alſo how god reſpecteth th[e]infancie of fayth for zeles ſake: And howe one religion turned into another, holdeth ſtyll many thinges of the fyrſte.

Howe many of the barbarians were baptiſed by reaſon of the miracles: And howe they rewarded the preſtes by whome they were baptiſed.

Howe Anciſus ſhortly after his arryuall in Spayne, reſorted to the courte and made his complaynt to the kinge of th[e]inſolencie of Vaſchus, wherupon the kynge gaue ſentence ageynſt hym: And howe apte the barbarous nations are to embraſe the Chriſtian fayth.

¶ *The contentes of the ſeuenth booke.* Fol. 79. [*p.* 126.]

¶ Howe Quicedus and Colmenaris the procuratours of Dariena, were honorably enterteyned at the courte and brought to the kynges preſence: And howe theyr complexion was chaunged by alteration of the ayer.

Howe Petrus Arias a noble man, was elected gouernour and Lieuetenaunt of Dariena: And howe other of the court laboured for the ſame office. Alſo howe the byſſhop of Burges ſpake to the kynge in his behalfe.

Howe Petrus Arias had a thouſande and two hundrethe ſouldyers appoynted hym at the kynges charges: And of the kynges cuſtome houſe in the citie of Ciuile, cauled the houſe of the contractes of India.

Howe a great number of Spanyardes profered themſelues to go at theyr owne charges: And of a reſtraint made that no ſtraunger myght paſſe without the kynges licence. Alſo howe the autour reproueth Aloiſius Cadamuſtus a wryter of the Portugales vyages.

Howe Petrus Arias ſhortely after his departure frome Ciuile, loſt two of his ſhyppes and was dryuen backe ageyne by tempeſt: And howe beinge newly furnyſſhed, hee paſſed the Ocean with more proſperous wyndes.

The thyrde vyage of Vincentius Pinzonus, and howe he came to the regions of Paria where encounterynge with th[e]inhabitauntes he put them fyrſt to flyght: but after faulyng to entreatie of peace, they geue hym greate plentie of golde and abundaunce of maſculine frankenſence with dyuers other princely preſentes.

Of the greate multitude of popingiayes which are in the region of Paria, and howe th[e]inhabitours are apparelled. Alſo of the fyue kynges that made a league of frendeſhyppe with Vincentius.

Howe Vincentius ſayled Eaſtwarde by the tracte of the regions of Paria vntyll he came to the poynte [*Cap. S. Auguſtini*] of that longe lande which the autour ſuppoſeth to be the greate Ilande Atlantike wherof the owlde wryters make mention.

¶ *The contentes of the. viii. booke.* Fol. 80. [*p.* 129.]

¶ A contention betwene the Caſtilians and Portugales as concernynge the diuiſion of the newe founde landes: And howe the controuerſie was fynyſſhed by the byſſhop of Rome.

Howe Don Chryſtopher the gouernoure of the Ilande of Sancti Iohannis, was ſlayne by the Canibales and the byſſhop put to flyght. Alſo of the other byſſhops of the Ilandes.

Howe the Canibales of the Iland of Sancta Crux, flew and eate a kynge with certeyne of his men beinge frendes to the Chryſtians and made faggottes of theyr bones: And how querelynge with owre men, they put them to ſilence.

¶ *The contentes of the. ix. booke.* Fol. 81. [*p.* 130.]

¶ Of the maruelous frutefulnes of the regions of Beragua, Vraba, and Dariena: And of the dyuers kyndes of trees and frutes. Alſo of the pleaſaunt taſte of ſwynes fleſſhe beinge fedde with the frutes of Mirobalane trees.

Of Lions and Tygers and other wylde beaſtes: And of a beaſte of ſtraunge forme.

Of the ryuers of the goulfe of Vraba, as the ryuer of Dariena and Rio Grandis: And howe the great ſerpentes cauled Crocodiles, are founde in other ryuers byſyde Nilus in Egypte. Alſo howe th[e]autour of this booke was ſent Ambaſſadour to the Soldane of Alcayr in Egipte.

Of the Portugales nauigations, and of the ryuer Senega founde by them to bee a chanel of Nilus. Alſo of the multitude of byrdes and foules beinge in the maryſſhes of Dariena.

A phyloſophicall diſcourſe of th[e]originall and generation of ſprynges and ryuers: And of the breadth of the lande diuydynge the north and ſouth Ocean.

Of the great ryuer Maragnonus and of the earthly Paradyſe: And howe ſprynges are engendered by conuercion of ayer into water.

Of the often faule of rayne vnder the Equinoctiall line, and of the pores of the ſea opened by the South wyndes.

Of the great ryuers of Tanais, Ganges, Danubius, and Eridanus, famous to the owlde wryters: And howe certeine ryuers runnynge throughe the caues of the earthe, breake furth into ſprynges afarre of.

¶ *The contentes of the. x. booke.* Fol. 86. [*p.* 134.]

¶ Howe the newe founde landes diſcouered by the Spanyardes in the Weſt Ocean, are eyght tymes bygger then Italie beſyde that which the Portugales poſſeſſe: And of the cardes of the ſea drawen by Colonus and Americus Veſputius.

The order of meaſurynge the lande: And howe a league conteyneth foure myles by ſea and but three by lande.

The Nauigation of Iohannes Dias, and of the ſundrye eleuations of the pole ſtarre.

Of the Ilande of Boiuca or Agnaneo, and of the ſpringe whoſe water being dronke, cauſeth owld men to loke yonge.

Howe Nicueſa and his ſouldiers were ſo oppreſſed with famin, that they were dryuen to eate mangie dogges, toades, and deade men: And howe a brothe made of a dogges ſkinne, was ſolde for many pieces of golde.

¶ *The contentes of the bookes of the thyrde Decade.*

¶ *The contentes of the fyrſt booke.* Fol. 88. [*p.* 137.]

¶ Of the deſperate aduenture and good fortune of Vaſchus: And how with a hundreth fourſcore and ten men, he brought that to paſſe for the which Petrus Arias was ſente with a thouſande and two hundreth freſſhe ſouldyers.

Howe iren ſerueth for more neceſſary vſes then gold, and howe ſuperfluities hynder libertie.

Howe Vaſchus in one conflicte, ſlewe ſyxe hundreth barbaryans with theyr kynges: And howe he founde the houſe of kyng Quarequa infected with vnnatural lechery, commaundynge that the kynge and fortie ſuche as he kepte for that purpoſe, ſhulde be gyuen for a pray to his dogges whiche he vſed to ſerue in the warres ageynſt theſe naked people.

Of a region of blacke Moores: And howe Vaſchus came to the toppes of the mountaynes, where geuynge thankes to god, he behelde the newe ſouth Ocean neuer before ſene nor knowen to men of owre worlde.

Howe Vaſchus put kynge Chiapes to flyght, and after made a league of frendeſhyppe with hym: And howe the king gaue hym. iiii. hundreth poundes weyght of wrought golde.

Howe kynge Coquera was putte to flyght, who alſo beinge receaued to frendeſhyppe, gaue Vaſchus ſyxe hundreth and fiftie poundes weyght of wrought golde.

Of the goulfe cauled Sinus. S. Michaelis beinge full of inhabited Ilandes: And of the manly corage and godly zeale of Vaſchus. Alſo of the ryſynge and faulyng of the ſouth ſea.

Howe kynge Turbaccus beinge dryuen to flyght and afterwarde reconciled, gaue Vaſchus. vi. hundreth and. xiiii. peſos of golde, and two hundreth and fortie of the greateſt and fayreſt pearles: And howe the kynge cauſed his men to fyſhe for pearles.

Of the Ilande cauled Margaritea Diues: And of the abundaunce of fayre and great pearles founde therin.

Of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall line: And of the Portugales nauigations to the Antipodes inhabytynge the fyue and fiftie degree of the ſouth pole. Alſo a declaration of Antipodes, and of the ſtarres about the ſouth pole.

¶ *The contentes of the ſeconde booke.* Fol. 95. [*p.* 142]

¶ Of the maner of fyſſhynge for pearles and of the three kyndes therof. Alſo dyuers other queſtions concernynge perles.

Of the multitude of the ſhell fyſſhes wherin perles are engendered and founde in maner in all places in the ſouth ſea: And of abundaunce of golde founde almoſte in euery houſe. Alſo howe the treaſurie of nature is in thoſe coaſtes: And of the golde mynes of Dariena.

Howe kynge Teaocha gaue Vaſchus. xx. poundes weight of wrought golde and two hundreth perles. Alſo of deſertes full of wylde beaſtes, and howe Vaſchus was troubled with greate heate in the moneth of Nouember.

Howe a dogge Tyger was taken, and his whelpes tyed in cheynes and torne in pieces: Alſo howe Vaſchus gaue. iiii kynges to his dogges to be deuoured.

Of the vſe of dogges in theyr warres, and of the fiercenеſſe of the Canibales.

Howe kynge Bononiana fauoured the Chriſtians and gaue Vaſchus. xx. pounde weyght of wrought golde. Alſo his oration to Vaſchus.

A ſimilitude prouynge greate plentie of golde in the regions of the ſouth ſea, and of the trauayles which owlde ſouldyers are able to ſuſteyne.

¶ *The contentes of the thyrde booke.* Fol. 99. [*p.* 146.]

¶ Howe kynge Buchibuea ſubmytted hym ſelfe to Vaſchus, and ſente hym certeyne veſſelles of golde. Alſo howe kynge Chioriſus ſente hym xxx. dyſſhes of pure golde.

Howe iren ſerueth for more neceſſary vſes then gold. Alſo an exemple of the lyfe of owr fyrſte parentes.

Howe kynge Pocchorroſa ſubmytted hym ſelfe, and gaue Vaſchus. xv. pounde weyght of wrought golde. Alſo howe Tumanama the great kynge of the golden regions towarde the ſouth ſea, is taken priſoner. Lykewyſe howe he gaue Vaſchus. xxx. pounde weyght of pure and wrought golde, and his noble men. lx. poundes weyght of golde.

Of the cauſe of vehement wyndes nere vnto the Equinoctiall line, and of the coloure of the earth of the golden mines.

Of the large and frutefull playne of Zauana, and of the ryuer Comogrus. Alſo howe kynge Comogrus baptiſed by the name of Charles, gaue Vaſchus. xx. pounde weyght of wrought golde.

Of the good fortune of Vaſchus, and howe he was turned from Goliath to Eliſeus, and from Anteus to Hercules: And with what facilitie the Spanyardes ſhall hereafter obteyne greate plentie of golde and pearles.

Of the Spanyardes conqueſtes, and fierceneſſe of the Canibales. Alſo an exhortacion to Chriſtian princes to ſette forwarde Chriſtes religion.

¶ *The contentes of the fourth booke.* Fol. 104. [*p.* 150.]

¶ The fourth vyage of Colonus the Admirall frome Spayne to Hiſpaniola, and to the other Ilandes and coaſtes of the firme lande: Alſo of the floryſſhynge Ilande Guanaſſa.

Of ſeuen kyndes of date trees, wylde vynes, and Myrobalanes: Alſo of byrdes and foules.

Of people of goodly ſtature which vſe to paynt theyr bodyes: And of the ſwyfte courſe of the ſea from the eaſt to the weſt. Alſo of freſſhe water in the ſea.

Of the large regions of Paria, Os Draconis, and Quiriquetana: And of greate Tortoyſes and reedes. Alſo of the foure frutefull Ilandes cauled Quatuor Tempora, and. xii. Ilandes cauled Limonares.

Of ſweete ſauours and holſome ayer: And of the region Quicuri, and the hauen Carjai or Myrobalanus: Alſo of certeyne ciuyle people.

Of trees groynge in the ſea after a ſtraunge ſorte, and of a ſtraunge kynde of Moonkeys which inuade men and fight with wylde bores.

Of the greate goulfe of Cerabaro repleniſſhed with many frutefull Ilandes, and of the people which weare cheynes of golde made of ouches wrought to the ſimilitude of dyuers wylde beaſtes and foules.

Of fyue vyllages whoſe inhabitauntes gyue them ſelues onely to gatherynge of golde, and are paynted, vſynge to weare garlandes of Lyons and Tygers clawes. Alſo of ſeuen ryuers in all the which is founde greate plentie of golde: And where the plentie of golde ceaſeth.

Of certeyne people which paynt theyr bodyes, and couer theyr priuie members with ſhelles, hauynge alſo plates of golde hangynge at theyr noſethrylles.

Of certeyne woormes which beinge engendered in the ſeas nere abowt the Equinoctiall, eate holes in ſhyppes: And how the Admirals ſhyppes were deſtroyde by them.

Howe the kynge of Beragua enterteyned the Lieuetenant and of the great plentie of gold in the ryuer of Duraba and in al the regions there aboute: Alſo in rootes of trees and ſtones and in maner in all the ryuers.

Howe the Lieuetenaunt and his coompany wold haue erected a colonie beſyde the ryuer of Beragua, and was repulſed by th[e]inhabitauntes.

Howe the Admirall fel into the handes of the barbarians of the Ilande of Iamaica where he lyued miſerably the ſpace of tenne moonethes: And by what chaunce he was ſaued and came to the Ilande of Hiſpaniola.

Of holſome regions, temperate ayer, and continual ſpring al the hole yeare: Alſo of certeyne people which honour golde religiouſly durynge theyr golden harueſt.

Of the mountaynes of Beragua beinge fiftie myles in heyght and hygher then the clouddes: Alſo the diſcripcion of other mountaynes and regions there about, comparynge the ſame to Italy.

Colonus his opinion as touchynge the ſuppoſed continente, and ioynynge of the north and ſouth Ocean. Alſo of the breadth of the ſayde continente or firme lande.

Of the regions of Vraba and Beragua and the great ryuer Maragnonus and the ryuer of Dabaiba or Sancti Iohannis Alſo of certeyne maryſſhes and deſolate wayes, and of dragons and Crocodiles engendered in the ſame.

Of. xx. golden ryuers abowt Dariena and of certeyne precious ſtones, eſpecially a diamunde of marueilous byggeneſſe bought in the prouince of Paria.

Of the heroical factes of the Spanyardes and howe they contemne effeminate pleaſures. Alſo a ſimilitude prouynge greate plentie of golde and precious ſtones.

¶ *The contentes of the fyfth booke.* Fol. 113. [*p.* 156.]

¶ The nauigation of Petrus Arias from Spayne to Hiſpaniola and Dariena, and of the Ilandes of Canarie. Alſo of the Ilandes of Madanino, Guadalupea, and Galanta.

Of the ſea of herbes and mountaynes couered with ſnow: Alſo of the ſwyfte courſe of the ſea towarde the weſt.

Of the ryuer Gaira, the region Caramairi, and the porte Carthago and Sancta Martha: Alſo of Americus Veſputius and his expert cunnynge in the knowledge of the carde, compaſſe and quadrant.

Howe the Canibales aſſayled Petrus Arias with his hole nauie, and ſhot of theyr venemous arrowes euen in the ſea. Alſo of theyr houſes and houſholde ſtuffe.

Howe Gonzalus Ouiedus founde a ſaphire bygger then a gooſe egge: Alſo emerodes, calcidonies, iaſpers, and amber of the mountaynes.

Of woddes of braſile trees, plentie of golde, and marchaſites of metals founde in the regions of Caramairi, Gaira, and Saturma. Alſo of a ſtraunge kynde of marchaundies exerciſed amonge the people of Zunu.

That the region of Caramairi is lyke to an earthly Paradiſe: And of the frutefull mountaynes, and pleaſaunte gardeynes of the ſame.

Of many goodly countreys made deſolate by the fiercenes of the Canibales, and of dyuers kyndes of breade made of rootes. Alſo of the maner of plantynge the roote of Iucca, whoſe iuiſe is deadely poyſon in the Ilandes, and without hurte in the continent or firme lande.

Of certeyne golden ryuers, hares, wylde bores, foules, goſſampine, whyte marble, and holſome ayer. Alſo of the greate ryuer Maragnonus deſcendynge from the mountaines couered with ſnowe, cauled Serra Neuata.

Howe Petrus Arias waſted certeyne Ilandes of the Canibales: And howe by the ſwyfte courſe of the ſea, his ſhyppes were caried in one nyght fortie leagues beyond th[e]eſtimation of the beſte pylottes.

¶ *The contentes of the ſyxte booke.* Fol. 118. [*p.* 161.]

¶ Of ſundry opinions why the ſea runneth with ſo ſwyft a courſe from the Eaſte to the weſt: and of the greate goulfe of the north parte of the firme lande.

The vyage of Sebaſtian Cabote from Englande to the froſen ſea, and howe being repulſed with Iſe in the moonethe of Iuly, he ſayled farre weſtwarde.

Of people apparelled with beaſtes ſkynnes: And howe beares take fyſſhes in the ſea and eate them.

Howe Sebaſtian Cabote after that he had diſcouered the lande of Baccallaos or Baccallearum, was cauled out of Englande into Spayne, where he was made one of th[e]aſſiſtaunce of the counſayle of th[e]affayres of India, and of his ſecond viage

Of the Ilande Fortis: And howe a great foule as bygge as a ſtorke lyghted in the gouernours ſhyppe. Alſo howe he arryued at Dariena with the kynges nauie.

Howe Vaſchus receaued the newe gouernour: And of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctial.

Howe Petrus Aries the newe gouernour diſtributed his army to conquere the ſouth regions ryche in golde, and to erecte newe colonies in the ſame.

Of the ryche golde mynes of Dabaiba, and of th[e]expedition ageynſt the kynge of that region.

Of the Violent courſe of the ſea from the eaſt to the weſt: And of the difficulte ſaylynge ageynſt the ſame.

Of the peſtiferous and vnwholſome ayer of Sancta Maria Antigua in Dariena: and howe the Spanyardes were of neceſſitie inforced to plant theyr fyrſt colonie and habitation there.

The cauſe of the varietie of regions lyinge all vnder one degree or parallelle, and by what meanes the ſonne beames are cauſe of feruent heate.

Of toades and flees engendered of droppes of water, and of a houſe ſet on fyre with lyghtnynge.

Of a dogge deuoured of a Crocodyle [*Tanquam canis e Nilo*], and of the venemus bytynge of great battes. Alſo of Lions and Tygers and other wylde beaſtes.

Howe in theſe regions all foure footed beaſtes growe to a bygger quantitie then they whiche were of the fyrſte broode. Alſo of certeyne trees of whoſe planckes if ſhips be made, they are ſafe frome the woormes cauled Broma or Byſſas.

Of a tre whoſe wod is preſent poyſon yf it be only borne about: And of an herbe that is a preſeruatiue ageinſt the ſame.

Of the ryche Ilandes of the ſouth ſea, and of certeyne expeditions ageynſt the Canibales.

¶ *The contentes of the. vii. booke.* Fol. 124. [*p.* 165.]

¶ The particular deſcription of the Ilande of Hiſpaniola, and of the ryche Ilande cauled Margaritea Dioes lyinge in the South ſea. Alſo of the greate abundaunce of bigge pearles founde in the ſame.

Howe the autoure compareth Hiſpaniola to the earthely Paradyſe: And howe it farre excelleth Italy in fertilitie and temperate ayre.

Of the fyrſte inhabitours of Hiſpaniola and of the Ilandes of Canarie.

Howe the inhabitauntes of Hiſpaniola in theyr ſonges and rhymes had certeyne propheſies that appareled men ſhulde coome to theyr contrey and brynge them into ſeruitude: And of theyr familiaritie with ſpirites. Alſo howe thoſe ſpirites haue no more appered to them ſence they were baptiſed.

Of theyr experteneſſe in ſwymmynge: And of theyr delycate ſerpentes, byrdes, foules, and popingiais.

Of the forme and ſituation of Hiſpaniola nere the Equinoctiall: And howe coulde is in ſum place thereof accidentall and not by the ſituation of the region.

Of oxen and ſwyne of exceadinge bygneſſe: And of eares of wheate as bygge as a mans arme in the braun. Alſo howe the ſwyne are fedde with myrobalanes. &c.

Of plenty of golde, braſyle, maſtix, goſſampyne, Electrum &c.: And of th[e]incommodities of intemperate regions.

Of dyuers languages in the Ilande: And howe the prouynces are deuided into regions.

Howe Andreas Moralis fayled into a daungerous and darke caue within the rocke of a mountayne: And of hole ryuers deuoured of ſuch caues. Alſo of the conflycte of the waters.

Of a ſtandynge pole in the tope of an hygh mountayne: And howe ferne and bramble buſſhes growe only in coulde regyons.

¶ *The contentes of the. viii. booke.* Fol. 130. [*p.* 170.]

¶ Of a greate lake or ſtandyng poole of ſowre and ſalte water, and of the ſea fyſſhes in the ſame in the myddelande of the Ilande. Alſo of deuouryng fyſſhes cauled Tiburoni.

Of the ryuers fauling into the lakes, and of. CC. [200] ſpringes in the ſpace of a furlonge.

A meruelous hyſtory of a kynge ſtryken dumme and lame by a miracle: And of the Indian language.

Howe ſuche as are drowned in the lake, are neuer caſte vp ageyne: And of the Ilande Guarizacca in the myddeſte of the ſtandynge lake. Alſo of a lake of freſſhe water, and an other of ſalte and freſſhe water.

Of a large playne of two hundreth myles in length: And an other of a hundrethe and twentie.

Of the meruelous fyſſhe or monſter of the ſea, cauled Manati or Matum, fedde with mans hande: and howe ſhe caryeth men ouer the lake.

Of the mountaynes, vales, hylles, playnes, and ryuers of Hiſpaniola: And howe golde is founde in all mountaines and golde and fyſſhes in all ryuers.

Of ſalte bayes, and howe the ryuers haue theyr increaſe from the caues of the mountaynes. Alſo howe there is no hurtefulle beaſte in the Ilande.

Of the pleaſures of Hiſpaniola: And of the region of Cotohi well inhabyted and ſituate in a playne in the toppes of mountaynes reachynge to the clowdes.

Of moderate coulde in the mountaynes, and of ferne of merueylous bygneſſe.

Howe pure and maſſie golde is founde in the region of Cotoy or Cotohy: And that the veyne of golde is a lyuynge tree. Alſo of the rootes, braunches, and floures of the ſame, and howe certeyne caues are ſuſteyned with pyllers of golde.

What golde is broughte yearely from Hiſpaniola into Spayne: And of the ſalte of the mountaynes, beinge as hard as ſtones and cleare as cryſtall. Alſo ſprynges of ſalte, freſh and fowel water.

Of certeyne wylde men lyuynge in caues and dennes without any certeyne language: And of theyr meruylous ſwiftneſſe a foote.

Of pytche of the rocke and twoo kyndes of trees: And of the leafe of a tree vſed in the ſteede of paper. Alſo howe th[e]inhabitantes thinke that the Chriſtians can make thoſe leaues ſpeake and diſcloſe all ſecreates.

Of a ſtronge colour made of the iuſe of a certeyn apple: And of the herbe whoſe ſmoke is poyſon.

The contentes of the. ix. booke. Fol. 136. [*p.* 175.]

Of the kyndes of frutes wherwith th[e]inhabitauntes of Hiſpaniola lyued fyrſte, and howe they came to the knowelege of Iucca. Alſo howe Ceres fyrſt found wheate and barley in Egypte.

Why theyr kinges are cauled by dyuers names, and by what names they ſalute the kynges chyldren when they are borne.

Howe they make theyr teſtamentes, and howe certeyne of the kynges wyues and concubines are buryed with them.

Of the variable motions of the elementes in Hiſpaniola: And where it rayneth but lyttle, and where much.

Of the colonies and vyllages that the Spanyardes haue buylded in Hiſpaniola: and of the other Ilands about the ſame

Of a ſprynge which runnyng vnder the ſea from Hiſpaniola, breaketh furth in the Iland of Arethuſa: Alſo of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctial, and of the ryche golde mynes of the Ilande of Cuba.

Of the gumme cauled *Animæ Album*: And of the Canibale[s]. Alſo whereby it was thought that there were Ilandes of women.

Of hony founde in trees and rockes: And of the generation of greate Tortoyſes and of theyr egges.

¶ *The contentes of the. x. booke.* Fol. 140. [*p.* 178.]

¶ Of the expedition ageynſte the kynge of the Ilande Dites in the ſouth ſea: And howe after foure conflictes, ſubmyttynge hym ſelfe, he gaue our men a hundreth and ten pounde weyght of greate pearles. Alſo howe he agreed to pay yearely a hundreth pounde weyght of pearles for a tribute.

Howe axes and hatchettes are more eſteemed then golde, or perles: And of greate plentie of hartes and cunnyes. Alſo howe the kynge of Dites and his famelie were baptiſed.

Of perles of great pryce: And howe Paule the byſſhop of Rome bowght a perle for four and fortie thouſand ducades.

Dyuers opinions of the generation of perles: And of a hundreth pearles founde in one ſhel fyſſhe. Alſo of the byrth of pearles.

Of the regions of the Eaſte ſyde of the goulfe of Vraba: And of the originall of the Canibales.

Of certeyne circumciſed people which haue the knowledge of letters and vſe bookes: And what chaunced of the capitaynes which Petrus Arias ſente furth dyuers wayes. Alſo howe Iohn Solyſius was ſlayne of the Canibales, and of theyr fierceneſſe.

Howe Iohn Pontius was repulſed of the Canibales, and of the lewde behauour of Iohn Aiora.

Of the variable fortune of Gonſalus Badaiocius: And howe after he hadde gathered greate ryches of golde, he had the ouerthrowe, and was ſpoyled of all. Of the golden region of Coiba Dites: And howe theyr ſlaues are marked in the face.

Of the Ilandes of the ſouth ſea: And of the regions frome whenſe the Portugales fetche their ſpices.

Of a ſtraunge kynde of fowlynge: and of the trees that beare gourdes.

Of the later opinions as touchynge the ſwyfte courſe of the Ocean towarde the weſte: and of the continente or firme lande. Alſo of the vyage from the newe landes to Spayne.

Of the golde mynes of Dariena: and the maner of gatherynge of golde in the ſame: Alſo of the dropſie of coCetouſnes which is not ſatiffyed with ryches.

¶ *For the contentes of the booke of the Ilands lately found reade the margente notes of the ſame.*

FINIS.

¶ THE INTERPRETOVRS EXCVSE.

I haue not in wrytynge byn very curious
To auoyde the ſcornes of Rhinoceros noſe,
Or the fyled iudgement of ſeuere Ariſtarchus
Not fearynge thereby any thynge to loſe,
But haue thought it ſufficient to be open and playne
Not lookynge for other commoditie or gayne.

I am not eloquent I knowe it ryght well.
If I be not barbarous I deſyre no more,
I haue not for euery woorde aſked counſell
Of eloquent Eliot or ſyr Thomas Moore.
Take it therfore as I haue intended,
The fautes with fauour may ſoone be amended.

The poet Homere for all his eloquence,
Lacked not Zoilus to be his fo[e]:
Wherfore I conclude this for a trewe ſentence.
That no man lacketh ſuo bargello:
For as no beaſte lyueth without woorme or flye,
So no man lacketh his priuie enemie.

Rumpatur Zoilus.

¶ *Fautes eſcaped in the pryntynge.* F. *the leafe.* L. *the line.* B. *the backe ſyde of the leafe.*

[Theſe corrections have all been embodied in the Text.]

¶ Emprynted at London in Paules Churchyarde at the signe of the Byble by Rychарde Iug.

[In other copies.]

yarde at the signe of the Bell by Roberte Toy.

Anno. Domini. M. D. LV.

Index

of

Personal names, and names of places, chiefly outside Europe.

The Contents Pages at vii.-x., 12, 45, and 391-398 have not been indexed.

Abarien island, 255
Abdua river, 315
Abenamachie, King, 119, 120, 121
Abibeiba, King, 120, 121
Abila mountaynes, 236
Abraham, 51, 52
Abraiba, 120, 121
Abrayme Prouince, 226
Aburema river, 135, 152
Acatan, 34
Agateba, 153
Achaia, 176
Achas town, 325
Achemenides, 135, 154
Achilles, 5
Achor, Vale of, 50
Acla village, 231
Acuna, The Liceptate, 272
Adam, 229, 338, 340
Adams, Clement, xxxviii., 289
Adda river, 363, 364
Aden, 13, 24, 267, 269
Aden, King of, 13
Adialbenicus, Emperor, 176
Adrianson, 285
Adriane, Pope, 309
Adriatike sea, 133, 155, 318
Æneas Siluius, 8, 41, 50, 347
Africa, xix., xxi., xxix, 9, 13, 35, 52, 56, 126, 129, 139, 236, 245, 248, 250, 261, 262, 273, 285, 295, 298, 337, 338, 340, 346, 373, 384, 385, 387.
Africa, Gulf of, 270, 374.
Afrijken, xxxi.
Agathyrsi, 91
Agermannia, Dukedome of, 305
Agisimba, Region of, 41
Agnaneo island, 135
Agnes, Vincentius, 105, 128, 129
Agricola, Georgius, xli., xliv., 7, 366
Agrippa, Cornelius, xliv.
Agus, Antipater, 319
Ahumada, Peter de, 346
Aiaguitin river, 153
Ajora, Gonsalus, 181
Ajora, Johannes, 162, 181
Alamino Antonie, 187, 188
Alaminus, 192, 193, 194, 195
Alba Russia, 291
Albertus, Magnus, 7, 9, 10, 41, 364
Alcala, 63
Alcantara, 165
Alcaraz, Antonie of, 272
Alcayr [*Cairo*], City of, 13, 14, 63, 131, 153, 172, 186, 267, 285, 307, 315, 374
Alcazaua, Simon of, 272
Alday, James, xix., xx.
Alexander, xxix., xxxiii., xliv., 5, 32, 50, 74, 129, 176, 201, 241, 248, 273, 274, 285, 310, 315, 325, 339, 385
Alexandria, City of, 110, 153, 217, 267, 283, 351
Alexandryne, Patriarch of, xxx.
Alfonsus de Ponte, 157
Alla, 359, 368
Allago, xxviii.
Allen, Richard, xiii.
Almanzor, 271, 272
Almayne [*Germany*], Emperour of xxx.
Almaynes, 56, 97, 116, 292, 320, 328
Alonso, 341
Alonso, Don, 273, 341
Alonsus, Petrus, 36
Alpha, Poynt, 75, 76
Alpheus river, 134, 176
Alphonsus, 40, 389
Alphonsus, Petrus, 94, 96
Alvarado, Peter, 187
Alverado, Spatense, 192
Amacaiz, City of, 374
Amaiauna, Cave of, 99
Amaltheum sea, 289
Amaquei, Region of, 169
Amari, Lake of, 284
Amaxobii, 301
Ambalao island, 260
Ambon island, 260
America, xi., xiii., xviii., xxi., xxiii., xxv., xxvi., xxviii., xxx., xxxii., xxxiv., xl., 3, 8, 32, 35, 43, 61, 205, 243, 281, 335, 343, 353, 371, 389
Americus, xxi.
Amerigo Vespucci, xxv., 37, 38, 39, 127, 134, 157, 275, 277, 279
Anacaona, Queen, 85, 176
Anacauchoa, Beuchius, 83, 84, 85, 86, 176
Anata, King, 182, 183
Anbon island, 344
Ancisus, 108, 109, 110, 113, 114, 115, 116, 118, 119, 123, 124, 125, 126, 137
Ancyra, 311
Andalusia, xiii., 130, 220, 225, 339
Andalusia, Noua, 130
Andreas, Moralis, 131
Andrewe, Lawrence, xxvi.
Andronicus, xlviii.
Anes, John, 377, 378
Angleria, 43, 63, 65, 185, 207, 246, 299
Anghiera, xxxvii.
Annez, Vincentius, 126, 128, 129, 130
Anniuici, Region of, 169
Antei, 285
Anteus, 149
Anthiochyen, xxxi.
Anthiocus, 8
Anthropophagi, 23, 29, 41, 65, 385
Antiglia island, 38
Antilia island, 66
Antiqua, Island of, 177
Antonie, Master, 288
Antony di Mendoza, 287
Anunctus, 191
Apianus, 10
Apollo, 10, 102, 172, 296, 298
Apnu, Region of, 322
Apsa, 363
Aprutium, Bishop of, 309
Aquanil, Province of, 187
Aquillaris, Hieronimus, 192, 193
Arabia, xxviii., xxxi., 8, 9, 13, 14, 20, 56, 129, 153, 156, 160, 180, 235, 284, 285, 286, 369, 385
Arabia, Gulf of, 284, 286, 339, 347
Arabia, Sea of, 309
Arabo, 168
Aragon, King of, xxx. 51
Aragonie, Cardinal of, 64, 73, 79, 82, 87, 90, 94, 96, 103, 133
Aramana, Region of, 168
Arambec, xiv.
Arbolancius, 141
Archimedes, xlvii., xlviii.
Arcimboldus, 127
Ardagni, Kingdom of, 314
Arethusa, 134, 176
Arenalis, 88
Areuado, 232
Argilla, City of, 374
Ariane, 245
Arias, Helizabetha Boadilla, 127
Arias, Petrus, 61, 126, 127, 136, 137, 142, 156, 157, 158, 162, 165, 178, 179, 181, 198, 199, 214
Arimathia, Joseph of, 56
Arion, 171
Aristarchus, 398
Aristocleon, 41
Aristotle, xliii., xliv., 9, 10, 67, 142, 179, 278, 293, 313, 333, 339, 340, 386
Arkey, Laurence, xii.
Armenes, xxx.
Armeneten, xxxi.
Armenia, xxvii., xxviii., xxx., xxxii., xxxiv., 176, 311, 314, 329
Armenicus, Emperour, 176
Armennyten, xxxi.
Arnold, R., xxv., xxvi.
Arnheim, xx.
Arottinbergh, 368
Arra, Castle, 381
Arsina, xxix.
Arsinoe, City of, 284, 285
Artawischa river, 323
Artawische, 323
Artemisia, 49, 128
Arucetto island, 260
Arzina Ford, xxxix.
Asasi, xx.
Ascanius, 63, 64
Ascanius Sphorcia [*i.e.*, Sforza], 65, 68, 103, 127
Ascham, Roger, xl.
Ascon City, 374
Asia, the less, 7
Asoph, 324, 325
Asopus, 142
Asseuedo, Antonie de, 272
Assyryen, xxxi.
Astesia, 363
Astrachan, 308, 314, 325, 326, 329
Astur, Oastenses, 135
Asturia, 54, 116
Asyen, xxx.
Atahaliba, King, 345
Atamea village, 152
Ath, xliii.
Atiei, Region of, 169

Atlantike island, 129, 337, 338, 340
Atlas mountains, 129
Atlas, the greater, 385
Attabeira, 99
Attibuni, Region of, 169
Attibunicus river, 73, 168, 171
Attila, 326
Auanzo mountains, 368
Augusta, City of, 286
Augustinus de Ceratta, 54
Augustus, Emperour, 8, 283, 306, 369
Auila Alphons[o], 187, 192
Auis, 273
Auleta, King, 283
Aurea Anus, 323, 324
Aurea Chersonesus, 32, 40, 75, 247, 313, 344
Ausonia, 167
Austria, Archduke of, 289
Auxendia, xxviii.
Auxerre, xliv.
Ay Ay islands, 69, 130
Ayqueroa, Region of, 169
Azamor, City of, 374
Azania, Region of, 385
Azafi, 374
Azeuedo, 274
Azgar, 374
Azion Gaber, 7
Azores, Islands of, 203, 204, 219, 339, 347, 348
Azotus, 57
Azoum river, 314
Azuam village, 176
Azzuei, Region of, 169

Babbareo lake, 170
Babel, Tower of, xxxii.
Babell, 290
Babilon, 14, 56, 57, 63, 172, 187, 241, 266, 284, 285, 297, 307, 315
Babilon, Soltane of, 153, 172
Babilonii, The, 385
Babilonyon, xxxii.
Bacanor, 265
Baccallaos, Land of, xix., 55, 161, 162, 195, 242, 287, 288, 299, 344, 345, 347
Bacchian island, 259, 260
Baccia, 126
Bachau sea, 291
Bacon, Lord, xxii.
Bacon, Roger, xliv., xlvii., xlviii.
Bactria, 308
Badaiocius, Gasper, 165
Badaiocius, Gonzalus, 181, 182, 183
Badaioz, 272, 273
Badajos, xiii.
Bafrida, 291
Baguanimaho, Region of, 168
Bahaboni, 166
Bahuan river, 172
Baian, 171
Baia Natiuitatis, 129
Bainoa, 168, 169, 170, 172, 173, 176
Baiohaigua, Region of, 169
Bajasetes, Ottomanus, 6, 311
Balassia, Region of, 264
Balboa, Vaschus, 149, 162, 178, 338
Baleares islands, 301
Ballard, William, xiii.
Baltheum sea, 299, 312, 331
Baluastro, 346
Banda island, 22
Bandan, xxix., 260, 269
Banderana, xxix.
Bangalla, King, 21
Bangella, City of, 21
Baptiste, Elisius, 85, 99
Baptiste, Master, xliii.
Barack, Soltan, 329
Barbai island, 256
Barbaregaf, City of, 374
Barbarossa, Emperour, 347
Barbata island, 177
Barbary, xix., xx, xxviii., xxxviii., 237, 374, 380, 384
Barbessa, Adoardo, 258
Barcha, 374
Barnarde of Mesa, 130
Barramedabas, 87
Barrientos, 272
Barthema [*i.e.*, *Varthema*], Ludivico, xlviii.
Bartholomeus Colonus, 31, 82, 134, 153, 154, 340
Barthus castle, 331
Barutti, xii.
Basilides, 41
Basilius, 289, 308, 309, 311, 314, 316, 317, 319, 321, 324, 328, 329
Basilius, Andreas, 316
Basilius, Demetrius, 316
Basilius, George, 316
Basilius, John, 316, 319
Basilius, Magnus, 290, 291
Basilius, Symeon, 316
Basing, xxxix.
Baskird, 293
Basle, xxxvii.
Bastard, Count L. de, xliv.
Bastarne, 311
Bastimento island, 235
Bath, Earl of, xix.
Bauruco, Region of, 169
Bazantium, Emperours of, 314
Beata port, 107, 113, 177, 213
Beaton, Cardinal, xxxviii.
Bebeid, Chan, 329
Beda island, 35
Beit island, 374
Belchia, 309
Belozeria, 309
Benaia island, 260
Beneu island, 260
Bengala, Province of, 261, 264, 267, 268, 344
Benin, 270, 376
Beragua, Region of, 107, 108, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 128, 130, 132, 134, 135, 136, 149, 150, 151, 153, 154, 155, 163, 165, 211, 214, 218, 219, 233, 234
Berenice, City of, 284
Beres river, 323
Berges, City of, 331
Beringoccius, Vannucius, xlvi.
Berma, 344
Bermeio, Sea of, 338, 339, 346, 347
Bermuda island, 233
Berosus, xlviii., 346
Beryn, John, 383
Beselchei, 49
Besermani, The, 327
Besson, xlvii.
Betanchor, 65, 166
Betis river, 127, 157
Beuchius Anacauchoa, King, 83, 84, 85, 86, 176
Beyrout, xii.
Bezerra, Franciscus, 165, 181, 183
Bian, Sancti, Johannis gulf, 194
Biddle, Mr, xv.
Bieloiefero, 321
Bimini, 345
Binthaitel, 100
Bion, 41
Biraen, 344
Biringuccio Vannuccio, xxxvii, 353, 356
Biron, Master, xviii.
Biscaine, 274
Bisinagar, City of, 15
Bisineghe, 277
Bithynia, 290, 311
Bitsagitsch, xxviii.
Bizantium, 307
Bizantium, Emperour of, 314
Bizerta port, 374
Blasius, 331
Blemines, The, 385
Blesconia, City of, 289
Blondus, 348
Boadilla, Governour of, 105, 127
Boadilla, Helisabetha, 127
Bodenham, Roger, xviii.
Boheme, King of, xxx., 312
Bohol island, 256, 258
Boilus, 79
Boiuca island, 135
Boium, gatti river, 109, 132
Bolgaria, 309
Bolschega mountains, 323
Bombassa, xxviii.
Bonauentura, 105
Bonauista island, 87, 272
Bonanum, City of, 84
Boneface, 56
Bonham, W., xxxvii.
Bononiama, King, 145
Bononie, Aristotles of, 313
Bononie, Galeatius Butrigarius of, 106, 127, 283, 285
Boriostomea river, 98
Boriquena island, 45, 345, 346
Boristhene river, 289, 309, 311, 312, 314, 316, 319
Bornei islands, 22, 23
Bosphorus, The, 59
Boua port, 374
Boubige, xlv.
Bourne, Mr H. R. Fox, xvi.
Bowyer, Sir William, xiii.
Boyuca island, 345
Braalin island, 260
Brabant, xliii.
Brasil, xv., xvi., xvii., 250, 251, 253, 273, 285, 288, 375, 385, 386
Brewer, Rev. J. S., M.A., xiii.
Bridger, Mr C., xlviii.
Brocardus, xlvi.
Brooke, John, xviii.
Bryaces, 49
Buchebuea, King, 146
Buchema island, 30
Buda, 326
Budia island, 260
Budomel, 384
Buen Abrigo Point, 273
Buena Vista, 272
Bugia, Region of, 374
Buiaici, Region of, 169
Bullen, 9
Buona Speranza, 261, 262, 338, 374, 385
Bur island, 344
Burges, Bishop of, 126, 127, 134
Burgonie, Duke of, 208
Burichena island, 45, 70, 104, 130, 159, 173, 176
Burleigh, Lord, xxxvii.
Burnei island, 258
Burney island, 272
Burrough, Stephen, xxxviii.
Buru island, 260
Buthuan island, 255, 259
Buthuan, King, 255
Butler, John, xlv.
Butricarius Galeatius, 106, 127, 283, 285
Buts, Sir William, xviii., xix.
Butts, Thomas, xviii., xix.
Byzantium, xi.

Cabedus, Johannes, 130, 153
Cabot, Loaisa, 274
Cabot, Sebastian, xiii., xv., xix., xxxviii., xxxix, xl., xlvi., xlvii., 6, 55, 61, 161, 162, 195, 272, 274, 283, 288, 289, 299, 335, 340, 345, 348, 350, 386
Cabouerde [*i.e.*, *Cape-Verde*], 74, 87, 97, 129, 134, 272, 277, 385
Cacacubana, Region of, 169
Cacausu, City of, 24
Cacedus, John, 198
Caccicus, 72, 89, 128, 223
Caccicus Cauaboa, 72, 79, 80, 81, 85
Cacique Chiman, 225
Cadamustus, Aloisius, 127, 270, 280
Cades, 86
Cadissen, 329
Cadona, Duke of, 173
Caghaian island, 258
Cahaymi, Region of, 169
Cahini island, 168
Cahonas island, 166, 172
Caiabi, Province of, 168, 172, 173, 176
Caiacoa, Province of, 168, 173
Caiguam mountain, 171
Caigui, City of, 26, 171
Caihabo, Province of, 168, 169, 170
Cailon island, 344
Caiouana, Valley of, 170
Cairo, 374
Cairus, 307
Caizcimu, Province of, 168, 169, 170, 173
Cakeado, 381
Calaghan island, 255, 256, 259
Calantan, 260
Calauera, Barnardino de, 108
Cales, 86, 87, 93, 94, 97, 181
Calese island, 286
Calicium, 38
Calicut, 7, 8, 13, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 24, 32, 39, 256, 261, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 344, 374, 385
Calicut, King of, 14, 17, 18, 19, 21
Calidonia, 143, 177
Caliz, 346, 347
Callienten, xxix.
Calligula, 59
Calpe mountains, 236
Cals, 68, 73
Caluacam, Region of, 188, 189
Calunezfcho, Region of, 322
Calzadilla, 341
Camaie, Region of, 169
Cambaia, 8, 13, 14, 20, 261, 267, 269
Cambaia, King of, 40
Cambalu [*i.e.*, *Pekin*], City of, 24, 25, 287, 307, 326
Cambie, 259
Camemonis, Region of, 183
Camen mountains, 323
Camen Bolschoi mountains, 322, 323
Camenckh, 322
Cameni, 323
Camenipoias mountains, 323
Camigna, Don Christopher of, 130
Camomorus, Region of, 98, 132
Camoteia island, 166
Campaa, Region of, 260
Campbell, Dr M. F. A. G., xxv., xxvi.
Campechium, Province of, 187, 188

Campegius, Cardinal, 310
Campion, Gasper, xvii., xviii.
Camul, Province of, 27
Canabocoa, Region of, 169, 172
Canada, 287
Canary islands, xiii., xxviii., 28, 30, 32, 36, 38, 40, 41, 65, 66, 68, 87, 97, 150, 157, 166, 177, 181, 199, 210, 245, 250, 277, 339, 374, 375, 380, 389
Cananor, xxviii.
Cananor, King of, 15
Cancell, Luys, 346
Canchietans, The, 95
Canchietes, Region of, 36, 95
Cane, 271
Canehu island, 256
Canglu, City of, 24
Canibals, Islands of the, 30, 66, 68, 78, 160, 162, 177, 180
Cannafistula island, 119
Cano, 272
Canonor, Kingdom of, 14, 15, 20, 261, 268
Canthan, City of, 260
Cape Blanke, 380
Cape Bona Speranza, 129, 279, 285, 286, 348, 350
Cape Breton, xiv., xviii.
Cape Cattigara, 253
Cape Corea, 382
Cape de Bas, xiv.
Cape de Buona Speranzo, 374
Cape de Monte, 381
Cape de las Palmas, 381, 382
Cape de tres Puntas, 381
Cape de Sper, xiv.
Cape Trepoyntes, 381, 382, 383
Cape of Good Hope, 129, 385
Capelan, City of, 21, 344
Capha, 324
Caphi island, 260
Capira, Region of, 234
Capling, William, xii.
Capo Desiderato, 252
Capo Verde Islands, 32, 35, 36, 65, 74, 87, 129, 203, 204, 250, 261, 262, 272, 273, 274, 277, 280, 338, 373, 382, 385, 387
Capronus, 86, 91, 92
Capucar, 265
Caput Bonæ Sperantiæ, 129, 385
Caput Sancti Augustini, 129, 134, 181, 183
Caput Veride islands, 32, 35, 36, 74, 87, 129, 385
Caracaracoles, 100
Caramairi, Region of, 106, 107, 109, 134, 144, 157, 158, 159, 160, 162
Caramatexius, King, 171
Carandra, Gulf of, 285
Caraqueira island, 177
Carcham, Province of, 26
Cardano, Girolamo, xxxviii., 158, 161, 207, 217, 259, 294, 307
Carenas, 191,
Careta, 108, 115, 116, 118, 121, 137, 164, 182
Caria, King of, 49, 128
Caria, Queen of, 49, 128
Cariai, Region of, 151, 152, 156
Caribana, 107, 119, 180, 183
Caribdis, 304
Caribes islands, 68
Carles, Captain, xlviii.
Carnica, 314, 368
Caromoram, 25
Carter, Master, xviii.
Carthage, 176, 340, 374
Carthage, Hannibal of, 139
Carthagena, 134, 157, 160, 214, 215, 226
Carthaginis Portus, 106
Carthago, 106, 107, 108, 109, 113, 134, 157, 162, 165
Cartier, Jaques, 287, 345
Carucueria, 69, 157, 159
Casa Francisus, xlvii.
Casan, King of, 326, 328
Caspia, 8, 169, 170, 173
Caspian sea, 170, 287, 291, 308, 309, 311, 314, 321, 326, 329, 346
Cassam, City of, 291, 311, 314, 319, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329
Cassima river, 323
Cassius mountain, 285
Castaglione, Baltassar, 9
Castaneda, 272
Castella, Aurea, 130
Castella de Mina, 382
Castella Vetus, 68
Castile, King of, xxx., 37, 201, 203, 340
Castile, Queen of, 201
Castile, Isabel of, 273, 274, 341
Castile, Ferdinando of, 51, 52, 65, 73, 127, 131, 201, 208, 209, 211, 229, 236, 273, 341, 342, 343, 345
Castlen, Edward, xli.
Castor, 250
Castoreum sea, 303
Castromow, 331
Catalonia, 173
Catarapa, 237
Catena Mundi mountains, 286, 324
Cathay [*i.e.*, *China*], xiii., xxxviii., xxxix., xl., xli., 8, 22, 24, 25, 26, 59, 98, 261, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 308, 310, 312, 313, 321, 322, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 333, 339, 344, 345, 363
Cathay Cham [*i.e.*, *Khav*], of, xxi., 21, 24, 25, 26, 27, 60, 286, 287, 289, 322, 324, 326, 329, 330
Cathay, Emperour of, 25, 60
Catighan island, 256
Catherine, Queen, 51, 71, 274
Catherine, Saint, 84
Cato, 122
Cattigara, 262
Cattigara, Cape, 253
Caucasus mountains, 18
Cauchieta, 95, 98
Caunaboa, Cacicus, 72, 79, 80, 81, 85
Caunana, 99
Caunoa, Region of, 169
Cauta, 99
Cautan, City of, 344
Caya river, 272, 273, 274
Caya bridge, 273, 274
Cayrus [*i.e.*, *Cairo*], City of, 14, 186
Cazacubuna mountains, 172
Cazibaxagua, 99
Cecil, Sir W., xxii., xxxviii., xliii.
Ceilen, xxx.
Ceilam island, 344
Celaruri island, 260
Cepr, Quintus Metellus, 347
Cemaccus, King, 110, 119, 121, 122, 198
Cemobal, 196
Cenalo island, 255.
Cenegales, 155
Central America, xi.
Centurione, Paulo, 287, 308, 309, 320
Cerabaro, Region of, 112, 135, 152, 154, 155, 156, 163, 182
Ceratta [*i.e.*, *Zaratte*] Augustinus de, 54
Cerda, 341
Ceres, 175
Cernigonia, 309
Cesar, 59, 305
Cesariensis, 374
Chabot, C., xlv.
Chacouam island, 260
Chagre river, 234, 235
Cham, 346
Chamailaba, Prince, 129
Chan Cublai, 330
Charles V., xiii., xlv.
Charles, King, 63
Charles IX., xlv., xlvii.
Charybdis, 163, 330
Chaucer, xxxvii.
Chaunceler, Richard, xvii., xxxviii., xxxix., xl., 59, 285, 289, 326, 333, 386
Chedsey, Dr, xxxix.
Cheke, Sir John, xliii., xliv.
Cheregatus, Francis, 191, 309
Chethai lake, 287
Cheru, King, 182
Chiacones, King, 128
Chiapes, King, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 145, 178
Chiauaccha, Prince, 129
Chiman, Cacique, 225
China, 20, 260, 261, 267, 269, 272, 339, 344, 347
China, Gulf of, 260
Chionsus, King, 146
Chiouia mountain, 319
Chirara, 152
Chippit island, 258
Chitaza, 152
Chorogoski Nosz, 322
Chrisostomus, 290, 291
Christiernus, 304, 309
Christophori Sancti, 105
Ciamba, 130, 150
Cibana, Region of, 73, 74, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 105, 168, 171, 172
Cicero, Marcus Tullus, xliv., 49, 132, 283, 284
Ciclopes, 154
Cicylian, King, xxx.
Ciguaios, 86, 91
Ciguana, 91
Cilapulapu, Prince, 285
Cilicia, 7, 8
Cimbrica Chersonesus, 311, 314
Cimbulon, King, 258
Cinchital, 27
Cingaporla, 260
Cingulus Mundi mountain, 324
Ciniana, Region of, 36
Cipanga, Region of, 73, 80, 81, 82, 167, 253, 339, 340, 343
Citrachan, 308, 314
Ciuola, 287
Claudius, 54
Clement VI., Pope, 308, 309, 347
Cleodii, The, 385
Cleopatra, 141, 142, 166, 283, 315
Cleopatrida, City of, 284
Clesma river, 314
Cloelia, 71
Cochin, King of, xxix.
Cochinus, 183
Cocheram, Martin, xvii.
Codego island, 106, 215
Coi Cathay island, 343
Coilba Dites, 182
Coiba, Gulf of, 108, 115, 116, 164, 182
Coiba, King of, 108, 115, 116, 117, 121, 137, 164, 182
Colchis, Region of, 51, 135, 262, 310
Cole, Master, xix.
Colen, xxix.
Coligny, Admiral, xlv.
Collao, City of, 343
Collocutea, Region of, 183
Colluacana island, 189, 191, 195, 196
Colmenaris, Rodericus, 113, 114, 115, 116, 119, 120, 122, 123, 126, 157, 183.
Colmogora, Region of, 291, 293, 312
Colmogor, City of, 286, 322.
Colmum, City of, 290
Cologna, 291
Colonia Agrippina, City of, 289
Colum, xxix
Columbus (or Colonus), Bartholomeus, 31, 82, 134, 153, 154, 340
Columbus (or Colonus), Christophorus, 28, 29, 35, 38, 41, 65, 66, 67, 69, 79, 80, 87, 95, 96, 98, 99, 103, 105, 106, 108, 111, 112, 113, 115, 118, 127, 128, 129, 133, 134, 135, 150, 151, 153, 154, 155, 157, 163, 177, 184, 191, 192, 202, 209, 226, 272, 288, 337, 339, 340, 341, 342, 346
Columbus (or Colonus), Diegus, 115, 118, 122, 127, 177, 184, 240
Columbus (or Colonus), Fernando, 272
Columna, 313
Commendator, King, 123, 124, 125
Comi, 187
Comogra, 116, 162, 179
Comogrus, King, 116, 117, 118, 120, 122, 137, 146, 147, 148, 162
Commodus, Emperour, 284
Comoiayxa, 172
Compostele, 100
Conception, Tower of, 80, 82, 84, 86, 92, 93, 105, 130
Condé, Prince de, xliv., xlv.
Condiuia, 310
Conigangui, 96
Connulaha, City of, 260
Constantina, 374
Constantine, 290, 316
Constantinople, Bishop of, xxxi.
Constantinople, Emperour of, 316
Constantinople, Patriarche of, xxx., 290, 291
Conte Rimondo, 270
Cooper, xxxvii.
Coperdalia, 305
Copto, 284
Coquera, King, 140
Corala, 271
Corales, 180
Corduba, 162, 181, 186, 192
Corea, 382
Corelia, 292, 321
Corichæum, 102
Corimucol, 20
Corinthus, City of, 80, 100
Coro island, 215
Coronado, 287
Coronati, 238
Cortes, xiii., xl., xlv., xlvi., 274
Cortesreales, Gasper, 344
Cortesreales islands, 344
Cortesius Fernando, 191, 192, 195, 198, 238, 342
Corsali, Andreas de, 275, 279
Corus, 382

Corytho, 166
Cossa, Johannes De la, 126, 134, 156
Cossa, 107
Cossin river, 323
Cossum, 325
Cotam, 26
Cotochus, King, 146.
Cotohi, 172, 173
Cotoy, 169
Cozumella island, 46, 187, 188, 189, 191, 192, 193
Cozumellaus, King, 188
Cracouia, 314
Crayford, 7
Creta, 166, 172, 316
Cretenses, xlviii., 172
Cresus, 42, 146
Croke, 381
Crystente, xxxiv.
Cuadalchiber, 210.
Cuba island, 6, 31, 40, 66, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 79, 90, 104, 105, 123, 125, 128, 130, 150, 154, 161, 163, 167, 173, 176, 177, 184, 186, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 195, 198, 210, 231, 233, 239, 241, 262, 298, 338, 344, 346
Cuba, Governour of, 191
Cubagua island, 213, 214
Cubana, 169
Cubigar river, 153
Cuchibachoa, Region of, 98, 108, 113, 128, 134
Cuella de Segovia, xv.
Cueua, 219, 237
Cuguibacoa, 165
Cugureo, 340
Cuhabo, 168, 169
Cuiriza, 146
Culchas, 141
Culata point, 119, 121, 122
Cumana, 89, 94, 96, 98, 128, 156, 165, 213, 214
Cupoton King, 187
Curiana, 89, 94, 95, 96, 98, 128
Cursius Quintus, 241
Curtana, 36, 95
Cuti river, 226
Cuzibet island, 23
Cybaho, 169
Cyrenaua, 374
Cyrrha, 100
Czar Kythaiski, 324
Czilma river, 322
Czircho river, 322
Czriremissa, 293

Dabaiba, King, 119, 121, 122, 163
Dabaiba river, 132, 155, 183, 199
Dabiague, 169
Dacicus, 176
Dahabon, 169
Dahabonici, Region of, 169
Dahatio, 168
Daiaguo mountains, 173
Daiguani mountains, 171
Dalekarle river, 305
Dalion, 41
Dalmacyen King, xxx.
Daimatia, 290, 364
Damascus, 56, 314
Damian, 310
Damianus a Goes, 51, 58
Damiata, City of, 284
Danadim river, 323
Danowe river, 131
Danaus, xlviii.
Daneo port, 284
Dardanus, 166
Dariena, 114, 115, 116, 118, 119, 121, 123, 125, 126, 130, 131, 134, 135, 136, 137, 143, 145, 148, 149, 156, 157, 158, 162, 163, 164, 165, 178, 179, 180, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 192, 198, 199, 207, 218, 220, 226, 236, 238, 262
Darien river, 110, 132, 191
Darius, King, 59, 284
Darnasseri, 20
Darthmouth, 379
Däubeny, Oliver, xviii.
Dauid, xlvii., 51, 349, 385
Dauid, Master, 330
Dausian, 344
Davis, xlvi.
Decan, 264
Dechan, 14
Dedalus, 55
Deerfeorth, Cornelius, xxxviii.
De las Perlas island, 54
De la Sal island, 272
De la Flore island, 382
Delagartos river, 132
Delapuente, Franciscus, 183
Deli mountains, 268
De los Azores, 203, 204, 339
Delphis, 296, 298
Demahus river, 168
Demetriowe, City of, 321
Demetrius, 59, 292, 308, 309, 310, 311, 313, 325, 329, 331
Demogorgon, xlvi., 161
Denham, Henry, xiii
Denmark, King of, xxx., 299, 304, 308, 309, 319, 331, 332
Deptford, xxxviii.
Desborch, John of, xxv., xxvi.
Desiderata island, 177, 210
Desideratus, Portus, 188.
Destam island, 192
Desseosa, Francis, 377
Deza, 130
Diaguo, Region of, 169
Diaz, Johannas, 105, 135, 165
Didacus, 75, 77, 78, 79
Dido, 166
Diego, Henriques, 378
Diego, Nicuesa, 106, 107, 108, 109, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 126, 128, 135, 137, 145, 150, 151, 153, 156
Dieguan sea, 266
Diegus Marques, 157
Diegus Mendez, 154
Diegus Ordassus, 192
Diegus Valasquen, 186
Dikilappones, Region of, 331
Diodorus, xlviii., 351
Diodorus *Siculus*, 55, 369
Dites, 165, 178, 183
Dium, City of, 13
Doesborch *or* Doesburg, xxv.
Doesburgh, Jan Van, xxv., xxvi.
Dolateranus, 10
Dominica island, 30, 68, 70, 105, 130, 150, 157, 163, 174, 210
Dominikes, Tower, Seynt, 82, 84
Domitian, 284
Don Alonso, 341
Don Eurique, 341
Don, John Captain, 382
Don, John, of Austria, xii.
Don Lewes, 378
Don Luys, 341
Don Pascual de Gayangos, xiv.
Don Phylippe, 346
Donco, 324, 325
Donetz Scwerski, 325
Doria, Juanette, xvii.
Doria, Pedro, xvii.
Dorpe, Roeland van der, xxv., xxvi.
Douer, 379
Dragonis, Os, 88, 95, 96, 98, 108
Dranus river, 318
Drauer, Master, xviii.
Dromon, Achillis, 310
Dront, 331
Dryades, 83, 101
Duas Arbores, 176
Dubna River, 321
Duchala, 374
Dudley, John, xxxix.
Duna River, 312
Dunenburg, 312
Duraba, 135, 153
Duran, Thomas, 272
Durriba, 153
Dyonisius, King, xliv.

East India, xii., 8, 9, 32, 79, 103, 133, 234, 235, 247, 262, 279, 283, 285, 339, 344
East Indian Sea, 8
Easte Sea, 8, 9, 24, 161
Ebro river, 363
Ebetere, 153
Eccampi island, 186
Edel river, 292, 314
Eden, Alban, xlviii.
Eden, Richard, xii., xiii., xiv., xv., xx., xxii., xxxvii., xxxviii., xxxix., xl., xli., xlii., xliii., xliv., xlv., xlvi., xlvii., xlviii., 1, 3, 6, 7, 13, 43, 49, 270
Edward VI., xii., xix., xxxviii, 1, 333
Egypt, xi., xxx., xlviii., 8, 41, 51, 75, 110, 131, 132, 141, 153, 155, 172, 175, 193, 217, 283, 284, 293, 296, 307, 308, 315, 351, 369, 374
Egypt, King of, 284
Egypt, Pyramides of, 49
Egypt, Soltane of, 311, 369
Egyptian sea, 199
Elabath, 374
Elbes, 272
Elcauz, 374
Elder, John, xxxix.
Elgazaet, Region of, 374
Elias, xlvii.
Elide, City of, 176
Eliot, 398
Eliot, Hugh, xvi., xxi.
Eliot, Master, xiv.
Elis, City of, 134
Elizabeth, Queen, xii., xvii., xl., xliv., xlv., xlvi., 65, 201, 209, 288, 342
Elzaba, 8
Emanuel, King, xxiii., xxvi., xxvii., 37, 39, 40
Embigar, 153
Eneas, 135, 166
England, King of, xxx., xxxvi.
Engronlande, Region of, 312, 324, 332
Eningia, 298, 306
Ephesyn, xxxi.
Epileguanita, 102
Erancanqui, 344
Erasmus, 57, 58
Eratosthenes, 41, 349
Eridanus, 133
Errifi, 374
Erythra, King, xlviii.
Esaras, 49
Eson, Colchis of, 135
Esope, 377
Esquegua, 230, 234
Estremadura, 274
Ethiopia, xxx., 8, 13, 14, 39, 41, 51, 88, 132, 139, 169, 175, 248, 250, 284, 339, 351, 369, 374, 384, 385
Ethiopia, King of, 374
Euangelista island, 77
Eude island, 260
Eudoxus, 285, 346
Eue, 229, 338
Euergetes, Tomoleus, 346
Eugenius, Pope, 290
Euphrates river, 41, 51, 308
Eurique, Don, 341
Euripus sea, 304
Eusebius, xlvii.
Euxinus sea, 155, 292, 298, 310, 314
Exer, 266
Ezzab, 374

Faber, Jacobus, 246
Faber, John, 289
Facies, Combusta King, 135
Faial island, 347
Faro, Strait of, 208
Fartalio, xlvi.
Faubourg, xlv.
Feminie the Great, xxxiii.
Ferdinando Cortese, 238, 342
Ferdinando de Soto, 346
Fernandina islands, 186, 187, 190, 191, 195
Fernando de Vega, 96
Fernandes Francicus, 186, 187, 192
Fernandus, Gonzalus, 50, 158, 160, 184, 185, 207, 208, 241
Fernelius, Johannes, xlvii.
Ferraria, xlvi.
Ferrea island, 65, 66, 68, 157, 181
Ferrières, Francois de, xliv..
Ferrières, Jean de, xliv.
Ferrum island, 41
Fes, 374
Fessa, City of, 374
Feti, 180
Ficinus, Marcilius, xlii., 338
Fin, Jean de la, xlv.
Finland, 229, 306, 312, 319
Finlappia, 330
Finmarchia, 8, 347
Fiorauanti, Leonardo, xlviii.
Fladimer, City of, 289
Flauius, 348
Flaunders, Earl of, 208
Fletcher, John, xix.
Florida, 32, 55, 191, 288, 342, 345, 346
Floures [*i.e.*, *Flores*] island, 214
Flumen Amazonum, 160
Flumen, S. Johannis, 155
Fogeda, Alphonsus, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 113, 114, 115, 123, 126, 128, 134, 145, 165, 180, 183
Fonseca, Johannes, 126
Forrest, George, xvii.
Fortis island, 107, 108, 109, 134, 162
Fortisuentura, xx., 65, 157, 380
Fortunate islands, 28, 37, 40, 166, 374
Forum Julii, 318
Foxe, John, xxxix.
Fracta Lucea island, 41
France, King of, xxx., xxxii., xxxvi.
France, Lieutenaunt of, 347
Francis, St., 130
Francisco, 376
Francisco de Siquera, 378
Francisco, Lopez de Gomara, xxxviii 271, 337
Frederike, King, 73, 102, 103
Fretum Herculeum sea, 161
Fretum trium fratrum, 9
Friseland, 303
Friole, 368
Frobisher, Sir Martin, xiii.

Fronowo, 312
Fryer, Ferdinando, 341
Fugui, 26
Fuiuia, 122
Furatado, Captain, 121
Futerac, 180

Gades islands, 28, 30, 34, 65, 68, 73, 75, 94, 97, 150, 181, 316
Gaira river, 113, 132, 157, 158, 159
Galana island, 68, 157
Galanta island, 68, 157, 177, 210
Galeatius, Butrigarius, 106, 127, 285
Galian island, 260
Galitia, 10, 96, 341
Gambra, 280, 374, 384
Gamelaro island, 374
Ganges river, 9, 32, 75, 98, 133, 155, 363
Gangeticus, Gulf of, 39
Ganphasantes, 385
Garcia Nunnio, 272
Gardiner, Bishop, xl., xlv.
Garet, 374
Garsia de Padilla, 130
Gasper, Cortesreales, 344
Gastaldus, Jacobus, 291, 345
Gates, Sir T., xxxix.
Gaza, 57
Gazatia, 385
Gedion, 51
Gelders, Land of, xxvi.
Geminus, Thomas, xxxvii., xxxviii., xl.
Gemma Phrysius, 55, 384, 385, 389
Gereen, xxviii.
Genua, City of, 28, 65, 155, 206, 310, 340
Genoa, xvii., xxx.
Georgianes, xxx., xxxi.
Germanicus, Emperour, 176
Ger[r]ard, Sir William, xix., xl., xli.
Gesnerus, 326
Getulia, 384
Giaua island, 23, 260, 269, 286
Giauntes island, 38
Gibeth island, 34
Gibilterra, 233, 236, 262
Gifolo island, 259, 272, 344
Gilona island, 34
Ginera island, 41
Gines Navarro, xv.
Gioghi island, 260
Giouan Dulsaraz, 259
Girardus Mapheus, 348
Giunti, L. A., xiv.
Goa, City of, 40, 261
Godfrey, John, xvii.
Golden Castile, 211, 214, 218, 219, 233, 236
Golelta, Port, 374
Goliath, xlvii., 149
Gomera, Francisco Lopez de, xxxvii. xxxix., 271, 335, 337, 342, 350
Gomera island, xiii., 65, 66, 157, 210, 380
Gomes, Steuen, 242, 272
Gonsalues, Peter, 378
Gonson, Richard, xvii.
Gonson, William, xvii.
Gonzales, Don Pero, 341
Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés, xiv., xv., 158, 205, 241, 242
Gonzalus Badaiocius, 181, 182, 183
Gorecius, Leonhardus, xxxix.
Gorgodes, Meducias island, 97
Gorgonas island, 338
Gorualanus, 72
Gothia, 298, 306
Gothicus, Emperour, 176
Gothland, 9, 286, 295, 299, 306, 347
Gothland, Bishop of, 302
Gothus Olanus, 347
Graesse, xliii.
Grafton, xii.
Grafton, Richard, xiii.
Granada, 36, 52, 63, 67, 73, 103, 110, 133, 193, 201, 202, 273, 274, 340, 341
Grancanaria islands [*the Canaries*], 41, 65, 157, 210, 380
Grandis river, 131, 132, 199
Gratia Dei, 112, 182
Gray, Richard, xvii.
Great John, 385
Great Khan, xv.
Great Sophie, 326
Grecia, 54, 56, 155, 262, 296, 302, 319
Greenland, 299
Gregorie, 112
Gregorye I., 56
Gresham, John, xiii.
Gresham, William, xii.
Gretzium, 318
Grisalva, John, 187, 188, 189, 190, 192, 194
Gronland, 299, 300, 303
Grosapha, King of, 40
Groueland, 8
Grounzwyk, xxxii.
Grubes, Master, xiv.
Grustina, Castle of, 323
Grustintzi, 323
Grutland, 245, 300, 347
Guacana island, 345
Guacarapita, 99
Guaccaa lake, 170
Guaccaiarima, 168, 169, 173, 176
Guaccanarillus, King, 66, 70, 71, 72, 168
Guadalupea island, 68, 69, 157, 159, 177, 181, 210, 345
Guadalqueuir river, 127, 157, 210, 220, 238, 250
Guadiana river, 273
Guahabba, 169
Guahague, Region of, 169
Guaiagua, Region of, 168
Guamaonocon, 99
Guamaretus, King, 102
Guanabba island, 85
Guanahaini island, 75
Guanahattabenecchina, 176
Guanama, Region of, 168
Guanapan island, 190
Guanassa island, 105, 150, 163
Guanguan island, 190
Guaniba, Region of, 170
Guaninicabo river, 170
Guannabo, Region of, 170
Guariagua, Region of, 173
Guaricco, Region of, 169
Guarionexius, King, 79, 80, 82, 84, 86, 87, 91, 92, 93, 102, 168, 171
Guarionexius, Vale of, 171
Guarizacca island, 170
Guaturo, 216, 226
Guaturo, King, 226
Guaurabo, Lake, 171
Guinea, xii., xvi., xix., xxviii., xxxix. xl., 250, 270, 273, 297, 348, 371, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388
Guise, Duke of, xliii., xlv.
Gunson, William, xii.
Guserath, 266
Gutschyn, King of, xxix.
Guzerat, Gulf of, 14
Guzman, Enrique of, 341
Guzman, Peter Nunez de, 345
Guzula, 374

Habacoa, 169
Habacucke, 57
Habissia, Region of, 385
Habech, Region of, 385
Hafnia, City of, 331
Hagueigabon sea, 170
Haiba river, 168
Haina, 223
Haitho, 24, 60
Haiti island, 166, 167, 168, 338
Hakluyt, Richard, xii., xiii., xiv., xv., xvi., xvii., xviii., xix., xx., xxxviii., xl., xlviii.
Halicarnassea, 128
Halle, R., xii., xiii.
Ham, Kingdom of, 344
Hamadriades, 74, 191
Hamburg, 300
Hannibal, 139
Hanon, 338
Haraia, Region of, 96
Hardie, Master, xviii.
Harsol, City of, 300
Hathathiei, 171
Hawkins, Sir John, xvi., xvii., xlviii.
Hawkins, William, xvi., xvii.
Hayhay island, 159
Hazchora, 374
Hazlitt, W. C., xxvi.
Hazoa, Region of, 168
Hazua mountains, 169, 176
Hea, Kingdom of, 374
Heben, 284
Hebrewes, Captain of the, 316
Helga mountain, 300
Helisabeth, 73, 127, 129, 167
Helisabeth a Boadilla, 127
Heliseus, 149
Hellespontus sea, xlviii., 59, 155
Hely, John, xii.
Henrique, Don 273
Henriques, Diego, 378
Henry, King, 127, 162, 340, 345
Henry IV., xxxix.
Henry V., xxxix.
Henry VII., xxi., 288
Henry VIII., xii., xiii., xiv., xvi., xvii., xviii., xix., xx., xxi., xxxvii., xlv., 6
Henry, King of France, xlvii.
Herbert, W., xxxvii., xxxix.
Hercinia, 313
Hercules, 50, 105, 138, 149, 156, 236, 285
Hercules Pillars, 86, 135, 236, 316, 374
Hercyiua, 310
Herodotus, 248, 339, 346, 350
Heroum, City of, 284
Hesiod, xxxviii., xli.
Hesperides islands, 32, 74, 87, 97, 167, 338
Heua river, 319
Hibusson island, 255
Hiebra, 135, 153, 154
Hieron, King, xlvii.
Hieronimus Aquillaris, 192, 193
Hieronimus Cardanus, 307
Hieronimus Fracastor, 285
Hierusalem, 7, 8, 49, 51, 56, 57, 82, 100, 384, 385
Hierusalem, King of, 82, 208
Hierusalem, Temple of, xlvii.
Higinius, 346
Higuei, 168
Higuel, 346
Hircania Syluia, 292
Hircanian sea, 169, 170, 287, 291, 308, 310, 314
Hispana island, 6, 28, 29, 30, 31, 35, 36, 40
Hispaniola island, xv., 6, 35, 40, 45, 54, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 73, 74, 75, 78, 79, 80, 82, 84, 85, 87, 89, 90, 96, 98, 99, 100, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 113, 114, 115, 116, 118, 119, 122, 123, 125, 126, 127, 128, 130, 131, 135, 137, 138, 140, 144, 145, 149, 150, 153, 154, 159, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 172, 173, 176, 177, 178, 184, 186, 191, 192, 193, 199, 209, 210, 215, 219, 228, 230, 233, 235, 238, 239, 241, 262, 299, 346
Hojedus, 72, 79, 81
Holstrocke, William, xvii.
Holtrop, Mr, xxv.
Holy Nose, 330
Homer, 5, 41, 346, 398
Honorucco, 169
Horace, 58
Hore, Master, xviii.
Hossuen island, 304
Hozama, 168, 170
Huban island, 344
Hungary, King of, 208, 312
Huhabo, 168, 169, 172
Huinaghan island, 255
Huitsarch, 299
Humos point, 273
Humphrey, Laurence, xl.
Hyperborean sea, 288
Hyperboreos mountains, xli., 293, 313, 314, 324
Hyperbories, 42, 155, 350
Hyram, 49

Iberia, 53, 54
Icthiophagi, 301, 385
Ida mountains, 172
Iguamu, 171
Iguanama, 173
Illirium, 306
Ilmer Lake, 319
Inacus, Jopez Mendocius, 103
India, xxi., xxix., xxx., xxxii., 9, 10, 13, 15, 16, 18, 19, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 32, 40, 50, 52, 65, 67, 75, 79, 90, 98, 103, 120, 127, 155, 180, 198, 203, 204, 205, 216, 219, 227, 233, 239, 261, 263, 264, 266, 269, 272, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 308, 309, 313, 329, 339, 346, 347, 363, 384
India, Governour of, 274
India *major*, xxi., xxviii., xxxi., xxxii., 261
India *minor*, xxi.
Indian sea, 9, 39, 308, 347, 385
Indies, 52, 53, 54, 162, 213, 220, 221, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 232, 235, 238, 246, 271, 272, 273, 274, 337, 338, 340, 341, 345, 348, 350, 355
Indus river, 13, 308, 309
Infortunate islands, 28, 33, 37, 41, 253
Innocientus, Pope, xxxi.
Inspruck, 359, 368
Insula crusis, 30, 69
Insula, S. Johannis, 70
Insulæ Latronum, 254
Insulæ verides, 39
Insulas Sancti Barnardi, 162
Inuagana island, 34
Ionicum sea, 191
Ionium, 163
Ipsicratea, 128

Irtische river, 323
Irus, 42
Isabella, City of, 74, 79, 80, 82, 84, 85, 86
Isabella island, 73, 167
Isabella, Lady, 341
Isaias, 52, 56, 57
Ismael the Sophi, 311
Isocrates, 346
Isodorus, Bishop, 290
Isopes, 53
Israell, 51, 52, 56
Israell, King of, xxxiv
Isseria, 309
Ister river, 98, 121
Istoma Georgius, 330, 331
Ity island, 38

Jaccha, 168
Jacchi, Region of, 169
Jache river, 168
Jachem river, 73
Jaciga river, 168
Jacob, xxx.
Jacobi, Sancti, 97
Jacobus Gastaldus, 345
Jafet, 346
Jagohaiucho, Region of, 169
Jaia, 100, 163
Jaick river, 326, 329
Jainagua, Lake, 170
Jaioso, Region of, 374
Jamaica island, 31, 75, 78, 150, 154, 177, 193, 210, 241
Jamaizi, Region of, 169
James, St., Island of, 97
James, St., Tower of, 84
James the elder, 10
Jamgoma, Region of, 260
Janua, 155
Janus, 155
Japhet, 155
Jaques Cartier, 345
Jaroslavia, 309
Jaroslaw, Castle of, 324
Jason, 54, 262
Jausa river, 313
Java island, 23, 269, 344
Jaxartes river, 311
Jean de Ferrieres, xliv.
Jemptia, 305
Jenkenson, Anthony, xviii.
Jenkynson, Master, xliii.
Jenuen, xxx.
Jericho, Priests of, xlvii.
Jerom, Castle of, 323
Jerusalem, xxi., xxxi., 7, 8, 49, 51, 56-7, 82, 100, 166, 374, 384-5
Jerusalem, Patriarche of, xxxv.
Job, 11, 349
Joga, 14
Johan, Duke, 289, 293
Johanna island, 28, 29, 66, 70, 74, 75, 104, 241
Johannes, Cursius, 106
Johannes, Diaz, 105
John, King, 65, 129, 273, 274
John, Lake of, 325
John of Decborough, xxv., xxvi.
John, Pope, xxiii., xxvi., xxvii., xxx., xxxii., xxxvi.
John, Queen, 273
John the Evangelist, 10
Jonas, xxv., 338
Joppa, 181
Joseph of Arimathea, 56
Josephus, xlviii., 8, 384, 385
Josuah, 316
Jouanaboina, 100
Joubert, Francoise, xlv.
Jovius, Paulus, 292, 331
Joy, Master, xviii.
Juan, 182
Juanaga, Region of, 234
Juba, King, 347
Jucatana island [*i.e., the peninsula of Yucatan*], 40, 186, 188, 189, 191, 192, 193, 238
Juda, Princes of, 56
Judde, Sir Andrew, 383
Judea, 7, 18, 57
Jug river, 286, 312, 322
Juga river, 293, 312
Jugaria, 322, 326
Jugge, John, xlvi.
Jugge, Richard, xxxix., xlvi., 398
Jugoria, 309
Juharici, 326
Juhgary, The, 326
Juhra, 293, 322, 326
Julius, Pope, 309
Julyan Samano, 346
Junna river, 73, 168, 172
Jura, 116
Jurechè, 152
Jurham, 292
Jwanowosero, Lake of, 325

Kaienska Semla, Region of, 330
Kama, Region of, 326
Kaman river, 325, 329
Katharine, Queen, 65
Kele river, xxxvii.
Kerry, John, xix.
Khan, Great, xv.
Kingsley, Rev. Canon, xvi.
Kitai, Lake, 323
Kitaisko, Lake, 323
Kithay, Lake, 324
Kohl, Mr J. G., xv.
Kuliuo river, 322
Kurbski, Simeon Pheodorowice, 324
Kyui, 20

La Desseada island, 210
La Ferté, xlv.
La Mina, 382
La Spagnuola, 210
Labrador, xiii., xv., 287, 344, 345, 347
Lachroma river, 321
Lacossa, Johannes de, 107
Lactantius, 10, 11, 142
Lacus, Albus, 291
Lacus, Cronicus, 289
Ladoga, Lake, 319
Lagartos river, 111
Lagoma island, 260
Laletania, 173
Lamas, 155
Lambert, Francis, xviii., xix.
Lambert, Nicolas, 376, 377
Lamer, xlv.
Lampaloda island, 274
Lancelotus island, 65, 157
Lancerota, xx.
Landinus, 279
Landman, Daui'd, xix.
Langanas, 304
Lantchidol sea, 261
Laon, xliv.
Lapponia, Region of, 8, 291, 299, 301, 302, 305, 347
Lares, 176
Lasiesia, 363
Laterane, 309
Latium, 66, 166, 167
Lathyro King, 286
Laurence, xlvii., xlviii.
Lazaro, Archipelago di San, 254
Lazarus, King, 187, 188
Lech, King of the Polons, 318
Ledisma, Johannes, 144
Ledyl river, 291
Legion, 201
Legion, King of, 203
Leigh, Doctor, xvi.
Lemures, 85
Leo, Bishop of Rome, 64, 106, 137, 287, 308, 309
Leochares, 49
Leon, 342
Leon, John Ponce of, 345, 346
Leonhardus Goreçius, xxxix.
Lepanto, xii.
Lepin Castle, 323
Lesbos, 69
Levante, The, xii., xiii., xvii., xviii., xix., 233
Leviathan sea, 50
Lewes, Don, 378
Libane, 110
Liberus, Sigismundus, 298, 312, 318
Libia, 8, 54, 56, 70, 81, 166, 177, 374, 384
Libicum, 163
Libra, xlii.
Ligurian sea, 297
Lima, 338
Limonares island, 151
Limoso island, 374
Lincoln, Bishop of, xl., xlv.
Lisbon, City of, 16, 39, 267, 277, 279, 341
Lithunia, Duke of, 318
Lituania, Realme of, 286, 291, 292, 311, 314, 318, 326
Liuie, 132
Liuonia, 287, 291, 306, 308, 311, 312, 319, 331
Lock, Sir William, xiii.
Locke, Michael, xix.
Lodge, Thomas, xl.
Lodovike, 73, 79, 82, 90, 94, 96, 103, 133
Longon, 260
Lop, City of, 26
Lopes, Diego, 272, 273
Lopez Francisco, 288, 335, 342, 350
Lordo, 287
Losoth island, 304
Louat river, 319
Lozon island, 260
Lucane, 310
Lucomorya mountains, 323, 324
Ludovico Barthema (i.e., *Varthema*], xlviii.
Luft, Hans, xxv.
Lugo, Alphonsus, 66
Luigo, 252
Lumatola island, 260
Lumbardie, 306, 340
Lupus Sosa, 199
Lusheburne [i.e., *Lisbon*], xxvii., xxviii., xxix., 277, 309
Luther, xxvi.
Luttrell, Sir John, xix.
Luxanus, 74
Luys of S. Angell, 341
Luys, Cancell, 346
Luys, Don, 341
Luztu, 271
Lybien, xxxi.
Lyese Nicolas, 378
Lyuon sea, 314

Maccazina, Region of, 169
Macchian island, 259, 260
Macedonia, xxxiii., 14
Machiam sea, 344
Machinnech, King, 100
Machmetgirei, King, 328
Machochael, 99
Macorix, Region of, 168
Macrobius, 41, 298, 347
Madagascar, 7, 23, 285, 286
Madanino, 69, 157
Madera islands, 35, 40, 41, 87, 260, 270, 339, 340, 375, 380
Magellanus Ferdinando [i.e., *Fernam de Magelhaens*], 9, 32, 33, 34, 35, 243, 249, 250, 252, 253, 272, 274
Magellanus, Straits of, 8, 33, 35, 161, 183, 252, 285, 350
Magna Canaria, 157
Magna fors island, 41
Magnete island, 348
Magnus, Albertus, 7, 9, 10, 41, 364
Magona, 81
Magua, Region of, 169
Maguacochios, 167
Maguana, Region of, 169, 171, 172, 176
Mahaitin mountain, 169
Mahumet, 14, 23, 25, 27, 40, 57, 326, 374
Maia, Region of, 150, 163
Maiaguariti, Region of, 169
Maiam, 187
Maiobanexius, King, 86, 91, 92, 93
Maiolica, 270
Malabar, 263, 266, 267, 268, 269
Malacca, 21, 32, 34, 40, 75, 247, 255, 256, 260, 261, 267, 269, 271, 274, 313, 344
Malea, 155, 304
Maligny, Seigneur de, xliv.
Mallua island, 260
Malpha, Flauius of, 348
Manbrone, xxx.
Manabaho, Region of, 169
Manabaxao, Region of, 169
Manacapana, Region of, 89, 94, 96, 98, 128
Manache, Sibill, xx.
Manati, Lake, 171
Mandeuell, 329
Mangalor, 265
Mangdando, City of, 259
Mangi, 25, 26
Manicautixius, King, 82
Manicheus, 10
Manicongo, 270, 374
Manilius, Marcus, xliv.
Mans, xliv.
Mansus, Alfonsus, 130
Manuel, Petro, 272
Maragnonum river, 98, 132, 134, 155, 160
Marburg, xxv.
Marchauntes island, 329
Marchena, 340, 341
Marcilius Ficinus, 338
Marcolla Niza, 287
Marcus Antonius, 315
Marcus, Emperour, 284
Marcus Paulus, 55, 286
Marcus Paulus Venetus, 25, 27, 30, 339, 340
Mare island, 35, 259, 260
Mare Congelatum, 8
Mare de Sabione, 374
Mare del Sur [*i.e., the Pacific Ocean*], 54, 211, 214, 223, 225, 230, 233, 234, 235, 252, 262, 338, 344, 345, 347
Mare Pacificum, 252, 253
Margarita island, 54, 88, 96, 141, 165, 178, 214, 233

Margarita, Peter, 79
Mariatambal, Region of, 98, 132
Marien, Region of, 169, 172
Mary, Virgin, xxvi., 69, 124, 192, 198
Marmarica, 8
Marmor, 112, 114, 135
Marobu, 100
Marocco, xix., xx.
Marques, Diegus, 157
Marris, 122
Marrocko, 374
Marrok, 161
Martabani, 268
Martine, 383
Martinus Gratias island, 343
Martire, Pietro, or Martyr, Peter, xiii., xxxvii., 43, 61, 63, 64, 65, 102, 186, 207, 241, 246, 299
Mary, Queen, xii., xxxviii., xxxix., xlv., 1.
Mary of Nemegen, xxvi.
Massana island, 34
Massaquiber port, 374
Mathan island, 258
Mathieu island, 35
Mathinino island, 100
Matinino island, 30, 69, 157, 166, 210
Matritis, 123, 184
Matthkur, 303
Mauicarao, 169
Maurevert, xlv.
Mauritania, 8, 374, 384
Mauritania Cesariensis, 374
Mauritania Tingitania, 374
Mausolus, King, 49, 128
Maximilian, Emperour, 290, 308, 309, 312, 368
Mecca, 166, 267
Medecis, Catherine de, xlv.
Media, 314
Medina Celi, Duke of, 341
Medina Sidonia, Duke of, 250, 341
Medina de Campo, xxxix., 232
Medon, xxxi.
Meersch, P. C. van der, xxv.
Megha, xxviii.
Mela, Pomponius, 346, 347
Melaqua, City of, xxix., 21
Melcha island, 39
Melchoir, 71, 72
Meler, Lake, 305
Melinda, xxviii., 132, 385
Melo, Frances de, 273
Meluza, 20
Memi, City of, 241
Memphis, City of, 307, 315
Mendala, 344
Mendez, Diegus, 154
Mendocius, Inacus Jopez, 103
Mendoza, Anthony di, 287
Mendoza, Cardinall Pero Gonzales of, 341
Mendoza, Luigo of, 252
Mendoza, Mentia of, 214
Mennones, 385
Mense,
Mensurado, Cape, 381
Meotis, 155, 292, 298, 306, 311, 314, 325, 326, 351
Mercado, Lodouicus, 165, 182
Mercedis, Saynte Mary of, 77
Mericke, William, xli.
Meroe island, 8, 385
Meroæ, 41
Mesa, Barnarde of, 130
Messana island, xvii., 256
Messana, King of, 256, 257, 258
Mesopotania, 297
Meta Incognita, xiii.
Metellus Celer, 9
Methymna Campi, City of, 68, 70, 72, 80
Methyna, Duke of, 96
Mexico, Viceroy of, 287
Mexico, City of, xiii., 55, 61, 287, 288, 338, 342
Mezen river, 322
Mezentium, 66
Michael Passamonte, 213
Midnall, Thomas, xiii.
Mien, 24, 261
Milan, City of, 63, 67, 103, 131, 141
Milenoes, 65
Mina, 339, 375, 382
Mina, Castle of, 382
Mina river, 376
Minera, xlviii.
Minos, xlviii.
Mioformo, City of, 284
Mirobalanus, Region of, 151
Mitaini, 167
Mithridates, 128, 129
Moguer, 341
Mogunce, Bishop of, 56
Molucca islands, 8, 9, 20, 32, 33, 34, 35, 54, 183, 234, 235, 247, 249, 256, 258, 259, 260, 271, 272, 273, 274, 286, 287, 344
Molybe, 385
Momsabith, xxviii.
Moncellese, Master Bernardino, 356
Monoch island, 22
Mons Crucis, 300
Mons Farratus island, 30
Mons Serratus island, 69, 177
Monte Rodondo, 382
Montegio Francis, 187, 190, 191, 192, 195
Montes Luna, 41, 132, 217, 385
Montes Niuales, 157, 160
Monyuye, 240
Moore, Sir Thomas, 398
Morales, Andreas, 134, 156, 165, 167, 169, 184, 185
Morales, Gasper, 178, 179, 214
Morantes, Christophorus, 186
Morauia, Region of, 326
Morea, The, 316
Moren, xxxi.
Morgan, Sylvanus, xlvi.
Morley, Professor H., xxxviii.
Moronites, xxx., xxxi.
Morrorabes, xxx., xxxi.
Mos, Lake, 304
Moscow, 187, 286, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 308, 312, 313, 314, 317, 321
Moscovia, xxxix., 285, 286, 287, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 298, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332
Moscovia, Andreas of, 316
Moscovia, George of, 316
Moscovia, Helena of, 289
Moscovia, John of, 289, 316, 319, 321, 324, 325, 326
Moscovia, Sophia of, 326
Moscovia, Simeon of, 316
Moscovia, Demetrius Ambassadour of, 292, 308, 309, 310, 311, 313, 316, 325, 329, 331
Moscovia, Dukes of, 283, 286, 287, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 314, 318, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332
Moscovites, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 306, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 315, 316, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 331, 332
Moses, xxi., xlvii., 11, 49, 50, 51, 57, 110
Mosyli, The, 385
Motka, Cape, 331
Mouy, Count de, xlv.
Moxica, Michael of, 65.
Moxus river, 313, 314
Mozambique, 261
Muera, 318
Müller, Mr Frederick, xxv., xxvi.
Multoxuman, King, 195
Mumu, 112
Münster, Sebastian, 3, 13, 42, 249, 291, 293
Murcien, 176
Mascostrom sea, 304
Muthil island, 34
Mutir island, 259, 260
Mysians, xlviii., 318

Naeldwyck, Jan van, xxvi.
Nagai, 329
Nagaria, xxix.
Naiba, 83
Naiba river, 73, 83, 168, 172
Nansao, Earl of, 214
Naples, King of, xxx.
Narmaria, xxix.
Narsinga, 14, 15, 20, 263, 264, 265
Narsinga, King of, 14, 40, 264
Nativitatis, Bria, 129
Nauaryen, King of, xxx., xlviii.
Nauchin, City of, 260
Navarre, King of, xxx., xlviii.
Nebrissa, 135, 165
Neglina river, 313
Negro river, 374
Nehemiah, 56
Neibaymao, Region of, 169
Neibaymas mountain, 169
Nemea, 1
Nemroth, 53, 290
Neper river, 314
Nepos, Cornelius, 9, 286, 347
Neptunus, xlviii., 55, 163, 165, 176
Nereiades, 74, 101, 127, 165, 176
Nero, 41
Nerui, 340
Nestorius, xxx., 27
New Andalusia, 130
New Fraunce, 287, 288
New India, 3, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41
New Spayne, 236, 238, 241, 287, 342
New World, 68, 127, 137, 156, 174, 245, 247, 272, 273, 337, 338, 339, 342
Newfoundland, xiii., xiv., xv., xviii., xxi.
Nicaragua, 338
Nicene, 290
Nicolai, 322
Nicuesa, Diego, 106, 107, 108, 109, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 126, 128, 135, 137, 145, 150, 151, 153, 156
Nidrosia, 299, 303
Nidrosia, Archbishop of, 299
Nignus, 94, 126
Nigritis, 132, 384
Nile river, 8, 41, 110, 111, 131, 132, 153, 155, 169, 175, 193, 199, 217, 283, 284, 285, 293, 309, 311, 312, 339, 346, 351, 374, 384, 385
Nimaca, 169
Nizaus, 169
Noah, xlviii., 51, 155, 340, 346, 386
Noceuamor island, 260
Nogais, 311, 329
Nomen Dei, 113, 234, 235
Norduegia, 331
Noricum, 314
Northumberland, Duke of, xxxviii., xxxix., 5
Nortpoden, 22
Norumbega, xiv.
Norway, Gouernours of, 332
Norway, King of, 331
Norwegia, King of, xxx.
Nova Castilia, 343
Nova Hispania, 55, 213, 238, 241, 287, 342
Nouogradia [i.e., *Novgorod*], City of, 289, 290, 291, 309, 312, 313, 314, 318, 319, 321, 326, 328, 329, 330
Nova Scotia, xv.
Nubia, 384
Nuceria, Paulus Jouius, Bishop of, 308, 312, 331
Numidia, 374
Nunnez, Alphonsus, 123
Nunnez de Gusman, Peter, 345
Nycolas, Saynt, 75, 78
Nysa, 100
Nysea, 384

O [*i.e.*, *Omega*] point, 75, 76
Obdoria, 287, 310, 323
Obea, Castle of, 323
Obi river, xli., 287, 322, 323, 332
Obiowa, 323.
Occoa river, 270, 292
Ocha river, 292, 308, 313, 314, 319, 324, 325
Ochelaga, 287
Ocho Lupus, 186
Odia, 260
Odoardo Barbessa, 258
Ogni Sancti Marigalante island, 210
Olanus, Gothus, 300, 347, 348
Olanus, Lupus, 111, 112
Olha, 319
Olmutium, 314
Oloan, 188, 191
Ooliab, 49
Oone, 305
Ophir, 7, 51, 66, 73, 82, 338, 343
Oplandia, 305
Oram, City of, 374
Ordassus, Diegus, 192
Oripei, The, 385
Ormuz island, 13, 20, 261, 266
Oro river, 380
Orsa, 316
Oryentes, xxx., xxxi.
Os Dragonis, Straits of, 88, 95, 96, 98, 108, 128, 132, 134, 151, 178 180
Ostrich, Henry, xix.
Ostrobothnia, 305, 306
Osep, Gregorexitch Napea, xl.
Otho, 9
Otifer, 289, 290
Otogeria, City of, 291
Otoque island, 233
Otto Brumfelsius, xlvi.
Ottomanus, Bajasetes, 60, 311
Ottoseria, City of, 314.
Otwer, City of, 314
Ouandus, King, 190
Ouandus, Nicolaus, 165
Ouctenses, Asfur, 135
Ouiedus, Gonzalus Fernandus, 50, 158, 160, 184, 185, 207, 208, 241,
Oxford, Earl of, xxxvii.

Oxus river, 308
Ozama 240

Pacra, King, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147
Padilla, Garsia de, 130
Padus, 133
Pahan, 260
Paleacate, 263
Paleologus, Sophia, 316
Paleologus, Thomas, 316
Palitzki, Lieuetenaunte, 328
Palma island, 41, 66, 167, 177, 380
Palmaria, Region of, 189
Palmas, Cape de las, 381, 382
Palmer, Sir T., xxxi.
Palos, 96, 97, 99, 341
Pan, 166
Panama, City of, 214, 223, 233, 234, 235, 338
Panchi, City of, 26
Panes, 101
Pannonie, 133, 155, 290, 306, 310, 314
Panonome, King, 182
Pantalarea island, 374
Panuco, 241
Papa, Johannes, 385
Papin, City of, 324
Papinowgorod, City of, 324
Paracelsus, xlvi.
Paraue river, 343
Paria, 36, 38, 89, 90, 94, 95, 96, 98, 99, 103, 105, 113, 128, 129, 130, 132, 135, 151, 156, 165, 178, 180, 181, 184, 338, 363
Paria, Gulf of, 100
Paricora, 98, 132
Pariza, 183
Paropanisus mountain, 308
Parthenopea, Queen, 103
Parthia, 284
Parthicus, Emperour, 176
Paruaim, 7
Paruus, Georgius, 326
Passamonte, Mychel, 213, 240
Patani, 260
Patagoni, 252
Patalo river, 363
Pauiloghon island, 258
Paul, 51, 58
Paulus, 179, 309
Paulus, Jovius, 60, 287, 308, 312
Pazer, 344
Pean, John, 385
Pecenga, Region of, 315
Pedernales mountains, 219
Pedir, 341
Pedrarias da Villa, 229
Pedro Doria, xvii.
Pegu, 20, 21, 261, 263, 264, 344
Peim, 26
Pellegrine de Maricourt, xliii.
Peloponeso, 134, 316, 319
Pelusio river, 284, 285
Pelusius, 285
Penguin island, xviii.
Peralfonso of Melo, 272
Peraria, F., 65
Percaslavia, City of, 291, 331
Perecow, 382
Perez, John, 340, 341
Perillus, 49
Periquete, King, 182
Perm, 293
Permia, 286, 309, 325, 326
Permska, 293
Persia, xxviii., 15, 26, 267, 309, 314
Persia, Gulf of, 82, 308
Persia, King of, 284, 311, 319, 326
Persides, 75
Pert, Sir Thomas, xiii., 6
Peru, xiii., xxxix., 6, 54, 130, 285, 338, 343, 346, 363
Pescora River, 286
Peter, 125
Petit, F., xxxviii.
Petrus Alphonsus, 94, 96
Petrus Arias, 126, 127, 142, 214, 229
Pettislego, xl.
Petzora River, 322, 323, 324, 330, 332
Phaeton, 73
Pharis River, 262, 310
Phenicen, xxxi.
Phidias, 74
Philadelphus, King, 284, 285
Philip, King, xvii., xxxviii., xxxix., xlv., 52.
Philistines, xlvii., 51
Philo, xliv.
Philostratus, 384
Phœnicia, xi.
Phrysius, Gemma, 384
Phylippe, the Apostle, 57
Pichet, John, xvii.
Piedmont, xliv.
Pienega, 312, 322
Piescoya River, 322
Pieza River, 322
Pigafetta, Antonio, 243, 246, 247, 249, 255, 258
Pignonem, 153
Pinnigt, 300
Pinsteado, Antoniades, 375, 376, 377
Pinsteado, Antonie Anes, 378
Pinsteado, John Anes, 377, 378
Pintiguanus, Chiaconus, 129
Pinzon, Martin Alonso, 341
Pinzonus, Aries, 96, 98
Pinzonus, Vincentius Annez, 36, 96, 98, 105, 126, 128, 129, 130
Pircho, City of, 305
Pisa, John Rodriguez of, 272
Pius Secundus, 8, 9, 41
Pizarro, Francisco, xiii, 108, 110
Placentia, 340
Plata river, 338, 343
Plato, xl., xlii., xliii., xliv., 10, 337 338, 340
Plaiper, 368
Plescouia, 291, 309, 312, 314
Pliny, xliii., xlviii., 8, 9, 10, 14, 16, 18, 41, 53, 67, 75, 120, 133, 142, 152, 175, 179, 208, 221, 225, 227, 231, 236, 245, 248, 278, 284, 285, 286, 289, 292, 294, 297, 298, 306, 310, 315, 340, 342, 347, 349, 363, 364, 383, 384, 385, 386
Plummer, Thomas, xvii.
Pluto, xlvi., 149, 355
Po river, 133, 314, 363, 364
Pocchorrosa, King, 147, 148, 162, 163, 178
Pocchorosa, Region of, 162, 163
Pogosa, 323
Poiassa river, 323
Polagua island, 344
Polen, King of, xxx., 318
Politianus, Angelus, xliv., xlvii., xlviii.
Polo island, 256
Polomus Chiacomus, 129
Polonie, 314, 318, 326
Polonie, King, 286, 290, 318, 319
Polonie, Russus of, 318
Polonie, Sigismunde of, 309, 319
Polotzko, 312
Polybius, 41
Pomponius Mela, 346, 347, 349
Ponce, John, 165, 181, 345, 346
Poncha, King, 115, 116, 121, 137, 138, 139, 140, 149, 178
Poncius Johannes, 165, 181, 345, 346
Ponet, John, xxxvii.
Ponte, Alfonsus de, 157
Pontike sea, 131, 262, 296
Pontus, 297, 308, 318
Porcena, 71
Porne, King of, 34
Porne island, 22, 34, 258
Porte Joppa, 181
Portofarnia, 374
Porto Rigo, xv.
Portucarerius Alsons, 191, 192, 195
Portugal, Alonzo of, 273, 341
Portugal, Emanuel of, 16, 37, 39, 40
Portugal, Henrique of, 273
Portugal, Johan of, 129, 271, 273, 274
Portugal, Lewes of, 378
Portugal, Kings of, xvi., xxiii., xxv., xxvi, xxvii., xxix., xxx., 13, 40, 41, 54, 74, 129, 256, 261, 267, 270, 271, 273, 274, 340, 341, 363, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 381, 382, 385
Portus Bellus, 112, 135, 153, 177
Portus Cathaginis, 106
Portus Désideratus, 188
Portus Platæ, 176
Portus Regalis, 71, 105, 176
Potanchanus, King, 189, 194
Potassa, 323
Potiwlo, 330
Pothorst, 300
Potto, Chiaconus, 129
Potzcheriema river, 323
Powell, William, xxxix., 43
Poyas Semnoi mountains, 322, 323
Poynings, Sir Adrian, xlv.
Pozon island, 256
Praga, City of, 291
Prato, Albertus de, xiv.
Preciosus, Johannis, 51
Precop, 325
Prester, John, xxi., xxxii., xxxiii., xxxv., 51, 339, 374, 384, 385
Proclus, 338
Prometheus, 57
Propertius, 285
Prussia, Master of, 308, 319
Psammiticus, King, 284
Ptolomeus, 8, 41, 210, 236, 262, 284, 285, 289, 308, 313, 349, 384, 390
Pulaoan island, 258
Pulisachnites river, 25
Purchas, Samuel, xii, xiv.
Puren, 152
Pustoofero, 322, 323
Puta, 88
Pyconye river, xxxiii.
Pyne, H., xv.
Pynson, Richard, xxv.
Pyrinei mountain, 53
Pythagoras, xlvii., 215
Pythis,

Quadrado Gulf, 344
Quando, Nicolas de, 345, 346
Quareba, 153
Quarequa, King, 138, 178
Quarequa, Region of, 138, 139, 338
Quatour Tempora island, 151
Quauhtema, 338
Quaxaca, 342
Quenquinasu, City of, 24, 25
Queraquiera island, 69, 157, 159
Quicedus, John, 123, 126
Quicuri Region of, 151
Quinsai, 26, 55, 307
Quiola, xxviii.
Quintanilia, 341
Quintilian, xlviii.
Quiriquetana, 150, 151
Quitilla island, 190
Quito, 338
Quizqueia island, 166, 167

Rabida, 340, 341
Ragusa, City of, 330
Raja, Calauar, King, 258
Raja, Capitayne, 120
Raja Colambu, King, 255
Raja Humabuon, King, 257
Raja Santoa, King, 260
Raja Siagu, Prince, 255
Raja Siripada, King, 258
Raja Sultan Manzor, 259
Ramonus, 99
Ramusio, J. B., xiv., xv., xxxviii
Rase, John, 382
Rastall, John, xx.
Rastall, Master, xviii., xix.
Rastall Sarieant, xviii.
Ratcliff, xxxviii.
Ravenna, 314
Razauia, 309
Red sea, xxix., xlviii., 7, 13, 51 143, 180, 284, 285, 339, 346, 374 385
Regio Baccalearum, 32, 55
Regnum Orguene, 384
Resan, City of, 290
Reyre, Region of, 168
Rezan, 324
Rezense, 292, 309
Rha river, 291, 292, 313, 329
Rhapsii, 385
Rhene river, 56, 314, 363
Rhodes, xii.
Ribera, Doctor, 272
Richard I., King, xxvi.
Richard II., King, xxxix.
Rico Porto, xv.
Ridley, Master, xviii.
Riga river, 287, 308, 312, 314
Rio Dulce river, 381
Rio Grande river, 380
Rio de Chicora river, xv.
Rio de los Perdidos river, 152, 156
Rio de la Plata river, xxxix., 54, 288, 338, 343, 386
Rio de los Potos river, 382
Riphea, 155
Ripheos mountains, 293, 324
Risophagi, The, 385
Riuo Nigro, 120, 121
Riuum Nigrum, 191
Rivero Diego, 272
Robbyn Hood, 53
Rocumdulfe, Earl of, xlvii.
Rodanum, 314
Rodericus Colmenaris, 113, 114, 115, 116, 119, 120, 122, 123
Rodes, 351
Rodes, Grand Master of the, 374
Rodrigo, 41
Rodriguez, John, 272
Rogers, John, xxxix.
Roldanus, Ximenus, 86, 87, 90
Roma, Adrian, Pope of, 309
Rome, Pope Alexander VI. of, 37, 74, 129, 201, 273, 274, 315
Rome, Pope Clement VII., 308, 309, 347
Rome, Cloelia of, 71
Rome, Consul of, xliv.
Rome, Emperour of, xxxii.
Rome, Gregory, Bishop of, 56

Rome, Julius of, 309
Rome, Leo X. of, 64, 106, 109, 111, 113, 114, 123, 125, 126, 127, 130, 131, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 145, 149, 150, 154, 156, 157, 159, 162, 163, 164, 166, 167, 170, 172, 174, 175, 178, 181, 184, 185, 287, 308, 309
Rome, Paul III. of, 51, 58, 179
Rome, Pius II. of, 8, 9, 41
Rosciuia, City of, 290, 291, 309
Rosolanos, 289
Rostowe, 331
Rotunda, Sancta Maria, 69
Rubicho river, 322
Ruiz, Barthalome, 272
Ruiz, Peter, 272, 274
Rumnie, James, xvii.
Russia, Basilius of, 289, 290, 308, 309, 311, 314, 316, 317, 319, 321, 324, 328, 329
Russia, Emperour of, 290
Russus, Town of, 318
Rut, John, xiv., xv., xvi.
Ruthens; Constantine, Captain of the, 316
Ruthens, Czar of the, 319

Saba, 8, 385
Saba, Queen of, 8, 374, 385
Sabea, 129, 385
Sachion; City of, 27
Sacrificios; Sacrifice, Island of, 189, 192
Safale, xxviii., 36
St Ambrose, 10, 315
St Andrew, 290, 319
St Angell, Luys of, 341
St Antonie islands, 272, 273
St Aubin, Sieurde, xliv.
St Augustine, 10, 142, 165, 218, 238, 315, 318, 338
St Augustine, Cape of, 129, 155, 165, 181, 183, 218, 250, 273, 338
St Benedict, 306
St Bernardi islands, 161
St Catharine, Castle of, 84
St Christopher, Gold mine of, 105
St Christoval, Island of, 210
St Clare [*electrical fire on masts*], 251
St Cosmus, 310
St Cruz islands, 30, 130, 159, 188
St Cyrillus, 315
St Domingo, xv., 45, 82, 84, 130, 154, 168, 169, 170, 176, 209, 210, 213, 240, 338, 346
St Dunstan's parish, xlviii.
St Francis, 130, 176, 198, 240, 341
St George, xxxi., 39, 323
St Germain, Town of, xlv.
St Germain, Bay of, xv.
St Gregory, 315
St Helen [*electrical fire on masts*], 251
St Hericus, 305
St James, xxviii., 10, 186
St James island, xxviii., 97, 186, 261, 262
St James, Castle of, 26, 84
St Jerome, 195, 338
St John, Gulf of, 194
St John, Port, 192
St John's island, xv., 45, 104, 130, 155, 159, 173, 176, 210, 213, 241
St John's harbour, xiii., xiv., xv., 192
St John of Jerusalem, Knights of, xii.
St Julian, Port, 252
St Lazaro, Archepelago di, 254
St Lazarus, 187
St Laurence [*i.e., Madagascar*], Island of, 285
St Leger, xlv.
St Luca, or Lucar. de Barrameda, 157, 210, 262
St Lucas Guild at Antwerp, xxv.
St Maria Antigua, Island of, 30, 69, 110, 134, 163, 198, 207, 218, 226, 229, 236, 238
St Maria Rotund, Island of, 30, 69
St Maria de Gratia, Island of, 238
St Marina, 190
St Martha, 156, 157
St Martinus, Island of, 30, 69
St Marye of Mercedis, 77, 240
St Matthei, Region of, 112, 132, 135
St Michael's Gulf, 54, 140, 162, 165, 182, 183, 214
St Nicolas [*electrical fire on masts*], 250
St Nicolas island, 375, 376
St Nicolas, Port of, 75, 78
St Paul, 7, 11, 55, 56, 204, 293
St Peter, 130, 203, 204, 250, 290
St Romayne, Tower of, 226
St Sergius, 291
St Sophia, 314
St Steven, 148
St Thomas, xxix, xxx., xxxiv.-vi., 74, 79, 80, 250
St Thomas, Island of, 250, 270
St Thomas Tower, 31, 74, 79, 80
St Vincent, Cape, 250
St Vincent, Harbour of, 381
Salaye, Dr Sancho, 272
Saleno, Monsieur de, xlvii.
Salla, Port, 374
Salsburg, Cardinal of, 24, 247, 248
Salvaterra, 176
Samano, Julyan, 346
Samarcandia, 311
Samson, xlvii.
Samma, Town of, 381, 383
Sammaterra, Town of, 383
Samogeds, The, 323
Samotor, 20
Samotra [*i.e., Sumatra*], 7, 21, 22, 32, 344
Samua, Town of, 381, 383
Sananton island, 272
Sancta Cruce, xiii., xx., 30, 40, 130, 188
Sancta Fee, 341
Sanders, Blaise, xli.
Sanguenai, 287
San Juan island, xv.
Saragossa, xxxviii.-ix., 247
Sardinia, 56
Sardonica, 284
Sardus, 163
Sarmatia, 170, 284, 291, 295, 298, 308, 311, 314, 326, 347
Sarmatians, 155, 301, 310
Saturma, Region of, 157, 158, 160, 165
Saunders, Laurence, xxxix.
Sava, City of, 374
Savoy, The Master of the, xliii.
Sawolhenses, The, 327, 329
Saxogrammaticus, 300
Saxony, Duke of, 366
Sbozzo, 368
Scandia, 298
Scandinavia, 298, 347
Scarense, Bishop of, 310
Scharutzick, City of, 329
Scharaitz, 329
Schat river, 325
Schavo, 381
Schichmamai, 329
Schidack, 329
Schio, 366, 368
Schondania, Region of, 298
Schondenmarchia, Region, 298
Sclavonia, 290, 306
Sclavons, 290, 306, 315, 318, 319
Scolus, John, 345
Scombria Islands, 106, 107
Scondia, Region of, 295, 298, 299, 302, 305, 313
Scopa, 51
Scoria, King, 183
Scutum Cateba island, 135
Scwerski, 325
Scythia, 155, 289, 291, 292, 297, 306, 310, 312, 313, 316, 347, 363
Sea, Admiral of the great Ocean, 29, 35, 67, 79, 94
Sebastian, John, 271, 272
Segovia, 126, 127
Seina, Capreansis de, 137
Selani Island, 34
Seleucus Nicanor, 8, 61
Selle, xiv.
Selymus, Prince, 311
Sem, 346
Semnoi Poyas mountains, 324
Seneca, 48, 67, 337, 339
Senega river, 280
Senegal river, 132, 374, 384
Sequeryra, Dieogo Lopez of, 272, 273
Serrannus, Johannes, 34, 157, 160
Serena, 274
Seres, 67
Serponowtzi, 323
Serra Nevata mountains, 108, 160
Serranus, Johannes, 34, 157, 160, 258
Serrationa [*Sierra Leone*], 39, 250
Sesostris, 284
Sesostris, King, 284
Sesponow castle, 323
Sest river, 321
Sestan island, 192
Sesto river, xvi., 376, 381
Setebos, 252
Sette Citta, Kingdom, 287
Seville, xiv., xvi., xl., 50, 62, 210, 246, 250, 262, 288, 338, 342, 345, 348
Sforza Ascanius, 65, 68, 103, 127
Shava, 381
Shawgro, 381
Shyawe, 381
Sian, Zacabedera King of, 260
Sianfu, City of, 26
Sibier, Prouince of, 326, 329
Sibut river, 323
Sibylla Erythyrea, 135
Siccensis, Nicolaus, 309
Sico island, 260
Siech, Israel, 266
Sigismundus Liberius, 298, 312, 318
Siguera, Francisco de, 378
Siloli island, 34
Silver of Rever, 288, 343
Silvius Pandonus, 133
Simonides, 41
Sina, Kindgom of, 32, 313, 344
Sinum Perditorum, Point, 155
Sinus Arabicus, 13
Sinus Finnonicus, 306
Sinus Magnus, 348
Sinus Persicus, 20, 32, 41, 82
Smith, Sir T., xxxvii., xlii., xlv.
Smolense, 290, 291
Smyrnophora, 385
Soborovius, George, 316
Sofa, Lupus, 199
Solinus Julius, 16, 56, 338, 346, 347, 383
Solo island, 34
Solowki island, 321
Solysius, Johannes, 181
Sorachi village, 180
Soria islands, 347, 348, 387
Sossa river, 323
Soto, Ferdinando de, 346
Spacheford, Thomas, xiii.
Spaengia, 39
Spagnuola island, 199, 210
Spain, Emperor Charles V., 32, 47, 63, 208-14, 216, 223, 225, 226, 229, 233-6, 238, 240, 246-8, 255, 257, 258, 262-4, 278, 287, 343, 348, 350, 363
Spain, Emperor Phillip, 54, 59, 346
Spartaria, 176
Spatense Alverado, 192
Sperantia castle, 84
Spiriostomea, 98
Spice islands, 235, 247, 271, 273, 274, 286, 344
Spinosa, Gasper, 183
Stanmoische, Region of, 322
Steven, Bysshop, 293, 325
Stoidum, 143
Stora, 374
Strabo, 10, 56, 283, 284, 285, 289, 296, 308, 346, 349
Strava, 308
Strelze, 322
Strub island, 324
Strucophagi, 385
Stzuchogora river, 323
Subuth, King of, 34
Succana river, 286, 312, 322, 331
Suchana river, 322
Suchur, Province, 27
Suetia, 299, 301, 304-6, 311, 312, 319, 330, 331
Suevia, King of, 9, 286, 301, 306, 308, 347
Suez, 13, 284, 285
Sulacho island, 260
Sumatra, 7, 12, 20, 21, 22, 32, 261, 267, 272-4, 344
Sumatra, Kings of, 22
Sumbit island, 253
Sumideros, 155
Sura river, 314
Surcium river, 314
Sus, 374
Sussex, Earl of, xxxix.
Sustali, 290
Sutton, Edward, 42

Taboga island, 233
Tabor, King, 182
Tacarequi Margarita island, 56, 233
Tachola, 344
Tachola, City of, 344
Tachnin ryver, 323
Tadinsu, City of, 24
Taghima island, 259
Taia, Region of, 150
Taiasu, Kingdom of, 25
Taismer, John, xliii.-vi.
Talvera, Ferdinand of, 341
Tamburlane, 311
Tanagora, xxix.
Tanais, 133, 155, 291-3, 297, 306, 310, 311, 314, 319, 321, 324, 325, 327, 346
Tangut, Region of, 12, 26, 27
Tapia, Francisco de, xv.
Tapobana [*Ceylon*], 12, 21, 22, 32, 41, 143, 180, 261, 286, 344
Taquenazabo, Region of, 169,

Taracuru, King, 182
Tararequi, 214, 233
Tarchontan, King, 66
Tarnate island, 259, 260
Tarnasserie, 12, 20, 21, 22
Tartary, 12, 24, 26, 39, 286, 287, 289, 290, 292, 306, 344, 387
Tartary, Machmetgirei, King of, 328
Taurisium, City of, 311, 314
Tartars, 286, 287, 289, 290-2, 301, 310-14, 316, 319, 320, 324-9, 332
Tauira, Johannes de, 157
Tauira, Simon de, 272
Taxmarus, King, 193
Teaocha, King, 143, 146
Telde, 374
Temesne, 374
Tenado island, 344
Tendilla, Count of, 103
Teneriffe islands, 41, 66, 157, 250, 280
Tenerissa, xiii., 41, 380
Tenetum island, 260
Tenez, 374
Tenixtetan, City of, 57, 287, 342
Temulos, 273
Tequima, 215
Terasequi island, 214
Terceira, 344, 348
Terra Baccalearum, 242, 287
Terra Britonum, 287, 288
Terra de Laborador, 287
Terra Viridis, 299
Terra Florida, 32, 55, 57
Terra de Papagalli, 253
Tesino river, 363, 364
Tharant island, 35
Themiscuthlu, 311
Theodori island, 35
Theodosia, Colony of, 311
Theophrastus, 8, 338, 340
Thomas, J., xiii.
Thorne, iv., xiii., xiv., xxi.
Thorne, R., xvi.
Thoms, Mr, xxvi.
Thyle, Land of, 300, 337
Tialleslund sea, 304
Tiba, King, 149, 151
Tichin village, 122
Ticobon island, 256
Tidore islands, 259, 260, 262, 272-4, 348
Tierra frome, xv.
Tighe, xlvi.
Timor island, 260, 261, 269
Tingin, City of, 24
Tirecotus river, 1[illegible]
Tirusi village, 107
Tison, Thomas, xiii.
Todos Sanctos islands, 177
Tolstickh, 322
Toro, 273
Totonogo, King, 182
Totilas, King, 313
Toy, R., xii., xxxvii., xxxix., 388, 398
Transylvanus, Maximilian, 247, 249, 262
Trelensin, City of, 374
Tremisen, 374
Trepojentes Cape, 381-3
Tripoli, 374
Trolhetta river, 304, 306
Trutham village, 304
Tucke, Master, xviii.
Tuckfield, Master, xviii.
Tulla, City of, 324
Tumaccus, King of, 140-2, 178
Tumaccus, Region of, 140
Tumanama, King of, 117, 147, 148, 162, 163
Tumanama, Region of, 162, 163
Tumen, Castle of, 323, 324, 326
Tumenski, King of Tumen, 324
Tumum, King, 66
Turni, King, 119
Turufy village, 183
Tuver, City of, 314
Tyrma, 166

Udall, Nicholas, xxxviii.
Udoria, 310
Uhabo, 170, 173
Ulna, 292
Ulysses, 135, 348
Umbria, Petrus de, 111, 112
Unefride, 56
Ungerien, King of, xxx.
United States, xv.
Uppa river, 325
Upsala, Archbishop of, 300, 347
Upsalensis, 295
Uraba, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 113, 114, 118, 119, 123, 128, 130, 131, 132, 134, 143, 150, 155, 162, 163, 180, 192, 198, 199, 218, 229
Uracha, 230, 234
Urse, M. de, xliv.
Uschatio, Peter Knes, 324
Ussa river, 322
Usting, City of, 286, 312, 322, 325
Ustiuga, Town of, 293, 312
Ustyug, 312
Utterson, Mr, xxvi.

Vadianus, 56
Vagoniona, 99, 100
Vagus river, 318
Valdés, Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo, xxxvii.
Valdiuia, 115, 116, 118, 119, 122, 123, 192, 193
Valentia, 199
Vallacum, 314
Valladoleto, xiv., 125, 127, 133, 274
Valleius, 165, 181, 183
Vannucciò, Biringuccio, xxxvii., xlvi. 353, 356
Varro, Marcus, 349
Vascho Nunnez de Balboa, 61, 113, 114, 115, 119, 120, 121, 122, 125, 131, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 155, 156, 162, 165, 178, 198, 199, 338
Vasilivich, John Duke of, 326
Vasques, Captain Francesco, 287
Vassy, xliii.
Vastral, 304
Vaticane, The, 100, 309
Vecchiadoro, 287
Vega, Fernando de, 96
Velasquen, Diegus, 186, 187, 190, 195
Valasquen, John, 192
Vendôme, Francois de, xliv.
Venetus, Marcus Paulus, 25, 27, 326, 330, 339, 340
Vera, Petrus de, 65
Verazzano, xv.
Vere, Edward, xxxvii.
Vesalius, A., xxxvii.
Vespasian, Emperour, 208, 342
Vespucci, Amerigo, xxv., 37, 38, 39, 127, 134, 157, 158, 275, 277
Vespucius, Johannes, 127, 157
Vetcha, 309
Viatra, City of, 291
Vibba, 153
Vicenza, 247
Victoria, Town of, 194
Vidame de Chartres, xliv., xlv., xlvi. xlviii.
Vigentina, 368
Vilna, City of, 314
Villanoua, 176
Villa Ricca, 196
Villegas, Peter Ruiz of, 272, 274
Vincentina river, 366, 388
Vincentius, 36, 96, 98, 105, 126, 128, 129, 130
Vincentius, Agnes, 105, 128, 129
Vincentius, Annez, 126, 128, 129, 130
Vincenza, City of, 246
Virgil, 11, 50, 91, 135, 279, 298
Visba, City of, 306
Vischora river, 325
Visco, Bishop of, 341
Vitry, xlv.
Vitzechda river, 325
Volaterane, 289, 290
Volga river, 291, 292, 293, 308, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 321, 325, 326, 328, 329, 331
Volham river, 293
Volochda river, 286
Volodemaria, City of, 291, 309, 314
Volotchia, 309
Volut, City of, 290
Vrida river, 135, 153
Vua river, 323
Vuaga river, 322
Vuarectzkoai sea, 319
Vuareczkote Morie sea, 312
Vuiathka, 326, 328
Vuilna, 312
Vuinlandia, 319
Vuitepsko, 312
Vuolochda, 312, 322, 325, 326, 331
Vuolocon river, 319
Vuolodimaria, 319
Vuolok, Lake, 319

Wade, Armigil, xviii.
Wade, William, xviii.
Waranger fiord, 299
Wardhus, Castle of, 299, 302, 303, 304, 305, 331
Wardoe, 299
Wardoehuus, 299
Warwick, Earl of, xxxviii.
Watson, Thomas, xl., xlv.
Weyszarch mountain, 300
Whalley, Richard, xliv.
Whally, Thomas, xliv.
Whitcome, Roger, xii.
White Russia, 301, 302, 311
Wickes, Master, xviii.
Willes, Richard, xii., xlviii.
Williamson, John, xvii.
Willoughby, Sir Hugh, xxxviii., xxxix., 59, 333, 334
Winchester, Bishop of, xxxvii., xl., xlv.
Winter, Sir W., xlvi., xlviii.
Wolsey, Cardinal, xiv.
Wright, Master, xviii.
Wroth, Sir Thomas, xix.
Wyndam, Captain, xix., xxxviii., 375, 376, 377
Wynterton Ness, xli.

Xaccoei river, 170
Xagua, Region of, 168
Xaguaguara, Region of, 153
Xamana, Region of, 70, 169, 170
Xaragua, Region of, 83, 84, 85, 86, 169, 176
Xericium, City of, 65
Xerses, 59
Ximenus Roldanus, 86, 87, 90
Xuarez, Petrus, 130

Yaguana, Region of, 169
Yaguino, Region of, 176
Yiamiroa river, 176
Ymizui Hibahaino mountain, 169
Yorke, Sir John, xix., 382
Yucatan, 61, 338
Yucatos, 238

Zacabedera, 260
Zagathei, 311
Zahondaderos, 155
Zamal island, 254, 260.
Zamara island, 32
Zamatra, 274
Zamotra island, 273
Zamudius, 115, 116, 122, 126
Zanzibar island, 23
Zanzibar, King of, 23
Zarate, Augustin de, xxxix.
Zasia, xx.
Zauana, Region of, 148, 169, 173, 176, 212
Zaylon island, 20
Zebedus, 10
Zeilam island, 264, 265, 266, 267
Zeilon island, 256
Zelande island, 214
Zenete, Marquesse of, 214
Zenu, Region of, 158
Zerbi island, 374
Zerema, 180
Ziglerus, 294, 295, 299
Zobroba river, 135
Zobraba, 153
Zohoran river, 153
Zolo island, 259
Zolot island, 260
Zorobua island, 260
Zubut island, 256, 257, 258, 272
Zubut, King of, 256, 257.
Zula, Prince, 258
Zulan island, 254